



ORLANDO
FVRIOSO
IN ENGLISH
HEROICAL VERSE, BY S
IOHN HARINGTÕ
OF BATHE KNIGHT. Now
secondly imprinted the yeere. 1607.
Principibus placuisse viris non vltima laus est.

℞ Horace

Tho. Coxonus sculp.

A NOTE OF THE MATTERS CONTAINED IN THIS WHOLE VOLUME.

The Epistle dedicatorie to the Queenes Maiestie.

The Apologic.

An aduertisement to the Reader.

The first xxiiij Cantos, or bookes of Orlando Furioso, ending with Orlandos falling mad.



The other xxiiij Cantos of Orlando Furioso, in which he recouered his wits; ending with Bradamants marriage.

A generall Allegoric of the whole.

The life of Ariosto.

The Table of the booke.

The Tales



TO THE MOST EXCELLENT,
VERTVOVS, AND NOBLE PRINCESSE,
ELIZABETH BY THE GRACE OF GOD QVEENE OF
ENGLAND, FRANCE AND IRELAND, DEFENDER
OF THE FAITH, &c.

MOST Renowned (& most worthy to be most re-
nowned) soueraigne Ladie; I presume to offer
to your Highnes this first part of the fruit of the
litle garden of my slender skill. It hath bene the
longer in growing, and is the lesse worthie the
gathering, because my ground is barren & too
cold for such daintie Italian fruites, being also
perhaps ouershaded with trees of some older growth: but the beams
of your blessed countenance, vouchsafing to shine on so poore a
soile, shal soone disperse all hurtful mists that wold obscure it, and ea-
sily dissolue all (whether they be Mel-dews, or Fel-dews) that would
starue this shallow set plant. I desire to be brieft, because I loue to
be plaine. VVhatsoever I am or can, is your Maiesties. Your graci-
ous fauours haue bene extended in my poore familie euen to the
third generation, your bountie to vs and our heirs. VVherefore this
(though vnperfect and vnworthie worke) I humbly recommend to
that gracious protection, vnder which I enioy all in which I can take
ioy. If your Highnesse wil reade it, who dare reiect it? if allow it, who
can reproc it? if protect it, what M O M V S barking, or Z O I L V S bi-
ting can any way hurt or annoy it? And thus most humbly crauing
pardon for this boldnesse, I cease to write, though I will not cease to
wish, that your high felicities may neuer cease.

Your most humble seruant,

IOHN HARINGTON.



A PREFACE, OR RATHER A BRIEFE
APOLOGIE OF POETRIE, AND OF THE
Author and Translator of this Poeme.



He learned *Plutarch* in his *Laconicall Apothegmes*, tels of a Sophister that made a long and tedious Oration in praise of *Hercules*, and expecting at the end thereof for some great thanks and applause of the hearers, a certaine *Lacedemonian* demanded him, who had dispraised *Hercules*? Me thinkes the like may be now said to me, taking vpon me the defence of Poesie: for surely if learning in generall were of that account among vs, as it ought to be among all men, and is among wise men, then should this my Apologie of Poesie (the very first nurse and auncient grandmother of all learning) be as vaine and superfluous as was that Sophisters, because it might then be answered and truly answered, that no man disgraced it. But sith we liue in such a time, in which nothing can escape the enuious tooth and backiting tongue of an impure mouth, and wherein euery blind corner hath a squint-eyed *Zoilus*, that can looke a right vpon no mans doings, (yea sure there be some that will not sticke to call *Hercules* himselfe a dastard, because forsooth he fought with a club and not at the rapier and dagger:) therefore I thinke no man of iudgement will iudge this my labour needlesse, in seeking to remoue away those slaunders that either the malice of those that loue it not, or the folly of those that vnderstand it not, hath deuised against it: for indeed as the old saying is, *Scientia non habet inimicum prater ignorantem*: Knowledge hath no foe but the ignorant. But now because I make account I haue to deale with three sundrie kinds of reprobours, one of those that condemne all Poetrie, which (how strong head soeuer they haue) I count but a very weake faction; another of those that allow Poetrie, but not this particular Poeme, of which kind sure there cannot be many: a third of those that can beare with the art, and like of the worke, but will find fault with my not well handling of it, which they may not onely probably, but I doubt too truly do, being a thing as commonly done as said, that where the hedge is lowest, there doth euery man go ouer. Therefore against these three I must arme me with the best defensive weapons I can: and if I happen to giue a blow now and then in mine owne defence, and as good fencers vse to ward and strike at once, I must craue pardon of course, seeing our law allowes that is done *se defendendo*: and the law of nature teacheth *vim vi repellere*. First therefore of Poetrie it selfe, for those few that generally disallow it, might be sufficient to alledge those many that generally approue it, of which I could bring in such an armie, not of souldiers, but of famous Kings and captaines, as not onely the sight, but the very sound of them were able to vanquish and dismay the small forces of our aduersaries. For who would once dare to oppose himselfe against so many *Alexanders, Cesars, Scipios*, (to omit infinite other Princes, both of former and later ages, and of forraine and nearer countries) that with fauour, with studie, with practise, with example, with honors, with gifts, with preferments, with great and magnificent cost, haue encouraged and aduanced Poets and Poetrie? As witnesse the huge Theaters and Amphitheaters, monuments of stupendious charge, made onely for Tragedies and Comedies, the workes of Poets to be represented on: but all these aides and defences I leaue as superfluous, my cause I count so good, and the euidence so open, that I neither need to vse the countenance of any great state to bolster it, nor the cunning of any suttle lawyer to enforce it: my meaning is plainly and

The diuision of
this Apologie
into three
parts

Of Poetrie.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

and *bona fide*, confessing all the abuses that can truly be objected against some kind of Poets, to shew you what good vse there is of Poetrie. Neither do I suppose it to be greatly be-houefull for this purpose, to trouble you with the curious definitions of a Poet and Poesie, and with the subtil distinctions of their sundrie kinds, nor to dispute how high and super-naturall the name of a Maker is, so christned in English by that vnknowne Godfather, that this last yeare saue one, viz. 1589. set forth a booke, called the Art of English Poetrie: and least of all do I purpose to bestow any long time to argue, whether *Plato*, *Zenophon* and *E-rasmus*, writing fictions and dialogues in prose, may iustly be called Poes; or whether *Lucan* writing a storie in verse be an Historiographer, or whether Master *Faire* translating *Virgil*, Master *Golding* translating *Ouids* Metamorphosis, and my selfe in this worke that you see, be any more then versifiers, as the same *Ignoto* termeth all translators: for as for all, or the most part of such questions, I will referre you to Sir *Philip Sidneys* Apologie, who doth han-dle them right learnedly, or to the forenamed treatise, where they are discoursed more large-ly, and where, as it were a whole receit of Poetrie is prescribed, with so many new named fi-gures, as would put me in great hope in this age to come would breed many excellent Po-ets, saue for one obseruation that I gather out of the very same booke. For though the poore gentleman laboreth greatly to proue, or rather to make Poetrie an art, and reciteth as you may see in the plurall number, some pluralities of patternes, and parcels of his owne Poe-trie, with diuers peeces of Partheniads and hymnes in praise of the most praise-worthy: yet whatsoeuer he would proue by all these, sure in my poore opinion he doth proue nothing more plainly, then that which *M. Sidney* and all the learned sort that haue written of it do pronounce, namely that it is a gift and not an art; I say he proueth it, because making himselfe and many others so cunning in the art, yet he sheweth himself so slender a gift in it, deseruing to be commended as *Martiall* praiseth one that he compares to *Tully*:

*Carmina quod scribis, musis & Apolline nullo
Laudari debes, hoc Ciceronis habes.*

But to come to the purpose, and to speake after the phrase of the common sort, that terme all that is written in verse Poetrie, and rather in scorne then in praise, bestow the name of a Poet on euery base rimer and ballad-maker: this I say of it, and I thinke I say truly, that there are many good lessons to be learned out of it, many good examples to be found in it, many good vies to be had of it, and that therefore it is not, nor ought not to be despised by the wiser sort, but so to be studied and employed, as was intended by the first writers and deu-isers thereof, which is to soften and polish the hard and rough dispositions of men, and make them capable of vertue and good discipline.

I cannot denie but to vs that are Christians, in respect of the high end of all, which is the health of our soules, not onely Poetrie, but all other studies of Philosophie, are in a man-ner vaine and superfluous: yea (as the wise man saith) whatsoeuer is vnder the sunne is va-ntie of vanities, and nothing but vanitie. But sith we liue with men and not with saints, and because few men can embrace this strict and stoicall diuinitie, or rather indeed, for that the holy Scriptures, in which those high mysteries of our saluation are contained, are a deepe and profound studie, and not subiect to euery weake capacitie, no nor to the highest wits and iudgements, except they be first illuminate by Gods spirit, or instructed by his teachers and preachers: therefore we do first reade some other authors, making them as it were a loo-king-glasse to the eyes of our mind; and then after we haue gathered more strength, we enter into profounder studies of higher mysteries, hauing first as it were enabled our eyes by long beholding the sunne in a bason of water, at last to looke vpon the sunne it selfe. So we reade how that great *Moses*, whose learning and sanctitie is so renowned o-uer all nations, was first instructed in the learning of the *Egyptians*, before he came to that high contemplation of God and familiaritie (as I may so terme it) with God. So the notable Prophet *Daniel* was brought vp in the learning of the *Chaldeans*, and made that



A PREFACE, OR RATHER A BRIEFE APOLOGIE OF POETRIE, AND OF THE

Author and Translator of this Poeme.



He learned *Plutarch* in his Laconicall Apothegmes, tels of a Sophister that made a long and tedious Oration in praise of *Hercules*, and expecting at the end thereof for some great thanks and applause of the hearers, a certaine Lacedemonian demanded him, who had dispraised *Hercules*? Me thinkes the like may be now said to me, taking vpon me the defence of Poesie: for surely if learning in generall were of that account among vs, as it ought to be among all men, and is among wise men, then should this my Apologie of Poesie (the very first nurse and auncient grandmother of all learning) be as vaine and superfluous as was that Sophisters, because it might then be answered and truly answered, that no man disgraced it. But sith we liue in such a time, in which nothing can escape the enuious tooth and backiting tongue of an impure mouth, and wherein euery blind corner hath a squint-eyed *Zoilus*, that can looke aright vpon no mans doings, (yea sure there be some that will not sticke to call *Hercules* himselfe a dastard, because forsooth he fought with a club and not at the rapier and dagger:) therefore I thinke no man of iudgement will iudge this my labour needlesse, in seeking to remoue away those slaunders that either the malice of those that loue it not, or the folly of those that vnderstand it not, hath deuised against it: for indeed as the old saying is, *Scientia non habet inimicum prater ignorantem*: Knowledge hath no foe but the ignorant. But now because I make account I haue to deale with three sundrie kinds of reprobours, one of those that condemne all Poetrie, which (how strong head soeuer they haue) I count but a very weake faction; another of those that allow Poetrie, but not this particular Poeme, of which kind sure there cannot be many: a third of those that can beare with the art, and like of the worke, but will find fault with my not well handling of it, which they may not onely probably, but I doubt too truly do, being a thing as commonly done as said, that where the hedge is lowest, there doth euery man go ouer. Therefore against these three I must arme me with the best defensive weapons I can: and if I happen to giue a blow now and then in mine owne defence, and as good fencers vse to ward and strike at once, I must craue pardon of course, seeing our law allowes that is done *se defendendo*: and the law of nature teacheth *vim vi repellere*. First therefore of Poetrie it selfe, for those few that generally disallow it, might be sufficient to alledge those many that generally approue it, of which I could bring in such an armie, not of souldiers, but of famous Kings and captaines, as not onely the sight, but the very sound of them were able to vanquish and dismay the small forces of our aduersaries. For who would once dare to oppose himselfe against so many *Alexanders, Casars, Scipios*, (to omit infinite other Princes, both of former and later ages, and of forraine and nearer countries) that with fauour, with studie, with practise, with example, with honors, with gifts, with preferments, with great and magnificent cost, haue encouraged and aduanced Poets and Poetrie? As witnesse the huge Theaters and Amphitheaters, monuments of stupendious charge, made onely for Tragedies and Comedies, the workes of Poets to be represented on: but all these aides and defences I leaue as superfluous, my cause I count so good, and the euidence so open, that I neither need to vse the countenance of any great state to bolster it, nor the cunning of any suttile lawyer to enforce it: my meaning is plainly and

The diuision of
this Apologie
into three
parts.

Of Poetrie.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

and *bona fide*, confessing all the abuses that can truly be objected against some kind of Poets, to shew you what good vse there is of Poetrie. Neither do I suppose it to be greatly be-houefull for this purpose, to trouble you with the curious definitions of a Poet and Poetrie, and with the subtil distinctions of their sundrie kinds, nor to dispute how high and super-naturall the name of a Maker is, so christned in English by that vnknowne Godfather, that this last yeare saue one, viz. 1589. set forth a booke, called the Art of English Poetrie: and least of all do I purpose to bestow any long time to argue, whether *Plato*, *Zenophon* and *E-rasmus*, writing fictions and dialogues in prose, may iustly be called Poes; or whether *Lucan* writing a storie in verse be an Historiographer, or whether Master *Faire* translating *Virgil*, Master *Golding* translating *Ouids* Metamorphosis, and my selfe in this worke that you see, be any more then versifiers, as the same *Ignoto* termeth all translators: for as for all, or the most part of such questions, I will referre you to Sir *Philip Sidney*s Apologie, who doth han-dle them right learnedly, or to the forenamed treatise, where they are discoursed more large-ly, and where, as it were a whole receipt of Poetrie is prescribed, with so many new named fi-gures, as would put me in great hope in this age to come would breed many excellent Po-ets, saue for one obseruation that I gather out of the very same booke. For though the poore gentleman laboreth greatly to proue, or rather to make Poetrie an art, and reciteth as you may see in the plurall number, some pluralities of patternes, and parcels of his owne Poe-trie, with diuers peeces of Partheniads and hymnes in praise of the most praise-worthy: yet whatsoeuer he would proue by all these, sure in my poore opinion he doth proue nothing more plainly, then that which *M. Sidney* and all the learned sort that haue written of it do pronounce, namely that it is a gift and not an art; I say he proueth it, because making himselfe and many others so cunning in the art, yet he sheweth himself so slender a gift in it, deseruing to be commended as *Martiall* praiseth one that he compares to *Tully*:

*Carmina quod scribis, musis & Apolline nullo
Laudari debes, hoc Ciceronis habes.*

But to come to the purpose, and to speake after the phrase of the common sort, that terme all that is written in verse Poetrie, and rather in scorne then in praise, bestow the name of a Poet on euery base rimer and ballad-maker: this I say of it, and I thinke I say truly, that there are many good lessons to be learned out of it, many good examples to be found in it, many good vies to be had of it, and that therefore it is not, nor ought not to be despised by the wiser sort, but so to be studied and employed, as was intended by the first writers and deu-isers thereof, which is to soften and polish the hard and rough dispositions of men, and make them capable of vertue and good discipline.

I cannot denie but to vs that are Christians, in respect of the high end of all, which is the health of our soules, not onely Poetrie, but all other studies of Philosophie, are in a man-ner vaine and superfluous: yea (as the wise man saith) whatsoeuer is vnder the sunne is va-nitie of vanities, and nothing but vanitie. But sith we liue with men and not with saints, and because few men can embrace this strict and stoicall diuinitie, or rather indeed, for that the holy Scriptures, in which those high mysteries of our saluation are contained, are a deepe and profound studie, and not subiect to euery weake capacitie, no nor to the highest wits and iudgements, except they be first illuminate by Gods spirit, or instructed by his teachers and preachers: therefore we do first reade some other authors, making them as it were a loo-king-glasse to the eyes of our mind; and then after we haue gathered more strength, we enter into profounder studies of higher mysteries, hauing first as it were enabled our eyes by long beholding the sunne in a bason of water, at last to looke vpon the sunne it selfe. So we reade how that great *Moses*, whose learning and sanctitie is so renowned o-uer all nations, was first instructed in the learning of the *Aegyptians*, before he came to that high contemplation of God and familiaritie (as I may so terme it) with God. So the notable Prophet *Daniel* was brought vp in the learning of the *Chaldeans*, and made that

An Apologie of Poetrie.

*Plutarch de
audiendis
Poetis.*

*Tasso. Canto 1.
Staffe 3.*

the first step of his higher vocation to be a Prophet. If then we may by the example of two such speciall seruants of God, spend some of our yong yeares in studies of humanitie, what better and more sweet study is there for a yong man then Poetrie? specially Heroicall Poesie, that with her sweete statelinesse doth erect the mind, and lift it vp to the consideration of the highest matters; and allureth them, that of themselues would otherwise loth them, to take and swallow and digest the wholsome precepts of Philosophie, and many times euen of the true Diuinitie. Wherefore *Plutarch* hauing written a whole treatise of the praise of *Homers* workes, and another of reading Poets, doth begin this latter with this comparison, that as men that are sickly and haue weake stomackes or daintie tastes, do many times thinke that flesh most delicate to eate, that is not flesh, and those fishes that be not fish: so yong men (saith he) do like best that Philosophie that is not Philosophie, or that is not deliuered as Philosophie: and such are the pleasant writings of learned Poets, that are the popular Philosophers and the popular Diuines. Likewise *Tasso* in his excellent worke of *Ierusalem Liberato*, likeneth Poetrie to the Physicke that men giue vnto little children when they are sicke: his verse is this in Italian, speaking to God with a pretie Prosopopeia:

*Sai, che la corre il mondo, oue piu versi
Di sue dolcezze, il lusingier Parnaso:
E che 'l vero condito in molli versi.
I piu schiui allettando ha persuaso
Così al'egro fanciul porgiamo asperso
Di soau liquor gli Orli del vaso
Socchi amari ingannato in tanto ei bene
E dal inganno suo vita recene.*

*Thou knowst, the wanton worldlings euer runne
To sweete Parnassus frutes, how otherwhile
The truth well sawe'd with pleasant verse hath wonne
Most squeamish stomackes with the sugred stile:
So the sicke child that potions all doth shunne,
With comfets and with sugar we beguile,
And cause him take a wholesome sowre receit,
He drinkes, and saues his life with such deceit.*

This is then that honest fraud, in which (as *Plutarch* saith) he that is deceiued is wiser then he that is not deceiued, and he that doth deceiue, is honeste then he that doth not deceiue.

*Agrippa de
vanitate scien-
tiarum. cap. 4.*

*Four obiectiōs
against Poetry.*

But briefly to answer to the chiefe obiections, *Cornelius Agrippa*, a man of learning and authoritie not to be despised, maketh a bitter inuectiue against Poets and Poesie, and the summe of his reproofe of it is this (which is all that can with any probabilitie be said against it:) That it is a nurse of lies, a pleaser of fooles, a breeder of dangerous errors, and an inticer to wantonnesse. I might here warne those that will vrge this mans authoritie to the disgrace of Poetrie, to take heed (of what calling soeuer they be) least with the same weapon that they thinke to giue Poetrie ablow, they giue themselues a maim. For *Agrippa* taketh his pleasure of greater matters then Poetrie: I maruell how he durst do it, saue that I see he hath done it, he hath spared neither myters nor scepters. The courts of Princes, where vertue is rewarded, iustice maintained, oppressions releued, he calls them a Colledge of Giants, of tyrants, of oppressors, warriors: the most noble sort of noble men, he termeth cursed, bloudie, wicked, and sacrilegious persons. Noble men (and vs poore Gentlemen) that thinke to borrow praise of our auncestors deserts and good fame, he affirmeth to be a race of the sturdier sort of knaues, and licencious liuers. Treasurers and other great officers of the common wealth, with graue counsellors, whose wise heads are the pillars of the state, he affirmeth generally to be robbers and peelers of the realme, and priuie traitors that sell their Princes fauours, and rob wel-deseruing seruitors of their reward.

I omit

An Apologie of Poetrie.

I omit as his *peccadilia*, how he nicknameth priests saying, for the most part they are hypocrites; lawiers, saying they are all theeves; phisitians, saying they are many of them murthers: so as I thinke it were a good motion, and would easily passe by the consent of the three estates, that this mans authoritie should be vtterly aduihilated, that dealeth so hardly and vniustly with all sorts of professions. But for the reiecting of his writings, I refer it to others that haue power to do it, and to condemne him for a generall libeller, but for that he writeth against Poetrie, I meane to speake a word or two in refuting thereof. And first for lying, I might if I list excuse it by the rule of *Poetica licentia*, and claime a priueledge giuen to Poetrie, whose art is but an imitation (as *Aristotle* calleth it) and therefore are allowed to faigne what they list, according to that old verse,

Answer to the first of lying.

*Iuridicis, Erebo, fisco, fas viuere rapto,
Militibus, medicis, tortori, occidere Ludo est:
Mentiri Astronomis, pictoribus atque Poetis.*

Which because I count it without reason, I will English it without rime,

*Lawyers, Hell, and the Checquer are allowed to liue on spoile,
Souldiers, Phisitians, and hangmen make a sport of murther,
Astronomers, Painters, and Poets may lye by authoritie.*

Thus you see, that Poets may lye if they list *Cum priuilegio*: but what if they lye least of all other men? what if they lye not at all? then I thinke that great slaunder is verie vniustly raised vpon them. For in my opinion they are said properly to lye, that affirme that to be true that is false: and how other arts can free themselves from this blame let them look that professe them: but Poets neuer affirming any for true, but presenting them to vs as fables and imitations, cannot lye though they would: and because this obiection of lyes is the chiefeft, and that vpon which the rest be grounded, I wil stand the longer vpon the clearing thereof.

The ancient Poets haue indeed wrapped as it were in their writings diuers and sundrie meanings, which they call the fences or mylteries thereof. First of all for the literall fence (as it were the vtmost barke or ryne) they set downe in manner of an historie, the acts and notable exploits of some persons worthie memorie; then in the same fiction, as a second rine and somewhat more fine, as it were nearer to the pith and marrow, they place the Morall fence, profitable for the actiue life of man, approuing vertuous actions, and condemning the contrarie. Manie times also vnder the selfesame words they comprehend some true vnderstanding of naturall Philosophie, or sometime of politike gouernement, and now and then of diuinitie: and these same fences that comprehend so excellent knowledge we call the Allegorie, which *Plutarch* defineth to be when one thing is told, and by that another is vnderstood. Now let any man iudge, if it be a matter of meane art or wit, to containe in one historicall narration either true or fained, so many, so diuerse, and so deepe conceits: but for making the matter more plaine I will alledge an example thereof.

Perseus sonne of *Iupiter* is fained by the Poets to haue slaine *Gorgon*, and after that conquest atchieued, to haue flowne vp to heauen. The Historicall fence is this, *Perseus* the sonne of *Iupiter*, by the participation of *Iupiters* vertues that were in him; or rather comming of the stock of one of the kings of Crete, or Athens so called; slue *Gorgon* a tyrant in that countrey (*Gorgon* in greeke signifieth earth) and was for his vertuous parts exalted by men vp into heauen. Morally it signifieth thus much, *Perseus* a wise man, sonne of *Iupiter* endewed with vertue from aboue, slayeth sinne and vice, a thing base and earthly; signified by *Gorgon*, and so mounteth to the skie of vertue: It signifies in one kinde of Allegorie thus much; the mind of man being gotten by God, and so the childe of God, killing and vanquishing the earthlinesse of this Gorgonicall nature, ascendeth vp to the vnderstanding of heauenly things, of high things, of eternall things, in which contemplation consisteth the perfection of man: this is the natural allegorie, because man, one of

Ouids Metamorph. 4.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

the chiefe works of nature: It hath also a more high and heauenly Allegorie, that the heauenly nature, daughter of *Iupiter*, procuring with her continuall motion, corruption and mortalitie in the interior bodies, seuered it selfe at last from these earthly bodies, and flew vp on high, and there remaineth for euer. It hath also another Theologicall Allegorie, that the angelicall nature, daughter of the most high God the creator of all things; killing and ouercomming all bodily substance, signified by *Gorgon*, ascended into heauen: the like infinite Allegories I could picke out of other Poeticall fictions, saue that I would auoid tediousnesse. It sufficeth me therefore to note this, that the men of greatest learning and highest wit in the auncient times, did of purpose conceale these deepe mytteries of learning, and as it were couer them with the veile of fables and verse for sundrie causes: one cause was, that they might not be rashly abused by prophane wits, in whom science is corrupted, like good wine in a bad vessell: another cause why they wrote in verse, was conseruation of the memorie of their precepts, as we see yet the generall rules almost of euerie art, not so much as husbandrie, but they are oftner recited and better remembered in verse then in prose: another, and a principall cause of all, is to be able with one kinde of meate and one dish (as I may so-call it) to feed diuers tastes. For the weaker capacities will feed themselves with the pleasantnesse of the historie and sweetnes of the verse, some that haue stronger stomackes will as it were take a further tast of the Morall sense, a third sort more high conceited then they, will digest the Allegorie: so as indeed it hath bene thought by men of verie good iudgement, such manner of Poeticall writing was an excellent way to preserue all kinde of learning from that corruption which now it is come to since they left that mysticall writing of verse. Now though I know the example and authoritie of *Aristotle* and *Plato* be still vrged against this, who tooke to themselves another manner of writing: first I may say indeed that lawes were made for poore men, and not for Princes, for these two great Princes of Philosophie, brake that former allowed manner of writing, yet *Plato* still preserued the fable, but refused the verse. *Aristotle* though reiecting both, yet retained still a kinde of obscuritie, insomuch he answered *Alexander*, who reprooued him in a sort, for publishing the sacred secrets of Philosophie, that he had set forth his bookes in a sort, and yet not set them forth; meaning that they were so obscure that they would be vnderstood of few, except they came to him for instructions; or else without they were of verie good capacitie and studious of Philosophie. But (as I say) *Plato* howsoeuer men would make him an enemy of Poetrie (because he found indeed iust fault with the abuses of some comicall Poets of his time, or some that sought to set vp new and strange religions) yet you see he kept still that principall part of Poetrie, which is fiction and imitation; and as for the other part of Poetrie which is verse, though he vsed it not, yet his maister *Socrates* euen in his old age wrote certaine verses, as *Plutarke* testifieth: but because I haue named the two parts of Poetrie, namely inuention or fiction, and verse, let vs see how well we can authorise the vse of both these. First for fiction, against which as I told before, many inueigh, calling it by the foule name of lying, though notwithstanding, as I then said, it is farthest from it: *Demosthenes* the famous and renowned Orator, when he would perswade the Athenians to warre against *Philip*, told them a solemne tale how the Wolves on a time sent Ambassadors to the sheepe, offering them peace if they would deliuer vp the dogs that kept their folds, with all that long circumstance (needlesse to be repeated) by which he perswaded them far more strongly then if he should haue told them in plaine termes, that *Philip* sought to bereaue them of their chiefe bulwarks & defences, to haue the better abilitie to ouerthrow them. But what need we fetch an authority so far off from heathen authors, that haue many neerer hand both in time and in place? Bishop *Fisher* a stout Prelat (though I do not praise his Religion) when he was assaid by king *Henrie* the eight for his good will and assent for the suppression of Abbeys, the king alledging that he would but take away the superfluties, and let the substance stand still, or at least see it conuerted to better
and

An Apologie of Poetrie.

and more godly vses: the graue Bishop answered it in this kinde of Poeticall parable: He said there was an axe that wanting a helue came to a thicke and huge ouergrown wood, and besought some of the great okes in that wood, to spare him so much timber as to make him a handle or helue, promising that if he might finde that fauour, he would in recompence thereof, haue great regard in preserving that wood, in pruning the branches, in cutting away the vnprofitable and superfluous boughes, in paring away the briers and thornes that were combersome to the fayre trees, and making it in fine a groue of great delight and pleasure: but when this same axe had obtained his sute, he so laid about him, and so pared away both timber and top and lop, that in short space of a woodland he made it a champion, and made her liberalitie the instrument of her ouerthrow.

Now though this Bishop had no very good successe with his parable, yet it was so farre from being counted a lye, that it was plainly scene soone after that the same axe did both hew downe those woods by the roots, and pared him off by the head, and was a peece of Prophecie, as well as a peece of Poetrie: and indeed Prophets and Poets haue bene thought to haue a great affinitie, as the name *Vates* in Latin doth testifie. But to come againe to this manner of fiction or parable, the Prophet *Nathan*, reprouing king *Dauid* for his great sinne of adulterie and murther, doth he not come to him with a pretie parable, of a poore man and his lambe that lay in his bosome, and eat of his bread, and the rich man that had whole flocks of his owne would needs take it from him? In which as it is euident it was but a parable, so it were vnreuerent and almost blasphemous to say it was a lye. But to go higher, did not our Sautour himselfe speake in parables? as that deuine parable of the sower, that comfortable parable of the Prodigall sonne, that dreadfull parable of *Dines* and *Lazarus*, though I know of this last, many of the fathers hold that it is a storie indeed, and no parable. But in the rest it is manifest, that he that was all holinesse, all wisdom, all truth, vsed parables, and euen such as discreet Poets vse, where a good and honest and wholsome Allegorie is hidden in a pleasant and pretie fiction, and therefore for that part of Poetrie of Imitation, I thinke no body will make any question, but it is not onely allowable, but godly and commendable, if the Poets ill handling of it doe not marre and peruert the good vse of it. The other part of Poetrie, which is Verse, as it were the clothing or ornament of it, hath many good vses; of the helpe of memorie I spake somewhat before; for the words being couched together in due order, measure, and number, one doth as it were bring on another, as my selfe haue often proued, and so I thinke do many beside, (though for my owne part I can rather boast of the marring a good memorie, then of hauing one,) yet I haue euer found, that Verse is easier to learne, and farre better to preserve in memorie, then is prose. Another speciall grace in Verse is the forcible manner of phrase, in which if it be well made, it farre excelleth loose speech or prose: a third is the pleasure and sweetenesse to the eare, which makes the discourse pleasant vnto vs often time when the matter it selfe is harsh and vnacceptable; for my owne part I was neuer yet so good a husband, to take any delight to heare one of my ploughmen tell how an acre of wheat must be fallowd and twyfallowd, and how cold land should be burned, and how fruitfull land must be well harrowed, but when I heare one read *Virgil* where he saith:

*Sape etiam steriles incendere profuit agros,
Atq; leuem stipulam crepitantibus vrere flammis.
Sive inde occultas vires & pabula terra
Pinguis concipiunt; sive illis omne per ignem
Excoquitur vitium, atq; exsudat inutilis humor, &c.*

And after.

*Mulum adeo, rastris glebas qui frangit inertes
Viminea q; trahit crates, iuuat arua.*

With many other lessons of homely husbandrie, but deliuered in so good Verse that me

Two parts of
Poetrie,
Imitation or
invention, and
Verse.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

Answer to
the second ob-
jection.

thinkes all that while I could find in my heart to drive the plough. But now for the authoritie of Verse, if it be not sufficient to say for them, that the greatest Philosophers, and greatest Senatours that euer were, haue vsed them both in their speeches and in their writings, that precepts of all Arts haue beene deliuered in them, that verse is as auncient a writing as prose, and indeed more auncient, in respect that the oldest workes extant be verse, as *Orpheus*, *Linus*, *Hesiodus*, and others beyond memorie of man, or mention almost of historie; if none of these will serue for the credit of it, yet let this serue, that some part of the Scripture was written in verse, as the Psalmes of *Dauid*, and certaine other songs of *Deborah*, of *Salomon* and others, which the learnedest diuines do affirme to be verse, and find that they are in meeter, though the rule of the Hebrew verse they agree not on. Sufficeth it me onely to proue that by the authoritie of sacred Scriptures, both parts of Poesie, inuention or imitation, and verse are allowable, and consequently that great obiection of lying is quite taken away and refuted. Now the second obiection is pleasing of fooles; I haue already showed, how it displeaseth not wise men, now if it haue this vertue to, to please the fooles, and ignorant, I wold thinke this an article of prayse not of rebuke: wherefore I confesse that it pleaseth fooles and so pleaseth them, that if they marke it and obserue it well, it will in time make them wise, for in verse is both goodnesse and sweetnesse, Rubarb and Sugercandie, the pleasant and the profitable: wherefore as *Horace* sayth, *Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci*, he that can mingle the sweete and wholesome, the pleasant and the profitable, he is indeed an absolute good writer, & such be Poets, if any be such, they present vnto vs a prettie tale, able to keepe a childe from play, and an old man from the chimnie corner: Or as the same *Horace* saith, to a couetous man:

*Tantalus à labris sitiens fugientia captat
Flumina, quid rides? mutato nomine de te
Fabula narratur.*

Answer to
the third

One tels a couetous man a tale of *Tantalus*, that sits vp to the chinne in water, and yet is plagued with thirst. This signifies the selfesame man to whom the tale is told, that wallows in plentie, and yet his miserable minde barres him of the vse of it: As my selfe knew and I am sure many remember Iustice *Randall* of London, a man passing impotent in body but much more in mind, that leauing behind him a thousand pounds of gold in a chest full of old boots and shoes, yet was so miserable, that at my Lord Maiors dinner they say he would put vp a widgeon for his supper, and many a good meale he did take of his franke neighbour the widdow *Penne*: but to come to the matter, this same great sinne that is laide to Poetrie of pleasing fooles, is sufficiently answered if it be worth the answering. Now for the breeding of errors which is the third Obiection, I see not why it should breed any when none is bound to beleue that they write, nor they looke not to haue their fictions beleued in the literall sence, and therefore he that well examine whence errors spring, shall finde the writers of prose & not of verse, the authors and maintainers of them, and this point I count so manifest as it needes no prooffe. The last reproofe is lightnes and wantonnes, this is indeed an Obiection of some importance, sith as Sir *Philip Sidney* confesseth, *Cupido* is crept euen into the Heroicall Poemes, & consequently maketh that also, subiect to this reproofe: I promised in the beginning not partially to praise Poesie, but plainly and honestly to confesse that, that might truly be objected against it, and if any thing may be, sure it is this lasciuiousnesse; yet this I will say, that of all kinde of Poesie, the Heroicall is least infected therewith. The other kindes I will rather excuse then defend, though of all the kindes of Poesie it may be sayd, where any scurrilitie and lewdnesse is found; there Poetrie doth not abuse vs, but writers haue abused Poetrie. And brieflie to examine all the kindes: First the Tragicall is meere free from it, as representing onely the cruell and lawlesse proceedings of Princes, mouing nothing but pitie or detestation. The Comickall (whatsoeuer foolish play makers make it offend in this kind) yet being rightly vsed, it represents them

An Apologie of Poetrie.

so as to make the vice scorned and not embraced. The Satyrike is meerly free from it, as being wholly occupied in mannerly and couerly reproofing of all vices. The Elegie is still mourning: as for the Pastorall with the Sonnet or Epigramme, though many times they fauour of wantonnesse and loue and toying, and now and then breaking the rules of Poetrie, go in to plaine scurrilitie, yet euen the worst of them may be not ill applied, and are, I must confesse, too delightfull, in so much as *Martial* saith,

Laudant illa, sed ista legunt.

And in another place,

Erubuit posuitq; meum Lucretia librum:

Sed coram Bruto. Brute recede, leget.

Lucretia (by which he signifies any chaste matron) will blush and be ashamed to reade a lasciuious booke: but how? not except *Brutus* be by, that is, if any graue man should see her reade it; but if *Brutus* turne his backe, she will to it againe and reade it all. But to end this part of my Apologie, as I count and conclude Heroicall Poesie allowable, and to be read and studied without all exception: so may I boldly say, that Tragedies well handled, be a most worthy kind of Poesie; that Comedies may make men see and shame at their owne faults, that the rest may be so written and so read, as much pleasure and some profite may be gathered out of them. And for mine owne part, as *Scaliger* writeth of *Virgil*, so I beleue, that the reading of a good Heroicall Poeme may make a man both wiser and honest: and for Tragedies, to omit other famous Tragedies, that that which was played at Saint *Iohns* in Cambridge, of *Richard* the third, would moue (I thinke) *Phalaris* the tyrant, and terrifie all tyrannous minded men, from following their foolish ambitious humors, seeing how his ambition made him kill his brother, his nephewes, his wife, beside infinite others; and last of all after a short and troublesome raigne, to end his miserable life, and to haue his bodie harried after his death. Then for Comedies: how full of harmelesse mirth is our Cambridge *Pedantius*? and the Oxford *Bellum Grammaticale*? or to speake of a London Comedie, how much good matter, yea and matter of state, is there in that Comedie called the play of the Cards? in which it is shewed how foure Parasiticall knaues robbe the foure principall vocations of the Realme, *videl*, the vocation of Souldiers, Schollers, Merchants and Husbandmen. Of which Comedie I cannot forget the saying of a notable wise counseller that is now dead, who when some (to sing *Placebo*) aduised that it should be forbidden, because it was somewhat too plaine, and indeed as the old saying is, *sooth boord is no boord*, yet he would haue it allowed, adding it was fit that *they which do that they should not, should heare that they would not*. Finally, if Comedies may be so made as the beholders may be bettered by them, without all doubt all other sorts of Poetrie may bring their profite as they do bring delights, and if all, then much more the chiefe of all, which by all mens consent is the Heroicall. And thus much be said for Poesie.

Sir Frances
VWalsingham.

Now for this Poeme of *Orlando Furioso*, which as I haue heard, hath bene disliked by some, though by few of any wit or iudgement, it followes that I say somewhat in defence thereof, which I will do the more moderatly and coldly, by how much the paines I haue taken in it (rising as you may see to a good volume) may make me seeme a more partiall praiser. Wherefore I will make choise of some other Poeme that is allowed and approued by all men, and a little compare them together: and what worke can serue this turne so fitly as *Virgils Aeneidos*, whom aboue all other it seemeth my author doth follow, as appears both by his beginning and ending. The one begins,

Arma virumq; cano.

The other,

Le donne I canallieri l' arme gli amor:

Le cortesie l' audace imprese io canto.

Virgil ends with the death of *Turnus*:

Vitaq; cum gemitu fugit indignata sub umbrati

The second part
of the Apology.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

*Ariosto ends with the death of Rodomont,
Bestemiando fugi l'alma degnosa
Che fu sì altero al mondo e sì orgogliosa.*

Virgil extolleth Aeneas to please Augustus, of whose race he was thought to come. Ariosto praiseth Rogero to the honour of the house of Este. Aeneas hath his Dido that retaineth him: Rogero hath his Alcina: finally left I should note euery part, there is nothing of any speciall obseruation in Virgil, but my author hath with great felicitie imitated it, so as whosoever will allow Virgil, must ipso facto (as they say) admit Ariosto. Now of what account Virgil is reckned, and worthily reckned, for ancient times witnesseth Augustus Caesars verse of him:

*Ergone supremis potuit vox improba verbis
Tam durum mandare nefas? &c.*

Concluding thus,

Laudetur, placeat, vigeat, relegatur, ametur.

This is a great praise, comming from so great a Prince. For later times, to omit Scaliger, whom I recited before, that affirmeth the reading of *Virgil* may make a man honest and vertuous: that excellent Italian Poet *Dant* professeth plainly, that when he wandred out of the right way (meaning thereby, when he liued fondly and loosely) *Virgil* was the first that made him looke into himselfe, and reclaime himselfe from that same dangerous and leud course. But what need we further witness, do we not make our children read it commonly before they can vnderstand it, as a testimonie that we do generally approue it? and yet we see old men studie it, as a prooffe that they do specially admire it: so as one writes very pretily, that children do wade in *Virgil*, and yet strong men do swim in it.

Now to apply this to the praise of mine author, as I said before, so I say still, whatsoever is praise-worthy in *Virgil*, is plentifully to be found in *Ariosto*, and some things that *Virgil* could not haue for the ignorance of the age he liued in, you find in my author, sprinkled ouer all his worke, as I will very briefly note, and referre you for the rest to the booke it selfe. The deuout and Christian demeanor of *Charlemaine* in the 14. booke with his prayer,

*Non voglia tua bonta per mio fallire
Ch' l' tuo popol fidele habbia a patire, &c.*

And in the beginning of the 17. booke that would besecme any pulpit:

Il giusto Dio quando i peccati nostri.

But aboue all, that in the 41. booke of the conuersion of *Rogero* to the Christian Religion, where the Hermit speaketh to him, containing in effect a full instruction against presumption and despaire, which I haue set downe thus in English,

*Now (as I said) this wise that Hermit spoke,
And part doth comfort him, and part doth checke:
He blameth him that in that pleasant yoke
He had so long deferd to put his necke,
But did to wrath his maker still prouoke:
And did not come at his first call and becke,
But still did hide himselfe away from God,
Untill he saw him comming with his rod.
Then did he comfort him, and make him know,
That grace is nere denide to such as aske,
As do the workmen in the Gospell show,
Receiuing pay alike for diuers taske.*

And so after concluding,

*How to Christ he must impute
The pardon of his sinnes, yet nere the later
He told him he must be baptiz'd in water.*

These

An Apologie of Poetrie.

These and infinite places full of Christen exhortation, doctrine and example, I could quote out of the book, saue that I hasten to an end, and it would be needles to those that will not read them in the booke it selfe, and superfluous to those that will: but most manifest it is and not to be denyed, that in this point my author is to be preferred before all the ancient Poets, in which are mentioned so many false Gods, and of them so many fowle deeds, their contentions, their adulteries, their incest, as were both obscenous in recitall, and hurtfull in example: though indeed those whom they tearmed Gods, were certaine great Princes that committed such enormous faults, as great Princes in late ages (that loue still to be cald Gods of the earth) do often commit. But now it may be and is by some obiected, that although he write Christianly in some places, yet in other some, he is too lasciuious, as in that of the bawdy Frier, in *Alcina* and *Rogeros* copulation, in *Anselmus* his *Ciptian*, in *Richardetto* his metamorphosis, in mine hosts tale of *Astolfo*, and some few places beside; alas if this be a fault, pardon him this one fault; though I doubt to many of you (gentle readers) will be too exorable in this point; yea me thinks I see some of you searching already for these places of the book, and you are halfe offended that I haue not made some directions that you might finde out and read them immediatly. But I beseech you stay a while, and as the Italian saith *Pian piano*, fayre and softly, and take this caueat with you, to read them as my author meant them, to breed detestation and not delectation: remember when you read of the old lecherous Frier, that a fornicator is one of the things that God hateth. When you read of *Alcina*, thinke how *Ioseph* fled from his intising mistres; when you light on *Anselmus* tale, learne to loath beastly couetousnes, when on *Richardetto*, know that sweet meate will haue sowre sawce, when on mine hosts tale (if you will follow my counsell) turne over the leafe and let it alone, although euen that lewd tale may bring some men profit, and I haue heard that it is already (and perhaps not vnfitly) termed the comfort of cuckolds. But as I say, if this be a fault, then *Virgil* committed the same fault in *Dido* and *Aeneas* entertainment: & if some will say, he tels that mannerly and couertly, how will they excuse that, where *Vulcan* was inteated by *Venus* to make an armour for *Aeneas*?

*Dixerat, & niuis hinc atq; hinc diua lacertis
Cunctantem amplexu molli fouet, ille repente
Accepit solitam flammam, notusq; per artus
Intrauit calor. And a little after. Ea verba locutus
Optatos dedit amplexus placitumq; petiuit
Coniugis infusus gremio per membra soporem.*

I hope they that vnderstand Latin will confesse this is plaine enough, & yet with modest words & no obscenous phrase: and so I dare take vpon me that in al *Ariosto* (and yet I thinke it is as much as three *Aeneads*,) there is not a word of ribaldry or obscenousnes: farther there is so meet a decorum in the persons of those that speake lasciuiously, as any of iudgement must needs allow; and therefore though I rather craue pardon then prayse for him in this point; yet me thinks I can smile at the finesse of some, that will condemne him, and yet not onely allow, but admire our *Chawcer*, who both in words and sence, incurreth far more the reprehensio of flat scurrilitie, as I could recite many places, not onely in his *Millers tale*, but in the good wife of *Bathes tale*, & many more, in which onely the decorum he keepes, is that that excuseth it, and maketh it more tolerable. But now whereas some will say, *Ariosto* wanteth art, reducing all heroicall Poems vnto the method of *Homer* and certaine precepts of *Aristotle*. For *Homer* I say, that that which was commendable in him to write in that age, the times being changed, would be thought otherwise now, as we see both in phrase & in fashions the world growes more curious each day then other: *Ouid* gaue precepts of making loue, and one was that one should spill wine one the boord & write his mistresse name therewith, this was a quaynt cast in that age; but he that should make loue so now, his loue would mocke him for his labour, and count him but a slouenly sutor: and if it be thus chaunged since *Ouids* time, much more since *Homers* time. And yet for *Ariostos* tales that

An Apologie of Poetrie.

many thinke vnartificially brought in; *Homer* himselfe hath the like: as in the *Iliads* the conference of *Glaucus* with *Diomedes* vpon some acts of *Bellerophon*: & in his *Odysses* the discourse of the hog with *Ulysses*. Further, for the name of the booke, which some carpe at, because he called it *Orlando Furioso* rather then *Rogero*, in that he may also be defended by example of *Homer*, who professing to write of *Achilles*, calleth his booke *Iliade* of *Troy*, and not *Achillide*. As for *Aristotles* rules, I take it, he hath followed them verie strictly.

Briefly, *Aristotle* and the best censurers of Poetrie, would haue the *Epopeia*, that is, the heroicall Poem, should ground on some historie, and take some short time in the same to bewtifie with his Poetrie: so doth mine Author take the storie of *K. Charles* the great, and doth not exceed a yeare or therabout in his whole worke. Secondly they hold, that nothing should be fayned vtterly incredible. And sure *Ariosto* neither in his inchantments exceedeth credit (for who knowes not how strong the illusions of the diuell are?) neither in the miracles that *Astolfo* by the power of *S. Iohn* is fayned to do, since the Church holdeth that Prophets both aliue and dead, haue done mightie great miracles. Thirdly, they would haue an heroicall Poem (as well as a Tragedie) to be full of *Peripetia*, which I interpret an agnition of some vnlooked for fortune either good or bad, and a sudden change thereof: of this what store there be the reader shall quickly finde. As for apt similitudes, for passions well expressed, of loue, of pitie, of hate, of wrath, a blind man may see, if he can but heare, that this worke is full of them.

There follows onely two reproofs, which I rather interpret two peculiar praises of this writer about all that wrote before him in this kind: One, that he breaks off narrations verie abruptly, so as indeed a loose vnattentive reader, will hardly carrie away any part of the storie: but this doubtlesse is a point of great art, to draw a man with a continuall thirst to reade ouer the whole worke, and toward the end of the booke, to close vp the diuerse matters briefly and cleanly. If *S. Philip Sidney* had counted this a fault, he would not haue done so himselfe in his *Arcadia*. Another fault is, that he speaketh so much in his owne person by digression, which they say also is against the rules of Poetrie, because neither *Homer* nor *Virgil* did it. Me thinks it is a sufficient defence to say, *Ariosto* doth it; sure I am, it is both delightfull and verie profitable, and an excellent breathing place for the reader, and euen as if a man walked in a faire long alley, to haue a seat or resting place here and there is easie and commodious: but if at the same seate were planted some excellent tree, that not onely with the shade should keepe vs from the heat, but with some pleasant and right wholsome fruite should allay our thirst and comfort our stomacke, we would thinke it for the time a litle paradise: so are *Ariostos* morals and pretie digressions sprinkled through his long worke, to the no lesse pleasure then profit of the reader. And thus much be spoken for defence of mine Author, which was the second part of my Apologie.

Now remaines the third part of it, in which I promised to speake somewhat for my selfe, which part, though it haue most need of an Apologie both large and substantiall; yet I will run it over both shortly and slightly, because indeed the nature of the thing it selfe is such, that the more one doth say, the lesse he shall seeme to say; and men are willinger to praise that in another man, which himselfe shall debase, then that which he shall seeme to maintaine. Certainly if I should confesse or rather professe, that my verse is vnartificiall, the stile rude, the phrase barbarous, the meeter vnpleasant, many more would beleue it to be so, then would imagine that I thought them so: for this same *φιλαυδία* or selfe pleasing is so comon a thing, as the more a man protests himselfe to be from it, the more we wil charge him with it. Wherefore let me take thus much vpon me, that admit it haue many of the forenamed imperfections, and many not named, yet as writing goes now a dayes, it may passe among the rest; and as I haue heard a friend of mine (one verie iudicious in the beautie of a woman) say of a Ladie whom he meant to praise, that she had a low forehead, a great nose, a wide mouth, a long visage, and yet all these put together, she seemed to him a verie well fauoured woman: so I hope, and I finde already some of my partiall friends, that what seuerall imper-

The third
part of the
Apologie.

An Apologie of Poetrie.

imperfections fouer they finde in this translation, yet taking all together they allow it, or at least wise they reade it, which is a great argument of their liking.

Sir Thomas Moore a man of great wisdom and learning, but yet a litle enclined (as good wits are many times) to scoffing, when one had brought him a booke of some shallow discourse, and pressed him very hard to haue his opinion of it, aduised the partie to put it into verse; the plaine meaning man in the best maner he could he did so, and a twelue-month after at the least, came with it to *Sir Thomas*, who slightly perusing it, gaue it this *encomium*, that now there was rime in it, but afore it had neither rime nor reason. If any man had ment to serue me so, yet I haue prevented him; for sure I am he shal finde rime in mine, & if he be not voyd of reason, he shal finde reason to. Though for the matter, I can challenge no praise, hauing but borrowed it, and for the verse I do challenge none, being a thing that euery body that neuer scarce bayted their horse at the Vniuersitie take vpon them to make. It is possible that if I would haue employed that time that I haue done vpon this, vpon some inuention of mine owne, I could haue by this made it haue risen to a iust volume, and if I would haue done as many spare not to do, flowne verie high with stolen fethers. But I had rather men should see and know that I borrow all, then that I steale any: and I would wish to be called rather one of the not worst translators, then one of the meaner makers. Specially sith the Earle of Surrey, and *Sir Thomas Wiat*, that are yet called the first refiners of the English tong, were both translators out of Italian. Now for those that count it such a contemptible and trifling matter to translate, I will but say to them as *M. Bartholomew Clarke* an excellent learned man, and a right good translator, saith in manner of a prettie challenge, in his Preface (as I remember) vpon the Courtier, which booke he translated out of Italian into Latin. You (saith he) that thinke it such a toy, lay aside my booke, and take my author in your hand, and trie a leafe or such a matter, and compare it with mine. If I should say so, there would be enow that would quickly put me downe perhaps; but doubtlesse he might boldly say it, for I thinke none could haue mended him. But as our English prouerbe saith, many talke of *Robin Hood* that neuer shot in his bow, and some correct *Magnificat*, that know not *quid significat*. For my part I will thanke them that will amend any thing that I haue done amisse, nor I haue no such great conceipt of that I haue done, but that I thinke much in it is to be mended; and hauing dealt playnly with some of my plaine dealing friends, to tell me frankly what they heard spoken of it (for indeed I suffered some part of the printed copies to go among my friends, and some more perhaps went against my wil) I was told that these in effect were the faults were found with it. Some graue men misliked that I should spend so much good time on such a trifling worke as they deemed a Poeme to be. Some more nicely, found fault with so many two sillabled and three sillabled rimes. Some (not vnderstandedly) reproued the fantasticalnes of my notes, in which they say I haue strained my selfe to make mention of some of my kindred and friends, that might verie well be left out. And one fault more there is, which I will tell my selfe, though many would neuer finde it; and that is; I haue cut short some of his Cantos, in leauing out many staues of them, and sometimes put the matter of two or three staues into one. To these reproofes I shall pray you gentle and noble Readers with patience heare my defence, and then I will end. For the first reproofe, etither it is already excused, or it will neuer be excused; for I haue I thinke sufficiently proued, both the art to be allowable, and this worke to be commendable: yet I will tell you an accident that happened vnto my selfe. When I was entred a prettie way into the translation, about the seuenth booke, comming to write that where *Melissa* in the person of *Rogeros Tutor*, comes and reproues *Rogero* in the 4. staffe:

*Was it for this, that I in youth thee fed
With marrow? &c. And againe:
Is this a meane, or readie way you trow,
That other worthie men haue trod before,
A Caesar or a Scipio to grow? &c.*

*Four faults
found in this
worke.*

*Answer to the
first.*

An Apologie of Poetrie.

Samuel Fleming of Kings
colledge in
Cambridge.

The second.

The third.

The fourth.

In the life of
Ariosto.

Straight I began to thinke, that my Tutor, a graue and learned man, and one of a verie austere life, might say to me in like sort, Was it for this, that I read *Aristotle* and *Plato* to you, and instructed you so carefully both in Greek and Latin? to haue you now become a translator of Italian toyes? But while I thought thus, I was aware, that it was no toy that could put such an honest and serious consideration into my minde. Now for them that finde fault with polysyllable meeter, me thinke they are like those that blame men for putting sugar in their wine, and chide too bad about it, and say they marre al, but yet end with Gods blessing on their hearts. For indeed if I had knowne their diets, I could haue saued some of my cost, at least some of my paine; for when a verse ended with *ciuillitie*, I could easier after the ancient manner of rime, haue made *see*, or *flee*, or *decree* to answer it, leauing the accent vpon the last syllable, then hunt after three syllabled words to answer it with *facillitie*, *gentillitie*, *tranquillitie*, *hostillitie*, *scurrillitie*, *debillitie*, *agillitie*, *fragillitie*, *nobillitie*, *mobillitie*, which who mislike, may tast lampe oyle with their eares. And as for two syllabled meeters, they be so approoued in other languages, that the French call them the feminine rime, as the sweeter: and the one syllable the masculine. But in a word to answer this, and to make them for euer hold their peaces of this point; *Sir Philip Sidney* not onely vseth them, but affecteth them: *signifie*, *dignifie*: *shamed is*, *named is*, *blamed is*: *hide away*, *bide away*. Though if my many blotted papers that I haue made in this kinde, might affoord me authoritie to giue a rule of it, I would say that to part them with a one syllable meeter betweene them, would giue it best grace. For as men vse to sow with the hand and not with the whole sacke, so I would haue the eare fed but not cloyed with these pleasing and sweet falling meeters. For the third reproofe about the notes, sure they were a worke (as I may so call it) of supererogation, and I would wish sometimes they had bin left out, and the rather, if I be in such faire possibilitie to be thought a foole or fantasticall for my labour. True it is, I added some notes to the end of euery Canto, euen as if some of my friends and my selfe reading it together (and so it fell out indeed many times) had after debated vpon them, what had bene most worthie consideration in them, and so oftentimes immediatly I set it down. And whereas I make mention here and there of some of mine owne frends and kin, I did it the rather, because *Plutarke* in one place speaking of *Homer*, partly lamenteth, and partly blameth him, that writing so much as he did, yet in none of his workes there was any mention made, or so much as inkling to be gathered of what stocke he was, of what kindred, of what towne, nor saue for his language, of what countrey. Excuse me then if I in a worke that may perhaps last longer then a better thing, and being not ashamed of my kindred, name them here and there to no mans offence, though I meant not to make euerie body so far of my counsell why I did it, till I was told that some person of some reckening noted me of a little vanitie for it: and thus much for that point.

For my omitting and abreuiating some things, either in matters impertinent to vs, or in some too tedious flatteries of persons that we neuer heard of, if I haue done ill, I craue pardon; for sure I did it for the best. But if any being studious of the Italian, would for his better vnderstanding compare them, the first sixe bookes saue a little of the third, will stand him in steed. But yet I would not haue any man except, that I should obserue his phrase so strictly as an interpreter, nor the matter so carefully, as if it had bene a storie, in which to varie were as great a sin, as it were simplicitie in this to go word for word. But now to conclude, I shall pray you all that haue troubled your selues to read this my triple Apologie, to accept my labors, and to excuse my errors, if with no other thing, at least with the name of youth (which commonly hath need of excuses) and so presuming this pardon to be granted,

we shall part good frends. Onely let me intreate you in reading the
booke ensuing, not to do me that iniurie, that a
Potter did to *Ariosto*.

AN ADVERTISEMENT TO THE READER BEFORE

HE READE THIS POEME, OF SOME THINGS TO BE OBSERVED,
as well in the substance of this worke, as also in the setting forth thereof, with the use of the Pictures,
Table, and annotations to the same annexed.



Here are peradventure many men, and some of those both graue and godly men, that in respect they count all Poetrie as meerly tending to wantonnesse and vanitie, will at the very first sight reiect this booke, and not onely not allow, but blame and reprove the trauel taken in letting forth the same in our mother tongue. And surely for such censurers as will condemne without hearing the cause pleaded, I can be well content to haue them spare the labor in reading, which they thinke I haue lost in writing; and appealing from them, if not to higher at least to more indifferent iudges, namely such as wil vouchsafe to heare what can be spoken in defence of the matter, and then will yeeld (as wise men euer should do) to the stronger reason: I do to them direct this my short aduertisement, which (because all that may reade this booke are not of equall capacities) I will endeuer to explaine more plainly, then for the learned sort had haply bene requisite.

And first if any haue this scruple, that it might be hurtfull for his soule or conscience, to reade a booke of Poetry. *Of the matter of the booke tending to vertue.* as though it might alien his mind from vertue and religion, I referre him (beside many other excellent mens writings, both in defence and praise thereof) to a litle brieft treatise in the beginning of this booke, written by me generally in defence of Poemes, and specially of this present worke, which I dare affirme to be neither vicious nor profane, but apt to breed the quite contrary effects, if a great fault be not in the readers owne bad disposition.

Secondly I haue in the marginall notes quoted the apt similitudes, and pithie sentences or adages, with the best descriptions, and the excellent imitations, and the places and authors from whence they are taken. *The marginall notes.*

Further, where diuers stories in this worke seeme in many places abruptly broken off, I haue set directions in the margent, where to find the continuance of euery such storie, though I would not wish any to reade them in that order at the first reading, but if any thinke them worthy the twife reading, then he may the second time not vnconueniently vse it, if the meane matter betweene the so deuided stories (vpon which commonly they depend) be not quite out of his memorie. *Direction for continuing the diuers stories.*

Also (according to the Italian maner) I haue in a staffe of eight verses comprehended the contents of euery Book or Canto, in the beginning thereof, which hath two good vses, one to vnderstand the picture the perfecter, the other to remember the storie the better. *The contents of euery booke.*

As for the pictures, they are all cut in brasse, and most of them by the best workmen in that kind, that haue bin in this land this many yeares: yet I will not praise them too much, because I gaue direction for their making, and in regard thereof, I may be thought partiall; but this I may truly say, that (for mine owne part) I haue not seene any made in England better, nor (indeed) any of this kind in any booke, except it were a treatise set forth by that profound man master Broughton the last yeare, vpon the Reuelation, in which there are some three or foure pretie pictures (in octauo) cut in brasse very workmanly. As for other bookes that I haue seene in this Realme, either in Latine or English with pictures, as Liuius, Geiner, Alciats emblemes, a booke *de Spectris* in Latine, and in our tongue the Chronicles, the booke of Martyrs, the booke of hauking and hunting, and M. Whitneys excellent Emblemes, yet all their figures are cut in wood, and none in metall, and in that respect inferiour to these, at least (by the old prouerbe) the more cost, the more worship. *The pictures.*

The vse of the picture is euident, which is, that (hauing read ouer the booke) you may reade it (as it were againe) in the very picture; and one thing is to be noted, which euery one (haply) will not obserue, namely the perspective in euery figure. For the personages of men, the shapes of horses, and such like, are made large at the bottome, and lesfer vpwrd, as if you were to behold all the same in a plaine, that which is nearest seemes greatest, and the fardest shewes smallest, which is the chiefe art in picture. *The vse of the picture and the perspective.*

If the name of any man, woman, country, towne, horse, or weapon seeme strange to any, I haue made a table where to find it. And in the same table, a direction for the seuerall tales, where to begin and end, those that may conueniently be read single, of which kind there are many, and those not vnpleasant. *The Table. The Tales.*

Lastly, at the end of euery Book or Canto, because the Reader may take not onely delight, but profit in reading, I haue noted in all (as occasion is offered) the Morall, the Historie, the Allegorie, and the Allusion.

The Morall, that we may apply it to our owne manners and disposition, to the amendment of the same. *Morall.*

The Historie, both that the true ground of the poeme may appeare, (for learned men hold, that a perfect poeme must ground of a truth) (as I shew more at large in another place) as also to explaine some things that are lightly touched by him, as examples of all times, either of old or of late. *Historie.*

The Allegorie, of some things that are meerely fabulous, yet haue an allegoricall sence, which euery bodie at the first shew cannot perceiue. *Allegorie.*

The Allusion: of fictions, to be applied to some things done, or written of in times past, as also where it may be applied without offence to the time present. But these happen in very few bookes. *Allusion.*

And this is all that I haue to aduertise the Reader, for if any other notes happen to come after, it is but for want of oome in the margent, that they were faine to be put out of their due place. It remaines onely to wish (because I find it will be delightfull to many) that it may be hurtfull to none, lest (if it should) both they and I be called to account for it, where not onely euill workes, but idle words shall be punished.

Jo. Hart.



THE FIRST BOOKE OR CANTO OF ORLANDO FVRIOSO.

THE ARGVMENT.

*Charls hath the foyle, Angelica flies thence:
Renaldos horse holpe him his Loue to find:
Ferraw with him doth fight in her defence:
She flies againe, they stay not long behind.
Argalias ghost reproues Ferraws offence,
The Spaniard to new vow himselfe doth bind:
His mistris presence Sacrapant enjoyeth,
With Bradamant Renaldo him annoyeth.*



Of Dames, of Knights, of
armes, of loues delight,
Of courtesies, of high at-
tempts I speake,
Then whē y Moores trans-
ported all their might
On Affricke seas, the force
of France to breake:
Incited by the youthfull
heate and spight
Of Agramant their king, that vowd to wreake
The death of King Trayana (lately slaine)
Vpon the Romane Emperour Charlemaine.

I will no lesse *Orlandos* acts declare,
(A tale in prose ne verse yet sung or sayd)
Who fell bestraught with loue, a hap most rare,
To one that earst was counted wise and stayd:
If my sweet Saint ^b that causeth my like care,
My slender muse affoord some gracious ayd,
I make no doubt but I shall haue the skill,
As much as I haue promist to fulfill.

Vouchsafe (O Prince of most renowned race,
The ornament and hope of this our time)
T accept this gift presented to your grace,
By me your seruant rudely here in rime.
And though I paper pay and inke, in place
Of deeper debt, yet take it for no crime:

It may suffice a poore and humble debter,
To lay and if he could it should be better.

Here shall you find among the worthy peeres,
Whose praises I prepare to tell in verse,
Rogero, him from whom of auncient yceres
Your princely stems deriued, I reherse:
Whose noble mind by princely acts appeeres,
Whose worthy fame euen to the skie doth perle:
So you vouchsafe my ^d lowly stile and baile,
Among your high conceits a litle plase.

Orlando who long time had ^e loued deare,
Angelica the faire: and for her sake,
About the world, in nations far and neate,
Did high attempts performe and vndertake;
Returad with her into the West that yeare;
That *Charles* his power against the Turks did make:
And with the force of Germanie and France,
Neare Pyren ^f Alpes his standard did aduance.

To make the Kings of Affrike and of Spaine,
Repent their rash attempts and foolish vaunts,
One hauing brought from Affrike in his traine,
All able men to carry sword or launce,
The other mou'd the Spaniards now againe
To overthrow the goodly Realme of Fraunce.
And hither (as I said) *Orlando* went,
But of his coming straight he did repent.

A ij

^a This beginning
is taken by imi-
tation from Vir-
gil, the 1. of his
Aeneids, Arma
virumque cano:

^b Meaning here-
by his mistresse,
whom he speakes
as likewise in the
35. booke, a staffe.

^c This is by the
author intended
to Cardinal Hip-
polito, but by the
translator to a
Prince far more
worthy.

^d Imitation of Vir-
gil to Octauian:
Atque hanc sine
tempore curam
inter scelus hede-
tam tibi serpera
lauros.
^e This hath refe-
rence to a former
treasise called
Orlandos loue,
written by one
Boyardus.

^f The hills that
part France and
Spaine.

7
For here (behold how humane iudgements art,
And how the wiser sort are oft mistaken)
His Ladie whom he guarded had so farr,
Nor had in fights nor dangers great forsaken,
Without the dint of sword or open warr,
Amid his friends away from him was taken.
For *Charles* the great, a valiant Prince and wise,
Did this to quench a broile that did arise.

8

Betweene *Orlando* and *Renaldo* late,
There fell about *Angelica* some brall,
And each of them began the tother hate,
This Ladies loue had made them both so thrall.
But *Charles* who much mislikes that such debate
Betweene such friends should rise, on cause so small,
To *Namus* of Bauier in keeping gaue her,
And suffred neither of them both to haue her.

*Namus Duke
of Bauier.*

9

But promist he would presently bestow
The damsell faire, on him that in that fight,
The plainest prooffe should of his prowesse show,
And danger most the Pagans with his might,
But (ay the while) the Christens take the blow,
Their souldiers slaine, their Captaines put to flight,
The Duke him selfe a prisoner there was taken,
His tent was quite abandond and forsaken.

10

Where when the damsell faire a while had stayd,
That for the victor pointed was a pray,
She tooke her horse, ne farther time delayd,
But secretly conuayd her selfe away.
For she foresaw, and was full sore afayd,
That this to *Charles* would proue a dismall day.
And riding through a wood, she hapt to meet
A knight that came against her on his feet.

11

His curats on his helmet not vndone,
His sword and target ready to the same,
And through the wood so swiftly he did runne,
As they that go halfe naked for a game.
But neuer did a shepherds daughter shunne
More speedily a snake that on her came,
Then faire *Angelica* did take her flight,
When as she once had knowledge of the knight.

*Simile.
Imitatio of Vir-
gil. 2. Aeneid.
Improuisum af-
ferys veluti qui
sensibus anguē.*

12

This valiant knight was Lord of Clarimount,
Duke *Ammons* sonne, as you shall vnderstand,
Who hauing lost his horse of good account,
That by mishap was slipt out of his hand,
He followd him, in hope againe to mount,
Vntill this Ladies fight did make him stand,
Whose face and shape proportiond were so well,
They seeme the house where loue it selfe did dwell.

*Renaldo his
horses name was
Basardo.*

13

But she that shuns *Renaldo* all she may,
Vpon her horses necke doth lay the raine,
Through thicke and thin she gallopeth away,
Ne makes she choise of beaten way or plaine,
But giues her palfrey leaue to chuse the way,
And being mou'd with feare and with disdain,
Now vp, now downe, she neuer leaues to ride,
Till she arrived by a river side.

14

Fast by the streame *Ferrauu* she sees anone,
(Who noyd, in part with dust, and part with sweat)
Out of the battell hither came alone,
With drinke his thirst, with aire to swage his heat,
And minding backe againe to haue bene gone,
He was detaind with an vnlookt for let,
Into the streame by hap his helmet fell,
And how to get it out he cannot tell.

15

And hearing now the noise and mournfull crie
Of one with piteous voice demanding ayd,
Seeing the damsell eke approaching nie,
That nought but helpe against *Renaldo* prayd,
What wight it was, he guesst by and by,
Though looking pale, like one that had bene frayd,
And though she had not late bene in his fight,
He thought it was *Angelica* the bright.

16

And being both a stout and courteous knight,
And loue a little kindling in his brest,
He promist straight to aide her all he might,
And to performe what euer she request.
And though he want a helmet, yet to fight
With bold *Renaldo* he will do his best.
And both the one, the other straight defied,
Of hauing either others value tried.

17

Betweene them two, a combat fierce began,
With strokes that might haue pierst y hardest rocks:
While they thus fight on foote, and man to man,
And giue and take so hard and heavy knocks,
Away the damsell posteth all she can,
Their paine and trauell she requites with mocks.
So hard she rode while they were at their fight,
That she was cleane escaped out of sight.

18

When they long time contended had in vaine,
Who should remaine the maister in the field,
And that with force, with cunning, nor with paine,
The tone of them could make the other yeeld,
Renaldo first did moue the Knight of Spaine
(Although he vld such curtesie but seeld)
To make a truce; ne was he to be blamed,
For loue his heart to other fight inflamed.

19

You thought (said he) to hinder me alone,
But you haue hurt your selfe as much or more,
You see the faire *Angelica* is gone,
So soone we leese that earst we sought so sore.
Had you me tane or slaine, your gaine were none,
Sith you were ner the nere your loue therefore.
For while we two haue made this little stay,
She lets vs both alone and goth her way.

20

But if you loue the Ladie, as you say,
Then let vs both agree to find her out,
To haue her first will be our wisest way,
And when of holding her there is no doubt,
Then by consent let her remaine his pray,
That with his sword can proue him selfe most stout,
I see not else after our long debate,
How either of vs can amend his state.

Ferrauu

21

Ferrau (that felt small pleasure in the fight)
Agreed a sound and friendly league to make:
They lay aside all wrath and malice quight,
And at the parting from the running lake,
The Pagan would not let the Christen knight
To follow him on foote for manners sake:
But prayes him mount behind his horses backe,
And so they seeke the damsell by the tracke.

22

O auncient knights of true and noble hart,
They riuals were, one faith they liu'd not vnder,
Beside they felt their bodies shrewdly smart
Of blowes late giuen, and yet (behold a wonder)
Through thicke and thin, suspicion set apart,
Like friends they ride, and parted not asunder,
Vntill the horse with double spurring driued
Vnto a way parted in two arriued.

23

And being neither able to descrie
Which way was gone *Angelica* the bright,
Because the tracke of horses feet, whereby
They seeke her out, appeare alike in sight:
They part, and either will his fortune try,
The left hand one, the other takes the right.
The Spaniard when he wandred had a while,
Came whence he went, the way did him beguile.

24

He was arriu'd but there, with all his paine,
Where in the foord he let his helmet fall,
And of his Ladie (whom he lou'd in vaine)
He now had litle hope, or none at all.
His helmet now he thinkes to get againe,
And seekes it out, but seeke it while he shall,
It was so deeply sunken in the sand,
He cannot get it out at any hand.

25

Hard by the bank a tall yong *Pepler* grew,
Which he cut downe, thereof a pole to make,
With which each place in feeling and in vew,
To find his scull he vp and downe doth rake:
But lo a hap vnlookt for doth ensue,
While he such needlesse frutelesse paine doth take,
He saw a knight arise out of the brooke,
Breast hie, with visage grim, and angry looke.

26

The knight was arm'd at all points saue the hed,
And in his hand he held the helmet plaine,
That very helmet that such care had bred
In him that late had fought it with such paine.
And looking grimly on *Ferrau* he sed,
Ah faithlesse wretch, in promise false and vaine,
It grieues thee now this helmet so to misse,
That should of right be rendred long ere this.

27

Remember (cruell Pagan) when you killed
Me, brother to *Angelica* the bright:
You sayd you would (as I then dying willed)
Mine armour drowne, when finish't were the fight,
Now if that fortune haue the thing fulfilled,
Which thou thy self shouldst haue performd in right,
Greeue not thy selfe, or if thou wilt be greeued,
Greeue that thy promise cannot be beleued.

28

But if to want an helmet thou repine,
Get one wherewith thine honour thou maist saue,
Such hath *Orlando* Countie Paladine,
Rinaldo such, or one perchance more braue,
That was from *Almont* tane, this from *Mambrine*:
Win one of these, that thou with praise maist haue,
And as for this, surcease to seeke it more,
But leaue it as thou promisd me before.

29

Ferrau was much amaz'd to see the sprite,
That made this strange appearance vnexpected,
His voice was gone, his haire did stand vp right,
His senses all were so to feare subiected.
His heart did swell with anger and despight,
To heare his breach of promise thus objected,
And that *Argalia* (to the knight was named)
With iust reproofe could make him thus ashamed.

30

And wanting time, the matter to excuse,
And being guiltie of no litle blame,
He rested mute, and in a senselesse muse,
So sore his heart was tainted with the shame.
And by *Lusinas* life he vowd to vse
No helmet, till such time he gat the same,
Which from the stout *Almont* *Orlando* wan,
When as they two encountred man to man.

31

But he this vow to keepe more firmly ment,
And kept it better then the first he had,
Away he parted hence a malcontent,
And many dayes ensuing rested sad.
To seeke *Orlando* out is his intent,
With whom to fight he would be very glad.
But now what haps vnto *Rinaldo* fell,
That tooke the other way, tis time to tell.

32

Not farre he walkt, but he his horse had spide,
That praunsing went before him on the way,
Holla my boy holla (*Rinaldo* cride)
The want of thee annoyd me much to day.
But Bayard will not let his master ride,
But takes his heeles, and faster goth away.
His sight much anger in *Rinaldo* bred:
But follow we *Angelica* that fled.

33

That fled through woods and deserts all obscure,
Through places vninhabited and wast,
Ne could she yet repute her selfe secure,
But farther still she gallopeth in hast.
Each lease that stirres in her doth teare procure,
And maketh her affrighted and agast:
Each noise she heares, each shadow she doth see,
She doth mistrust it should *Rinaldo* be.

34

Like to a fawne, or kid of bearded goate,
That in the wood a tyger fierce espide,
To kill her dam, and first to teare the throate,
And then to feed vpon the hanch or side,
Both feare lest she might light on such a lot,
And seeke it selfe in thickest brackes to hide,
And thinkes each noise the wind or aire doth cause,
Is selfe in danger of the tygers claws.

A iij

This is a fit dec-
rum, so to make
Ferrau to fight
by his mothers
life, which is the
Spanish manner.

He finds *Orlando*,
the 12. booke in
Atlantes encha-
red pallace, the
28. staffe.

He finds his horse
the booke 77. staffe

Simile.

Riuals are those
that be sisters to
one woman, as
are competitors
to one office.

Ferrau.

Pepler is a tree
that groweth by
the water like a
Willow.

The ghost of *Ar-
galia*.

35

That day and night she wandred here and there,
And halfe the other day that did ensue,
Vntill at last she was arrived where,
A fine yong groue with pleasant shadow grew,
Neare to the which two little riuers were,
Whose moisture did the tender herbes renew,
And make a sweete and very pleasing sound,
By running on the sand and stonie ground.

36

Here she at last her selfe in safetie thought,
As being from *Renaldo* many a mile,
Tyr'd with annoy the heate and trauell brought,
She thinkes it best with sleepe the time beguile,
And hauing first a place conuenient sought,
She lets her horse refresh his limbes the while,
Who fed vpon the bankes well cloth'd with grasse,
And dranke the riuier water cleere as glasse.

37

Hard by the brooke an arbor she descride,
Wherein grew faire and very fragrant floures,
With roses sweet, and other trees beside,
Wherewith the place adorne the natiue boures,
So fenced in with shades on either side,
Safe from the heate of late or early houres:
The boughes and leaues so cunningly were mixt,
No sunne, no light, could enter them betwixt.

38

Within the tender herbes a bed do make,
Inuiting folke to take their rest and ease:
Here meanes this Ladie faire a nap to take,
And fells to sleepe, the place so well doth please.
Not long she lay, but her a noise did wake,
The trampling of a horse did her diseale,
And looking out as secret as she might,
To come all arm'd she saw a comely knight.

39

She knowes not yet if he be foe or friend,
Twixt hope and feare she doubtfully doth stand,
And what he meanes to do she doth attend,
And who it was she faine would vnderstand.
The knight did to the riuier side descend,
And resting downe his head vpon his hand,
All in a muse he sitteth still alone,
Like one transform'd into a marble stone.

40

He tarri'd in this muse an houre and more,
With looke cast downe in sad and heauie guise,
At last he did lament his hap so sore,
Yet in so sweete and comely mournfull wise,
So hard a heart no tyger euer bore,
But would haue heard such plaints with watrish eies.
His heart did seeme a mountaine full of flames,
His cheekes a streame of teares to quench the same.

41

*The lamentation
of Sacrapant.*

Alas (said he) what meanes this diuers passion?
I burne as fire, and yet as frost I freece,
I still lament, and yet I moue compassion,
I come too late, and all my labour leese.
I had but words and lookes for shew and fashion,
But others get the game, and gainefull fees:
If neither fruite nor floure come to my part,
Why should her loue consume my carefull hart?

42

Like to the rose I count the virgine pure,
That growth on natiue stem in garden faire,
Which while it stands with wals enuironed sure,
Where heardmen with their heards cannot repaire
To fauor it, it seemeth to allure
The morning dew, the heate, the earth, the aire.
Yong gallant men, and louely dames delight
In their sweet sent, and in their pleasing fight.

43

But when at once tis gathered and gone,
From proper stalke, where late before it grew,
The loue, the liking little is or none,
Both fauour, grace and beautie all adew.
So when a virgin grants to one alone
The precious floure for which so many sew,
Well he that getteth it may loue her best,
But she forgoes the loue of all the rest.

44

She may deserue his loue, but others hate,
To whom of loue she shewd her selfe so scant.
(Oh then my cruell fortune or my fate)
Others haue store, but I am staru'd with want:
Then leaue to loue this ladie so vngrate:
Nay lue to loue (behold I soone recant)
Yea first let life from these my limbs be rent,
Ere I to change my loue shall giue consent.

45

If some perhaps desirous are to know,
What wight it was with sorow so oppress,
Twas *Sacrapant* that was afflicted so,
And loue had bred this torment in his brest:
That trickling wound, that flattering cruell foe,
Most happie they that know and haue it least,
The loue of her I say procur'd his woe,
And she had heard and knew it long ago.

46

Her loue allur'd him from the Ester land,
Vnto the Westerne shores, where sets the Sunne,
And here he heard how by *Orlando*s hand,
A passage safe from th' Indies she had wonne.
Her sequestration he did vnderstand,
That *Charles* had made, and how the same was done
To make the knights more venterous and bold,
In fighting for the Floure de luce of gold.

47

And furthermore himselfe had present bene
When *Charles* his men were ouerthrowne and slaine.
Since then, he traueled farre to find this Queene,
But hitherto it hath bene all in vaine.
Now much despaire, and little hope betweene,
So rufully thereof he doth complaine,
And with such wailing words his woes rehearst,
As might the hardest stonie heart haue pearst.

48

And while in this most dolefull state he bides,
And sighes full oft, and sheddeth many a teare,
And speakes these same, and many words besides,
(Which I to tell for want of time forbear)
His noble fortune so for him prouides,
That all this came vnto his mistresse eare,
And in one moment he preuailed more
Then he had done in many yeares before.

Angelica

*Simile.
This is the
of Casulla
greatly be
the flou
secretus
horu, &c.*

Sim

*This
of the
sue
be to*

*"Su
of in
thay
red
Sun*

*The floure is
taken for En
is selfe, being
armes of En*

49

Angelica with great attention hard,
The mone, and plaint, that him tormented sore,
Who long had loued her, with great regard,
As she had triall, many yeares before,
Yet as a marble pillar cold and hard,
She not inclines to pittie him the more.
Like one that all the world doth much disdain,
And deemeth none worthie her loue againe.

50

But being now with danger compass round,
She thought it best to take him for her guide.
For one that were in water almost drownd,
Were verie stout, if for no helpe he cryde:
If she let passe the fortune now she found,
She thinks to want the like another tyde.
And furthermore for certaine this she knew,
That *Sacrapant* had bene her loue true.

51

Ne meant she tho to quench the raging fires,
That ay consum'd his faithfull louing heart,
Ne yet with that a loue most desires,
T' allwage the paine in all, or yet in part:
She meanes he first shall pull her from the briers,
And feed him then with words and womens art,
To make him first of all to serue her turne,
That done, to wonted coynesse to returne.

52

Vnto the riuer side she doth descend,
And toward him most goddesse like she came,
And said, all peace to thee my dearest frend,
With modest looke, and cald him by his name,
And further said, the Gods and you defend
My chastitie, mine honor and my fame.
And neuer grant by their diuine permission,
That I giue cause of any ^{*}such suspicion.

53

With how great ioy a mothers minde is fild,
To see a sonne, for whom she long had mourned,
Whom she hard late in battell to be kild,
And saw the troopes without him home returned,
Such ioy had *Sacrapant* when he behild,
His Ladie deere: his teares to smiles are turned,
To see her beautie rare, her comely fauour,
Her princely presence, and her stately hauour.

54

Like one all rauisht with her heavenly face,
Vnto his loued Ladie he doth runne,
Who was content in armes him to embrace,
Which she perhaps at home wold not haue done,
But doubting now the dangerous time and place,
She must go forward as she hath begun,
In hope by his good seruice and assistance,
To make her home returne without resistance.

55

And in most lou'ly manner she doth tell,
The strange aduentures, and the diuers chance,
That since they two did part to her betell,
Both on the way, and since she came to France:
And how *Orlando* vsed her right well,
Defending her from danger and mishance,
And that his noble force and magnanimie,
Had still preseru'd the floure of her virginie.

56

It might be true, but sure it was incredible,
To tell to one that were discreet and wise,
But vnto *Sacrapant* it seemed poss ble,
Because that loue had dastled so his eyes:
Loue causeth that we see to seeme inuisible,
And makes of things not seene, a shape to rise.
It is a prouerbe vsed long ago,
We loone beleue the thing we would haue so.

57

But to himselfe thus *Sacrapant* doth say,
B't that my Lord of *Anglant* were so mad,
To take no pleasure of so faire a pray,
When he both time and place, and power had,
Yet am not I obliged any way,
To imitate a president so bad.
He rather take my pleasure while I may,
Then waile my want of wit another day.

58

He gather now the fresh and fragrant rose,
Whose beautie may with standing still bespent,
One cannot do a thing (as I suppose)
That better can a womans minde content:
Well may they seeme much grieued for a glose,
And weepe and waile, and dolefully lament,
There shall no foolish plaints, nor fained ire,
Hinder me to encarnat my desire.

59

This said, forthwith he did himselfe prepare,
T' assault the fort that easly would be wonne,
But loe a sodaine hap that bred new care,
And made him cease his enterprife begonne,
For of an enemy he was aware,
He clapt his helmet late before vndone,
And armed all, he mountereth one his best
And standeth readie with his speare in rest.

60

Behold a warrior whom he did not know,
Came downe the wood in semblance like a knight, *Bradamant*.
The furniture was all as white as snow,
And in the helme a plume of fethers white.
King *Sacrapant* by prooffe doth plainly show,
That he doth take the thing in great despite,
To be disturbd and hindred from that pleasure,
That he preferd before each other treasure.

61

Approching nie, the warrior he deside,
And hopesto set him quite beside the seat:
The other with such loftie words replide,
As persons vse, in choler and in heat.
At last when glorious vaunts were laid aside,
They come to strokes: and each to do his feat,
Doth couch his speare, and running thus they sped,
Their courters both encountred hed to hed.

62

As Lions meete, or Bulls in pastures greene,
With teeth & horns, & staine with blood the field,
Such eger fight these warriors was betweene,
And eithers speare had pearst the tothers sheild,
The found that of these strokes had raised beene,
An eccho lowd along the vale did yeeld.
T' was happie that their curats were so good,
The Lances else had pierced to the blood.

A iij

Sentence.

Orlando as
Lord of AnglantOuid. vim licet
appelles, grata est
vix illa puella,
quod iuuat in-
uice sepe dedisse
volunt.This is the phrase
of the east coun-
trie people: peace
be to you.Such is the respect
of his subjects: con-
stant he discou-
red afore.
Simile.

Simile.

*Simile.
The like is in
Dant of goats.*

63
For quite vnable now about to wheele,
They butt like rammes, the one the others head,
Whereof the Pagans horle such paine did fee,
That ere long space had past he fell downe dead.
The tothers horle a litle gan to reele,
But being spurd, full quickly vp he sped.
The Pagans horle thus ouerthrowne and slaine,
Fell backward greatly to his masters paine,

64
That vnknowne champion seeing thother downe,
His horle vpon him lying dead in vew,
Expecting in this fight no more renowne,
Determined not the battell to renew.
But by the way that leadeth from the towne,
The first appointed iourney doth pursue,
And was now ridden halfe a mile at least,
Before the Pagan parted from his beast.

*Simile.
The like is in O-
uid de tristibus 3
Ele. Haud aliter
stupor quam qui
Iouis ignibus
actus vult & est
vixit nesciens ipse
sua.*

65
Like as the tiller of the fruitfull ground,
With sodaine storme and tempest is astonished
Who sees the flash, & heares the thunders sound,
And for their masters sakes, the cattell punished,
Or when by hap a faire old pine he found,
By force of raging winds his leaues diminished.
So stood amazd the Pagan in the place,
His Ladie present at the wofull cate.

66
He fetcht a sigh most deeply from his heart,
Not that he had put out of ioynt, or lamed
His arme, his legge, or any other part,
But chiefly he, his euill fortune blamed,
At such a time, to hap so ouerthwart,
Before his loue, to make him so ashamed:
And had not she some cause of speech found out,
He had remained speechlesse out of doubt.

67
My Lord (said she) what ailes you be so sad?
The want was not in you, but in your steed,
For whom a stable, or a pasture had
Beene fitter then a course at tilt indeed.
Nor is that aduerse partie verie glad,
As well appeares, that parted with such speed,
For in my iudgement they be said to yeeld,
That first leaue off, and do depart the feeld.

68
Thus while she giues him comfort all she may,
Behold there came a messenger in post,
Blowing his horne, and riding downe the way,
Where he before his horse, and honor lost.
And coming nearer he of them doth pray,
To tell if they had seene passe by that cost,
A champion armed at all points like a knight,
The shield, the horse, and armour all of white.

69
I haue both seene the knight, and felt his force,
(Said *Sacrapant*) for here before you came,
He cast me downe and also kild my horse,
Ne know I (that doth greeue me most) his name.
Sir (quoth the post) the name I will not force,
To tell, sith you desire to know the same,
First, know that you were conquerd in this fight,
By vallew of a damsell faire and bright.

Of passing strength, but of more passing hew,
And *Bradamant*, this damsell faire is named,
She was the wight, whose meeting you may rew,
And all your life hereafter be ashamed.
This said, he turnd his horse and bad adew.
But *Sacrapant* with high disdainne enflamed,
Was first so wroth, and then so shamed thereto,
He knew not what to say, nor what to do.

71
And after he had staid a while and musd,
That at a womans hands he had receiued,
Such a disgrace as could not be excusd,
Nor how he might reuenge it he perceiued,
With thought hereof his mind was so confusd,
He stood like one of wit and sense bereaued.
At last he go'th, a better place to finde,
He takes her horse and makes her mount behind.

72
Now hauing rode a mile, or there about,
They heard a noyle a trampling on the ground,
They thought it was some companie or rout,
That caused in the woods so great a sound:
At last they see a warlike horle, and stout,
With guiled barb, that cost full many a pound,
No hedge, no ditch, no wood, no water was,
That stopped him where he was bent to passe.

73
Angelica casting her eye aside:
Except (said she) mine eyes all dazled be,
I haue that famous horse *Bayardo* lide,
Come trotting downe the wood, as seemes to me:
(How well for vs our fortune doth prouide)
It is the verie same, I know tis he:
On one poore nag to ride we two were loth,
And here he commeth fit to serue vs both.

74
King *Sacrapant* alighteth by and by,
And thinkes to take him gently by the raine,
But with his heeles the horse doth streight reply,
As who should say, his rule he did disdainne.
It happie was he stood the beast not nye,
For if he had, it had beene to his paine,
For why, such force the horse had in his heele,
He would haue burst a mountaine all of Steele.

75
But to the damsell gently he doth go,
In humble manner, and in lowly sort.
A spaniell after absence fauneth so,
And seekes to make his master play, and sport,
For *Bayard* cald to mind the damsell tho,
When she vnto *Albracca* did resort,
And vld to feed him for his masters sake,
Whom she then lou'd, and he did her forsake.

76
She takes the bridle boldly in her hand,
And strokt his brest, and necke, with art and skill:
The horse that had great wit to vnderstand,
Like to a lambe, by her he standeth still,
And while *Bayardo* gently there did stand,
The Pagan got him vp, and had his will.
And she that erst to ride behind was faine,
Into her saddle mounted now againe.

And

*This post
sakes
Booke 1.*

*David
imp
be
up
D
is
at*

*Bayardo
so
that
suffer
quies
master.*

Simile.

*Albracca
in the
table.*

OF ORLANDO FURIOSO.

77

And being newly settled in her seate,
She saw a man on foote all armed runne,
Straight in her mind she gan to chafe and fret,
Because she knew it was Duke Ammons sonne,
Most earnestly he sude her loue to get,
More earnestly she seekes his loue to shunne.
Once she lou'd him, he hated her as much,
And now he loues, she hates, his hap was such.

78

The cause of this first from two fountaines grew,
Like in the tast, but in effects vnlike,
Plac'd in Ardena, each in others vew,
Who taste the one, loues dart his heart doth strike,
Contrary of the other doth enswew,
Who drinke thereof, their louers shall mislike.
Renaldo dranke of one, and loue much pained him,
The other dranke this damsell that disdain'd him.

79

This liquor thus with secret venom mingled,
Makes her to stand so stiffely in the way,
On whom Renaldos heart was wholly kindled,
Though scarce to looke on him she can away,

But from his sight desiring to be singled,
With soft low voice the Pagan she doth pray,
That he approach no nearer to this knight,
But flie away with all the speed he might.

80

Why then (quoth he) make you so small esteeme
Of me, as though that I to him should yeeld?
So weake and faint my forces do you deeme,
That safe from him your selfe I cannot shield.
Then you forget Albracca it should seeme,
And that same night, when I amid the field,
Alone vnarmed did defend you then,
Against king Agrican and all his men.

81

No sir, said she, (ne knowes she what to say)
Because Renaldo now approacht so nie,
And threatned so the Pagan in the way,
When vnder him his horse he did espie,
And saw the damsell taken as a pray,
In whose defence he meanes to liue and die.
But what fell out betweene these warriors feare,
Within the second booke I do rehearse.

In this first booke may be noted in Angelica the vngratefulnes of women to their worthiest suters. In the foure knights, The Morall.
the passionate affections of loue and fancy. And whereas first Bradamant, and after Renaldo interrupt Sacrapant of his
lasciuious purpose, may be noted, both the weake holdfast that men haue of worldly pleasures, as also how the heauens do
euer fauour chaste desires. Lastly, in the two fountaines may be noted the two notable contrarieties of the two affections,
of loue and disdaine, that infinite sorts of people daily tast of, while they runne wandring in that inextricable labyrinth
of loue.

Concerning the historie, we find that in the time of Charles the great (called Charlemaine) sonne of Pepin king of France, the Turkes with a great power innaded Christendome, Spaine being then out of the faith, (as some part thereof
was euen within these foor score yeares, namely Granada, which was held by the Moores.) And one Marcus Antonius
Sabellicus writeth, that for certaintie there liued in that time of Charlemaine, many of those famous Palladines, that
are in this worke so often named, and especially he maketh mention of Renaldo and Orlando, affirming that they were
indred very martiall men, and how Charles obtained great victories by their seruice, and namely he telleth of one Fer-
raw a Spaniard of great stature and strength, who tooke certaine Frenchmen prisoners, afterward rescued by Orlando,
which Orlando fought with him hand to hand two whole dayes, and the second vanquish't him. Further, the same author
affirmeth, that the same Charlemaine, for his great fauour shewed to the Church of Rome, was by Leo the third named
Emperour of Rome: and that he was a iust, a fortunate, and a mercifull Prince, and one that within Europe as well
as without did attaine great conquests, suppressing the violent gouernement of the Lombards, and taming the rebelli-
ous Saxons, Huns and Baudrians, and conquering a great part of Spaine: all which testimonies shew, that the ground of
this Poeme is true, as I shall haue partiular occasion in sundry of the books ensuing to note: and thus much for the story.

For the allegory, in this Canto I find not much to be said, except one should be so curious to search for an allegory where
none is intended by the author himself: yet an allegory may not vnfitly be gathered of the description of Bayardos follow-
ing Angelica, which may thus be taken. Bayardo a strong horse, without rider or gouernor, is likened to the desire of mā,
that runs furiously after Angelica, as it were after pleasure or honor, or whatsoever man doth most inordinately affect.

Likewise in that Angelica flieth from Renaldo, we may take an allegorical instruction, that the temptations of the flesh
are overcome, chiefly by flying from them, as the Scripture it selfe teacheth, saying, Resist the diuel, but fly fornication.

Further, in that Bayardo striketh at Sacrapant, but yeeldeth to Angelica, it may be noted how the courage of our
minds that cannot be abated with any force, are often subdued by flatterie and gentle vsage, till they be in the end
euen ridden as it were with slauerie.

And whereas Renaldo followes Angelica on foote, some haue noted thereby to be meant sensualitie, that is euer in
base and earthly, or rather beastly affections, neuer looking vpward.

For Allusions, there are not any worth the noting in this Canto, save that it seemes in Renaldos horse Bayardo, he
seemes to allude to Bucephalus Alexanders horse.



THE SECOND BOOKE.

THE ARGUMENT.

*A Frise betweene two vinals parts the fray,
By magicke art: Renaldo hasteth home,
But in embassage he is sent away,
When tempest makes the sea to rage and some.
Bradant seeks her spouse, but by the way,
While she about the country wyld did rome,
Met Pinnabel, who by a craftie traine,
Both sought, and thought the Ladie to haue slaine.*



¹ Blind god Loue, why takst
thou such delight,
With darts of diuers force
our hearts to wound?
By thy too much abusing of
thy might,
This discord great in hu-
mane hearts is found.
When I would wade the
shallow foord aright,
Thou draw'st me to the deepe to haue me dround,
From those loue me, my loue thou dost recall,
And place it where I find no loue at all.

² Thou mak'st most faire vnto Renaldo seeme
Angelica, that takes him for a foe,
And when that she of him did well esteeme,
Then he dislikt, and did refuse her thoe.
Which makes her now of him the lesse to deeme,
Thus (as they say) she renders *quit pro quo*.
She hateth him, and doth detest him to,
She first will die, ere she will with him go.

³ Renaldo (full of stately courage) cride,
Downe thee from of my horse, downe by and by,
So robd to be I neuer can abide,
But they that do it dearly shall aby,
Also this Ladie you must leaue beside,
Else one of vs in her defence will dye.
A horse so good, and such a goodly dame,
To leaue vnto a theefe it were a shame.

⁴ What? me a theefe? thou in thy throat dost lye.
(Quoth Sacrapant, that was as hot as he)

Theefe to thy selfe, thy malice I defie,
For as I heare, the name is due to thee:
But if thou dare thy might and manhood trie,
Come take this Ladie, or this horse from me.
Though I allow in this of thine opinion,
That of the world she is the matchlesse minion.

⁵ Like as two mastiue dogges with hungrie mawes,
Mou'd first to hate, from hate to raging ire,
Approch with grinning teeth, and grisly iaws,
With staring eyes, as red as flaming fire,
At last they bite, and scratch with teeth and claws,
And teare themselues, and tumble in the mire.
So after byting and reprochfull words,
Did these two worthy warriors draw their swords.

⁶ One was on foote, the tother was one horse,
You thinke perhaps, the horseman vantage had,
No sure no whit: he would haue wisht to skore,
For why, at last to light he must be glad,
The beast did know thus much by natures force,
To hurt his master were a seruice bad.
The pagan could not nor with spur nor hand,
Make him vnto his mind to go or stand,

⁷ He stops, when he should make a full carrie,
He runnes or trots, when he would haue him rest,
At last to throw his rider in the mire,
He plungeth with his head beneath his breast.
But Sacrapant that now had small desire,
At such a time, to tame so proud a beast,
Did worke so well at last by sleight and force,
On his left side, he lighted from his horse.

In most of his
bookes the first
Ruffian some-
times more, haue
some greater mo-
rall or sentence
so the master is
hand.

These foule & vn-
knightly word
must be excus'd
so the rage of
their passion
is.

When from Bayardos ouer furious might,
The Pagan had himfelfe discharged fo,
With naked fwords there was a noble fight,
Sometimes they lye aloft, sometimes aloe,
And from their blowes the fire flies out in fight:
I thinke that *Vulcans* hammers beat more flow,
Where he within the mountaine *Atnas* chaps,
Doth forge for loue, the fearfull thunderclaps.

A description of
a combat between
two knights skil
full in their wea-
pon.

Sometimes they profer, then they pause a while,
Sometime strike out, like maisters of the play,
Now stand vpright, now stoup another while,
Now open lye, then couer all they may.
Now ward, then with a flip the blow beguile:
Now forward step, now backe a little way:
Now round about, and where the tone giues place,
There still the other preffeth in his place.

Puberta was
Renaldos sword.

Renaldo did the Pagan Prince inuade,
And strike at once with all the might he coud,
The other doth oppose against the blade,
A shield of bone and Steele of temper good.
But through the same a way *Fusberta* made,
And of the blow rebounded all the wood:
The Steele, the bone like yfe in peeces broke,
And left his arme benumbed with the stroke.

Which when the faire and fearfull damsell saw,
And how great damage did ensue thereby,
She looked pale, for anguish and for aw,
Like those by doome that are condemnd to dye:
She thinks it best her selfe from hence withdraw,
Else will *Renaldo* take her by and by,
The same *Renaldo* whom she hateth so,
Though loue of her procured all his wo.

Vnto the wood she turnes her horse in hast,
And takes a little narrow path and blind;
Her fearefull looks oft times she backe doth cast,
Still doubting lest *Renaldo* came behind:
And when that she a little way had past,
Alow the vale a Hermit she did find:
A weake old man, with beard along his brest,
In shew deuout, and holier then the rest.

An vnchast ha-
mest, or rather hy-
pocrite, in whose
person he sou-
cheth the holy
Churchmen, that
spend much de-
uotion on such
Sapras.

He seemd like one with fasts and age consumed,
He rode vpon a slouthfull going asle.
And by his looke, a man would haue presumed,
That of his conscience scrupulous he was.
Yet her young face, his old sight so illumed,
When as he saw the damsell by to passe:
(Though weake and faint, as such an age behoued?)
That charitie his courage somewhat moued.

The damsell of the Hermit askt the way,
That might vnto some hav'n town lead most neare,
That she might part from France with out delay,
Where once *Renaldos* name she might not heare.
The frier that could enchaunt, doth all he may,
To comfort her, and make her of good cheare,
And to her safetie promising to looke,
Out of his bag forthwith he drew a booke.

A booke of skill and learning so profound,
That of a leafe he had not made an end,
But that there rose a sprite from vnder ground,
Whom like a page he doth of arrants send.
This sprite by words of secrete vertue bound,
Goes where the knights their combat did intend:
And while they two were fighting verie hard,
He enters them betweene without regard.

Good sirs (quoth he) for courtisie sake me show,
When one of you the tother shall haue slaine,
And after all the trauell you bestow,
What guerdon you expect for all your paine;
Behold, *Orlando* striking nere a blow,
Not breaking staffe, while you striue here in vaine,
To Paris ward the Ladie faire doth carie,
While you on fighting vndiscreetly tarie.

U saw from hence a mile, or thereabout,
Orlando with *Angelica* alone,
And as for you, they iest and make a flout,
That fight where praise and profit can be none.
Twer best you quickly went to seeke them out,
Before that any farther they be gone;
Within the walls of Paris if they get,
Your eye on her againe you shall not set.

When as the knights this message had receiued,
They both remaind amazed, dumbe and sad,
To heare *Orlando* had them so deceiued,
Of whom before great ielosie they had;
But good *Renaldo* so great griefe conceiued,
That for the time, like one all raging mad,
He sware without regard of God or man,
That he will kill *Orlando* if he can.

And seeing where his horse stood still vntide,
He thither goes: such hast he make away,
He offers not the Pagan leaue to ride,
Nor at the parting once adieu doth say.
Now Bayard felt his maisters spurs in side,
And gallops maine, ne maketh any stay
No riuers, rocks, no hedge, nor ditches wide,
Could stay his course, or make him step aside.

Nor maruell if *Renaldo* made some hast,
To mount againe vpon his horses backe.
You heard before how many dayes had past,
That by his absence he had felt great lacke.
The horse (that had of humane wit some tast,)
Ran not away for any iadish knacke,
His going onely was to this intent,
To guide his master where the Ladie went.

The horse had spide her when she tooke her flight,
First from the tent, as he thereby did stand,
And followd her, and kept her long in sight;
As then by hap out of his master hand,
(His master did not long before alight,
To combat with a Baron hand to hand)
The horse pursude the damsell all about,
And holpe his master still to find her out.

22
He followd her through valley, hill and plaine,
Through woods and thickets for his masters sake,
Whom he permitted not to touch the raine,
For feare lest he some other way should take,
By which *Renaldo* though with mickle paine
Twise found her out, twice she did him forsake:
For first *Ferraw*, then *Sacrapant* withstood,
That by twice finding her he did no good.

23
Bayardo trusting to the lying sprite,
Whose false (but likely) tale so late he hard,
And doubting not it was both true and right,
He doth his dutie now with due regard.
Renaldo prickt with loue and raging spite,
Doth pricke apace, and all to Paris ward,
To Paris ward he maketh so great shift,
The wind it selfe seemes not to go so swift.

24
Such hast he made *Orlando* out to find,
That scant he ceast to trauell all the night,
So deeply sticke the storie in his mind,
That was of late deuised by the sprite:
Betimes and late as first he had assignd,
He rode vntill he saw the towne in sight:
Where *Charles* whose chance all christned hearts did
With the small relikes of his powre withdrew. (rew,

25
And for he lookes to be assaulted then,
Or else besieged, he vseth all his care,
To store himselfe with victuall and with men.
The walls eke of the towne he doth repare,
And take aduice, both how, and where, and when,
For his defence each thing he may prepare.
An armie new to make he doth intend,
And for new souldiers into England send.

26
He minds to take the field againe ere long,
And trie the hap of warre another day,
And all in hast to make himselfe more strong,
He sends *Renaldo* Englands ayd to pray.
Renaldo thought the Emperour did him wrong,
To send him in such hast, and grant no stay.
Not that ill will to th'land he did carie,
But for another cause he faine would tarie.

27
Yet now although full sore against his mind,
As loth to leaue the Ladie he so loued,
Whom he in Paris hoped had to find,
Because to obey his Prince it him behoued,
He taketh this embassage thus assignd,
And hauing straight all other lets remoued,
He posted first to Callis with great hast,
And there embarkt ere halfe next day was past.

28
Against the mariners and masters minds,
(Such hast he made to haue returned backe)
He takes the sea though swelling with great winds,
And threatning ruine manifest and wracke.
Fierce *Boreas* that himselfe despised finds,
Doth beate on seas with tempest foule and blacke,
By force whereof the waues were raisd so hie,
The very tops were sprinkled all thereby.

29
The mariners take in their greater saile,
And by the wind they lie, but all in vaine,
Then backe againe they bend without auaille,
Now they are out, they cannot in againe.
No (said the wind) my force shall so preuaile,
Your bold attempts shall put you to some paine.
It was a folly any more to striue,
Needs must they follow as the wind did driue.

30
In the foreship sometimes the blast doth blow,
Straight in the poope, the seas breake to the skies.
Needs must they beare a saile, though very low,
To void the waues that higher still did rise:
But sith my web so diuerse now doth grow,
To weaue with many threds I must deuise,
I leaue *Renaldo* in this dangerous place,
And of his sister speake a litle space.

31
I meane the noble damsell *Bradamant*,
Of *Ammon* daughter, and dame *Beatrice*,
In whose rare mind no noble part did want,
So full of value, and so void of vice,
King *Charles* and France of her might rightly vaunt,
So chaste, so faire, so faithfull and so wise,
And in the feates of armes of so great fame,
A man might guesse by that of whence she came.

32
There was a Knight enamoured on this dame,
That out of Affricke came with *Agramant*,
Rogero hight, so was his fathers name,
(His mother was the child of *Agolant*)
The damsell that of worthy lineage came,
And had a heart not made of adamant,
Disdained not the loue of such a knight,
Although he had but seeld bene in her sight.

33
Long trauell and great paine she had endured,
And rid alone her loue to haue found,
Ne would she thinke her safetie more assured,
If with an armie she were garded round.
You heard before how she by force procured
King *Sacrapant* to fall and kisse the ground,
The wood she past, and after that the mountaine,
Vntill at last she saw a goodly fountaine.

34
A goodly fountaine running in a field,
All full of trees, whose leaues do neuer fade,
Which did to passengers great pleasure yeeld,
The running streame so sweete a murmur made,
Vpon the South, a hill the Sunne did shield,
The ground gaue floures, & groues a grateful shade:
Now here the dame casting her eye aside,
A man at armes fast by the brooke descried.

35
A man at armes she spied by the brooke,
Whose banks with flowres of diuers hew were clad,
Of which sweet place he so small pleasure rooke,
His face did shew his heart was nothing glad,
His targe and helmet were not farre to lookes,
Vpon a tree where tide his horse he had:
His eyes were swolne with tears, his mind oppressed,
With bitter thoughts that had his heart distressed.

He makes the
wind to speake,
by a figure called
Prosopopoeia.

He comes to him
againe, 4. booke
stasse 21.

Bradamant wh^o
he left in the first
booke, stasse 64.

Looke in the In-
dex of names of
the story of *Agolant*
and *Rogero*'s
mother named
Galliacolle.

The laurell, the
yew, and the
holly be euer
green.

Pinnabel son of
Anselmus Earle
of *Mazanza*.

THE SECOND BOOKE

12

36

The damsell faire entic'd by deepe desire,
That all (but chiefly women) haue to know,
All strangers states, doth earnestly require
The dolefull knight his inward griefe to show.
Who marking well her manner and attire,
Her courteous speech with him preuailed so,
He tel's his state, esteeming by the sight,
That needs she must haue bene some noble knight.

*Atalanta was to
Rogero a great
Necromancer,
who did worke
thus by enchant-
ment.*

37

Good sir (said he) you first must vnderstand,
I serued Charles against the king of Spaine,
I horsemen had and footmen in my band,
In ambush plac'd the Spanish king I haue slaine:
I brought the fairest Ladie in this land,
And my best loued with me in my traine,
When todainly ere I thereof was ware,
There came a horseman that procur'd my care.

38

Perhap a man, or some infernall sprite,
In humane shape, I cannot certaine say,
But this I say, he tooke the damsell bright,
Euen as a faulcon sealeth on his pray,
So he my louing Ladie did affright,
And to affrighted bare her quite away.
And when I thought to rescue her by force,
Aloft in aire he mounted with his horse.

39

Euen as a rau'nous kite that doth espie
A little chicken wandring from the other,
Doth catch him straight, and carries him on hie,
That now repents he was not with his mother.
What could I do? my horse wants wings to flie,
Scant could he set one leg before the tother,
He traueled had before so many dayes,
Among the painfull hills and stonie wayes.

Simile.

40

But like to one that were his wit beside,
I leaue my men to do my first intent,
Not caring of my selfe what should betide,
(So strongly to my fancie was I bent)
And tooke the blind god Cupid for my guide,
By wayes as blind to seeke my loue I went.
And though my sense, my guide, my way were blind,
Yet on I go in hope my loue to find.

41

A senight space abating but a day,
About the woods and mountaines I did range,
In sauage deserts wilde and void of way,
Where humane steps were rare and very strange.
Fast by the desert place a plaine there lay,
That shewed from the rest but little change,
Saue onely that a castle full of wonder
Did stand in rockes that had bene clou'n asunder.

*Atlantes castle
made by enchanta-
ment.*

42

This castle shines like flaming fire a farre,
Not made of lime and stone as ours are here:
And still as I approcht a little narre,
More wonderfull the building doth appeare.
It is a fort impregnable by warre,
Compacted all of mettall shining cleare.
The fiends of hell this fort of Steele did make,
And mettall tempred in the * Stigian lake.

*So they write
that Achilles
armor was tem-
pered to make it
impeneetrable.*

43

The towres are all of Steele, and polisht bright,
There is on them no spot or any rust,
It shines by day, by darke it giueth light,
Here dwels this robber wicked and vniust,
And what he gets against all lawes and right,
The lawlesse wretch abuseth here by lust,
And here he keepes my faire and faithfull louer,
Without all hope that I may her recover.

44

Ah wo was me, in vaine I sought to helpe,
I see the place that keepes that I loue best,
Euen as a foxe that crying heares her whelpe,
Now borne aloft into the Eagles nest,
About the tree she goes, and faine would helpe,
But is constiaind for want of wings to rest.
The rocke so steepe, the castle is so hie,
None can get in except they learne to flie.

45

And as I tarri'd in the plaine, behold
I saw two knights come riding downe the plaine,
Led by desire and hope to win this hold,
But their desire and hope was all in vaine.
Gradasso was the first of courage bold,
A king of Serican that held the raine.
Rogero next, a man of noble nation,
Of yeares but yong, but of great estimation.

46

A little dwarfe they had to be their guide,
Who told me that they came to trie their force
Against the champion that doth vse to ride
Out of this castle on the winged horse.
Which when I heard, to them for helpe I cride,
And prayd them of my case to take remorse,
And that they would, if twere their chance to win,
Set free my loue that there was locked in.

47

And all my griefe to them I did vnfold,
Affirming with my teares my tale too true:
No sooner I my heauy hap had told,
But they were come within the castles vew,
I stood aloofe the battell to behold,
And praid to God good fortune might ensue.
Beneath the castle lies a little plaine,
Exceeding not an arrow shoote or twaine.

48

And as they talkt who first should fight or last,
They were arriued to the castle hill,
At length Gradasso (whether lots were cast,
Or that Rogero yeelded to his will)
Doth take his horne, and blew therewith a blast,
The noise whereof the castle wals did fill.
And straight with greater speed then can be guest,
Came out the rider of the flying beast.

49

And as we see strange cranes are wont to do,
First stalke a while, ere they their wings can find,
Then soare from ground not past a yard or two,
Till in their wings they gatherd haue the wind,
At last they mount the very clouds vnto,
Triangle wise, according to their kind:
So by degrees this Mage begins to flie,
The bird of Ioue can hardly mount so hie.

*Simile.
Scarcely
because of it
is a pigeon
that gathereth
the wind
They first
triangle
wise
mount
Magicians*

And

50

And when he sees his time, and thinkes it best,
He falleth downe like lead in tearefull guise,
Euen as the faulcon doth the fowle arrest,
The ducke and mallard from the brooke that rise,
So he descending with his speare in rest,
Doth pierce the aire in strange and monstrous wise,
And ere *Gradaſſo* were thereof admonished,
He felt a stripe that made him halfe astonied.

51

The Mage vpon *Gradaſſo* brake his speare,
Who strikes in vaine vpon the aire and wind,
Away he flue without or hurt or teare,
And leaue *Gradaſſo* many a pace behind.
This fierce encounter was so hard to beare,
That good *Alfana* to the ground inclind,
This same *Alfana* was *Gradaſſo*'s mare,
The fairst and best that euer saddle bare.

52

Aloft the starres the forc'rer doth ascend,
And wheelles about, and downe he comes againe,
And on *Rogero* he his force doth bend,
That had compassion on *Gradaſſo*'s paine:
So tore th' assault *Rogero* did offend,
His horse the force thereof could not sustaine,
And when to strike againe he made account,
He saw his foe vp to the clouds to mount.

53

Sometimes the Mage *Rogero* doth assaile,
Straightway *Gradaſſo* he doth set vpon,
And oft they strike againe without auail,
So quickly he at whom they strike is gone,
He winds about as ships do vnder saile,
His sailes are wings, and rest he giues them none,
But sets vpon them in so sudden wise,
That he amazed and dazeld both their eyes.

54

Betweene this one aloft, and two alow,
This conflict did no little space endure,
Vntill at last the night began to grow,
With mistie clouds making the world obscure:
I saw this fight, the truth thereof I know,
I present was thereat, yet am I sure,
That very few (except the wiser sort)
Will credence giue to such a strange report.

55

This heauenly hellish warriour bare a shield
On his left arme that had a silken case,
I cannot any cause or reason yeeld,
Why he would keepe it couerd so long space:
It had such force, that who so it beheld,
Such shining light it striketh in their face,
That downe they fall with eyes and senses closed,
And leaue their corps of him to be disposed.

56

The target like the carbuncle doth shine,
Such light was neuer seene with mortall eye,
It makes to ground the lookers on decline,
Be they farre off, or be they standing nie:
And as it closed their sight, it closed mine,
That in a trance no little space was I.
At last when I awakt and rose againe,
The aire was darke, and voided was the plaine.

57

The forcerer hath tane them (I surmise)
Into his cattle, as is likely most,
And by this light that dazeld all our eies,
My hope is gone, their libertie is lost:
This is the truth, ne do I ought deuise,
You heare the same, I felt it to my cost,
Now iudge if I haue reason to complaine,
That haue and do endure such endlesse paine.

58

When as this Knight his dolefull tale had done,
He fate him downe all chearlesse in the place,
This was the Earle *Pinnabel Anselmus* sonne,
Borne in *Maganza* of that wicked race,
Who like the rest to lewd a course did runne,
He holpe the more his linage to deface:
For onely vertue noblenesse doth dignifie,
And vicious life a linage base doth signifie.

59

The Ladie faire attentue all this while,
Doth hearken vnto this *Maganzes* tale,
Rogeros name sometime doth make her smile,
Sometime againe for feare she looketh pale:
But hearing how a forcerer base and vile,
Should in a castle so detaine him thrall,
She pitied him, and in her mind she treated,
And oft desir'd to heare the tale repeated.

60

When at the last the whole she vnderstood,
She said, sir Knight mourne not, but take some plea-
Perhaps our meeting may be to your good, (sure,
And turne your enemy vnto displeasure:
Shew me this fort, for why it freats my blood,
So foule a prison holds so faire a treasure.
And if good fortune fauour mine intent,
You will right well suppose your trauell spent.

61

Ah (said the Knight) should I returne againe,
To passe these mountaines hard and ouertwarte?
Though for my selfe it is but little paine,
To toile my bodie hauing lost my hart:
For you to go where as you may be slaine,
Or taken prisoner were a foolish part:
Which if it hap, yet me you cannot blame,
Because I giue you warning of the same.

62

This said he riseth vp his horse to take,
The noble Ladie on the way to guide,
Who meanes to venter for *Rogeros* sake.
Or death or thraldome, or what ere beude.
But loe a messenger great hast doth make,
That comes behind, and (tarry ho) he cride,
This was the post that told to *Sacrapant*,
How she that foyle him was Dame *Bradamant*.

1. Book. Staff. 70.

63

This messenger brought tidings in great post,
Both from *Narbona* and from *Mompelceere*,
How they were vp in armes along the coast
Of *Aquamort*, and all that dwelled neere,
And how *Marsilius* men their hearts had lost,
Because of her no tidings they could heare:
And (for her absence made them ill apayd)
They sent to haue her presence and her ayd.

B ij

limb

Alfana the mare
Gradaſſo rode
on, hauing vnder
d neuer so tame
horse til he could
see Bayard Ro-
saldos horse.

Many times wise
men are readier
to beleue strange
aportes of cred ble
persons then the
holish.

of this shield
much spoken
afterward. The
mutation is tak-
en of Medusa's head

The limits of
Providence.

These townes and others many to the same,
Betweene the streames of Rodon and of Vare,
The Empror had assignd this worthy dame,
Committing them vnto her trust and care.
Her noble value gat her all this fame,
Because in armes her selfe she brauely bare,
And to the cities vnder her subiection,
This message sent, requiring her direction.

Which when she heard, it made her somewhat pause,
Twixt yea and no she stood a pretie space,
Of one side honor and her office drawes,
On th'other side loue helps to pleade the cause,
At last she meanes t'ensue the present cause,
And fetch *Rogero* from th'enchanted place:
And if her force cannot to this attaine,
At least with him a prisoner to remaine.

In courteous sort her answer she contriued,
With gracious words, and sent away the post,
She longs with her new guide to haue ariued,
To that same place where both their loues were lost.
But he perceiuing now she was deriued,
From *Clarimont* that he detested most,
Doth hate her sore, and feareth to the same,
Left she should know he of *Maganza* came.

There was betweene these houses auncient hate,
This of *Maganza*, that of *Clarimont*,
And each of them had weakned others state,
By killing men in both of great account.
This *Pinnabel* (a vile and wicked mate,
That all his kin in vices did turmount)
Meanes with himselfe this damsell to betray,
Or else to slip aside and go his way.

And this same fancie so his head did fill,
With hate, with feare, with anger and with doubt,
That he mistooke the way against his will,
And knew not how againe to find it out,
Till in the wood he saw a little hill,
Bare on the top, where men might looke about,
But *Bradamant* such amorous passions fees,
She followeth like a spaniell at his heeles.

The craftie guide thus wandring in the wood,
Intending now the Ladie to beguile,
Said vnto her forsooth he thought it good,
Sith night grew on, themselues to rest a while:
Here is, quoth he (and shewd which way it stood)
A castle faire, and hence not many a mile:
But tarry you a little here vntill
I may descric the countrey from the hill.

This said, he mounted to the higher ground,
And standing now the highest part vpon,
He cast about his eyes and looked round,
To find some path whereby he might be gone.

When ynawares a monstrous caue he found,
And strange cut out and hollowd in the stone,
Deepe thirtie cubits downe it doth descend,
Hauing a faire large gate at lower end.

Such as great stately houses wont to haue,
Out of which gate proceeds a shining light,
That all within most lightsome makes the caue,
And all this while on this felonious knight
This noble Ladie due attendance gaue,
And neuer suffred him go out of sight.
She followd *Pinnabel* hard at his backe,
Because she was afeard to leese the tracke.

When as this villaine traitor did espie,
That his designements foolish were and vaine,
Either to leaue her, or to make her die,
He thought it best to trie a further traine,
Perfwading her for to descend and trie,
What Ladies faire within the caue remaines:
For why (said he) within this little space
I saw a goodly damsell in the place.

Both rich arayd and very faire of hew,
Like one of noble linage and degree,
And this her fortune made me more to rew,
That here against her will she seemd to be.
And when I thought for to descend and vew,
The cause of this her grieve to know and see,
I was no looner from my horse alighted,
But with infernall hags I was affrighted.

The noble *Bradamant* that was more stout,
Then warie who it was did her perswade,
Hath such desire to helpe a damsell out,
That straight the caue she meaneth to invade,
She finds by hap a long bough thereabout,
Thereof a pole of mightie length she made,
First with her sword she hewes and pares it fit,
That done she lets it downe into the pit.

She giueth *Pinnabel* the bigger end,
And prayes him stand aboue and hold it fast,
And by the same intending to descend,
Vpon her armes her whole waight she doth cast.
But he that to destroy her did intend,
Doth aske if she would learne to leape a cast,
And laughing, loold his hands that were together,
And wisht that all the race of them were with her.

Yet great good hap the gentle damsell found,
As well deseru'd a mind so innocent:
For why the pole strake first vpon the ground,
And though by force it shiuerd all and rent,
Yet were her limbes and life kept safe and sound,
For all his vile and traiterous intent,
Sore was the damsell mazed with the fall,
As in another booke declare I shall.

The Morall.

In this second booke in the combat betweene *Renaldo* and *Sacrapant*, we may obserue how the passion of loue, together with the termes that men stand vpon for their reputation & credit, are oftentimes occasions of bitter quarrels: and in their sodaine parting and great perplexitie, that both of them were stricken into by the false tale that the spirit told them

of Orlando, we may gather how very apt ielousie is to conceine and beleene euery false report. By Renaldos obedience to Charles in going on embassage notwithstanding all his priuat affaires and affections, we may take example of dutiful obedience to our lawfull Prince. And in that Pinnabel seekes to betray Bradamant, and to kill her by letting her fall into the caue, into the which she trusted he would haue let her downe safely and friendly, we may note two speciall things, one, that it is good to be warie into whose hands we commit the sauegard of our liues and state: the other, that base minded men being wickedly set on reuenge, care not by what treason or villanie they worke the ouerthrow of their enemies.

For the Historie of this Canto, I will not affirme too precisely, for I find not in any credible author of Renaldos embassage into England, neither is it very likely, if the King of England were then in Paris, (as in another place of this worke is affirmed) that a Peere of France should be sent hither, and not rather some English noble man sent from the King to his other subiects in England, with directions and instructions from him.

That Paris and Charles himselfe were in some distresse about that time, is not vnprobable, and that the Turkes at their first arriuall preuailed very farre against the Christians, though it lasted but a while.

As for Rogero, whom he toucheth in this booke, and that is so much spoken of in this whole worke, as *Aeneas* is in *Virgil*, though in both rather in fabulous and in Allegoricall sence, then plainly and historically: yet I find it in very good Authors, that a man of that name was indeed the chiefe raiser of the house of Este the now Dukes of Ferrara.

For the Allegorie, as I noted in the first booke of Bayardo, so the same is still continued or rather repeated, namely, that the horse, by which is meant mans feruent and furious appetite, which is more plainly signified where it is said of the horse:

His going onely was to this intent,

To shew his master where the damsell went.

So that still this vnbridled desire figured by Bayardo, leades Renaldo on fote, whereby is vnderstood sensualitie to pursue Angelica, with a base desire of the most base pleasure.

In the shield, whose light amazed the lookers on, and made them fall downe astonied, may be Allegorically meant the great pompes of the world, that make shining shewes in the beared eyes of vaine people, and blind them, and make them to admire and fall downe before them, hauing indeed nothing but shining titles without vertue, like painted sheaths with leaden weapons, or like straw without the graine: either else may be meant the flaring beauties of some gorgeous women, that astonish the eyes of weakeminded men, apt to receiue such louing impressions, as *Atlantas* shield did amaze their senses that beheld it.

For the Allegorie of the horse, what is meant thereby, I reserue to another place, where I will follow it more at large then this little space will giue me leaue, and in that booke where he is more treated of.

The Allusion, to which this flying horse is referred, and from whence it is taken, is from *Pegasus*, the flying horse that *Pindar* writes of, bred of the bloud of *Medusa*, on which beast *Bellerophon* was wont to ride, flying the false accusation of *Pretus* wife.

Also the shield it selfe seemes to allude to the fable of *Medusas* head, that turned men into stones.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Bradamant was false in Marliens cause,
 Melissa meetes her there her ancient friend,
 And there to her she persue notice gaue,
 Of such braue men as should from her descend.
 She told her where she should Rogero haue,
 Whom old Atlanta had in prison pend,
 And from Brunello how to take the ring,
 That vnto libertie her deere might bring.*



H that my head were so
 well storde with skill,
 Of such a noble subiect fit
 to treat,
 Oh that my wits were e-
 quall to my will,
 To frame a phrase fit for so
 high conceit:
 Ye muses that do hold the
 sacred hill,

Inspire my heart with flame of learned heat,
 While I presume in base and lowly verse,
 The names of glorious Princes to rehearse.

*Such Princes as excell all Princes far,
 In all the gifts of bodie and of mind,
 Temprat in peace, victorious eake in war,
 Themselues most noble, come of noble kind.
 And such (except my guesse do greatly erre)
 As are by heau'ns eternall doome assignd,
 In wealth, in fame, in rule and in prosperitie,
 To liue themselues, their children and posteritie.*

*Nor can I now their seuerall actes most rare,
 Atcheeud by eu'rie one of them recite,
 Nor though my verse with Virgils might compare,
 Or I as well as Homer could endite:
 With their great praise, great volumes filled are,
 With large discourse, by them that stories write.
 I onely meane to show what was foreshowne,
 Long er their persons or their deeds were knowne.*

*But first of Pinnabel a word to speake,
 Who as you heard with traiterous intent,*

The bonds of all humanitie did break,
 For which er long himselfe was after shent,
 Thus while base minds their wrōgs do basely wreak
 They do that once that often they repent,
 And curse that time, a thousand times, too late
 When they pursue their vnreuenged hate.

*With fainting heart, (for sin is full of feare,)
 By stealing steps from hence he doth depart,
 And as he goes he prieth here and there,
 His fearefull looke bewrayes his guiltie hart,
 Nor yet his dread doth moue him to forbear,
 To heape more sin vpon this ill defart.
 Appald with feare, but toucht with no remorse,
 Supposing she was slaine, he takes her horse.*

*But let him go vntill another time,
 For I do meane hereafter you shall heare,
 How he was dealt with, when his double crime,
 In secret wrought, most open did appeare,
 Now vnto Bradamant I bend my rime,
 Who with her fall, was yet of heauie cheare:
 And had bene taught a gamball for the nonce,
 To giue her death and buriall at once.*

*Now when she came vnto her selfe againe,
 And had recoverd memorie and sence,
 She gets her on her feete, although with paine,
 In mind to seeke some way to get fro thence,
 When loe, before her face she seeth plaine,
 A stately portall built with great expence,
 And next behind the same she might descrie,
 A larger roome and fairer to the eye.*

B iij

*Horace: dum pe-
 nas odio per vim
 festinas multo.*

Sentence.

*Sentence: Ouid:
 heu quam diffi-
 cile est crimen nō
 prodere vultu?*

Booke 22. l. 78.

Merlins tombe. This was a church most solemne and deuout,
That stands on marble pillars small and round,
And raised by art on arches all about,
That made ech voyce to yeeld a double sound.
A lightsome lampe that neuer goeth out,
Did burne on altar standing in the ground:
That though the rooms were large & wide in space,
The lampe did serue to lighten all the place.

Christ our saviour.

The noble damsell full of reu'rent feare,
When as her selfe in sacred place she sees,
(As one that still a godly minde did beare,)
Begins to pray to him vpon her knees,
Whose holy side was perft with cruell speare,
And who to saue our liues his owne did leese:
And while she stayes deuoutly at her prayre,
The sage *Melissa* doth to her repaire.

Her gowne vngyrt, her haire about her hed,
Much like a priest or prophetesse arraid,
And in her booke a little while she red,
And after thus vnto the damsell said:
O thou by Gods appointment hither led,
O *Bradamant*, most wise and worthy maid,
I long haue looked here for this thy comming,
Foretold thereof by prophet *Merlines* cunning.

*The description of
Merlins tombe,
out of the booke of
king Arthur. but
this is poeeticall
licence to faime it
to be in France,
for it is in Wales.*

Here is the tombe that *Merline* erst did make,
By force of secret skill and hidden art,
In which sometimes the Ladie of the lake,
That with her beautie had bewicht his hart,
Did make him enter fondly for her sake,
From whence he neuer after could depart.
And he was by a woman ouer reached,
That vnto others prophesied and preached.

Tel downes day.

His carkas dead within this stone is bound,
But with dead corse the liuing soule doth dwell:
And shall vntill it here the trumpet sound,
That brings reward of doing ill or well.
His voyce doth liue, and answer and expound,
And things both present past and future tell,
Resolving men of eu'rie doubtfull case,
That for his counsell come vnto this place.

About a month or little more or lesse,
It is since I repaire to *Merlins* graue,
Of him about the studie I professe,
Some precepts and instructions to haue.
And (for I willing was I must confesse)
To meete you at your comming to this caue:
For which he did prefixe this certaine day,
This moued me of purpose here to stay.

Duke *Ammons* daughter silent stands and still,
The while the wise *Melissa* to her spake,
Astonished at this vnusuall skill,
And doubting if she were a sleepe or wake,
A modest shame with grace her eyes doth fill,
With which downe cast, this answer she doth make:
Alas what good or merite is in me
That prophets should my comming so foresee!

And glad of this aduerture v unexpected,
She followeth her guide with great delight,
And straight she saw the stately toombe erected,
Of marble pure that held his bones and sprite,
And (that which one would little haue suspected)
The verie marble was so cleare and bright,
That though the sunne no light vnto it gaue,
The toombe it selfe did lighten all the caue.

For whether be the nature of some stone,
A darke some place with lightfomnes to fill,
Or were it done by magike art alone,
Or else by helpe of *Mathematike* skill,
To make transparencies to meete in one,
And so conuey the sunne beames where you will:
But sure it was most curious to behold,
Set forth with carued workes and guilt with gold.

Now when the damsell was approched nyre, (platt,
To this strange toombe where *Merlins* bones were
Forth of the stones that shine like flaming fire,
His liuely voyce such speeches out doth cast:
Let fortune euer fauour thy desire,
O *Bradamant* thou noble maid and chaste,
From out whose wombe an issue shall proceed,
That all the world in glorie shall exceed.

The noble blood that came of ancient Troy,
By two cleare springs in thee together mixt,
Shall breed the flowre, the iewell and the ioy,
Of all on whom the sunne his beames hath fixt,
Twixt those that heat, and those that cold annoy,
From *Tage* to *Inde*, *Danub* and *Nile* betwixt,
Emp'rors and kings, and dukes and lords for ay,
Of this thy linage carrie shall the sway.

And many a Captaine braue and worthy Knight,
Shall issue from this stocke, that shall restore
By warlike feates the glorie shining bright,
That Italy possessed heretofore.
And magistrates to maintaine peace and right,
As *Numa* and *Augustus* did before,
To cherish vertue, vice so to asswage,
As shall to vs bring backe the golden age.

Wherefore sith God hath by predestination,
Appointed thee to be *Rogeros* wife,
And means to blesse thine heirs and generation,
With all the graces granted in this life,
Perfist thou firme in thy determination,
And stoutly overcome each storme of strife,
And worke his worthy punishment and paine,
That doth thy liues delight from thee detaine.

This said: the prophet *Merline* holds his peace,
And giues *Melissa* time to worke her will,
Who when she did perceiue the voice to cease,
She purposeth by practise of her sk ill,
To shew the damsell part of that increase,
That should with fame the world hereafter fill.
And for this end she calls a great assemble,
Of sprights that might their persons all relemble.

Who

Verno.
Italy called Hi-
eria, 1st locu
liferium Gray
ommune dicu
ix. Luc.
Alberto.
Hugo.
be Vigory are
ancients crest
the Vicounts
aleasses.
1730.
liberax. 20.
the Verne-
ry, looks as the
ies of this book

*Renaldo posses-
sed at Naples.*

Next him *Renaldo* now ensueth, whose lot
Shalbe at Naples to be made away,
A death his verrtuos deeds deserued not,
But wo to them that guiltlesse blood betray.
Now followeth a worthy crue and knot,
Whose acts alone to tell would spend a day:
Olyso, Nicolas and Alabrandine,
Whose noble deeds shall honour much their line.

*Olyso.
Nicolas.
Alabrandine.*

Nicolas 2.

Then *Nicolas* is he that next ensueth,
That rul'd in tender yeares both neere and farre,
That findes and eke reuengeth their vntruth,
That fought his state by ciuill strife to marre.
The sports and exercises of his youth,
Are blowes and fights, and dangers great & warre,
Which makes that ere to manly state he came,
For martiall deeds he gets the onely name.

Lyonel.

Lo *Lyonel* the glorie of his age,
Maintaining peace and quiet all his time,
And keeping that with ease by wisdoms sage,
To which some others by much paine do clime.
That fettred furie and rebuked rage,
That locks vp *Mars* in wals of stone and lime:
That all his wit, his care and trauell bent,
To make his subiects liue in state content.

Hercules.

Now *Hercules* comes, an *Hercules* indeed,
Whose deeds shall merite euer during fame:
That by his paines his countries ease shall breed,
And put his enemies to flight and shame.
Sharpe to deuise, to execute with speed,
Both stout attempt, and patient to the same,
No prince shall euer rule his countrie better,
No prince had euer countrie more his detter.

Not onely that he shall their moorish grounds,
By great expence to pasture firme reduce,
Not that the towne with wall environ round,
And store with things behooffull to their vse.
Not that when warre in ech place shall abound,
He shall maintaine them peaceably in truce,
Not that he shall according to their asking
Disburden them of payments and of tasking.

But that he shall more and aboue all thease,
Leaue them behind him such a worthy race,
As search within the circuit of the seas,
You shall not find two to supplie their place.
So shall the one the other striue to please,
So shall the one the others loue imbrace,
As may for louing brotherly regard,
With *Castor* and with *Pollux* be compar'd.

*Alfonso.
Hyppolito.*

The elder of these two *Alfonso* hight,
The next of them *Hyppolito* we call,
Both passing stout and valiant in fight,
Both passing wise and prouident withall:
And both in due defence of countries right,
Shall seeme a bulwarke and a brazen wall:
They both shall haue of enemies good store,
They both shall still subdue them euermore.

43

Their mother (if I may a mother name.)
One more like *Progne* and *Medea* fell,
Vnto her endlesse infamie and shame,
Against her sonne *Alfonso* shall rebell,
And ioyne with Venice force (for this to blame)
Though for the same ere long they paid full well,
For those they thought to hurt, they did this good,
To make the ground more fruitfull with their blood.

44

Nor far fro thence the Spanish souldier hired,
By pastors purse and in that pastors pay,
That with a forcible assault aspired,
To take a fort, and eke the captaine slay.
But loe he comes and they perforce rettyred,
And haue so short a pleasure of this pray,
Scarfe one of them in life is left abiding,
To carrie notice of so heauie tiding.

45

His wit and valour shall him so aduance,
To haue the honour of Romania field,
Where by his meanes vnto the force of France,
The Pope and Spaniards, forced are to yeeld:
And there in Christian blood, o fatall chance,
Shall horses swimme, such number shall be keeld,
Nor shall not men enough aliue remaine,
To burie those shall be in battell slaine.

46

The while his brother vnder Card'nals cap,
Shall couer, nay shall shew a prudent head,
Hyppolito (I meane) who shall haue hap,
With band of men but small (yet wisely led)
To giue to the Venetians such a clap,
As few the like in stories haue bene read.
To take three times fise Gallies at one side,
And barks and boates a thousand more beside.

47

Behold two *Sygismond*s both wise and graue,
Alfonso next, whose fame is talkt of rife,
With his fise sonnes, then *Hercules* that shall haue
The king of France his daughter to his wife,
That towards him, her selfe shall so behaue,
Shall make him liue most happie all his life.
Hyppolito it is that now comes in,
Not least for praise and glorie of his kin.

48

Next *Francis* named third, *Alfonso*s two,
With many others worthy of renowne,
The which to name might finde one worke to do,
From *Phœbus* rising to his going downe.
Now therefore if you will consent thereto,
I here will end and send the spirits downe:
To this the worthy damselfe said not nay,
And straight the spirits vanisht all away.

49

Then *Bradmant*, that all well marked had,
Of whom her selfe should be the ancient mother,
Did say, to learne she would be very glad,
What two those were that differed from the other,
That came with backward steps and lookt so sad,
Vpon the good *Alfonso* and his brother.
Melyssa fight, mistaking that suggestion,
That moued her to aske so grieuous question.

And

50

And then as in a trance these words she spake,
O thou more worthy sonne of worthy fire,
They are thy blood, on them compassion take,
Let grace allwage, though iustice kinde ire:
Then vnto *Bradamant* as new awake,
I must (said she) denie you this desire,
I say no more, content you with the sweet,
For you this lower morsell is not meet.

51

To morrow when the Sunne at breake of day,
With light shall dim the light of eu'ry starre:
I meane my selfe to guide you on your way,
So as I will be sure you shall not erre.
The place whereas your loue is fore'd to stay,
Is from the salt sea shore not very farre:
That were you past a mile beyond this wood,
The other way would easie be and good.

52

Of this nights stay the damsell was content,
And in the caue with her she doth remaine,
And most thereof in *Merlins* toombe she spent,
Whose voice with talke did her still entertaine:
Emboldning her to giue her free consent,
To loue where she should sure be lou'd againe,
Now gan the messenger of day to cro,
When as her guide and she away did go.

53

The way they went was darke and vnaccessible,
By secret vaults and hollowes of the hill,
To find it out had bene a thing impossible,
But with a guide of knowledge great and skill:
At last they came vnto a path more passible,
By which they ceate not to ascend, vntill
They quite had left the darke and lothsome place,
And saw the beames of *Phœbus* chearefull face.

54

And while that vp this hill they slowly stalke,
With pausing panting oft, and taking wind,
To make lesse wearie seeme their wearie walke,
Melyssa still doth store of matter find,
And now of this, and then of that doth talke,
But chiefly she the damsell puts in mind,
Of her *Rogero*, how he had bene trained
Into the prison where he now remained.

55

Atlanta that Magician strange is he
That holdeth him (I trust) vnto his cost,
But had you *Pallas* strength or *Mars* (quoth she)
And eke of armed men a mightie host,
Yet to attempt by force to set him free,
Your trauell and your labour all were lost.
Art must be wonne by art, and not by might,
Force cannot free your welbeloued knight.

56

For first the castle mounted is on hie,
Impregnable with wals all ouer steeld,
And next, the horse he rides hath wings to flie,
And gallops in the aire as in the field:
And last he dazleth eu'ry mortall eie,
By hidden force of his enchanted shield,
With light whereof mens senses are so dazed,
With sight thereof they fall downe all amazed.

57

In all the world one onely meane hath beene,
And is yet still to worke so rare a feat,
A ring there is which from an Indian Queene,
Was stolne sometime, of price and vertue great:
This ring can make a man to go vnseene,
This ring can all enchantments quite defeat:
King *Agramant* hath sent his secretarie,
Vnto *Rogero* this same ring to carie.

58

Brunello is his name that hath the ring,
Most leud and false, but politike and wise,
And put in trust especiall by his king,
With it *Rogeros* safetie to deuise:
Which fith I wish not he, but you should bring,
To bind him to you by this enterprise,
And for I would not haue the Turke protect him,
Because I know he greatly doth affect him,

59

Do therefore this, when you do meete this man,
Whose marks I wish in memory you beare,
His stature is two cubits and a span,
His head is long and gray, and thin of haire,
His nose is short and flat, his colour wan,
With beetle brow, eyes watrie not with teare,
His beard growes on his face without all stint,
And to conclude, his looke is all a squint.

60

Now when as you this comely man shall meet,
As sure you shall within a day or two,
You may with curteous words him seeme to greet,
And tell him partly what you meane to do:
But speake hot of the ring although you see't,
For to you may the matter all vndo,
Then he great courtesie to you will offer,
And straight his companie to you will proffer.

61

But when vnto the castle you come nie,
Then see you set vpon him on the way,
And take away the ring and make him die,
Nor giue him any time, lest he conuay
The ring into his mouth, and so thereby
Out of your sight he vanish quite away.
The worthy damsell markes her speeches well,
And to the one the other bids farewell.

62

Next day she hapt *Brunello* to espie,
She knew him straight, she found him at her Inne,
She growes to question with him by and by,
And he to lie doth by and by beginne,
And she dissemble too, and doth denie
Her countrey, stocke and name, and sex and kinne.
Brunello pleatantly doth talke and tippie,
Not knowing he did halt before a cripple.

63

Now when they almost broken had their fast,
She marking more his fingers then his eyes,
When much good talk between them two had past,
The most whereof were false and forged lies,
Behold mine host came vnto them in hast,
And told them newes that made them sooner rise:
But here I meane to make a little pause,
Before I tell what was thereof the cause.

The ring was
stolne from
Angelica.

A machiauelian
secretarie.

In this manner
of *Melyssa* speaking
to *Alfonso*,
he imitates *Virgil*
in his booke
of *Æneidos* of
Marcellus.

The rocks called
in *Orlando* *de fust*.

Phœbus
wake
the
eye.

Atlanta
wake
the
eye.

Atlanta
wake
the
eye.

Atlanta
wake
the
eye.

Atlanta
wake
the
eye.

THE THIRD BOOKE

Morall.

In the third booke we may note in Bradamant a worthy example of deuotion, that in her sodaine mishap, had recourse to prayer. In the great praise of Rogero and Bradamant his posteritie, noblemen and gentlemen of good houses may take comfort of their vertuous ancestors, and thinke themselves beloued of God, and blessed with great temporall blessings, if themselves degenerate not from their worthy forefathers. Also we may note, that commonly good parents bring good children.

And whereas Melissa brings Bradamant by intricate wayes from the caue, and instructs her how to confound Atlantes deuices, it shewes how good and godly counsel makes men ouercome all troubles, and enables them to withstand all wicked practises. And in that Bradamant dissembles with Brunello, we may gather a lesson, which in this age we be too apt to learne, namely, to dissemble with dissemblers.

Storie.

Bellarmine de
Antichristo.

Concerning the history of this booke, it is diuers, and therefore I meane to note the principallest of them, as far as my little reading is able to discover: and first for Merlin (called the English Prophet) I know many are hard of beleeve, and thinke it a meere fable that is written both of his birth, of his life, and chiefly of his death: for his birth, indeed I beleeue not that he was gotten by an Incubus, yet the possibilitie thereof might be proued by discourse, saue it were too tedious, and perhaps too full of vnmannerly termes for this place: I rather hold with the great clerk Bellarmine, that such birth is either impossible, or peculiar to the great Antichrist when he shall come. But concerning his life, that there was such a man, a great counsellor to King Arthur, I hold it certaine: that he had a castle in Wiltshire called after him Merlinsburie, (now Marlborough) it is very likely, the old ruines whereof are yet seene in our highway from Bath to London. Also the great stones of vnmearable bignesse and number, that lie scattered about the place, haue giuen occasion to some to report, and others to beleeue wondrous stratagemes wrought by his great skill in Magicke, as likewise the great stones at Stonage on Salisbury plaine, which the ignorant people beleeue he brought out of Ireland: and indeed the wiser sort can rather marvel at, then tell why or how they were set there. But for the manner of his death, and place of his buriall, it is so diuersly written of, and by so sundry countreys challenged, as a man may be bolder to say that all of them are false, then that any of them be true. Some will haue him buried in Cornewall, some in Wales (where they say he was borne,) Ariosto by Poeticall licence, makes this tombe for him in France, and the fiction of the tombe is taken of a former fiction in King Arthurs booke, namely, that Merlin being exceedingly in loue with the Ladie of the Lake (to brag of his cunning) shewed her one day among other deuices of his, a tooombe that he had made of sufficient capacitie to hold him and his wife, and withall shewed her a charme, which being pronounced in an order that he shewed her, the tooombe would close, and neuer againe be opened. She hauing no mind to him, or rather indeed flatly hating him, grew on the sodaine very gamesome with him, and shewed him some extraordinary kindnesse, and in the end for want of better pastime would needs perswade him to proue if it would hold them both, and so offered her selfe to go in with him: he suspecting nothing lesse then her malicious purpose, went simply in, and straight she shut him in with the couer, and bound it so fast with the charme, as it will neuer more be loosed. This I thought good to set downe for expounding the II. staffe of this booke the plainer, not that any matter herein is worth the noting, without it be to warne men not to tell such dangerous secrets to women, except they will take occasion to imitate the wisdom of Cato in repenting it after. And thus much for Merlin. The rest of the booke is in a manner all a true historie, and is a repetition of the pedegree of Alfonso Duke of Ferrara, with some brieue touches out of auncient histories of their great exploits in Italie: the exposition of all which, I will not pursue at length, as being needlesse to the learned that haue read those stories, and not very pleasant to the ignorant, nor familiar to our nation. Wherefore I will onely note some very few of them, such as I thinke most necessary, and omit the rest, or referre those that be desirous better to informe themselves to some authors where they may reade it more at large.

Rogero sonne of Bradamant, and this Rogero so much spoken of in this whole booke, came with Charles the great into Italie, where among other Venetian captaines that holpe to suppress Desiderius king of Lombardie: this Rogero was thought to do so good service, that the Emperour in reward gaue him and his heires the honors of Calalon and Este, neare Padua.

The vipers came to be the crest of the Vicounts of Millaine by this occasion: Otho a valiant man of that family, in the iourney that Godfrey of Bullen made to Ierusalem, called the holy warres, did fight at the siege of Ierusalem hand to hand with Voluce, captaine of the Painims, and slue him, who to make himselfe more terrible, did carry on his crest a huge viper deuouring of a child. Euer since in memory hereof that house carries the viper.

Beringars, of this name there were three, but the chiefe man (meant here) was nephew to the first, and came after the death of his grandfather into Italie, and preuailed so farre, that he was proclaimed Augustus, and made his sonne King of Lombardie with title King of Romanes: but Agapitus then Bishop of Rome, called in Otho King of the Almaines to deliuer Italie from the tyranny of the Beringars, who ouercame them, and vsed them after with great clemency, till afterward they seeking by helpe of an vsurping Pope to tyrannize as before, the same Otho came againe, and in fine destroyed them both, in which it seemes Albertazzo did some great seruice.

Of Frederike Barbarossa Sabellicus writeth, that he maintained Octauius Antipapa (or vsurping Pope) against Alexander, by which great broiles grew in Italy, and much blood shed, and that the Romanes were so crushed in one battel that he writeth they would neuer be able againe to hold vp their heads. But after this, Barbarossa both prosecuted by his enemies, and punished with the plague in his camp, was glad to fly into Germany: and comming back with new forces, was by the confederats vanquished and quite put downe, and driuen in the end to craue Pope Alexanders fauour. Of this Alexander the Venetians make great boast how they restored him, and haue the story ingrauen or painted in one of their principall Churches: for the Pope flying thither in disguised apparell, and liuing closely in the towne like a poore Priest, a noble man one Crano discovered him, and made him be greatly honoured by the whole city, by whom as is aforesaid he was restored.

Whereas the two factions of Guelts and Ghebellines is spoken of (though it would ask a long discourse to tel the original how

how it first grew) yet somewhat I must needs say of it: the faction first rose of a discord betwene two Dutchmen in Italie being naturall brothers, though vnnaturally falling out, and either drawing parties, it grew in the end to such a faction. *Reads of this in diellia de varia lectione.* as neither Sylla and Marius, or Cæsar and Pompey in Rome, nor ours of Lancaster and Yorke in England, nor any other growne of religion, or what cause soever besides, hath bene more violent.

Ellellino a notable tyrant, whom one Musatto a Padoan in a tragedie he wrote, affirms to haue bin gotten by the diuell: His crueltie was such, he would cut vp women quicke with child, and burned at one time 12000. men aliue. He was after taken prisoner, and died of famine.

Of Hercules of Este, as the praises are great he giues him, so it appeares in Guychardine, they are well deserved. For when Charles the eight came into Italie like a thunder (as writers of those times call him) this Hercules with his prudent cariage so ordered himselfe, as he and his countrie escaped that tempest.

Concerning the victorie that this Hippolito had of the Venetians, I shall haue more occasion to speake of it in the 40. booke.

The two that Bradamant asketh Melyssa of, were brothers to Alfonso Duke of Ferrara, their names are Ferdinand and Iulio: the storie is this. It happened that being all yong men, Hippolito and one of these yonger brothers fel both in loue with one Curtesan, but she entertained the loue of the yonger with most kindnes; whereupon Hippolito asked her one day very instantly, what it was that moued her to prefer his brother afore him; and she said it was his beautifull eie; whereupon Hippolito made some of his pages to thrust out his eies. Notwithstanding he afterward recovered his eies, and finding no redresse by complaining to Alfonso, he and one other brother conspired to kill him; but at the time of the execution, their hearts failed them, or their minds altered: and after the conspiracie being discovered, they were kept in perpetuall prison.

And in this he alludes to that of Marcellus in Virgil, *Luctus ne quere tuorum.*

Allusion.

C





THE ARGUMENT.

*Bradamant ouercomes the false Magician,
And sets Rogero free, who by and by
Leapt on a horse not knowing his condition,
Who bare him quite from sight of any eye.
Renaldo sailed as he had commission,
To England ward, but borne by wind awrie,
At Callidon in Scotland he arriued,
When faire Generras foule death was contrined.*



Though he that vseth craft
and simulation,
Doth seldome bend his
acts to honest ends;
But rather of an euill in-
clination,
His wit and skill to others
mischiefe bends:
Yet sith in this our world-
ly habitation,

We do not euer dwell among our frends,
Dissembling doubtlesse oftentimes may saue
Mens liues, their fame and goods, and all they haue.

²
If man by long acquaintance and great prooffe,
To trust some one man scant can be allured,
To whom he may in presence or aloofe,
Vnfold the secrets of his mind assured:
Then doth this damsell merite no reprooffe,
That with *Brunello* (to all fraud inured)
Doth frame her selfe to counterfeit a while,
For to deceiue deceiuers is no guile.

³
Now while thesetwo did to conferre begin,
She to his fingers hauing still an eie,
The host and other seruants of the Inne,
Came on the sodaine with a wofull crie,
And some did gaze without, and some within,
(As when men see a Comet in the skie)
The cause of this their wondring and their crying,
Was that they saw an armed horseman flying.

⁴
And straight by th'host and others they were told,
How one that had in Magicke art great skill,

Not farre from thence had made a stately hold,
Of shining Steele, and plac'd it on a hill,
To which he bringeth Ladies yong and old,
And men and maids according to his will,
And when within that castle they haue beene,
They neuer after haue bene heard or seene.

⁵
No sooner can he spie a pretie maide,
But straight he takes her vp into the aire,
The which his custome makes them all afraid,
That either are or thinke that they be faire.
Those hardie knights that went to giue them aide,
Of which sort many hither did repaite,
Went like the beasts to the sicke Lions den,
For all went in, but none returnd agen.

⁶
This tale in worthy *Bradamant* did breed
A kind of pleasure and confused ioy,
In hope (which after she performd indeed)
The sight of her beloued to enioy,
She praid the host procure a guide with speed,
As though each little stay did breed annoy:
She sweares that in her heart she longd to wraile
With him that kept the captiues in his castle.

⁷
Because that you sir knight should want no guide,
(*Brunello* said) I will my selfe be he,
I know the way, and somewhat haue beside,
By which may fortune you may pleasur'd be:
He meant the ring of force and vertue tride,
Although he meant not she the same should see.
Great thanks (quoth she) that you will take & paine,
In hope hereby the precious ring to gaine.

C ij

This is rather an
excuse than a
proofe of dissem-
bling.

Sentence.

Some dissemblings
haue bin comen-
table and neces-
sary, as that of
Brutus in Tar-
quinus time to
save himselfe
from the tyrant.
*Cessandum cu
sensibus.*

Comets or blasing
stars for the most
part cause great
wondring.

Simile.
*Horace: Omnia
se aduersum spe-
Elania nulla
retrorsum.*

8

Thus each from other hiding their intent,
They forward set like friends by breake of day,
Brunello sometime foremost of them went,
Sometime behind, as chanced on the way.
Now had they certaine houres in trauell spent,
When they arrived where the castle lay,
Whereas mount Pyrene stands about the plaine,
So high as may discover France and Spaine.

From this mount
one may see both
the one sea and
the other.

9

When as the castle did in sight appeare,
So strange, so faire, so stately, and so hie,
In which that knight whom she esteemd so deare,
With many others, prisoner did lie.
She thought her fittest time drew very neare,
To take the ring, and make Brunello die.
Wherefore with open force she doth assaile him,
Whose strength with age and feare soon gan to faile

10

(him.

Her meaning was the Caitife to haue kild,
But vnto that her noble heart said nay,
Small praise would come from bloud so basely spild,
She meanes to get the ring another way:
But first she bound him when he wild or nild,
And though with teares he did for pittie pray,
Yet left she him vnto a tree fast tide,
And with the ring away she straight did ride.

11

And being in the greene fast by the towre,
Straight (as the fashion was) her horne she blew,
Out came that armed knight that present houre,
And seeing there a challenger in vew,
He seemeth to assault her with great powre,
But by the ring she all his falsehood knew:
She saw he caride neither sword nor speare,
Nor any weapon that one need to feare.

12

He onely caride at his saddle bow,
A shield all wrapped in a crimlon case,
And read a booke by which he made to show
Some strange and strong illusions in the place:
And many that these cunnings did not know,
He had decei'd and tane in little space.
And cauld both swords and lances to appeare,
When neither sword nor lances them were neare.

13

But yet the beast he rode was not of art,
But gotten of a Griffeth and a Mare,
And like a Griffeth had the former part,
As wings and head, and clawes that hideous are,
And passing strength and force and ventrous hart,
But all the rest may with a horse compare.
Such beasts as these the hills of Ryfee yeeld,
Though in these parts they haue bin seene but seeld.

14

This monster rare from farthest regions brought
This rare Magician ordred with such skill,
That in one month or little more he taught
The sauage monster to obey his will:
And though by comurations strange he wrought,
In other things his fancie to fulfill,
(As cunning men stil trie each strange conclusion)
Yet in this Griffeth horse was one collusion.

15

The Ladie faire protected by the ring,
Found all his sleights (although she seemd not so)
Her purpose to the better passe to bring,
And first she seemes to ward a comming blow,
And then to strike, and oft to curse the wing,
That caride still away her flying fo,
And sith to fight on horsebacke did not boote,
She seemes as in a rage to light on foote.

16

The Necromancer, as his manner is,
Dislosed at the last his shining shield,
Supposing that the vertue would not misse,
To make her (as it had done others) yeeld:
So haue I seene a craftie cat ere this,
Play with a silly mouse of house or field,
And let it go a while for sport and play,
But kill at last and beare it quite away.

17

I say that be the cat, the other misse,
Resembled had in euery former fight,
But now this ring had made this one so wise,
That when she saw the strange enchanted light,
She falleth not of force, but of deuise,
As though she were astoned at the sight,
And lay like one of life and sense bereaued,
By which the poore Magician was deceaued.

18

For straight he lighted from the flying horse,
To take her as he had done many mo,
The shield and booke in which was all his force,
He left behind him at his saddle bow,
But thinking to haue found a senslesse corse,
Amazd and dead, he finds it nothing so,
For vp she starts, so quite the case was altded,
That with the cord he brought, himselfe was haltred.

19

And when with those selfe bonds she had him tide,
By which he thought before her to haue snared,
She strong and yong, he witherd, old and dride,
Alas an vnmeet match to be compared,
Forthwith determining he should haue dide,
To strike his head from shoulders she prepared,
Till she was mou'd to mercie with his teares,
And with the sight of white and hoary haire.

20

For when he saw his force was ouerlaid,
And that her strength was not to be withstood,
O pardon life thou heavenly wight (he said)
No honour comes by spilling aged blood.
Which words to mercie mou'd the noble maid,
Whose mind was alwayes merciful and good.
Then why he built the castle she demanded,
And what he was to tell her him commanded.

21

With wofull words the old man thus replide,
I made this castle for no ill intention,
For couetice or any fault beside,
Or that I loued rapine or contention,
But to preuent a danger shall betide
A gentle knight, I framed this inuention:
Who as the heauens hath shewd me in short season,
Shall die in Christian state by filthy treason.

Rogero

Simile.

Sic aris dicitur
arist.

Sententia

22

Rogero named is this worthy youth,
Whose good and safetie faine I would aduance,
My name *Atlante* is to tell you truth,
I bred him of a child, till his hard chance,
And valiant mind (that breeds alas my ruth)
With *Agramant* entist him into France.
And I that (like mine owne child) alway lou'd him,
From France and danger faine would haue remou'd

23

By art and helpe of many a hellish elfe,
This castle for Rogero I did build,
And tooke him as I meant to take thy selfe,
But that with greater art I was beguild,
From daintie fare, and other worldly pelfe,
Because he should not thinke himselfe exild,
For company I brought him worthy wights,
Both men and women, Ladies faire and Knights.

24

They haue all plentie of desired pleasure,
I bend to their contentment all my care,
For them I spend my trauell and my treasure,
For musicke, clothes and games, and daintie fare,
As hart can think, and mouth require with measure,
Great store for them within this castle are.
Well had I traueled, well my time bestowed,
But you haue mard the fruits that I had sowed,

25

But if your mind be gracious as your looke,
If stonie heart bide not in tender brest,
Behold I offer thee my shield and booke,
And flying horse, and grant my iust request,
Some two or three, or all the Knights I tooke,
I giue thee free, let but Rogero rest:
Whose health, whose wealth, whose safty and welfare
Haue euer bene (and euer shall) my care.

26

Your care (quoth she) is very ill bestowne,
In thraldome vile to keepe a worthy wight:
As for your gifts you offer but mine owne,
Sith by my conquest you are mine in right.
Those dangers great you say to be forshowne,
And vpon him in time to come must light,
With figures cast and heauenly planets vewed,
Cannot be knowne or cannot be eschewed.

27

How can you others harmes foresee so farre,
And not preuent your owne that were so neere?
I certaine shall suppose your art doth erre,
And for the rest the end the truth shall trie:
I now intend your matter all to marre,
And that before these bonds I will vntie,
You shall set free and loofe your prisners all,
Whom in this castle you detained thrall.

28

When as the poore old man was so distrest,
That needs he must for feare and dread obey,
And that this same imperious dames behest,
Could neither beare deniall nor delay,
To do as she commands he deemes it best,
And therefore takes th'enchanted place away.
He breakes some hollow fuming pots of stone,
And straight the wals and buildings all were gone.

29

This done, himselfe eke vanisht out of sight,
As did the castle at that present hower,
Then Ladies, Lords, and many a worthy knight,
Were straight releast from his enchanted power:
And some there were had taken such delight
In those so stately lodgings of that tower,
That they esteemd that libertie a paine,
And wisht that pleasant flauery againe.

30

Here were at freedome set among the rest,
Gradasso, *Sacrapant*, two kings of name,
Prasildo and *Iroldo* that from th'Est
Into this country with *Renaldo* came.
Here *Bradamant* found him she loued best,
Her deare Rogero of renowned fame,
Who after certaine notice of her had,
Did shew to see her he was very glad.

31

As one of whom he great account did make,
And thought himselfe to her most highly bound,
Since she put off her helmet for his sake,
And in her head receiu'd a gricuous wound,
Twere long to tell what toile they both did take;
Both night and day each other to haue found,
But till this present time they had no meeting,
Nor giu'n by word nor writing any greeting.

32

Now when before him present he beheld
Her that from danger had him sole redeemed,
His heart with so great ioy and mirth was filld,
The happiest wight on earth himselfe he deemed:
And cristall teares from her faire eyes distild,
Embracing him whom she most deare esteemed.
As oft we see a strong and sodaine passion,
Bring forth effects quite of another fashion.

33

The Griffeth horse the while vpon the plaine,
Stood with the target at his saddle bow,
The damsell thought to take him by the raine,
But he then mounteth vp, and like a crow
Chast by a dog forthwith descends againe,
And standeth still, or soareth very low,
And when that some come nie in hope to take him,
He flies away that none can ouertake him.

Simile.

34

But neare vnto Rogero soone he staid,
Which by *Atlantas* care was sole procured,
Who for Rogeros danger was afraid,
And thinkes his safetie neuer well assured,
Wherefore he sent this monster for his aid,
And by this meanes from Europe him allured,
To his welfare his cares and thoughts he bendeth,
To succor and preferue him he intendeth.

35

Rogero from his horse forthwith alighted,
(The horse he rode on was *Frontyno* named)
And with this flying horse was so delighted,
That though he saw him wanton and vntamed,
Yet vp he leapt, and soone was sore afrighted,
He finds he would not to his mind be framed,
For in the aire the Griffeth soard so hie,
As doth the Faulcon that at fowle doth flie.

C iij

Enterio.
for Tho. Moore.
inque preseruis
munda est nulla
sculsa. Quid
preseruis inuat
inpatiere ta-
men?

some bold opinio
that conuersers
and spirits in
its or hollow
bones, & by that
worke these
strange effects.

36

The damsell faire that now beheld her deare,
Borne farre away by force of monsters wing,
Was sorowfull and of so beaue cheare,
That to their course her wits she scant could bring.
The tale of *Ganymed* she once did heare,
Whom Poets faine to tend the heavenly king,
She doubts may true of her *Rogero* be,
That was as comely and as faire as he.

Ganymed fained
by the Poets to be
Jupiters cupbea-
rer, & caried vp
to heauen by an
eagle.

37

As long as eyficht could at all preuaile,
So long she viewd him still in all and part:
But when his distance made the sight to faile,
At least she followd him in mind and hart,
To sob, to sigh, to weepe, lament and waile,
She neuer leaues these chances ouerthwart.
And seeing plaine her loue and shee were parted,
She took *Frontyno* and away departed.

It followes in the
7 booke. 30 staff.

38

Now was *Rogero* mounted vp so hie,
He seemd to be a mote or little pricke,
For no man could distinguish him by cie,
Except his sight were passing fine and quicke:
All southerly this *Griffeth* horse doth flie,
(Was neuer iade that seru'd man such a tricke)
But let him on his way, God speed him well,
For of *Renaldo* somewhat I must tell.

It followes in the
6 booke. 16 staff.

39

Who all the while with raging tempest shriued,
Borne where him selfe nor no man else did know,
By cruell stormie winds and weather driued,
That dayes and nights surceased not to blow:
At last in Scotland weary he arriued,
Where woods of *Callidony* first do show,
A famous wood wherein in times of old,
Braue deeds were done by ventrous knights & bold.

A famous Forrest
of Scotland.

40

Here haue those famous knights great honour won,
At whose rare worth the world it selfe did wonder,
Here were most valiant acts atchieu'd and done,
By knights that dwelt there neare or far asunder,
And many a man hath here bene quite vndone,
Whose feeble force his enemy was vnder.
Here were, as proued is by ancient charter,
The famous *Tristram*, *Lancelot* and sir *Arther*.

41

At this same wood *Renaldo* from his fleet,
Well mounted on his Bayards backe did part,
He points his men at *Barwicke* him to meet,
The while him selfe alone with valiant heart,
Sometime on horsebacke, sometime on his feete,
Doth march in mind to do some worthy part,
But seeing now the night came on so fast,
Vnto an Abbey he repaires at last.

Here you must
begin to read the
single tale of *Ge-
neura*, vnto the
10 staff of the 6
booke.

42

The Abbot and his Monks with comely grace,
As holy men of humane manners skilled,
Did welcome him, and in a little space,
With costly fare his emptie stomacke filled.
Renaldo straight enquired of the place,
What feates of armes had there bene late fulfilled,
And where a man by valiant acts may show,
If his exploits deserue dispraise or no.

43

They said that in that wood and Forrest, find
Aduentures strange and feates of armes he might,
But as the place, so are the actions blind,
That oft their doings neuer come to light.
But if (say they) we may perswade your mind,
Attempt an action worthy of a knight,
Where if you passe the perill and the paine,
Eternall fame shall vnto you remaine.

44

For if you would performe an act indeed,
Whereby great name and honour may be wonne,
Then this would be the best and noblest deed,
That late or long time past was euer done:
Our Princes daughter standeth now in need,
Of great defence, a danger great to shunne,
Against a knight *Lurcanio* by name,
That seekes her life to take away and fame.

45

This knight hath her vnto the king accused,
I thinke of malice rather then of right,
That he hath leene how she her selfe abused,
And closely tooke her louer vp by night.
Now by the lawes that in this land are vsed,
Except she haue a champion that by might
Within a month *Lurcanio* proue a lier,
She shall be straight condemned to the fier.

This bloudie
shanked be
is dispraised
this land
good while.

46

The Scottish law that breedeth all this strife,
Appoints that all of base or better sort,
That take a man except she be his wife,
And spends her time with him in *Venus* sport,
By cruell torment finish shall her life,
Except she find some knight that will support,
That she the hainous fact hath not committed,
But that in law she ought to be acquitted.

47

The King for faire *Geneura* takes great thought,
Both for her safetie and her estimation,
And seeks by all good meanes that may be wrought
For her defence, and maketh proclamation,
That by whose helpe from danger she is brought,
(Prouided he be one of noble nation)
Shall haue the goodly damsell for his wife,
With liuings large to keepe him all his life.

Geneura does
ser to the King
Scots.

48

But if within this month that now ensuth,
(So little time for her defence is left her)
No knight will come that will defend her truth,
Then friends and fame, and life will be bereft her,
This enterprise would much commend your youth,
The praise whereof would last a great while after:
And from *Atlantas* pillars vnto Inde,
A fairer Ladie you shall neuer finde.

49

Now then beside the honour and the praise,
To haue a stare, may make you liue content,
The Princes loue (that helpeth many waies,
Whose honour now is halfe consum'd and spent.
Again true knights should helpe at all assaies,
When any harme to Ladies faire is ment.
The very law of knighthood doth commaund you,
To graunt this aide that we do now demaund you.

Renaldo

Knights on
sworne to
iustice with
sword, and
leeue the
sed.

50

Renaldo paus'd, and after thus he spake,
Why then (said he) must this faire damsell die,
That for her true and secret louers sake,
Did condescend within his armes to lie?
Accurst be they that such a law did make,
Accurst be they that meane to liue thereby,
Nay rather point a punishment and paine
For such as do their louers true disdaine.

51

If faire Geneura had her friend or no,
I stand not now the matter to decide,
Yea I would praise her had she done it so,
That by her foes it had not bene espie.
Be as be may, my meaning is to go
To fight for her, if I may haue a guide
That will but shew me where is her accuser,
And I shall quickly proue he doth abuse her.

52

I know not if the fact she haue committed,
Nor can I say in this the certaine sure:
But this I say, it ought to remitted,
Much rather then she should distresse endure.
I further say, they were but meanly witted,
That did so straight a statute first procure.
I also say, this law they ought recall,
In place thereof a better to enstall.

53

Sith like desire the fancies doth possesse,
Both of the male and of the female gender,
To do that thing that fooles count great excesse,
And quench the flame that Cupid doth engender,
To grant the men more scope, the women lesse,
Is law for which no reason we can render.
Men vsing many neuer are ashamed,
But women vsing one or two are blamed.

54

This law I say is partiall and naught,
And doth to women plaine annd open wrong,
I trust in God they shall be better taught,
And that this law shall be reuokt ere long.
The Abbot and his Monks in word and thought,
Allowd Renaldos speech, both old and yong:
They all condemne the law, and partly blame
The king that may and mendeth not the same.

In this fourth booke, whereas dissembling is praised, we may note in what sort and with what persons it is allowable, *Morall.*
seeing generally in it selfe it is a most vnnoble and vnworthy qualitie. In that Bradamant by the ring doth discover
Atlantas inchantments, and frustrate all his purpose, we may note how reason tempered with courage, preuailes to the o-
uerthrow of all deceits and subtil practises. In Rogero, that was caried away vnawares by the winged horse, we haue
an example to make vs take heed of rash & vnadvised enterprises. In Renaldos speech, condemning the rigor of the law,
that adultery was punished by death in women rather then in men, as we may with him iustly mislike such partialitie
in lawes: so we may note the manner and phrase of speech of yong gentlemen (as Renaldo was) that make so light of
their sweet sinne of lechery, as they call it, not regarding how sower heavy punishment hangs ouer it, and what a foule
reproch it is to both sexes. And so much for the *Morall.*

For the Historie of this booke, little is to be said of the time of Charles the great, because the booke digresseth to other *Historie.*
matters: but whereas mention is made of Caledon forrest in Scotland, and of King Arthur his knights, I thought it not a-
misse, as in the former booke I told you, what I thought of Merlin that was Arthurs great counseller, so now somewhat to
touch, as the space will permit, the reports that are true and probable of King Arthur. It is generally written and beleued
that this Arthur was a notable valiant and religious Prince, and that he gouerned this Island in that rude age with
great loue of his people, and honour of forraine nations, he instituted an order of the knights of the round table onely
(as it seemes) of some meriment of hunting, or some pleasant exercises. He was himselfe of stature very tall, as appears
by the proportion of him left (as they say here in our countrey of Somerset) in a doore of a Church by the famous Abbey

55

Next morning when Renaldo doth perceauie
The Sunne appeare, and starres their heads to hide,
He thanks them for his cheare, and taketh leaue,
And takes a target-bearer for his guide,
For feare lest vnkowne paths should him deceaue.
Himselfe all armed doth on Bayard ride,
And to the Scottish court he goes a stranger,
For to defend the damsell faire from danger.

56

And for they thought to take a way more nie,
They leaue the common way a mile or twaine,
When suddenly they heard a piteous crie,
Well like to one that feared to be slaine.
In hast they spurre their horses by and by,
Along the vale, and looking downe the plaine,
A maide betweene two murderers they saw,
That meant to take her life against all law.

57

The caitifes put the damsell in great feare,
And shewd that they were come to end her dayes,
Which made her weepe, and shed full many a teare,
To moue their minds she trieth many wayes:
And though the fact a while they did forbear,
Yet now they had remoued all delayes,
When as Renaldo came vnto her aid,
And made the malefactors sore afraid.

58

Away they fled and left the wench alone,
For dread of death appald and sore affrighted,
Who all her cause of danger and of mone,
Vnto Renaldo straight would haue recited,
But so great hast he maketh to be gone,
He gaue no eare, nor from his horse alighted,
But to ensue the iourney first assignd him,
He causd the guide to take her vp behind him.

59

And now on horsebacke marking well her face,
And marking more her gesture and behauour,
Her pleasing speech, and modest sober grace,
She now hath wonne a great deale more his fauour,
And after he had rode a little space,
To tell her hard aduenture he would haue her:
And she began with humble voice and low,
As more at large hereafter I will show.

of Glassenbury in which Abbey his wife Queene Gueneuet was buried, and within our memory taken vp in a coffin, with her body and face in shew plainly to be discerned, saue the very tip of her nose, as diuers dwelling there about haue reported. But what manner of death king Arthur himselfe died, it is doubtfull, and that which they report seemes meerly fabulous, namely that he was caried away in a barge from a bridge called Pomperles, neare the said Glassenbury, and so conueyed by unknowne persons, (or by the Ladie of the Lake) with promise to bring him backe againe one day: vpon which it seems the foolish people grounded their vaine saying (King Arthur comes againe.)

For my part I confesse my selfe to haue bin more inquisitiue of such trifles then a wiser man would, and viewing that bridge and all that countrey about Glassenbury, I see good reason to guesse, that all that countrey which now we call our moores (and is reduced to profitable and fertill ground) was sometime recovered from the sea, and might be nauigable vp to Glassenbury in those times: and so I suppose the said King being drowned there by some mishap, and being well beloued of the people, some fained (to content their minds) that he was but gone a little way, and would come againe: as the Senate of Rome, hauing killed Romulus for his tyrannie, deuised a tale of I know not what ~~god~~ to make the people beleue he was turned to a god. M. Camden the best antiquarie of our time, writeth that king Arthurs body was taken vp at the foresaid Glassenbury in the time of king Henric the second, which indeed is most credible, as he there proueth. But thus I conclude, that this Prince was so worthy a man in his time, as not onely true histories haue greatly recommended to the posteritie, but almost all Poeticall writers that haue bin since, haue mentioned this famous Prince Arthur of England, as a person of whom no notable exploit was incredible. And thus much for king Arthur.

Camd. in Brita-
nia. vide Somer-
set.

Allegoric.

For the Allegorie of this booke, much might be said of Atlant, of his horse and his shield, but I will onely touch what I thinke will be thought most worth the noting, and let passe the rest for each mans priuat conceit. Atlant by many of his gestures and actions here specified, may signifie Cupid, or that fond fancie that we call loue: and whereas he takes vp such braue captains and souldiers, as well as women and weaklings: it seemes consonant to that pretie fantastik verse of Ouid:

Militat omnis amans & habet sua castra Cupido.

All louers warriors are, and Cupid hath his campe.

Further, the wings of this strange beast called the Griphith horse, agree with Petrarks description of Cupids wings:

Sopra gli homeri hauea sol due grand' ali, di color mille.

Vpon his shoulders were two mightie wings, of thousand colours.

Atlant takes, and imprisons those he takes. Loue is as close and inextricable a prison as his.

The wayes to Atlants castle are described to be craggie, headlong, and vnpleasant. Such be the wayes of that passion. The castle is said to be placed in the middle of a rockie mountaine clouen in sunder: by which is meant, that this folly we speake of possesseth vs, and dwels in vs most of all about the middle of our age, as Dant saith,

Nel mezzo del camin di nostra vita,

Mi retrouai per vna selua oscura,

Che la dritta via era smarrita.

While yet my life was in her middle race,

I found, I wandred in a darke some wood,

The right way lost with mine vnsteddy pace.

This is that wandring wood, of which the dolefull Petrарke complaines so often in those his sweete mourning sonets, in which he seemes to haue comprehended all the passions that all men of that humour haue felt. And thus he saith of it:

Ond' io son fatto vn' animal siluestro,

Che co pie vaghi solitari e lassi,

Porto il cor graue, e gli occhi humidi e bassi,

Al mondo che e per me vn deserto.

Thus I am growne a sauage beast and vylde,

That still with wandring steps and solitarie,

A heauy heart and watred eyes do carie,

About the world which is my Forrest wyld.

Also whereas it is said what plentie of all pleasures they had in Atlantas castle, it signifieth, that delicious fare and such Epicuriall and idle life, are the chiefe nurses of this fond affection, according to that saying of Ouid,

Otia si tollas perire cupidinis arcus,

Contemptaque iacent & sine luce faces.

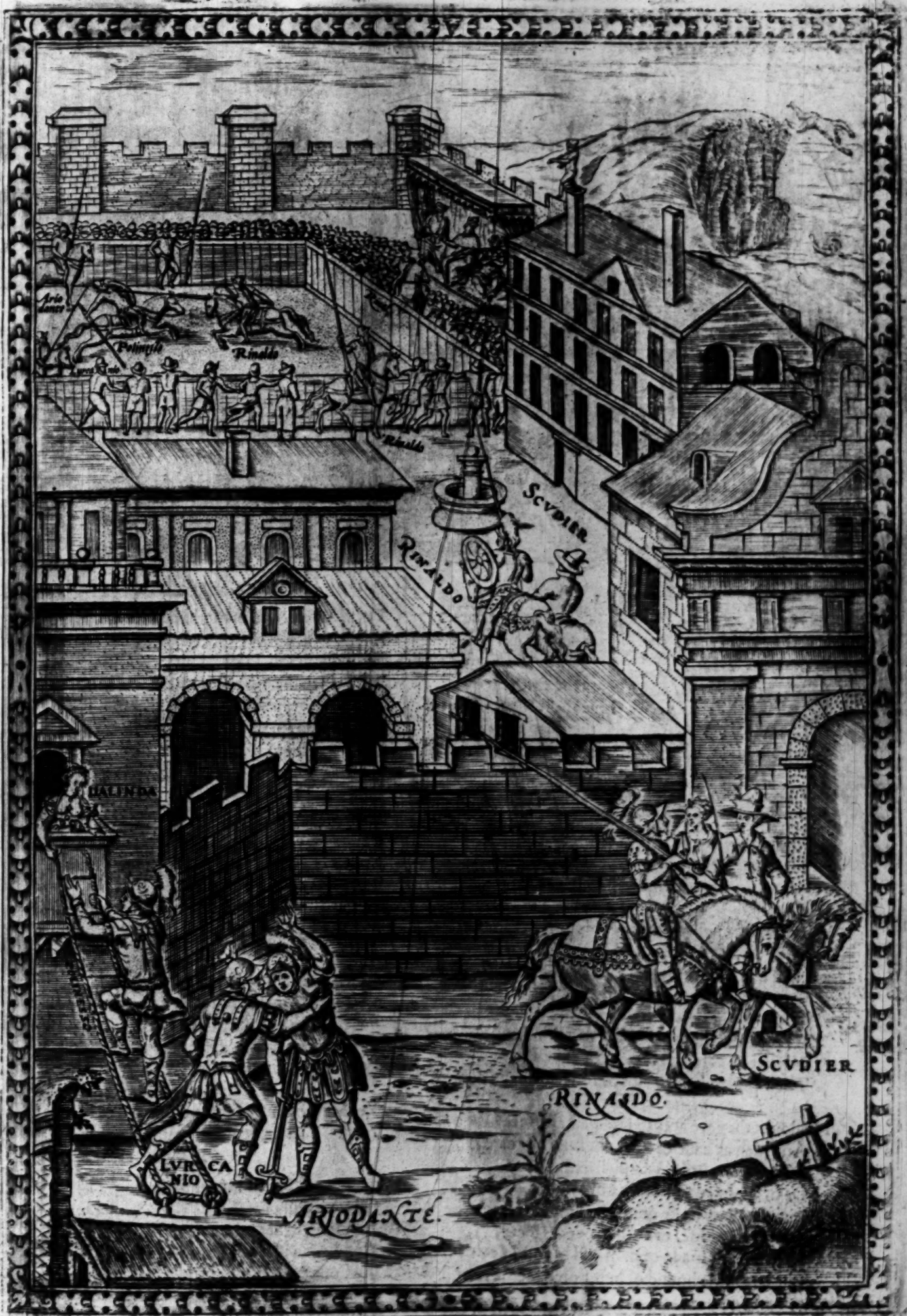
Take idlenesse away, and out of doubt

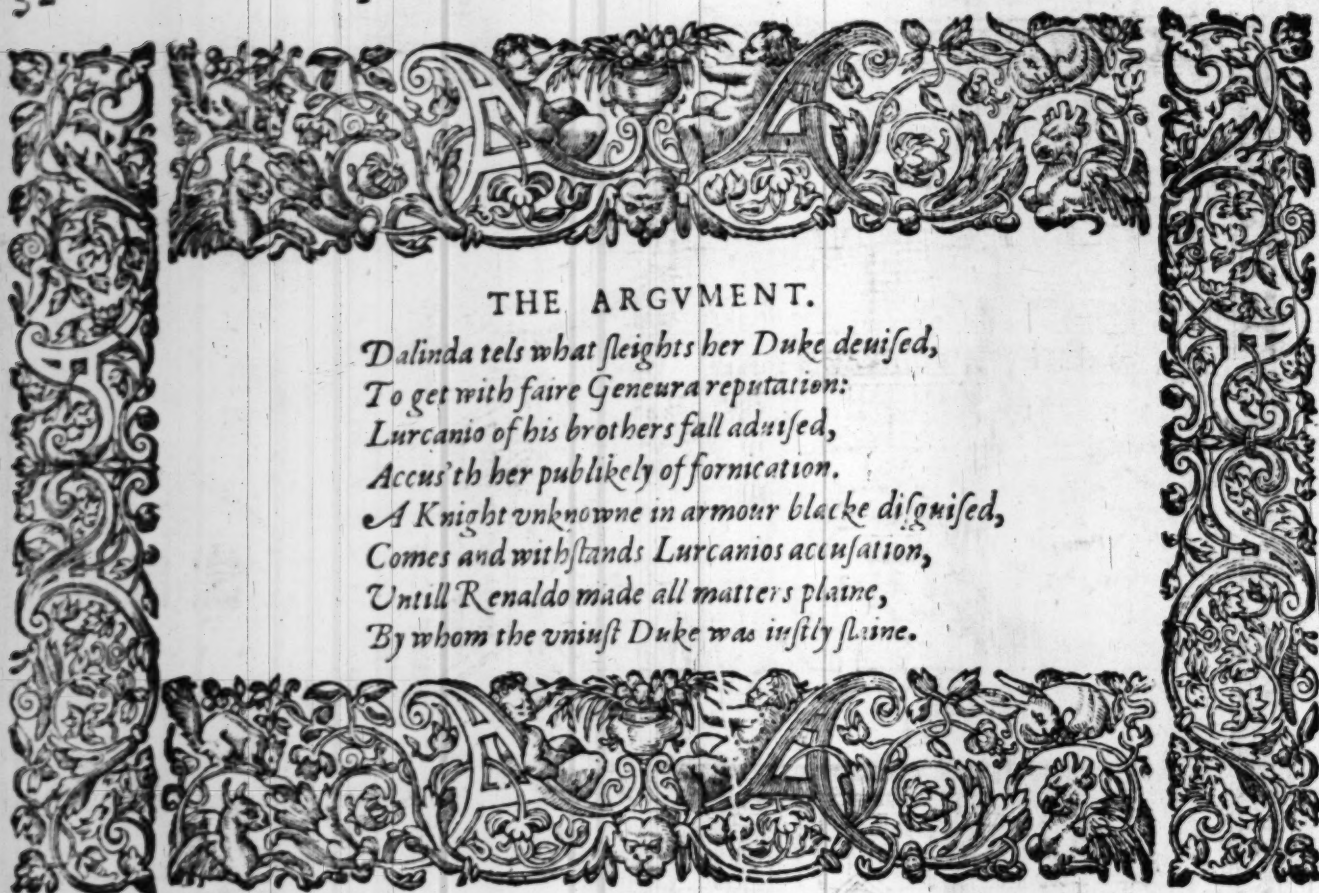
Cupids bow breakes, and all his lamps go out.

Finally, the fortification of the castle, the fuming pots of stone, the situation and height, and euery thing that is said of the man, the horse, the house, the shield, are so easie to vnderstand in allegoricall sence, as I thinke it needlesse to proceed any further in this matter.

Allusion.

For allusions, I find little to be said, save of Gencura her selfe, which I will reserve to the next booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Dalinda tels what sleights her Duke deuised,
To get with faire Geneura reputation:
Lurcanio of his brothers fall aduised,
Accus'th her publikely of fornication.
A Knight unknowne in armour blacke disguised,
Comes and withstands Lurcanios accusation,
Untill Renaldo made all matters plaine,
By whom the vniust Duke was iustly slaine.*

*Looke more at
large in the end
of the booke, of
the morall.*



Against the law of nature will rebell.
The sauge Lions, Beares and Buls most wyld,
Vnto their females shew themselves most myld.

What fiend of hell, what rage raignes here so rife,
Disturbing still the state of humane harts?
How comes it that we find twixt man and wife,
Continuall iarres bred by iniurious parts?
The vndeified bed is filde by strife,
And teares that grow of words vnkind and thwarts:
Nay oft all care and feare is so exiled,
Their guiltie hands with blood haue bene defiled.

*S. Paul's colleth
marriage by the
Synonima of the
bed vndeified.*

No doubt they are accurst and past all grace,
And such as haue of God nor man no feare,
That dare to strike a damsell in the face,
Or of her head to minish but a haire:
But who with knife or poison would vnlace
Their line of life, or flesh in peeces teare,
No man, nor made of flesh and blood I deeme him,
But sure some hound of hell I do esteeme him.

Such were these theues that would the damsell kill,
That by Renaldos comming was recovered:

They secretly had brought her downe the hill,
In hope their fact could neuer be discouered,
Yet such is God, so good his gracious will,
That when she looked least she was deliuered,
And with a chearfull heart that late was sorie,
She doth begin to tell the wofull storie.

Good sir (said she) my conscience to discharge,
The greatest tyrannie I shall you tell,
That erst in Thebes, in Athens or in Arge,
Was euer wrought, or where worst tyrants dwell:
My voice and skill would faile to tell at large
The filthy fact, for I beleue it well,
Vpon this countrey Phœbus shines more cold,
Because he doth such wicked acts behold.

Men seeke we see, and haue in euery age,
To foile their foes, and tread them in the dust:
But there to wreake their rancor and their rage,
Where they are lou'd, is foule and too vniust.
Loue should preuaile, iust anger to asswage,
If loue bring death, whereto can women trust?
Yet loue did breed my danger and my feare,
As you shall heare if you will giue me care.

For entring first into my tender spring
Of youthfull yeares, vnto the court I came,
And serued there the daughter of our king,
And kept a place of honor with good fame,
Till loue (alas that loue such care should bring)
Enuide my state, and sought to do me shame.
Loue made the Duke of Alban seeme to me,
The fairest wight that erst mine eye did see.

And

8

And (for I thought he lou'd me all aboute)
I bent my selfe to hold and loue him best,
But now I find that hard it is to proue,
By sight or speech what bides in secret brest,
While I (poore I) did thus belecue and loue,
He gets my bodie bed and all the rest.
Nor thinking this might breed my mistres danger,
I vsd this practise in *Geneuras* chamber.

9

Where all the things of greatest value lay,
And where *Geneura* sleeps her selfe to metime,
There at a window we did finde a way,
In secret sort to couer this our crime:
Here when my loue and I were bent to play,
I taught him by a scale of cord to clime,
And at the window I my selfe would stand,
And let the ladder downe into his hand.

10

So oft we meete together at this sport,
As faire *Geneuras* absence giues vs leaue,
Who vsd to other chambers to resort
In summer time, and this for heat to leaue:
And this we carried in so secret sort,
As none there was our doings did perceaue,
For why, this window standeth out of sight,
Where none do come by day nor yet by night.

11

Twixt vs this vse continu'd many dayes,
Yea many months we vsd this priue traine,
Loue set my heart on fire so many wayes,
That still my liking lasted to my paine.
I might haue found by certaine strange delayes,
That he but little lou'd and much did faine,
For all his sleights were not so closely couered,
But that they might full easly be discovered.

12

At last my Duke did seeme enflamed sore,
One faire *Geneura*: neither can I tell,
If now this loue began or was before,
That I did come to court with her to dwell.
But looke if I were subiect to his lore,
And looke if he my loue requited well,
He askt my aid herein no whit ashamed,
To tell me how of her he was enflamed.

13

Not all of loue, but partly of ambition,
He beares in hand his minde is onely bent,
Because of her great state and hie condition,
To haue her for his wife is his intent:
He nothing doubreth of the kings permission,
Had he obtaind *Geneuras* free assent.
Ne was it hard for him to take in hand,
That was the second person in the land.

14

He sware to me, if I would be so kind
His hie attempt to further and assist,
That at his hands I should great fauour finde,
And of the king procure me what me list:
How he would euer keepe it in his mind,
And in his former loue to me persist,
And notwithstanding wife and all the rest,
I should be sure that he would loue me best.

15

I straight consented to his fond request,
As readie his commandment to obay,
And thinking still my time employ'd best,
When I had pleas'd his fancie any way:
And when I found a time then was I prest,
To talke of him, and good of him to say.
I vsd all my art, my wit, and paine,
Geneuras loue and liking to obtaine.

16

God knowth how glad I was to worke his will,
How diligent I followd his direction,
I spar'd no time, no trauell, nor no skill,
To this my Duke to kindle her affection:
But alwayes this attempt succeeded ill,
Loue had her heart alreadie in subiection,
A comely knight did faire *Geneura* please,
Come to this countrie from beyond the seas.

17

From Italy for seruice (as I heare)
Vnto the court he and his brother came,
In tourneys and in tilt he had no peere,
All Brittain soone was filled with his fame.
Our king did loue him well and hold him deere,
And did by princely gifts confirme the same.
Faire castels, townes, and lordships, him he gaue,
And made him great, such power great princes haue.

18

Our Soueraigne much, his daughter likt him more,
And *Ariodant* this worthy knight is named,
So braue in deeds of armes himselfe he bore,
No Ladie of his loue need be ashamed:
The hill of Sicil burneth not so sore,
Nor is the mount Vesuuio so inflamed,
As *Ariodantes* heart was set on fire,
Geneuras beutie kindling his desire.

19

His certaine loue by signe most certaine found,
Did cause my sute vnwillingly was hard,
She well perceiu'd his loue sincere and sound,
Enclining to his sute with great regard,
In vaine I seeke my Dukes loue to expound,
The more I seeke to make the more I mard.
For while with words I seeke to praise & grace him
No lesse with workes she striueth to deface him.

20

Thus being oft repulst (so euill sped I,)
To my too much beloued Duke I went,
And told him how her heart was fixt alredie,
How on the stranger all her mind was bent:
And praid him now sith there was no remedie,
That to surceale his sute he would content,
For *Ariodant* so lou'd the princely wench,
That *Neptunes* floods vnneath his flames cold quench

21

When *Polynesse* (so the Duke we call)
This tale vnpleasant oftentime had hard,
And found himselfe his likel'hood verie small,
When with my words her deeds he had compar'd,
Greeu'd with repulse, and greeued therewithall,
To see this stranger thus to be prefard,
The loue that late his heart so sore had burned,
Was cooled all, and into hatred turned.

Aetna and Vesuuio, two mountains that did cast out flames,

Vt ameris amabilis esto.

Polynesse vsd sometime to woo the maid to win the mistres.

22
Intending by some vile and subtil traine,
To part *Geneura* from her faithfull loue,
And plant so great dislike betwene them twaine,
Yet with so cunning shew the same to couer,
That her good name he will so foule distaine,
Aloue nor dead she neuer shall recouer.
But lest he might in this attempt be thwarted,
To none at all his secret he imparted.

*Smile.
The like is in Ho
race bu 4. Ode of
the fourth booke:
Dura ut illex
sensu bipennis.*

23
Now thus resolu'd (*Dalinda* faire) quoth he,
(I lo am cald) you know though trees be topt,
And shrowded low, yet sprout yong shoots we see,
And issue from that head so lately lopt:
So in my loue it fareth now with me.
Though by repulse cut short and shrewdly cropt,
The pared tops such buds of loue do render,
That still I proue new passions do engender.

24
Ne do I deeme so deare the great delight,
As I didaine I should be so reiect,
And lest this griefe should ouercome me quight,
Because I faile to bring it to effect,
To please my fond conceit this very night,
I pray thee deare to do as I direct:
When faire *Geneura* to her bed is gone,
Take thou the clothes she ware and put them on.

25
As she is wont her golden haire to dresse,
In stately sort to wind it on her wire,
So you her person liuely to expresse,
May dresse your owne and weare her head attire,
Her gorgets and heriewels rich no lesse,
You may put on t'accomplish my desire.
And when vnto the window I ascend,
I will my comming there you do attend.

26
Thus I may passe my fancies foolish fit,
And thus (quoth he) my selfe I would deceiue.
And I that had no reason nor no wit,
His shamefull drift (though open) to perceiue:
Did weare my mistresse robes that seru'd me fit,
And stood at window, there him to receiue.
And of the fraud I was no whit aware,
Till that fell out that caused all my care.

27
Of late twixt him and *Ariodant* had past,
About *Geneura* faire these words or such,
(For why there was good friendship in times past
Betwene them two, till loue their hearts did tuch)
The Duke such kind of speeches out did cast,
He said to *Ariodant*, he marueld much,
That hauing alwayes lou'd and well regarded him,
That he againe so thanklesly rewarded him.

28
I know you see (for needs it must be seene)
The good content and matrimoniall loue,
That long betwene *Geneura* and me hath beene,
For whom I meane ere long the king to moue.
Why should you fondly thrust your selfe betwene?
Why should you rouse your reach so farre aboue?
For if my case were yours I would forbear,
Or if I knew that you so loued were.

29
And I much more (the other straight replies)
Do maruell you sir Duke are so vnkind,
That know our loue, and see it with your eies,
(Except that wilfulnesse haue made you blind)
That no man can more sured knots deuise,
Then her to me, and me to her do bind,
Into this sute so rashly are intruded,
Still finding from all hope you are excluded.

30
Why beare you not to me the like respect,
As my good will requireth at your hand?
Since that our loue is growne to this effect,
We meane to knit our selues in weddings band:
Which to fulfill ere long I do expect,
For know I am (though not in rents or land)
Yet in my Princes grace no whit inferiour,
And in his daughters greatly your superiour.

31
Well (said the Duke) errors are hardly moued,
That loue doth breed in vnaduised brest,
Each thinkes himselfe to be the best beloued,
And yet but one of vs is loued best.
Wherefore to haue the matter plainly proued,
Which should proceed in loue, and which shold rest,
Let vs agree that victor he remaine,
That of her liking sheweth signes most plaine.

32
I will be bound to you by solemne oth,
Your secrets all and counsell to conceale,
So you likewise will plight to me your troth,
The thing I shew you neuer to reueale.
To trie the matter thus they greed both,
And from this doome hereafter not repeale:
But on the Bible first they were deposed,
That this their speech should neuer be disclosed.

33
And first the stranger doth his state reueale,
And tell the truth in hope to end the strife,
How she had promist him in wo and weale,
To liue with him, and loue him all her life:
And how with writing with her hand and scale,
She had confirmed she would be his wife,
Except she were forbidden by her father,
For then to liue vnmarride she had rather.

34
And furthermore he nothing doubts (he said)
Of his good seruice so plaine prooffe to show,
As that the king shall nothing be afraid,
On such a Knight his daughter to bestow:
And how in this he needeth little aid,
As finding still his fauour greater grow,
He doubts not he will grant his liking after
That he shall know it pleateth so his daughter.

35
And thus you see so sound stands mine estate,
That I my selfe in thought can wish no more,
Who seekes her now is sure to come too late,
For that he seekes is granted me before,
Now onely rests in marriage holy state,
To knit the knot that must dure euermore.
And for her praise, I need not to declare it,
As knowing none to whom I may compare it.

36

Thus *Ariodant* a tale most true declared,
And what reward he hoped for his paine.
But my false Duke that him had foully snared,
And found by my great folly such a traine,
Doth sweare all this might no way be compared
With his, no though himselfe did iudge remaine,
For I (quoth he) can shew signes so expresse,
As you your selfe inferiour shall confesse.

37

Alas (quoth he) I see you do not know
How cunningly these women can dissemble,
They least to loue where they make greatest show,
And not to be the thing they most resemble.
But other fauours I receiue I trow,
When as we two do secretly assemble,
As I will tell you (though I should conceale it)
Because you promise neuer to reueale it.

38

The truth is this, that I full oft haue seene
Her iuory corpes, and bene with her all night,
And naked laine her naked armes betweene,
And full enioyne the fruites of loues delight:
Now iudge who hath in greatest fauour beene,
To which of vs she doth pertaine in right,
And then giue place, and yeeld to me mine owne,
Sith by iust proofes I now haue made it knowne.

39

Iust proofes? (quoth *Ariodant*) nay shamefull lies,
Nor will I credit giue to any word:
Is this the finest tale you can deuise?
What, hop'd you that with this I could be dord?
No, no, but sith a slander foule doth rise
By thee to her, maintaine it with thy sword,
I call thee lying traitor to thy face,
And meane to proue it in this present place.

40

Tush (quoth the Duke) it were a foolish part,
For you to fight with me that am your frend,
Sith plaine to shew without deceit or art,
As much as I haue said I do intend.
These words did gripe poore *Ariodantes* hart,
Downe all his limbes a shiuering doth descend,
And still he stood with eyes cast downe on ground,
Like one would fall into a deadly sound.

41

With wofull mind, with pale and chearlesse face,
With trembling voice that came from bitter thought,
He said he much desir'd to see this place,
Where such strange feats and miracles were wrought.
Hath faire *Geneura* granted you this grace,
That I (quoth he) so oft in vaine haue sought?
Now sure except I see it in my vew,
I neuer will beleue it can be trew.

42

The Duke did say he would with all his hart
Both shew him where and how the thing was done,
And straight from him to me he doth depart,
Whom to his purpose wholly he had wonne:
With both of vs he playth so well his part,
That both of vs thereby were quite vndone.
First he tels him that he would haue him placed
Among some houses false and quite defaced.

43

Some ruynd houses stood opposd direct
Against the window where he doth ascend,
But *Ariodant* discretely doth suspect
That this false Duke some mischief did intend,
And thought that all did tend to this effect,
By trechery to bring him to his end,
That sure he had deuised this pretence,
With mind to kill him ere he parted thence.

44

Thus though to see this sight he thought it long,
Yet tooke he care all mischief to preuent,
And if perhap they offer force or wrong,
By force the same for to resist he ment.
He had a brother valiant and strong,
Lurcanio call'd, and straight for him he sent,
Not doubting but alone by his assistance,
Against twice twentie men to make resistance.

45

He bids his brother take his sword in hand,
And go into a place that he would guide,
And in a corner closely there to stand,
Aloofe from tother threescore paces wide,
The cause he would not let him vnderstand,
But prayes him there in secret sort to bide,
Vntill such time he hapt to heare him call,
Else (if he lou'd him) not to stirre at all.

46

His brother would not his request denie,
And so went *Ariodant* into his place,
And vndiscoverd closely there did lie,
Till hauing looked there a little space,
The craftie Duke to come he might descie,
That meant the chaste *Geneura* to deface,
Who hauing made to me his wonted signes,
I let him downe the ladder made of lines.

47

The gowne I ware was white, and richly set
With aglets, pearle, and lace of gold well garnished,
My stately tresses couerd with a net
Of beaten gold most pure and brightly varnished.
Not thus content, the vaile aloft I set,
Which only Princes weare: thus stately harnished,
And vnder *Cupids* banner bent to fight,
All vnawares I stood in all their sight.

48

For why *Lurcanio* either taking care,
Left *Ariodant* should in some danger go,
Or that he sought (as all desirous are)
The counsels of his dearest friend to know,
Close out of sight by secret steps and ware,
Hard at his heeles his brother followd so,
Till he was nearer come by fiftie paces,
And there againe himselfe he newly places.

49

But I that thought no ill, securely came
Vnto the open window as I said,
For once or twice before I did the same,
And had no hurt, which made me lesse afraid:
I cannot boast (except I boast of shame)
When in her robes I had my selfe araid,
Me thought before I was not much vnlike her,
But certaine now I seemed very like her.

D

Sentence.

So that he stood
within ten paces
of his brother.

By the Duello a
man is not bound
to answer a chal-
lenge for iustifica-
tion of any report
if he can proue it
to be true.

50

But *Ariodant* that stood so farre aloofe,
Was more deceiu'd by distance of the place,
And straight beleeu'd against his owne behoofe,
Seeing her clothes that he had scene her face.
Now let those iudge that partly know by prooffe,
The wofull plight of *Ariodantes* case,
When *Polynesse* came by faithlesse friend,
In both their fights the ladder to ascend.

51

I that his comming willingly did wait,
And he once come thought nothing went amisse,
Embrac'd him kindly at the first receit,
His lips, his cheeks, and all his face did kisse,
And he the more to colour his deceit,
Did vse me kinder then he had ere this.
This sight much care to *Ariodante* brought,
Thinking *Geneura* with the Duke was nought.

52

The griefe and sorrow sinketh so profound
Into his heart, he straight resolues to die,
He puts the pummell of his sword on ground,
And meanes himselfe vpon the point to lie:
Which when *Lurcanio* saw and plainly found,
That all this while was closely standing by,
And *Polynesse* comming did discern,
Though who it was he neuer yet could learne.

53

He held his brother for the present time,
That else himselfe for griefe had surely slaine,
Who had he not stood nigh and come betime,
His words and speeches had bene all in vaine.
What shall (quoth he) a faithlesse womans crime,
Cause you to die or put your selfe to paine?
Nay let them go, and curst be all their kind,
Ay borne like clouds with eu'ry blast of wind.

Not all women
kind, but faith-
lesse women.

54

You rather should some iust reuenge deuise,
As she deserues to bring her to confusion:
Sith we haue plainly scene with both our eyes,
Her filthy fact appeare without collusion.
Loue those that loue againe, if you be wise,
For of my counsell this is the conclusion,
Put vp your sword against your selfe prepared,
And let her sinne be to the king declared.

55

His brothers words in *Ariodantes* mind
Seeme for the time to make some small impression,
But still the carelesse wound remaind behind,
Despaire had of his heart the full possession.
And though he knew the thing he had assignd,
Contrary to Christend knights profession:
Yet here on earth he torment felt so sore,
In hell it selfe he thought there was no more.

For despaire is
the dronablest
thing that may
be, by the rules of
Christen religion

56

And seeming now after a little pause,
Vnto his brothers counsell to consent,
He from the court next day himselfe withdrawes,
And makes not one priue to his intent.
His brother and the Duke both knew the cause,
But neither knew the place whereto he went:
Diuers thereof most diuersly did iudge,
Some by good will perswaded, some by grudge.

57

Seu'n dayes entire about for him they sought,
Seu'n dayes entire no newes of him was found,
The eight a peasant to *Geneura* brought
These newes, that in the sea he saw him drown'd:
Not that the waters were with tempest wrought,
Nor that his ship was stricken on the ground.
How then? Forsooth (quoth he) and therewith wept,
Downe from a rocke into the sea he leapt.

58

And further he vnto *Geneura* told,
How he met *Ariodant* vpon the way,
Who made him go with him for to behold
The wofull act that he would do that day.
And charged him the matter to vnfold,
And to his Princes daughter thus to say,
Had he bene blind, he had full happie beene,
His death should shew that he too much had scene.

59

There stands a rocke against the Irish ile,
From thence into the sea himselfe he cast:
I stood and looked after him a while,
The height and steepnesse made me sore agast.
I thence haue traueled hither many a mile,
To shew you plainly how the matter past.
When as the clowne this tale had told and verifide,
Geneuras heart was not a little terrifide.

60

O Lord what wofull words by her were spoken,
Laid all alone vpon her restless bed!
Oft did she strike her guiltlesse brest in token
Of that great griefe that inwardly was bred:
Her golden tresses all were rent and broken,
Recounting still those wofull words he sed,
How that the cause his cruell death was such,
Was onely this, that he had scene too much.

Ouid: *Jahin*
sunt *flumina*
sunt *atque*
planities

61

The rumor of his death spred farre and neare;
And how for sorrow he himselfe had killed,
The King was sad, the court of heauy cheare,
By Lords and Ladies many teares were spilled.
His brother most, as louing him most deare,
Had so his mind with sorrow ouerfilled,
That he was scanty able to refraine,
With his owne hands himselfe for to haue slaine.

62

And oftentimes repeating in his thought,
The filthy fact he saw the other night,
Which (as you heard) the Duke and I had wrought,
I little looking it would come to light,
And that the same his brothers death had brought,
On faire *Geneura* he doth wreake his spight,
Not caring (so did wrath him ouerwhelme)
To keepe the kings good will and all his realme.

63

The king and nobles sitting in the hall,
Right penfue all for *Ariodantes* destruction,
Lurcanio vndertakes before them all,
To giue them perfect notice and instruction,
Who was the cause of *Ariodantes* fall:
And hauing made some little introduction,
He said it was vnchast *Geneuras* crime,
That made him kill himselfe before his time.

What

64

What should I seeke to hide his good intent?
His loue was such as greater none could be,
He hop'd to haue your highnesse free assent,
When you his value and his worth should see:
But while a plaine and honest way he went,
Behold he saw another climbe the tree,
And in the midst of all his hope and sure,
Another tooke the pleasure and the frute.

65

He further said, not that he had surmised,
But that his eyes had seene *Geneura* stand,
And at a window as they had deuised,
Let downe a ladder to her louers hand,
But in such sort he had himselfe disguised,
That who it was he could not vnderstand.
And for due prooffe of this his accusation,
He bids the combat straight by proclamation.

66

How sore the king was griev'd to heare these newes,
I leaue it as a thing not hard to guesse,
Lurcanio plaine his daughter doth accuse,
Of whom the King did looke for nothing lesse:
And this the more his feare and care renewes,
That on this point the lawes are so expresse,
Except by combat it be prou'd a lie,
Needs must *Geneura* be condemn'd to die.

67

How hard the Scottish law is in this case,
I do not doubt but you haue heard it told,
How she that doth another man embrace,
Beside her husband, be she yong or old,
Must die, except within two fortnights space,
She find a champion stout that will vphold,
That vnto her no punishment is due,
But he that doth accuse her is vntrue.

68

The King (of crime that thinkes *Geneura* cleare)
Makes offer her to wed to any knight,
That will in armes defend his daughter deare,
And proue her innocent in open fight.
Yet for all this no champion doth appeare,
Such feare they haue of this *Lurcanio* might.
One gazeth on another as they stand,
But none of them the combat takes in hand.

69

And further by ill fortune and mischance,
Her brother *Zerbin* now is absent thence,
And gone to Spaine (I thinke) or else to France,
Who were he here, she could not want defence,
Or if perhap so luckie were her chance,
To send him notice of her need from hence,
Had she the presence of her noble brother,
She should not need the aide of any other.

70

The King that meanes to make a certaine triall,
If faire *Geneura* guiltie be or no,
(For still she stiffly stood in the deniall,
Of this that wrought her vnderfueled wo)
Examines all her maids, but they reply all,
That of the matter nothing they did know.
Which made me seeke for to preuent the danger,
The Duke and I might haue about the stranger.

71

And thus for him more then my selfe afraid,
(So faithfull loue to this false Duke I bare)
I gaue him notice of these things and said,
That he had need for both of vs beware.
He prais'd my constant loue, and farther praid,
That I would credit him, and take no care,
He points two men (but both to me vnknowne)
To bring me to a castle of his owne.

72

Now sir, I thinke you find by this effect,
How soundly I did loue him from my hart,
And how I prou'd by plaine course and direct,
My meaning was not any wayes to start:
Now marke if he to me bare like respect,
And marke if he requited my defart.
Alas how shall a silly wench attaine,
By louing true to be true lou'd againe?

73

This wicked Duke vngratefull and periured,
Beginneth now of me to haue mistrust,
His guiltie conscience could not be assured,
How to conceale his wicked acts vniust,
Except my death (though causelesse) be procured,
So hard his heart, to lawlesse was his lust:
He said he would me to his castle send,
But that same castle should haue bene mine end.

74

He wild my guides when they were past that hill,
And to the thicke a little way descended,
That there (to quite my loue) they should me kill,
Which as you say they to haue done intended,
Had not your happie comming stopt their will,
That (God and you be thank't) I was defended.
This tale *Dalinda* to *Renaldo* told,
And all the while their iourney on they hold.

75

This strange aduenture luckily befell
To good *Renaldo*, for that now he found,
By this *Dalinda* that this tale did tell,
Geneuras mind vnspotted cleare and sound,
And now his courage was confirmed well,
That wanted erst a true and certaine ground:
For though before for her he meant to fight,
Yet rather now for to defend the right.

*A iust quarrell is
a great encoura-
gement in fight.*

76

To great S. Andrews towne he maketh hast,
Whereas the King was set with all his traine,
Most carefull waiting for the trumpets blast,
That must pronounce his daughters ioy or paine,
But now *Renaldo* spurred had so fast,
He was arriu'd within a mile or twaine,
And through the village as he then was riding,
He met a page that brought them fresher tiding.

77

How there was come a warriour all disguised,
That meant to proue *Lurcanio* said vtrew,
His colours and his armour well deuised,
In maner and in making very new:
And though that sundry sundrily surmised,
Yet who it was for certaine no man knew.
His page demaunded of his masters name,
Did sweare he neuer heard it since he came.

D ij

Now came *Renaldo* to the citie wall,
And at the gate but little time he staid,
The porter was so readie at his call:
But poore *Dalinda* now grew sore afraid,
Renaldo bids her not to feare at all,
For why he would her pardon beg he said:
So thrusting in among the thickest rout,
He saw them stand on scaffolds all about.

It straight was told him by the standers by,
How there was thither come a stranger knight,
That meant *Geneura*'s innocence to try,
And that already was begun the fight:
And how the greene that next the wall did lie,
Was raild about of purpose for the fight.
This newes did make *Renaldo* hasten in,
And leaue behind *Dalinda* at her inne.

He told her he would come againe ere long,
And spurs his horse that made an open lane,
He pierced in the thickest preasse among,
Whereas these valiant knights had giu'n and tane,
Full many strokes, with sturdy hand and strong,
Lurcanio thinks to bring *Geneura*'s bane,
The tother meanes the Ladie to defend,
Whom (though vnknowne) they fauor & commend.

There was Duke *Polynesso* brauely mounted,
Vpon a courser of an exc'lent race,
Sixe knights among the better sort accounted,
On foote in armes do marshall well the place.
The Duke by office all the rest surmounted,
High Constable (as alwayes in such case)
Who of *Geneura*'s danger was as glad,
As all the rest were sorrowfull and sad.

Now had *Renaldo* made an open way,
And was arriv'd there in luckie howre,
To cause the combat to surcease and stay,
Which these two knights applide with al their powre.
Renaldo in the court appeard that day,
Of noble chivalrie the very flowre,
For first the Princes audience he praid,
Then with great expectation thus he said.

Send (noble Prince) quoth he, send by and by,
And cause forthwith that they surcease the fight,
For know, that which so ere of these doth die,
It certaine is he dies against all right.
One thinks he tels the truth, and tels a lie,
And is deceiu'd by error in his fight,
And looke what cause his brothers death procured,
That very same hath him to fight allured.

The tother of a nature good and kind,
Not knowing if he hold the right or no,
To die or to defend her hath assignd,
Lest so rare beautie should he spilled so.
I harmelesse hope to saue the faultlesse mind:
And those that mischief mind to worke them wo,
But first o Prince to stay the fight giue order,
Before my speech proceedeth any farther.

Renaldo's person with the tale he told,
Mou'd so the king, that straight without delay,
The knights were bidden both their hands to hold,
The combat for a time was caus'd to stay,
Then he againe with voice and courage bold,
The secret of the matter doth bewray;
Declaring plaine how *Polynesso*'s lecherie
Had first contriu'd and now betrayd his trecherie.

And proffreth of this speech to make a prooffe,
By combat hand to hand with sword and speare:
The Duke was cald that stood nor farre aloofe,
And scantly able to conceale his feare;
He first denies, as was for his behoofe,
And straight to battell both agreed were,
They both were arm'd, the place before was ready,
Now must they fight there could be no remedy.

How was the king, how were the people glad,
That faire *Geneura* faultlesse there did stand,
As Gods great goodnesse now reuealed had,
And should be proued by *Renaldo*'s hand.
All thought the Duke of mind and manners bad,
The proudest and cruellst man in all the land,
It likely was as euery one surmised,
That this deceit by him should be deuised.

Now *Polynesso* stands with doubtfull brest,
With fainting heart, with pale dismayed face,
Their trumpets blew, they set their speares in rest,
Renaldo commeth on a mightie pace,
For at this fight he finish will the feast,
And where to strike him he designs a place:
His very first encounter was so fierce,
Renaldo's speare the tothers sides did pierce.

And hauing ouerthrowne the Duke by force,
As one vnable so great strokes to bide,
And cast him cleane sixe paces from his horse,
Himselfe alights and th'others helme vntide,
Who making no resistance like a corse,
With faint low voice for mercie now he cride,
And plaine confest with this his latter breath,
The fault that brought him this deserued death.

No sooner had he made this last confession,
But that his life did faile him with his voyce.
Geneura's double scape of foule oppression,
In life and fame did make the King reioyce:
In lieu of her to leese his crownes possession,
He would haue wisht, if such had bene his choise:
To leese his realme he could haue bene no sadder:
To get it lost he could haue bene no gladder.

The combat done, *Renaldo* straight vntide
His beauer, when the King that knew his face,
Gave thanks to God that did so well prouide,
So doubtlesse helpe in such a dangerous case.
That vnknowne knight stood all this while aside,
And saw the matters passed in the place,
And eu'ry one did muse and maruell much,
What wight it was whose curtesie was such.

The king did aske his name because he ment,
With kingly gifts his seruice to reward,
Affirming plainly that his good intent,
Deserued thanks and very great regard.

The knight with much intreatie did assent,
And to disarme himselfe he straight prepar'd,
But who it was if you vouchsafe to looke,
I will declare it in another booke.

The very beginning of this booke being as it were a morall of it selfe, were sufficient for the point it treats of without any Morall. more speech to that purpose: but because the matter is such as cannot be too much spoken of, namely to perswade me to concord in matrimonie, I must needs adde a word or two thereof. And first for mine opinion, I professe that I think it a vertue for a mā to be kind to his wife, & I am of the Censor Cato his mind, who being a marvellous austere mā otherwise, yet pronounced flatly that a man could not be an honest man, that was not to his wife a kind man. And I wil go thus much farther, that you shall hardly find a discreet louing husband, I mean (without dissimulation or flattery) but is withal a vertuous good minded mā, be they of what calling they list: wherfore I honor matrimonial loue in my superiors, I loue it in my equals I praise it in my inferiors, I commend it in all, and to all of what sort or sex soeuer, & I wish them but to call to mind his comparison before set down in verse, and to this effect in prose, that if the male & female in beasts and foule, for the most part, liue in concord & agreement, what a foule and worse then beastly thing is it, for man & wife to be euer bralling & snarling, (for as for smiting) I count it more then monstrous: & let al sorts embrace this honest loue, not only comended but commanded by God, in holy Scriptures, where they are called both one flesh, to giue vs thereby to vnderstand, that as we would not willingly breake our owne shins, nor let our finger ake if we could remedie the same, & if we see one strike himselfe, or knocke his head to the wall, we thinke him Beldem mad. So he that shall willingly griene the wife of his bosome, or wickedly hurt her, we may thinke him far frō a sober, & farther frō an honest man. And euen as if one haue an ach or any grief in his toe or finger, straight he doth lap that part in warm cloth, & easeth it al he can, & cherisheth it more then before til it be sound again: so if any thing either il don, or il take perhaps though not il ment, (haue bred a little pouting or lowering toward vnkindnesse, we must lap vp the part thus griened in warm imbracements, & heale it with sweet words. And if it be but a greene wound, annoint it with the precious balsamū (which all good surgeons know to be a soueraigne medicine for such griefes) and so we shall soundly cure it without any maim or scarre, but we must neuer come to the extremities of cutting or searing, except the disease grow to a Gangrena or some cankered malice vnpossible to be cured.

Another good morall obseruation to be gathered in this cato, is the choise of Gencura, who being a great Lady by birth yet chose rather a gallant faire conditioned gentlemā the a great Duke. For first it is no disparagement for the greatest Emperesse in the world to marie one that is a gentlemā by birth, according to the old prouerb, A gentlemā may make a king, and a clark may proue a Pope. Secondly, if we marke generally the successe of all mariages, we may find the saying of Themistocles true, Better is a man without mony, then mony without a man. To many and to rot pitifull are the examples that we haue hard of, I will not say seene, of those Ladies that to match theselues or their daughters on step higher may but euē the higher end of the same step higher the they might otherwise haue don, haue with that ambition vndon the, making them liue with great discontent, or to say the truth, flat misery, with their proud & vnkind Lord. And yet cannot such euident & neare examples moue some both fair, & modest, & vertuous, to keep the out of such gilded gyues. Releue it Lady, to who soeuer I speak it, that a happie womā is seene in a white apron, as often as in an embrodred kirtle, & hath as quiet sleeps & as contented wakings in a bed of cloth as vnder a sparner of tissue. Boecasio speaking of the coyneffe of some graue widowes, as well as nice damfels, saith as Iremēber in the laberinth of louers to this effect. Be a mā (saith he) neuer so diseased, deformed, decrepit, vnwholsome, vnfaourie, yet if he haue bene either so good a storer for mony, that he may leue his wife wealthy; or be so great in titles though a begar in lining, that she may take her place the higher, they wil (saith he) be contented to lay their so delicate and daintily preserued morsels, in such lothsome dishes to be daily smacked & flauered, binding themselves to suffer such a penance God knowes how long, only to satisfie those humors of coueteousnesse and pride, staruing to their griefe, the third humour (if they be so vertuous) that is by some thought the predominant humor in that sex, and many times dwels vnder the same rooffe with the other two. Yet surely I could rather commend his curtesan that he writes of in his Decameroti, who hauing bargained with a Dutchman, one M. Bruffaldo, for seven dayes boord and lodging at a great rate, hauing found him for one or two nights to be but an vnfaourie bedfellow, she chose rather to leese those two nights hire, then to endure fise more at so painful a price. But I doubt I grow too tedious while I shoot out such blots out of a Boccas. Now to go forward in the morall. You may note in Polynesse an enuious and trecherous mind: in Ariodant the hurt of a credulous ielousie: in Lurcanio the vehemencie of a wrong surmise. In Polynesses intent to kill Dalinda, you may obserue how wicked men often bewray their owne misdeeds with seeking to hide them. In Gencuras accusation and deliuerie, how God euer defends the innocent. And lastly in Polynesses death, how wickednesse ruines it selfe.

For the historie of this booke, either the whole is a historie, or there is no matter historicall in it to be stood on.

Allegorie there is none in this booke at all.

Allusion there is in this tale of Gencura, vnto a storie writtē in Alciats duello, of a matron in France accused in such sort, by two men, and a certaine souldier of Barcellona came with a companion of his, and tooke vpon them the defence of the woman, and being fighting, the companion of the souldier fled: notwithstanding he of Barcellona with his courage and vertue gat the victorie of the other two, and so in strange attire went home to his country vnknowne, to which Ariodant seems to allude. Some others affirme, that this very matter, though set downe here by other names, happened in Ferrara to a kinswoman of the Dukes, which is here figured vnder the name of Gencura, and that indeed such a practise was vsed against her by a great Lord, and discovered by a damsell as is here set downe. Harsoeuer it was, sure the tale is a prettie comicall matter, and ha bene written in English verse some few years past (learnedly and with good grace) though in verse of another kind, by M. George Turberuil.

The rocke from which Ariodant leapt into the sea, alludeth to to the rocke of Lewcade, where men that were mad for loue leapt into the water, and washed away (as they thought) that fancie. Strabo calleth it *latus amatorius*.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Geneura faire to Ariodant is giuen,
And he a Duke is made that verie day.
Roger with the Griffeth horse is driuen,
Vnto Alcynas ile, and there doth stay.
A mirtle in the middle strangely riuen,
Alcinas frands doth vnto him bewray:
Of which enformd he thence would haue departed,
But by the way he finds his purpose thwarted.*



Most wretched he, that thinks
by doing ill,
His euill decdes long to
conceale and hide,
For though the voice and
tongues of men be still,
By foules or beasts his sin
shalbe discride:
And God oft worketh by
his secret will,

That sinne it selfe the sinner so doth guide,
That of his owne accord, without request,
He makes his wicked doings manifest.

The gracelesse wight, Duke *Polineffo* thought,
His former fault should sure haue bin concealed,
If that *Dalinda* vnto death were brought,
By whom alone the same could be reuealed.
Thus making worse the thing before was nought,
He hurt the wound which time perhaps had healed.
And weening with more sinne the lesse to mend,
He hastned on his well deserued end.

And lost at once his life, his state, and friends,
And honour to, a losse as great or more.
Now (as I sayd) that vnkowne knight entends,
Sith euerie one to know him sought so sore,
And sith the king did promise large amends,
To shew his face which they saw oft before,
And *Ariodant* most louely did appeare,
Whom they thought dead as you before did heare.

He whom *Geneura* wofully did waile,
He whom *Lurcanio* deemed to be dead,

He whom the king and court did so bewaile,
He that to all the realme such care had bred,
Doth liue: the clownes report in this did faile,
On which false ground the rumor false was spred.
And yet in this the peasant did not mocke,
He saw him leape downe headlong from the rock.

But as we see men oft with rash intent
Are desperate and do resolute to die,
And straight do change that fancie and repent,
When vnto death they do approach more nie:
So *Ariodant* to drowne himselfe that ment,
Now plung'd in sea repented by and by,
And being of his limbes able and strong,
Vnto the shiore he swam againe erre long.

And much dispraising in his inward thought,
This fond conceit that late his minde posselt,
At last a blind and narrow path him brought,
All tyrd and wet to be an hermits guest:
With whom to stay in secret sort he sought,
Both that he might his former griefe digest,
And learne the truth, if this same clownes report,
Were by *Geneura* tane in griefe or sport.

There first he heard how she conceiu'd such griefe,
As almost brought her life to wofull end,
He found of her they had so good beleefe,
They thought she would not in such sort offend:
He further heard except she had releefe,
By one that would her innocence defend,
It was great doubt *Lurcanio* accusation,
Would bring her to a speedie condemnation.

THE SIXT BOOKE

48

8

And looke how loue before his heart enraged,
So now did wrath enflame, and though he knew wel
To wreake his harme, his brothers life was gaged,
He nathles thought his act so foule and cruell,
That this his anger could not be aswaged,
Vnto his flame loue found such store of fewel:
And this the more increast his wrath begun,
To heare how euerie one the fight did shun,

9

For why *Lurcanio*, was so stout and wise,
Except it were for to defend the truth,
Men thought he would not so the king despise,
And hazard life to bring *Geneura* ruth,
Which caused euerie one his friend aduise,
To shunne the fight that must maintaine vnto truth,
But *Ariodant* after long disputation,
Meanes to withstand his brothers accusation.

10

Alas (quoth he) I neuer shall abide,
Her through my cause to die in wo and paine,
For danger or for death what care betide,
Be she once dead my life cannot remaine,
She is my saint, in her my blisse doth bide,
Her golden rayes my eyes light still maintaine,
Fall backe, fall edge, and be it wrong or right,
In her defence I am resolu'd to fight.

11

I take the wrong, but yet ile take the wrong
And die I shall, yet if I die I care not,
But then alas, by law she dies er long,
O cruell lawes so sweete a wight that spare not:
Yet this small ioy I finde these griefes among,
That *Polinesso* to defend her dare not,
And she shall finde how little she was loued,
Of him that to defend her neuer moued.

12

And she shall see the dead there for her sake,
To whom so great a damage she hath done:
And of my brother iust reuengement take
I shall, by whom this strife was first begun,
For there at least my death plaine proof shall make
That he this while a foolish thred hath spun,
He thinketh to auenge his brothers ill,
The while himselfe his brother there shall kill.

13

And thus resolved, he gets him armour new,
New horse and all things new that needfull beene
All clad in blacke, a sad and mournfull hew,
And crost with wreath of yellow and of greene,
A stranger bare his sheeld that neither knew,
His masters name nor him before had seene,
And thus as I before rehearst, disguised
He met his brother as he had deuised.

14

I told you what successe the matter had,
How *Ariodant* himselfe did then discouer,
For whom the king himselfe was euen as glad,
As late before his daughter to recouer,
And since he thought in ioyfull times and sad,
No man could shew himselfe a truer louer
Then he that after so great wrong, intended
Against his brother her to haue defended.

15

Both louing him by his owne inclination,
And praid thereto by many a Lord and knight,
And chiefly by *Renaldos* instigation,
He gaue to *Ariodant* *Geneura* bright.
Now by the Dukes atteint and condemnation,
Albania came to be the kings in right.
Which dutchie falling in so luckie houre,
Was giuen vnto the damsell for her dowre.

16

Renaldo for *Dalinda* as pardon praid,
Who for her error did so sore repent,
That straight she vowd, with honest mind and staid,
To liue her life in prayre and penitent:
Away she packt, nor further time delaid,
In *Datia*, to a nunrie there she went.
But to *Rogero* now I must repaire,
That all this while did gallop in the aire.

17

Who though he were of mind and courage stout,
And would not easly feare or be dismaid,
Yet doubtlesse now his minde was full of doubt,
His hart was now appald, and fore afraid.
Farre from *Europa*, he had trauaild out,
And yet his flying horse could not be staid,
But past the pillars xij. score leagues and more,
Pitcht there by *Hercles* many yeares before.

18

This Griffeth horse a birde most huge and rare,
Doth pierce the skie with so great force of wing,
That with that noble birde he may compare,
Whom Poets faine Ioues lightning downe to bring
To whom all other birds inferior are,
Because they take the Eagle for their king.
Scarfe seemeth from the clouds to go so swift,
The thunderbolt sent by the lightnings drift.

19

When long this monster strange had kept his race,
Straight as a line bending to neither side,
He spide an lland distant little space,
To which he bends in purpose there to bide,
Much like in semblance was it to the place,
Where *Arethusa* vsd her selfe to hide,
And seekes so long her loue to haue beguild,
Till at the last she found her selfe with child.

20

A fairer place they saw not all the while,
That they had trauild in the aire aloft.
In all the world was not a fairer ile,
If all the world to finde the same were sought:
Here hauing trauaild many a hundred mile,
Rogero by his bird to rest was brought,
In pastures greene, and hils with coole fresh aire,
Cleere riuers, shadie banks, and meddowes faire.

21

Heere diuers groues there were, of daintie shade,
Of Palme, or Orange trees, of Cedars tall,
Of sundrie fruites and flowres that neuer fade,
The shew was faire, the plentie was not small.
And arbours in the thickest places made,
Where little light, and heat came not at all:
Where Nightingales did straine their little throtes,
Recording still their sweete and pleasant notes.

Amid

Heere the
tale of Gen

He returne
Renaldos
ft. 16.
Rogero

The Eagle
Ioue alie

Arethusa
in the fable

22

Amid the lilly white and fragrant rose,
 Prefer'd still fresh by warme and temprate aire,
 The fearfull hare, and cunnie carelesse goes,
 The stag with stately head and bodie faire,
 Doth feed secure, nor fearing any foes,
 That to his damage hither may repaire,
 The Bucke and Doe doth feed amid the fields,
 As in great store the pleasant Forrest yeelds.

23

It needlesse was to bid *Rogero* light,
 When as his horse approached nigh the ground,
 He cast himselfe out of his saddle quight,
 And on his feet he falleth safe and lound,
 And holds the horses raines, lest else he might
 Flic quite away, and not againe be found,
 And to a mirtle by the water side,
 Betweene two other trees his beast he tide.

24

And finding thereabout a little brooke,
 That neare vnto a shadie mountaine stands,
 His helmet from his head forthwith he tooke,
 His shield from arme, his gantler from his hands,
 And from the higher places he doth looke,
 Full oft to sea, full oft to fruitfull lands,
 And seekes the coole and pleasant aire to take,
 That doth among the leaues a murmure make,

25

Oft with the water of that cristall well,
 He seekes to quench his thirst and swage his heate,
 With which his veines enflam'd did rise and swell,
 And could his other parts to fry in sweate:
 Well may it seeme a maruell that I tell,
 Yet will I once againe the same repeate,
 He traueled had about three thousand mile,
 And not put off his armour all the while.

26

Behold his horse he lately tied there,
 Among the boughs in shadie place to bide,
 Straue to go loose, and started backe for feare,
 And puls the tree to which the raines were tide,
 In which (as by the sequell shall appeare)
 A humane soule it selfe did strangely hide.
 With all his strength the steed strues to be loosed,
 By force whereof the mirtle fore was broosed.

27

And as an arme of tree from bodie rent,
 By peasants strength with many a sturdie stroke,
 When in the fire the moisture all is spent,
 The emptie places filld with aire and smoke,
 Do boile and striue, and find at last a vent,
 When of the brand a shiuer out is broke,
 So did the tree striue, bend, writhe, wring and breake,
 Till at a little hole it thus did speake.

28

Right courteous knight (for so I may you deeme,
 And must you call not knowing other name)
 It so you are as gracious as you seeme,
 Then let your friendly deed confirme the same,
 Vnloote this monster, sent as I esteeme,
 To adde some farther torment to my shame.
 Alas, mine inward griefes were such before,
 By outward plagues they need be made no more.

29

Rogero mazed looked round about,
 If any man or woman he might see,
 At last he was resolued of his doubt,
 He found the voice was of the mirtle tree,
 With which abasht, though he were wise and stout,
 He said, I humbly pray thee pardon me,
 Whether thou be some humane ghost or spright,
 Or power deuine that in this wood hast right.

30

Not wilfulnesse, but ignorance did breed
 Thine iniury, mine error in this case:
 And made me do this vnaduised deed,
 By which vnwares thy leaues I did deface,
 But let thy speech so farre forth now proceed,
 To tell me who thou art that in this place,
 Dost dwell in tree amid the desert field,
 As God from haile and tempest thee may shield.

31

And if that I for this amends may make,
 Or now or after, or by paine or art,
 I sweare to thee by her, and for her sake,
 That holds of me, and shall the better part,
 That I shall not surcease all paines to take,
 To worke thy ioy, or to aswage thy smart.
 This said, he saw againe the mirtle shake,
 And then againe he heard that thus it spake.

32

Sir knight, your curtesie doth me constraîne,
 To shew to you the thing that you desier,
 Although I sweat (as you may see) with paine,
 Like greenest boughes vpon the flaming fier,
 I will discouer vnto you her traine,
 (Wo worth the time that euer I came nie her)
 That did for malice and by magicke strange,
 My liuely shape to liuelesse branches change.

33

I was an Earle, *Astolfo* was my name,
 Well knowne in France in time of warre and peace,
Orlandos cosen and *Renalds*, whose fame
 While time shall last in earth shall neuer cease.
 Of *Oton* king of English Ile I came,
 And should succeed him after his decease.
 Both comely, yong, carelesse of worldly pelfe,
 To none an enemy but to my selfe.

34

For as we turned from the Ester Iles,
 Whose banks are worne with surge of Indian waue,
 Where I and many more with witching wiles,
 Were straight inclosed in a hollow caue,
 Vntill *Orlando* did auenge the guiles,
 And found by force a meane his friends to saue,
 We Westward went vpon the shore and sand,
 That lieth on the North side of the land.

35

And as we traueled homeward on our way,
 As chance did leade or destinie vs driue,
 It was our fortune once on breake of day,
 Hard by *Alcynas* castle to arriue,
 Where she alone, to sport her selfe and play,
 Such kind of gins for fishes did contriue,
 That though we saw no net, no bait, no hooke,
 Yet still we saw that store of fish she tooke.

Ouid. 3. Metam.
Quisquam es o fide-
lium.

Bradamant.
To whom Rogero
was a sister.

This hath refe-
rence to the booke
called Orlando,
Imaginatio.

36
The Dolphin strong, the Tunnie good of tast,
The Mullet, Sturgeon, Samon (princely fish)
With Porpose, Seales, and Thornpooles came as fast,
As she was pleased to commaund or wish.
And still she tooke of each kind as they past,
Some strange for shew, some daintie for the dish,
The horsefish and the huge and monstrous whales,
Whose mightie members harness are with scales.

37
Among the rest that were too long to count,
We saw the fish that men Balena call,
Twelue yards about the water did amount
His mightie backe, the monster is so tall:
And (for it stood so still) we made account,
It had bene land, but were deceiued all,
We were decei'd, well I may rewe the while,
It was so huge we thought it was an Ile.

38
I say this potent witch *Alcyna* tooke
All sorts of fish without or net or aide,
But onely reading in a little booke,
Or mumbling words, I know not what she said,
But seeing me, so well she likt my looke,
That at her sport but little time she staid,
But fought forthwith to trap me by her skill,
Which straight fell out according to her will.

39
For toward me with pleasant cheare she came,
In modest maner and in comely sort,
And did withall her speech demurely frame,
And praid me to her lodging to resort,
Or if I would be partner of her game,
She offered me to shew me all the sport,
And all the kinds of fish in seas that were,
Some great, some smal, some smooth, and some with
(haire.

40
And if you list a Mermaid faire to see,
That can with song the raging stormes appease,
At yond same little banke you may (quoth she)
To which we two will safely passe with ease:
(The banke which she pretends to shew to me,
Was that same fish the monster of the seas)
And I that too much loued to aduenter,
Vpon the fishes backe with her did enter.

41
My cousins *Dudon* and *Renaldo* beckned
To draw me thence, I heard not what they said,
But of their speech and signes I little reckned,
I had not wit enough to be afraid:
But soone my courage was appald and weakned,
I straight was faine in vaine to crie for aid,
The monstrous fish that seemd to me an Ile,
Straight bare me from the shore full many a mile.

42
There was *Renaldo* like to haue bene drownd,
Who swam to saue me if perhaps he might,
But sodainly of him and of the ground,
A mistie cloud did take away the sight:
Alcyna and I with seas enuironed round,
Did trauell on that monster all the night,
And then with gracious speeches she began
To giue me all the comfort that she can,

And thus at last to this place we repaire,
Of which by wrong *Alcyna* keepes possession,
Deposing forcibly the rightfull heire,
(Her elder lawfull sister) by oppression:
The other two more vicious then faire,
Are bastards, and begotten in transgression,
I heard it told, and haue it not forgotten,
She and *Morgana* were in incest gotten.

44
And as their first beginning was of sinne,
So is their life vngodly and defamed,
Of law nor iustice passing not a pinne,
But like the heifer wanton and vntamed,
By warre they seeke their sisters right to winne,
Their elder sister *Logisilla* named,
And haue so farre preuailed with their powers,
They haue of hers about an hundred towers.

45
And had ere this time taken all away,
Saeue that the rest is strongly fenced round,
For of one side the water stops the way,
On th'other side the vantage of the ground,
Which with a mightie banke doth make a stay,
Much like the English and the Scottish bound:
And yet the bastard sisters do their best,
And labour still to spoile her of the rest.

46
And why, because they see her good and holy,
They hated her because themselues are vicious,
But to returne, and tell you of my folly,
That turnd to me so hurtfull and pernicious,
I now againe grew somewhat bold and iolly,
I see no cause to feare or be suspicious,
And finding she lou'd me by signes most plaine,
I wholly bent my selfe to loue againe.

47
When I her daintie members did embrace,
I deemed then there was none other blisse,
Me thought all other pleasures were but base,
Of friends nor kin I had no want nor misse,
I onely wisht to stand in her good grace,
And haue accesse her corall lips to kisse.
I thought my selfe the happiest of all creatures,
To haue a Ladie of so goodly features.

48
And this the more confirmd my ioy and pride,
That toward me she shewd such loue and care,
By night and dayly I was by her side,
To do or speake against me no man dare,
I was her stay, I was her houses guide,
I did commaund, the rest as subjects are:
She trusted me, alone with me she talked,
With me within she sat, without she walked.

49
Alas why do I open lay my fore,
Without all hope of medicine or releeve?
And call to mind the fickle ioy before,
Now being plungd in gulfes of endlesse greefe?
For while I thought she lou'd me more and more,
When as I deemd my ioy and blisse was cheefe,
Her wauing loue away from me was taken,
A new guest came, the old was cleane forsaken.

Then

50

Then did I find full soone, though too to late,
Her wanton, wauering, wily womans wit,
Accustomd in a trice to loue and hate,
I saw another in my seate to sit:
Her loue was gone, forgone my happie state,
The marke is mist that I was wont to hit:
And I had perfect knowledge then ere long,
That to a thousand she had done like wrong.

51

And least that they about the world might go,
And make her wicked life and falshood knowne;
In diuers places she doth them bestow,
So as abrode they shall not make their mone,
Some into trees, amid the field that grow,
Some into beasts, and some into a stone:
In rockes or riuers she doth hide the rest,
As to her cruell fancie seemeth best.

52

And you that are arriu'd by steps so strange,
To this vnfortunate and fatall Ile,
Although in youthfull sports a while you range;
And though *Alcina* fauour you a while,
(Although you little looke for any change,)
Although she friendly seeme on you to smile,
Yet looke no lesse, but changd at last to be,
Into some brutish beast, some stone or tree.

53

Thus though perhap my labour is but lost,
Yet haue I giu'n you good and plaine aduise,
Who can themselues beware by others cost,
May be accounted well among the wise:
The waues that my poore ship so sore hath tost,
You may auoid by heed and good deuise,
Which if you do, then your successe is such,
As many others could not do so much.

54

Rogero did with much attention heare
Astolfo's speech, and by his name he knew
To *Bradamant* he was of kindred neare,
Which made him more his wofull state to reu:
And for her sake that loued him most deare,
To whom from him all loue againe was dew,
He sought to bring him aid and some releeve,
At least with comfort to assuage his griefe.

55

Which hauing done, he asked him againe,
The way that would to *Logistilla* guide,
For were it by the hills, by dale or plaine,
He thither meant forthwith to runne or ride.
Astolfo answerd it would aske much paine,
And many a weary iourney he should bide,
Because to stop this way *Alcina* lets
A thousand kinds of hindrances and lets.

56

For as the way it selfe is very steepe,
Not passable without great toile and paine,
So she that in her mischiefe doth not sleepe,
Doth make the matter harder to attaine,
By placing men of armes the way to keepe,
Of which she hath full many in her traine.
Rogero gaue *Astolfo* many thanks,
For giuing him this warning of her pranks.

57

And leading then the flying horse in hand,
Not daring yet to mount a beast so wilde,
Least (as before I made you vnderstand)
He might the second time haue bene beguild:
He meanes to go to *Logistillas* land,
A vertuous Ladie, chaste, discreet and mild,
And to withstand *Alcina* tooth and naile,
That vpon him her force might not preuaile.

58

But well we may commend his good intent,
Though missing that to which he did aspire,
Who iudgeth of our actions by th'euent,
I wish they long may want their most desire.
For though *Rogero* to resist her ment,
And feared her as children feare the fire,
Yet was he taken to his hurt and shame,
Euen as the flie is taken in the flame.

*Quid: Careat
successibus opto
quisquis ab euen-
tu facta nos anda
pueset.*

*Simile.
Petrarch.*

59

For going on his way, behold he spies
A house more stately then can well be told,
Whose wals do seeme exalted to the skies,
From top to bottome shining all of gold,
A sight to rauish any mortall eyes,
It seemd some *Alcumist* did make this hold,
The wals seemd all of gold, but yet I trow
All is not gold that makes a golden show.

Sententia.

60

Now though this stately sight did make him stay,
Yet thinking on the danger him foretold,
He left the easie and the beaten way,
That leadeth to this rich and stately hold,
And to her house where vertue beares the sway,
He bends his steps with all the hast he could:
But ere he could ascend the mountaines top,
A crew of caitiues sought his way to stop.

61

A foule deformd, a brutish curst crew,
In bodie like to antike worke deuifed,
Of monstrous shape, and of an vgly hew,
Like masking *Machachinas* all disguised.
Some looke like dogs, and some like apes in vew,
Some dreadfull looke, and some to be despised,
Yong shamelesse folke, and doting foolish aged,
Some nakd, some drunk, some bedlem-like enraged.

*Look in the Al-
legory.*

62

One rides in hast a horse without a bit,
Another rides as slow, an asle or cow,
The third vpon a Centaurs rumpe doth sit,
A fourth would flie with wings, but knows not how,
The fift doth for a speare employ a spit,
Sixt blowes a blast like one that gelds a sow.
Some carrie ladders, others carrie chaines,
Some sit and sleepe while others take the paines.

63

The Captaine of this honorable band,
With belly swolne, and puffed blubberd face,
Because for drunkenesse he could not stand,
Vpon a tortesse rode a heauy pace:
His sergeants all were round about at hand,
Each one to do his office in his place:
Some wipe the sweat, with fans some make a wind,
Some stay him vp before, and some behind.

64

Then one of these that had his feet and brest
Of manlike shape, but like vnto a hound
In eares, in necke, and mouth, and all the rest
Doth utter barking words with currish sound,
Part to commaund, and partly to request
The valiant knight to leaue the higher ground,
And to repaire vnto *Alcynas* castle,
Or else (forsooth) they two a pull would wraastle.

65

This monster seeing his request denide,
Strake at *Rogeros* beauer with a launce,
But he that could no such rude iests abide,
With *Ballisarda* smote him in the paunch.
Out came the sword a foote on th'other side,
With which he led his fellowes such a daunce,
That some hopt headlesse, some cut by the knees,
And some their arms, and some their eares did leese.

*Rogeros sword,
against which no
enchanted armor
could hold.*

66

In vaine it was their targets to oppose
Against the edge of his enchanted blade,
No Steele had force to beare those fatall blowes,
Vnto the quicke the sword a passage made:
But yet with numbers they do him inclose,
Their multitude his force did overlade:
He needs at least *Brierins* hundred armes
To foile the foes that still about him swarmes.

67

Had he remembered to vnfold the shield,
Atlanta carrid at his saddle bow,
He might haue quickly overcome the field,
And cauld them all without receiuing blow,
Like men dismaid and blind themselves to yeeld:
But he perhaps that vertue did not know,
Or if he did, perhaps he would disdain,
Where force did faile, by fraud his will to gaine.

68

But being full resolved not to yeeld
Vnto such beasts, but ere he parted thence
He would his carkasse leaue amid the field,
And manfully would die in his defence,
Then lo good hap that failes the forward feeld,
Prouided him a meane to rid him hence.
There came two Ladies, either like a Queene,
And each of them most stately to be seene.

*Sentence.
Audaces fortuna
iuvat.*

69

For each of them an Vnicorne did ride,
As white as Lillies, or vnmolten snow,
And each of them was deckt with so great pride,
As might most richly set them forth to shew,
But each of them was so diuinely eide,
Would moue a man in loue with them to grow,
And each of them in all points was so choice,
As in their sight a man would much reioyce.

*Looke the Alce-
goy.*

70

Then both of them vnto the meadow came,
Whereas *Rogeros* fought with all that rout,
And both of them those brutish beasts did blame,
That sought to harme a knight so strong and stout.
Rogeros blushing now with modest shame,
Thankt them that had of danger holpt him out,
And straight consented with those Ladies faire,
Vnto *Alcynas* castle to repaire.

71

Those ornaments that do set forth the gate,
Emboist a little bigger then the rest,
All are enricht with stones of great estate,
The best and richest growing in the East,
In parted quadrons, with a seemly rate,
The collons diamonds as may be guest:
I say not whether counterfait or true,
But shine they did like diamonds in vew.

72

About these stately pillars and betweene
Are wanton damfels gadding to and fro,
And as their age, so are their garments Greene,
The blacke ox hath not yet trod on their toe,
Had vertue with that beautie tempred beene,
It would haue made the substance like the show:
These maids with curteous speech and manners nice
Welcome *Rogero* to this paradise.

73

If so I may a paradise it name,
Where loue and lust haue built their habitation,
Where time well spent is counted as a shame,
No wise staide thought, no care of estimation,
Nor nought but courting, dauncing, play and game,
Disguised clothes, each day a sundry fashion,
No vertuous labour doth this people please,
But nice apparrell, belly-cheare and ease.

74

Their aire is alway temperate and cleare,
And wants both winters storms, and summers heate,
As though that Aprill lasted all the yeare,
Some one by fountaines side doth take his seate,
And there with fained voice and carelesse cheare,
Some sonnet made of loue he doth repeate:
Some others other where with other fashions,
Describe vnto their loues their louing passions.

75

And *Cupid* then, the captaine of the crew,
Triumphs vpon the captiues he hath got,
And more and more his forces to renew,
Supplies with fresh the arrowes he hath shot,
With which he hits (his leuell is so true)
And wounds full deepe, although it bleedeth not:
This is the place to which *Rogero* went,
And these the things to which our youth is bent.

76

Then straight a stately steed of colour bay,
Well limbd and strong was to *Rogero* brought,
And deckt with faire capparison most gay,
With gold and pearle and iewels richly wrought,
The Griffeth horle (that whilome to obay
The spurre and bit was by *Atlanta* taught)
Because his iourney long required rest,
Was carrid to a stable to be drest.

77

The Ladies faire that had the knight defended,
From that same wicked and vngracious band,
Which as you heard at large before pretended,
Rogeros passage stoutly to withstand,
Told now *Rogero* how that they intended,
Because his valew great they vnderstand,
Of him to craue his furtherance and aid,
Against their fo that made them oft afraid.

There

78

There is (quoth they) a bridge amid our way,
To which we are alreadie verie nie,
Where one *Erisila* doth all she may,
To damage and annoy the passers by,
A Giantesse she is, she liues by pray,
Her fashions are to fight, deceiue and lye:
Her teeth be long, her visage rough with heare,
Her nayles be sharpe, and scratching like a Beare.

79

The harme is great this monster vile doth doe,
To stop the way that but for her were free,
She spils and spoiles, she cares not what nor who,
That grieve to heare, and pittie is to see:
And for to adde more hatred her vnto,
Know this, that all yon monsters you did see,
Are to this monster either sonnes or daughters,
And liue like her by robberies and slaughters.

80

Rogero thus in curteous sort replide,
Faie Ladies gladly I accept your motion,
If oth r seruice I may do beside,
You may command, I stand at your deuotion:
For this I weare this coat and blade well tride,
Not to procure me riches or promotion,
But to defend from iniurie and wrong,
All such as haue their enemies too strong.

81

The Ladies did Rogero greatly thanke,
As well deseru'd so stout and braue a knight,
That proferd at the first request so franke,
Against the gyantesse for them to fight.
Now they drew nye vnto the riuers banke,
When as *Erisila* came out in fight:
But they that in this storie take some pleasure,
May heare the rest of it at further leasure.

In Ariodants combat with his brother, we may note how the loue of kinred often giues place to the loue of carnalitie. In Dalindas going into religion, after she had her pardon, we may note, that amendment of life is necessary after true repentance. In Rogeros travelling three thousand miles, and then resting at Alcynas, we may obserue how the thoughts of men ranging abroad into a thousand matters, lastly abide in the pleasantest.

In Astolfos metamorphosis into a myrtle tree (which tree is said to be dedicated to Venus) we may note, how men giuen ouer to sensualitie, leese in the end the verie forme of man (which is reason) and so become beastes or stockes: but these two last notes will be more aptly considered in the Allegorie.

Historie there is none in this booke, but the continuation of the tale of *Geneura*, amplified probably, though I thinke no way truly.

The rest of this whole booke is an Allegorie, so plaine to those that will indeed looke heedfully into it, as needs no exposition, and it is continued in the next booke, and in a manner there expounded, to the vnderstanding of any reasonable capacitie, yet for plainnes sake I will touch some things with my accustomed briefenes, and leaue the rest to the discreet reader to scan, and to applie to his owne profit. First therefore of Rogero, (as we haue in part touched before) we may vnderstand the Griffeth horse that carried him, to signifie the passion of the minde contrarie to reason, that caries men in the aire, that is in the height of their imaginations, out of Europe, that is, out of the compasse of the rules of Christian religion and feare of God, vnto the Ile of Alcyna; which signifieth pleasure and vanities of this world.

The example of Astolfos miskeap, and his good counsell which Rogero followed so slenderly, shew how neither the counsels of friends, nor no examples, can for the most part stay a man in his youthfull course, from that which he shall after surely repent. Rogeros offering to go to Logestilla, which betokens vertue, signifies the good motives that men haue often, by reading good bookes, or hearing good sermons to amend their liues: but then the monstrous crew that stoppeth Rogero, signifying the base conceits of men, and foule desires that assaile them, as namely those seauen sinnes which be called the deadly sinnes: by strong temptations and lewd suggestions, do put vs out of that right way, or at least encomber vs so as we proceed but slowly: howbeit these do not preuaile so farre, but that an honest and well giuen minde doth withstand them, and yeeldeth not to them till the two Ladies riding vpon Unicornes, which some vnderstand by chaste loue, or at the least a shew of honorable loue, or rather I suppose thereby to be meant ambition and desire of aduancement, these two driue away all those base thoughts that assailed him, but yet they bring him at last vnto the court of Alcina, where he is held fast, as shall be shewed in the next booke.

By *Erisila* is ment couetousnesse, as the name it selfe shewes, which must be beaten downe er we can come to honour or loue.

By Logestilla, that is inuaded by the two bastard sisters, is ment allegorically, the true Christian religion; and there is another cosen of theirs called heresie, and the graund sire of them all, called Atheisme, that are of late very busie with her. But she is defended with the water, which signifies the holy Scripture, and with the mountaine, which in the Scripture it selfe is taken for preachers, as S. Augustine noteth vpon the Psalmes. I list vp mine eyes to the hils, whence cometh my saluation.

The transformation of Astolfo, alludes to Cyrces witchcraft in Homer.

E



THE ARGUMENT.

When foule Erisila was ouercome,
 Rogero guided by two stately dames,
 Vnto Alcynas sumptuous court doth come,
 Where he his time in pleasure spends and games:
 Melissa him rebukes, he standeth dumme,
 And at her true reproofes he greatly shames.
 In fine by her good counsell and direction,
 He frees himselfe from that most foule subiection.



ALL they that to far coun-
 tries do resort,
 Shall see strange sights, in
 earth, in seas, in skies,
 Which when againe at
 home they shall report,
 Their solemne tales, esteem-
 ed are as lyes.

For by the fond and sim-
 ple common sort,
 Beleeue but what they feele or see with eyes,
 Therefore to them, my tale may seeme a fable,
 Whose wits to vnderstand it are not able.

But carelesse what the simple sorts surmise,
 If they shall deeme it a deuice or deede,
 Yet sure to those that are discrete and wise,
 It will no wonder nor no passion breed:
 Wherefore my tale to such I do deuise,
 And wish them to the same to take good heed,
 For some there are, may fortune in this booke,
 As in a glasse their acts and haps to looke.

For many men with hope and show of pleasure,
 Are carri'd far in foolish fond conceit,
 And wast their pretious time, & spend their treasure,
 Before they can discover this deceit.
 O happie they that keepe within their measure,
 To turne their course in time, and sound retreat,
 Before that wit with late repentance taught,
 Were better neuer had then so deare bought.

A little while before I did reherse,
 How that Rogero by two dames was brought,

To combat with Erisila the feerle,
 Who for to stop the bridge and passage sought
 In vaine it were for to declare in verse,
 How sumptuously her armor all was wrought,
 All set with stones, and guilt with Indian gold,
 Both fit for vse, and pleasant to behold.

She mounted was but not vpon a steed,
 Insteed thereof she on a Wolfe doth sit,
 A Wolfe whose match Apulia doth not breed,
 Well taught to hand, although she vld no bit,
 And all of sandie colour was her weed,
 Her armes were thus (for such a champion fit)
 An vgly Tode was painted on her shield,
 With poyson swolne, and in a fable field.

Now each the other forthwith had descride,
 And each with other then prepar'd to fight,
 Then each the other scornefully descide,
 Each seekes to hurt the other all he might,
 But she vnable his fierce blowes to bide,
 Beneath the vizer smitten was so right:
 That from her seat fixe paces she was heaued,
 And lay like one of life and sense bertaued.

Rogero readie was to draw his sword.
 To head the monster lying on the sand,
 Vntill those dames with many a gentle word,
 Asswagd his heat and made him hold his hand:
 He might in honour now her life affoord,
 Sith at his mercie wholly she doth stand:
 Wherefore sir knight put vp your blade (say they)
 Lets passe the bridge and follow on our way.

E ij

The

Horace. Quasi
 potentum neq;
 militaris Damna
 in latu alio sca-
 lentu.

8

The way as yet vnpleasant was and ill,
Among the thornie bushes and betweene,
All stony, steep, ascending vp the hill,
A way lesse pleasant feldome hath bene seene:
But this once past according to their will,
And they now mounted vp vpon the greene,
They saw the fairest castle standing by,
That erst was seene with any mortall eye.

9

Alcyna met them at the outer gate,
And came before the rest a little space,
And with a count'nance full of high estate,
Salutes *Rogero* with a goodly grace,
And all the other courtiers in like rate,
Do bid *Rogero* welcome to the place,
With so great shewes of dutie and of loue,
As if some god descended from aboue.

10

Nor onely was this pallace for the sight,
Most goodly, faire, and stately to behold,
But that the peoples courtisie bred delight,
Which was as great as could with tongue be told.
All were of youth and beautie shining bright,
Yet to confirme this thing I dare behold,
That faire *Alcyna* past the rest as farre,
As doth the Sunne another little starre.

11

A shape whose like in waxe twere hard to frame,
Or to expresse by skill of painters rare,
Her haire was long, and yellow to the same,
As might with wire of beaten gold compare:
Her louely cheekes with shew of modest shame,
With roses and with lillies painted are,
Her forehead faire and full of seemely cheare,
As smoth as polisht Iuorie doth appeare.

*Ouid. Candra
purpurea lilia
mista rosas.*

12

Within two arches of most curious fashion,
Stand two black eyes, that like two cleare suns shind,
Of stodie looke, but apt to take compassion,
Amid which lights, the naked boy and blind,
Doth cast his darts that cause so many a passion,
And leaue a sweet and curelesse wound behind:
From thence the nose in such good sort descended,
As enuie knowes not how it may be mended.

*Ouid. Laudaret
faciem lunor
quosque.*

13

Conioynd to which in due and comely space,
Doth stand the mouth staid with Vermilion hew,
Two rowes of precious perle serue in their place,
To show and shut, a lip right faire to vew:
Hence come the courteous words, and full of grace,
That mollifie hard hearts and make them new:
From hence proceed those smiling sweet and nice,
That seeme to make an earthly paradise.

14

Her brest as milke, her necke as white as snow,
Her necke was round, most plum and large her brest
Two luory apples seemed there to grow,
Full tender smooth, and fittest to be prest:
They waue like seas, when winds most calme doth
But *Argos* selfe might not discerne the rest, (blow,
Yet by presumption well it might be gest,
That that which was concealed was the best.

*Ouid. Si qua la-
tent meliora pu-
lat.*

15

Her armes due measure of proportion bare,
Her faire white hand was to be vewed plaine,
The fingers long, the ioynts so curious are,
As neither knot appeared nor swelling vaine.
And full to perfect all those features rare,
The foote that to be seene doth sole remaine,
Both slender, short, little it was and round,
A finer foote might no where well be found.

16

She had on euerie side prepar'd a net,
It so she walke, or laugh, or sing, or stand:
Rogero now the counsell doth forget,
He had receiued late at *Astolfo* hand:
He doth at nought those wholsome precepts set,
That warned him to shun *Alcynas* land,
He thought no fraud, no treason nor no guile,
Could be accompani'd with so sweete a smile.

17

The dame of France, whom he so loued erst,
He quite forgets, so farre awry he swarued:
The tale *Astolfo* had to him reherst,
He thinketh false, or else by him defarued:
Alcynas goodly shape his heart so perst,
She onely seemd a mistresse to be sarued:
Ne must you blame *Rogeros* inclination,
But rather blame the force of incantation.

18

Now as abroad the stately courts did sound,
Of trumpets, shagbot, cornets, and of flutes,
Euen so within there wants no pleasing sound,
Of virginals, of vials and of lutes,
Vpon the which persons not few were found,
That did record their loues and louing sutes,
And in some song of loue and wanton verse,
Their good or ill succelles did reherse.

19

As for the sumptuous and luxurious fare,
I thinke not they that *Ninus* did succeed,
Nor *Cleopatra* faire, whose riot rare,
To *Antonie* such loue and losse did breed,
Might with *Alcynas* any way compare,
Whose loue did all the others fare exceed,
So deeply was she rauisht in the sight,
Of this so valiant and so comely knight.

*The Pri-
were the
stern in the
facto,
Personis
apparuit.*

20

The supper done, and tables tane away,
To purposes and such like toyes they went,
Each one to other secretly to say
Some word, by which some prettie toy is ment,
This helpt the louers better to bewray
Each vnto another what was their intent,
For when the word was hither toft and thither,
Their last conclusion was to lie together.

21

These prettie kinds of amorous sports once ended,
With torches to his chamber he was brought,
On him a crew of gallant squires attended,
That euerie way to do him honour sought.
The chambers furniture could not be mended,
It seemd *Arachne* had the hangings wrought,
A banker new was made, the which once finished,
The companie by one and one diminished.

Now

22

Now was *Rogero* couched in his bed,
Betweene a paire of cambricke sheets perfumed,
And oft he hearkens with his wakefull hed,
For her whole loue his heart and soule consumed:
Each little noise hope of her comming bred,
Which finding false, against himselfe he fumed,
And curst the cause that did him so much wrong,
To cause *Alcyna* tarry thence so long.

23

Sometime from bed he softly doth arise,
And looke abroad if he might her espie,
Sometime he with himselfe doth thus deuise,
Now she is comming, now she drawes thus nie:
Sometime for very anger out he cries,
What meaneth she, she doth no faster hie?
Sometimes he casts least any let should be,
Betweene his hand and this desired tree.

24

But faire *Alcyna*, when with odors sweet,
She was perfum'd according to her skill,
The time once come she deemed fit and meet,
When all the house were now asleepe and still:
With rich embroderd slippers on her feet,
She goes to giue and take of ioyes her fill,
To him whom hope and feare so long assailed,
Till sleepe drew on, and hope and feare both failed.

25

Now when *Astolfo* successor espide
Those earthly starres, her faire and heau'nly eies,
As sulphur once inflamed cannot hide,
Euen so the mettall in his veines that lies,
So flam'd that in the skin it scant could bide:
But of a sodaine straight he doth arise,
Leaps out of bed, and her in armes embraced,
Ne would he stay till she her selfe unlaced.

26

So vtterly impatient of all stay,
That though her mantle was but cyprus light,
And next vpon her smocke of lawne it lay,
Yet so the champion hasted to the fight,
The mantle with his fury fell away,
And now the smocke remaind alone in sight,
Which smocke as plaine her beauties all discloses,
As doth a glasse the lillies faire and roses.

27

And looke how close the Iuie doth embrace
The tree or branch about the which it growes,
So close the louers couched in the place,
Each drawing in the breath the other blowes:
But how great ioyes they found that little space,
We well may guesse, but none for certaine knowes:
Their sport was such, so well they leere their couth,
That oft they had two tongues within one mouth.

28

Now though they keepe this close with great regard,
Yet not so close but some did find the same,
For though that vertue oft wants due reward,
Yet seldome vice wants due deserued blame.
Rogero still was more and more prefard,
Each one to him with cap and courtie came,
For faire *Alcyna* being now in loue,
Would haue him plait the others all about.

29

In pleasure here they spend the night and day,
They change their clothes so often as they lust,
Within they feast, they dance, disport and play,
Abrode they hunt, they hauke, they ride, they iust,
And so while sensuall life doth beare the sway,
All discipline is troden in the dust:
Thus while *Rogero* here his time mispends,
He quite forgets his dutie and his friends.

30

For while *Rogero* bides in feast and ioy,
King *Agramant* doth take great care and paine,
Dame *Bradamant* doth suffer great annoy,
And traueled farre to find him all in vaine:
She little knew *Alcyna* did enioy
Her due delights, yet doth she mone and plaine,
To thinke how strangely this same flying horte,
Bare him away against his will by force.

31

In townes, in fields, in hills, in dales she sought,
In tents, in campes, in lodgings and in caues,
Oft she enquir'd, but yet she learned nought,
She past the riuers fresh and salt sea waues,
Among the Turkes she leaues him not vnought,
(Gramercy ring that her from danger saues;
A ring whose vertue workes a thing scant possible,
Which holding in her mouth she goes inuisible,

Of this ring look
the Table.

32

She will not, nor she cannot thinke him dead,
For if a man of so great worth should die,
It would some great report or fame haue bred,
From East vnto the West, both farre and nie:
It cannot sinke nor settle in her head,
Whether he be in seas, in earth or skie,
Yet still she seekes, and her companions are
Sorrowes and sighes, and feares, and louing care.

33

At last she meanes to turne vnto the caue,
Where lie the great and learned *Merlins* bones,
And at that tombe to crie so loud and raue,
As shall with pitie moue the marble stones:
Nor till she may some certaine notice haue
Of her belou'd to stay her plaints and mones,
In hope to bring her purpose to effect,
By doing as that Prophet should direct.

34

Now as her course to Poytiers ward she bent,
Melyssa vsing wonted skill and art,
Encountred her, her iourney to preuent,
Who knew full well, and did to her impart,
Both where her loue was, and how his time he spent,
Which grieu'd the vertuous damsell to the hart,
That such a knight, so valiant erst and wise,
Should so be drown'd in pleasure and in vice.

35

O poysond hooke that lurkes in sugred bait,
O pleasures vaine, that in this world are found,
Which like a subtle theefe do lie in waite,
To swallow man in sinke of sinne profound:
O Kings and peeres, beware of this deceit,
And be not in this gulf of pleasure dround:
The time will come, and must I tell you all,
When these your ioyes shall bitter seeme as gall.

E. iij

THE SEVENTH BOOKE

36
Then turne your cloth of gold to clothes of heares,
Your feasts to fasts, toorrowes turne your songs,
Your wanton toyes and smilings into teares,
To restitution turne your doing wrongs,
Your fond securenesse turne to godly feares,
And know that vengeance vnto God belongs,
Who when he comes to iudge the soules of men,
It will be late alas to mend it then.

37
Then shall the vertuous man shine like the sunne,
Then shall the vicious man repent his pleasure,
Then one good deed of almes sincerely done,
Shall be more worth then mines of Indian treaſure,
Then sentence shall be giu'n which none shall shun,
Then God shall wey and pay our deeds by measure,
Vnfortunate and thrice accursed thay,
Whom fond delights do make forget that day.

38
But to returne vnto my tale againe,
I say *Melyssa* tooke no little care,
To draw *Rogero* by some honest traine,
From this same place of feasts and daintie fare,
And like a faithfull friend refused no paine,
To set him free from her sweet senselesse snare,
To which his vnkle brought him with intent
His destinie thereby for to preuent.

39
As oft we see men are so fond and blind,
To carry to their sonnes too much affection,
That when they seeme to loue, they are vnkind,
(For they do hate a child that spare correction)
So did *Atlanta*, not with euill mind,
Giue to *Rogero* this so bad direction,
But of a purpose, thereby to withdraw
His fatall end that he before foresaw.

40
For this he sent him past so many seas,
Vnto the Ile that I before did name,
Esteeming lesse his honour then his ease,
A few yeares life then euerlasting fame.
For this he caused him so well to please
Alcyna that same rich lasciuious dame;
That though his time old *Nestors* life had finished,
Yet her affection should not be diminished.

41
But good *Melyssa* on a ground more sure,
That lou'd his honor better then his weale,
By sound perswasions meanes him to procure,
From pleasures court to vertues to appeale:
As leeches good that in a desperate cure,
With steele, with flame, and oft with poison heale,
Of which although the patient do complaine,
Yet at the last he thanks him for his paine.

42
And thus *Melyssa* promised her aid,
And helpe *Rogero* backe againe to bring,
Which much recomforted the noble maid,
That lou'd this knight aboute each earthly thing.
But for the better doing this (she said)
It were behouefull that he had her ring,
Whose vertue was that who so did it weare,
Should neuer need the force of charmes to feare.

43
But *Bradament* that would not onely spare
Her ring (to do him good) but eke her hart,
Commends the ring and him vnto her care,
And so these Ladies take their leaue and part.
Melyssa for her iourney doth prepare,
By her well tried skill in Magicke art,
A beast that might supply her present lacke,
That had one red foot and another blacke.

44
Such hast she made, that by the breake of day
She was arriued in *Alcynas* Ile,
But straight she changd her shape and her array,
That she *Rogero* better might beguile:
Her stature tall she makes, her head all gray,
A long white beard she takes to hide the wile,
In fine she doth so cunningly dissemble,
That she the old *Atlanta* doth resemble.

45
And in this sort she waiteth till she might
By fortune find *Rogero* in fit place,
Which very seldome hapt, for day and night
He stood so high in faire *Alcyna* grace,
That she could least abide of any wight,
To haue him absent but a minute space,
At last full early in a morning faire,
She spide him walke abroad to take the aire.

46
About his necke a carknet rich he ware,
Of precious stones, all set in gold well tride,
His armes that erst all warlike weapons bare,
In golden bracelets wantonly were tide:
Into his eares two rings conueyed are,
Of golden wire, at which on either side
Two Indian pearles in making like two peares,
Of passing price were pendent at his eares.

47
His locks bedewd with waters of sweet saueur,
Stood curled round in order on his hed,
He had such wanton womanish behauiour,
As though in Valence he had long bene bred:
So changd in speech, in manners and in fauour,
So from himselfe beyond all reason led,
By these enchantments of this am'rous dame,
He was himselfe in nothing but in name.

48
Which when the wise and kind *Melyssa* saw,
(Resembling still *Atlantas* person sage)
Of whom *Rogero* alwayes stood in aw,
Euen from his tender youth to elder age,
She toward him with looke austere did draw,
And with a voice abrupt, as halfe in rage,
Is this (quoth she) the guerdon and the gaine,
I find for all my trauell and my paine?

49
What was't for this that I in youth thee fed,
With marrow of the Beares and Lions fell?
That I through caues and deserts haue thee led,
Where serpents of most vgly shape do dwell,
Where Tygers fierce and cruell Leopards bred,
And taught thee how their forces all to quell:
An *Atis* or *Adonis* for to be,
Vnto *Alcyna* as I now thee see.

Was

50
Was this foreshewd by those obserued starres,
By figures and natiuities oft cast,
By dreames, by oracles that neuer arres,
By those vaine arts I studide in time past,
That thou shouldst proue so rare a man in warres,
Whose famous deeds to endlesse praise should last?
Whose acts should honor be both farre and neare,
And not be matcht with such another peare.

51
Is this a meane or ready way you trow?
Which other worthy men haue trod before,
A *Cesar* or a *Scipio* to grow,
And to increase in honor more and more?
But to the end a man may certaine know,
How thrall thou art vnto *Alcynas* lore,
Thou wearest here her chaines and slauish bands,
With which she binds thy warlike armes and hands.

52
If thou regard not thine owne estimation,
To which the heau'ns ordaine thee if thou would,
Defraud not yet thine heires and generation,
Of which I haue thee oftentime foretold,
Appointed by eterne predestination,
Except thou do their due from them withhold,
Out of thy loines and bowels to proceed
Such men whose match the world did neuer breed.

53
Let not so many a worthy soule and mind,
Fram'd by the wisdom of the heau'nly King,
Be hindred of the bodies them assignd,
Whose offspring chiefe must of thy issue spring:
Be not vnto thine owne blood so vnkind,
Of whose great triumphs all the world shall ring,
Whose successors, whose children and posteritie,
Shall helpe our country to her old prosperitie.

54
What good hath this great Queene vnto thee done,
But many other queenes can do the same?
What certaine gaine is by her seruice wonne,
That soone doth fancie, sooner doth defame?
Wherefore to make thee know what thou hast done,
That of thy doings thou maist haue some shame,
But weare this ring, and next time you repaire
To your *Alcyna*, marke if she be faire.

55
Rogero all abasht and mute did stand,
With silent tongue, and looke for shame downe cast,
The good enchantresse tooke him by the hand,
And on his finger straight the ring she plast,
But when this ring had made him vnderstand
His owne estate, he was so sore agast,
He wisht himselfe halfe buride vnder ground,
Much rather then in such place once be found.

56
But she that saw her speech tooke good effect,
And that *Rogero* shamed of his sinne,
She doth her person and her name detect,
And as her selfe (not *Atlant*) doth beginne,
By counsell and aduice him to direct,
To rid himselfe from this so dangerous ginne:
And giues him perfect notice and instruction,
How these deceits do bring men to destruction.

57
She shewd him plainly she was thither sent,
By *Bradaman* that lou'd him in sinceritie,
Who to deliuer him from bondage ment,
Of her that blinded him with false prosperitie.
How she tooke *Atlant's* person to th'intent
Her countenance might carry more austeritie,
But finding now him home reduc'd againe,
She saith she will declare the matter plaine.

58
And vnto him forthwith she doth impart,
How that faire dame that best deseru'd his loue,
Did send that ring, and would haue sent her hart,
If so her heart his good so farre might moue,
The ring this vertue had, it could subuert
All magicke frauds, and make them vaine to proue:
Rogero as I said, no time did linger,
But put the ring vpon his little finger.

59
When truth appeard, *Rogero* hated more
Alcynas trimpries, and did them detest,
Then he was late enamored before,
(O happie ring that makes the bearer blest)
Now saw he that he could not see before,
How with deceits *Alcyna* had bene drest,
Her borrowd beauties, all appeared stained,
The painting gone, nothing but filth remained.

60
Eu'n as a child that taking from the tree
An apple ripe, and hides it in some place,
When he returns the same againe to see,
After a senight or a fortnights space,
Doth scant beleue it should the same frute be,
When rottenesse that ripenesse doth deface,
And where before delight in it he tooke,
Now scant he bides vpon the same to looke.

61
Eu'n so *Rogero* plainly now descride,
Alcynas foule disgraces and enormitie,
Because of this his ring she could not hide,
By all her paintings any one deformitie:
He saw most plainly that in her did bide,
Vnto her former beauties no conformitie,
But lookes so vgly, that from East to West,
Was not a fouler old mishapen beast.

62
Her face was wan, a leane and writheld skin,
Her stature scant three horseloaves did exceed:
Her haire was gray of hue, and very thin,
Her teeth were gone, her gums seru'd in their steed,
No space was there between her nose and chin,
Her noisome breath contagion would breed,
In fine, of her it might haue well bene said,
In *Nestors* youth she was a pretie maid.

63
I feare her arts are learned now a dayes,
To counterfait their haire and paint their skin,
But reasons ring their crafts and guiles bewrayes,
No wise men of their paintings passe a pin,
Those vertues that in women merit praise,
Are sober shewes without, chaste thoughts within,
True faith and due obedience to their make,
And of their children honest care to take.

E iijj

Simile.

The deformitie of
pleasure when it
is beheld with
reason.Nestor liued at
some write 300.
yeares.

Sentence.

64

Now though *Rogero* (as before I fed)
 Detested fore the vgly witches sight,
 Yet by *Melyssa* counsell wisely led,
 He doth conceale the matter for a night,
 Till of prouision he were better sped,
 With which he might more safely take his flight.
 And taking care his meaning close to hide,
 He doth forthwith his armour all prouide.

65

And tels *Alcyna* he would go and trie,
 If that he were not waxen grosse or no,
 Because that idle he so long did lie,
 And neuer fought with any armed fo:
 His sword vnto his girdle he doth tie,
 With armour on, a walking he doth go,
 And with a scarfe about his arme he lapt
 The shield that in the cypresse case was wrapt.

66

And thus arraid, he commeth to the stable,
 And tooke a horse (as wife *Melyssa* taught)
 A horse as blacke as any ieat or sable,
 So made as if in ware he had bene wrought,
 Most swift for course, and strong of limbes and able,
 This horse hight *Rabican* was thither brought
 By Duke *Astolfo*, who by sorcerie
 Was turned late into a mirle tree.

*Rabican, looke
 in the table.*

Morall.

In *Erisila* that is ouerthrowne by *Rogero* and not killed, we may obserue, that the liberalitie that men make great shew of in their youthfull pleasures and entertainments, is not the true vertue that doth indeed quite extinguish and kill that monster of couetousnesse. In *Alcyna* and *Rogeros* lasciuious loue, from whom *Rogero* is glad at last to runne away, we may note the notable allurements of fleshly sensualitie, and take a good lesson to auoyd them onely by flying from them, as hath bene in part touched before. *Melyssa* good counsell, every yong *Rogero* may apply to himselfe, and learne thereby to be gone to *Logestillas* in time, lest he be turned into some beast or tree, as these notable enchantrresses do daily transforme their followers. But of all this I will speake more at large in the *Allegorie*.

Historie.

Concerning the Historie of this booke, there is no matter historicall therein: Only where there is a comparison of the riot of *Alcyna* with that of the Persian kings, and that of *Cleopatra*, those to whom the storie is not knowne, shall find an explanation thereof in the Table or Index.

Allegorie.

I shewed before how by *Erisila* is meant couetousnesse, which our young gallants beate downe but kill not, nay oft it riseth againe and ouercomes them, and makes them fall to meere rapine and extortion. Whereas in the eight staffe, the way was said to be vnpleasant (though that seeme contrary to the saying of *Hercules* two wayes of vice and vertue) yet no doubt but euen in this way of pleasure, there be many ill fauoured and dangerous passages, as one of the fathers well noteth, that a wretched worldling doth oftentimes toile more to go to hell for his labour, then a vertuous man doth to win heauen. The things that allure most to sensualitie, are set downe in order: in the ninth staffe kind entertainment: in the tenth, sumptuous building: in the eleuenth and so forward to the sixteenth, artificiall behauiour and exquisite beautie, set forth with all cunning, as *Ouid* saith, *Et meruit formosa videri*, that is, she deserved with the paine she took to seeme handsome: in the eighteenth, musicke and wanton sonets of loue: riotous fare in the nineteenth, with all kind of delicacies to prouoke venery: in the twentieth, wanton discourses and purposes, of which commonly their lust conclusion is to lie together, as there is said: in the two and twentieth, perfumes and all effeminate delicacies, in all which we see, the eye, the eare, the tast, the smelling, the feeling, the wit, the thoughts, all fed with their objects of delight, making men quite to forget God and all good counsell, as *Rogero* quite forgot *Bradamant* and the counsell of *Astolfo*. And sure it is worth the noting where it is said in the sixteenth staffe, that the tale *Astolfo* late to him rehearst, he thinketh false or else by him deserued. How yong men that at the first haue seemed very well giuen, very religious, continent and studious of all vertue and good learning, yet after when they come to be aduanced to high fauours or to great lining, they despise all that was taught them before, and count religion but a pollicie, and philosophie but a folly, and the admonition of graue and godly men that reprove their ambition, or their sensualitie, or their extreme couetousnesse, to proceed but of enuie to their high estate and felicitie, which they would be glad to come to themselves and cannot. And surely if any will but take a note of any speciall persons, toucht with any or with all three of these enormous vices, let them but marke if they haue not in their whole liues and actions (and some perhaps in plaine words) discovered this their contempt of religion and vertuous discipline: I would this age were barren of examples of this kind.

Now concerning the enchantments that bring men into this blindnes to think *Alcyna* so faire a woman, it is nothing but a shew of vertue, of beautie, of graciousnes, that the foolish louer perswades himself that he seeth in the person or idol of his mistress, of which *Petrarke* saith, *Da questi magi transformato fui*: These are the witches that transformed me.

The

67

As for the Griffith horse that there was by,
Melyssa wisheth him to let him stand,
 And layth, that she her selfe ere long would trie,
 To make him gentle to the spurre and hand
 And that she would hereafter time espie,
 To bring it him, and let him vnderstand,
 How he should do with very little paine,
 To make him yeeld to spurre, to rod and raine.

68

She further said, his flight would be suspected,
 Except he let the flying horse to stay.
Rogero none of all her words neglected,
 But did her counsell wise and sage obey:
 And so before his meaning was detected,
 From this mishapen hag he stole away,
 And meanes (if God will grant him so much grace)
 To be at *Logestillas* in short space.

69

Such men of armes as watched at the gate
 He slue, the rest he sodainly assailed,
 He happie was scapt with a broken pate,
 They tooke their heeles when as their hearts them
Alcyna now had notice all too late, (failed.
Rogero was so farre it nought auailed:
 But in another booke shall be contained,
 How him dame *Logestilla* entertained.

The griefe that Bradamant takes for Rogeros mispending his time, may note to vs the grace and long sufferance of God, when man runneth astray after the worldly vanities. Melissa that offereth her seruice to go to reclaime Rogero: doth figure vnto vs both preachers & philosophers, that shew vs by the ring (which hath bene expounded before to be reason) our foule errorrs and our wandring courses, and so makes vs see our owne deformities, and the deformitie of that we esteemed so dearely, as in this booke you see what manner of monster Alcyna appeared in her owne likenesse, when the ring of reason had dissolued all enchantments. Infinite matter more might be applyed in allegoricall sence out of this booke, if I would couet to stand vpon euerie small matter, for as I said at the first, these two bookes be in a manner a meere allegorie from the beginning to the ending.

The comming of Melissa to Rogero alludeth to the comming of Mercurie to Aeneas in Virgil, who was then at Carthage stayd by the loue of Dydo as Rogero was here by Alcyna. Allusion.

The ring that had the vertue beside dissoluing enchantments, to make one go inuisible, alludeth to Gyges ring, of which it is sayd, that by the helpe thereof he became King of Lydia.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero fled: Melissa after staid,
 Astolfo with some others to restore:
 Renaldo musters souldiers sent for aid,
 To Charles the great, who neuer needed more:
 Angelica by drownsie hermit laid,
 Is tane and bound all naked to the shore:
 Orlando is so troubled with his dreame,
 He leaues the seruice of his king and reame.*

H strange enchantments
 vsed now a dayes,
 Oh charmers straunge a-
 mong vs dayly found,
 That find so many charms
 and subtile wayes,
 Wherewith they hold fond
 louers hearts fast bound,
 Not with coniuers spi-
 rits that they raise,
 Nor knowledge of the stars and skill profound,
 But blinding mens conceits, and them fast tying,
 With simulation, fraud, deceit and lying.

But he that had the rule and ring of reason, (couer,
 Should soone their frauds, their crafts and guiles dis-
 And finde a hoord of foule and lothsome treason,
 To lurke within the shew of such a louer:
 Well may they seeme most louely for a season,
 When all their wrinkles they with painting couer,
 But vnto men of wit and reason learned,
 Their subtleties shall quickly be discerned.

Rogero (as I said) in secret sort,
 With *Rabican* out of the castle went,
 And made the watch and guard vnpleasant sport,
 That most of them his comming might repent:
 Some had their armes, and some their heads cut
 All put to flight, the gates in peeces rent. (short,
 And then vnto the wood he entred, when
 He met by chance one of *Alcynas* men.

This man did beare a faulcon on his fist,
 With which he went on hauking day by day,

To flie in field, or riuer as he list,
 The cuntry full of game still yeelded pray,
 He had a spaniell could not well be mist,
 And eke a hauking nagge not verie gay,
 And meeting good *Rogero* halfe disguised,
 That he was fled away he straight surmised.

The seruant rideth on, and at their meeting,
 He askt *Rogero* why he rode so fast,
Rogero gaue him verie slender greeting,
 As though on such a squire he little past:
 Well (quoth the faulkner) though thou now art
 I trust er long to shew thee such a cast, (fleeing,
 That with my dogge, my faulcon and my horse,
 I do not doubt to fetch thee backe by force.

And first he lets the faulcon take her flight,
 But *Rabican* as fast as she did flie,
 Then from his horse the faulkner doth alight,
 His horse flue like an arrow by and by.
 Then went the dogge, who was of course so light,
 As is the wind that bloweth in the skie:
 And last of all himselfe ran with such shift,
 It seem'd the lightnings flame was not so swift.

Rogero thinketh it a foule disgrace,
 That any man should thinke he fled for feare,
 And more because he now was had in chase:
 Wherefore he doth a while the flight forbear,
 And manfully to them he turnes his face,
 And seeing no man but the faulkner there,
 And that no weapon in his hand he saw,
 He much disdaind on him his sword to draw.

8

But straight the dog doth bite his horses heeles,
The hauke his head amazed with her wings.
When *Rabyca* such strange foes forces feeles,
He riseth vp before, behinde he flings:
Rogero thought the world had run on wheelles,
And *Balitarda* out at once he brings,
But they, it seemd, so well were scene in fence,
That all his blowes to them brought no offence.

Rogero found.

9

Both loth to stay, resolued not to yeeld,
He takes his target from his saddle bow,
And with the dazzling light of that same sheeld,
Whose force *Melyssa* lately made him know,
He made them fall as if their eies were seeld,
So that no farther let from them did grow,
But hauing vanquish't them this wife with ease,
He now may ride at leasure where he please.

10

These foes once foild, their forces overcome,
Alyna straight had notice of his flight,
For of the watchmen one to her was come,
That while these things were done did stand in sight.
This made her stand like one halfe dead or dumme,
And after put her into such a fright,
That forthwith for auoiding further harme,
Through all the towne she made them crie alarme.

11

And calling oft her selfe a foolish beast,
Because *Rogero* so from her was slipt,
Sometime she beates her head, her face and breast,
Sometime in rage her garments all she ript:
She calleth all her men from most to least,
A part of whom vnto the sea she shipt,
And of the rest she makes a mightie band,
To fetch *Rogero* backe againe by land.

12

All were so busie to this seruice bent,
That none remaind the pallace faire to gard,
Which greatly helpt *Melyssa*'s good intent,
Which chiefly was as you before haue hard,
To set at large poore prisoners so long pent,
Which now to do (she absent) was not hard,
Dissoluing all her circles and her knots,
And stroying all her figures and her lots.

13

And thus in fields, in houses, and in woods,
She set at large as many as she found,
That had bene turn'd, to trees, to stones and floods,
And in that state by magicke art fast bound:
Likewise to them she rendred all their goods,
Who when they saw themselues so cleare vnbound,
Departing thence with all the hast they might,
To *Logessilla* they arriu'd that night.

14

And first of all and chiefe of all the rest,
The English Duke came to himselfe againe,
Because *Rogero* lou'd and wisht him best,
And lends the ring that makes inchantments vaine,
But good *Melyssa* could by no meanes rest,
Vntill she could his armour eke regaine,
And that same famous worthie guilded launce,
That had to him such honor done in Fraunce.

15

With which *Argalia* got no little fame,
Who vsed oft the same in fight to beare.
Now when *Melyssa* to the castle came,
She found his other armour with the speare,
And this atcheeu'd, the sage and frendly dame,
Mounts on the Griffith horse without all feare,
And Duke *Astolfo* mounting on his crupper,
To *Logessilla* came that night to supper.

16

Now was *Rogero* with no small a do,
Tiring himselfe amid those craggie wayes,
And struiuing all that he with paine may do,
To cut of all those lothsome long delayes,
That hindred him for sooner comming to
That Ladie faire whose vertues merit praise,
Till neare the Southerne sea with mickle paine,
He came vnto a sandy desert plaine.

17

Here was he plagu'd with thirst and parching heat,
And with the sunne reflecting on the sand,
Which from the South vpon the banke did beat,
Enflaming still the aire on either hand,
But leauing now *Rogero* in this sweat,
That still I may not in one matter stand,
To Scotland now I will returne againe,
And of *Renaldo* talke a word or twaine.

18

Great was his entertainment and his cheare,
Made by the king and people of the land,
Which feasts once done, the worthie valiant peare,
As was his charge, doth let them vnderstand,
How *Charles* the great, whose state doth touch them
In no small need of their good aid did stand, (neare
And how for this he sent him to their nation,
And to this tale he ads an exhortation.

19

Then was it answerd him without delay,
That for king *Charles* and for the Empires sake,
They all were readie to do all they may,
And would for this behoofe short order take,
And offred him to shew (if he would stay)
What store of horse and footmen he could make:
Namely the king himselfe would be right glad,
To go in person, but his age forbad.

20

Nor yet should age with him so much haue done,
As make him from the battell to abide,
Saue that he had a wife and valiant sonne,
Well able such a band of men to guide,
Whose value had already praises wonne,
And of his youth was now in floure and pride.
This noble toward impe he doth intend,
As captaine of his armed men to send.

21

Wherefore about his realme forthwith he sent,
To get of horses and of men good store,
With ships, and things to war most pertinent,
As needfull meate, and many needfull more:
The while *Renaldo* into England went,
The king to Barwicke companie him bore,
And men report that when they should depart,
The king was scene to weepe for tender hart.

Renaldo

22

Renaldo went with faire and prosperous wind,
And past along vpon the English coast,
Vntill he hapt the noble Terns to find,
Of which all London iustly make their boast:
Here he tooke land as first he had assign'd,
And in twelue houres iourney riding post,
Vnto the Prince of Wales he was conducted,
Whom of these matters fully he instructed.

23

The Prince that was Vicegerent to the King,
(That *Oton* hight) who sojournd now in France,
From whom *Renaldo* did commision bring,
To take vp horse, and men, and ordinance.
When he had once true knowledge of that thing,
Which of all other he would most aduance:
He marshald men of armes without delay,
And points them meet at Callice by a day.

24

But here I must a while from hence digresse,
Left to one tale my pen should still be bound,
As good musicians do their skill expresse,
By playing on the strings of diuers sound:
While *Renald* here is cheard with great excessse,
(As euer in the English land is found)
I meane to tell how that faire Ladie sped,
That twice before from this *Renaldo* fled.

25

I told you how *Angelica* the bright,
Fled from *Renaldo* in a thicke darke wood,
How on a hermit there she hapt to light,
And how her sight reuiu'd his aged blood:
But she that tooke in him but small delight,
Whose hoary haire could do her little good,
With this good hermit made but little stay,
But turnd her horses rains and went away.

26

The hermit seeing he contemned was,
(Whom age long since, and loue did newly blind)
Doth spurre a thousand times his silly asse,
Who still remained more and more behind,
And fith he saw he could not bring to passe,
To stop her courte (afflicted much in mind)
In vaine he doth his poore asse beate and curse,
His trot was very bad, his gallop worse.

27

And being out of hope of comming nire,
As hauing almost lost her horses tracke,
He studies now to compasse his desire,
With some rare stratageme to bring her back:
Vnto that art forthwith he doth retire,
(That damned art that is furnamed blacke)
And by his bookes of magicke he doth make
A little sprite the Ladie ouertake.

28

And as the hound that men the Tumbler name,
When he a hare or conie doth espie,
Doth seeme another way his courle to frame,
As though he meant not to approach more nie,
But yet he meeteth at the last his game,
And shaketh it vntill he make it die:
So doth the hermit trauerse all about,
At eu'ry turne to find the damsell out.

29

What he intends to do, full well I wot,
And meane ere long the same to you to show,
The damsell traueled still that knew it not,
The spright to do his office was not slow,
For straight within the horse himselte he got,
As she on sands of Gascoigne seas did go,
The spright that fully had posselt the horse,
Did driue her to the sea with all his force.

30

Which when the faire and fearfull damsell saw,
Although she tride full oft with rod and raine,
Her palfrey from his dangerous courle to draw,
Yet seeing plainly she did striue in vaine,
With colour chang'd for anguish and for aw,
And casting oft her looke to land againe,
At last she sitteth still, nor further striueth.
For needs they must go whom the diuell driueth.

31

In vaine it was to strike the horse her bare,
It was not done by that poore palfreys falt,
Wherefore she tucks her garments, taking care
Left they should be bedewd with waters salt,
Vpon her haire, which then all loose she ware,
The aire doth make an amorous assalt,
The greater winds were still, I thinke of deutie,
That they acknowledge to so rare a beutie.

32

The waters more, the land still lesse she sees,
At last she saw but one small peece of land,
And that small peece in small time she doth leese,
Now sees she neither shore nor any land.
Then cold despaire all liuely hope did freece,
When as her horse did turne to the right hand,
And at the twilight, or not long before,
Did bring her to a solitary shore.

33

Here she remaining helpless and alone,
Among the fruitlesse trees and senselesse rocks,
Standing her selfe all like the marble stone,
Saue that sometime she tare her golden locks,
At last her eyes to teares, her tongue to mone,
She doth resolue, her faire soft breast she knocks,
And blames the God of heau'n and powre diuine,
That did the fates vnto her fall incline.

34

O fortune, fortune, (thus the damsell cride)
Fill now thy rage and execute thine ire,
And take this life that takest all beside,
And let my death accomplish thy desire:
I haue and dayly do thy force abide,
Feare still my mind, trauell my limbs doth tire,
And makes me think in this great storme and strife,
That death were sweet to shorten such a life.

35

Can all thy malice do me further spite?
Can any state be worse or more vnsteddy?
That am from princely scepter banisht quite,
A helpless hap and hurt past all remedy,
And worse then this, mine honor shining bright
Is stained sore, and eu'n defast alreedy,
For though in act no ill I euer wrought,
Yet wandring thus wil make men think me nought.

F

Sentence.

Casus put away
hu wife for sus-
picion, alledging
Non solus a malo,
sed a suspitione
canendum.

36
What can a woman hold of any price,
If once she leese her honor and good name?
Alas I hate this beautie and despite,
And wish it neuer had bene of such fame:
Ne do I for this gift now thanke the skies,
By which my spoile and vtter ruine came,
Which could my brother *Argal* shed his blood,
Ne could his armes enchanted do him good.

*All this storie or
fable is set downe
at large in Booke
of Orlando
du Roy.*

37
For this the king of Tartar *Agricane*,
Sought of my father *Galafron* the spoile,
Who whilome was in India cald great Cane,
And after dide with sorrow of the foile.
For this I doly doubting to be tane,
From place to place do passe with endlesse toile,
And now to loose alas what hast thou left me,
Since fame, and goods, and friends are all bereft me?

38
If drowning in the sea were not a death
Seuere enough to quench thy raging spite,
Then send some beast out of this desert heath,
To teare my limbs and to deuoure me quite:
I shall thee thanke for stopping of my breath,
If to torment me thou haue no delight,
These wofull words vtterd the Ladie bright,
When straight the hermit came within her sight.

39
Who all the while had in a corner stood,
And heard her make this piteous plaint and mone,
Proceeding from her sad and mourning mood,
Enough to moue a heart as hard as stone:
It did the *senex fornicator* good,
To thinke that he was there with her alone,
Yet so deuoutly commeth this old carrion,
As though it had bene *Paul* or *Saint Hillarion*.

40
When as the damsell saw a man appeare,
In such a desert solitary place,
She straight began to be of better cheare,
Though feare and dread appeare still in her face:
And with a voice so loud as he might heare,
She praid him pitie this her wofull case,
Recounting all her dangers ouerblowne,
To him to whom they were already knowne.

41
No sooner had the hermit heard her out,
But straight to comfort her he doth begin,
And shewes by many reasons and deuout,
How all these plagues were sent her for her sin:
The while he puts his sawcie hands about,
Sometime her breasts, sometime her neck and chin,
And more and more still gathering heart of grace,
He offers boldly her for to embrace.

42
But she that much disdained this homely fashion,
Doth staine her cheekes with red for very shame,
Thrust back his carren corpes without compassion,
Reuling him with many a spitefull name,
Who testie with old age and with new passion,
That did him now with wrath and loue inflame,
Drawes out a bottle of a strange confection,
That sleepe procureth by a strong infection.

43
With this he sprinkleth both the damselfs eies,
(Those eyes whence *Cupid* oft his arrowes shot)
Straight found asleepe the goodly damself lies,
Subiected to the will of such a for:
Ne yet for ought he did or could deuise,
He could procure his curtall stir a iot,
Yet oft he kist her lips, her cheekes, her brest,
And felt and saw the beauties of the rest.

44
The duller dade still hangeth downe his head,
Sturring or spurring could not make him prounce,
The fundrier wayes he said, the worse he sped,
His youthfull dayes were done, he could not daunce,
His strength was gone, his courage all was dead,
His weapon looked like a broken launce:
And while himselfe in vaine he thus doth cumber,
He falleth downe by her into a slumber.

45
But now another euill chance befell,
(For one ill turne alone is seldome done)
The which to th'end I may the better tell,
Know this, about the setting of the sunne,
There is an Ile, *Ebuda* as men tell,
Whose habitants are welnigh all vndone,
By meanes that mightie *Proteus* thither sent
An Orke that doth the people teare and rent.

46
Within this Ile, as auncient stories tell,
(I not affirme how false they are or true)
Sometime a king of mightie powre did dwell,
That had a daughter passing faire of hue,
The which faire Ladie *Proteus* likt so well,
When her on sands in walking he did vew,
That though he dwelt in waters salt and cold,
Yet fresh hot loue on him had taken hold.

47
Which heate when all the sea could not asswage,
He thought her milkwarm flesh could only quench,
And (for he saw she was of lawfull age)
With her consent he forst the princely wench:
Which sinne did set her father in such rage,
That straight condemning her in open bench:
Her of her life he publikely bereaued,
Nor spar'd the infant in her wombe conceaued.

48
This cruell act her louer so inflamed,
On King and Iland he doth wreake his spite,
He sends that monster that before I named,
With other beasts to stroy the Iland quite:
These monsters hurt their men, beat, kild and lamed,
In fine put all the people in such fright,
That to escape the beast deuoid of pitie,
They left their fields, and fled vnto their citie.

49
And though men armd the gates and wals defend,
Yet they within scant thought themselues secure,
And sith their harmes haue neither ease nor end,
And tir'd these tedious trauels to endure,
Vnto *Apollon* oracle they send,
To know how they their safetie might procure,
Who after humble sute and sacrifice,
Answerd them of *Ebuda* in this wise.

Blood

50

Blood guiltlesse spilt did breed great *Proteus* ire,
Inflamd with loue, and fed with beautie rare,
Blood guiltlesse must be spilt to quench this fire,
Till one be found may with the first compare:
This you must do and if you peace desire,
To take of damselfs those that fairest are,
And offer one a day vpon the shore,
Till he find one like vnto that before.

51

This wofull answer breeding much despaire,
And more dislike within their carefull harts,
To thinke that eu'ry day a damself faire,
Must for a prey be giu'n without defarts:
This is the cause that maketh them repaire,
(To find sufficient store) to sundry parts,
And get them virgins faire and vndefloured,
Of this most vgly Orke to be deuoured,

52

Now if this be of *Proteus* true or not,
I meane not in defence of it to stand,
But this is certaine so, full well I wot,
Men vse this cruell custome in that land,
And day by day a maid is drawne by lot,
And left for prey vpon the rocke or sand,
Vnto the monster that doth them deuoure,
Eu'n in their prime of youth and tender floure.

53

O wretched wights, whom subtle snares haue brought
To this vnfortunate and fatall Ile,
Where damselfs faire and handsome out are sought,
To serue for food vnto a monster vile:
Their pyrats bring them home, their vessels fraught
With such they take by force, or trap with wile,
With which they fill their prisons and their towres,
To haue them ready at appointed howres.

54

Thus sending out their vessels day by day,
It chanc'd that one of them with tempest tost,
Hapt to arriue whereas the hermit lay
With that faire Lady hard vpon the cost:
Oh cruell chance, oh precious peelesse pray,
Among the pirats either to be lost,
Or to be caried to the fatall Ile,
To be deuoured of a monster vile.

55

That beautie rare that *Satrapant* ay deemed
More deare then living libertie or life:
That beautie rare that to *Orlando* seemed
Most fit of all the world to be his wife:
That beautie rare in India so esteemed,
That bred so many a blow and bloody strife,
Is now so quite of aid and comfort rest,
Not one to speake a word for her is left.

56

The damself faire drownd in a deadly sleepe,
Was tane and bound before she could awake,
Also the drowsie frier, to make him keepe
Her companie, away with them they take:
This done, they lanced out into the deepe,
And with this precious prey they homeward make,
Where in a castle they detaind her thrall,
Vntill to die her lucklesse lot should fall.

57

Yet such great force her passing beautie had,
Among these barbarous and sauage wights,
That they appeared sorrowfull and sad,
To wey the danger of her dolefull plights,
It seemed all of them would haue bene glad,
To haue preferu'd her many dayes and nights:
But such small store of others there remained,
At last to offer her they were constrained.

58

Who can the woes, the teares, the plaints rehearse,
The lamentations and the mourning sound,
That seemd y^e heau'ns theselues with noise to pearce,
To rend the rocks, and stir the stedie ground?
Her iu'ry corps conuayd (as in a hearle)
By wailing wights, where they must leaue it bound:
The thought hereof in me such pang doth breed,
I can no further in this tale proceed.

59

Wherefore I must some other matter find,
Vntill my Muse her sorrow may allwage,
For sure no cruell beast were so vnkind,
Nor Tyger in their greatest wrath and rage,
Nor any cruell tyrant can we find,
(Although there are good store in eu'ry age)
That could behold or thinke without compassion,
A Ladie bounden in so vile a fashion.

60

Oh had *Orlando* notice of her smart,
Who was to Paris gone to seeke her out,
Or those two knights whom late the fiend did part,
The which for loue of her together fought,
They would for her vse all paine, care and art,
Of death nor danger they would put no doubt:
But if they helpe not now, it is no wonder,
Sith they and she were plac'd so farre asunder.

61

Now in this time to Paris siege was layd,
By famous *Agramant Traianos* sonne,
Of which at last they grew so sore afrayd,
The towne had almost of the Turks bin wonne,
Had not their vowes procur'd them heau'nly ayd,
They had bin ruind all and quite vndone,
The force of France had welnigh then bin foyled,
The holy Empire had almost bin spoyled.

62

For when that now the citie was on fire,
And when all hope of humane helpe was past,
Then mightie God forgetting wrath and ire,
Vpon their teares, repentance true, and fast,
At *Charles* his humble prayer and desire,
With helpe from heau'n releu'd them at the last,
And sent such raine to aide the noble Prince,
As seld was seene before, and neuer since.

63

Now lay *Orlando* on his restlesse bed,
And thinks with sleepe to rest his troubled sprite,
But still a thousand thoughts posselt his head,
Troubling his mind, and sleepe expelling quite:
As circles in a water cleare are spread,
When sunne doth shine by day, and moone by night
Succeeding one another in a ranke,
Till all by one and one do touch the banke.

F ij

He returns to
Angelica's
broke staffe 78.

Smile.

62

So when his mistis enterd in his thought,
 (As lightly she was neuer thence away)
 The thought of her in him such circles wrought,
 As kept him waking euer night and day,
 To thinke how he from India had her brought,
 And that she should thus on the sodaine stray,
 Nor that he could of her true notice know,
 Since *Charles* at *Burdels* had the ouerthrow.

65

The grieve hereof did him most nearely tuch,
 And cauld him often to himselfe to say,
 What beast would haue bin ouerrul'd so much?
 That when I might haue made her with me stay,
 (For why her loue and zeale to me was such,
 That in her life she neuer said me nay)
 Yet I must suffer *Namus* for to guard her,
 As though my selfe but little did regard her.

66

I should to *Charles* my selfe haue rather scused,
 And as I did, haue kept the damsell still;
 Or if excuses all had bin refused,
 I might in stead of reason pleaded will:
 And rather then haue bin so much abused,
 All those that should resist me slay and kill,
 At least I might haue got her safer keeping,
 And not haue let her thus be lost with sleeping.

67

Where bidest thou, where wanderst thou my deare?
 So yong, so louely, and so faire of rewe?
 Euen like a lambe when starres do first appeare,
 (Her dame and shepheard being out of view)
 Bleateth aloud to make the shepheard heare,
 And in her kind her euill hap doth rewe,
 Vntill the wolfe doth find her to her paine,
 The silly shepheard seeking her in vaine.

68

Where is my loue, my ioy, my lifes delight?
 Wanderst thou still: do not the wolues offeend thee?
 Or needst not thou the seruice of thy knight?
 And keepest thou the flowre did so commend thee?
 That flowre that me may make a happie wight,
 That flowre for which I euer did defend thee,
 That I forbare, to please thy mind (too chaste)
 Is not that flowre (alas) now gone and past?

69

O most vnfortunate and wretched I,
 If they haue tane that sweet and precious floure,
 What can I do in such a case but die?
 Yea I would kill my selfe this present houre,
 I would this world and that to come desie,
 Earth first my coarfe and hell my soule deuoure,
 And this vnto himselfe *Orlando* said,
 With care and sorrowes being overlaid.

70

Now was the time when man, and bird, and beast
 Giues to his traueled bodie due repose,
 When some on beds, and some on boords do rest,
 Sleepe making them forget both friends and foes.
 But cares do thee *Orlando* so molest,
 That scarce thou canst thine eyes a little close,
 And yet that fugitiue and litle slumber,
 With dreames vnpleasant thee doth vex and cumber.

71

He dreamt that standing by a pleasant greene,
 Vpon a bank with fragrant flowres all painted,
 He saw the fairest sight that erst was seene,
 I meane that face with which he was acquainted,
 And those two stars that *Cupid* sits between, (tainted,
 Whence came that shaft whose head his heart hath
 The sight whereof did breed in him that pleasure,
 That he preferd before all worldly treasure.

72

He thought himselfe the fortunatest wight
 That euer was, and eke the blessedst louer:
 But lo a storme destroyd the flowers quite,
 And all the pleasant banke with haile did couer:
 Then suddenly departed his delight,
 Which he remaind all hopelesse to recouer;
 She being of this tempest so afraid,
 That in the wood to saue her selfe she straid.

73

And there (vnhappy wretch) against his will,
 He lost his Ladie in vnluckie howre:
 But her to find againe he traueled still,
 Employing to her safetie all his powre,
 The woods and deserts he with plaints doth fill,
 And cride, alas, turnd is my sweet to sowre:
 And while these same and such like words he said,
 He thought he heard her voice demanding aid.

74

At this same voice (well knowne) a while he staid,
 Then followd as the sound him guided most,
 With this mischance his mind was much dismayd,
 His body sore with toile and trauell tost:
 When straight he heard another voice, that said,
 Now hope no more, for all thy hope is lost.
 And of the sodaine waking with the sound,
 His eies all full of watry teares he found.

75

So sore he was affrighted at this vision,
 That eu'n as though it had bene so indeed,
 And not a fancie vaine or apparition,
 Thinking his Lady stood of him in need:
 In secret sort he getteth all provision,
 To make repaire vnto her aid with speed:
 And (for he would not willingly be knowne)
 He tooke nor man nor armor of his owne.

76

His coate of armes, of colour white and red,
 He left behind for doubt of ill successe,
 That if it fortun'd he but euill sped,
 At least the losse and foile should be the lesse,
 Vpon his armor cypresse blacke he spred,
 With colour sad, his sorrow to expresse.
 And thus disguild in sad and mourning hue,
 He parts, and biddeth not his friends adue.

77

Not of king *Charles*, whose kinsman he is neare,
 Nor taketh he his leaue of *Brandimart*,
 Nor yet to kinsman kind, or friend most deare,
 Doth he his meaning open or impart:
 Nor vntill day did all abroad appeare,
 Was *Charles* aduited that he did depart.
 But in great rage and choler when he knew it,
 He sware and vowd *Orlando* sore should rue it.

At

78

As which good *Brandimart* was greatly greeued,
As one that deem'd it was without delart,
And (that his frend by him might be releued)
To find him out from thence he straight doth part,
For by his words, he certainly beleued,
That he could ease his frend *Orlandos* smart,
But this to *Fiordelidge* he not imparted,
For feare that she his purpose would haue thwarted.

79

This *Fiordelidge* of him was dearly loued,
A Lady of great beautie and cleare fame,
Of parents good, of manners vnreproued,
Both wealthie, wife, and modest to the same,
Yet taketh he no leaue of his beloued,
But early in the morning from her came,
To turne that night was his determination,
But was deceiued of his expectation.

80

And when she waited had a month or more,
Expecting his returne, and all in vaine,
For loue of him she was inflam'd so sore,
Alone she goes to finde him out againe,
And manie sorrie haps she bid therefore,
As in the storie, shalbe showed plaine,
For of *Orlando* now I haue to say,
That is of more importance then both thay,

81

Who hauing chang'd the armes he late did weare,
Directly to the Citie gate he went,
And told the Sentnell, softly in his eare,
What was his name, and what was his intent:
Who straight abast the bridge, without all feare,
(Supposing sure his vncl had him sent:)
And straight vpon the Pagan campe he lighted,
As in the booke ensuing is recited.

Moral. In the hard aduentures of *Angelica*, we may note how perilous a thing beautie is if it be not especially garded with the grace of God, and with vertue of the munde, being continually assailed with enemies spirituall and temporall: In *Orlandos* dreame we may see how vnquiet thoughts are bred in the mindes of those that are giuen ouer to the passion of loue or ambition, or whatsoever else may be vnderstood by *Angelica*. Lastly in that *Orlando* abandons his Prince and country in their greatest extremitie, we may obserue the vncomely and carelesse actes that dishonest or vnordinat loue do prouoke euen the noblest vnto, if once they get harbour in their mindes, and be not ouerruled with reason and grace.

Historie. In this booke is little historicall matter, save of the distresse of the Parisians, of which I will not greatly stand more then that I said before it is not improbable that they were about that time assailed by the Turke: as for other matters that be here lightly touched, as the deuotion of *Paule* or *Hylarion*, the fable of *Proteus* or such like, the table shall set it downe more plaine.

Allegoric. The former Allegorie is here continued of *Rogeros* flying from *Alcyna*, by which must still be vnderstood, a man reforming his course of life, and flying from sensuality and pleasure: now whereas it is said in this booke that *Alcynas* man or her faulknier with his horse hauke and dog did impeach *Rogeros* passage, I take it that by these foure are ment the foure passions that most trouble the minde when it begins to encline to vertue, namely by the seruant feare may be vnderstood, which is euer seruile and base, by the hauke couetousnesse that is euer seeking new prey and is neuer satisfied: by the dog grieue and discontentment that is alway byting and enuying and greening at others well doing: by the horse is vnderstood inordinat ioy, which is in another kinde an enemy to vertue and constancie, for as soone as a temperat and moderate minde discovered in prosperitie as in aduersitie, and (as *Tully* saith) a wise man is neither *Aduersis rebus oppressus* nec *elatus secundis*: to which effect I remember a verse of my fathers, written to an Earle many yeares since.

Such one is ware by what degrees he clymes,
Rather pleasant then proud in high estate,
Rather bold then abasht in lowring times,

And can in both so well vphold his state,
As many would, but few can do or none,
Of which few sort, I wish your Lordship one.

But to proceed in the Allegorie, these impediments that disturbe men in their good course, are all but like owls or batts driuen away with sunne shine: for the light of vnderstanding and the shining of true worthines, or (as *M. Dyer* in an excellent verse of his termeth it) the light that shines in worthines, dissolueth and disperseth these dustie impediments, that let a man in his iourney to *Logestillas* Court, that is, to the court of vertue, of temperance, of pietie, where all good lessons are taught, as shalbe showed more plaine in that part of this booke, where *Rogero* comes to *Logestilla*.

By *Melyssa* that recouers from *Alcyna* *Astolfos* armour and the *Lancia d'oro* or *Goldelaunce*, and likewise restores *Astolfo* to his former state and shape by vertue of the ring, in the absence of *Alcyna*, by her (I say) we may vnderstand some graue and ghostly counsellor, that with strong reasons and godly perswasions, hauing driuen away for the time, a mans sinfull thoughts and desires, takes occasion vtterly to extinguish them and deliuer a man from them with the same reasons, and to draw him to vertue and Religion. *Alcynas* forces she prepares by sea and by land, signifie the meanes our ghostly enemies vse to bring vs backe againe to our old vices (like the dog to his vomit) by land she followes him, and after by sea she encounters him, which briefly shewes, that the remembrance of passed pleasures make a man often in perill to be drawen backe as it were by land, and then by sea (as a place of terrour and danger) we are assailed with greenous aduersities, as without speciall succour we should be quite cast away.

Rogeros hard travell, stony wayes, and afterward the sweat and drought he abode, signifie Allegorically the vnpleasantnes of the change of euill life to an austere course of liuing, which after notwithstanding is most exceeding comfortable and delightfome.

Allusion. The bawdy Frier that by his impotencie more then his honestie saved *Angelicas* maydenhead, is alluded by my author (as some haue supposed) to some such Prelate in Italie of his acquaintance, and but for good manners sake might be alluded to some that haue bene so illuded by such good men that notwithstanding they might sue their writ of dotage yet will still be as forward, as the youngest in that seruice. Atque iacent pigro crimen onusque toro.

Angelicas horse that carried her into the sea, Alludes to the bull that bare *Europa* such another roiage.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Orlando hastes his iourney when he hears,
What costly food Proteus his Orke allowes,
But by the way mou'd with Olimpias tears,
That did lament her late captiued spouse,
His hastie iourney he a while forbears,
To wreake her wrong upon her foe he vomes,
Which done, no longer in the place he tarries:
Byreno false the faire Olympia marries.*

A Las what damage cannot
Cupid bring
A noble hart once thral-
led to his lore?
That makes Orlando care-
lesse of his king,
To whom of late most
faithfull loue he bore.
Who eart so gaue & wife
in euerie thing,

And of the church a champion was before,
Now that in loues blind pathes, he learns to plod,
Forgets himselfe, his countrie and his God.

2
Faine would I him disburden of this blame,
Glad in my faults a fellow such to finde,
For to my good I feele me dull and lame,
But prompt to ill, and swifter then the wind:
He not bethinking him how great a shame,
It was to leaue his helpelesse friends behind,
Went where the kings of Affricke and of Spaine,
Did ly in field encampt with all their traine.

3
Yet not encampt I can them call, for why
They lay abroad dispersed with the raine,
Some twentie, ten, or eight together lie,
Or fixe, or fiue, or foure, or three, or twaine:
Some farther off, and some are lodged nie,
All wearie with their former taken paine:
He might haue kill'd of them a worthie crew,
Ne yet is Durindana once he drew.

4
The cause was this, so noble was his minde,
To murder men asleepe he thought it base,

He lets them rest, and seekes his loue to finde.
By eu'rie person, and in eu'rie place,
And those he meets, with words and speeches kind,
(Describing her apparell and her face)
He prayes of all good fellowship to shoe,
Or where she is, or whither she did goe.

5
When light apporcht, and day began to breake,
By day he seekes her in the host of Turkes,
His passions strong, do make his reason weak
Yield to the fit that in his fancie workes.
Some helpe it was, he could their language speake,
By which the safer he among them lurkes:
His words, his weeds, so like to theirs were seene,
As though that bred in Tripoly he had beene.

6
But when he saw his staying was for nought,
At three dayes end away from thence he flang,
He left no towne of France and Spaine vnought,
Ne yet this paine could ought assuage that pang:
Him Autumne first this wandring humor brought,
When frutes do fade, his fruitlesse loue first sprang,
And lasted still his force and rage renewing,
Both all the spring and summer next ensuing.

7
Now hauing traueled as his custome was,
From realme to realme, he came vpon a day,
Where as the riuer cleare sometime as glasse,
That twixt the Britans and the Normans lay,
Was growne so high as now he could not passe,
The snow and raine had borne so great a sway,
By force wherof the bridge was ouerthrowne,
The passage stopt, the foords were ouerflowne.

F iij

8

And looking round about the shore at large,
Deuising how to passe to th'other side,
He saw a little way from thence a barge,
That seemed toward him the course to guide,
Of which a certaine damsell had the charge,
To whom with voice aloud *Orlando* cride,
Intreating her because his hast was great,
Within the barge him to afford a seat.

9

The maid affirm'd no price the barge could hire,
And to command it he had no commission,
But promist she would grant him his desire,
Vpon a certaine cou'nant and condition;
Which was to vndertake by sword and fire,
For to destroy an Ile, without remission,
A cruell Ile, *Ebuda* call'd by name,
The wickedst place where euer creature came.

10

For know(quoth she) beyond the Irish land,
There lies among the rest this gracelesse Ile,
That yearly sends of wicked wights a band,
To rob, to spoile, to fraud and to beguile:
All women kinde that happen in their hand,
They giue for food vnto a monster vile,
A monster vile that vseth euerie day,
To haue a maid or woman for his pray.

Looke in the end
of this booke in
the Allegorie.

11

Of merchants and of pyrates that do come,
They get them store, and of the fairest most:
Now guesse by one a day how great a somme,
Of women kinde within this Ile are lost.
If then of loue you euer tasted crome,
Make one within the king of Irelands host,
That make them readie shortly to proceed,
To take a faire reuenge of this foule deed.

12

No sooner had *Orlando* heard her out,
But vovd to be as forward as the first,
To ioyne himselfe with that same worthie rout,
And now (for loue doth euer cast the worst)
Within himselfe begins to cast this doubt,
Least that this wicked monster and accurst,
Had got his Ladie for a daintie bit,
Because he heard no newes of her as yet.

Sent Ouid.
Est res sollicita
plena timoris
amor.

13

And this conceit his minde so much posselt,
And in his heart made such a deepe impression,
(For both in nature he did still detest
All such as vnto others do oppression)
And much he fear'd his loue among the rest,
Might fall into the monsters vile possession,
That straight he shipt, and by their due account,
Within three dayes he past saint *Michels* mount.

Sentences.
A true proprietie
of nobilitie.

14

But hauing passed now the milke white sand,
Of which the Ile of Albion takes his name,
The wind that in the South before did stand,
With so great furie to the Northwest came,
In vaine it was against the same to stand,
And therefore to retire it was no shame,
Backe in one night the tempest draue them more
Then they had say'd three dayes and nights before.

15

For when they saw it was no boote to striue
Against the furie of so scarce a winde,
They went euen as the weather did them driue
Vntill the streame of *Antwerpe* they did finde,
Where they to land with safetie did arriue:
There loe, an aged man with yeares halfe blinde,
Who deemd *Orlando* of that crew the chiefe,
To this effect vtterd to him his grieve.

16

How that a certaine dame of noble blood,
Of vertue verie great, of beautie rare,
Of sober cheare and of behauiour good,
(Though now oppress'd with miserie and care)
Requested him, except his hast withstood,
That she to him a matter might declare,
In which to aske his wise aduice she ment,
To which *Orlando* quickly did consent.

17

The Ladies pallace stood within the land,
To which the Earle conducted was with speed,
Where at the entrie did the Ladie stand,
In mourning shew, and sorrowfull in deed,
Who brought *Orlando* sadly by the hand,
Into a chamber hang'd with mournfull weed,
First him by her to sit she doth beseech,
And then in ruefull sort she vs'd this speech.

18

First (worthy knight) I would you vnderstood,
I was the Earle of *Hollands* daughter deare,
Who was to me so tender and so good,
That though my brothers both were him as neare,
Yet my desire in nothing he withstood,
Nor spake the word that I was loth to heare:
Thus whiles in state most stedie I did stand,
A certaine Duke arriued in this land.

19

The Duke of *Zeland* and his arrant was,
To Busky there against the Moores to fight,
His age and beautie that did others passe,
Moou'd me that had not tasted loües delight,
Nor arm'd against his darts with Steele or brasce,
To yeeld my selfe his prisoner without fight,
Beleeuing then as still I do and shall,
That he to me doth carrie loue not small.

20

For while the windes contrarie here him stay,
Though naught for his, yet excellent for my drift,
What time me seem'd each weeke was but a day,
The pleasant houres did slide away so swift,
We kept our selues together day by day,
Till at the last we made vs so good shift,
That er we parted we had so procured,
Each was to other man and wife assured.

21

Byreno was from hence but newly gone,
(So is my deare beloued husbands name)
But that a great Ambassador anon:
Directly from the king of *Friseland* came,
To treat a certaine marriage vpon
With other of that nation of good fame,
That to my Sire from *Holland* did reaire,
That I might marrie with his sonne and haire.

But

22

But I in whom faith tooke so deepe a roote,
I could not change my new made choise. and tho
I would, to striue with loue it was no boote,
That wounded me so lately with his bow,
To stop the motions newly set on foote,
Before they might to farther matter grow:
I would not go, I flatly told my father,
That I to die a thousand deaths had rather.

23

My louing fire that chiefest care did take,
That all he did might me his daughter please,
Agreeing to my will, and for my sake,
My griefe so new conceiued to appeale,
Straight way the motion of this marriage brake,
Which did so sore the Friseland king displease,
He made sharpe warres on Holland in short space,
By force whereof he ruind all my race.

24

For first he is of limbes and bodie strong,
To meete his enemies in open field,
And then so politike in doing wrong,
He makes their force vnto his fraud to yeeld:
He hath his other weapons strange among,
A weapon strange, before this seene but feeld,
A trunke of iron hollow made within,
And there he puts powder and pellet in.

25

All closed saue a little hole behind,
Whereat no sooner taken is the flame,
The bullet flies with such a furious wind,
As though from clouds a bolt of thunder came.
And whatsoever in the way it find,
It burnes, it breakes, it reares and spoiles the same.
No doubt some fiend of hell or diuellish wight,
Deuised it to do mankind a spite.

26

And thus with this deuice and many other,
In open field our battels twise he brake,
And first in fight he slue mine elder brother,
(The bullet through his curat way did make)
And next in fight he tooke and kild the tother,
Which cauld my fathers aged heart to quake,
Who notwithstanding stoutly did intend,
His honor and my safetie to defend.

27

But in a hold that onely now was left him,
They him besiegd that all the rest had wonne,
And by sharpe battell all the rest had rest him,
Where to a loup one leueld so a gunne,
The blow thereof of life and sense bereft him,
So swift it came as none the same may shun.
A weapon vile, wherewith a foolish boy
May worthy captaines mischiefe and annoy.

28

Thus was my father and my brothers slaine,
Before this furious king his warre would cease,
And I sole heire of Holland did remaine,
Which made his former fancie more increase:
He thinks by match with me my land to gaine,
And offerd to my people rest and peace,
If I *Arbante* marry would his sonne,
Which I before refused to haue done.

29

And I (as well for hatred I did beare,
Most iust to him and all his generation,
By whom my fire and brothers killed were,
By whom was spoild and robbed all our nation,
As that to breake my promise I did feare,
Which I *Byreno* made with protestation,
That howsoeuer fortunes wheele should turne,
Yet none should marry me till his returne)

30

Made answer this, that if for euery ill
I now abide I should haue thousands more,
Though they my corpes with cruell torments kill,
I would not breake my promise giuen before.
My countremen perswade me change this will,
First praying me, then threatning me full sore,
Except I do, to yeeld me and my land
(Desired prey) into mine enemies hand.

31

But finding still their threats and prayers vaine,
And still that in my former mind I staid,
Me and my country by a priue traine,
Vnto the king of Friseland they betraid:
Who thinking now with flatterie me to gaine,
First bid me not to feare or be dismaid,
Then offered free to giue me lands and life,
If I would be his sonne *Arbantes* wife.

32

Then I that see my selfe inforced so,
Although I meant that death should set me free,
Yet loth as vnreuenged hence to go,
On those that had so greatly iniur'd me:
Did muse on many meanes to helpe my wo,
At last I thought dissembling best to be,
Wherefore I fained that I was relented,
And that to haue his sonne I was contented.

33

Among some seruants that my father had,
Two brethren strong and hardy I did chuse,
Most apt to do what euer I them bad,
And for my sake no danger to refuse,
For each of them was brought vp of a lad
Within our house, I did their seruice vlc
In warre and peace, and found their faiths as great,
As were their hearts to any hardy feat.

34

To these two men I open made my mind,
They promist me their seruice and their aid,
One into Flanders went a barke to find,
The tother with my selfe in Holland staid:
Now was our day for marriage asingd,
When flying newes the strangers made afraid,
With many lailes *Byreno* was reporte'd,
Into these parts newly to haue resorted.

35

For when the first conflict and broile was fought,
Wherein my brother cruelly was slaine,
I straight by letters with *Byreno* wrought,
To make all speed to succor vs from Spaine.
But while prouision for each thing was sought,
The Friseland king gat all that did remaine,
Byreno hearing not what late was past,
Conducts his nauie hither in great hast.

This people def-
cription of an
herculean being
then a young man
in a life, doth be-
come Olympia
well.

Looke in the end
of the booke in
the history.

36
The Friseland king that heard of his repaire,
Doth leaue the marriage for his eldest sonne,
And to the sea he goes with nauie faire,
They meet, they fight, the king of Friseland wonne,
And to expell all comfort with despaire,
Byreno prisoner tane, I quite vndone,
Abrode *Byreno* captiue like was carried,
At home vnto his en'my I was married,

37
But when he thought in armes me to embrace,
And haue that due that wiues their husbands ow,
My seruant standing in a secret place,
Which I to him did for this purpose show,
Affords him to his sport but little space,
And with a Pollax strake him such a blow,
That staggering straight, and making little strife,
He left his loue, his liuing and his life.

38
And thus this youth borne in vnhappie houre,
Came to his death as he deserued well,
In spite of all his fire *Cymoscos* powre,
Whose tyrannie all others did excell:
Whose sword my fire and brothers did deuoure,
And from my native soile did me expell,
And meant to enter vpon all my lands,
While I by marriage should be in their hands.

39
But when we once performed had this deed,
And taken things of greatest price away,
Before that any noise or tumult breed,
Out of the window we deu'd a way:
And packing thence with all expedient speed,
We came to sea before the breake of day,
Where as my seruant waited with a barge,
As he before receiu'd of me in charge.

40
I know not if *Cymosco* tooke more grieve,
Or wrath or rancor kindled in his mind,
To see his sonne that lay past all reliefe,
To find no thing of value left behind,
Then when his pride and glory should be chiefe,
Then when to make a triumph he assignd,
And hoping all were at a wedding glad,
He finds them all as at a buriall sad.

41
His hate of me and pittie of his sonne,
Torment him night and day with endlesse greefe:
But sith by teares no good the dead is done,
And sharpe reuenge aswageth malice cheefe,
From dolefull teares to rage he straight doth runne,
And seeks of all his sorrow this relecte,
To get me in his hands with subtil traines,
Then me to kill with torments and with paines.

42
Those of my friends or seruants he could find,
Or that to me did any way retaine,
He all destroyd and left not one behind,
Some hang'd, some burn'd, and some with torment
To kill *Byreno* once he had assignd, (slaine,
Of purpose onely to procure my paine,
But that he thought his life would be a net,
The sooner me into his hands to get.

Sentence.
Horace: Quippe
nihil miseru
sui lamenta
profant.

Wherefore he set a hard and cruell law,
Except *Byreno* could in twelue months space,
Find meanes by fraud or forces me to draw,
To yeeld my selfe a prisoner in his place,
(Such Princes are that haue of God no aw)
Then die he should without all hope of grace:
So that to saue his life, my death alone
Must be the meanes, for other can be none.

44
All that by paine or cost procure I could,
With diligence I haue already done,
Sixe castles faire in Flanders I haue sold,
The mony spent, and yet no profit wonne,
I sought to bribe those that him kept in hold,
But they my craft with greater craft did shunne:
I also mou'd our neighbours neare and farre,
English and Dutch on him to make sharpe warre.

45
But those I sent when they long time had staid,
I thinke they would not, or they could not speed:
They brought me many words, but little aid,
My store decreast, but greater grew my need:
And now (the thought whereof makes me afraid)
That time drawes nie, when neither force nor meed,
As soone as full expired is the yeare,
From cruell death can safe preserue my deare.

46
For him my father and his sonnes were slaine,
For him my state and liuing all is lost,
For him those little goods that did remaine,
I haue consum'd to my great care and cost,
For him with hearts diseafe and bodies paine,
With troublous waues of fortune I am tost,
Now last of all I must lay downe my life,
To saue my spouse from blow of bloody knife.

47
And finding that my fortune is so bad,
I must to saue his life lay downe mine owne,
To leese mine owne I shall be faine and glad,
Where sorrow springs of seeds that loue had sowne:
This onely feare and doubt doth make me sad,
Because I know not how it may be knowne,
If I shall sure release *Byrenos* bands,
By yeelding me into the tyrants hands.

48
I feare when he hath shut me in this cage,
If all the torments I shall then endure,
His fury to *Byreno* may aswage,
Whose libertie I study to procure:
I rather feare least following his rage,
When he shall find he hath vs both so sure,
He will not care his oath and vow to breake,
Vpon vs both at once his wrath to wreake.

49
Behold the cause why I did long so fore
To speake with you, demanding your aduice,
As I haue oft of others done before,
Yet found I none so hardy nor so wise,
That would assure his freedome to restore,
Whose loue doth me to hate my selfe intice,
The cause no doubt is this, they stand in feare
Of those his guns, whose force no Steele can beare.

But

50
But if your vertue do not disagree,
With this your comely shape and manly show,
Let me request you fir to go with me,
Where I my selfe in prison shall bestow,
And promise me to set *Byreno* free,
If so the tyrant from his promise go.
For I shall die with great content and ioy,
If by my death *Byreno* scape annoy.

51
Her dolefull tale the damsell here did end,
Which oft was interrupted with her teares:
Orlando louing not the time to spend
In idle talke, all answers long forbears,
But in his mind he fully doth intend
To foile her foes and rid her of her feares,
He briefly said, that she should him commaund,
To do much more then she did him demandaund.

52
He meanes not tho that she her selfe should yeeld
Vnto the cruell tyrant as a pledge,
Except his sword (that failed him but seeld)
Had on the sodaine lost his force and edge,
He meanes (like common birders in the field)
To catch the birds and neuer hurt the hedge,
And thus resolu'd to do this worthy deed,
From Flanders now by sea they go with speed.

53
The skilfull Pilot doth the vessell steare,
Sometime on th'one, sometime on th'other side,
The Iles of Zeland some before appeare,
And some behind as fast themselues do hide,
And straight to Holland they approched neare,
Orlando went to land, but bids her bide:
His meaning is that she shall vnderstand,
The tyrants death before she come on land.

54
Himselfe forthwith was mounted on a steed,
A darke browne bay, with white starre in his face,
Borh large and strongly limbd (like Flemish breed)
But not so full of life nor swift of pace,
Yet good enough to serue him at his need,
When as his Briador was not in place:
And thus he came to Dordreck, where he found
With men of armes the gates enuironround.

55
The wayes, the wals, with arm'd men watched were,
For tyrants still are most of such condition,
(And chiefly new) that ay they stand in feare,
And further now some newes had bred suspicion,
How that an armie great approched neare,
Well stor'd with men, and stuffed with munition,
The which they said *Byrenos* cofin brought,
By force his kinsmans freedome to haue wrought.

56
Orlando wils a watchman carry word
Vnto their King, how that a wandring knight
Desires to proue his force with speare and sword,
Whom if the King could ouercome in fight,
Then he should haue the Ladie by accord,
That slue *Arbante* on his wedding night:
For he had taken her into protection,
And could deliuer her to his subiection.

57
But craued eke the King should bounden be,
By promise firme (if he were ouercome)
To let his prisoner (cald *Byreno*) free,
And of his message this was all the summe:
And this was told vnto the King, but he
That of true vertue neuer tasted crumme,
Bent all his will and wit against all reason,
To falshood foule, to false deceit and treason.

58
He makes account if he this knight can stay,
The which to do he meanes great meanes to make,
That then the Ladie quickly get he may,
And make him yeeld her for his safetie sake:
He sendeth thirtie men a priue way,
Him to inclose about and prisoner take,
Who fetching compasse to auoid suspicion,
At last arriued where they had commaission.

59
In this meane time with words he foded out,
The worthy Earle, vntill he saw his men,
According as he bad them come about,
Enclosing all the way behind, and then
Out of the gates he rusheth with a rout,
Of men on horse and foot of three times ten,
As hunters do inclose the beasts in woods,
Or fishers do inclose the fish in floods.

60
So doth the king *Cymosco* care and strue,
To stop the wayes with all foresight and heed,
And meaneth sure to haue him tane aliue,
And thinks the same is such an easie deed,
That of those guns with which he did depriue
So many liues, he thinks there is no need,
For such a weapon serueth very ill,
Where he did meane to take and not to kill.

61
As cunning fowlers do the birds reserue,
That first they take in hope of greater pray,
And makes them for a bait and stale to serue,
To take the rest by sport and pretie play,
So meanes the king aliue him to prelerue,
But vnto this *Orlandos* force said nay:
He meanes not to be handled in that sort,
But breakes the nets and marreth all the sport.

62
The noble Earle with couched speare in hand,
Doth ride where as he finds the thickest prease,
Two, three and foure, that in his way did stand,
The speare doth pierce, nor at the fist doth cease,
It past the fixt the brodenesse of a hand,
Nor that same handbreadth maketh any peace,
The seuenth so great a blow therewith he strake,
That downe he fell and neuer after spake.

63
Eu'n as a boy that shoots abroad for sport,
And finds some frogs that in a ditch haue bred,
Doth pricke them with an arrow in such sort,
One after one vntill such store be dead,
As that for more his shaft may seeme too short,
From fethers fild already to the head,
So with his speare *Orlando* him besturd,
And that once left, he draweth out his sword.

Simile.

Simile.

Simile.

64
That sword that neuer yet was drawne in vaine,
Against whose edge doth armour little boote,
At eu'ry thrust or blow he gaue was slaine,
A man on horse, or else a man on foote.
The edge whereof with crimson still doth staine,
And where it lights it pierceth to the roote.
The Friseland king repents him now too late,
That he for hast his guns behind forgate.

65
With voice alowd, and many a boistrous thret,
He bids them bring his gun, but none doth heare,
Who once within the gate his foote can get,
He dare not once peepe out againe for feare:
But when he saw none by his words did set,
And that almost they all departed were,
He thought it best to saue himselfe by flight,
From to great force of this same furious knight.

66
He backe retires, ne drawes the bridge for hast,
Because *Orlando* now approacht so nie,
And had not then his horse him speeded fast,
As though he did not runne but rather flie,
Orlando would haue made him sore agast,
Who caring not to make the poore sort die,
Past by the rest and kept the King in chase,
That sau'd himselfe by his good horses pace.

67
But yet ere long againe he doth returne,
And brings with him his iron cane and fire,
Wherwith he doth beate down, and bruse and burne
All those whom he to mischief doth desire:
He hopes this weapon well shall serue his turne,
Yet for all this he meanes to come no nire,
But like a hunter priuily doth watch,
Where he the heedlesse beast may safest catch.

68
The King with this his engine ly'th in wait,
A weapon tearing trees and rending rocks,
Whose force no fence can ward with any sleight,
It giues so sound and vnexpected knocks:
Thus hauing layne at little at receit,
And watcht his vantage like a craftie foxe,
When once the Earle within his reach he spide,
He setteth fire vnto his peeces side.

69
Straight like a lampe of lightning out it flies,
And sendeth forth withall so great a sound,
As seemd to shake the euerlasting skies,
And to remoue the vnremoued ground,
The shot gainst which no armour can suffice,
But breaketh all that in the way is found,
Doth whiz, and sing, and kindles as it went,
Yet did not that effect the tyrant ment.

70
For whether twere his ouerhastie speed,
And too great will to hurt did make him swerue,
Or whether feare posselt him in the deed,
That not to guide his hand his heart could serue,
Or whether God of mercie meere and meed,
Was pleald his champion longer to preserue:
It onely strake the horse with so great paine,
That downe he fell and neuer rose againe.

The horse and horsfeman downe together fell,
Downe lay the horse, vp quickly rose the knight,
And on his feet was straight recouerd well,
More earnestly bent then before to fight,
And as the stories of *Antheus* tell,
In whom each fall increased more his might:
So though *Orlando* with his fall was troubled,
His force and fury seemed to be doubled.

72
But when the king of Frizland plainly saw,
How this bold knight grew fiercer then before,
He thought it best by flight himselfe withdraw,
His fainting heart with feare was pierst so sore:
A side he turnes the hortes forming iaw,
Now full resolu'd to proue his force no more,
Orlando with such speed doth him pursue,
As doth an arrow from a bow of Yue.

73
And what he could not riding erst atchieue,
He doth the same and more vpon his feet,
And runs so swift as few men would belieue,
Except themselues had present bin to see it,
Vntill at last so hard he him did driue,
He ouertooke him in a narrow street,
And with his sword he cleft his head in twaine,
The senselesse corpes doth on the ground remaine.

74
Now as *Orlando* did this feate contriue,
There grew new broiles from thence a litle distance,
For then *Byrenos* cosin did arriue,
With men on horse and foot for his assistance,
And finding none that durst against him striue,
He entred had the gates without resistance,
So late a feare was in the people bred,
That none of them durst come to make a hed.

75
The silly Burgers knew not what to say,
Nor who these were, nor what was their desire,
Vntill the Zelanders themselues bewray,
Both by their speech and manner of attire:
Then made they peace, and promist them straight-
To do what ere the captaine should require, (way,
Against the men of Friseland them to aid,
Who yet in prison still *Byreno* staid.

76
For why that people alwayes had in hate,
The king of Friseland and his men of warre,
Their Dukes late death, and altring their estate,
Had mou'd their minds, but that that all did marre,
Was ouertaxing them in such a rate,
As alwayes breeds a great dislike and iarre.
Orlando twixt these men made such conclusion,
As turnd vnto the Friseland mens confusion.

77
For straight to ground they threw the prison gate,
They fetch the prisners out without a kay,
Byreno to the Earle is not vngrate,
With thanks a part of his due debt to pay:
And then they go to shew *Byrenos* state,
To faire *Olympia*, that at anchor lay,
For to the call they Lady chaft and faire,
That of that country was vndoubted haire.

Smile.

She

she that was thither by *Orlando* brought,
Without all hope of any such successe,
Who lately (filly creature) onely sought,
Her death might bring her louer from distresse:
Now was her safetie and *Byrenos* wrought,
Whom she supposed and lookt for nothing lesse:
The ioy cannot with many words be told,
Wherewith the tone the tother did behold.

79

The people do the damsell faire restore,
Vnto the state that vnto her was due:
But she that vovd her selfe for euermore,
To be vnto *Byreno* louer true,
Persisting now as faithfull as before,
Nor fearing any harme that might ensue,
Doth grant to him for loue and meere affection
Of her and her estate the full protection.

80

Byreno leaues his cosin in his place,
To guide that countrie with sufficient gard,
His louing wife in Zeland he will place,
That done, with forces marche to Friseland ward:
And hopes to conquer it in little space,
If that his fortune were not ouer hard,
And that which most assur'd him of this thing,
He had in hold the daughter of their king.

81

Whom he did meane to marrie (as men say)
Vnto a younger brother of his name:
Orlando shipt himselfe that present day,
Byreno with him to his shipping came,
And offerd him a large part of the pray,
Because his valew cheefly won the same,
Who nothing tooke but that same engin rare,
Which we before to lightning did compare.

82

Ne tooke he this away because he ment,
To proue the force thereof vpon his foe,
Or vse the same when he to battell went,
His courage would not suffer him do so:
To hurle away the same was his intent,
Where it mankinde might neuer damage moe:
He lets nor powder nor the shot remaine,
Nor ought that did vnto the same pertaine.

In *Orlando* that at the first motion entertained the enterprise of *Ebuda*, we may learne to be prone and readie to all honorable exploits: In his comming to succor the distressed *Olympia*, we may note how God sends vnexpected reliefe to the honest afflicted: In *Olympia* we may see a rare mirror of constancy, which I doubt too few of her sex will imitate. By *Cymoscostyrannie* and death, all Princes may take a warning, that no engins nor stratagems can keepe a tyrant safe in his estate, but onely clemency and bountie, that to lawfull Princes breeds euermore loue and loyalty in the subiect.

Concerning the inuention of gunnes, he seemeth to insinuate that they haue bene inuented long before the time that our writers speake of in Germany, which was about Richard the second his time: *Virgil* hath a verse in the sixth of the *Aeneados*, that sounds much to this effect, and my selfe haue wondered at it many times, to see how plainly it expresseth the qualitie of a peece of Ordenance. He telles that one *Sallomonieus* a Gyant had an engin of warre with which he imitated *Iupiters* thunder & lightning. & surely this he would not haue fained, but that he heard of some such thing: the verse is this. *Dum flammis Iouis & sonitus imitatur Olympi*. Some of our far travelled men tell vs that they of *Chyna* had vse of peeces some thousands of yeares, which I could be willing to credit, saue that they also tell of the records there since before *Adams* creation many yeares.

Allegorie I finde none but of the Ile of *Ebuda* where women be giuen to monsters to be deuoured, of which I will speake in another of the Cantoes that followes of that matter.

In the monstrous effectes of gunnepowder he alludes perhap to that huge damage done at Venice when their Arsenal or storehouse was blowne vp: as a like mishap though not so terrible, happened in the Tower my grandfather *Sir Iohn Maskham* being then Lieutenant of the Tower.

83

And when that now the shelues and shallow shore,
Some twentie leagues or there about was left,
No land discern'd behind nor yet before,
Vpon the right hand or vpon the left,
Because (said he) hereafter neuer more,
May any knight of life and limb be rest
By thee, or coward vaunt him with the stout,
Lye there alow vntill I fetch thee out.

84

O curst deuice found out by some foule fend,
And fram'd below by *Belzebub* in hell,
Who by thy meane did purpose and intend,
To ruine all that on the earth do dwell,
From whence thou camst, I thither thee do send:
(This said) the peece vnto the bottom fell:
Orlando maketh all the speed he may,
Himselfe vnto *Ebuda* to conuay.

85

I say the noble Earle in hast him hide,
Vnto that cruell Ile to finde that wight,
Whom he more lou'd then all the world beside,
On whom his thoughts were running day & night,
Nor would he by the way one whit abide,
Lest of new stay might new occasion light,
And cause him when he had his purpose mist,
To crie with late repentance, had I wist.

86

His course he meanes of neither side to bend,
Nor South nor North, such hast he meanes to make,
But goes as that blinde archer doth him send,
That deepe with dart of golden head him strake.
And here a while to leane him I intend,
Returning to the match of which I spake:
For you may thinke I lost it in the carriage,
If you should heare no more news of the marriage.

He returns to
Orlando in the
xj. booke st. 25.

87

Great feasts were made in Holland, and great sport,
Because of this new match and copulation;
But greater shall in Zeland by report,
For which there was great care and preparation:
Yet would I not you thither should resort,
Except you knew *Byrenos* inclination,
For chaunces fell that spoiled all the cheare,
As in the booke ensuing you shall heare.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Wicked Byreno fals in lone of new,
And in an Ile his kind Olympia leaues:
Rogero bids Alcynas realme adew,
But Logestilla gently him receaues:
She shewes him how to rule the horse that flew:
He flying in the aire, from thence perceaues
Renaldos musters: after which he found
Angelica vnto the rocke fast bound.*



¹ Among the mirrors rare of
loyall loue,
That present are, or haue
bin in time past,
Whose faith no force of
fortune could remoue
With fauning cheare, nor
yet with frowning blast:
Olympia faire all others far
aboue,

By iust desert requireth to be plait:
Whose stedfast loue (to say I dare be bold)
Doth passe the patterns of the new or old.

² How could she signes more euident impart,
Vnto *Byreno* of her louing mind?
No, though she should haue open laid he hart,
Yet could she not haue prou'd her selfe more kind:
And if such loue and dutie, by desert
May looke of due like loue againe to find,
Her faith requires vnto *Byreno* showne,
That he should seeke her safetie as his owne.

³ Nor onely not to leaue her in annoy,
Or her reiect for any other dame,
No not for her that bred the bale of Troy,
Or any other of more worthy name,
But her preferre before all worldly ioy,
Before his senses siue, before his fame,
Or any other thing of greater price,
To be exprest by word or by deuice.

⁴ Now if *Byreno* did her well requite,
If that he shewd to her the like good will,

If he regarded as he ought of right,
To bend vnto her liking all his skill,
Nay if forgetting all her merits quite,
Vngrate, vnkind, he sought her life to spill:
Behold I shall a tale to you recite,
Would make a man his lip for anger bite.

⁵ And when that I shall haue declared plaine
His crueltie, her loues vnkind reward,
I thinke you Ladies neuer will againe
Beleeue mens words, your hearts will wax so hard:
For *louers loued I adies loues to gaine,
Do promise, vow and sweare without regard,
That God doth see and know their falshood still,
And can and shall reuenge it at his will.

⁶ Their othes but words, their words are all but wind,
Vtterd in hast, and with like hast forgotten,
With which their faiths they do as firmly bind,
As bundels are trust vp with cords all rotten:
Coyneffe is naught, but worse to be too kind,
Men care not for the good that soone is gotten:
But women of their wits may iustly boist,
That are made wiser by an others cost.

⁷ Wherefore I wish you louely dames beware,
These beardless youths, whose faces shine so neate,
Whose fancies soone like strawne fire kindled are,
And sooner quencht amid their flaming heate:
The hunter chafeth still the flying hare,
By hill by dale with labour and with sweate,
But when at last the wished prey is taken,
They seeke new game, the old is quite forsaken.

G ij

Sentence.

* Casull. Nil ma-
ius iurare ni-
hil promittere
parant.Ouid: Iupiter ex
alto percuria ri-
det amantem.Tibullus: Veneris
percuria ventis
irrita per terras
& freta summa
serunt.Callimachus: Iu-
rauit quidem, sed
amatoria iura-
menta deorum non
subeunt aures.

Sentence.

Sentence: Felix
quem faciunt
aliena pericula
cautum.Ouid: Flammam
de stipula nostra
breuis fuit.Ouid: Venator
sequitur fugien-
tem capia velun-
quis.

Simile.

8

Euen so these youths, the while you say them nay,
In humble sort they seeke, they sue, they serue,
They like, they loue, they honor and obay,
They wait, they watch your fauours to deserue:
A part they plaine, in presence oft they pray,
For loue of you they mourne, they pine and starue:
But hauing got that erst they sought so sore,
They turne their sailes vnto another shore.

*Ouid: Successores
venerunt collatim omni-
bus animis.*

9

Though this be true, I not perswade you tho,
To leaue to loue, for that were open wrong,
To cause you like a vine vndrest to grow,
Vncared for the brires and thornes among:
But least on youths you should your selues bestow,
That neuer in one fancie tarry long;
The meane is best, yong fruites the stomacke gripe,
The elder cloy when they be ouer ripe.

Seneca.

10

I shewd you in the tale I told you last,
How that *Byreno* had *Cymoscos* daughter,
To marry whom a motion late was past,
Because his brother lou'd and greatly sought her,
But his owne mouth was of too lickrish taste,
To leaue so sweet a morsell, hauing caught her:
He thought it were a point of foolish kindnesse,
To part withall, a peece of so rare fincesse.

11

The damsell litle passed fourteene yeare,
Most tender, sweet and louely, fresh and faire,
As when the budding rose doth first appeare,
When sunny beames in May make temperate aire,
Byreno likes her face, her sober cheare,
And vsd to her to make so oft repaire,
That eu'n as *Brimstone* quickly taketh flame,
So loue tooke him to his perpetuall shame.

Smile.

Smile.

12

The streame of teares that for her fire she shed,
A flaming fornice bred within his brest,
The plaints she made, and dolefull words she sed,
Doth breed his hope of getting his request,
Thus foule desires with hopes as foule are fed,
As water hote from boiling straight doth rest,
When liquor cold is powred in the pot,
So with new loue his old was quite forgot.

Smile.

13

From flow to ebbe thus turned was the tide,
His late belou'd *Olympia* lothsome grew,
To looke on her his heart could scant abide,
His thoughts were all so settled on the new,
Yet till the time might serue he thinks to hide,
His filthy hate with faire and painted bew,
And though in fancie he did her detest,
Yet still great kindnesse he in shew profest.

14

And if he shewd the other signes of loue,
(Although such loue was worse then any hate)
Yet none there was herein did him reprove,
But tooke his meaning in another rate,
They thought some good remorse his mind did
In gracious sort to pine her estate,
And that to her he charitably ment,
Because she was so yong and innocent.

*Ouid: Hic amor
est odio maior
scelus.
Of Marra.*

(moue,

15

O mightie God, how much are men mistane?
How oft with fained shewes they are deceaued?
Byreno wicked meaning and prophane,
For good and godly was of men receaued:
The mariners their oares in hand had tane,
And from the shore the ship was quickly heaued,
To Zeland ward the Duke with all his traine,
With helpe of oares and sailes doth passe amaine.

16

Now had they lost the sight of Holland shore,
And marcht with gentle gale in comely ranke,
And (for the wind was westerly) they bore
To come within the lue of Scottish banke,
When as a sodain tempest rose so sore,
The force thereof their ships had well nie sanke,
Three dayes they bare it out, the fourth at night
A barren lland hapned in their sight.

17

Here faire *Olympia* from her ship to land,
From lands he passeth to the higher ground,
Byreno kindly led her by the hand,
(Although his heart another harbour found)
They sup in their pauillion pitcht on land,
Enuironed with a tent about them round:
The supper done, to bed do go they twaine,
The rest vnto their ships retorne againe.

18

The trauell great she lately did endure,
And had three dayes before her waking kept,
And being now vpon the shore secure,
(Now glad of that for which er long she wept)
And taking her amid his armes secure,
All this did cause that she the sounder slept,
(Ah silly soule) when she was least afraid,
Of her false husband thus to be betraid.

19

The trecherous *Byreno*, whom deceit
And thought of leud intent doth waking keepe,
Now hauing time for which he long did wait,
Supposing faire *Olympia* sound asleepe,
Vnto his ships he hies with short retrain,
And makes them all lanch forth into the deepe:
And thus with wicked practise and vniust,
He her forooke that chiefly him did trust.

20

Now were the sailes well charged with the wind,
And beare him lighter then the wind away,
The poore *Olympia* now was left behind,
Who neuer waked till that breake of day,
To lightsomnesse had changd the darknesse blind,
And sunnie beames had driu'n the mist away,
She stretcht her armes betweene a sleep and wake,
And thinks *Byreno* in her armes to take.

21

She findeth none, and drawing backe againe,
Again she reacht them out, but findeth none,
Her leg likewise she reached out in vaine,
In vaine for he for whom she feesles is gone,
Feare sleepe expels, her eies she opens plaine,
Nor yet she heares, she sees, nor feesles not one,
With which amaze, the clothes away she cast,
And to the shore she runneth in great hast.

With

22

With heart dismayd, and seeing her before
Her fatall hap, vnto the sea she hies,
She smote her brest, her haire she rent and tore,
Now looking (for all lightsome were the skies)
If ought she could discerne, but euen the shore;
But euen the shore, no other thing she spies:
Then once or twise she cald *Byrenos* name,
Then once or twise the caues resound the same.

23

And boldly then she mounted on the rocks,
All rough and steepe, such courage sorrow brought,
Her woful words might moue the stones and stocks,
But when she saw, or at the least she thought,
She saw the ships, her guiltlesse brest she knocks,
By signes and cries to bring them backe she sought,
But signes and cries but little now auails,
That wind bare them away that fild their sailes.

24

What meanest thou (thus poore *Olympia* spake)
So cruelly without me to depart?
Bend back thy course, and cease such speed to make,
Thy vessell of her lading lackes a part:
It little is the carkas poore to take,
Since that it doth already beare the hart:
Thus hauing by the shore cride long in vaine,
Vnto the tent she backe returnes againe.

25

And lying groueling on her restless bed,
Moistning the same with water of her eies,
Sith two on thee did couch last night (she sed)
Why did not two from thee together rise?
Accurst the wombe that false *Byreno* bred,
Accurst the day that first I saw the skies:
What shall I do? what can I here alone,
Or who (wo me) can mitigate my mone?

26

I see no man, nor any signe I see,
That any man within this Ile doth dwell:
I see no ship that hence may carry me,
With (at the least) some hope of being well:
I here shall starue, it cannot other be,
And buried how to be I cannot tell;
Ah how if wolues that wander in this wood,
Deuoure my flesh, or drinke my guiltlesse blood!

27

Alas I doubt, and stand eu'n now in feare,
Lest that some rau'nous wolfe that here abides,
Some Lion, Tyger, or some vgly Beare,
With teeth and claws shall pierce my tender sides,
Yet what beast could with greater torment teare,
Then thou more fierce then any beast besides?
For they contented are but once to kill,
But thou my life a thousand times dost spill.

28

But presuppose some vessell here arriue,
And take me from this place for pittie sake,
And so perchance I may be left aliue,
The Beares nor Lions neuer shall me take,
Yet will it be in vaine for me to striue,
Againe to Holland my repaire to make:
Thou keepst by force the place where I was borne,
Whence by deceit thou broughtst me (false forsworn)

29

Thou tookst from me my liuing, by pretence
And colour of thy friendship and alliance,
Thy men of armes were paid by my expence,
I gaue thee all, such was my fond affiance:
Or shall I turne to Flanders? sith from thence
I sold my selfe, and am at flat defiance
With all the nation, whom to set thee free,
I quite forsooke, that now ah wo is me?

30

Is there for me in Friseland any place?
Where I refuld for thee to be a Queene,
The which refusall ruind all my race,
As by the sequell was too plainly scene?
O cruell hap, o strange and monstrous case,
The righteous God iudge thee and me betweene,
Was euer Tyger carried heart so hard,
For so firme loue to pay so foule reward?

31

But what and if some pyrat wanting feare
Of God and man, shall take me as a slaue?
Thou God forbid, let Tyger, Wolfe and Beare,
First carry me a prey into their caue,
And there my flesh in peeces all to teare,
That dying, I my chastitie may saue.
This said, her raging grieve her hands addresses,
To offer force vnto her golden tresses.

32

And euen as *Hecuba* fell raging mad,
With grieve of mind and sorrow sore oppressed,
To see her *Polydorus* little lad,
By kinsmans fraud and crueltie distressed:
So rau'd *Olympia* faire, as though she had
With twentie thousand diuels bene possessed:
At last she sitteth on the rocks alone,
And seemes as senslesse as the senslesse stone.

33

And in this state I meane to let her stay,
Till of *Rogero* I haue talkt a while,
Who traueled in the hot and sandy way,
Full many weary and vnpleasant mile:
And now it was the middle of the day,
When as vpon the South side of the Ile,
He saw three Ladies neare a little towre,
Did sport themselues within a pleasant bowre.

34

These Ladies faire were of *Alcynas* crew,
And there refresht themselues a little space,
They had great store of wines both old and new,
And sundry kind of iunkets in like case:
A pretie barke there lay within their vew,
That did attend their pleasures in the place,
And wait when any little gale should blow,
(For now was none) that they might homeward go.

35

Then one of these that had espide the knight,
At such a time, and in such way to ride,
With courteous speech inuites him to alight:
The second brings him wine on th' other side,
And makes him farre more thirstie with the sight,
But these enticements could not cause him bide,
He feares *Alcyna* prisner so might take him,
If by this stay she hapt to ouertake him,

G iij

Simila

*He followes this
of Olympia wher
Orlando found
her naked in E-
buda, booke xi.
stasse 43.
Rogero.*

Smile.

Smile.

*Look in the Mo.
vall.*

36
Euen as salt peeter mixt with brimstone pure,
Inflameth straight when once it feelles the fire,
Or as the sea with winds and aire obscure,
Doth worke and swell, and euer riseth hier;
So they that saw their words could not allure,
His noble mind to follow their desier,
Tooke high disdain that they were so contemned,
And him of great discourtesie condemned.

37
And straight the third as in a raging mood
Said thus, O creature void of all gentilitie,
And borne (no doubt) of base vnworthy blood,
And bred where neuer used was ciuilitie,
Ay during life fro thee depart all good,
Nor maist thou die in quiet and tranquillitie,
But burned maist thou be, or cut in quarters,
Or driuen to hang thy selfe in thine owne garters.

38
With these and many bitter speeches mo,
They raile on him, and then they take their barke,
And coast along vpon the Southerne shore,
That they his passage and his course might marke.
But he that now was gotten farre before,
Did little to their threats or curses harke:
And notwithstanding all that they contriued,
Yet to his ship in safetie he arriued.

39
The Pilot doth *Rogero* much commend,
That from *Alcyna* so himselfe did saue,
And as a wife and well experienc'd frend,
Sound counsell and good precepts him he gaue,
And wisht that he his time would better spend,
And leaue fond toyes, embracing wise dome graue,
And from the good the euill to discerne,
As *Logestilla* used men to learne.

40
There is the food that fills and neuer cloyeth,
There is the loue, the beautie and the grace,
That maketh him most blest that them enioyeth,
To which compar'd, all other ioyes are base:
There hope, nor feare, nor care the mind annoyeth,
Respect of persons, nor regard of place:
The mind still finding perfit contentation,
That rests it selfe in vertuous contemplation.

41
There are (said he) some better lessons taught,
Then dancings, dallyings or daintie diet,
There shal you learne to frame your mind & thought
From will to wit, to temperance from riet:
There is the path by which you may be brought
Into the perfect paradise of quiet.
This tale the Pilot to *Rogero* told,
And all the while their course they forward hold.

42
But lo, they see a nauie vnder saile,
Of ships that toward them in hast did bend,
Alcyna wrathfull striuing tooth and naile,
Doth thinke to fetch againe her fleeting frend:
But all her diligence could not auaille,
Rogero to returne doth not intend,
And of her forces he was not afraid,
Because that *Logestilla* sent him aid.

For straight a watchman standing in a towre,
So high that all the hils and shore was vnder,
Did ring the larum bell that present houre,
He saw her fleet, though distant farre asunder:
And when that now approached was their powre,
With cannon shot they made them such a thunder,
That though *Alcyna* threatned much and braued,
Yet was *Rogero* from her malice saued.

Then at his first arriual to the shore,
Foure damfels met him sent by *Logestilla*,
Andromica that wisely sees before,
And *Fronesis* the iust, and chaste *Drusilla*,
And she that boldly fights for vertues lore,
Descending from the Romane race *Camilla*:
And straight rusht out of men a worthy band,
Ay prest to meet their foes on sea and land.

Within a large and very quiet bay,
A nauie was of vessels big and tall,
That readie at an howers warning lay,
To go to fight at any little call:
And now there was begun a great affray,
By land and sea the conflict was not small,
Which did the realme in hurly burly set,
Alcyna late did from her sister get.

Tis strange to see of wars the strange successe,
She that of late was counted of such might,
Is now so driu'n in danger and distresse,
That scant she could presterue her selfe by flight,
Rogero parting brought her grieve no lesse,
Then did the foile, which both bred such despise,
And such despaire, to die she had intended,
(If so she might) to haue her torments ended.

And as her selfe the dame of Carthage kild,
When as the Troyan Duke did her forsake:
Or as her blood the Queene of *Aegypt* spild,
For that so famous Romaine captaines sake:
Euen so *Alcyna* with like sorrowes fild,
Wisht of her selfe with like death end to make,
But (either auncient folke beleeu'd a lie,
Or this is true) a fairy cannot die.

But leaue we now *Alcyna* in this paine,
That from her elder sister fled apace,
And to *Rogero* let vs turne againe,
That was conducted to a beeter place,
Where finding now that he did safe remaine,
He thanked God that gaue him so much grace,
To see his foes of forces all depriued,
Himselfe within the castle safe arriued.

And such a castle that in stately show
And costly substance others all surmounted,
The value of the wals can no man know,
Except he first vpon the same had mounted:
Men haue not iewels of such price below,
For Di'monds are to these but drosse accounted,
And Pearles but pelfe, and Rubies all are rotten,
Where stones of such rare vertue can be gotten.

These

50

These wals are built of stones of so great price,
All other vnto these come farre behind:
In these men see the vertue and the vice,
That cleaueth to the inward soule and mind.
Who looks in such a glasse, may grow so wise,
As neither flattering praises shall him blind
With tickling words, nor vnderfuerd blame,
With forged faults shall worke him any shame.

51

From hence doth come the euerlasting light,
That may with *Phæbus* beames so cleare compare,
That when the Sunne is downe there is no night,
With those that of these iewels stored are:
These gems do teach vs to discerne aright,
These gems are wrought with workmanship so rare,
That hard it were to make true estimation,
Which is more worth the substance or the fashion.

52

On arches raifd of porphiry passing hie,
So hie that to ascend them seemd a paine,
Were gardens faire and pleasant to the eie,
Few found so faire below vpon a plaine:
Sweet smelling trees in order standing by,
With fountaines watring them in steed of raine,
Which do the same so naturally nourish,
As all the yeare both flowres and frutes do flourish.

53

No weeds or fruitlesse trees are in this place,
But herbs whose vertues are of highest price,
As soueraigne sage, and thrift, and herbe of grace,
And time, which well bestowed maketh wise,
And lowly patience, proud thoughts to abase,
And hearts ease, that can neuer grow with vice.
These are the herbs that in this garden grew,
Whose vertues do their beauties still renew.

54

The Ladie of the castle greatly ioyed,
To see the safe arriual of this knight,
And all her care and trauell she employed,
That honor might be done him in her sight.
Astolfo (in his passage lesse annoyed,
Doth take in his acquaintance great delight,
And all the other his good fauour sought,
That by *Melyssa* to themselues were brought.

55

Now hauing all themselues some dayes reposed
In *Logestilla*'s house, and taken rest,
And finding all themselues right well disposed,
To make returne againe into the West,
The good *Melyssa* for them all proposed,
Vnto the mightie Ladie this request,
That by her leaue without incurring blame,
They might returne them all frō whence they came.

56

To whom dame *Logestilla* thus replide,
That after they a day or two had staid,
She would for them most carefully prouide,
For all their iourney furniture and aid:
And first she taught *Rogero* how to ride
The flying horse (of whom he was afraid)
To make him pace or passe a full careere,
As readily as other horses here.

57

When all was ready now for him to part,
Rogero bids this worthy dame farewell,
Whom all his life time after from his hart
He highly honored and loued well.
First I will shew how well he playd his part,
Then of the English Duke I meane to tell,
How in more time, and with far greater paine,
He did returne to *Charles* his court againe.

58

Rogero mounted on the winged steed,
Which he had learnd obedient now to make,
Doth deeme it were a braue and noble deed,
About the world his voyage home to take.
Forthwith beginneth Eastward to proceed,
And though the thing were much to vndertake,
Yet hope of praise makes men no trauell shunne,
To say another day, we this haue done.

59

And leaving first the Indian riuer Tana,
He guides his iourney to the great Catay,
From thence he passeth vnto Mangiana,
And came within the sight of huge Quinsay:
Vpon the right hand leauing Sericana,
And turning from the Scythians away,
Where Asia from Europa first doth draw,
Pomeria, Ruffia, Prutina he saw.

60

His horse that hath the vse of wings and feet,
Did helpe with greater haste home to retire,
And tho with speed to turne he thought it meet,
Because his *Bradaman* did so desire,
Yet hauing now of trauell felt the sweet,
(Most sweet to those to knowledge that aspire)
When Germany and Hungry he had past,
He meanes to visit * England at the last.

61

Where in a meadow on a morning faire,
Fast by the Terns at London he did light,
Delighted with the water and the aire,
And that faire citie standing in his sight,
When straight he saw that souldiers did repaire,
To muster there, and asking of a knight,
That in the meadow he had met by chance,
He vnderstood that they were bound for France.

62

These be the succors (thus the knight him told)
Renaldo sude for at his comming hither,
With Irish men and Scots of courage bold,
To ioyne in hearts and hands and purse together.
The musters tane and each mans name enrolld,
Their onely stay is but for wind and wether,
But as they passe I meane to you to shew them,
Their names and armes, that you may better know
(them.

63

You see the standerd that so great doth show,
That ioynes the Leopard and the Flouredeluce,
That chiefest is, the rest do come below,
And reu'ence this according to our vse:
Duke *Leonell* Lord generall doth it ow,
A famous man in time of warre and truce,
And nephew deare vnto the King my master,
Who gaue to him the Dukedome of Lancaster.

G iij

Sentence.

Sentence:
* *Aristo* calls vs
ultima Inglerer-
ta the uttermost
country. Som
time past the old
Romans wrote.
Es penitus toto
diuisos orbe Bri-
tannos.

Aristo doth bus
roue at these no-
ble mens names,
and if any of vs
should write of
the noble men of
that time, we
should do the
like.

64

This banner that stands next vnto the kings,
With glittering shew that shakes the rest among,
And beares in azure field three argent wings,
To *Richard* Earle of Warwicke doth belong.
This man the Duke of Glosters banner brings,
A lions head, except my guesse be wrong,
The fierbrand the Duke of Clarence is,
The tree the Duke of Yorke doth claime for his.

65

The launce into three sundry peeces rent,
Belongs vnto the worthy Duke of Norfolk:
The lightning longs vnto the Earle of Kent,
The Gryphon longs vnto the Earle of Pembroke:
The ballance eu'n by which iust doome is ment,
Belongs vnto the noble Duke of Suffolke.
The Dragon to the valiant Earle of Cumberland,
The garland is the braue Earls of Northumberland.

66

The Earle of Arundell a ship halfe drownd,
The Marquefle Barkly giues an argent hill:
The gallant Earle of Essex hath the hound,
The bay tree Darby that doth flourish still:
The wheele hath Dorset euer running round,
The Earle of March his banner all doth fill
With Cardar trees: the Duke of Somerset
A broken chaire doth in his ensigne set.

67

The Faucon houerling vpon her nest,
The Earle of Deu'nshire doth in banner beare,
And brings a sturdy crew from out the West.
The Earle of Oxenford doth giue the Beare:
The banner all with blacke and yellow drest,
Belongs vnto the Earle of Winchester.
He that the cristall crosse in banner hath,
Is sent from the rich Bishop of the Bath.

68

The archers on horse, with other armed men,
Are two and fortie thousand more or lesse,
The other footmens number doubles them,
Or wants thereof but little as I guesse:
The banners shew their captains noble stem,
A crosse, a wreath, an azure bar, a fesse,
Geffray and *Ermant*, *Edward* bold and *Harry*,
Vnder their guide the footmen all do carry.

69

The Duke of Buckingham that first appeares,
The next to him the Earle of Salisbury:
Burgany next, a man well stricke in yeares,
And *Edward* next the Earle of Shrewsbury.
Now turne about, and lo the Scottish peares,
Braue men, and well appointed you shall see,
Where *Zerbino* sonne vnto the Scottish king,
Vnto the field doth thirtie thousand bring.

70

All chosen men from many a shire and towne,
All ready to resist, assaile, invade,
Their stander is the beast of most renowne,
That in his paw doth hold a glittering blade,
This is the heire apparant to the crowne,
This is the goodly impe whom nature made,
To shew her chiefest workmanship and skill,
And after brake the mould against her will.

71

The Earle of Otton commeth after him,
That in his banner beares the golden barres:
The spotted Leopard that looks so grim,
That is the ensigne of the Duke of Marre.
Not far from him there commeth *Alcubrin*,
A man of mightie strength and fierce in warre,
No Duke, nor Earle, nor Marquefle as men say,
But of the sauages he beares the sway.

72

The Duke of Trafford beares in ensigne bright,
The bird whose yong ones stare in *Phæbus* face:
Lurcanio Lord of Angus, valiant knight,
Doth giue a Bull, whom two dogs hold in chase:
The Duke of Albanie giue blue and white,
(Since he obtained faire *Geneuras* grace)
Earle Bohune in his stately banner beares
A Vulture that with clawes a Dragon teares.

73

Their horsemen are with iacks for most part clad,
Their horses are both swift of course and strong,
They run on horseback with a slender gad,
And like a speare, but that it is more long:
Their people are of warre then peace more glad,
More apt to offer then to suffer wrong:
These are the succors out of Scotland sent,
That with the noble Prince *Zerbino* went.

74

Then come the Irish men of valiant harts,
And actiue limbs, in personages tall,
They naked vse to go in many parts,
But with a mantle yet they couer all:
Short swords they vse to carry and long darts,
To fight both neare and farre aloofe withall,
And of these bands the Lords and leaders are,
The noble Earles of Ormond and Kildare.

75

Some sixteene thousand men or thereabout,
Out of the Irish Ile at this time went,
Beside the other Ilands thereabout,
Sweueland and Island other succors sent:
To good king *Charles*, for why they stood in doubt,
If he were conquerd they should all repent,
And still their numbers daily did increase,
Of those that better like of warre then peace.

76

Now while *Rogero* learnes the armes and name
Of euery Brittish Lord, behold a rout
Of citizens and folke of all sorts came,
Some with delight, and some with dread and doubt,
To see a beast so strange, so strong, so tame,
And wondring much, they compass him about:
They thought it was a strange and monstrous thing,
To see a horse that had a Griffons wing.

77

Wherefore to make the people maruell more,
And as it were to sport him selfe and play,
He spurd his beast, who straight aloft did soare,
And bare his master Westward quite away:
And straight he was beyond our English shore,
And meanes to passe the Irish seas that day,
Saint *George* his channell in a litle while,
He past, and after saw the Irish Ile.

Where

78

Where men do tell strange tales, that long ago
 Saint *Patrick* built a solitary caue,
 Into the which they that deuoutly go,
 By purging of their finnes their soules may saue:
 Now whether this report be true or no,
 I not affirme, and yet I not depraue.
 But crossing from hence to Island ward he found
Angelica vnto the rocke fast bound.

79

Both nak't and bound at this same Ile of wo,
 For Ile of wo it may be iustly called,
 Where peerlesse peeces are abused so,
 By monster vile to be deuour'd and thrall'd,
 Where pyratts still by land and sea do go,
 Assaulting forts that are but weakly walled:
 And whom they take by flattery or by force,
 They giue a monster quite without remorse.

80

I did declare not many books before,
 If you the same in memory do keepe,
 How certaine pyratts tooke her at a shore,
 Where that chaste hermit lay by her asleepe,
 And how at last for want of other store,
 Although their hearts did melt, and eyes did weepe,
 Mou'd with a helplesse and a vaine compasion,
 Perforce they bound her on this wofull fashion.

81

And thus the caitiues left her all forlorne,
 With nothing but the rocks and seas in sight,
 As naked as of nature she was borne,
 And void of succor, and all comfort quite,
 No vaile of lawne as then by her was worne,
 To shade the damask rose and lillies white,
 Whose colours were so mixt in euery member,
 Like fragrant both in Iuly and December.

82

Rogero at the first had surely thought,
 She was some image made of allablast,er,
 Or of white marble curiously wrought,
 To shew the skilfull hand of some great master.
 But vewing nearer he was quickly taught,
 She had some parts that were not made of plaster:
 Both that her eyes did shed such wofull teares,
 And that the wind did waue her golden heares.

83

To see her bound, to heare her mourne and plaine,
 Not onely made that he his iourney staid,
 But caus'd that he from teares could scant abstaine,
 Both loue and pitie so his heart assaid,
 At last with words to mitigate her paine,
 Thus much to her in louing sort he said,
 O Ladie worthy onely of those bands,
 Wherewith loue binds the hearts and not the hands.

84

And farre vnfit for these or any such,
 What wight was found so cruell and vnkind,
 To banish all humanitie so much,
 Those polish't iuory hands in chaines to bind,
 About that corps whom none can worthely tuch
 With hurtfull hands, vnworthy bands to wind?
 This said, she blusht, seeing those parts were spide,
 The which (though faire) yet nature striues to hide.

85

Faine would she with her hand haue hid her eyes,
 But that her hands were bound vnto the stone,
 Which made her oft to breake to wofull cries,
 (Sole remedy where remedy is none)
 At last with sobbing voice she doth deuise
 To tell the knight the cause of all her mone:
 But from the sea a sodaine noise was heard,
 That this her speech and all the matter mard.

86

Behold there now appeard the monster great,
 Halfe vnderneath and halfe aboue the waue,
 As when a ship with wind and weather beat,
 Dorth hasten to the hau'n it selfe to saue:
 So doth the monster halt, in hope to eate
 The daintie morsell he was wont to haue:
 Which sight so sore the damsell did appall,
Rogero could not comfort her at all.

87

Yet with his speare in hand, though not in rest,
 The vgly Orke vpon the brow he strake,
 (I call him Orke, because I know no be ast,
 Nor fish from whence comparison to take)
 His head and teeth were like a bore, the rest
 A masse, of which I know not what to make,
 He gaue him on the brow a mightie knocke,
 But pierst no more then if it were a rocke.

88

And finding that his blow so small hurt brings,
 He turnes againe on fresh him to asslay,
 The Orke that saw the shadow of great wings,
 Vpon the water vp and downe to play,
 With fury great and rage away he flings,
 And on the shore doth leaue the certaine pray,
 The shadow vaine he vp and downe doth chase,
 The while *Rogero* layth him on a pace.

89

Euen as an Eagle that espies from his,
 Among the herbs a partie colour'd snake,
 Or on a bank sunning her selfe to lie,
 To cast the elder skin, a new to make,
 Lies houer'g warily till she may spie
 A vantage sure the venom'd worme to take,
 Then takes him by the backe, and beates her wings,
 Mauger the poison of his forked stings.

90

So doth *Rogero* both with sword and speare,
 The cruell monster warily assaile,
 Not where he fenced is with grizly heare,
 So hard as that no weapon could preuaile,
 But sometime pricks him neare vnto his eare,
 Sometime his sides, sometimes his vgly taile;
 But nature had with such strong fences armd him,
 As all his blowes but small or nothing harmd him.

91

So haue I seene ere this a silly flie,
 With mastiue dog in sommers heate to play,
 Sometime to sting him in his nose or eie,
 Sometime about his grizly iawes to stay,
 And buzzing round about his eares to flie,
 He snaps in vaine, for still she whips away,
 And oft so long she dallies in this sort,
 Till one snap comes and marreth all her sport.

Source.

Simile.

Simile.

92

But now *Rogero* doth this sleight deuise,
Sith that by force he cannot make him yeeld,
He meanes to dazle both the monsters eies,
By hidden force of his enchanted sheeld,
And being thus resolu'd, to land he flies,
And from all harme the Ladie faire to sheeld,
He puts the precious ring vpon her hand,
Whose vertue was enchantments to withstand.

93

That ring that worthy *Bradamant* him sent,
When she from false *Brunello* had it tane,
With which *Melyssa* into India went,
And wrought his freedome, and *Alcynas* bane,
That ring he lends the damsel, with intent
To saue her eyes by vertue of the same,
Then takes he forth the shield, whose light so dazed
The lookers on, they fall downe all amazed.

94

The monster now approching to the shore,
Amazd at this, resistance none did make,
Rogero hewes vpon him more and more,
But his hard scales no harme thereby did take.
Oh sir (said she) vnloosen me before
Out of this maze the monster do awake,
And let your sword slay me this present houre,
So as this monster may not me deuoure.

95

These wofull words mou'd so *Rogeros* mind,
That straight he did vnloose the Lady faire,
And cauld her by and by to get behind
Vpon his horse, then mounting in the aire,
He leaues his Spanish iourney first assignd,
And vnto little Brittain doth repaire,
But by the way be sure he did not misse,
To giue her many a sweet and friendly kisse.

96

And hauing found a solitary place,
A pleasant groue well waterd with a spring,
Which neuer herd nor herdman did deface,
Where *Philomela* vsed still to sing,
Here he alights, minding to stay a space,
And hither he the Lady faire did bring,
But sure it seemd he made his full account,
Ere long vpon a better beast to mount.

97

His armour made him yet a while to bide,
Which forced stay a more desire did breed,
But now in him it was most truly tride,
Of times the greater hast, the worse the speed,
He knits with hast two knots, while one vnide.
But soft tis best no furdur to proceed,
I now cut off abruptly here my rime,
And keepe my tale vnto another time.

Morall.

In *Byreno* that abandoned his kind *Olympia* in a desolate land, and fell in loue with another, we may note an example of ingratitude, the monstrous fault of all faults, and most odious before God and man: and herein learne to abhor and detest this vice in him and in all others, that hauing receiued preferment or aduancement, either by men or women, when they haue done, shake them off like horses that be lame, or garments that be old, preferring one to the mill, the other to the dunghill: or as our *Stukley* said, make as much of his wife as he could, and if any could make more of her, they might take her, after he had gotten many thousand pounds by making much of her. In the spiteful words that one of *Alcynas* women spake of *Rogero*, we may obserue the maner of wanton worldlings, that if they see a yong man liue temperatly, or go plainly, or speake deuoutly, straight they say he is a base fellow, and one that knowes not what belongs to a Gentleman: which foolish maner of phrase, by *Rogeros* example we must learne to contemne, and know that such men are indeed base as thinke temperance, and sobrietie, and deuotion base qualities. Finally in *Rogeros* trauell about the world, we may see how commendable it is for a yong gentleman to trauel abroad into forrain nations, but yet we may note withall an inconuenience that comes many times with it, to see some *Angelicas* naked, that will tempt men of very stanch government and staid yeares to that which they shall after repent, as *Rogero* did this his wantonnesse, as appears more plainly in the next booke, where you shall find he lost both his horse and the ring by the vngratefulness of *Angelica*.

Historie.

For the matter historicall of this tenth booke, there is litle to be said, and nothing to be affirmed: for the succors sent to France from England, Scotland, Ireland, and many places thereabouts, though I cannot affirme precisely of the time, yet sure it is that many haue bin sent hence against the Turk to France and elsewhere. And whereas he speakes of *S. Patrick* the Irish Saint, I would haue them that would know the story of him to look in *Surius de vitis Sanctorum*, and there they may see it at large: for mine owne part, at my being in Ireland, where I taried a few moneths, I was inquisitiue of their opinion of this Saint, and I could learne nothing other then a reuerent conceit that they had of him, as becomes all Christians to haue of deuout men, and chiefly of those by whom they are first instructed in the Christian faith: but for his purgatory, I found neither any that affirmed it or beleued it.

Allegoric.

Logestillas castle, the ornaments thereof, the herbs of the garden, all these figure the true magnificence, glory, comfort, and vtilitie of vertue. The foure Ladies sent to rescue *Rogero*, are the foure Cardinall vertues, which being well vnited together, are able to ouerthrow whole nauies of vicious pleasures. And so whatsoeuer else is spoken of *Logestilla* in Allegory is taken for vertue.

Allusion.

In *Angelica* tied to the rock, and deliuered by *Rogero*, he alludes manifestly to the tale in *Ouid* of *Andromade* and *Percus*, who with his shield turned the beholders into stones.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Angelica doth hide her selfe away,
By vertue of the ring Rogero lent her:
Rogero sees a gyant beare away,
His spouse halfe dead, and greatly doth lament her:
Orlando at the Ile of woe doth stay,
Where many women meete but hard aduenter:
Here he the monster kild, Olympia freed,
To marrie whom Oberto soone agreed.*

THe gallant courser in his
full carriere.
Is made by man, to stop
with slender raigne:
But man himselfe his lust
and fond desire,
Is seldome drawn by rea-
son to refraine;
Tis hard to stop, but har-
der to retire,
When youthfull course ensueth pleasure vaine,
As Bears do breake the hiues and weake defences,
When smell of honie commeth to their fences.

²
No maruell if Rogero could not hold,
But that he would now take a little sport,
That naked did Angelica behold,
Within a groue alone from all resort;
His loue to Bradamant now waxeth cold,
Or at the least is temperd in such sort,
He meanes therewith at this time to dispence,
And not to let this go a maiden hence.

³
Whose beautie was so rare as well it might,
Haue made Zenoocrates an Epicure,
No maruell then if this same gentle knight,
Could not so great temptation well endure:
But while he hastend to his hopt delight,
Of which he thought him in possession sure,
There fell a strange and vnexpected thing,
By meanes Angelica did know the ring.

⁴
This was the ring that she with her had brought,
To France, the verie first time she was there,

What time by ayd thereof so well she wrought,
She holp her brother to th'incharnted speare,
By vertue of this ring she set at nought,
Those magicke arts, that men so greatly feare:
With this Orlando Countie Palladine,
She did release from wicked Dragontine,

⁵
By helpe of this inuisible she went,
Out of the towre where Atlant had her set:
For this same ring Brunello false was sent
By Agramant, who longd the same to get,
To tell that storie is not my intent,
For feare it might my other matter let,
But certaine tis, that when this ring was lost,
In fortunes waues she had bene euer tost.

⁶
Now when she saw this ring was on her hand,
She was so strooke with maruell and with ioy,
That scarce she could discerne and vnderstand,
If she were wake or if she dreamd some toy:
But to make triall how the case doth stand,
And know if she this treasure doth inioy,
Into her mouth the ring she doth conuay,
And straight inuisible she goeth away.

⁷
Rogero that each minute thought an howre,
(His armour of, and readie for the play)
Expecting now the damsell in a bowre,
Where he had pointed her for him to stay,
Found all too late, that by the rings strange powre,
She had vnscene conuayd her selfe away.
He lent it her to saue her eyes from blindness,
And for reward she quits him with vnkindnesse,
With

8

With which her aft displeas'd and ill apaid,
He curst himfelfe, and chafed in his mind:
O cruell and vnthankfull wench (he said)
Is this the loue that I deseru'd to find?
Dost thou reward him thus that brought thee aid?
To thy preseruer art thou so vnkind?
Take ring and shield, and flying horse and me,
This onely barre me not thy face to see.

9

This said, he goth about where she had beene,
Still groping as the weather had bin darke,
Embracing oft the aire his armes betweene,
In steed of her, then heedfull he doth harke,
To find her by the sound that was not seene,
And whence the same doth come he wel doth mark.
But on went she vntill it was her lote
To come into a silly shepheards cote.

10

And though this same were far from any towne,
Yet there she quickly did her selfe prouide
Of meate and drinke, and of a simple gowne,
Sufficient for the time her bare to hide,
Not luring for a Ladie of renoune,
That had bin euer clad in pompe and pride,
Had gownes of crimson, purple and carnation,
Of eu'ry colour, and of eu'ry fashion.

11

But yet no kind of weed so base or ill is,
Her of her princely beautie to bereaue,
They that so much extoll faire *Amarillis*,
Or *Galate*, do but them themselues deceaue:
Cease *Tyterus* to praite thy golden *Phyllis*,
Peace *Melebe*, this passes by your leaue;
Ye souldiers all that serue in *Cupids* garrison,
May not presume with this to make comparison.

12

Now here the damsell faire a palfrey hired,
With other things most needfull for her way,
And means to her owne home to haue retired,
From whence she had bin absent many a day.
The while *Rogero* now with trauell tired,
Lamenting he had lost so faire a pray,
Doth seeke his horse who had not long bin idle,
But in his masters absence brake his bridle.

13

Which when he found, the raines in peeces torne,
The horse soard far away with mightie wing,
How could such haps with patientnesse be borne,
Of one great losse to find a greater spring?
He sitteth in a dumpe, like one forlorne,
For losse of her, his horse, and of his ring,
Whose vertue great did make him much repent it,
But yet much more her vertue that had sent it.

14

And in this rage he puts his armor on,
And on his shoulder carieth his shield,
Pursuing that first path he lights vpon,
He found it brought him to a goodly field,
On side whereof when he a while had gone,
It seemd the wood adioynd some sound did yeeld,
And still the neare and nearer that he goes,
The plainer sound he heard of sturdy bloes.

15

A combat twixt a Giant and a Knight,
He sees hard by most furiously begunne,
The Giant with a club doth think by might,
The battell of the tother to haue wonne;
The tother with his sword and nimble fight,
His furious blowes with watchfull eye doth shunne.
Rogero seeing this great inequalitye,
Yet standeth still and shewes no partialitie.

16

But in his mind he wisht the Knight to win,
When lo the Giant with new fury fed,
To lay on lode with both hands doth begin,
And with one blow he layes him downe for dead,
And straight in cruell sort he steppeth in,
For to disarme him, and cut off his head:
But when the Giant had the face disarmed,
Rogero knew the partie he had harmed.

17

He saw it was his *Bradaman* most deare,
Whom this same Giant would haue made to die,
Wherefore with courage stout he steppeth neare,
The Giant to new combat to defie,
Who either heares him not, or would not heare,
Or meaneth not a conflict new to trie,
But tooke her vp, and on his shoulders layd her,
And so in hast away from thence conuayd her.

18

So haue I seene a wolfe to beare away
A lambe from shepheards fold, so haue I seene
An Eagle on a silly Dove to pray,
And soare aloft the skie and earth betweene:
Rogero hies him after as he may,
Vntill he came vnto a goodly greene,
But th'other eu'ry step so much out stept him,
That in his view *Rogero* scantly kept him.

19

But now a while of him I speake no more,
And to *Orlando* I returne againe,
Who hauing lost the sight of Holland shore,
Did hasten to *Ebuda* with much paine:
I did declare not many books before,
How he *Cymoscos* engin strange did gaine,
And to the bottome of the sea did throw it,
That none might find it out againe or know it.

20

And though his meaning and intent was so,
Yet vaine it was, as after was perceiued,
For why, that serpent vile our auncient fo,
That *Eua* first in Paradise deceiued,
Not much about two hundred yeares ago,
(As we from our forefathers haue receiued)
From out the sea by necromancie brought it,
And then in *Almanie* afresh they wrought it.

21

They wrought it both in iron and in brasse,
The cunning and the art increasing still;
As oft by prooffe we find it comes to passe,
The worse the worke, the greater growes the skill,
And to each kind a name assignd there was,
According to the first inuenters will,
To tell the names of all were but a trouble,
Some demicanons, some are called double.

H

He comes to *Rogero* againe in the
12 book staff. 14.

Sentences.

22
The Culuerings to shoot a bullet farre,
The Falcon, Saker, Minton and the Sling,
Not armed men, but walled townes to marre,
Such diu'llish force is in this hellish thing.
Ye souldiers braue, and valiant men of warre,
Now cease to field your manly darts to bring,
And get a hargubush vpon your shoulder,
Or else in vaine you sue to be a souldier.

23
How didst thou find (oh filthy foule inuention)
A harbor safe in any humane hart?
Thou mak'st a coward get the souldiers pension,
And souldiers braue thou rob'st of due desert,
Whole millions haue bin slaine, as stories mention,
Since first deuiled was this wicked art,
France, Italy and England chiefe may rew it,
Since first they vld this art, and first they knew it.

24
The English bowmen may go burne their boes,
And breake their shafts, and cut in two the string,
That weapon now may keepe the corne from croes,
That did the French at Agincourt so sting:
But to that wight I wish a world of woes,
That did to light, deuice so diu'llish bring,
Let him be giu'n into the hands of Sathan,
To be tormented ay with *Core* and *Dathan*.

25
Now good *Orlando* though he greatly struied,
With speed to get him to the Ile of wo,
Yet first the Irish King was there arriued,
By chance, or else that God would haue it so,
Because it might the better be contriued,
On wrongfull wights his iudgements iust to show.
But when *Ebuda* once in sight appeared,
Orlando all the companie straight cheared.

26
And putting off his armes of colour sable,
He bids the master out to launch his boate,
And in the same an anker strong and cable,
With which he meanes vnto this Ile to floate,
Not doubting (if lucke serue) he will be able,
To put the anker in the monsters throate.
And thus alone the noble Knight doth venter,
Into the Ile *Ebuda* then to enter.

27
Now was the time when as *Aurora* faire,
Began to shew the world her golden head,
And looke abroad to take the coole fresh aire,
Tythone lying still in iecalous bed,
When as *Orlando* hither did repaire,
By two blind guides, *Cupid* and *Fortune* led,
When lo vnto the shore his shipboate turning,
He seemd to heare a noise as one were mourning.

28
At which strange sound casting his eye aside,
He might discerne a goodly damsell naked,
With armes abrode vnto the rocke fast tide,
That what with cold and what with terror shaked,
Eftsoones the hideous monster he espide,
Whose sight might well haue made stout harts haue
Orlando's mind therewith is not amated, (quaked,
Nor his high courage any whit abated.

29
He gets betweene the monster and his pray,
That pray that he so hotly doth pursue,
And (for before he was resolu'd what way
He would attempt the monster to subdue)
Vpon his shoulder doth the anker lay,
And when he came within his vgly vew,
Euen mauer all his malice, might and rancor,
Into his open iawes he beares the ancor.

30
As they that dig in mine of cole or stone,
The same in sundry places vnderprop,
Lest it should fall when least they thinke thereon,
And so their breath or else their passage stop:
So is this anker fastend in the bone,
Both in the bottome of his mouth and top,
That though he would againe he could not close it,
Nor wider open it for to vnlose it.

31
Now hauing gagd his hideous chaps so sure,
That out and in he can with safetie go,
He enters with his sword the place obscure,
And there bestoweth many a thrust and blow,
And as that citie cannot be secure,
That hath within her wals receiu'd her fo,
No safer could this *Orke* be now from danger,
That in his entrals hath receiu'd a stranger.

32
But griped now with pangs of inward paine,
Sometime he plungeth vp vnto the skie,
Sometime he diueth to the deepe againe,
And makes the troubled sands to mount on hie:
Orlando feels the sea come in amaine,
That forced him at last his swimming trie,
He swims to shore with body strong and able,
And beares vpon his neck the ankers cable.

33
And as a sauage Bull that vnaware
About his hornes hath now a cord fast bound,
Doth strue in vaine to breake the hunters snare,
And skips, and leaps, and flings, and runneth round,
So though *Orlando* with his strength so rare,
Alfraid to draw him nearer to the ground,
Yet doth he fetch an hundred frisks and more,
Ere he could draw him vp vpon the shore.

34
His wounded bowels shed such store of blood,
They call that sea the red sea to this howre,
Sometime he breathed such a sudden flood,
As made the clearest weather seeme to lowre,
The hideous noise fild eu'ry caue and wood,
So that god *Proteus* doubting his owne powre,
Fled straight fro thence, himself in corners hiding,
Not daring longer here to make abiding.

35
And all the gods that dwell in surging waues,
With this same tumult grew in such a feare,
They hid themselves in rocks and hollow caues,
Lest that *Orlando* should haue found them there:
Neptune with triple mace by flight him saues,
His charret drawne with dolphins doth him beare,
Nor yet behind *Glaucus* or *Triton* taried,
For feare in these new broiles to haue miscaried.

Those

36

Those Ilanders that all this while attended,
And saw the monster drawne to land and tane,
With superstition moued much, condemned
This godly worke for wicked and profane;
As though that *Proteus* would be new offended,
That had before, and now might worke their bane.
They doubt he wold (thus fools their good haps con-
Send to their land his flock of vgly monsters. (sters)

37

And therefore *Proteus* anger to appease,
They meane to drowne *Orlando* if they can,
Whose deed they deemed his godhead did displease
And eu'n as fire doth creepe from bran to bran,
Vntill the pile of wood it wholly cease,
So doth this fury grow from man to man,
That they concluded all vpon the matter,
To throw *Orlando* bound into the water.

38

One takes a sling, another takes a bow,
This with a sword is armd, he with a speare,
And some afore, and some behind him go,
Some neare approach, some stand aloofe for feare:
He mused much what his vngratefull fo
Should meane, for benefits such mind to beare:
And inwardly he was displeasd and sory,
To find such wrong where he deserued glory.

39

As little cures that barke at greatest Beare,
Yet cannot cause him once his way to shunne,
No more doth he these curlike creatures feare,
That like a sort of mad men on him runne.
And (for they saw he did no armor weare)
They thought the feat would haue bin easily done,
They knew not that his skin from head to foote,
Was such to strike on it, it was no boote.

40

But when that he his *Durindana* drew,
He layd therewith about him in such sort,
That straight their faintnes and his force they knew,
They found to fight with him it was no sport.
Thrice ten of them at blowes but ten he slew,
Their fellows fled that saw them cut so short,
Which foes thus foild, *Orlando* now intended
T'vnloose the Ladie whom he had defended.

41

But now this while, behold the Irish band
Arriu'd neare vnto their chiefeft citie,
Who had no tooner set their foote on land,
But that forthwith they put apart all pittie,
And slue all sorts that came vnto their hand,
The fierce, the faint, the foolish and the wittie,
Thus were't iust doome, or were it cruell rage,
They spar'd of neither sexe nor neither age.

42

Thus th'ile of wo is made a wofull Ile,
And for the peoples sake they plague the place,
Orlando sets the Lady free the while,
That there was bound in that vnseemly case,
To haue bin giuen vnto the monster vile:
And viewing well, he cald to mind her face,
And that it should *Olympia* be he guesed,
But twas *Olympia* that had thus bin dressed.

43

Distrest *Olympia* thus vnkindly serued,
Whom loue and fortune made a double scorne:
For first of him, of whom she best deserued,
She was forsaken quite and left forlorne.
And next by pyratts taken and reserued,
Of monster vile to be in peeces torne.
And in this case the good *Orlando* found her,
And then with great compassion he vnbound her.

Olympia

44

And thus he said, now tell what strange annoy,
Or euill hap hath hurt thy happie raigne?
Whom late I left in solace and in ioy,
Why do I find in danger and in paine?
How is the blisse that thou didst then enioy,
So chang'd and turnd to misery againe?
And she in wofull maner thus replied,
When shame her cheeks with crimson first had died:

45

I know not if my chance or else my choice,
If fortune or my folly be in blame,
Shall I lament, or shall I now reioyce,
That liue in wo, and should haue died in shame?
And as she spake, the teares did stop her voice:
But when againe vnto her selfe she came,
She told him all the wofull story weeping,
How false *Byreno* had betrayd her sleeping.

46

And how from that same Ile where he betrayd her,
A crew of cursed pyratts did her take,
And to this wicked Iland had conuayd her,
For that same foule and vgly monsters sake,
Where now it was *Orlandos* hap to ayd her:
She walked naked when these words she spake,
Looke how *Diana* painted is in tables,
Among the rest of *Ouids* pleasant fables.

47

Of whose sharpe doome the Poet there doth tell,
How she with hornes *Achaon* did inuest,
Because he saw her naked at the well:
So stands *Olympia* faire, with face and brest,
And sides, and thighes to be discerned well,
And legs and feet, but yet she hides the rest.
And as they two were talking thus together,
Oberto king of Irish Ile came thither.

Ouid. Metam. 3.

48

Who being moued at the strange report,
That one alone the monster should assaile,
And gag him with an anker in such sort,
To make his strength, and life, and all to faile,
Then draw him to the shore as ship to port:
Is tow'd with ropes, without or oares or saile
This made him go to find *Orlando* out,
The while his souldiers spoiled all about.

49

Now when the King this worthy Knight did see,
Though all with bloud and water foule distained,
Yet straight he guesed it should *Orlando* be,
For in his youth in France he had remained,
And knew the Lords and Knights of best degree,
In *Charles* his court a page of honor trained:
Their old acquaintance causd at this new meeting,
They had a louing and a friendly greeting.

H ij

50

And then *Orlando* told the Irish king,
How and by whom *Olympia* was abused,
By one whom out of danger great to bring,
She had no paine nor death it selfe refused,
How he himselfe was witnessse of the thing,
While they thus talke, *Oberto* her perused,
Whose sorrows past, renewd with present feares,
Did fill her louely eyes with watry teares.

51

*Quid. 3. Metam.
Quis color infestus
aduersis solis ab
aethra, multum esse
folet aut purpur-*
and aut 72.

Such colour had her face, as when the Sunne
Doth shine on watry cloud in pleasant spring,
And eu'n as when the sommer is begunne,
The Nightingales in boughes do sit and sing,
So that blind god, whose force can no man shunne,
Sits in her eyes, and thence his darts doth fling,
And bathes his wings in her cleare cristall streames,
And sunneth them in her rare beauties beames.

52

In the he heates his golden headed dart,
In those he cooleth it, and temperd so,
He leuels thence at good *Obertos* hart,
And to the head he drawth it in his bow,
Thus is he wounded deepe and feelles no smart,
His sarmor cannot fend so fierce a blow:
For while on her faire eyes and limbes he gaped,
The arrow came that could not be escaped.

53

*The description
of Olympias
beautie.*

And sure *Olympias* beauties were so rare,
As might well moue a man the same to note,
Her haire, her eyes, her cheeks moist amorous are,
Her nose, her mouth, her shoulders and her throte,
As for her other parts that then were bare,
Which she was wont to couer with her cote,
Were made in such a mould as might haue moued
The chaste *Hipolytus* her to haue loued.

54

A man would thinke them fram'd by *Phydias* arts,
Their colour and proportion good was such,
And vnto them her shamefastnesse imparts
A greater grace to that before was much:
I cease to praise those other secret parts,
As not so fit to talke of as to touch,
In generall all was as white as milke,
As smoth as iuory, and as soft as silke.

55

Had she in valley of *Idea* beene,
When *Pastor Paris* hap did to befall,
To be a iudge three goddessees betweene,
She should haue got, and they forgone the ball,
Had she but once of him bene naked scene,
For *Helena* he had not car'd at all,
Nor broke the bonds of sacred hospitalitie,
That bred his country warres and great mortalitie.

56

*Zeues, looke in
the Table.*

Had she but then bene in *Crotana* towne,
When *Zeues* for the goddesse *Iunos* sake,
To paint a picture of most rare renowne,
Did many of the fairest damfels make
To stand before him bare from foote to crowne,
A patterne of their perfect parts to take,
No doubt he would haue all the rest refused,
And her alone in steed of all haue chused.

57

I doubtlesse deeme *Byreno* neuer vewd
Her naked corps, for certaine if he had,
He could not so all humane sence exclude,
To leaue her thus alone in state so bad:
But briefly all this matter to conclude,
It seemd *Oberto* would haue bin full glad,
In this her wo, her misery and need,
To comfort her by either word or deed.

58

And straight he promist that he would attend her,
And fetter in her country if he may,
And mauger all her enemies defend her,
And take reuenge on him did her betray.
And that he might both men and money lend her,
He would to pawne his realme of Ireland lay,
Nor till she were restor'd aske no repayment,
And straight he sought about to get her raiment.

59

They need not trauell farre to find a gowne,
For why immediatly they found good store,
By sending to the next adioyning towne,
The which his men of warre had spoild before,
Where many a worthy Ladie of renowne,
That had bene naked tide vnto the shore,
And many a tender virgin and vnfoiled,
Were of their raiment and their liues despoiled.

60

And yet for all they were so richly gownd,
Oberto could not cloath her as he wold,
No not in Florence (though it doth abound
With rich embroderies of pearle and gold)
Could any peece of precious stufte be found,
Of worth to serue to keepe her from the cold,
Whose shape was so exact in euery part,
Euen hard to match by nature or by art.

61

Orlando with this loue was well content,
As one that hither came with other end,
For sith he mist *Angelica*, he ment
His iourney backe to France againe to bend,
With them by ship to Ireland first he went,
As in his way, and with the king his frend,
Not hearing, had his loue bin here or no,
For all were dead that could haue told him so.

62

At both their sutes he scant staid there one day,
His passing loue such passions in him bred,
But ere he went he doth *Oberto* pray
To do for her as much as he had sed,
And parting so from thence he tooke his way,
Eu'n as his fortune and his fancie led,
But good *Oberto* need not be desired,
To do as much or more then he required.

63

For few dayes past but that with her he went
To Holland, where he raised such commotion,
That straight *Byreno* taken was and shent,
Recciuing on three trees a iust promotion:
And all those countries did forthwith consent,
To sweare them faith and be at their deuotion.
Thus of a Countesse she is made a Prince,
And liues in ioy and solace euer since.

Orlando

64

Orlando bends his course to British shore,
Whence he not long before to ship did mount,
Where he had left his famous Brilliadore,
A goodly courser and of good account,
No doubt of valiant acts he did good store,
Though what they were I cannot here recount,
For such a minde he caride still vnto them,
He cared not to tell them, but to do them.

65

But in what fashion he did passe the rest
Of that vnfortunate and fatall yeare,
I say by me it cannot be exprest,
Because thereof no record doth appeare,

But when the spring did ground with green intrest,
And sunne in Gemini made weather cleare,
Then did he acts both worthie of reciting,
And to be kept in euerlasting writing.

66

From hills to dales, from woods to pastures wide,
From waters fresh vnto the salt sea shore,
To seeke his loue he vp and downe doth ride,
The lesse he finds he seeketh still the more;
At last he heard a voice for helpe that cride,
He drawes his sword and spurs his Brilliadore.
But to refresh the reader now tis reason,
And stay my storie to a better season.

In the beginning of this eleuenth booke is a notable morall of temperance, with two comparisons, one of the horse, another of the Beare, which I iudge fit for this place rather to be repeated then expounded. If (saith he) a horse, with a little snaffle, may be stopt in his full carrire, what a shame is it for a man not to bridle his disordinate affections with reason, but to be like a Beare so greedie of honie, that he breakes downe the hives, and deuoureth the combes, till his tongue, eyes and iawes be stong, readie to make him runne mad: so do young men deuoure with extreme greedinesse, these sensuall pleasures, of veneric, surfetting, drinking, pride in apparrell, and all intemperance, till in the end they are plagued with sicknesse, pouertie, and many other inconueniences to their vtter ruine and confusion. Wherefore in the person of Rogero young men may weigh the losses he had by following his present fancie to Angelica; namely his ring and his horse: by the tone is vnderstood reason, by the other courage. In Angelica whose beutie so exceedingly shined in her poore apparell, you great Ladies may see, that your true natural beauties becom you best, beside that it hath euer bene counted a great signe of modestie and chaste disposition in women, to be rather cleanly then sumptuous in apparrell, for the vaine expence therein hath bene often occasion both to corrupt the minds and manners of many not ill disposed. And therefore that excellent verse of Sir Philip Sidney in his first Arcadia (which I know not by what mishap is left out in the printed booke) is in mine opinion worthie to be praised and followed, to make a good and vertuous wife.

Who doth desire that chaste his wife should bee,
First be he true, for truth doth truth deserue,
Then be he such as she his worth may see,
And alwayes one credit with her preferue:
Not toying kind, nor causlessly vnkind,
Not stirring thoughts, nor yet denying right:
Not spying faults, nor in plaine errors blind,
Neuer hard hand, nor euer rayns too light:
As far from want, as far from vaine expence,
Tone doth enforce, the tother doth entice.
Allow good companie, but driue fro thence,
All filthie mouths that glorie in their vice.
This done, thou hast no more but leaue the rest,
To nature, fortune, time, and womans brest.

In which you see his opinion of the two extremities of want and vaine expence.

Of the inuention of gunnes, as I somewhat touched two bookes before, so here you see how he affirmeth in a manner that Historie, they were inuented in Germanie. And so I haue read, that the first time they were vsed was in the yeare 1391. in the Venetians war against the Genoas, but it is maruell that the inuentors name of so monstrous a thing is not knowne.

Baken the great English necromancer wrote many yeares before that time, that he knew how to make an engin, that with salt peter and brimstone wel tempered together, should proue notable for batterie, but he said he would not discover it, for feare it would be a meane to destroy all mankind.

In the destruction of the Ile of Ebuda, and all that hath bene sayd of it before, with the monsters that are said to deuoure women naked and forsaken, this Allegoricall sence is to be picked out (though to some perhaps it will seeme greatly strayned.) By the Iland is signified pride, and loosnesse of life, that they are brought to (by pirats) which signifie flatterers, that go rousing about to rise them hither, robbing them indeed of all their comely garments of modestie, and sobrietie, and at last leaue them naked vpon the shore, despised and forsaken, to be deuoured of most ugly and misshapen monsters signified by the Orke, as filthie diseases, deformities, and all kinde of contemptible things, which monsters, a good plaine friend, with an anker of fidelitie will kill, as Orlando did this, and so cloth againe the nakednesse, that before pride and flatterie made vs lay open to the world.

And whereas is it said that Neptune and Proteus fled from Orlando, it is meant that a true Christian drives away all superstitious idolatrie, where soeuer he cometh.

I finde no Allusion worth the noting.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Orlando doth pursue with great disdain,
One that did seeme his loue by force to carrie:
Rogero led by such another traine,
With him doth in the charmed pallace tarrie:
Orlando parting from the place againe,
He sees indeed her whom he faine would marrie,
Fights with Ferraw, and foiles two Turkish bands,
And findes faire Isabell in outlawes hands.*



I Airc *Ceres* when she hast-
ned backe againe,
From great *Ideahomward*
to returne,
There where *Enceladus*
with endles paine,
Doth beare mount *Aetna*
that doth euer burne,
When she had sought her
daughter long in vaine,

Whose losse so strange did make y^e mother mourne,
She spoiles for spite her brest, cheeks, eyes and heare,
At last two boughs from *Pyne tree* she doth teare.

In *Vulcans* forge she sets on fire the brands,
And giues them powre for euer to be light,
And taking one a peece in both her hands,
And drawne in coach by yoked serpents might,
She searcheth woods and fields and seas and lands,
And brooks and streames and dens deuoyd of light,
And hearing here on earth no newes to like her,
At last she went to hell it selfe to seeke her.

3 Were good *Orlandos* powre to be compared,
As well with *Ceres* as his louing minde,
He would no paine, no place, nor time haue spared,
His deare belou'd *Angelyca* to finde,
To go to rocks and caues he would haue dared,
And place to saints, and place to fends assignd,
He onely wanted one of *Ceres* waggons,
In which she carried was with flying draggons.

4 How he did search all France before he told,
Now Italy to search is his intent,

And Germany and Castill new and old,
And then to Affrica to passe he ment,
And as he thus determined, behold
He heard a voice that seemed to lament,
And drawing nye, to vnderstand what tyding,
On a great horie he saw a horse man ryding.

5 Perforce he bare vpon his saddle bow,
A Lady sorrowfull and sore afrayd,
That cryde a loud still making open show,
Of inward grieve and thus to him she said,
O worthy wight (Lord of *Anglante*) know
I dye, I dye, without you bring me ayd,
And then he thought coming more nie to vew her,
It was *Angelyca*, and that he knew her.

6 Nay not that it was, but that it seemd,
To be *Angelyca* that thus was caryd,
But he that iustly great disgrace it deemd,
Thus in his sight, to haue his mistresse haryd,
Whose loue about all treasures he esteemd,
To take reuenge hereof he nothing taryd,
But put his spures to *Brilliadores* sides,
And in great hast to that same horseman rydes.

7 With many bloodie words and cruell threats,
He bids that horseman to come backe againe,
But he at naught his wordes and speeches lets,
Reioycing in so rich a gotten gayne,
The vilen still ground of *Orlando* gets,
Vntill they came into a faire large plaine,
Wherein a house of great estate was built,
The gate hereof in gorgeous fort was gilt.

H iij

*Quid illa duabus
flammas pinnas
membra succens
dit ab Aetna
And againe.
Inuoluit paula
maius quoniam filia
maius mombus
in terra omnis
quasi profunda
Ceres a said to
draw her coach
with serpents.*

8

The building all of marble faire was wrought,
Most costly caru'd and cunningly contriued,
To this faire house, his pray the foule thief brought,
Straight after him *Orlando* there arriued:
Then he alights and all about he sought,
For him that had him of his ioy depriv'd,
He maketh search in chambers all about,
And galleries and halls to finde them out.

9

Each roome he finds set forth with rich aray,
With beds of silke, and gold of curious art,
But yet he finds not that desired pray,
The want whereof did sore torment his hart.
There might he finde with like affliction stray,
Gradasso, *Sacrapant* and *Brandimart*,
And feare *Ferraw* posselt with strange confusion,
Procured in that place by strong illusion.

10

They all complaine in anger and in rage,
How of this house the master them hath vsed,
One lost his horse, another lost his page,
Another doubts his mistresse is abused:
Thus are they kept like birds within a cage,
And stand with sense and wits and words confused,
And manie with this strange deception carried,
Within this place both weeks & months had tarried.

11

Orlando when he saw he could not learne,
Where this same theefe his mistresse had conuaid,
Thought she was caride out at some posterne;
Whetore within no longer time he staid,
But walkes about the castle to discerne,
If that were true of which he was aff aid:
But as he walked vp and downe the plaine,
He thought he heard her call him backe againe.

12

And to a window casting vp his eye,
He thought he saw her face full of diuinitie,
And that he heard her plainly thus to crie,
O noble wight of proued magnanimitie,
Helpe now, or neuer helpe, alas shall I
In mine *Orlando*'s fight leese my virginittie?
Kill me, or let a thousand deaths befall me,
Rather then let a villaine so to thrall me.

13

These wofull speeches once or twise repeted,
Caus'd him returne into the house againe,
And searching once againe he chaste and freted,
(Hope still asswaging somewhat of his paine)
And oft he heard the voice that counterfeted
The speech of his *Angelica* most plaine,
From side to side he follow'd still the sound,
But of *Angelica* no signe he found.

14

Now while *Orlando* tarrid in this traunce,
In hope for to auenge his mistresse harmes,
Rogero (who I told you had this chaunce)
To see his *Bradament* in gyants armes,
(Drawne to this place with such another daunce)
Namely by force of some vnusuall charmes,
Saw first the gyant in this castle enter,
And after him he boldly doth aduenter.

15

But when he came within the castle walls,
And made much narrow search, as in such case,
In garrets, towrs, in parlors and in halls,
And vnder staires and many a homely place,
Oft casting doubts what hurt his loue befalls,
Or lest the theefe were gone in this meane space,
Forthwith he walketh out into the plaine,
And heares a voice rec all him backe againe.

16

That voice that lately did *Orlando* make,
Returne in hope *Angelica* to finde,
Rogero now for *Bradament* doth take,
Whose loue no lesse posselt his carefull minde:
And when the voice vnto *Gradasso* spake,
Or *Sacrapant*, or *Brandimart* most kinde,
To euerie one of these it plainly seemed,
To be her voice whom ech one best esteemed.

17

Atlanta had procur'd this strange inuention,
Thereby to keepe *Rogero* from mischance,
Because he saw, it was the heauens intention,
That he by treason should be kild in France,
Ferraw and those of whom I last made mention,
Whith all whom vallew highest did aduance,
To keepe him companie he here detained,
With good prouision while they here remained.

18

And while these knights with strange enchantments
Do here abide, behold the Indian queene (bound
Angelica that late her ring had found,
(Whose vertue can her cause to go vnseene,
And also frustrate magicke skill profound)
Now longing home, where long she had not been,
And being now of needfull things prouided,
Yet wants she one that her might horn haue guided.

19

Orlando's companie she would haue had,
Or *Sacrapant*, she car'd not which of twaine,
Not that of eithers loue she would be glad,
For them and all the world she did disdainie,
But (for the way was dangerous and bad,
In time of warre to trauell France and Spaine)
She wisht for her owne safete and her ease,
To haue the companie of one of these.

20

Wherefore a while she trauels vp and downe,
To seek for them that long in vaine had sought her,
And passing many woods and many a towne,
Vnto this place at last good fortune brought her,
Where whē she saw these knights of great renowne,
Thus seeke for her, she scant abstaines frō laughter,
To see *Atlanta* cunning and dissembling,
Her person and her voice so right resembling.

21

Her selfe vnseene, sees them and all the rest,
Now meanes she sure to take one of them two,
But yet she knowes not which (her doubtfull brest
Did stay as vnresolued what to do)
Orlando's vellew could defend her best,
But then this doubt is added thereunto,
That when she once so highly had prefard him,
She shall not know againe how to discard him.

But

22

But *Sacrapant* although she should him lift
High vp to heauen, yet maketh she no doubt,
But she will find some sleight and pretie shift,
With her accustom'd coynesse him to lout:
To him she goes, resolued of this drift,
And straight the precious ring she taketh out
From of her mouth, which made her go concealed,
With mind to him alone to be reuealed.

23

But straight came in *Orlando* and *Ferraw*,
That both desired, her to haue enioyd,
Thus all of them at once their goddesse saw,
Not being now by magick^e art annoyd,
For when the ring on finger she did draw,
She made vnwares all their enchantments voyd,
These three were all in complet armor, laue
Ferraw no headpeece had, nor none would haue.

24

The cause was this, he solemnely had sworne,
Vpon his head no helmet should be set,
But that that was by stout *Orlando* worne,
Which he did erst from *Traians* brother get,
Ferraw to weare a helmet had forborne,
Since with the ghost of *Argall* he had met:
Thus in this sort they came together armed,
By vertue of her ring now all vncharmed.

25

All three at once do now the damsell vew,
All three at once on her would straight haue seased,
All three her faithfull louers were she knew,
Yet with all three at once she is displeased,
And from all three she straight her selfe withdrew,
Who (haply) one at once would her haue pleased,
From henceforth none of them she thinks to need,
But that the ring shall serue in all their need.

26

She hastens hence and will no longer stay,
Disdaine and feare together make her swift,
Into a wood she leades them all the way,
But when she saw there was none other shift,
Into her mouth the ring she doth conuay,
That euer holpe her at the deadeft list,
And out of all their sights forthwith she vanished,
And leaues them all with wonder halfe astonished.

27

Onely one path there was, and that not wide,
In this they followd her with no small haist,
But she first causd her horse to step aside,
And standeth still a while till they were past,
And then at better leisure she doth ride,
A farre more easie pace, and not so fast,
Vntill they three continuing still their riding,
Came to a way in sundry parts diuiding.

28

And comming where they found no further tracke,
Ferraw, that was before the tother two,
In choler and in fury great turnd backe,
And askt the other what they meant to do,
And (as his maner was to brag and cracke)
Demaunded how they durst presume to wo,
Or follow her, whose propertie he claimed,
Except they would of him be flaine or maimed.

29

Orlando straight replide, thou foolish beast,
Saue that I see thou doest an helmet want,
I would ere this haue taught thee at the least,
Hereafter with thy betters not to want:
Ferraw doth thanke him for his care (in ieast)
And said it shewd his wits were very scant,
For as he was he would not be afraid,
To proue against them both that he had said.

30

Sir, said *Orlando* to the Pagan King,
Lend him your headpeece, and er we go hence,
I will this beast in better order bring,
Or sharply punish him for his offence.
Nay soft (said *Sacrapant*) that were a thing,
The which to grant might shew I had no sence,
Lend you him yours, for Ile not go to schoole,
To know as well as you to bob a foole.

31

Tush (quoth *Ferraw*) fooles to your faces both,
Asthough if I had bin dispoled to weare one,
I would haue sufferd (were you leue or loth)
The best and proudest of you both to beare one,
The truth is this, that I by solempne oth
Vpon a certaine chance, did once forswear one,
That on my head no helmet should be donne,
Vntill I had *Orlandos* helmet wonne.

32

What (quoth the Earle) then seems it vnto thee,
Thy force so much *Orlandos* doth surmount,
That thou couldst do the same to him, that he
Vnto *Almonta* did in Aspramount?
Rather I thinke, if thou his face should see,
Thou wouldst so farre be wide of thine account,
That thou wouldst tremble ouer all thy body,
And yeeld thy selfe and armour like a nody.

33

The Spanish vaunter (like to all the nation)
Said he had often with *Orlando* met,
And had him at aduantage in such fashion,
That had he list he might his helmet get,
But thus (quoth he) the time brings alteration,
That now I seeke, I then at naught did set,
To take his helmet from him then I spared,
Because as then for it I little cared.

34

Then straight *Orlando* mou'd in rightfull anger,
Made answer thus, thou foole and murren lier,
I cannot now forbear thee any longer,
I am whom thou to find doest so delier,
When met we two that thou didst part the stronger?
Thou thoughtst me farder, thou shalt feele me nier,
Try now if thou beest able me to foyle,
Or I can thee of all thy armour spoyle.

35

Nor do I seeke to take this ods of thee,
This said, forthwith his helmet he vntide,
And hung the same fast by vpon a tree,
Then drew his *Durindana* from his side;
And in like sort you might the Spaniard see,
That was no whit abated of his pride,
How he his sword and target straight prepar'd,
And lay most manfully vnto his ward.

THE TWELFTH BOOKE

92

35

And thus these champions do the fight begin
Vpon their coursers fierce, themselves more fierce,
And where the armour ioyne, and is most thin,
There still they striue with sturdy strokes to pierce:
Search all the world, and two such men therein
Could not be found, for as old bookes rehearse,
Their skins were such, as had they bin vnarmed,
Yet could they not with weapons haue bin harmed.

37

Ferraw had in his youth enchantment such,
That but his nauell hard was all the rest,
Vnto *Orlando* there was done as much,
By prayer of some saint (as may be gueſt)
Saue in his feet, which he let no man tuch,
Take it for truth, or take it for a iest,
Thus I haue found it wrote, that they indeed
Ware armor more for shew then any need.

38

Thus twixt them two the fight continues still,
Yet not so sharpe in substance as in show;
Ferraw imploying all his art and skill,
Sharpe thrusts vpon the tother to bestow:
Orlando that hath euer strength at will,
Layth on the Spaniard many a lustie blow:
Angelica doth stand fast by vnseene,
And sees alone the battell them betweene.

39

For why the Pagan Prince was gone the while,
To find her out, when they together fought,
And by their strife, that he might both be guile,
He hopes, and had conceiued in his thought:
He rides away, and trauels many a mile,
And still his deare beloued mistris sought,
And thus it came to passe that she that day,
Was onely present at so great a fray.

*You shall heare of
Sacrapant againe
27. booke, 15. staff.*

40

Which when she saw continue in such sort,
Nor yet could gueſſe by ought that she did see,
Which was most like to cut the other short,
She takes away the helmet from the tree,
And thinks by this to make her selfe some sport,
Or they by this might sooner sundred be,
Not meaning in such sort away to set it,
But that the worthy Earle againe may get it.

41

And with the same away from hence she goes,
The while they two with paine and trauell tired,
In giuing and in taking deadly bloes,
Ferraw (that mist the headpeece first) retired,
And for he did most certainly suppose,
That *Sacrapant* had tane it vndeſired,
Good Lord (said he) what meane we here to do?
This other knight hath couſened vs two,

42

And vnawares the helmet tane away.
Orlando hearing this, doth looke aside,
And missing it, he doth beleue straightway,
As did *Ferraw*, and after him they ride:
They came at last into a parted way,
That in two parts it selfe doth there deuide,
Fresh tracke in both of them was to be seene,
This of the Knight, that of the Indian Queene.

43

Orlando hap was to pursue the Knight,
Ferraw, that was more luckie of the twaine,
Happend vpon *Angelica* to light,
Who to refresh her former taken paine,
Fast by a fountaine did before alight,
And seeing sodainly the knight of Spaine,
Straight like a shadow from his sight she past,
And on the ground the helmet left with hast.

44

But as the sight of her did make him glad,
In hope by this good fortune her to get,
So thus againe to loose her made him sad,
And shewd that she did him at nothing let:
Then curst he as he had bin raging mad,
Blaspheming *Tryuigant* and *Mahomet*,
And all the Gods adord in Turkes profession,
The grieve in him did make so deepe impression.

45

Yet when he had *Orlando* helmet spide,
And knew it was by letters writ thereon,
The same for which *Traianos* brother dide,
He takes it quickly vp and puts it on,
And then in hast he after her doth ride,
That was out of his sight so strangely gone,
He takes the helmet, thinking little shame,
Although he came not truly by the same.

46

But seeing she away from him was fled,
Nor where she was he knew nor could not gueſſe,
Himselfe from hence to Paris ward he sped,
His hope to find her waxing lesse and lesse:
And yet the sorrow that her losse had bred,
Was part asswag'd, the helmet to possesse,
Though afterward when as *Orlando* knew it,
He sware great othes that he would make him rew it.

47

But how *Orlando* did againe it get,
And how *Ferraw* was plagued for that crime,
And how they two betweene two bridges met,
Whereas *Ferraw* was killed at that time,
My purpose is not to declare as yet,
But to another story turne my rime:
Now I must tell you of that Indian Queene,
By vertue of her ring that goeth vnseene.

48

Who parted thence all sad and discontented,
That by her meanes *Ferraw* his will had got,
That she (with this vnlookt for hap preuented)
Left him the helmet, though she meant it not,
And in her heart her aft she sore repented,
And with her selfe she said alas God wor,
I silly foole tooke it with good intention,
Thereby to breake their strife and sharp contention.

49

Not that thereby this filthy Spaniard might
By helpe of my deceit and doing wrong,
Keepe that by fraud he could not win by might,
Alas to thy true loue and seruice long,
A better recompence then this of right,
From me (my good *Orlando*) should belong:
And thus in this most kind and dolefull fashion,
She doth continue long her lamentation.

Now

50

Now meaneth she to trauell to the East,
Vnto her native soile and country ground,
Her iourney doth her other griefes digest,
Her ring doth in her iourney keepe her sound,
Yet chanced she, ere she forlooke the West,
To trauell neare a wood, whereas she found
A fine yong man betweene two dead men lying,
With wound in bleeding brest euen then a dying.

51

But here a while I cease of her to treat,
Or *Sacrapant*, or of the knight of Spaine,
First I must tell of many a hardy feate,
Before I can returne to them againe:
Orlandos actions I will now repeate,
That still endur'd such trauell and such paine,
Nor time it selfe, that sorrowes doth appeale,
Could grant to this his griefe an end or ease.

52

And first the noble Earle an headpeece bought,
By late ill fortune hauing lost his owne,
For temper or the strength he neuer sought,
So it did keepe him but from being knowne.
Now *Phæbus* charret had the daylight brought,
And hid the starres that late before were showne,
And faire *Aurora* was new risen when
Orlando met two bands of armed men.

53

One band was led by worthy *Manilard*,
A man though stout, yet hoary haire for age,
Who with his men did make to Paris ward,
He not for warre, but fit for counsell sage:
Alfyrd of the other had the guard,
Then in the prime and chiefe floure of his age,
And one that passed all the Turkish warriors,
To fight at tilt, at turney or at barriers.

54

These men with other of the Pagan host,
Had layne the winter past not far fro thence,
When *Agramant* did see his men were lost,
By vaine assaults vnto his great expence,
And therefore now he swears and maketh boist,
That he will neuer raise his siege fro thence,
Till they within that now had left the field,
Were forst by famine all their goods to yeeld.

55

And for that cause, now sommer comes againe,
He gets together all the men he may,
With new supplies of Affrike and of Spaine,
And some of France that did accept his pay,
But that in order due they may remaine,
He points them all to meet him in one day,
Who by commandment hither came in clusters,
To make appearance at the pointed musters.

56

Now when *Alfyrd* saw *Orlando* there,
Inflam'd with pride and glory of his mind,
He longed straight with him to breake a speare,
And spurs his horse, but quickly he doth find
Himselfe too weake so sturdy blowes to beare,
And wisheth now that he had staid behind,
He falleth from the horses back downe dead,
The fearfull horse without his master fled.

57

Straight there was rais'd a mightie cry and shout,
By all the souldiers of *Alfyrdos* band,
When as they see their captaine (late so stout)
Throwne downe and killed by *Orlandos* hand:
Then out of ray they compast him about
On eu'ry side, in number as the sand,
They that are nie, with blowes do him assaile,
And those aloofe throw darts as thicke as haile.

58

Looke what a noise an herd of sauage swine
Do make when as the wolfe a pig hath caught,
That doth in all their hearings cry and whine,
They flocke about as nature hath them taught:
So do these souldiers murmure and repine,
To see their captaine thus to mischief brought,
And with great fury they do set vpon him,
All with one voice, still crying, on him, on him.

59

I say the nearer fight with sword and speare,
And those aloofe send shafts and many a dart,
But he that neuer yet admitted feare
To lodge in any harbour of his hart,
Vpon his shield a thousand darts doth beare,
And thousands more on euery other part,
Yet of them all makes no more care nor keepe,
Thendoth a Lion of a flocke of sheepe.

60

For when at once his fatall blade he drew,
That blade so often bath'd in Pagans blood,
No Steele there was of temper old or new,
Nor folded cloths the edge thereof withstood,
About the field, heads, legs, armes, shoulders flew,
The furrowes all did flow with crimson flood,
Death goeth about the field reioycing mickle,
To see a sword that so surpast his sickle.

61

This made the Pagan rout so sore agast,
He that could swiftest runne was best apaid,
And as they came, so fled they now as fast,
One brother for another neuer staid:
No memory of loue or friendship past,
Could make one stay to giue another aid,
He that could gallop fastest was most glad,
Not asking if the wayes were good or bad.

62

Onely one man there was in all the field,
That had so long in vertues schoole bin bred,
That rather then to turne his backe or yeeld,
He meaneth there to leaue his carkas dead:
Old *Manylard*, who taking vp his sheeld,
Euen as his valiant heart and courage led,
Sets spurs to horse, and in his rest a lance,
And runs against the *Palladin* of France.

63

Vpon *Orlandos* shield his speare he brake,
Who neuer stird for all the manly blow,
But with his naked sword againe he strake,
And made him tumble ore the saddle bow:
Fortune on vertue did some pitie take,
For why, *Orlandos* sword fell flatling tho,
That though it quite amazd and ouerthrew him,
Yet by good hap it maimd him not nor slew him.

Simila

THE TWELFTH BOOKE

64
With great confusion all the other fled,
And now of armed men the field was voyd,
Saue such as were or seemed to be dead,
So as Orlando now no more annoyd,
Went on his journey as his fancie led,
To seeke her, in whose sight he onely ioyd,
Through plains and woods, through sandy ways and
He trauels making still of her enquiry. (myr,

Have you should
begin to read the
tale of Isabella.

65
Vntill it was his fortune toward night
To come fast by a mountaine in whose side
Forth of a caue he saw a glims of light,
And towards it he presently doth ride:
Then at the mouth thereof he doth alight,
And to a bush fast by his horse he tide,
He doubts, as euer loue is full of feare,
That his belou'd Angelica was there.

Smale.

66
Eu'n as the hunters that desirous are,
Some present pastime for their hounds to see,
In stubble fields do seeke the fearfull hare,
By eu'ry bush, and vnder eu'ry tree:
So he with like desire and greater care,
Seeks her that sole of sorrow can him free,
He enters boldly in the hollow caue,
And thinks of her some tidings there to haue.

67
The entrance straight and narrow was to passe,
Descending steps into a place profound,
Whereas a certaine faire yong Ladie was,
Kept by some outlawes prisoner vnder ground,

Moral.

In that Angelica would haue chosen Sacrapant before Orlando, we may note how women for the most part in their
choise follow rather some priuat respect, then the true worth of the men that offer themselves at their deuotion. In that
she took away the helmet, with purpose to make sport with it, though at last Orlando by that means lost it against her wil,
we may see that things done in iest, oft turne to earnest: and therefore that excellent rule of ciuilitie is euermore to be kept:

Play with me and hurt me not,
Iest with me and shame me not.

Historie.

In the quarrell betweene Orlando and Ferraw, we may see the common originall of all quarrels, namely honour and
women. Of Ferraw I spake in the first booke of his strength and stature, but whether it be true, or might be true, that his
body should be made impenetrable by sorcery and witchcraft, I can neither affirme it was so, nor maintaine that it could
possible be so, yet I know some that beleue the contrary, and (as they thinke) vpon good grounds: and some say it is a great
practise in Ireland to charme girdles, and the like, perswading men that while they weare them they cannot be hurt
with any weapon: and who can tell whether the diuel may not sometime protect some of his seruants? but one notable ex-
ample I haue heard tending much to this effect: Rorie Oge (a notable rebell of Ireland) hauing taken in a vile and tre-
cherous Parlee, my valiant cosin sir Henrie Harington prisoner, had one night his caben or little houell where he lay
beset with one hundred souldiers of the said sir Henrie his band, meaning to rescue their captaine by force, sith the rebels
demands for his deliuey were such as sir Henrie himselfe (being his prisoner) would not condescend vnto, but would
rather hazard his life as he knew he should: I say these hundred men wel appointed, beset the house strongly, being made
of nothing but hardels and durt, yet the villain ere they could get in, gat vp in his shirt, and gaue the knight xiiij. wounds
very deadly, and after gat thorough them all without hurt, where a mouse almost could not haue got betweene them:
and I haue heard it affirmed in Ireland, that it was with meere witchcraft.

Allegoric.

In the pallace, where euery one hath that he liketh best presented vnto him, yet no man can enioy it, it to be vnderstood
that he that followes his owne vaine desires without the rule of reason, shal euer run astray, and neuer attaine to the true
contentment he desires.

Allusion.

In Orlando and Ferraw he alludes to the fight of Cygnus and Achilles, who were both in like sort fained to haue bin
inuiolable.

Her beautie did the common sort surpasse,
So farre as scant her match was to be found,
So as that darke and solitary den,
Might seeme to be a paradise as then.

68
On her an aged woman there did wait,
The which (as oft with women doth befall)
About some matter of but little waight,
Did happen at that time to chide and brall,
But when they saw a stranger comming straight
They held their peaces, and were quiet all,
Orlando doth salute them with good grace,
And they do bid him welcome to the place.

This old woman
was Gaius,
whom you have
but a bad tale
the xxxiij.

69
Then after common words of salutation,
Although at first of him they were afraid,
Yet straight he entered in examination,
By whom in that same caue they had bin staid:
And who they were in so vnseemly fashion,
That kept a comely and a noble maid?
And said, he saw it written in her face,
Her nurture and her linage were not base.

70
She told him straight how long she there had beene,
And by what hap she had bin thither brought,
Amid her words the sighs do passe betweene,
The corall and the pearle by nature wrought,
Sweet teares vpon her tender cheeks were scene,
That came from fountaine of her bitter thought:
But soft, lest I should do the Reader wrong,
I end this booke, that else would be too long.



THE ARGUMENT.

Orlando heares Zerbynos loue to tell,
 Her strange misfortune and her hard aduenter:
 These outlawes that in that vast cane did dwell,
 Orlando hang'd, that had in prison pent her.
 Bradamant though Melissa did her tell
 Atlant as frands, yet doth his Pallace enter,
 Where she is staid by force of Atlants charmes,
 While Agramant musters his men of armes.



¹ Vll ventrous were the noble knights of old,
 And worthy that their fame should ay endure,
 That durst with valiant heart, and courage bold
 Find out in dens and places all obscure,
 Such as in courts we now but seeld behold,
 Faire dames, of beautie, mind and manners pure:
 As erst I told you how Orlando found,
 A braue young Ladie hidden vnder ground.

² Now in my former matter to proceed,
 I say when he had vewd her person well,
 And markt her face and hauiour with great heed,
 He doth request the damselfaire to tell,
 Who was the author of so foule a deed,
 To force her in so vnfit place to dwell:
 And she as plaine and briefly as she can,
 In this sweet sort her wofull speech began.

³ Most worthy knight (she said) although I know,
 That I shall buy my speech to you tull deare,
 (For sure I am, this woman here will show,
 My words to him that first did place me heare)
 Truth I will tell, though truth increasemy woe,
 And make him looke on me with angrie cheare:
 Dispaire hath euer danger all contemned,
 What should she feare that is eu'n now condemned?

⁴ I am that *Isabel* that sometime was,
 A daughter deare vnto the king of Spaine,

Well did I say I was, for now alas,
 I am the child of anguish and of paine:
 Loue, onely loue, this great change brought to passe,
 Loue, onely loue, of thee I may complaine,
 That flattrig alwaies in thy first beginnings,
 Yeeld't certaine losse in steed of hoped winnings.

⁵ Then in good state I spent my happie dayes,
 Noble and young, honest and rich, and faire,
 Now base, despiled, poore, and wanting prayes:
 Drownd in a dungeon of most deepe dispaire,
 Thus loue throws downe, whom fortune hie doth
 And marrs the sport in which he is a plaire: (raise
 He that in art of loue did show his skill,
 Saith loue and maiestie agrees but ill.

⁶ But that I plainly may declare my mind,
 Thus it fell out: my father twelue months since,
 To make a famous triumph had assignd,
 Vnto the which came many a Lord and Prince:
 Now whether liking did mine eies so blind,
 Or that his vertue did it selfe conuince:
 Zerbini (me thought) the king of Scotlands sonne,
 In this same triumph honor chiefe had wonne.

⁷ The passing feates of armes I saw him do,
 In which he was compared with the best,
 His person and his beautie ioynd thereto,
 In which he far surpassed all the rest,
 Did cause that he no sooner did me woe,
 But I as quickly granted his request:
 Interpreters nor other means none wanted,
 To make the seeds to grow that loue had planted.

When

8
When as these feasts and solemne shewes were ended,
My Zerbin backe againe to Scotland hasted,
Wherewith how grievously I was offended,
Well may you guesse if euer loue you tasted:
But he that cannot be too much commended,
Whose loue to me no lesse in absence lasted,
With purpose and with promise firme to marry me,
Studed all meanes away from hence to carry me.

9
Twere vaine he thought to aske me of my fire,
(Zerbin a Christen, I a Sarazine)
Our country law contrarid that desire,
To which our loues so wholly did incline:
This feat doth some new stratagem require,
More heedfull, secret, circumpect and fine:
When loue hath knit two hearts in perfite vnitie,
They seldome faile to find their oportunitie.

omemee. Ouid.
in caris effectus
ad voluerit duo
Philip Sid-
my made it thus:
why no selo-
can that pre-
mens, to which
parties once
full consens.

10
An house of great estate in Bayon towne,
My father had with gardens sweet and faire,
In which with large descents still going downe
Vnto a riuer comes the garden staire,
Here (if ill fortune on vs do not frowne)
He meanes when I shall walke to take the aire,
Soone to surpise me walking in an ally,
And so conuey me to his armed gally.

11
But sith with him the case did then so stand,
Not to be present at this enterprife,
He sent me letters written with his hand,
By *Oderike* of Byskie stout and wise,
Expert in seruice both off sea and land,
And wils me do as he should me aduise,
Whose faith he nothing doubteth to be found,
As one to him by benefits much bound.

12
This firme and fast, and sure obliged frend,
Of proued courage, value and of skill,
Against the time appointed he doth send:
And I that for their comming looked still,
Against the time appointed did descend,
To giue him scope to worke his masters will,
And he accordingly came vnepide,
With armed men vnder the garden side.

13
I seeing them, my selfe most fearfull faine,
They seeing me, soone of their purpose sped,
Those that resistance made, forthwith were slaine,
And some afraid and faint like cowards fled,
The rest with me as prisners do remaine;
Then straight we were vnto the gally led,
And gone so farre we could not be recovered,
Before my father had the fact discovered.

14
Of this departure I my selfe was glad,
In hope ere long my Zerbin to haue found,
But lo a sodaine tempest made vs sad,
And neare to Rochell almost had vs dround,
The master of the ship no cunning had,
To keepe the keele from striking on the ground:
It booted not against the waues to striue,
Vpon sharpe rockes the tempest doth vs driue.

15
In vaine it was to pull downe all our sailes,
And on the foreboord close to couch the mast,
No paine against the raging sea preuailes,
On land we looke each minute to be cast:
Diuine helpe oft doth come, when humane sailes,
And when in reason all releefe is past:
For doubtlesse I do deeme by powre diuine,
We were preferred in this dang'rous time.

16
The Byskin that the danger well doth note,
Doth meane a desprate remedy to trie,
He straightway launcheth out the little bote,
He and two more go downe therein and I,
This done, he cuts the rope and lets her fote,
Threatning with naked sword that he should die,
That durst presume to giue so bold aduenter,
Against our wils into the bote to enter.

17
The rope now cut, away the bote was carried
By force of waues vnto the shallow shore,
And by geat fortune none of vs miscarried,
So great a plunge I neuer scapt before,
But they (poore soules) that in the gally tarried,
Were drownd, the vessell quite in peeces tore,
Where though my losse of stufte and iewels greeu'd
My hope to see my Zerbin still releu'd me. (me,

18
Now being come to land (in lucklesse houre)
And trusting onely *Oderikes* direction,
Loue (that doth euer loue to shew his power,
In tempring and distempring our affection)
My good to ill, my sweet doth turne to sower,
My hope to hurt, my health into infection:
He in whose trust Zerbin so much relieth,
Freezeth in faith, and in new fancie frieth.

19
Now whether first at sea this humor grew,
Or else he moued was with new occasion,
To haue me here alone with so small crew.
As from his will I could not make euasion,
He bids all faith and honestie adew,
And yeelds himselfe vnto this foule perswasion;
And that he may his pleasure surely warrant,
He sends the seruants of a sleeuelesse arrant.

20
Two men there were that had so luckie lot,
With vs into the shipbote to descend,
One hight *Almonio*, by birth a Scot,
A valiant man, and Zerbins trustie frend,
Odrike tels him that it becomed not,
So few vpon a Princeesse to attend,
And that the daughter of the King of Spaine,
Should go on foote and with so small a traine.

21
Wherefore he wisbeth him to go before
To Rochell, there a palfrey to prouide,
And hire some men, a dozen or a score,
Me to my lodging mannerly to guide:
Almonio went, then was there left no more,
But *Coreb*, one of wir and courage tride,
In whom the Byskin put the more affiance,
Because that he was one of his alliance.

THE THIRTEENTH BOOKE

98

22

Yet long he seemd in doubtfull mind to houer,
Faine if he could he would haue rid him thence,
At last he thinks so fast a friend and loue,
Will with his friends iniquitie dispence:
Wherefore he doth to him his mind discouer,
In hope that he would further his offence,
And do as friends in our dayes haue a fashion,
Aduance their pleasure more then reputation.

Sentence.

23

But he whose honest mind could not suppose,
That *Oderike* had had so little grace,
The fact not onely threatens to disclose,
But calls him false and traitor to his face:
From bitter words vnto more bitter bloes,
They came and fought together in the place,
And in this prospect no whit delighting,
Fled to the wood while they two were a fighting.

24

Betweene them two the combat was not long,
But to the worser cause the better sped,
Whether he were more skilfull or more strong,
Oderike doth lay *Corebo* there for dead:
That done, he runs the woods and ferne among,
And followes fast the way that I had fled, &
I thinke that he god *Cupids* wings did borrow,
He made such halt to hasten on my sorrow.

Ouid. Metamor.
Qui tam in se-
quitur pēnu ad-
uitus amoru otio-
rum, &c.

Hic spe, celer illa
amore.

25

Feare made me swift, for sore I was afraid,
Loue made him swifter runne to ouertake me,
Then sore against my will my courie he staid,
Then sundrily both foule and faire he spake me,
Sometime he promised, sometime he praid,
Sometime he threatned he by force would make me:
With suit, with gifts, with threats he oft did proue me,
With suit, with gifts, with threats he nought did moue
(me.

Ouid. de fastis
Instat amans
hostu pretio pre-
cibusq; minisq;
Nec prece nec
gratia, nec mouet
ille minis.

26

But when he could not with his words preuaile,
He doth resolute no farther time to stay,
With open force he then did me assaile,
As doth a hungry Beare cease on his pray,
And I defended me with tooth and naile,
And cries and skrecks, and all the wayes I may,
Nor was I in mine owne defence afraid,
To scratch his eyes, and pull away his beard.

27

I know not if it were my skreech and crie,
That might haue well bin heard a league and more,
Or if it were their vse that dwell there by,
To come to seeke some shipwracks on the shore,
But straight vpon the hill we might descrie,
Come toward vs of companie good store,
Which makes my Byskie man away to runne,
And to surcease his enterprise begunne.

28

Thus this vnlookt for crew preferu'd me then,
And hinderd him of his vniust desire:
But I was sau'd, as is the flounder when
He leapeth from the dish into the fire.
For though these barbarous and sauage men,
To touch my person did not once aspire,
No vertuous thought did breed this moderation,
But hope of gaine and greedie inclination,

Proverb.

29

The leader of this miserable band,
Did thinke his market will be raised much,
In selling me, when men shall vnderstand,
He fels a maid whom none did euer tuch,
And now I heare a merchant is in hand,
Of him to buy me if his lucke be such,
From whom into the East I shall be sent,
Where to the Souldan they will me present.

30

And in this sort her wofull tale she told,
And mingled sighes with teares in rufull fashion,
Expressed with such dolefull words as would
Haue mou'd a stonie heart to take compassion:
It cald in part her mind, thus to vnfold
The bitter cause of her vnpleasant passion.
Now while *Orlando* to this tale attended,
The crew of caitiues to the caue descended.

31

A barbarous and foule misshapen crew,
Armed, one with a spit, one with a prong,
Mouthes, eyes and face, most vgly were to vew,
One had no nose, anothers was too long,
But when their leader somewhat nearer drew,
And saw *Orlando* standing there among,
Turning to his companion, he said,
Lo here a bird for whom no net we laid.

32

Then to the Earle he said, I am right glad
To find one so well armed in my caue,
For long for such an armor longd I had,
And surely now this I suppose to haue:
How thinke you, when my person shall be clad
With this your coate, shall I not then be braue?
Wherefore good sir, thinke not your welcome scant,
That come so fitly to supply my want.

33

Orlando turning with a slower smile,
Answerd, his armor was of price too hie,
And that he greatly did himselfe beguile,
That thought of him his armor there to buy:
And as they nearer came, he stoopt the while,
And tooke a brand that in the fire did lie,
And straight he threw it at the caitiues head,
And laid him there along the floore for dead.

34

A short thicke planke stood on a scrubby post,
That seru'd them for a boord to drinke and cate,
This like a coight at them *Orlando* tost,
And (for the same full heauy was and great)
It fell downe there among them to their cost,
They neuer saw before so strange a feat:
By which scarce one of them escaped harme,
In head, in leg, in brest, in side or arme.

35

So shall you see a country man that takes
In time of spring a brickbat or a stone,
And throwes the same vpon a knot of snakes,
That lie together clusterd all in one,
How great a spoile the stone among them makes,
And those that scape, how quickly they be gone:
So did *Orlando* with these peasants play,
That glad were they that scapt to runne away.

Those

36

Those that could scape the heauie tables fall,
Vnto their feet commended their defence,
Which were (as *Turpin* writes) but seuen in all,
Which seuen were glad to runne away from thence:
But yet their flying brought them helpe but small,
Orlando meanes to punish their offence,
Their feete, nor yet their fence, could them so gard,
But that he brought them to the hanging ward.

37

Now when the foresaid aged woman saw,
In how bad sort these friends of hers were serued,
She was affeard, for well she knew by law,
That no lesse punishment she had deserued,
Forthwith from thence she stole away for aw,
And vp and downe the desert wood she swarued,
Vntill at last a warrior stout her met,
But who it was I may not tell as yet.

38

The tender damsell doth *Orlando* pray,
Her chastitie and honour to protect,
Who made her go with him, and from that day,
Had vnto her a fatherly respect:
Now as they went, a prisoner by the way,
They saw, whose name I may not now detect:
Now should I speake of *Bradamant* by right,
Whom erst I left in such a dolefull plight.

39

The valorous Lady looking long in vaine,
When her *Rogero* would to her returne,
Lay in *Marfilia* to the Pagans paine,
Where eu'ry day she did them some shrowd turne,
For some of them in *Prouence* did remaine,
And *Languedock* where they did spoile and burne,
Till with her valew she did them rebuke,
Supplying place of captaine and of duke.

40

Now on a day as she sat still and mus'd,
The time of his appointment long expired,
Doubting lest she by him might be abused,
Or that her companie he not desired,
And often whom she blamd, she straight excused,
Thus while with carefull thought her selfe she tired,
Melissa whom she thought not to be neare her,
Came suddenly of purpose for to cheare her.

41

With pleasant countenance *Melissa* sage,
Much like to those that carrie welcome newes,
Wils her, her cautelesse sorrow to asswage,
And good *Rogeros* absence doth excuse,
Swearing that she durst lay her life to gage,
He would not absent be, if he might chuse,
And that he did now in his promise hault,
Was not by his but by anothers fault.

42

Wherefore (quoth she) get you to horsebacke straight
If you would set your faithfull louer free,
And I my selfe intend on you to wait,
Till you his prison with your eye shall see,
Whereas *Atlanta*, with a strange deceit
Detaineth men, of base and hie degree,
And shoves by strange illusion distrest,
Each one the partie whom he loueth best.

43

Each one doth deeme he sees in great distresse,
His loue, his frend, his fellow or his page,
According as mens reasons more or lesse,
Are weake or strong such passion to asswage,
Thus do they follow this their foolish guesse,
Vntill they come like birds into a cage,
Searching the pallace with a pensiue hart,
The great desire not suffering them to part,

44

Now then (said she) when you shall once draw nye,
Where this same Necromancer strange doth dwell,
He will your coming and the cause descrye,
And to delude you (marke me what I tell)
He straight will offer there vnto your eye,
By helpe of some inhabitants of hell,
Rogeros person, all in wofull plight,
As though he had beene conquered in fight.

45

And if you follow, thinking him to ayd,
Then will he stay you as he doth the rest,
But kill him theretore and be not affraid,
For so you shall your frend deliuer best,
So shall your foe *Atlanta* be betrayd,
In his owne trap when as he looketh left,
And feare not when he cometh by to strike him,
Though he your deare resemble, and looke like him

46

I know full well how hard twill be to trye,
And how your heart wil faile, and hand wil tremble
When you shall go about to make one dye,
That shall *Rogeros* shape so right resemble:
But in this case you may not trust your eye,
But all your sprites, and forces all assemble,
For this assure you, if you let him go,
You worke your owne and your *Rogeros* wo.

47

The Prouerbe saith, one that is warn'd is armd,
The which old saw, doth proue by due construction,
That they, that after warning had are harmd,
Did ill regard or follow good instruction.
Now *Bradamant* rides to the place so charmd,
And vovd that old Magicians destruction,
And that they may the tedious way beguile,
They spend the time in pleasant talke the while.

Sentence of Pro-
uerbe.

48

And oft *Melissa* doth to her repeat
The names of those that should be her posteritie,
That should in force, and deeds of armes be great,
But greater in Religion and sinceritie,
Atchiuing many a strange and worthy feat.
And vse both head, and hand, with great dexteritie,
In ruling iust, and bountifull in giuing,
Cesars in fight, and saints in godly liuing.

49

Now when *Melissa* sage such things did show,
The noble Lady modestly replide,
Sith God (quoth she) doth giue you skill to know,
The things that shall in future times betide,
And meanes on me (vnworthy) to bestow
An issue such as few shall haue beside,
Tell me among so many men of name,
Shall there no woman be of worthy fame?

I iij

This verie woman
woman is spoken
of againe in the
20. Canto about
the 60. staffe.

In the 23 booke.
Staffe 45.

Bradamant.

50

Yes many a one (said she) both chaste and wife,
Mothers to such as beare imperiall crownes,
Pillars and staves of roiall families,
Owners of realmes, of countries and of townes,
Out of thy blessed offspring must arise,
Such as shalbe eu'n in their sober gownes,
For chastitie and modestie as glorious,
As shall their husbands be in warre victorious.

51

Nor can I well, or do I now intend,
To take vpon me all their names to tell,
For then my speech would neuer haue an end,
I finde so many that deterue so well,
Onely I meane a word or two to spend,
Of one or two that do the rest excell:
Had you but talkt hereof in *Merlins* caue,
You should haue seen the shapes that they shal haue.

For there she
saw all the men
of that flocke.
Booke. 3.

52

Shall I begin with her whose vertue rare
Shall with her husband liue in happie strife,
Whether his valiant actions may compare,
Or be preferd before her honest life?
He fights abroad against king *Charles* at *Tare*,
She staid at home a chaste and sober wife:
Penelope in spending chaste her dayes,
As worthie as *Vlysses* was of praise.

Sentence.

53

Then next dame *Beatrice* the wife sometime
Of *Lodwike* *Sforze*, surnamed eke the *More*;
Wife and discreet, and knowne without all crime,
Of fortunes gifts and natures hauing store:
Her husband liu'd most happie all her time,
And in such state as few haue liu'd before:
But after fell from being Duke of *Millen*,
To be a captiue fetterd like a villen.

54

To passe the famous house I should be sorie,
Of *Aragon*, and that most worthie queene,
Whose match in neither greeke nor latine storie,
Or any writer else hath euer beene:
And full to perfite her most worthy glorie,
Three worthie children shall of her be seene,
Of whom the heauens haue pointed her the mother,
Isbell by name, *Alfonso* and his brother.

He calls her
queene because
she was kings
daughter.

55

As siluer is to tinne, as gold to brasse,
As roses are to flowres and herbs more base,
As diamonds and rubyes are to glasse,
As cedars are to fallows: in like case
Shall famous *Leonora* others passe,
In vertue, beautie, modestie and grace:
But aboue all, in this she shall excell,
In bringing vp her children passing well.

56

For as the vessell euer beares a tast,
Of that same iuyce wherwith it first was filled,
And as in fruitfull ground the seed growes fast,
That first is sowne when as the same is tilled:
So looke what lore in youthfull yeares is plait,
By that they grow the worse or better willed,
When as they come to manly age and stature,
Sith education is another nature.

Simile.

Simile.

Sentence.

57

Then next her neece, a faire and famous dame,
That hight *Renata* I may not forget,
Daughter to *Lews* the xij. king of that name,
Whom of the Britten Dutches he did get:
Whose vertue great shall merite lasting fame,
While fier shalbe warme and water wet,
While wind shall blow, & earth stand firm & sound,
And heau'nly sphears shall run their courses round.

58

I passe all those that passe all these some deale,
Whose soules aspiring to an higher praise,
Despising pompe and ease, and worldly weale,
In sacred rites shall spend their blessed dayes:
Whose hearts and holy loue and godly zeale,
To heau'nly ioyes, from earthly thoughts shall raise,
That to good workes, to prayre and pure diuinitie,
Shall consecrate their liues and their virginite.

59

Thus doth *Melyssa* vnto her discourse,
Of those should come hereafter of her seed,
And while they talked oft by entercourse,
They in their iourney onward do proceed,
And oftentimes *Melyssa* hath recourse,
To will her of *Atlanta* take great heed,
And least she should with faint and foolish kindnes,
Be led vnwares in error and in blindnes.

60

Now when they neare approached to the place,
Then *Bradamant* departed from her guide,
And after she had rode a little space,
She saw one brought with hands together tide,
Exceeding like *Rogero* in the face,
In voice, in stature, haire and all beside:
Bound fast with chaines betweene two gyants led,
That threttend him er long he should be ded.

61

But when the damsell saw within her vew,
The lamentable state and hard condicion,
Of him whose face she certaine thought she knew,
She changeth straight her trust into suspicion,
Doubting *Melyssa* of some malice new,
Or hidden hate had giu'n her such commission,
To make *Rogero* for a greater spite,
Be slaine by her in whom he doth delight.

62

Is not this he (thus to her selfe she spake)
Whom stil mine heart and now mine eies do see?
If my *Rogero* I can so mistake,
I neuer shall haue knowledge which is he:
I either dreame and am not now awake,
Or else no doubt it can none other be,
Melyssa? what, may not *Melyssa* lye?
Shall I beleue her tale, and not mine eye?

63

Now while that thus she thought, and thus she said,
And in this vnwise doubt did thus perseuer:
She thought she heard him speake and aske for aid,
Saying (my loue) assist me now or neuer;
What shall I in thy fight be so betraid?
Doeest thou forsake me? then farewell for euer:
These vnkind words her heart so greatly daunted,
She followes him into the house inchaunted.

No

64

No sooner was she enterd in the gate,
But that the common error her posselt,
Wandering about the house betimes and late,
Nor night nor day she taketh any rest;
The strange enchantment brought her in that state,
That though she saw the man that lou'd her best,
And spake with him, and met him eu'rie howre,
To know the tone the tother had no powre.

65

book, ff. 18

viii.

But let not now the reader be displeased,
Although I leaue her in this charmed place,
I meane er long her trauell shall be eased,
And she shall see and know Rogeros face.
Eu'n as the tast with diuers meats is pleased,
So thinke I by this storie in like case,
The frendly reader shall be lesse annoyed,
If with one matter long he be not cloyed.

66

With sundrie threds a man had need to weaue,
To make so large a web as I intend,
Wherefore all other matters I must leaue,
Of Agramant a little time to spend:
Who sorely at the flour deluce did heaue,
And all his might to mar the same did bend,
Sending for men to Affricke and to Spaine,
Those to supply that in the field were slaine.

67

Thus all on war his heart was wholly fixt,
His new supplies with sundrie captaines led,
Were come, with men of sundrie nations mixt,
With whom that no disorder may be bred,
A day for yews and musters was prefixt,
That eu'rie one might know his guide and hed,
Then fell they to their mustring and their vewing,
As shall be shewd you in the booke ensuing.

In this tragicall discourse of Isabella (for it is in conclusion an excellent tragedie) young Ladies might take this good Moral. lesson, that though they make choise of most worthie men (as Isabella did) yet if it be without their parents good will, it seldome prospers, but is full of diuers misadventures and hazards, that many times be the cause of their vtter ruine. In that Oderike giueth place to his disordinate lust, forgetting all faith and loyalty, we may note the frailtie of young men, and what vnfit tutors they are for such charges, who when they haue broken all the bands of faith and honestie, they think notwithstanding they haue made a sufficient excuse for the matter, if they may lay the fault vpon (sauiug your reuerence) Cupid. In Corebo, that would not be wonne to consent to his friends desire in so foule a matter, we may take good example of faith and loyalty, that must neither for friendship nor kindred yeeld to any dishonorable act. In the execution of the theenes we may learne, that such an end is fit for men that liue by robberie and spoile, and will take no honest trauell for their liuing, as fit (to vse the old Prouerbe) as a rope is for a theefe,

The notable women that are so commended by Melissa in this booke, were of the house of Ferrara, & many of them wor- Historie. thie this exquisite praise that is here giuen them. The first he speakes of is the Duchesse of Mantua, whose husband had a great victorie at Tare a riuer of Italie, against Charles the eight of France. Ariosto therefore compares her chastitie with this victorie, according to that excellent wise saying, it is a greater vertue to conquer ones owne affections then to win cities.

Beatrice wife to Lodwick Sforze of whom in the three and thirtieth booke there is more said, only here he notes (which was true indeed) that during his wiues life he liued more happy then he did after: for at her death began his miserie

Hercules of Este married Alfonso's daughter, of whom he had Alfonso Hippolito and Isabella.

Concerning Renata, Lewis the xij. king of France married the Duchesse of Brittain, and had by her issue this Renata, one of whose offspring was after matched into the house of Austria, so as that Dukedome is in great danger to be gotten by the Spaniards, now that line of France that came of the elder sister is extinguished. But this is beside the booke, onely I thought good to touch the particular stocke of some of these famous women, that my Author so much extolleth: as I haue my selfe read of some of them in Guicciardin and Frances Vlloa that wrote the life of Charles the fift in Italian: and thus I will note withall, that my author doth with great discretion commend three speciall vertues in the women of the house of Este. First deuotion, for he alledgeth that many of them entred into religion, and liued all their time deuoutly, which he praiseth chiefly, though in the last place, saying, I passe all thole that passe all these some deall. Next chastitie, Penelope in spending chaft her dayes, as worthie as Vlysses was of praise. Thirdly education of children, as is likewise touched before in another place.

The vertues that in women merit praise,

Are sober shewes without, chaft thoughts within.

True faith and due obediencie to their make,

And of their children honest care to take.

Bradamant, that after Melissas warning giuen vnto her of Atlantas illusion, yet is caried away with the sight of Allegorie. Rogero falsly represented vnto her: signifies by allegorie, that a Christian, hauing receiued ghostly counsell for the health of his soule, and is instructed in true belife, yet after, when the world and his owne grosse sence represents vnto him some contrarie imaginations, he thinks Melissa (that is, the preacher or instructor) doth but abuse him, and tell him a tale of Robinhood, and so they are caried into the diuels pallace, where they find nothing but shadows and illusions.

Where Orlando takes vp a firebrand, and killed one of the outlaws therewith, it alludes to two like matters in Qui. Allusion.

12. Met.

Ecce rapit medijs flagrantem Rhetus ab aris,
Primitium torrem dextraque a parte Charaxi,
Tempora perfringit.— And in the xij. of Virgil.
Cbuius ambustum torrem Corineus ab ara
Corripit, & venienti ebuso plagamque ferenti,
Occupat os flammis. Illi ingens barba reluxit
Nidoremque ambusta dedit.—

I iij



THE ARGVMENT.

*Agramant mustring of his men, doth misse
Two bands that by Orlando late were slaine:
Mandricard vowes to be reuenged of this,
But by the way he haps to entertaine
Dame Doralice, whose beantie was his blisse.
An Angell brings Renaldo and his traine
Vnseene there where the Pagan did encampe,
And sendeth discord to the Turkish campe.*



Among the fierce assaults,
and cruell bloes,
That France hath felt from
Affrick and from Spaine,
In which so many men fed
Wolues and Croes,
That were on both sides in
the battell slaine,
Although the French were
foiled by their foes,

That long they came not to the field againe,
Yet was this foile sore to the Pagans cost,
For diuers Lords and Princes that they lost.

2 So bloudie was the victorie they gate,
That scant this ioy did counteruaile that wo,
And if we may compare things done of late,
(Renownd *Alfons*) to things done long ago,
Rauennas fall by fortune or by fate,
In which your vertue great did flourish so,
To win the *field so bloudy and so hard,
With this of theirs may iustly be compar'd.

3 For when the souldiers of the Spanish band,
Whom then the Pope retained in his pay,
Had almost got the victory in hand,
The Frenchmen ready now to runne away,
Thou camst to succor with that noble band
Of valiant youths, that merited that day
The honor of the gilded spurre and hilt,
In recompence of blood so brauely spilt.

4 So didst thou bruse the *Akorns rich of gold,
So didst thou breake the yellow staffe and red,

So didst thou then the Flowre de luce vphold,
When as the captaine was in battell dead,
For which the Laurell crowne they ware of old,
By iust desert belongeth to thy head;
And Ciuill crowne, no lesse in honor precious,
For sauing vnto Rome her owne *Fabricius*.

5 *Colonna* nam'd a collum true indeed,
Vnto the state of Rome and Romane name,
Whom you by value tooke, and sau'd by meed,
By which more honor true and worthy fame,
Vnto your selfe you did procure and breed:
Then in the ouercomming all that came,
Fom Aragon, from Castill and Nauar,
For all their speares and new deuiled car.

6 Now though we all our liues and safeties ow,
To you that this great conquest did atchieue,
Yet our side did receiue so great a blow,
As scarce that ioy this sorrow did relieue:
And that the dames of France most plainly show,
Whom this so bloudie triumph still doth grieue,
Witnesse their widdows in their mourning gownes,
And watry eyes in villages and townes.

7 King *Lews* of France had need in time prepare,
For captains new to these vnruely bands,
That wickedly without all teare or care,
Of lawes of God, of nature, or of lands,
No sort, nor sex, nor age, nor order spare,
From force of their vnchast and bloudie hands.
Christis bodie in the sacrament they tare it,
To beare away the siluer plate that bare it.

*The laurel by the
ancient Romans
was giuen to him
that had slaine or
sau'd about 5000
in battell.
Ciuic corona
was his that sa-
ued a ciuizen of
Rome.*

*In this battell the
Spaniards deu-
sed to haue men
placed in carts,
& drawing them
violently on their
enemies, disor-
dered them.*

*Foys was slaine
in this battell.*

*In the 1. booke is
mentioned how
Charlemaine lost
the field at Bur-
dels, since which
time they kept
the town, and
dur'd not come to
the battell.
This *Alfons* was
Duke of Ferrara
of whose speakes
in the 3. booke, bro-
ther to *Hipolyta*.
Of this battell
see *Guicciardin*.*

*By the honour of
gilded spurre and
hilt, is understood
the knight's hood.
Pope *Iulio* gave
for his armes the
the with akornes
of gold.
The king of *A-*
lons colors was
yellow and red.*

*Guicciardin sets
downe the disor-
ders of the sould-
iers at the sack
of Rauenna.*

Wretched Rauenna better had it beene,
That thou the French shouldst not at all resist,
Thou mightst by Brescy haue bene warnd I weene,
Now thou a warning art for such as list,
To shun like losse by thy mishaps foreseene,
Not stubbornly in folly to persist;
So Rimini and Faens were preserued,
By marking in what sort thou hadst bene serued.

As now king *Lews* (I say) had need to send
New captains to supply their roomes were dead,
So then the Pagan Princes did intend
To see their men from sundry countries led,
And all disorders and defects to mend,
To point them captains that do lacke a head;
First then *Marsilio* all his souldiers veweth,
And *Agramant* next after him enseweth.

*The states of
Soyne are here
set down in these
musters.*

The chiefe of those are of *Marsilio* traine,
Are first the *Catalins*, men of great land,
And of the best and noblest blood of Spaine:
The next that do to them in order stand,
Are of *Nauar*, whose King was lately slaine
At *Burdels* by *Renaldos* valiant hand,
Marsilio sore laments the sory case,
And pointeth *Isolir* supply his place.

*If any be desirous
so vnderstand
these names, I
refer him to the
Table.*

Bulligant gouerneth those of *Lion*,
Grandonius for th' *Algarbys* doth prouide,
Marsilio brother called *Falsiron*,
Doth those of lesser *Castile* rule and guide:
Those of *Mallaga* do attend vpon
Madraffe, so doth *Ciuill* all beside,
There where as *Betus* water so abounds,
As all about it makes them fruitfull grounds.

Tessyra, *Baricond* and *Stordilan*,
Vnto the field do bring their forces in,
Granado this, *Maioirick* he hath tane,
The first to rule in *Lisbon* doth begin,
Where *Larbin* late was brought vnto his bane,
Tessyra vnto *Larbin* next of kin,
Those of *Gallicia* *Serpentine* doth guide,
Since valiant *Maricold* in battell dide.

Those of *Toledo* and of *Calatraue*,
Whom *Synagon* did leade not long ago,
Now *Matalist* their gouernment must haue,
Because that he was slaine by *Christen* fo:
Then *Pisardin* a man in battell braue,
With all the band of *Salamance* doth go,
With many other souldiers of *Pagenza*,
Of *Auila*, *Zamorra* and *Palenza*.

Ferraw.

Those of the court and of *Marsilio* traine,
With those of *Saragose*, *Ferraw* doth guide,
The chiefeest flowre, and the chiefe host of Spaine,
Well armd, well horst, well furnished beside,
With whom two kings that late had lost their raine,
Morgant and *Malsatise* did there abide,
And in the state of priuate men remained,
And were by him most friendly entertained.

The name of many a Duke, and Lord and Knight,
For breuitie I purpose to omit,
Such as were stout and hardie men in fight,
Such as were wise and politike in wit,
With th' Earle of *Sagunt* *Archidant* that hight,
Langiran, *Ammirant* and *Malagit*:
There was great *Fulliron*, *Marsilio* bastard,
That in that fight did shew himselfe no dastard.

After the Spanish hoast was viewd and past,
Before king *Agramant*, the next that came,
Was one that all the rest in stature past,
The gouernor and king of great *Orane*,
Then came a band, whose leader small time past,
At *Burdels* field was brought vnto his bane,
Lamenting that the king of *Garamant*
Was conquerd by the Ladie *Bradamant*.

Then came the third, and that a headlesse crew,
Whose captaine *Argust* was in battell slaine,
To this the second and the fourth, a new
King *Agramant* doth leaders fresh ordaine.
But few there were that for these roomes did sew,
So few sufficient men there did remaine;
Buraldo and *Argonio* for the best,
And *Ormida* he chose among the rest.

Then came *Brunello* with a chearlesse face,
And looke for shame still fixed on the ground,
For late he fell in *Agramants* disgrace,
Who doubted that his faith had not bene found,
Ere since he went vnto th' enchanted place,
Where to a tree dame *Bradamant* him bound,
Because he lost his ring, whose losse so greeued him,
That though he told him true, he not beleueed him.

But *Isolir* the brother of *Ferraw*,
That was the first that found him and vntide him,
Auoucht to *Agramant* the thing he saw,
How there by force some enemy had tide him,
So as the King his anger did withdraw,
Although he neuer after well could bide him,
But swore the next offence that he committed,
An halter should vnto his necke be fitted.

With those of *Esperie* came *Soridano*,
And *Doribon* did come with those of *Set*,
With those of *Nalomanie* *Prusano*,
King *Agricalt* *Amonios* charge did get,
Malabusers came with them of *Fisano*,
The rest doth *Finadure* in order set,
Ballaistro those that followd erst *Tardosco*,
Those of *Canaria* and of *Morocco*.

From *Mulga* and *Arzilla* others came,
The first their former captaine still doth hold,
Vnto the next the King a new doth name,
One *Corineus* a trustie man and bold,
Then *Balineffe* a man of euill fame,
Clarindo next of whom great deeds are told,
Sobrimo next a man of elder age,
In all the campe was none more wise and sage.

*Agramant in
ster of Africa
Note that the
word past is
used in these
sundry senses,
as I haue set
downe in the
Apologie.*

Brunello

*Of this look
in the beginning
of the next booke.*

Sobrimo

Those

22

Those of Getulia came with *Rimedont*,
 With *Maribaldo* those of *Bolga* went,
 And those of *Cofca* came with *Balmifront*,
 Their former Lord his life in battell spent:
 Then came the king of *Algier* **Rodomont*,
 That lately into *Turkie* had bene sent,
 To bring some new supplies of horse and men,
 And backe againe was new returnd as then.

23

In all the campe was not a man more stout,
 In all the campe was not a man more strong,
 Nor one of whom the French stood more in doubt,
 Was there the Turkish armie all among,
 In *Agramants* nor in *Marfilios* rout,
 Nor all the followers did to them belong.
 Beside he was (which made them dread him chiefe)
 The greatest enemy to our believe.

24

Then *Puliano* came, a gallant king,
 And *Agramants* cousin *Dardanell*,
 Whether some Owle did at their window sing,
 Or other lucklesse bird I cannot tell,
 As oft we see it is an vsuall thing,
 That some presage ones mischiefe shall fortell;
 But sure it was prefixt in heau'n on him,
 What time and hour next day they both should die.

25

Now all their bands were musterd sauing two,
 Those of *Noritia* and of *Tremisen*,
 King *Agramant* doth maruell what they do,
 He knowes not where to heare of them nor when:
 Now as he was dispatching hereunto
 Some messenger, behold one of the men,
 That seru'd the king of *Tremisen*, in haile
 Came and discouerd all that had bene past.

26

Sir king (quoth he) by fortune and ill chance,
 The noble kings *Alfred* and *Manilard*,
 Happend to meet a cruell knight of France,
 While with their bands they traueled hitherward,
 He ouerthrew them both, (oh hard mischance)
 And kild, and spoild, and draue away their guard,
 And sure (quoth he) I thinke his force is such,
 To all your campe he would haue done as much.

27

Among the rest that to this tale gaue eare,
 There was a Prince that late from *Affricke* came,
 To whom king *Agramant* great loue did beare,
 And *Mandricardo* was the Princes name,
 His heart was stout, and far from any feare,
 His bodie strong and able to the same,
 And that which greatest glorie did him yeeld,
 He had in *Sorie* conquerd *Hectors* sheeld.

28

Now that the messenger his tale had done,
 Which made the hearers hearts for sorrow cold,
 This valiant Prince king *Agrikanes* sonne,
 Straight was resolu'd (with heart and courage bold,
 That to win praise no paine did euer shonne,
 Although his purpose secret he de did hold,
 To be reuenged on this bloodie knight,
 That had to manie flaine and put to flight.

29

He askt the messenger what cloths he ware,
 And in what costliour garments he was clad:
 Blacke (quoth the messenger) his rayments are,
 No plume nor brauerie his helmet had:
 And true it was, *Orlandos* inward care,
 That made his heart so sorrowfull and sad,
 Cauld that his armour and his open shoes,
 Had like resemblance of his inward woes.

30

Marfilio had before a day or twaine,
 Giu'n vnto *Mandricard* a gallant steed,
 His colour bay, but blacke his taile and maine,
 Of *Frizland* was the dame that did him breed,
 The Sier was a villan braue of Spaine: (speed,
 On this braue beast this braue man mounts with
 Swearing he will not to the campe turne backe,
 Till he had found the champion all in blacke.

Looke hereof in
 the Allusion.

A race of horses
 in Spaine, called
 villan di Spagna
 inferior to the
 Ginet.

31

He meetes the sillie people in the way,
 Halting, or maynd, or weeping for their friends,
 Their woofull lookes, their fearfull hearts bewray,
 (Weeping in such a losse but small amends)
 But when he came where the dead bodies lay,
 In vewing of their wounds some time he spends,
 As witnesses of his strong hand that gaue them,
 Him he enuies, and pities them that haue them.

32

Eu'n as a Wolfe, by pinching famine led,
 That in the field a carren beast doth find,
 On which before the dogs and rau'ns haue fed,
 And nothing left but hornes and bones behind,
 Stands still, and gazeth on the carkasse dead:
 So at this sight the Pagan Prince repind,
 And curseth oft, and calls himselte a beast,
 For comming tardie to so rich a feast.

Simile.

33

But when the mourning knight not here he found,
 From thence he traueled many a wearie mile,
 Vntill he found a meadow compast round,
 With running streames that almost made an Ile,
 Saue one small entrance left of solid ground,
 Which guarded was with armed men that while,
 Of whom the Pagan asketh why they stand,
 To guard the place with weapons in their hand.

34

Their captaine viewing well his braue attire,
 Doth thinke he was a man of great regard,
 And said king *Stordilano* did then hire,
 Into these parts his daughter deare to guard,
 Espou'd to king of *Sarza* by her Sire,
 Who shortly for the marriage prepar'd:
 And here (quoth he) we do this passage keepe,
 That none may trouble her while she doth sleepe.

Dorothy.

35

To morrow to the campe we minde to go,
 Where she vnto her father shall be brought,
 Who meanes on *Rodomont* her to bestow,
 By whom this noble match is greatly sought.
 Now when the captaine had him answerd so,
 This Prince that setteth all the world at nought,
 Why then (quoth he) this maid belike is faire,
 I pray thee cause her hither to repaire.

Rodomont is
 a noble Turke, of
 whom much en-
 d is in the book
 he was king of
 Algier, & a cal-
 phourme A. A.
 of the Sar-
 king.

Before Canto 12.
 the latter end.

Mandricard.

36

My hast is great, but were it greater far,
Yet would I stay to see a prettie maid:
Alas you misse your marke, your aime doth arr,
(Gentle sir foole) to him the captaine said:
Thus first they gan with bitter words to iar,
And then from blowes but little time they staid,
For straight the Prince did set his speare in rest,
And smot therewith the captaine through the brest.

37

And straightwayes he recovered his speare,
And at the next that came therewith doth runne,
For why none other weapon he did weare,
Since he the Troian *Hectors* armor wonne,
At what time he most solemnly did sweare,
To win the sword worne by *Traianos* sonne,
Cald *Durindan*, a blade of temper rare,
That *Hector* erst, and now *Orlando* bare.

38

Great was the force of this Tartarian knight,
That with his speare and weapon none beside,
Durst with so many ioynd together fight:
Yet sets he spurs to horse, and stoutly cride,
Where is a man that dare withstand my might?
Who dares forbid me where I list to ride?
And with that speare himselfe he so besturd,
That small preuaile against him bill or sword.

39

But when his speare in peeces burst he saw,
The trunchen huge he takes in both his hands,
His blowes were such, not blood but life to draw,
All dead or fled, not one his force withstands:
As *Ebrev Samson* with the *Asses* iaw,
Did heape on heaps the proud *Philisten* bands,
So *Mandricard* smote oft with so great force,
As one stroke kild both horsman and his horse.

Simile.

40

Now though they tooke this thing in high disdain,
To be thus conquerd with a broken sticke,
Yet when they learned had vnto their paine,
It was in vaine against the wall to kicke,
Though vnreuenged lie their fellows slaine,
They leaue the dead, rather then loose the quick:
But he so eager was to kill and slay,
That scant he sufferd one to scape away.

41

And as the reeds in marishes and lakes,
Dride with the sunne, or stubble in the field,
When as by hap the fire among it takes,
May not it selfe, against that furie sheeld;
Eu'n so this crew, but small resistance makes,
And eu'n of force is driu'n at last to yeeld,
And leaue her vndefended to their shame,
For whose defence they from *Granata* came.

Simile.

Quid. Vix. laues
p. 101. a. de m. p. u.
ag. 101. m. p. u.

42

Now when the passage open did appeare,
He hastens in the Ladie faire to see,
Whom he doth finde in sad and mourning cheare,
And leaning of her head against a tree,
All downe her cheekes ran streames of cristall cleare
She makes such mone as greater could not be,
And in her countenance was plainly showne,
Great griefe for others harmes, feare of her owne

43

Her feare increast when as he nearer drew,
With visage sterne and all with blood distained,
The cries were great of her and of her crew,
That to their gods of their ill haps complained,
For why, beside the guard whom late he slew,
She had, that priuatly with her remained,
Laund'rers and nurses, playfellowes and teachers,
With leard *Phisitions*, and heathnish *Preachers*.

44

Now when the Pagan Prince saw that faire face,
Whose fairer was not to be found in Spaine,
He thinks if weeping giue her such a grace,
What will she proue when she shall smile againe?
He deemeth *Paradise* not like this place,
And of his victorie he seekes this gaine,
To haue his prisoner suffer him to wooe her,
And yeeld himselfe a prisoner vnto her.

45

Howbe't he maketh her against her minde,
Vpon her ambling nagge with him to ride,
Her masters, maides, and seruants left behind,
And promisd them he will for her prouide,
He will be seruitor, and nurse, and hind,
And playfellow, and gouernor, and guide,
Adew my friends (quoth he) I you enlarge,
For of your Mistres I will take the charge.

46

The wofull folke all mourning part away,
With scalding sighes, cold hearts and watric eyes,
And one vnto another thus they say,
How deepe reuenge will her stout spouse deuise,
How will he rage to leese so faire a pray?
Oh that he had bene at this enterprise,
No doubt but he wold quickly wreak this slaughter
And bring againe king *Stordilanos* daughter.

47

Of this faire pray the Prince was well apaid,
Which fortune gate him ioynd to his might,
And now it seemd his hast was well alaid,
That late he made to meete the mourning knight,
Before he rode in post, but now he staid,
Bethinking where to rest himselfe that night,
To finde a place was now his whole desire,
Where he might quench his lately kindled fire.

48

And first to comfort and asswage the paine,
Of Ladie *Doralyce* (so was her name)
He frames a tale and most thereof doth faine,
And sweares that he allured by her fame,
Had purposely forsooke his home and raigne,
And for her loue into these quarters came,
Not that he ought to France and Spaine that durie,
But onely to the beames of her rare beautie.

Mandricard
wound Duke

49

If loue deserueth loue (quoth he) then I,
Deserue your liking that haue lou'd you long,
If stocke you do esteeme, my stocke is hie,
Sith I am sonne to *Agrican* the strong,
If state may stand in steed, who can denie,
To God alone our homage doth belong?
If valew in your choise be of behoofe,
I thinke this day thereof I haue showd prooffe.

These

50

These words and such as loue had then him taught,
Who lent him eloquence to serue his turne,
So sweetly in her tender fancie wrought,
That in a little while she ceast to mourne,
And first her feare affwag'd, and then her thought,
A pleasing looke doth to her eye returne,
By which the Prince (in loue no nouice) guesst,
That she ere long would grant him his request.

51

Now doth the night approach, and *Phæbus* face
In Ocean sea begins it selfe to hide,
The which did cause them somewhat mend their pace
And on their way with greater speed to ride:
And now they traueled had but little space,
When first a smoke and then a light they spide,
Then came they where they heard the bandogs bark
When as the aire was now obscure and dark.

52

A few poore cotages where heardmen dwell,
They find, and there together they allight,
The houses poore, but such as very well
Might serue them to repose them for a night,
Their fare was meane, fit hunger to expell,
To which the heardmen friendly them inuite,
As curtesie oft times in simple bowres
Is found as great as in the stately towres.

53

But after supper what did passe betweene
Dame *Doralice* and *Agricane's* haire,
May not be told, because it was not scene,
But they may guesse, that haue with Ladies faire
By night alone in place conuenient beene,
Where to disturbe them no man did reaire,
I doubt he did not so his passion bridle,
To let so faire a dame lie by him idle.

54

But sure I am when day light did appeare,
They both arose well pleasd and well content,
And thankt the heardmen for their friendly cheare,
And so from thence they both together went,
Vntill they came vnto a riuer cleare,
Before the forenoone of the day was spent,
And riding downe along the riuer side,
Two horsemen with a damsell they espide.

55

But let them go, for why my high conceat
Forbiddeth me long in one path to tread,
And calms me back of *Agramant* to treat,
Who being newly troubled in his head,
To heare there were from England succors great,
Vnder the conduct of *Renaldo* led,
To counsell cald the Princes sage and wise,
Some remedie for mischiefs to deuise.

56

They all conclude the next ensuing day,
With scaling ladders on the wals to mount,
Lest dangers new be bred by long delay,
And succors fresh hinder their first account:
Thus *Agramant*, thus doth *Marsilio* say,
Sobrin sage, and cruell *Rodomont*,
Who to destroy Paris alone doth threate,
And to pull downe the sacred *Romane* seate.

57

And to this end they straight prouide in hast,
Innumerable ladders apt to scale,
With timber towres vpon great wheelles so plast,
As that they may approch the citie wall,
From whence they may broade bridges safely cast,
And passe without all ieopardie to fall,
And throw their balls compact of fury matter,
Then haue they rams, the walls to bruse and batter.

58

But *Charles*, the day that went before that day,
The *Painims* meant to do their worst and best,
Did cause the Priests and Friers masse to say,
Did cause the people all to be confest,
And humbly prostrate vnto God to pray,
To saue and pittie them that were oppressd,
And then they all recei'd in Christen vnion,
The blessed sacrament, that high communion.

59

Himselfe with Lords and Barons of great fame,
(An humble feare of God in him so wrought)
In person publikly performes the same,
And by example others duties taught,
And calling on our Sauours blessed name,
O Lord (said he) though I my selfe be nought,
Let not my sinne, my wickednesse and ill,
Moue thee thy faithfull peoples blood to spill.

*The example of
the Prince doth
much with the
people.
Charles his prayer*

60

And if it be thy sacred will (O God)
To punish vs for our so great transgression,
And make vs feeble thy hand and heavy rod,
At least defer this plague and iust oppression,
That by thy foes we be not ouertrod,
We that of thy true faith do make profession,
Lest they blaspheme thy name (we ouerthrowne)
And say thou couldest not defend thine owne.

61

So shall our fall make them thy law despise,
So shall their wicked number still increase,
So shall the powre of Babylon arise,
So shall thy sacraments and Gospell cease,
Looke on this people Lord with gracious eyes,
Turne foiles and warres to victories and peace,
That when these dogs and runnegates be daunted,
Thy tombe and temple may be dayly haunted.

62

Alas our merits are of none effect,
To pay a portion of our grievous debt,
Except thy grace our weaknesse so protect,
That our misdeeds out of thy sight be set,
Lord heale our soules with grievous vice infect,
Forgiue our faults, our errors all forget,
And though our sinnes the sands in number passe,
Yet let thy mercies greatnesse them surpasse.

63

Thus praid the Prince most sorowfull and sad,
With humblenesse of heart and great contrition,
And to this prayre he then a vow doth ad,
Well suting to his state and high condition.
Nor small effect these vowes and prayers had,
For presently without all intermission,
His Angell good vp to our Sauour mounted,
And there his vowes and prayers all recounted.

K

*Virgil. Etiam
inma procul
collatus cul-
ma sumant.*

Virgil.

*Virgil. Etiam
inma procul
collatus cul-
ma sumant.*

Virgil.

64

And thousand pray'rs alike at that same time,
By messengers alike to God were brought,
When to the goodnesse, and the powre diuine,
That neuer shall, nor neuer vaine was sought,
His gracious care doth to their prayre incline,
Those who he made, and who he deare had bought:
Then to the Angell *Michael* straight he beckned,
Who not a little of his calling reckned.

65

And thus he said, go thither straight in post,
Where now in Picardie the Christens land,
And so to Paris guide that English host,
Let not their foes their coming vnderstand,
In this attempt shall Silence helpe you most,
Will him this enterprize to take in hand,
This done, then see you find dame *Discord* out,
And will her halt vnto the Pagan rout.

66

And charge her there according to her skill,
Among the best to sow such ioule dissension,
That they may one the other wound and kill,
And fill their camp with brauls and with contention:
Let some men like their entertainment ill,
And grudge because they haue no bigger pension,
And let them all so vary out of measure,
That they may do their Prince but little pleasure.

67

The blessed Angell not a word replies,
But doth his makers holy will obey,
Forthwith eu'n in a moment downe he flies,
And where he goes the clouds do fleet away:
But by the way he thinks and doth deuise,
Of eu'ry place where Silence find he may,
Though he an Angell were he could not tell,
Where this same enemy of speech doth dwell.

68

At last he fully doth himselfe perswade,
To find him in some houses of deuotion,
That first for life monasticall were made,
Where godly men, despisers of promotion,
Dwell faire from all this worldly wicked trade,
With minds abhorring flesh and fleshly motion,
Where idle words should counted be a shame,
And where on eu'ry wall they write his name.

69

Wherefore into an Abbey he doth go,
And makes no question Silence there to find,
And Peace and Charitie, and Loue also,
And lowly thoughts, and well contented mind:
But soone he was aware it was not so,
All contrary their humors were inclin'd,
For Silence in that Abbey doth not host,
His name was onely writ vpon a post.

70

*This reproofe is
sufficient in most of
them, & hath ben
sharply punished
in our Reigne.*

Not Quietnesse, nor Humblenesse, nor Peace,
Nor Charitie, nor godly loue was here,
They were sometimes, but now those times do cease,
Now Couetise, and Ease and Belly cheare,
Pride, Enuie, louth, and Anger so increase,
That Silence banisht is and comes not neare.
With wonder great the Angell them doth vew,
And findeth *Discord* in this curd crew.

71

Her whom the heau'nly King did will him find,
Next after Silence, her he findeth first,
To seeke her out in hell he had assign'd,
Among the spirits damned and accurst,
It sore did grieue his pure vnspotted mind,
Where he expected best, to find them worst,
It seemd to him a thing vncouth and strange,
In sacred place to find to great a change.

72

He knew her by her weed of sundry hew,
All patcht with infinite vnequall lists,
Her skin in sundry places naked vew
At diuers rents and cuts, he may that lists:
Her haire was gray, and red, and blacke and blew,
And hard, and lost, in laces some she twists,
Some hangeth downe, vpriight some standeth string,
As if each haire with other had bene squaring.

73

Her lap was full of writs and of citations,
Of processe, of actions and arrests,
Of bills, of answers, and of replications,
In courts of Delegats, and of Requests,
To grieue the simple sort with great vexations:
She had resorting to her as her guests,
Attending on her circuits and her iourneys,
Scriu'ners and clerks, and lawyers and attorneys.

74

The Angell calleth her, and bids her go,
Vnto the Turks as fast as she can hie,
Among their kings such seeds of strife to sow,
As one of them may cause the tother die.
Then he demaundeth her if she do know,
Within what place Silence doth vse to lie,
He thought that she that traueled much about,
In stirring strife might hap to find him out.

75

I cannot call to mind (quoth she) as yet,
That I haue talkt with Silence any time,
I heare them talke of him, and praise his wit,
And secretnesse to couer any crime;
But my companion *Fraud* can serue you fir,
For she hath kept him companie sometime,
And which was *Fraud* she pointeth with her finger,
Then hence she hies and doth no longer linger.

76

Fraud shewd in comely clothes a louely looke,
An humble cast of eye, a sober pace,
And so sweet speech, a man might her haue tooke,
For him that said, haile *Marie* full of grace,
But all the rest deformedly did looke,
Full of all filthinesse, and foule disgrace,
Hid vnder long large garments that she ware,
Close vnder which a poisond knife she bare.

77

The Angell asketh her if she do know
The place where Silence makes his habitation.
Forsooth (quoth *Fraud*, he dwelled long ago
With the wise sages of the Greekish nation,
Archytas and *Pythagoras* (I trow)
That chiefe to vertue had their inclination,
And afterward he spent these latter yeers
With *Carmel* and with *Saint Bennet* friers.

But

78

But since these old Philosophers did faile,
And these new saints their saintlike life did change,
He sought new places for his most auaille,
And secret and vncertaine he doth range:
Sometime with thecues that true men do assaile,
Sometime with louers that delight in change,
Sometime with traitors he doth bide, and furdur,
I saw him late with one that did a murder.

79

With clippers and with coyners he doth stay,
Sometime in secret dens and caues obscure,
And oft he changeth places day by day,
For long he cannot in a place endure.
But I can tell you one most ready way,
Where you to find him out shall be most sure,
G^o where as Sleepe doth dwell, and out of doubt,
At midnight you shall find him thereabout.

80

Though Fraud by custome vse to lie and faine,
Yet was this tale so euidently trew,
The Angell now no longer doth remaine,
But with his golden wings away he flew
To Arabie, where in a country plaine,
Far from all villages and cities vew,
There lieth a vale with woods so ouergrowne,
As scarce at noone the day light there is showne.

81

Amid this darke thicke wood, there is a caue,
Whose entrance is with luie ouerspread,
They haue no light within, nor none they craue,
Here Sleepe doth couch his euer drowfie head,
And Slouth lies by, that seems the gout to haue,
And Idleneffe, not so well taught as fed,
They point Forgetfulnesse the gate to keepe,
That none come in nor out to hinder Sleepe.

82

She knowes no names of men, nor none will learne,
Their messages she list not vnderstand,
She knowes no businesse doth her concerne,
There sentinell is Silence to this band,
And vnto those he comming doth discerne,
To come no neare he beckens with his hand,
He treadeth soft, his shoes are made of felt,
His garment short, and girded with a belt.

83

To him the Angell goth, and in his eare
He tels him thus, Iehouah bids you guide
Renaldo, with the succors he doth beare,
To Paris walls, so as they be not spide,
Nor let the Pagans once suspect or feare
Their comming, nor for it at all prouide,
And let them heare no incling of these foes,
Vntill they find their force and teele their bloes.

84

No answer Silence made, but with his head
He made a signe, as who should say he would,
And with the Angell straight himselfe he sped,
In greater hast then can be thought or told,
To Picardie, from whence the Angell led,
That present day the bands of souldiers bold,
To Paris walls, an hundred miles asunder,
Yet no man was aware it was a wonder.

85

And Silence still surueyeth all the rout,
Before, beside, behind, with great regard,
And with a cloud doth compasse them about,
No man of them was seene, no noise was heard,
Then walketh he among the Pagans leout,
And vnto them that kept their watch and ward,
And brought them somewhat (what I do not find)
That made them for the time both deafe and blind.

86

Now while *Renaldo* came with so great hast,
As well it seemd an Angell did him guide,
And as he went, with so great silence past,
As by his foes his comming was not spide:
King *Agramant* had now his footmen plait
By Paris walls, fast by the ditches side,
He meanes the citie to assaile that day,
On eu'ry side by all the meanes he may.

87

He that would take vpon him to declare,
Of *Agramant* as host the certaine number,
That to destroy this Citie did prepare,
Shall seeme himselfe as frutelesly to cumber,
As if he told what flowres in Hyble are,
What fish in sea, what water drops in Humber,
What starres in skie at midnight when it couers,
The vnchast acts of close and secret louers.

88

The larum bell in eu'ry place doth ring,
About the towne with strange disorderd sound,
In Churches Mattens they do say and sing,
Some kneeling down, some groueling in y^e ground,
If gold were vnto God so gratefull thing,
As fond men think, no doubt there would be found,
Enough in this extremitie, that would
Make all the taints new images of gold.

89

There might you see godly old men and iust,
Lamenting that their liues so long did last,
And call them happie that were laid in dust,
And buried many yeares and ages past;
But gallant youths, detoid of all mistrust,
Not with these perils any whit agast,
Whom enemies nor engines none appalls,
Go to defend right manfully the walls.

90

Bold Barons, Earles and Dukes of great degree,
With souldiers, forreiners, and of the towne,
Did come to *Charles*, and praid him to agree,
To let them out, and let the drawbridge downe:
Glad was king *Charles* their forward minds to see,
To fight for Christs religion and his crowne,
But yet as then he doth not thinke it best,
In this one point to grant them their request.

91

He rather thinks it better them to place,
The forces of the fierce assault to breake,
With distant bands a great or little space,
According as the wall was strong or weake:
Himselfe with chearfull vigor in his face,
Vnto them all most curteously doth speake,
These he doth comfort, them he doth encourage,
And fill the stout with hope, the faint with courage.

K ij

*He returns to
Renaldo in the
16 Cant. 24. lias.*

*Virg. Otterque
quatuorque beas.*

The situation of
Paris.

92
Faire Paris lieth in a pleasant plaine,
Eu'n in the nauell, rather in the hart
Of France, the riuer cuts the same in twaine,
And makes an Iland of the better part,
The rest that doth in greatnesse more containe,
A ditch and wall doth from the plaine depart,
King *Agramant* assaults the Westerne side,
As hauing Westward gotten all beside.

93
Marfilius with the warlike bands of Spaine,
He points to keepe the field in armed ranks,
Sobrinio sage and those with him remaine,
Are placed vpon Sequans fruitfull banks.
Himselfe with an innumerable traine,
With ladders, bridges, fagots, barres and planks,
Doth thinke to fill the ditch and make it leuell,
And at the walles do keepe vnruely reuell.

94
What should I speake of *Rodomont* most fell,
Blaspheming God, not onely scorning men,
That knew to vie a glittering blade so well,
As I so well know not to vie my pen:
His deeds alone would aske a day to tell,
That in few houres he did performe as then:
As for the rest they came like swarmes of flies,
And filld the aire with shouts and hideous cries.

A description of
the assault of a
towne well de-
fended.

95
And they no lesse provided are within,
With rampers, bulwarks, and with double dikes,
And where their foes to climbe do once begin,
They push them down with bills, with stauies & pikes:
If one be kild, another steppeth in,
No man his place for feare of hurt mislikes, (water,
Some throw down bricks, some stones, some scalding
And grieve them much with all, most with the later.

96
Some throw among them newly slacked lime,
That burneth most when most it seems to quench,
With pots of brimstone, pitch and turpentine,
Annoying them with heate, and smoke, and stench,
The rest are still employd, and leese no time,
With wreathed stakes to fortifie the trench:
Thus all within were busie, all without,
On both sides fortune standing still in doubt.

97
The while the king of Sarza brought about
His owne and men of diuers other lands,
Himselfe to shew his might and courage stout,
That made him counted valiant of his hands,
From *Cupids* campe was not excluded out,
But rather sely subiect to such bands,
A Lion geuls he giues in loftie banner,
A Ladie bridling him in lowly manner.

Rodomonts de-
scrip-
tion.

98
So by the beast he meant his owne fierce mind,
And by the dame his mistris faire was ment,
The bridle was to shew how loue could bind
His loftie heart, and bow it to her bent.
He little knew, that shewd himselfe so kind,
How of his purchase others tooke the rent:
He knew not *Mandricard* did pleade possession,
Of her to whom he makes this kind profession.

99

Straight to the wals are thousand ladders plapt,
With double ranks that two may climbe at once,
And vp the souldiers get on them in hast,
One shoulders vp another for the nonce:
He that goes slow, and he that climbs too fast,
Are each in perill of a broken sconce.
Their enemies assailing still the hier,
Their captains those that linger or retier.

100

Thus eu'ry one do clammer vp the wall,
For value some, and other some for feare,
And some are slaine, and some are made to fall,
Repenting late that euer they came there:
Fierce *Rodomont* alone (contemning all)
No paine, no place for perill doth forbear,
But rusheth on, more desprately then stonily,
Blaspheming God while others pray deuoutly.

101

A paire of curats passing hard he ware,
Made of an vgly Dragons scaly skin,
This armour his great auncestor first bare,
He that to build Babel did first begin:
(A towre whose height shold with the clouds cōpare)
And thought from God the rule of heau'n to win:
And to the same effect likewise he made,
Of passing prooffe an helmet, shield and blade.

102

Thus *Rodomont* that came of *Nimrods* kind,
As proud and irreligious as was he,
Regardeth not a passage safe to find,
Or where the wall might weakest guarded be,
But with a heart to mischief all inclin'd,
Where he the same defended best doth see,
(Protected with his shield) he makes no bones,
To go through fire and water, darts and stones.

103

When once vpon the battlement he was,
Where all the wall was broade and largely paued,
How did he slay the Christens then alas,
How fierce he vnto them himselfe behaued:
His blade doth pierce their plates of Steele and bras,
Al were not priests whose crowns that day were sha-
He kild alone so many as their blood (ued,
Did cause the ditch to fill with crimson flood.

104

Beside the baser sort, these men of name,
At this same first conflict by him were slaine,
Orgetto Duke, that late from Flanders came,
Arnold and *Hugo*, two of *Charles* his traine,
And *Lews* that gouern'd Prouence with great fame,
Walter and *Denis*, *Hawnce* of Satallaine,
Some were thrust through, some had (past all releefe)
Their helmets and their heads clou'n to the teeth.

105

And some by force from off the wall he cast,
Among the which was one *Moschino* hight,
That by his will would neuer water tast,
But still in wine did put his whole delight:
But lo his lucke was to be drown'd at last,
Within this dirtie dish for further spite,
And he that neuer water could abide
In all his life, now here in water dide.

Now

Thus while that Rodomont did kill and slay,
All that he found vpon the vtmost wall,
His band of men the while had found the way,
To passe the ditch and so the wall to scale.
But now within another dike there lay,
The sight whereof their courage did appall,
For why the Christens sent such store of shot,
As this same place did seeme to them too hot.

The dike was drie, the bottome eu'n and plaine,
Both sides were steep, but steepest next the towne,
At this the souldiers curtesie do straine,
Which of them first shall venter to go downe,
Within the citizens had made a traine,
With labour great and cost of many a crowne,
That when the ditch with armed men was filled,
Whether at and smother they should all be killed.

It cubits had in bredth thirte ten and more,
And in the bottome there were closely plait,
Barrels of pitch, brimstone, and oyle good store,
All matter quicke to kindle, long to last.
The captaine led them all the way before,
And thousand souldiers followd them as fast,
But Rodomont as though he had had wings,
Quite ore the dike like to a grewnd he springs.

In Mandricardo that after his great exploits atchieued in other countries, is still ready to hazard his person for more honor, may be obserued, that ambition is as vn-satiabie as any other humour of man. In his wooing of Doralice, we may see how loue makes men many times, not onely valiant, but eloquent. In the assaulting and defending of Paris, is set downe what sundry accidents happen when such populous cities come to so great extremitie. In Charles that first makes his prayers to God, and after makes all prouident preparation for defence of the towne, we see a liuely patterne of an excellent and worthy Prince, both for deuotion and policie.

Concerning the historie, I haue quoted many things in the margent, as the straightnesse of roome would permit, that the simplest reader may vnderstand what is meant by the fourth staffe: here onely I will ad a word of Rauenna, referring the reader that is desirous to be better informed hereof, to Guicciardin, who sets it downe at large. Rauenna was besieged by the French vnder the conduct of one Foix, a notable captaine of so young a man. The Spaniards and Pope Iulio tooke vpon them to defend it, but in the heat of that assault Foix was slaine: yet the souldiers either by force or by parlee gat into the towne, and being within, they committed the notablest outrages that haue bene heard of, neither abstaining from rapes nor sacriledge. Concerning the Catalyns, who he nameth formost in the musters, they are the chiefe house in all Spaine: and it is to be noted, that Spaine is deuided into siue kingdomes, Nauar, Castill, Catalogna (which is now called Aragon) Portugall, and Granata. For Galicia is counted none, because it had a king but a while. The rest of the strange names you may find in the table.

In the description of Discord and Fraud, and finding Silence in the house of sleep, being long since banished from philosophers and diuines: the allegorie is so plain, as it were time lost to spend time to expound it, because it expounds it selfe so plainly: only I will obserue one thing, in which mine Author is thought to keep an excellent decorum. For, making Discord and Fraud of the feminine gender, he still makes Silence the masculine; as the like pretie conceit is in our Cambridge Comedie Pedantius, (at which I remember the noble Earle of Essex that now is, was present) where the Pedantius himselfe, examining the Gramaticall instruction of this verse: *Cædant arma togæ, concedat laurea linguæ*, vpon speciall consideration of the two last words; taught his scholler Parillus, that *laurea, lingua sunt vtraque femininæ generis, sed lingua potissimum*, and so consequently silence might not by any meanes haue bene of the feminine gender.

In Mandricardos rape of Doralice, he alludes evidently to a notable villany in the like kind, done by Cæsar Borgia son to Pope Alexander the sixt. For one Caraccio a captaine of Venice, hauing bene lately contracted to a gentlewoman of good account, she came with an honorable train neare to a citie called Cesenna in Romagna: here Borgia with a band of men, set vpon her company, and took her away by force, and neither by threats nor intreatie of the Venecian Ambassador would restore her again: the allusion holds in many parts, as first where he saith in the 29. staff. That Marfilius had giuen Mandricardo an horse.

Of colour bay, but blacke the taile and maine,
Of Frizland was the mare that did him breed,
The fier was a villan braue of Spaine.

This notes Borgia, whose father was a Spaniard, his mother a Flemming, and he a mungrel bastard. In the one antithetish staffe, in the simile of the Wolfe, he noteth his crueltie: in the eight and fortieth staffe where he saith,

If itate may stand instead, who can denie, Onely to God our homage doth belong;

In that he alludes plainly to the Pope that is reputed Christs Vicar on earth.

And being placed on the inner side,
Armd and vnarmed men to him are like,
No steele there was his forces could abide,
Death followth eu'rie blow that he doth strike:
Which when a while to their great cost they tride,
They do of force abandon quite the dike,
He follows slaying without all remorse,
So sharpe his sword, so furious is his force.

But when the souldiers thought the banke to mount,
With scaling ladders, as they did the wall,
They found themselves deceiu'd of their account,
For straight the fier works were kindled all,
Whose sudden flames the clouds theselues surmount
Which sight the Pagans greatly did appall;
And to increase their terror and their wonder,
It made a noise like to continuall thunder.

The Christens do reioyce at this reliefe,
To see their practise had succeeded well:
The Pagans plagu'd, with heat, and smother chiefe,
In great dispaire do rore aloud and yell:
Thus twixt the noise of fier and cries of grieffe,
They make an harmonie most meete for hell.
And here I meane to leaue them in the fire,
For to repose my selfe I now desire.

Moral.

Historie.

Allegorie.

Allusion.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Paris is assailed on eu'ie part,
By those of Affricke, and by those of Spaine:
From Logestill Astolfo doth depart,
And takes Calligoran in his owne traine,
Then slew Orillo, that by Magicke art
Renin'd, when by the brothers he was slaine:
Stout Sansonet Astolfo kind doth vse,
But Gryphyn of his mistres beares ill news.*

Iwinne the field against
our armed foes,
Is counted honorable anie
wayes,
Although it be with poli-
cie or blowes,
Yet bloodie conquests stain
the Captaines praise,
But chiefest honour doth
belong to those,
Whom Fortune to such height of hap doth raise,
To haue their foe supprest and ouerthrowne,
With little losse and damage of their owne.

Such was the victorie that you then gaine,
O stout Hyppolito you conquerd so,
When the Venetian Nauie had obtained,
With armed vessels all the streame of Poë,
Your policie and vantage them constrained,
With losse inestimable thence to go:
Their marriners and souldiers all destroying,
Our marriners and souldiers not annoying.

The Pagan Rodomont did want this skill,
That forst ten thousand men the trench to enter,
By his commandment fore against their will,
Vpon so perillous a place to venter,
Where straight the smother doth their bodies kill,
And send their sinfull soules beneath the center,
Himselfe in safetie sees them there a dying,
Still swearing, cursing, heau'n it selfe defying.

Now Agramant an hot assault and fearece,
Gauë where he thought the same was lest expected

He striues the wals to batter, break and pearce
With engins strong, and rams thereto erected:
Those kings whole names I did before rehearse,
Brought men, some stout, & some with fear infected,
And such as rather wish to stand aloofe,
Then weare a corslet of the surest prooffe.

But Agramant herein was much deceaued,
For where he thought them weake and vnprepared,
He found that manfully he was receaued,
And that the king himselfe the place did guard,
With thousands more readie to be bereaued
Of life and limbe, and such as nought regard,
Before that they would take so great disgrace,
As in their masters fight to leese their place.

But here I cease vntill another time,
To tell of these assaults the hard successe,
Of damage like to both sides: now my rime
Vnto the English Duke I must addresse,
Astolfo sonne of Oton whom sometime,
Alcynas witchcraft held in great distresse,
Who like another Cyrcë men transformed,
To trees, to beasts, and foules of shapes deformed.

You heard before how all her strange deceits,
Melyssa lage did with the ring discouer,
And how she gaue them also good receits,
As made them all their former shapes recouer,
How after hauing scaped all their sleights,
They did no longer in such fancies bouer,
But to be surely able to resist her,
They fled vnto her vertuous elder sister.

K iij

Charls.

In the xvi book.
in the xvi. ff.

8

Where when they had with comfort great remained,
Desirous to their countries to retire,
They asked leaue of her, and leaue obtained,
Of her that neuer hinders iust desire:
But er they went she frendly them constrained,
With precious gifts to be endowed by her,
Such gifts as were of precious price indeed,
And all their liues should stand them all in steed.

9

Affaire

But chiefly to this English Duke she gaue,
Of secret skill a little written booke,
Containing many a precept wise and graue,
The which of her most thankfully he tooke;
These teach a man from charmes himselfe to saue,
That in the same aduisedly doth looke,
And that to find them out he may be able,
The booke had in the end a perfit table.

10

Beside this booke on him she doth bestow,
Another gift of as great price and more,
A home in which if he do once but blow,
The noise thereof shall trouble men so sore,
That all both stout and faint shall flie therefro,
So strange a noise was neuer heard before;
When to the Duke these rare gifts were imparted,
He humble tooke his leaue and thence departed.

11

Looke in the Al-
legorie.

And least *Alecyna* should by force attempt,
To bring him backe or worke him some disease,
Andronica was with a nauie sent,
To wate him safe till he were past those seas,
And vertuous *Sophrosina* with him went,
To see him passe with safetie and with ease,
So good a conducer, so sure a guide,
As was not found in all the world beside.

12

And thus she saild along that Indian shore,
And sees and leeteth sight of sundrie Iles,
Those called fortunate and others more,
That distant are, some few, some many miles,
And (for he neuer heard of them before)
He askt his guide some questions others whiles,
As whether from those Indian seas perchance,
A ship may saile to England, Spaine, and France.

13

She answerd thus, to put you out of doubt,
First know the earth it selfe it like an Iland,
Inuironed with waters round about,
That compasse in on eu'ry side their drie land,
And though to this day no man hath found out,
Nor thinks there can be any way but by land,
Because they iudge the lands length there is such,
That it the other Hemisphere doth tuch.

14

Yet I foresee, er many ages passe,
New mariners and masters new shall rise,
That shall find out that erit so hidden was,
And shall discover where the passage lies,
And all the men that went before surpasse,
To find new lands, new starres, new seas, new skies,
And passe about the earth as doth the Sunne,
To searh what with *Antipodes* is done.

There is a pro-
monitory beyond
Fesse, called *Capo*
d. no, as one
would say that
he that went be-
yond could neuer
returne.

* Sir Francis
Drake followed
the summe till he
gained a day in
accunt from sun
rising to sun set-
ting.

15

Behold I see the signe of holy crosse,
A signe within these quarters scene but seeld,
I see where ten a thousand put to losse,
And to th' imperiall banner all do yeeld,
I see in spite of eu'rie thwart and crosse,
The house of *Aragon* still wins the feeld,
I see that fortune is disposd to list,
Vp vnto heau'n the name of *Charles* the fift.

16

It pleaseth God to keepe the wayes vnkowne,
Vnto these parts as they haue bene and are,
Vntill seuen hundred yeares be ouerblowne,
What time he meanes to raise an Emp'ror rare,
That shall both finde and make them all his owne,
And one that shall most worthily compare,
In warre for courage, and in peace for iustice,
With *Traian*, with *Aurelius* or *Augustus*.

17

I see the will of heau'n doth so incline,
The house of *Austria* and of *Arragon*,
Shall linke together in a happie line,
And be by match vnited both in one:
I see a braunch grow by the banke of *Ryne*,
Out of this house, as like there hath bene none,
Whose match (thus much to say I dare be bold)
May not be found in writers new or old.

18

By him againe *Astrea* shall be brought,
And be restored from her long exile,
And vertues that haue long bene set at nought,
Shall raigne and banish fraud deceit and guile:
For which great works by him so nobly wrought,
God meanes to grant him all this earthly Ile,
And vnder this wise Prince his deare annointed,
One shepherd and one flocke he hath appointed.

19

Which that it may the better be effected,
He giues them Captaines both by sea and land,
That shall win places neuer yet detected
And none shall dare their forces to withstand;
Cortese first, by whom shall be erected,
The Emp'rors banner in the Indian sand,
Who by his valiant hand and wise direction,
Shall win and keepe those Indies in subiection.

20

Loe, with the noble Marques of *Pescare*,
Prosper Colonna prosperous in fight,
Loe him that may with both of them compare,
Or be preferred if you do him right,
I meane the Marques *Vast*, whose vallew rare,
In tender youthfull yeares shall shine most bright,
Like to a horse that running swiftest pace,
Doth last set out, and first doth win the race.

21

In him shall faith and courage be so mixt,
That when his years shal seeme but young & tender
As passing not the twentie yeare and sixt,
Yet shall his fame and forces not be slender;
On him shall eyes and hearts of men be fixt,
To him shall townes and forts, and castels render,
As to a Captaine with such worth endowed,
As he alone the world might haue abdedwed.

What

(Charles the
fift. was
born in
the
year
of
1500.)

It was proph-
sied that Charles
should conquer
the world, and
to enter into
Rome and be
crowned with
the triple crown
of St. Peter
and St. Paul
and St. Andrew
the apostles.

Sund.

22

Andrew D'Orla. What should I speake of famous *Andrew D'Orle*,
That to the pyratts so much terror breeds,
As *Pompey* to much praisd in Latin storie?
This *Andrew* either matches or exceeds:
What nobler name can be, what greater glorie,
Then to roote out such hurtfull curst weeds?
So as men may with safetie and with ease,
From Italy to Nylus passe the seas.

23

By his assistance, furtherance and his aide,
In Italy *Cesar* a crowne obtaines,
For which good seruice though he be well paid,
Yet for himselfe thereby he nothing gaines:
The paine is his (o noble mind well itaid)
The profit to his country sole remains:
And whereas some to rule their country sought,
By him his countries freedome shall be wrought.

24

This loue by him vnto his country showne,
In honor true shall more his name aduance,
Then both the *Cæsars* victories well knowne,
In England, Spaine, in Italy and France:
For though their enemies were ouerthrowne,
By valour oft, and oftentimes by chance,
Yet this did blot their praise and make it lesse,
That both their countries freedome did oppresse.

25

Wherefore let them and others all beside,
That tyrannize their countries be ashamed,
And hanging downe their heads, their faces hide,
When they shall heare this noble *Andrew* named,
By whose rare temperate and happie guide,
His countries peace and freedome shall be framed:
And thus *Andronica* the Duke foretold,
What men in future ages come there shold.

26

The while with prosprous winds the vessels driued,
Came first within the view of Persian shore,
And then from thence their way they so contriued,
They past the gulfes (so called long before)
And there to land so happily arriued,
Misdoubting of *Alcynas* might no more,
He thanks these guides y all the way defended him,
And humbly to their Ladie recommended him.

27

More woods then one, more fields then one he past,
More then one valley, more then one high hill:
He meeteth theeues by night, by dayes as fast,
That lie in wait poore trauellers to kill:
Of beasts, of serpents huge he was agast,
That with their terror those wild deserts fill,
But when he blew his horne they fled away,
No man nor beast durst in the hearing stay.

28

He trauels through the happie *Arabie*,
So called for the store of spices sweet,
There where the bird that burnes and doth not die,
To dwell of all the world hath thought most meet:
Thence went he to the sea, that once was drie,
Which *Iacobs* sons went through vpon their feet,
Proud *Pharao* following them vnto his cost,
Himselfe and all his charets drownd and lost.

29

Fast by the banks of *Traians* streame he rides,
There where as *Nylus* doth receiue the same,
An horle of passing swiftnesse he bestrides,
That was ingendred twixt the wind and flame,
Not such a beast in all the world besides,
And *Rabycano* is this horses name:
Now as along the riuers banke he past,
He saw a boate make toward him in hast.

30

A simple hermit did the vessell steare,
Whose beard with age was ouergrowne and gray,
And when he came so nie that he might heare,
These words to him he fatherly doth say,
My sonne if you do hold your safetie deare,
Except you meane to die this present day,
Proceed no farther in the way you ride,
But ferrie ouer to the other side.

31

For if you do that fatall way proceed,
You shall within a mile a giant meet,
Whole stature other men doth farre exceed,
For why his height is counted fourteene feet,
He makes a sport of eu'ry cruell deed,
The flesh of man vnto his tast is sweet,
He eateth some aliue, and some he slayeth,
He quarters some, and other some he slayeth.

32

Amid this crueltie he hath great sport,
To vse the seruice of a certaine net,
Which in the common way in secret sort,
With dust and grauell couerd he doth set,
And then when strangers do that way resort,
First if he may, behind them he doth get:
And then with hideous outcries he them scares,
Vntill they fall into his net vnwares.

33

But hauing caught them once in such a cage,
Of birth or merit he hath no respect,
Of wealth nor sex, of country nor of age,
No priuiledge from him can them protect,
Their carkates his hunger must allwage,
Their sculs like monuments he doth erect,
In posts and windowes hanging them on pins,
His chambers all are hanged with their skins.

34

Take then (my sonne) take then this other way,
Where with more ease and safetie you may go.
Thanks (gentle Frier) the English Duke doth say,
Yet can I not your counsell follow tho,
Though danger bids go safest way one may,
Yet what saith honor? honor saith not so,
Let none retire with shame, thus honor seath,
The worst that can befall one is but death.

35

But contrary, if I may him intrap,
As he to do to others doth deuise,
And take himselfe in his prepared trap,
The good is great that hereof may arise.
Well, quoth the hermit, God grant blessed hap,
And send his Angell *Michael* from the skies,
That may deliuer him into thy hand,
Or giue thee strength his forces to withstand.

Rabicano Astol-
for horse of excel-
lent swiftness.

Caligorans.

Looke in the Al-
lusion.

Sentence.

A great praise
of D'Orla
was sought the
benefit of his coun-
try more then his
owne.

Phenice.

Red sea.

36
On goes the Duke blest by the simple Frier,
Much trusting in his sword, more in his sound:
And being now approcht a little nier,
The cruell giants gracelesse house he found,
Enuironed all with marish ground and mier,
His chambers all within were furnisht round
With skins and skuls of many a wofull hed,
Of such as euill chance had thither led.

37
As hunters that by forrest wild do dwell,
Naile by on post the heads and pawes of Beares,
And of their dangers do delight to tell,
And call to mind their hardly scaped feares:
So looke who did in strength the rest excell,
The giant kept some speciall limbs of theirs,
The rest in ditches carelesly he throwes,
To rot and be deuoured by dogs or crows.

38
Calygorant (so is this giants name)
Stands looking at his gate with watchfull eie,
Reioycing much when any stranger came,
And namely now the Duke he doth espie,
Not doubting but by him to do the same,
He had to others done, and make him die;
But first he seekes behind the Duke to get,
And thinks hereby to drue him to the net.

39
When as the Duke the Giant fierce espide,
He staid his horse and would not forward go,
For feare lest in the net he might be tide,
Of which the hermit had forewarnd him tho:
Then bloweth he his horne of vertue tide,
That in the hearers terror breeds and wo,
Which so posselt his senses altogether,
As first he fled, and saw not where nor whether.

40
It seemed with his heart he lost his eies,
And still he fled, and cares not how nor where,
Right to the place where that most strange net lies,
Which he to take the Duke had placed there,
The net his armes and all his members ties,
Which when *Astolfo* saw (now out of feare)
He lights and drawes his sword, intending then
To venge the death of thousand guiltlesse men.

41
But finding him so sure and strongly bound,
He thought it were a bale vngentle part,
To slay a prisoner whom in bands he found,
So as he could not stir, nor no way start:
God *Vulcan* wrought this net in caues profound,
Of flaming *Aetna*, with such skill and art,
That though the wires did seem but smal and weak,
Yet could no force the same consume nor breake.

42
I say this curious net then *Vulcan* wrought,
When certaine ialous thoughts his heart inflamed,
His spoute therewith in *Mars* his armes he caught,
And openly then made them both ashamed,
At which prospect though many gods then laugh,
Yet many wisht in like sort to be shamed:
Sith *Mercury* did after steale this net,
His louely *Cloris* therewithall to get.

*Atque aliquis
de diis non cre-
dit opas sic fieri
surpa.*

43
Faith *Cloris* who flies out before the morne,
And sprinkleth aire with smell of fragrant flowres,
That in her louely lap about are borne,
From whence do fall the pleasant Aprill showres:
But *Mercury*, sith she his loue did scorne,
Lay with his net in waite not many houres,
Till at the last by *Nylus* banks he caught her,
And there to daunce *la volta* then he taught her.

44
The net in *Anubs* temple he did leaue,
Where many yeares in safetie it did bide,
Vntill *Calygorant* not asking leaue,
And caring not what should thereof betide,
Of this great relique did the church bereaue,
With all the plate and ornaments beside:
And to this wicked vse the net employed,
By which the passengers were sore annoyed.

45
Now of this net *Astolfo* tooke a wire,
And (like a theefe) behind him tide his hands,
Who now was meeke as any could desire,
And like a lambe by him most gently stands:
At least the waight thereof himselfe might tire,
First hauing bound his prisoner sure in bands,
He makes him carry that vpon his backe,
And vnde him like a mule to beare a packe.

46
And thus he parteth thence triumphing so,
And led the giant prisoner in a string,
And all about the country him doth show,
(A fight that to them all great ioy did bring)
To *Memphis* Pyramids he then doth go,
Most famous for the tombe of many a King,
More hie in height then fiftie times *Pauls* steeple,
Then saw he *Cayr* so huge and full of peeple.

47
But not so peopled as they now report,
That thousands in the streets by night do lie
For want of roome, yet builded in such sort,
That eu'ry house is made three stories hie,
Where runnegates do dwell, that make a sport,
Their faith and their saluation to denie:
Of which the Sowdan for his owne behoofe,
Keepes fiftene thousand lodging in one rooffe.

48
Thence went *Astolfo* to the banks of *Nyle*,
To *Damyat* a citie thereabout,
And here he heard within a dozen myle
Oryllo dwelt, a hardy theefe and stout,
That robd poore men, and kild them other while,
As trauellers of him stood fore in doubt,
And (that which him with greater wonder filled)
The common voice was he could not be killed.

49
Full many a thrust, full many a cruell blow,
Of many men in fight he had endured,
And vnto many men great care and wo,
And death it selfe he often had procured:
But his owne bodie was enchanted so,
As eu'ry wound he had forthwith was cured,
I thinke some Fayry was his dame, or rather
I thinke some *Incubus* had bene his father.

The

*Peter M. H. pro-
prietor of the
great Py-
ramid was
furthered by
therefore
spoken from
on compari-
Paul's was
more than
long if it
much.*

Oryllo

50

The worthy knight this wicked creature fought,
Vntill at last he came vnto the place,
Where then *Oryllo* with two champions fought,
The combat hauing held no little space,
Yet at his hands they both had gained nought,
Though both of them gaue sundry blowes apace,
Their names were these that held this mungrell tack,
Griffin the white and *Aquilant* the black.

51

The Necromancer fought with vantage great,
He rode vpon a cruell hideous beast,
A Crocodile that flesh of men doth eat,
And birds and beasts, and doth them all digest,
Yet had the Brethren throwne him from his seat,
And further had the Crocodile distrest:
But him to wound and kill in vaine they strived,
For still his wounds did heale, and he reuiued.

52

Sometime they cleft his head by force in twaine,
As butchers cleaue a bullocks with an axe,
But straight he ioyneth both the parts againe,
As if they had bene made of melting waxe.
Who so hath seene the Alcumists most vaine,
That work with *Mercurie* their cunning knacks,
Which quite disperst, reioyneth eu'ry member,
Would loone by this be made that to remember.

53

Fierce *Aquilant* among so many bloes,
With one, his head from off his shoulders strake,
About he seekes and gropeth as he goes,
And in the dust to find his head doth rake,
And finding it, he takes it by the nose,
Or by the locks, nor more ado doth make,
But lets it on as if it were but glewed,
And fights as if his forces were renewed.

54

Stout *Griffin* at a blow cuts off his arme,
And takes it vp and flings it in the brooke,
But he like one that had receiued no harme,
Doth diue the same within the streame to looke,
Which found, he ioynes (I know not w^h what charm)
Vnto the place it late before forsooke:
Two dames stood by in white and blacke attire,
The combat being fought at their desire.

55

These were the courteous dames that with great care
Had brought them vp eu'n fro their swathing bands,
For the two brothers did by fortune rare,
In their first childhood chance into their hands:
These two to *Oliuer Gyfmonda* bare,
Though straight they were conuaid to forren lands,
Where these two Ladies kept them as their owne,
I need not tell at large a tale so knowne.

56

Now was the time that neare approacht the night,
That makes each thing with shadow shew obscure,
So that not want of force, but want of light,
Did cause the combat could no longer dure:
The Ladies clad in garments blacke and bright,
That (as I said) this conflict did procure,
On this condition did them all dismisle,
That to returne next day they do not misse.

57

But when that English Duke both saw and knew,
The valiant youths *Griffin* and *Aquilant*,
Not onely by their armes he saw in vew,
But by their blowes, of which they were not scant,
He doth acquaintance old with them renew,
And they no point of courtesie do want,
For straightway by the Ladies he was led,
To take with them a supper and a bed.

58

Then in a garden sweet they did prouide
Great store of daintie meats and costly wine,
Fast by a coole and pleasant fountaines side,
As best agreeth with the sommer time,
The while the giant with strong chaines they tide
Vnto the bodie of an auncient Pine,
Lest he might hap to trouble and molest them,
While they determind to refresh and rest them.

59

The boord with rich and costly fare was filled,
And yet their smallest pleasure was their meat,
The Knights in languages and learning skilled,
Tolke of *Oryllo* and the wonder great,
To see one wounded so, and yet not killed,
It seemd to them a dreame and strange conceat,
And eu'n the wisest and most learn'd did wonder,
How he reioynd his members cut in sunder.

60

Astolfo onely in his booke had read,
(That booke that taught all charmes to ouerthrow)
How this *Oryllo* neuer could be dead,
While in his head one fatall haire did grow,
But hauing puld this haire from off his head,
He should be subiect vnto eu'ry blow,
Thus said the booke, but precept there was none,
Among so many haire to find that one.

61

Astolfo ioyfull of this good instruction,
Not doubting but by this to make him die,
First makes some circumstance of introduction,
And prayes the brothers giue him leaue to trie,
If he could bring *Oryllo* to destruction,
And they this friendly sute do not denie,
Not doubting he alone would strue in vaine,
With him that late resisted had them twaine.

62

Now had the Sunne remou'd the nights darke vaile,
When as *Oryllo* turned to the field,
And then the English Duke did him assaile,
Both fought on horseback, both with spear & shield.
Eu'n then *Oryllo* felt his heart to faile,
(A hap to him that hapned had but feeld)
Eu'n then some strange presage did him offend,
That shewd his dayes drew shortly to their end.

63

Their speares now broke their naked swords they drew,
Astolfo layes on blowes on him a maine,
About the field *Oryllo*'s members flew,
But he together gathers them againe,
And straight his fight and forces doth renew,
The English Duke dismembring him in vaine,
Vntill at length one blow so luckie sped,
That by his shoulders he cut off his hed.

Sentence.
For in deepe at a
wise mans boord
the smallest plea-
sure the guests
haue, is their
cheare, in compa-
rison of the plea-
sing talke that
happens either in
mirth or gravity.

According as
the poet
describes, it is
as if he had
said, the poet
describes.

64

And having headed him so eu'n and iust,
 Straight with his head on horsebacke he doth mount
 And rides away, *Orillo* in the dust
 Doth grope to find the same as he was wont,
 But mistaking it and full of new mistrust,
 To ouertake him yet he makes account,
 He rides, and would haue cride ho tarrie tarrie,
 But in his hand the Duke his tongue doth carrie.

65

But though his head were lost, he finds his heeles,
 To spurre and pricke he neuer doth forbear,
 The headlesse body neuer stirs nor reeles,
 But sits as sure as if the head were there:
 The while the skull *Affolfo* puls and peeles,
 Among such store to find th'enchanted haire,
 For in the haire no difference was in sight,
 To know if he did take the wrong or right.

66

But sith to make sure worke he thought it best,
 He makes his sword serue for a barbers knife,
 To shau the skull therewith he doth not rest,
 Vntill he finisht had the bloody strife:
 He cuts that haire by chance among the rest,
 That haire that held *Orillo* in his life,
 The face looks pale, deuoid of liuely heate,
 The body backward fells out of the seate.

67

This done, the Duke brought in his hand the head,
 Returning to the companie againe,
 And shewd them where he left the carcas dead,
 Which when they saw with certain signes and plaine
 A kind of enuious ioy in them it bred,
 For glad they were their enemy was slaine,
 But inwardly they were displead and sorie,
 That this same Duke had got from them the glorie.

68

The women also were not well content,
 That he had slaine *Orillo* in the fight,
 Because it hindred had their first intent,
 Which was to stay these youths al means they might,
 In hope thereby some mischiefes to preuent,
 Which they foresaw should vnto them alight:
 Straight all that country was with rumor filled,
 How th'English Duke *Orillo* fierce had killed.

69

For as in all those cities they do vse,
 The keeper of the next adioyning fort,
 Sent by a Doue a letter of the newes,
 From Damiat vnto the nearest port,
 By which deuice most rare they cannot chuse
 But heare and send with speed each true report:
 And thus in eu'ry country and in towne,
 They do extoll this English Dukes renowne.

70

The worthy Duke the brothers doth perswade,
 From thence their courses into France to bend,
 To do the dutie for which man was made,
 Gods honour and their countries to defend,
 Which now the Turks and Painims did inuade,
 And neare had brought the same to wofull end:
 Which counsell from so great a Prince proceeding,
 They follow straight with forwardnesse exceeding.

71

The women now with teares in watry eies,
 Bid them farewell, and so they parted thence:
 And for they heard the holy citie lies
 Not passing fixe or seu'n dayes iourney thence,
 To take it in their way they do deuise,
 To see the place, where for humane offence,
 True God, true man, descending from aboue,
 Did die for vs vnworthy of such loue.

72

And sith the way betweene was large and wide,
 And void of fruits for sustenance of man,
 They do good store of bread and wine prouide,
 With needfull things, as for the time they can,
 And on the giants shoulders them they tide,
 Who like a sumpter horse them after ran,
 And on this sort with most deuout intent,
 Like pilgrims to Ierusalem they went.

73

Six dayes they traueled in their weary way,
 Nor seeing man, nor beast, nor bird aliue,
 The seuenth, immediat after breake of day,
 In that most blessed citie they arriue:
 Then visit they the tombe where Iesus lay,
 When with his death he did vs dead reuiue,
 And brought hell, sinne and death into subiection,
 With suffering, dying, and his resurrection.

74

Now while the tombe with great heed they behold,
 Bare head and feet in shew of meek submission,
 And with more inward ioy then can be told,
 Yet ioyned with a deepe and sad contrition,
 That strake their hearts in awe and made them cold,
 With true remorse deuoid of superstition,
 And with themselves they still continued musing,
 Each one himselte in such like words accusing.

75

Why then, where thou deare Lord didst for our sake,
 With water and with blood the ground distaine,
 Shall not mine eyes some small amends to make,
 Shed teares in memory of so great paine?
 Oh drowsie heart that dost not now awake,
 Oh frozen heart that meltest not in raine,
 Oh stony heart that dost not now relent,
 Lament thee now, or else for ay lament.

76

Thus with an humble and repentant sprite,
 They tarride at the tombe no little space,
 When lo the priest appeared in their sight,
 Whose office was to keepe the holy place,
 Who seeing them so lowly and contrite,
 He doth impart to them this speciall grace,
 (Sith to amendment they were now resolu'd)
 Them of their finnes forepassed he absolued.

77

This done, they went about and viewd the towne,
 Held in those happy dayes by Christen hands,
 Who striving now to keepe each other downe,
 With causlesse warres do trouble sea and lands,
 Or leeling or neglecting that renowne,
 In which Gods honour and their safetie stands:
 But letting this great enemy increase,
 By their seeld making, neuer keeping peace.

A gallant

This I haue heard
 some affirme for
 a truth.

A deuout
 prayer.

A prayer
 of Christen
 Princes.

78

A gallant knight whom *Sansonet* they call,
This citie governd vnder *Charles* the great,
Who then intended to repaire the wall,
And make the towne a strong and stately seat:
Astolfo gaue to him the Giant tall,
For strength and stature fit for such a feat,
To serue his present purpose for the nonce,
Vnto the walls to carry heauy stones.

79

And *Sansonet* doth eke on him bestow,
A curious belt and hangers for a blade,
And spurs of gold, in substance rich and show,
That for that knight were thought to haue bin made
That slue the Dragon with a deadly blow,
Which did the Ladie chaste and faire inuade:
Thus gifts both giu'n and tane on either part,
Each from the other friendly doth depart.

80

Now going from *Ierusalem*, behold
They met a Greekish pilgrim by the way,
That such ill newes to good *Griffino* told,
As made him out of temper all the day:
It was his euill fortune, deare to hold,
And giue his heart vnto her for a pray,
That had a pleasing hew, and faire smooth skin,
But false, vnchaste, and trecherous within.

In the beginning of this booke was an excellent morall (if you obserued it) shewing how hurtfull it is for a captain to be prodigall of his men, and rash or headlong in his attempts: the former of which faults (that worthy and valiant gentleman) *sir Iohn Smith* hath very grauely and iustly reprov'd in some captains of our time, in that treatise that he wrote in defence of the vse of long bowes: and indeed it cannot be denied but bloody conquests are no praise to the conquerours: In token whereof the *Lacedemonians* appointed, that he that won a bloody victory should sacrifice a cocke; but he that ouercame by policie without bloodshed, an ox: so much they preferred wisdome that is peculiar to man, before strength that is common to beasts. In *Charles* is to be noted the providence of a wise and valiant Prince: In *Astolfo*, that by the power of his horne rids the country of theenes and malefactors, we may learne to apply the talents are giuen vs, to good vses: In *Griffin*, that after all his deuotion at *Ierusalem*, comes againe to *Origilla*, we may note the frailtie of flesh, and withall, that outward holinesse without inward Zeale auaileth nothing.

The historie (set downe here in maner of a prophetic) of the prosperous raigne of *Charles* the first, is too long to stand vpon in this place, but *Iouius*, *Guyccardin*, *Vlloa*, *Surius*, and *Sleydan* himselfe (though his enemy) do witnes his great conquests, his happie discovery of the Indies, his notable captains, and the great felicitie of his whole life: of which authors, because two are already in English, I imagine there be few that are like to reade this, but haue read the one of them, and consequently know as much to be true as I do here set downe. And for the Indian voyages, we need not so much admire the captains of forren nations, hauing two of our owne nation that haue both as forwardly aduentured, and as fortunately performed them, namely *sir Francis Drake*, whom I touched before, and yong *Master Candish*.

In that *Logestilla* giueth *Astolfo* at his departing a booke to instruct him, and a horne to breed terror to his enemies; by the booke is signified wisdome, whereby all charmes and toyes are discovered: and by the horne is vnderstood iustice, that indeed brings terror to all misdoers, and driues them out of the country. Further, whereas *Logestilla* sends *Andronica* and *Sophrosina* to safe conduct *Astolfo*, least *Alcyna* should attempt any new matter against him, it is to be vnderstood allegorically, that fortitude and temperance are the two most notable guides that we can haue in this world to keepe vs from pleasures snares, or violent assaults. Also whereas *Astolfo* looks first in his booke ere he take vpon him the enterprise to fight with *Orillus*, it is to be vnderstood, that good aduice is to be taken before men vndertake dangerous exploits.

The house of *Callygorant* alludeth vnto the den of *Cacus* in the viij. of the *Aeneads* in *Virgill*,

—Semperq; recenti

Caede tenebat humus, foribus affixa luperbis,
Ora virum tristi pendebant pallida tabo.

Simon Fornarius thinks that in the person of *Calligorant* he meant a subtile sophister that became an heretike, and corrupted many, but after recanting, did good seruice in the Church. The satall haire of *Orillus*, though it be meerly fabulous, yet hath it allusion to some truth: for besides that, diuers Poets haue written of some, whose life lay in their haire, as *Nysus* killed by his daughter, and *Alcest* that could not die til *Mercury* cut off one haire: and of *Dido* likewise is said that *Iris* was sent to cut her haire to rid her out of her paine: besides these (I say) the Scripture testifies of the vertue of *Samsons* strength to haue bin in his haire, which is as strange for reason as any of the rest.

Here end the notes of the xv. booke.

L

81

Her name was *Origilla*, whom of late
He left at *Constans* of an Age wicke;
And hoping now to find her in good state,
He beares she hath him seru'd a fluttish trick,
As namely she had got a newfound mate,
Not caring if that he were dead or quicke:
She thought that for her yong years twas no reason,
To lie alone in that sweet pleasant season.

82

This newes his mind doth gripe, his heart doth bite,
He mournes by day, by night he takes no rest,
That breeds him paine that others breeds delight,
And this torments him more then all the rest,
He shames, and shuns to haue it come to light,
What was his griefe that did him so molest.
And this to keepe it close the rather made him,
Because from her his brother did dissuade him.

83

But all in vaine, for he was wholly bent
To follow her, although he knew her nought,
Yet to himselfe he keepeth his intent,
That secretly his going may be wrought:
He vowes to makes th'adulterer repent,
Who now to *Antiochia* her had brought:
But in another booke I will expresse,
Of his departure what was the successe.

Historie.

Allegorie.

Allusion.



THE ARGUMENT.

Stout Griffin finds his subtle mistres straying,
 With vile Martano, but is pacifi'd:
 The Turkes and Christians all their force displaying,
 Do fight, on both sides many thousands dyde:
 Both man and house by sword and fire decaying,
 Do make a wofull sight on either side:
 Without the towne the Christians plague the Turkes,
 Within fierce Rodomont much mischiefe workes.



Great paines in loue full
 many men haue found,
 Of which my selfe haue
 prou'd so great a part,
 As by my skill some good
 may hap redound,
 To such as are lesse skillfull
 in this art:
 Wherefore what I affirme
 with iudgement sound,

To breed iust cause of lesse or greater smart,
 Beleue what I set downe for your behoofe,
Probatum est, I know tis true by prooffe.

I do affirme, and haue, and euer shall,
 That he that binds himselfe in worthy bands,
 Although his mistres shew him grace but small,
 Although he find no fauour at her hands,
 Sharp words, coy looks, smal thanks, hope none at al,
 Though more and more aloofe from him she stands
 Yet so his heart and thoughts be highly paced,
 He must not mourne, no though he die disgraced.

Let him lament, let him mourne, pine, and die,
 Whom wanton wandring eies, whom flaring heare,
 Haue made a slave, when vnder them doth lie,
 A heart corrupt, a tongue that false will sweare,
 Like wounded Deare in vaine he seekes to flie,
 And in his thigh the shaft about doth beare,
 And this above the rest torments him cheefe,
 He is asham'd and dares not shew his greefe.

Such was the hap, such was the wofull state,
 Of Griffin now posselt with foolish loue,

He knew her mind and manners worthy hate,
 Yet could not he this fancie fond remoue:
 His reason faine his passion would abate,
 But appetite is placed her about:
 That be she near so false, ingrate or nought,
 Yet needs of him she must be lou'd and sought.

Away he steales from hence in secret sort,
 Nor to his brother once adew doth say,
 For feare least that his brother would dehort
 Him from her loue, as oft he did assay:
 And that his journey may be cut more short,
 He coasts the countrie for the nearest way,
 He trauels all the day and halfe the night,
 Vntill Damasco came within his sight.

Fast by this towne this trull he ouertooke,
 That louingly with her new loue did ride,
 And all old trends and louers all forsooke,
 He was her Champion, he her onely guide:
 A man might boldly sweare it on a booke,
 He were a husband fit for such a bride,
 He false, vnconstant, trecherous, so was she:
 She had a modest looke, and so had he.

He rode all armed vpon a stamping steed,
 With guilded barb that cost full many a crowne;
 She ware no lesse magnificent a weed,
 A rich embrodred purple veluet gowne;
 Thus to Damasco ward they do proceed,
 Where late there was proclaimed in the towne,
 A solemne feast that should endure some dayes,
 For iusts, for tilt, for turneyes, and for playes.

L ij

*Dignum patella
 operculum,
 Or as the English
 Pr uerbe saith.
 Like will to like
 quoth the duncell
 to the collier.*

*Of this looke in
 the morall more
 is large.*

simile.

8

Now when the queene good *Griffin* had espide,
(For who she knew her squire would be to weake)
Though sore appald, as cant she could it hide,
Least he his wrath on both at once should wreake,
Yet as the time permits she doth prouide,
Consulting with her guide before she speake:
And when they had agre'd how to deceiue him,
With open armes she runneth to receiue him.

9

And framing then her speech with great regard,
To answer fit vnto her gestures kind,
Deare sir (quoth she) is this the due reward,
My loyall loue to you deserues to find?
That from your sight I should a yeare be bard,
Your sight that soly can content my mind?
You left me greued with a burning feauer,
But burning more in loue of you for euer.

10

Where I your comming lookt for long in vaine,
Each houre a day, each month did seeme a yeare,
And of your absence long I did complaine,
Enquiring oft, if I of you could heare:
Alas how full is carefull loue of paine?
So sad mine heart, so heauie was my cheare,
As being in dispaire which way to mend it,
I loth'd my life, and did desire to end it.

11

But loe how fortune when I looked least,
Hath now prouided me of double aid,
And sent my brother, this most welcome guest,
With whom I haue without dishonour staid,
And now your selfe whose presence makes me blest,
For had your comming longer bene delaid,
So was my heart and soule to you inclined,
That sure for greife I should haue dyde and pined.

12

Thus flattrring words where with her tongue abounds,
Holpe her in so good sort her tale to frame,
That new on him the greater fault redounds,
As glad he was to scuse himselfe fro blame,
And her strong reasons founded on weake grounds,
Do cleare both her, and him that with her came,
And makes him deemd a kinsman and a brother,
That did his best to make this maide a mother.

13

So that he did not onely not reprove
Her that so trech'rously had him betraid,
So that he did not wreake as did behoue,
Th'adulterer that false with her had plaid;
But thinkes it well if he the blame remoue,
Which to his charge so probablie she laid:
And as for him (loue makes him see so blindly)
He calls him kinsman, and salutes him kindly.

14

Thus *Griffin* of his loue no whit abates,
But keepe her companie as with his owne,
Vntill they came within *Damasco* gates,
Where none of them were seene before or knowne.
The towne was full of Lords and great estates,
The rumor of the feast so far was blowne,
Which that they might haue more securely haunted,
The king to all that came safe conduct graunted.

15

But here I cease to talke of *Origill*,
And of her mate with her as fitly met,
As knauish iacke could be for whorish gill,
Vnchast and false, as euer water wet:
To flatter and dissemble passing skill,
And all was fish that came into her net:
Now here I leaue good *Griffin* in her armes,
And turne me to the Turkish men of armes.

16

I left where *Agramant* assaulted hard,
A gate which he had hoped to haue found,
But weake and feeble, naked, vnprepard,
And easie to be beaten to the ground:
I told you how king *Charles* the place did gard,
Inuironed with selected souldiers round;
As namely *Guydons* strong and *Angilers*,
With *Oton* stout *Ouolyo* *Berlingero*.

17

Thus either band in fight of either king,
Doth fight in hope of great reward and praise,
And thinks such honour backe that day to bring,
As should themselves and all their offspring raise
But such great store of darts the *Christns* sling,
As still the *Turkes* are foiled many wayes,
They die, and by their deaths do others teach,
How hurtfull tis to roue beyond their reach.

18

But *Rodemont* whose men consumed with fire,
Do fill their masters mind with double rage,
Yet to auenge theirs deaths doth so desire,
As nought but blood his thirst of blood can swage:
He spares not in the passion of his ire,
Nor men nor women, order, sex nor age,
Away do runne the silly people crying,
And leaue their children, friends and wiues a dying.

19

They happie were whose feet did serue them best,
The furie of this cruell Turke to shunne,
For some were killed in the flight, the rest
Vnto the Churches or strong houses runne,
And locke the gates against so fierce a guest,
That in the streetes had so great mischief done:
And of them all that had bene slaine in chase,
Not one of them was wounded in the face.

20

But as the Tyger kills the fearfull Doe,
That but by flight cannot it selfe defend,
Or as the Wolues do spoile the sheepe: eu'n so
This cruell Turke their guiltlesse blood doth spend:
They neither know to strike nor ward a blow,
To hurt their foe nor yet to help their friend:
Thus past the Pagan to *S. Michels* bridge,
And none there was his passage to abridge.

21

He kills alike the sinner and the good,
The reuerend father and the harmelesse child,
He spils alike the young and aged blood,
With widowes, wiues, and virgines vndefild,
And though that all did yeeld and none withstood,
Yet mercie from his mind was so exild,
He shewd to such as things can truly valew,
Great signes of crueltie but none of valew.

Nor

22

Nor doth the cruell rage and fury cease,
With seeing of so many people slaine,
But rather still it growes and doth increase,
Against those other that aliue remaine:
Nor graunts he to the Churches any peace,
But eu'n as though the walls could suffer paine;
He maketh furious warres against the walls,
And flings against them store of fire balls.

23

Their houses all were built in Paris then,
Of timber (and I iudge this present houre
Of bricke and stone there are not fixe of ten)
Which made the Pagan then to bend his powre,
To burne the houses, hauing kild the men:
And though that fire do of it selfe deuoure,
Yet he doth helpe the fire, and ouerthrew them,
And those that lurkt within he spoyld and slue them.

24

Had *Agramant* had like successe without,
As had within this wicked *Rodomount*,
The walls of Paris had not kept him out,
On which so oft he did assay to mount:
But now this while the Angell brought about,
Renaldo stout the stowre of *Clarimount*,
Both with the English and the Scots supplies,
As secretly as Silence could deuise.

25

And that they might them more vnwares assaile,
They cast a bridge a league aboue the towne,
And passe the riuer to their best auaille,
And so in battle order comming downe,
Not doubting if their footing do not faile,
To get that day great glorie and renowne:
And still among the rankes *Renaldo* rides,
And for things needfull euermore prouides.

26

Two thousand horse in good Duke *Edmonds* guide,
And thise two thousand archers he doth send,
To get to Paris on the tother side,
To helpe within the citie to defend:
(The cariages and other lets beside,
To leaue behind a while he doth intend)
Theise succors greatly helpe the towne within,
And at Saint *Dennis* gate they let them in.

27

Renaldo takes the conduct of the rest,
Appointing each his office and his place,
As in his skill and iudgement seemeth best,
Seu'ring each band from other with a space:
And seeing eu'ry one was prone and prest,
As was to be required in such case,
He calleth all the Lords and Leaders chiefe,
And vld to them this pithy speech and brieft.

28

My Lords (quoth he) I need not to repeate
Your weightie bisnesse vnto you at large,
I onely say, you haue iust cause and great,
To giue God thanks, your duties to discharge,
That here hath sent you, where with little sweat,
But giuing on our foes one valiant charge,
You may obtaine true fame and glorie more,
Then all your auncestors obtained before.

29

God, onely God that giues and guides good chance,
Hath offerd vnto you this good occasion,
Your names and glories highly to aduance,
Which is in noble minds a strong perswasion:
Behold the Kings of England and of France,
Endangered greatly by the Turks inuasion,
Shut vp in trenches and in wals with shame,
You may set free to your immortall fame,

30

The very law of nature and humanitie,
Wils noble hearts to helpe the weake distressed;
But more the lawes and state of Christianitie,
Without your helpe now like to be oppressed,
And right Religion turnd to Turkish vanitie,
Of which what harms wil grow, may soone be guesst
Our temples faire with their foule idols filled,
Our virgins (chast by vow) deflourd and killed.

31

No meane, no stay, no end will be of slaughter,
Of rapes and rapines wicked and vniust;
No man shall keepe his sister, wife or daughter,
From out the reach of their vnruely lust:
But now if you these sorrowes turne to laughter,
And raise their honor troden in the dust,
They must ow you the freedoms and the liues,
Of them, their friends, their children and their wiues.

32

In auncient times a laurell Ciuick crowne
To him that sau'd one citizen they gaue,
If then they had such honor and renowne,
How many crownes shall you deserue to haue,
If (not a townsman, but) a noble towne,
And thousand innocents therein you saue?
In you it lies them to preferue and cherish,
That (but for you) in wo should pine and perish.

CINICA CORONA.

33

Which if they should (as God forbid they should)
By these vile Saracens be ouerrunne,
Then were the Romaine Empire bought and sold,
The holy Church were spoyld and quire vndone:
In you it is these huge harmes to withhold,
By you alone must this exploit be done,
Tread then this path of praise so large and ample,
Ile leade the way, follow but mine example.

34

This speech by him pronounc'd with so good spright,
With voice so audible, with comely grace,
Incens'd them with such desire to fight,
That tedious seemd to them each little space.
And as we see in riding men delight
To spurre a horse although he runne apace:
So stir'd *Renaldo* with this exhortation,
Those of the English and the Scottish nation.

Simile.

35

And hauing thus confirm'd their forward hearts,
And promist largely in his masters name,
Great recompence to eu'ry mans desarts,
Vnto the riuer walls he closely came,
His armie he deuides in sundry parts,
Least breach of order bring them out of frame,
And with the Irish band he first indents,
To spoile their lodgings, and to rob their tents.

L iij

36

The rest he thus in prudent sort deuides,
The vaward *Zerbin* hath in gouernment,
The Duke of Lancaster the battell guides,
The Duke of Clarence with the rereward went,
Renaldo with some chosen men besides,
Giues first the charge by generall consent:
Then on a sodaine they do raise a shout,
And fill our side with courage, theirs with doubt.

37

Renaldo riding out afore the rest,
(With mind to do as much as he had said)
Puts spurs to horse and sets his speare in rest,
His onely sight the Pagans greatly fraid,
With fainting hearts pale lookes and panting brest,
They shew most certaine signes of minds dismayd,
Yet stout king *Puliano* shewes no token,
Of heart astonish'd or courage broken.

38

But trusting to his strength, and void of feare,
And ranging out in fight of all his band,
He met him man to man, and speare to speare,
He met him horse to horse, and hand to hand:
But straight it plainly was discerned there,
Sleight without force in little steed doth stand:
This kind of fight was of a rougher fort,
Then running of a course at tilt in sport.

39

Thus was king *Pulian* ouerthrowne and tane,
To no small terror of the Pagan host,
Next came the king (that giant) of Oran,
That of his goodly stature much doth boast,
But loone *Renaldo* brought him to his bane,
His horse, his weapon, and his life he lost;
The horse was glad to find himselfe enlarged,
And of his heavy burden so discharged.

40

Nor was *Renaldo* of his sword more spare,
Then of his speare before himselfe he shewd,
His blade *Fusberta* pierced to the bare.
When he his thrusts or deadly blowes bestowd:
No shields, no coates of so good temper are,
Nor cloth in hundred folds together sowd,
That this same fatall blade of his withstood,
But that at eu'ry blow it fetcht the blood.

41

Nor did *Zerbino* merit common praise,
That of his value shewd that day good proofe,
He met the stoutest Turkes at all assayes,
On horse, on foote, at hand, and farre aloofe,
Attempting and performing sundry wayes,
That might be for their harme and his behoofe:
And all his band in fight was fierce and hot,
As is the nature of the valiant Scot.

42

And thus their fiery heate and courage bold,
Well shewd by blowes they to the Pagans gaue,
Did make their stomacks faint, their courage cold,
And glad in th'end by flight themselves to saue:
For *Sobrin* one in yeares and iudgement old,
(Though no lesse stout the those lesse age that haue)
Doth now a little with his band retire,
To shun the fury of the Scottish fire.

43

The worthy Dukes of Albanie and Mar,
Enfild in valiant sort the good successe,
And with the same preuailed had so far,
As they had brought the Turkes to great distresse,
Till *Isolir* the new king of Nauar,
Came with his band their fury to repressse,
And on that side the battell did restore,
Almost now lost, at least declind before.

44

Then grew the fight on both sides firme and stable,
Both sides defend, both sides alike inuade,
They cast on both sides darts innumerable,
And make therewith a darke vnpleasing shade:
An endlesse worke it were to write the rable,
The Christens kild with bow, with bill, with blade,
Sometime the sway goeth hither, sometime thither,
Like waters driu'n with doubtfull tides and wether.

45

When one is slaine, his roome another fills,
When one is hurt, another takes his place,
And he that now another smites and kills,
*Fals dead himselfe within a little space:
Great heapes of bodies dead make little hills,
The earth it selfe doth looke with bloody face,
The greene wherewith it erst was ouerspred,
Did turne to languin and vermilion red.

46

My pen would faile, and skill would be too scant,
To tell the famous acts that *Zerbin* wrought,
How his new brother, noble *Ariodant*,
A fresh supply against the Pagans brought,
And how still one supplying tothers want,
Against the Turkes with mutuall forces fought,
Then namely when the Prince was almost slaine,
By bastards two of *Aragon* in Spaine.

47

Chelindo one, the other *Mosco* hight,
These two at once on *Zerbin* bent their force,
In hope that if their hands could hit aright,
To wound him sore, or at the least vnhorse,
They wound him not, yet forst him to alight,
For vnder him so sore they hurt his horse,
To serue his Lord he was no longer able,
But made the field his euerlasting stable.

48

This foile and fall his courage more do whet,
To lose the seruice of his trustie steed,
But from the saddle quickly he doth get,
His losse his wrath, his wrath reuenge doth breed:
He meanes not long to tarry in their debt,
That to his horse did this vnworthy deed,
And first he gaue to *Mosco* such a thrust,
As made him tumble senselesse in the dust.

49

But when *Chelindo* saw his brother ded,
Reuenge and feare in him together straued,
His inward feare prouokt him to haue fled,
Himselfe from danger imminent to saue,
But straight reuenge another humor bred,
Expelling feare, and makes him bold and braue,
He spurs his horse in hope to ouerrunne him,
But *Zerbin* slightly steps aside to shunne him.

And

50

And such a blow he lent him as he past,
Vpon his shoulders from the rere demaine,
That horse and man vnto the ground were cast,
Whence neither of them rose aliue againe:
And now the Spanish band came in so fast,
As noble *Zerbin* had almost bin slaine,
But *Ariodante* then him selfe besturd,
And makes an open lane by dint of sword.

51

The while, the Duke of Clarence doth assaile,
Their rere that was by *Baricondo* led,
The English archers shoot as thick as haile,
Which to their horsemen great annoyance bred,
On eu'ry side the Christens do preuaile,
On eu'ry side the fearfull Pagans fled,
Great store were slaine, and many prisners taken,
Their battell now declined fore and shaken.

52

And had bin lost had not *Ferraw* by chance
Come to their aid as yong *Olimpio* fell,
Slaine by a knight of Scotland or of France,
A cruell knight, whose name I cannot tell:
Ferraw was fore aggriued at this mitchance,
He knew this youth, and lou'd him passing well,
Because his skill in musick was so choice,
Both for sweet stroke, and for his pleasing voice.

53

Had not the humor of ambition vaine,
With crotchets new his foolish fancie fild,
He might haue better staid at home in Spaine,
Then come abroad to be in battell kild:
But thus we see they get but losse and paine,
That deale in that in which they be not skild,
I wish musitions meddle with their songs,
And pray the souldiers to reuenge their wrongs.

54

Ferraw that saw ten thousand slaine before,
Without or fetching sigh or shedding teare,
With this his minions death was griued so sore,
As scarce he could eu'n then to weepe forbear,
But he that kild him shall abuy therefore,
By *Macon* and *Lanfusa* he doth sweare,
And straight performd it to the knights great paine,
For with his pollax out he dasht his braine.

55

Nor so content, he runs among the presse,
And in his rage so many Scots he slew,
That their late forwardnesse he did repress,
And causd that they in hast themselues withdrew:
Then to the tents was sent the king of Fesse,
To make resistance to the Irish crew,
That spoild their lodgings hauing robd the best,
And went about to set on fire the rest.

56

Then when the stout King *Agramant* espide,
The danger great he and his men were in,
And how these new supplies on eu'ry side,
Made his retire, and ground of them did win:
To saue his owne in time he doth provide,
And lets alone the wals and them within,
Himselfe with Lords and other Princes store,
Came where *Ferraw* was entred late before.

57

And in such strength they do their forces linke,
And with such fury they restore the fight,
That now the Scots began to faile and shrink,
Saue that *Renaldo* came eu'n then in sight,
And cride, O worthy Scots, and do you thinke
To saue your selues by so vnworthy flight?
Will you so leese the honor late you wonne?
Care you no more to saue your masters sonne?

58

Do you regard no more your reputation,
By you in sundry bloody battels got,
To leaue the flowre and iewel of your nation,
Amid his foes as if you lou'd him not?
Ye shame your selues and all your generation,
If you distaine you with so foule a blot,
Turne, turne I say, and take some heart of grace,
And meet and smite these Panims in the face.

59

They that before were sore with feare possest,
Were now so heartned, that with honest shame,
Each one doth seeme his safetie to detest,
Each one his mind with anger doth inflame,
And where they left their captaine halfe distrest,
With this so forward guide as fast they came:
So *Zerbin* rescude was from Turkish forces,
And mounted straight one of the emptie horses.

60

Renaldo that did euer take delight
To set on those that were most strong and stout,
When once king *Agramant* was come in sight,
Him fro the rest forthwith he singles out:
But when betweene them was begun the fight,
They hundred were by those that stood about,
I meane the Turks, who their chief Prince defended,
Who else perhap his raigne eu'n then had ended.

61

Now while without the wals the battell so,
On either side with fury was renewd,
Fierce *Rodomont* within did worke such wo,
More rutull fight with eye was neuer vewd;
To wracke profane the holy temples go,
He setteth fire on all, and to conclude,
He did alone so spoile the goodly citie,
As might haue mou'd a stony heart to pitie.

62

And while King *Charles* that was farre off from thence,
Did entertaine the new come English host,
The which *Renaldo* sent for their defence)
Behold there came a messenger in post,
That lookt like one bestraught of wit and sence,
His voice with hast and feare was welnigh lost,
And when his broken words were plainly hard,
Ah well away (he cries) we all are mard.

63

Some fiend of hell (for sure a fiend of hell
It is that doth our citie so destroy)
Is sent from *Belzebub* with vs to dwell,
To worke our vtter ruine and annoy:
This day we must bid all good dayes farewell,
This day must be the last day of our ioy,
Lo yonder how our sacred temples smoke,
Nor one in their defence dares strike a stroke.

L. iiii

Renaldas encouragement of the Scots.

S. m. l.

Looke how a man would be amazd to heare
A noise confusd of backward ringing bells,
And after find, when he approacheth neare,
New set on fire his house wherein he dwells;
In such amazement and in such a feare
Was Charles to heare the tale this poore man tels;
And as he thither nearer came and nearer,
Hefeels the buildings clearer burne and clearer.

Moral.

In the person of Griffino is described a yong man besotted with loue and affection of a vile strumpet, so as she easily perswades him, that he that indeed kept her so openly, as all the world spake of it, was her brother, or her cosingerman, or some such matter as easily blinded his eyes, being bleared afore with affection: and in this kind, though I meane to touch none by name, yet I doubt not but many will feele themselves touched of both sorts; such as Griffino, that place their loue in vnworthy persons: and such as Martano, that vnder the name of kinred, are most vile and filthy adulterers, which how common it is now a dayes, this saying shewes, turned now almost to a prouerbe, The nearer of kin, the sooner in: and that verse of Ouid, translated, or pretily turned by a pleasant Gentleman to this purpose,

Tuta frequēque via est sub amici fallere nomen,
Tuta frequēque licet sit via crimen habet.

A safe and common way it is by kinred to deceaue,
But safe and common though it be, tis knau'ry by your leane.

Master Edward
Dier a Somerset-
shire man.

The great aphorisme or maxime set downe in the two last verses of the second staffe of this booke, was imitated by a Gentleman of our countrey in his yonger dayes, though a man neuer of great wit and worth: his verse was this,

He that hath plast his heart on hie,
Must not lament although he die.

To which purpose, all that haue written of this common place of loue, and chiefly Petrark in his infinite sonets, in the midst of all his lamentation, still had this comfort, that his loue was placed on a worthy Ladie: and our English Petrark, Sir Philip Sidney, or (as Sir Walter Raulegh in his Epitaph worthily calleth him) the Scipio and the Petrark of our time, often comforting himselfe in the sonets of Stella, though despairing to attaine his desire, and (though that tyrant honour still refused) yet the nobilitie, the beautie, the worth, the graciousnesse, and those her other perfections, as made him both count her and call her inestimable rich; makes him in the midst of those his moanes, reioyce even in his owne greatest losses, as in his eighteenth sonet, which many I am sure haue read:

With what sharpe checks I in my selfe am shent,
When into reasons recknings I do go,
And by such counts, my selfe a bankrout know,
Of all those goods which heau'n to me hath lent,
Vnable quite to pay eu'n natures rent,
Which vnto it by birthright I did ow,
And which is worse, no good excuse can show,
But that my wealth I haue most idly spent:
My youth doth wait, my knowledge brings forth toyes,
My wit doth striue those passions to defend,
With my reward (spoyle with vaine annoyes)
I find my course to loose it selfe doth bend:
I see, yet do no greater sorrow take,
Then that I leele no more for Stellas sake.

And thus much of this matter of loue. In the conflict at Paris gate, in presence of both Princes, we may note how the Generals eye is a great encouragement to the souldier. In Renaldos oration, we may obserue that eloquence and learning is not onely a great ornament, but sometime a great aid to a Captaine. And for the speech it selfe, it is both pithy and methodicall. For being (as they terme it) of the deliberative kind, it layes downe (though briefly, yet plainly if you mark it) the facilitie, the commendation, the vtilitie, and the necessitie of that to which he perswades them.

Historie.

For historical matter, there is litle in this booke, only where he toucheth the weake buildings of Paris, being built so high and so sleight, it is euident they are so at this day, and doubtlesse it is a great blot in a magnificent citie to see browne paper houses, which were a matter easily redressed in one age: as Augustus Cæsar did at Rome, forbidding them to build but with stone, and making great prouision for stufte and cariage for such as would build, at a reasonable price, as Suetonius setteth downe at large: but this is not much to the purpose.

Allegorie.

Whereas Silence is said to be sent by God, with an Angell to conduct the Christian succors to Paris: by the Angell is meant allegorically Gods assistance and grace, without which no victories can be obtained: and by Silence is vnderstood wise secretnesse, to conceale our intent from our enemies, which is a great furtherance in warre.

Allusion.

For the Allusion of Martano, I referre it to the next booke, where his cowardize is more largely touched.

The end of the Annotations of the sixteenth Booke.

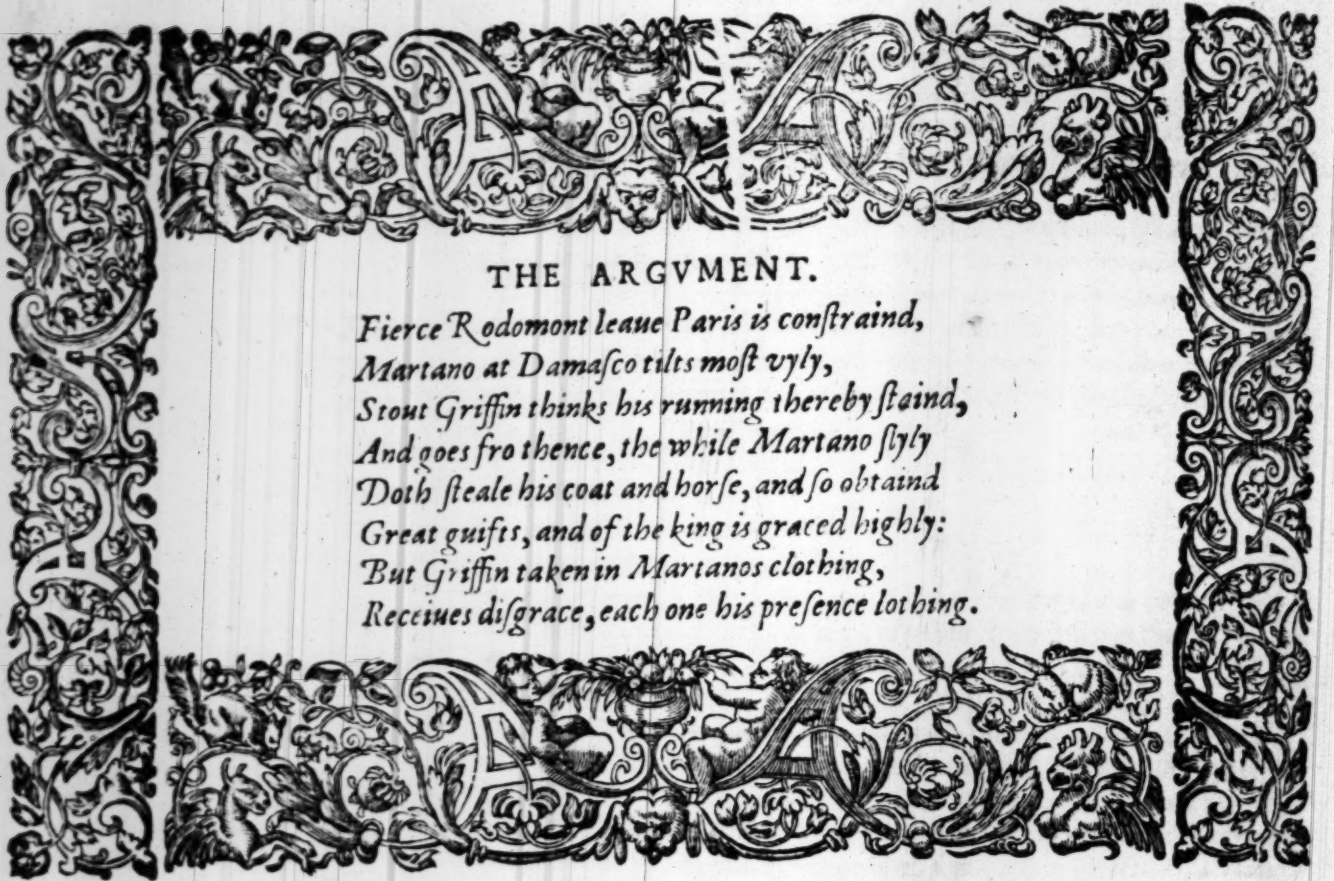
Of hardie Squires he culls a gallant crew,
And meanes to driue away this wicked wight,
If man it be, or spright with humane hew,
That doth vnto the towne this foule despight:
Now came he where he plaine might see in vew,
Men murdred, houses burnd, a wofull sight.
But now although perhap my storie please you,
To pawse a litle may refresh and ease you.

THE ARGUMENT

1. The first is the *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 2. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 3. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 4. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 5. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 6. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 7. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 8. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 9. *Prætor*, who is the head of the
 10. *Prætor*, who is the head of the

Turn back, O Lord, my God,
 And let me see Thy face,
 For Thou hast hid Thy face
 From me, and I am sad.
 Hearken unto my voice,
 O Lord, my God;
 For Thou art good and merciful,
 And gracious to all men.
 Turn back, O Lord, my God,
 And let me see Thy face,
 For Thou hast hid Thy face
 From me, and I am sad.
 Hearken unto my voice,
 O Lord, my God;
 For Thou art good and merciful,
 And gracious to all men.

The first of which is the
 second of which is the
 third of which is the
 fourth of which is the
 fifth of which is the
 sixth of which is the
 seventh of which is the
 eighth of which is the
 ninth of which is the
 tenth of which is the
 eleventh of which is the
 twelfth of which is the
 thirteenth of which is the
 fourteenth of which is the
 fifteenth of which is the
 sixteenth of which is the
 seventeenth of which is the
 eighteenth of which is the
 nineteenth of which is the
 twentieth of which is the
 twenty-first of which is the
 twenty-second of which is the
 twenty-third of which is the
 twenty-fourth of which is the
 twenty-fifth of which is the
 twenty-sixth of which is the
 twenty-seventh of which is the
 twenty-eighth of which is the
 twenty-ninth of which is the
 thirtieth of which is the
 thirty-first of which is the
 thirty-second of which is the
 thirty-third of which is the
 thirty-fourth of which is the
 thirty-fifth of which is the
 thirty-sixth of which is the
 thirty-seventh of which is the
 thirty-eighth of which is the
 thirty-ninth of which is the
 fortieth of which is the
 forty-first of which is the
 forty-second of which is the
 forty-third of which is the
 forty-fourth of which is the
 forty-fifth of which is the
 forty-sixth of which is the
 forty-seventh of which is the
 forty-eighth of which is the
 forty-ninth of which is the
 fiftieth of which is the
 fifty-first of which is the
 fifty-second of which is the
 fifty-third of which is the
 fifty-fourth of which is the
 fifty-fifth of which is the
 fifty-sixth of which is the
 fifty-seventh of which is the
 fifty-eighth of which is the
 fifty-ninth of which is the
 sixtieth of which is the
 sixty-first of which is the
 sixty-second of which is the
 sixty-third of which is the
 sixty-fourth of which is the
 sixty-fifth of which is the
 sixty-sixth of which is the
 sixty-seventh of which is the
 sixty-eighth of which is the
 sixty-ninth of which is the
 seventieth of which is the
 seventy-first of which is the
 seventy-second of which is the
 seventy-third of which is the
 seventy-fourth of which is the
 seventy-fifth of which is the
 seventy-sixth of which is the
 seventy-seventh of which is the
 seventy-eighth of which is the
 seventy-ninth of which is the
 eightieth of which is the
 eighty-first of which is the
 eighty-second of which is the
 eighty-third of which is the
 eighty-fourth of which is the
 eighty-fifth of which is the
 eighty-sixth of which is the
 eighty-seventh of which is the
 eighty-eighth of which is the
 eighty-ninth of which is the
 ninetieth of which is the
 ninety-first of which is the
 ninety-second of which is the
 ninety-third of which is the
 ninety-fourth of which is the
 ninety-fifth of which is the
 ninety-sixth of which is the
 ninety-seventh of which is the
 ninety-eighth of which is the
 ninety-ninth of which is the
 hundredth of which is the



THE ARGUMENT.

Fierce Rodomont leaue Paris is constraind,
 Martano at Damasco tilts most vyly,
 Stout Griffin thinks his running thereby staind,
 And goes fro thence, the while Martano slyly
 Doth steale his coat and horse, and so obtaiend
 Great guifts, and of the king is graced highly:
 But Griffin taken in Martanos clothing,
 Receiues disgrace, each one his presence lothing.

Of Sylla & Ma-
 riusa cruellise read
 Plutark in their
 liues.
 Helagabalus fir
 named Varius,
 for his monstrous
 lecherie, and his
 variouse therein.

Antoninus Bas-
 sianus slaine for
 his beaustifullnesse
 and crueltie, for
 which his name
 grew so odious,
 that none was e-
 uer after him so
 called.

Of Effelin I
 spake before in
 the notes of the
 shird booke.

* He meant her-
 by Lodowicke
 Sforze, that cal-
 led in Cheris the
 Rout of France
 into Italie.

He most iust God, when
 once mans sins do grow
 Beyond the bouids of par-
 don and of grace,
 Because that mē his iudge-
 ments iust may know,
 No lesse then loue, to rule
 on earth doth place,
 Vile Monsters such as ty-
 rannize vs so,

With wrong the right, with lust they lawes deface:
 For this same cause were Sylla sent and Marius,
 The Nerons both, and filthie minded Varius.

For this Domician held in Rome the raigne,
 And Antoninus of that name the last,
 And Massimin a base vnworthie twaine,
 To plague mankind in Princely throne was plait:
 For this in Thebs did cruell Creon raigne,
 With other tyrants more in ages past,
 For this of late hath Italie beene wonne,
 By men of Lombardie, of Goth and Hunne.

What should I of vniust Attyla speake?
 Of Effelin, and of an hundred more?
 Whom God doth send his anger iust to wreake,
 On vs that still neglect his sacred lore.
 The times forepast long since, the present eake,
 Of such examples yeelds vs wofull store,
 How we vnthankfull and vnfruitfull sheepe,
 Are giu'n to hungrie rau'ning Wolues to keepe.

* Such Wolues as would not onely by their wills,
 Seaze all our goods and substance as their pray,

But also send beyond the Alps high hills,
 For other Wolues more hunger staru'd then thay:
 The bones of men that Thralimeno fills:
 The fights of Treb and Cannas are but play,
 If with our bloodie slaughters they compare,
 Of Adda, Mela, Ronco, and of Tare.

No doubt God in heau'nly throne that sits,
 And thence our deeds and thoughts doth plainly see
 Vs to be spoild and conquerd thus permits,
 By those that are perhaps as ill as we:
 But if to please him we would bend our wits,
 Then from these foes he soone would set vs free,
 And we should see their punishment er long,
 That vs oppresse by villanie and wrong.

But now to turne from whence I did digresse,
 I told you how when Charles the news had hard,
 Of houses burnd, and men in great distresse,
 By him that doth nor God nor man regard,
 Vnto their aid he doth him selfe addresse,
 And chuse some speciall men to be his guard,
 And meeting such as fled, their course he staid,
 And these or such like words to them he said.

O simple fooles, what meane you hence to runne?
 Turne backe for shame, turne backe and do not fly.
 You chuse the greater ill the lesse to shunne,
 To liue with shame, and may with honor dy,
 What citie haue you left when this is wonne?
 What hope is left a fortune new to try?
 Shall one vile Pagan boist another day,
 That he alone bath driu'n you all away?

This

8
This said, he came vnto the pallace gate,
Where now the Pagan Prince triumphant stood,
Most like a serpent fierce that hath of late,
His old skin cast and left it in the wood,
Reioycing now of his renewed state,
Of his fresh strength, of young and lustie blood,
He shewes his forked tongue and comes apace,
And eu'ie beast that sees him giues him place.

9
Thus scornfull and thus proud the Pagan stands,
With threats to spoile the Pallace and deface,
And not a man that once his force withstands,
Vntill king Charles appeared in the place;
Who looking on his old victorious hands,
Said thus; and is now alterd so the case,
That these my hands that wonted were to win,
To yeeld and to be faint should now begin?

10
Why should the strength, the vigor and the might,
That I was wont in you to feele now faile?
Shall this same Panim dogge eu'n in my fight,
My people slay, my dwelling house assaile?
No, first on me a thousand deaths alight,
No death can make a princely heart to quail;
And with that word with couched speare in rest,
He runnes and smites the Pagan on the brest.

11
And straight the other of the chosen crew,
On eu'ie side the Pagan do beset,
But how he scapt, and what did then ensue,
Another time ile tell, but not as yet:
For first some matters past I must renew,
And namely Griffin I may not forget,
And craftie Origilla with the tother,
That was her bedfellow and not her brother.

12
These three vnto Damasco came together,
The fair'st and richest towne of all the East,
What time great lords and knights repaired thither,
Allured by the fame of such a feast.
I told you from the holy citie hither,
Was fise or sixe dayes iourney at the least:
But all the townes about both small and great,
Are not like this for state and fruitfull seat.

13
For first, beside the cleare and temprat aire,
Not noid with sommers heat nor winters cold,
There are great store of buildings large and faire,
Of carued stone most stately to behold,
The streetes all pau'd where is their most repaire,
And all the ground is of so fruitfull mold,
That all the yeare their spring doth seeme to last,
And brings them store of fruites of daintie tast.

14
Aboue the Citie lies a little hill,
That shades the morning sunne in erly houres,
Of waters sweet (which here we vse to still)
They make such store with spice and iuyce of flowrs
As for the quantitie might driue a mill,
Their gardens haue faire walkes and shady bowrs:
But (that which chiefe maintaineth all the sweets)
Two christall streames do runne amid the streets.

15
Such wast he native beautie of the towne:
But now because they looke for great resort,
Of Princes and of Lords of great renowne,
They decke their citie in another sort:
Each Ladie putteth on her richest gowne,
Each house with Arras hang'd in stately port:
The noble youths do stand vpon comparison,
Whose horse doth best, who weares the best capariss

16
Thus Griffin and his mates come to this place,
And first they view these shows with great delight,
And after they had rode a litle space,
A courteous squire perswades them to alight,
And praieth them to do his house that grace,
To eate and take their lodgings there that night:
They thanke him for his kind and friendly offer,
And straight accept the courtie he doth profer.

17
They had set downe before them costly meat,
Of sundrie wines there was no litle store,
Of precious fruits the plentie was so great,
As they had seldome seene the like before:
The while their host doth vnto them repeat,
The cause of all this feasting, and wherefore
The king appointed all these solemne sports,
To draw together knights of sundrie sorts.

18
But Griffin (though he came not for this end,
For praise and brauerie at tilt to runne,
But came to find his fleeting female friend)
Yet was his courage such he would not shunne,
In these braue sports some litle time to spend,
Where of well doing honor might be wonne.
He promist straight though little were his leasure,
Before he go to see and shew some pleasure.

19
And first he asketh farther of the feast,
If it were new ordaind, or else of old?
His host replieth thus (my worthie guest) |
I shall in brieft to you this thing vnfold:
Our Prince the greatest Prince in all the East,
Hath newly pointed this great feast to hold;
This is the first, but all of his retinew,
Mind ech fourth month this custome to continew.

20
In token of great gladnes and great ioy,
By all the citie is the feast begunne,
In token of the danger and annoy,
That Norandin (our king) did lately shunne,
Lockt vp foure months where he could not enioy
The vse of earth, of water, aire nor sunne:
Yet at the four months end by hap he scaped
The death, with yawning mouth on him that gaped.

21
(But plaine to shew you whence did come the seed,
Of which this danger seemed first to grow)
Loue did to Norandin this danger breed,
The king of Cypres daughter pleasd him so,
Because her beautie did the rest exceed,
To see her, needs (in person) he would go:
He saw, he likt, he woode, he wun, he marrid her,
And homward then by ship he would haue carid her

*Norandin,
Here beginneth
the tale of Lusi-
na as this 20. st.
and endeth as
the 30.*

*Casars word
was vnto vidi
vica.*

*Virgil The first
Aeneid. Arcum
manu celerè que
sagittas accipit
sicque tela ge-
rebat Achates.*

But lo a wind and tempest rose so sore,
As three dayes space they looked to be drownd,
And made them land vpon an vnknowne shore,
Where straight we pitcht our tents vpon the ground,
And (for of trees and grasse there was good store)
The King in hope some venison to haue found,
Into the next adioyning wood doth goe,
Two pages beare his quiver and his boe.

His meaning was some stag or buck to kill,
We wait his comming in the tent at ease,
When suddenly such noise our eares doth fill,
As winds in woods, and waues do make in seas,
And ay more nee vs it approached, till
We plaine might see vnto our sore disease,
A monster huge that ran along the sand,
Destroying all that in the way did stand.

This Orke (for so men do the monster call)
Directed straight his course vpon our tent,
His eyes were out, how ere it did befall,
But yet he was so quicke and sharpe of sent,
As all his blindnesse holpe not vs at all,
He hunteth like a spaniell by the vent,
His sent is such as none can hope to shunne him,
His pace is such as no man can outrunne him.

*Quid Metam 3.
Sine illa tela pri-
uabant: sine fuga
sine ipsis incens
prohibebat v-
trumque.*

Thus whether they prepar'd to fight or fly,
Or whether feare both fight and flight did let,
He takes them as his prisoners by and by,
Of fortie, ten scarce to the ship could get,
Among the other prisoners tane was I,
Whilst I our Queene in safetie would haue set,
But all in vaine to flie, it did not boote,
He was so quicke of sent, and swift of foote.

As shepheards hang a wallet at their wast,
So at his girdle hangs a mightie sacke,
In which the better sort of vs he plait,
The rest he bound together in a packe,
And to his caue that was most huge and vast,
He beares vs (hopelesse euer to come backe)
A comely matron in this den he had,
Maids faire and foule, some poore, some richly clad.

Beside this female family of his,
He hath a caue wherein he keepes his flocke,
That caue in length and largenesse passeth this,
Made all by hand out of the stonie rocke:
And (for mans flesh his chiefeest daintie is)
Into the caue he safely doth vs locke,
The while he leades abroade his goates and sheepe,
Which in the fields adioyning he doth keepe.

The King not knowing this, returned backe,
The silence that he found some feare did breed:
But when he found his wife and men were lacke,
He then to sea did hast him with great speed:
He sees plaine signes of hast, of spoyle, of wracke,
Yet knowes he not the author of this deed,
Vntill he had his ship by hap recovered,
Then by his men the fact was plaine discouered.

29

When he had heard at last the wofull newes,
How greatly was his heart surprysd with griefe:
What gods, what fortune did he not accule?
For all his losses but *Lucyna* chiefe:
But dangers all and death he first will chuse,
Ere he then leaue his loue without reliefe,
He either will her libertie procure,
Or else he will like chance with her endure.

30

He leaues his ship and goes by land apace,
There where the monster had his loue conuaid,
And often wailes her hard and wofull case,
Desiring and despairing of her aid.
Now came he in the kenning of the place,
And stands twixt halfe amazd and halfe afraid:
At last he enters (loue expelling feare)
When by good hap the monster was not there.

31

His wife was there, who with compassion moued,
Admonisht him to make but little stay,
But hasten thence if so his life he loued,
Lest that her husband find him in the way:
Yet from his purpose this him not remoued,
But to the sober matron he doth say,
In vaine you seeke to driue me hence by terror,
Desire hath hither brought me, and not error.

32

By my ill hap while I abroade was riding,
The Orke bare away my dearest wife,
I hither come of her to heare some tiding,
Or hauing lost my loue, to leefe my life,
I care not I, if she in life be biding,
If she be dead, my death shall end this strife,
Loue in this point so resolute hath made me,
You should but leefe your labour to disswade me.

33

The gentle matron in this sort replies,
Know this, thy wife in safetie doth remaine,
But hard it is to compasse or deuise,
Which way to get her from his hand againe,
His want of fight, his pasing sent supplies,
To striue with him by force it were but vaine,
He spoileth men, but women do not die,
Saue onely such as striue away to flie.

34

But those he finds his companie to shunne,
With hatred great he doth for ay pursue,
Some he doth hang all naked in the sunne,
And day by day their torments doth renew:
And some immediatly to death are done,
Both yong and old, both foule or faire of hew,
So that to seeke to let *Lucyna* free,
May harme her much, and little profit thee.

35

Wherefore my sonne depart the while thou may,
(The matron saith) *Lucyna* shall not die,
For hither shortly he will her conuay,
Where she shall fare no worse then these and I,
Depart? (quoth he) nay here I mind to stay,
And fall what shall, I will my fortune trie,
And if my hap be such I cannot free her,
At least I meane before I die to see her.

The

36
The matrons mind with much compassion moued,
To see his louing and most constant mind,
That from his purpose would not be remoued,
To bring him aid and comfort was inclin'd:
And then she told him how it him behoued,
If so to see his wife he had assign'd,
To vie some such deuice as she would tel him, (him,
That when the Orke should come he might not smel

37
She had that hanged in the houses rooffe,
The hairie skins of many a bearded goate,
And knowing best what was for his behoofe,
Of one of them she makes him make a coate,
And with goates suet for a further prooffe,
To noint his body from the foote to throate:
And in this sort his shape and fauour hiding,
He commeth to the place where we were biding.

38
Now night drew neare, his horne the Orke doth blow,
And all his heards came backe vnto his fold,
And *Norandino* among the goates doth go,
And enters in, loue maketh him so bold,
The Orke shuts the doore, and leaues vs so,
Shut vp as safe as in a towre or hold,
Then doth the king at large vnto his louer,
His comming and the meanes thereof discouer.

39
Lucina doth not onely not reioyce,
To see her husband come thus strangely clad,
But with most lamentable mournfull voyce,
She blamd him that such perill ventred had,
And swears that if she might haue had her choyce,
She would alone haue felt this fortune bad,
And that before it somewhat ead her paine,
To thinke that he in safetie did remaine.

40
Thus said *Lucina* faire with watred eies,
As seeming now more dolefull then before;
But *Norandino* in this sort replies,
Thinkst thou my deare I loued thee no more?
Yes sure, and will eu'n now a meane deuise
Both thee and these to freedom to restore,
And to deliuer from this seruile flauery,
By helpe of this same skin and greafe vsauery.

41
And straight he taught vs as himselfe had tride,
Each one to kill a goate and take the skin,
And outwardly to weare the hairy hide,
And to be nointed with the greafe within.
Thus eu'ry one doth for himselfe prouide,
Before the sunne did yet to shine begin,
Then came the Orke and mou'd away the stone,
And out the bearded goates came one and one.

42
The smelling Orke at the doore doth stand,
We past like goates and make no noise nor speech,
Yet oft he groped with his hideous hand,
But poore *Lucina* could not chuse but skreech;
Or that he hapt to touch her with his wand,
Or else too roughly pawd her by the breech,
So back he puts her straight, and locks her vp,
And swears that she should drinke a sory cup.

43
Himselfe driues out his flocke (as wont he was)
And we like goates among the goates do keepe,
And when as they were feeding on the grasse,
The monstrous heardman laid him downe to sleepe.
Thus we escapt, but our good King alas,
(That mist his loue) doth nought but waile & weep
And saue that still he hopt of her reliefe,
He would no doubt haue dide of very griefe.

44
At night he turneth back with like desire,
As he before had come to set her free,
And he conceales himselfe with like attire,
From him that wants his instrument to see.
The Orke inflam'd with cruell rage and ire,
And finds himselfe deceiued thus to be,
This recompence he points her for her paines,
Vpon that hill to hang each day in chaines.

45
A cruell doome, but who could it resist?
Away went we, each for himselfe afraid,
But *Norandino* euer doth persist
In his first purpose of procuring aid,
Lamenting that so narrowly he mist
To bring her out, among the goates he staid,
And like a goate (forgetting his estate)
He go'th out early, and returneth late.

46
She sees him go and come, but all in vaine,
She maketh signes to him to haue him part,
He constantly resolueth to remaine,
The loue of her possesseth so his hart,
Despising danger and enduring paine,
He hopeth hopelesse still to ease her smart,
At foure months end (good fortune so prepar'd)
Gradasso thither came and *Mandricard*.

47
And (for her father was their louing friend)
They gaue this bold attempt to set her free,
And to her father straight they do her send,
Who was full glad and ioyfull her to see,
And that her daungers had this happie end:
But *Norandino* was more glad then he,
Who with the goats no longer now did stay,
But while the Orke slept he stole away.

48
And now for ioy of this great perill past,
In which he stayd so wofull and forlorne,
And that the memorie thereof may last,
To those that shalbe, and are yet vnborne,
(For neuer Prince before such wo did tast,
Nor stayd so long in miserie and scorne,
And it shalbe iust sixteene weeks tomorrow,
That he remained in this wo and sorow.)

49
Therefore I say the king prepares this sport,
With verie great magnificence and host,
Inuiting hither men of eu'rie sort,
Such as in chiuallrie excell the most,
That far and neare may carie the report,
Of these great triumphs vnto eu'rie cost.
This tale the courteous host did tell his guest,
Of him that first ordaind the sumptuous feast.

50

In this and such like talke they spend the night,
And then they sleepe vpon their beds of downe,
But when that once it shined cleare and light,
The trumpets sounded ouer all the towne,
And *Griffin* straight puts on his armor bright,
Aspiring after fame and high renowne;
His leud companion likewise doth the same,
To shew a hope as well as he of fame.

51

All armed thus they came vnto the field,
And view the warlike troupes as they did passe,
Where some had painted on their crest and shield,
Or some deuice that there described was,
What hope or doubt his loue to him did yeeld,
They all were Christens then, but now alas,
They all are Turks vnto the endlesse shame,
Of those that may and do not mend the same.

52

For where they should employ their sword and lance,
Against the Infidels our publike foes,
Gods word and true religion to aduance,
They to poore Christens worke perpetuall woes:
To you I write, ye kings of Spaine and France,
Let these alone, and turne your force on those:
And vnto you also I write as much,
Ye nations fierce, Zwizzers I meane and Dutch.

53

*Charles the great
was the first that
was called the
most Christian
King, for defend-
ing the Church
of Rome.
Ferdinando was
the first that was
called Catholike,
for driving the
Moors out of
Granata.*

Lo, tone of Christen kings vsurps a name,
Another Catholike will needs be called:
Why do not both your deeds declare the same?
Why are Christs people slaine by you and thrall'd?
Get backe againe Ierusalem for shame,
That now the Turke hath tane from you and walled
Constantinople get that famous towne,
That erst belonged to th'Imperiall crowne.

54

Dost not thou Spaine confront with Affrike shore,
That more then Italy hath thee offended?
Yet to her hurt thou leauest that before,
Against the Infidels thou hadst intended:
O Italy a slaue for euermore,
In such sort ward as neuer can be mended,
A slaue to slaues, and made of sinne a sinke,
And sotted sleepe like men orecome with drinke.

55

Ye Swizzers fierce, if feare of famine driue you,
To come to Lombardie to seeke some food,
Are not the Turks as neare? why should it grieve you
To spill your foes, and spare your brothers blood?
They haue the gold and riches to relieue you,
Enrich your selues with lawfull gotten good,
So shall all Europe be to you beholding,
For driving them from these parts and withholding.

56

*This was Leo the
semit.*

Thou Lion stout that holdst of heau'n the kayes,
(A waightie charge) see that from drowfie sleepe
Thou wake our realme, and bring her ioyfull dayes,
And from these forren wolues it safely keepe,
God doth thee to this height of honor raise,
That thou mayst feed and well defend thy sheepe,
That with a roing voice and mighty arme,
Thou mayst withhold thy flock from eu'ry harme.

57

But whither rouses my rudely rolling pen,
That waxe so sawcie to reprove such peeres?
I said before that in Damasco then
They Christend were (as in records appeares)
So that the armor of their horse and men
Was like to ours (though changd of later yeares)
And Ladies filld their galleries and towrs,
To see the iusts as they did here in ours.

58

Each strives in shew his fellow to exceed,
And to be gallant in his mistris fight,
To see each one manage his stately steed,
Was to the standers by a great delight:
Some praise vnto themselves, some shame do breed,
By shewing horses doings wrong or right,
The chiefeft prize that should be of this tilt,
An armor was rich, set with stone and gilt.

59

By hap a merchant of Armenia found
This armour, and to *Nerandin* it sold,
Who, had he knowne how good it was and sound,
Would not haue left it sure for any gold,
(The circumstance I cannot now expound,
I meane ere long it shall to you be told)
Now must I tell of *Griffin* that came in,
Iust when the sport and tilting did begin.

60

Eight valiant knights the chalenge did sustaine,
Against all commers that would runne that day,
These eight were of the Princes priuate traine,
Of noble blood, and noble eu'ry way,
They fight in sport, but some in sport were slaine,
For why as hotly they did fight in play,
As deadly foes do fight in battell ray,
Saue that the King may when he list them stay.

61

Now *Griffins* fellow was *Martano* named,
Who (though he were a coward and a beast)
Like bold blind Bayard he was not ashamed,
To enter like a knight among the rest,
His countenance likewise in shew he framed,
As though he were as forward as the best,
And thus he stood and viewd a bitter fight,
Between a Baron and another Knight,

62

Lord of Seleucia the tone they call,
And one of eight that did maintaine the iust,
The Knight *Ombruno* hight of person tall,
Who in his vizer tooke so great a thrust,
That from his horse astonied he did fall,
And with his liuely blood distaind the dust:
This fight amazd *Martano* in such sort,
He was afraid to leese his life in sport.

63

Soone after this so fierce conflict was done,
Another challenger straight steppeth out,
With whom *Martano* was requird to runne,
But he (whose heart was euer full of doubt)
With fond excuses sought the same to shunne,
And shewd himselfe a faint and dastard lout,
Till *Griffin* egd him on, and blam'd his feare,
As men do set a mastiue on a Beare.

Then

64

Then tooke he heart of grace, and on did ride,
And makes a little flourish with his speare;
But in the middle way he stept aside,
For feare the blow would be too big to beare:
Yet one that would seeke this disgrace to hide,
Might in this point impute it not to feare,
But rather that his horse not good and redie,
Did shun the tilt, and ranne not eu'n nor stedie.

65

But after with his sword he dealt so ill,
Demofthenes him could not haue defended,
He shewd both want of courage and of skill,
So as the lookers on were all offended,
And straight with hissing and with voices shrill,
The conflict cowardly begun was ended:
In his behalfe was *Griffin* sore ashamed,
His heart thereto with double heate inflamed.

66

For now he sees how much on him it stands,
With double value to wipe out the blot,
And shewd himselfe the more stout of his hands,
Sith his companion shewd himselfe a sot,
His fame or shame must flie to forren lands,
And if he now should faile one little iot,
The same wold seem a foule and huge transgression,
His mate had fild their minds with such impression.

67

The first he met Lord of Sidona hight,
And towards him he runs with malsie speare,
And gaue a blow that did so heauie light,
As to the ground it did him backward beare:
Then came of *Laodice* another knight,
On him the staffe in peeces three did teare,
Yet was the counterbuffe thereof so great,
The knight had much ado to keepe his leate.

68

But when they came with naked swords to trie,
Which should the honor and the prise obtaine,
So *Griffin* did with deadly strokes him plie,
At last he left him ston'd on the plaine.
Straightway two valiant brothers standing by,
That at *Griffin* tooke no small disdain,
The one *Corimbo*, tother *Tirse* hight,
These two forthwith do challenge him to fight.

69

Succesliuely them both he ouerthrew,
And now men thought that he the prise would win,
But *Salintern* that saw them downe in vew,
To enuie good *Griffin* doth begin,
This man the stoutst of all the courtly crew,
Doth take a speare in hand, and enters in,
And to the combat *Griffin* straight defies,
And scornes to haue a stranger win the prize.

70

But *Griffin* chose one staffe among the rest,
The biggest and the strongest of a score,
And with the same he pierceth backe and brest,
That downe he fell and neuer stirred more;
The King that loued and esteemed him best,
Laments his death, and maketh mone therefore,
But yet the common sort were faine and glad,
That knew his mind and manners were but bad.

71

Next after him two others he doth meet,
Ermofilo the captaine of his guard,
And *Carmond* Admirall of all his fleet,
With these a while he had a conflict hard,
The first vnhorst was left vpon his feet,
The other with a blow was almost mard.
Thus of eight challengers remaind but one,
The rest were quite subdude by him alone.

72

This one was he of whom at first I spake,
Lord of Seleucia a valiant man,
This one to *Griffin* did resistance make,
And long it was ere ought of him he wan,
But one blow on his head so fierce he strake,
As he likewise to stagger now began,
Had not the King made them to haue bene parted,
Sure *Griffin* had him kild ere he had parted.

73

Thus all those eight, that all the world defide,
By one alone were vanquished and slaine,
So as the King was forced to prouide,
An order new for those that do remaine;
(By parting runners some on either side)
For yet was spent not past an houre or twaine,
Lest this his triumph should haue end too soone,
He makes them spend therein the aftermoone.

74

But *Griffin* full of wrath and discontent,
Backe to his host with his companion came,
The praise he wan did him not so content,
As he was grieu'd at his companions shame:
Wherefore to leaue the towne they do consent,
While men were busie looking on the game,
And to a little towne fast by he goes,
And meanes himselfe a while for to repose.

75

The trauell sore he had before endured,
So great a wearinesse in him had bred,
And such desire of sleepe withall procured,
As straight he gat him to his naked bed.
The while *Martano* to all fraud inured,
And vsing aid of her mitchieuous head,
(As he did soundly sleepe) deuisd the while
A stratageme most strange, him to beguile.

76

They do conclude to take *Griffin*'s steed,
And cote, and eu'ry warlike implement,
And that *Martano* in *Griffin*'s steed,
Himselfe to *Norandino* shall present.
This they deuisd, this they performd in deed,
And boldly backe againe *Martano* went,
In *Griffin*'s armor stoutly stepping in,
As did the Assle that ware the Lions skin,

77

He rusheth in among the thickest presse,
An houre before the setting of the sunne,
The King and all the rest straightway do guesse,
That this was he that had such honor wonne:
And straight great honour they to him addresse,
And cause the like by others to be done,
And his base name, not worthy to be named,
About the towne with honor was proclaimed.

M ij

In *Esop's fables*

78

Fast by the King he rideth cheeke by cheeke,
And in his praise they songs and verses make,
In Hebrew tongue, in Latin and in Greeke.
And now this while did *Griffin* hap to wake,
And seeing that his armour was to seeke,
He first begins some small mistrust to take,
Yet hardly could it sinke into his reason,
That she had giu'n consent to such a treason.

79

In feare and doubt no little time he houered;
But when his host the truth had plaine declar'd,
And that he saw the falshood plaine discouered,
By which she had in follies bands him snard,
The truth shewd plain, that loue before had couered,
And to reuenge this wrong he straight prepar'd,
But wanting other furniture (perforce)
He tooke *Martano's* armor and his horse.

80

And backe vnto *Damasco* he doth ride,
Arriuing there within an houre of night,
And entring at the gate vpon the side,
The pallace of the King stood plaine in sight,
Where then the King a banquet did prouide,
For many a Duke and Lord, and valiant Knight,
And *Griffin* boldly late among the rest,
Forgetting that he ware the scorned crest.

81

And taken for the man whose coate he ware,
His presence did the better sort offend,
Of which when vile *Martano* was aware,
That of the table late at th' vpper end,
And sees that to disgrace him they torbare,
And thinke him his companion and his frend:
His friendship and acquaintance he renounced,
And this hard doom of him he straight pronounced.

82

Sir King (quoth he) it seems that for my sake,
You graciously forbear to do him shame,
That of his basenesse shamefull prooffe did make
This day, and now againe confirms the same:
But you the matter and the man mistake,
I know not him, his nation, nor his name,
By chance I met him onely on the way,
I neuer saw him I, till yesterday.

83

Wherefore might I herein your grace aduise,
You should a sample make him for the rest,
That here presents vnto your princely eies,
Himselfe vnworthy, and vnwelcome guest,
Let him tormented be in cruell wise,
(This is my doome) let him be hangd at least,
And vnreuenged let him not be borne,
That knighthood should receiue so great a scorne.

*A fit counsellor
for a Prince.*

Morall

In the beginning of this booke, he shewes how God doth plague people oftentimes, by sending tyrants and most wicked and cruell Princes to rule ouer them; which as it is indeed the greatest punishment a country can haue, so of the contrary side, may be in like sort concluded, that countries cannot haue a more ample blessing of God, nor a greater testimonie of his fauour, then to haue a mercifull Prince, that loveth the people, and is carefull of their peace and profit: and as mine author complaineth of the misery of Italie, oppressed by tyrants, so contrariwise I might take occasion to magnifie the felicitie of our realme of England, for the gracious and mild gouernement of our Soueraigne, saue that so high and plentiful a matter, requires an entire treatise, and not so broken a discourse as I vse in these brieue notes, and therefore I reserve it wholly for another worke of mine owne, if God giue me abilitie to performe it: but now to the matter of this booke.

84

Thus much the vile and base *Martano* seth,
And *Origilla* soothd it with as much,
And wisht an halter stop the villains breth.
Nay (quoth the King) the sinne is nothing such,
As is in law or reason worthy death,
His life or yet his libertie to tuch:
This, for examples sake I thinke it meet,
To do him some disgrace in open street.

85

And straight he rounds a Sergeant in his eare,
And secretly appoints him what to do,
Who came forthwith vnto the table where
Griffin late, and made no more ado,
But leadeth him, that no such thing did feare,
A secret prison and a sure vnto,
And for that night he clapt him vp in fetters,
Where theeuers do vse to lie and euill debtors.

86

Next day *Martano* that did greatly dread,
Left this his foule deuce would come to light,
If *Griffin* should be heard his cause to pleade,
Therefore as soone as *Phabus* shined bright,
(Pretending businesse) away he sped,
And leaues *Griffin* in this wofull plight:
But ere he goes, the King to him imparts
No small rewards for his, nor his defaults.

87

But let him go his wayes, and do not doubt,
That this vnknowne and vnreuengd shall be:
Straight was *Griffin* from the iayle put out,
And carted so as all men might him see,
Tide hand and foot, and people all about,
Of which the most were but of meane degree,
Also the armor whence this error came,
Was hald about vnto his farder shame.

88

With many filthy words they him reuile,
From filthy tongues, that hard it is to stop,
And shewd him round about the towne the while,
At eu'ry crosse, and house, and stall and shop:
Then thinking him for euer to exile,
They led him of that hill vnto the top,
And there his bonds they loose with great disgrace,
And then they will him packe him thence apace.

89

With scornfull sound of basen, pot and pan,
They thought to driue him thence like Bees in
But when he was vntide, then he began (swarmes,
To make them know their error to their harmes,
Then he did lay about, and play the man,
Now hauing vse of both his warlike armes,
But in what sort he then dismayd and scared,
Within another booke shall be declared.

In that Rodomont kils and massacres the people, without resistance, or without any man to make head against him, we may marke how fitly and properly the multitude may be likened to sheepe, not onely in that they be shorn, and fleeced euery yeare for their wooll, and sometime pinched to the quicke by the greedie shearers, but also that when they should come to defend themselves, their houses, and children, from inuading of the enemye, they runne away like sheepe, from the noise of the barking of a little curre, vntill their shepheard come and defend them.

In the tale of Norandine, that for his faire Lucinas sake did hazard his life so manifestly, and after was contented to lap himselfe vp in a goates skin, and to noynt himselfe ouer with goates suet, we may note how hartie loue and affection, will make a man disdain nothing, be it neuer so base. In Martanos cowardise, and craftie vndermining of Griffino, we may marke how cowardly fellowes be commonly trecherous, and priue vnderminers. And in that Norandine (a good natured and affable Prince) did condemne Griffino to prison, without once calling him to answer for himselfe, we may take an excellent good note (as my authour hath done vpon this matter in the next booke) how hurtfull a thing it is in a comon wealth when a magistrate (and specially a Prince) shal heare such a Martanist as Martano, or such a Gil as Origilla was, whisper them in their eares, & giue malicious and vnttrue (though probable) informations against well deserving men: And sure, though some hold opinion that these kinde of people (called informers) be to be cherished, as necessarie seruants of the state, though defamed otherwise, and euen confessing themselves, that it is no honest mans office, yet for my part, I haue heard wise men say, that such men are hurtfull to the state in pollicie, and make more malcontents, then they discover, and I am sure it is far from the rules of Christen charitie, and to be controld euen by heathenish ciuillitie. Tully speaking of the like men saith, *Anteribus cibaria publicè locantur & canes aluntur in Capitolio*. Likening them, to be as necessarie to keepe in the common wealth, as geese and doggs in the Capitoll: yet as Tully there noted, if the doggs bark without cause, at such as come of deuotion to worship the Gods, then their legs ought to be broken: And euen so these doggs, these bloodhounds, nay bloodyhounds, that bite in their barking, if they shall at any time snap at such as come to honor and serue their Prince, it were pittie their leggs should be broken; for though they fal lame, yet they can be carried in coaches and horlitters; marrie if their neckes were broken, the Realme should (I thinke) haue a fair riddance of them. But I wil end this note with a verse of that pleasant Poet Martiall, written aboue 1500 yeares fince to Cæsar, who had then banished promotors out of Rome: the which verse (I confesse) concurs with my opinion.

Turba grauis paci, placidæque inimica quieti,

Quæ semper miseris sollicitabat opes,

Tradita Getulis, nec cœpit arena nocentes,

Et delator habet quod dabat exilium,

Exulat Ausonia profugus delator ab vrbe,

Impensis vitam, Cæsaris annuieres.

To this effect in English, after my plaine manner of versifying.

The vile Promooters, foes to peace and enemies to rest,
That with false tales, do neuer cease, mens goods from them to wrest,
Are banisht hence full many a mile, to barren place and wast,
And he that others did exile, that selfe same cup doth tast;
O happie Rome, that such hath lost, as mischeefe stil contriue,
But Cæsar was at too much cost, to let them scape aliue.

And thus much for the morall.

Historie I haue none to stand vpon in this booke saue such as either are already touched in the margent, or else to be found in the Table.

Allegorie there is none.

But the allusion is noted by one Symon Fornarius at very great length, and the substance of all is this, that in describing this notable triumph and feast of Norandino, he covertly describeth the notable tilting and turneying of certaine of the Medices in Florence, and how one Gentleman of Florence plaid such a part as Martano, shunning the tilt, and did indeed vomit for feare, and was laught at for his labour. Also the number of the challengers agreed of Norandinos and this so as it is euident that Fornarius saith right of the matter.

Here end the notes of the xxiij. Canto.

M iiij



THE ARGUMENT.

Now Griffin's knowne and felt: *Algyre* doth threaten
 The Tartar Prince: Charles fighteth and preuailes:
Martano like a coward is well beaten,
Marfisas force *Damasco* warriors quails:
 From thence with tempest tost, and weather beaten,
 Both she and Griffin and *Astolfo* sailes:
Medor and *Cloridan* with care and paine,
 Seeke for the carkas of their master slaine.

M

Oft worthie Prince your
 vertues high and rare,
 With tongue and penne I
 praise, and euer shall,
 Although my words and
 verse inferiour are,
 In number and in worth to
 match them all:
 But all about this one I do
 compare,

And far prefer, and pure diuineſt call,
 That giuing gracious eare to thoſe are greued,
 Yet eu'rie tale is not by you beleued.

Oft haue I heard your highneſſe hath reſuſed,
 Although the ſame moſt earneſtly were ſought
 To heare the guiltleſſe aſent man accuſed,
 (And when a great complaint to you was brought)
 You haue the matter and the man excuſed:
 Suspendiſg ſtill your iudgement and your thought,
 And keeping till the truth were truly tride,
 Euer one eare for the contrarie ſide.

Had *Norandino* had ſo great a grace,
 As not to credite tales ſo lightly told.
 He had not offerd Griffin this diſgrace,
 No though thereby he might haue gained gold:
 But ſo doth raſhnes vertue oft deſace,
 As here was proued that was ſaid of old:
 The ſilly people beare the ſcourge and blame,
 Oft when their Princes do deſerue the ſame.

For Griffin (as in part I told before)
 When as his hands and feete were once vntide,

Did deale about of blowes and thruſts ſuch ſtore;
 As well was he could for him ſelfe prouide,
 His wrath was ſuch as none he then forbore,
 The old, the young, the ſtrong, the feeble dide:
 And they that laught before to ſee him carted,
 Now for their labor whinde as much and ſmarted.

The people faint and mazed fled away,
 From him whom late they did deride and ſcorne,
 He followd them and kild them by the way,
 Daſtards more meet to die, then to be borne.
 But in this chaſe a while I let him ſtay,
 Triumphiſg now that lately was forlorne:
 Of *Rodomont* now ſomewhat muſt be ſpoken,
 On whom at once I ſaid eight ſpeares were broken.

Eight ſpeares at once vpon the ſcaly ſkin,
 Did light, and diuers darts were throwne aloofe,
 For ſpears and darts he paſſeth not a pin,
 Such was his ſtrength, ſo ſure his armors prooffe:
 But when he ſaw that more and more came in,
 To part from thence he thinks his beſt behooffe,
 For why on eu'rie ſide they do aſſaile him,
 That needs at length his breath and ſtrength muſt
 faile him.

Eu'n as the Lions whelps that ſee a Bull,
 Are at the firſt of his great ſtrength affraid,
 But when they ſee their ſire to ſcare or pull,
 His throte and ſides, they runne their ſire to aid,
 And flie vpon his face and horned ſcull,
 Till proſtrate on the ground they haue him laid:
 So now when Charles himſelfe was in the place,
 Each one tooke armes, each one took hart of grace

M iij

He comes to
 Griffin the 29.
 ff. of the booke.

Simile

An excellens
 muſe in a prince

8

Who so hath seene a huge well baited Beare,
 With many dogs, men standing close about,
 When he by hap the stake or cord doth teare,
 And rusheth in among the thickest rout,
 How suddenly they runne away with feare,
 And make a lane to let the Beare go out:
 He might (I say) compare by such a sight,
 The manner of this Pagans fight and flight.

9

He rusheth out, and with his two hand blade,
 He flourisheth about in so fierce sort,
 That soone a way for him to passe was made,
 To hinder him his way it was no sport,
 And those that by the way did him invade,
 Except they shifted better, were cut short:
 Thus in despite of Charles and all his realme,
 He came vnto the banks of Sequans streame.

10

And standing from the banke a little distance,
 That few or none behind could him enclose,
 An howers space and more he made resistance,
 Against king Charles, whose powre stil greater grows
 Till in the end in hope of no assistance,
 Displeas'd, but not disgrast away he goes:
 He takes the riuier fretting in his minde,
 That he had left a man aliue behinde.

11

And so he swell'd in anger and in pride,
 That he had thought to turne him backe againe,
 And to haue mounted on the other side,
 And all that should withstand him to haue slaine:
 But lo a messenger he then espide,
 That made him from that rash attempt refraine,
 But who did send him, and what word he bare,
 I meane to you another time declare.

It follows in the
 15. ff. of this booke

12

But first what Discord did I meane to show,
 Who as you heard was by the Angell sent
 Among the Pagans, seeds of strife to sow,
 And as she was commanded thither went:
 Yet leauing Fraud behind the coales to blow,
 Least all the fire of strife should quite be spent,
 And to augment his strength, as much as may be,
 He carrid Pride with him out of the Abby.

13

Pride leaues Hypocrisie to keepe his place,
 And thus these iarring friends together go,
 And when they traueled had a little space,
 They found by hap dame Ielousie also,
 That met a dwarte that run a trudging pace,
 Eu'n as she wanderd idely to and fro:
 And learning vnto whom this page was sent,
 To go with him she quickly did consent.

Go d deputies.

14

You call to mind (for sure you cannot chuse,
 But call to mind so late a written storie)
 How Mandricardo Doralice did vse,
 And kept with ioy whom he did win with glorie:
 She secretly sent notice of this newes,
 (Though afterward her selfe perhap was sorie)
 To Rodomont, and sharply him incited,
 To venge her rape as I before recited.

15

The messenger arriued then by hap,
 When from the streame the Pagan did ascend,
 And told him all the tale of her mishap,
 And how another did possesse his frend:
 Cold ielousie straight enterd in his lap,
 And Pride with Discord do the matter mend,
 Alledging if he put vp this disgrace,
 Then let him neare looke Ladie in the face.

16

Like as a Tyger that her young hath lost,
 Supprid by hunters hand and borne away,
 Doth follow on the foote through eu'rie cost,
 No dikes nor waters wide can make her stay:
 So Rodomont with loue (and anger most)
 Enflamed, could endure no more delay,
 And though he want his horse, that did not boote,
 To cause him stay, he rather goes on foote.

Simile

17

He meanes what euer horseman next he spide,
 To take his horse of frend or elle of foe,
 At this is Discord pleas'd, and said to Pride,
 That she was glad their busnes cotned so:
 I will (quoth she) a horse for him prouide,
 An horse shall cost him deare enough I trow,
 But what of him and of that horse befel,
 Another time not now I meane to tell.

It follows
 the 13. ff.
 23. ff.

18

This while the most renowned Christen king,
 That had expuls'd the Pagan from the towne,
 His valiant men of armes about doth bring,
 And on the todaine lets the draw bridge downe,
 And with a fresh assault their foes so sting,
 While fortune smild on him, on them did frowne,
 That they had runne away like men dismaid,
 Had not Ferraw couragiously them staid.

19

My mates in armes (quoth he) brethren and frends,
 Prou'd valiant heretofore, now hold your place:
 More happie far is he his life that spends,
 In honour, then that keeps it in disgrace;
 Loe me your generall that here extends,
 No way to staine the blood of Spanissh race;
 The patterne follow that I shew you furst,
 And then I care not, let them do their worst.

Ferraw
 was

20

Thus in that part Ferraw the fight renewd,
 And draws with him the chosen Spanissh band,
 That oft in Christen blood their hands imbrowd,
 And none almost but they, did now withstand:
 But destinie can neuer be eschewd,
 As may by their successe be rightly scand;
 Behold Renaldo comes, and as he came,
 It seem'd he carrid lightning fierce or flame.

Out of the
 Hellier with
 compaign
 prouide

21

Nor long before Almontes valiant sonne,
 Hight Dardanell, had slaine a Christian knight,
 And proud of that his glorie lately wonne,
 And of this good successe he had in fight,
 About the field he carelessly did runne,
 Vntill he hapt to see a wofull sight,
 He saw Alfeo yeelding vp the ghost,
 A youth whom he esteem'd and loued most.

22

Lurcanio was the man that did the deed,
And *Dardanell* to venge it doth intend,
Lurcanio followd on and tooke no heed,
The other all on him his force doth bend,
And with a waightie speare, him and his steed,
Vnto the earth together he doth send,
And pierst his thigh, and put him in such paine,
As scant he able was to rise againe,

23

But *Ariodant* (that deare his brother loued)
And sees him in such paine and danger lie,
Was therewithall in wrath so greatly moued,
He meaneth to auenge his hurt, or die:
But though that he attempted oft and proued,
Yet could he not to *Dardanell* come nie,
For still of other men, the throng and number,
Did him in this attempt molest and cumber.

24

No doubt the heau'ns had *Dardanell* ordained,
To perish by a more victorious hand;
Renaldos blade must with his blood be stained,
And was, as after you shall vnderstand:
By him this praise and glorie must be gained,
The fame whereof must fill both sea and land:
But let these western warres a while remaine,
And of *Griffino* talke we now againe.

25

Who taught those of *Damasco* to their harmes,
What wrong they did to cart him in such sort,
They fill the towne with vprores and alarmes,
Mens mouthes and eares were full of this report:
The King brings forth five hundred men in armes,
And sends five more to fortifie the fort:
For why this tumult brought him in perswasion,
That sure some host of men did make inuasion.

26

But when he saw no men, no host, no band,
No troupes of horse, the citie to inuade,
Onely one man (well knowne) that there did stand,
And of his people such a slaughter made,
(Mou'd with remorse) he stretcheth out his hand
Naked, in shew of peace, as is the trade,
And openly his rashnesse he lamented,
That such a knight to harme he had consented.

27

And *Griffin* when to find he now begunne,
The King was of so good an inclination,
And that the wrong to him before was done,
Not of his owne, but others instigation:
To make a friendly concord doth not shunne,
Because hereby he lost no reputation:
And there he tarid at the kings request,
To cure his wounds and take a little rest.

28

This while his brother *Aquilant* the blacke,
That with *Astolfo* still in lewrie staid,
And sees his brother now so long did lacke,
Was in his mind all sad and ill apaid:
They heard no newes of him, they found no tracke,
Though wait about in eu'ry place was laid,
Vntill the Greekish pilgrim they had met,
By whom of him some inkling they did get.

29

He told them how a certaine wanton dame,
Hight *Origilla*, with a ruffian knaue,
That kept her openly without all shame,
Yet going in apparell fine and braue,
These two (the pilgrim said) together came,
From *Antioch* (as forth in speech they gaue)
And to *Damasco* then they meant to go,
But what became of them he did not know.

30

And further vnto *Aquilant* he told,
How he *Griffino* met this other day,
And did to him the matter all unfold,
And how forthwith *Griffino* went his way,
With chafe enough, and swearing that he would
Kill this same vile adulterer if he may:
No sooner had his speech the pilgrim ended,
In post to follow, *Aquilant* intended.

31

In post he followd to *Damasco* ward,
And when he traueled had a day or twaine,
(Behold that God that euer doth reward
The good with blessings and the bad with paine)
That gracelesse couple that before you heard,
Betraid *Griffino* with that diuellish traine,
Into the hands of *Aquilant* did giue,
While they in pleasure most securely liue.

32

I say that *Aquilant* by Gods permission,
Doth meet the vile *Martano* on the way,
His horse, his coate, and outward apparition,
So like vnto *Griffino* eu'ry way,
That *Aquilant* at first without suspition,
Went to embrace him, and began to say,
Brother well met, I loy of your welfare,
Your absence bred in me much feare and care.

33

But when he saw the tother not replide,
But shrunke away like one that were afraid,
Ah traitor villain, yeeld thy selfe he cride,
Thou hast my brother spoiled and betraid,
Tell me (thou wretch) doth he in life abide?
To whom in humble sort *Martano* said,
(With fainting hart, with quaking voice & trembling
Yet in the midst of all his feare dissembling)

34

Oh pardon sir, your brother is aliue,
And like to liue, and hath no hurt, nor shall,
The truth is this, I being loth to striue
With him, because I found him stout and tall,
Did with no ill intent this drift contriue,
To saue my selfe and do him hurt but small,
For this same womans sake that is my sister,
With open force not daring to assilt her.

35

It grieved me to see how he by lust
Did her abuse whom nature made me loue,
And for I thought it was both meet and iust,
Her from this wicked custome to remoue,
And sith I did his valew great mistrust,
I thought it best by pollicie to proue:
I stole his horse and coate while he was sleeping,
And so conuaid her quite out of his keeping.

36

Well might *Martano* beate away the bell,
Or else a whetstone challenge for his dew,
That on the sodaine such a tale could tell,
And not a word of all his tale was trew,
Put yet in shew it all agreed well,
Saue one which *Aquilant* most certaine knew
Was false, and he in vaine did seeke to smother,
He was her bedfellow, and not her brother.

37

With hand and tongue at once he doth replie,
And in one instant he both strake and spake,
I know (quoth he) vile villaine thou dost lie,
And on the face so fiercely him he strake,
He makes two teeth into his throate to flie;
Then with great violence he doth him take,
And him and her he binds in bitter bands,
Like captiues carrid into forren lands.

38

And thus in hast vnto *Damasco* riding,
He swears that he these bands would not vnbind,
Till of his brother he do heare some tiding,
Whom in *Damasco* after he did find;
Who now with cunning *Phisicke* and good guiding,
Was almost heald in body and in mind,
And when he saw his v unexpected brother,
They both saluted and embrac'd each other.

39

And after they had made in speech some sport,
About full many a foolish accident,
(For *Aquilant* had heard a large report
Of *Griffins* carting, and his punishment)
At last he asketh *Griffin* in what sort
They should this couple worthily torment;
To hang and draw, and burne their priuie parts,
Was not too much for their too foule defarts.

40

The King and all his Councell thought it good,
Because their fault was such so open knowne,
That they should publikely dispill their blood,
And their defarts might publikely be showne:
But yet that motion *Griffin* straight withstood,
Pretending priuate causes of his owne,
Onely he wisht *Martano* should be stript,
And at a cart drawne through the street and whipt.

41

And as for her, although she had deserued
A punishment as great as he, or more,
Yet was the sentence of her doome reserued
Vntill *Lucina* came, and not before:
So that by *Griffins* meane she was preserued,
So great a sway loue in his fancie bore:
Here *Aquilant* by *Griffin* was procured,
To bide with him vntill his wounds were cured.

42

Now *Nerandin* that all his powre still bends,
To honor *Griffin* all the meanes he may,
And with great courtesie to make amends,
For that disgrace he did him th' other day;
To make another triumph he intends,
Set forth with pompe and state, and rich array:
And that the same may flie to forraine nations,
He notifies it straight by proclamations.

43

At foure weekes end the triumph should begin,
The fame whereof about so farre was blowne,
Without the land of *Iewrie* and within,
At last vnto *Astolfo* it was knowne,
Who asking *Sanfonets* aduice herein,
Whose wisdom he preferd before his owne,
At last for companie they both agree,
To go together these same iusts to see.

44

Now as they went vpon their way, behold
They met a gallant and a stately dame,
With whom this Duke acquainted was of old,
Marfisa was this noble Ladies name:
She traueled like a Knight, her heart was bold,
Her bodie passing strong vnto the same,
And when she knew both why and where they went,
To go with them she quickly did consent.

45

And thus these three their journey so contriue,
As iust against the day and solemne feast,
Together at *Damasco* they arriue,
Each one well mounted on a stately beast,
The King that specially did care and striue,
To honor *Griffin* more then all the rest,
By all the meanes and wayes he could deuise,
Augmented much the vlew of the prise.

46

And where it was, as I before declar'd,
A single armor rich and finely wrought,
Now *Norandino* at this time prepar'd,
To set it out with things not lightly bought;
To this he adds a horse most richly barbd,
By riders skill to great perfection brought,
Wel shapt, wel markt strong limbd, and passing swift,
The beast alone, fit for a Princes gift.

47

All this he did, because great hope he saw,
That *Griffin* once againe the prise would win,
But then was verifide the old said saw,
Much falls betweene the Chalice and the chin:
For when *Marfisa* (void of feare or aw)
Without had viewd this armor and within,
And finds it had bene hers by marks well knowne,
She seizeth straight vpon it as her owne.

48

The King that ill so great disgrace could brooke,
Did shew himsele therewith much discontent,
And with a princely frowne and angry looke,
His silence threatned that she should repent,
And in so great despite the thing he tooke,
That straight some sergeants vnto her he sent,
With souldiers, some on foote and some on horse,
Deceiu'd much in her sex, more in her force.

49

For neuer did a child take more delight,
With gawdie flowres in time of spring to play,
Nor neuer did yong Ladie braue and bright,
Like dauncing better on a solemne day,
Then did *Marfisa* in the sound and sight
Of glittering blades and speares delight to stay:
And this did cause her take therein more pleasure,
Because her strength was great beyond all measure.

Those

50

Those few that were to apprehend her sent,
And punish her for this vnlawfull deed,
Were cauld their comming quickly to repent,
And others by their harmes tooke better heed:
The armed Knights most diuerfly were bent,
Some standing still to mark what this would breed,
Some to the sergeants thought to bring reliefe,
Of whom were *Griffin* and his brother chiefe.

51

The English Duke doth deeme it were a shame,
To leaue *Marfisa* in this dangerous cale,
Sith chiefly for his companie she came,
And *Sanfonet* doth deeme it like disgrace,
Wherefore they meane how ere the matter frame,
Not leaue her vnassisted in the place,
Astolfo had a charmed speare all gilt,
With which he vied oft to runne attilt.

52

The vertue of this charmed speare was such,
Besides the gilding bright and faire of hew,
That whom so ere the head thereof did tuch,
Straight him from off his horse it ouerthrew,
Griffin first although disdaining much,
He quite vnhorst, nor who it was he knew:
Then *Aquilant* that to reuenge it ment,
Vnto the ground in manner like was sent.

53

Thus did these warriors three themselues behaue,
But chiefe *Marfisa*, who would neuer rest,
But would in spite of all, the armor haue,
Nor once vouchsaf to aske it or request;
She doth the King and all his nobles braue,
And when the best of them had done his best,
On eu'ry side she beat the people downe,
And from them all made way out of the towne.

54

Sanfonet and *Astolfo* did the like,
King *Norandinos* men of armes pursew,
The foolish people crie stop, kill and strike,
But none comes neare, but stand aloofe to vew:
A narrow bridge therowas, this place they pike,
And to defend it against all the crew,
Till *Griffin* came, hauing his horse recovered,
And by some markes the English Duke discovered.

55

And straight his brother *Aquilante* came,
And of *Astolfo* both acquaintance take,
And then in ciuill termes they somewhat blame
Her litle count she of the King did make,
Astolfo friendly told to them her name,
And in defence of her some words he spake,
The rest that came maruell to what it tends,
To heare them talke together now like friends.

56

But when that *Norandinos* souldiers hard
Her name, so dreaded ouer all the East,
They surely thought that they should all be mard,
And that the citie would be tane at least,
Therefore they pray the King to haue regard.
But now *Marfisa* (moued by request
Of those two brothers) friendly doth consent,
Her selfe before the Prince for to present.

57

And thus without much reuerence she spake,
Sir King, I maruell what your highnesse ment,
A prise and gift of such a thing to make,
As is not yours without I giue consent:
The armes this armor hath plaine proofe do make,
Namely a crowne into three peeces rent:
Once I put off this armor in a way,
To chafe a theefe that stole from me a pray.

58

Then said the King, faire dame the truth is so,
Of one Armenian merchant I them bought,
I make no question be they yours or no,
Nor needs for proofe more witness to be brought,
For though they were not, I would them bestow
On you, if so the same by you were sought:
As for *Griffin* vnto whom I gaue them,
He shall be pleas'd I hope, and not to haue them.

59

I will him recompence some other way,
And giue him gifts of as great worth or more;
Thanks to your highnesse *Griffin* straight doth say,
Preferue me in your grace, I aske no more:
But when *Marfisa* saw that eu'ry way
They honor'd her, she chang'd her mind before,
To shew magnificence she vld this drift,
That he must take this armor as her gift.

60

And thus good friends all turned back againe,
And then with double ioy the feast they hold,
In which chiete praise did *Sanfonet* obtaine,
The other foure did then themselues withhold,
Wishing the praise should vnto him remaine,
And then with greater cheare then can be told,
By *Norandino* they were nobly feasted,
And there themselues they well repos'd and rested.

61

Seu'n dayes or eight the King them entertained,
And those once past, of him their leaue they take,
The which with gifts and honor great obtained,
Vnto the towne of Tripoly they make,
And in one companie these fiue remained,
And mind not one the other to forsake,
As long as one of them was left aliue,
Vntill in France they safely should arriue.

62

And straight they get a vessell for their hire,
A merchants ship new laden from the West,
The master of the ship an auncient fire,
Consented to their wils with small request,
The wind as then seru'd fit for their desire,
And blowes a gentle gale all from the East,
So that with filled sailes in litle while,
They came as farre as *Cypres*, *Venus Ile*.

63

Here eu'ry place was full of odours sweet,
Of gardens faire, of spice of pleasant tast,
The people luttfull (for dame *Venus* meet)
From tender yeares to doting age do last,
With wanton damsels walking in each street,
Inuiting men to pleasure and repast,
From hence againe they loosed, at what time
Don Phabus charret vnto th' East did clime.

That theefe was
Brunello, as is as
large set downe
in *Boyardos* booke

Cypres, an Ile co-
secrated to *Venus*.

64

The weather still was temperat and cleare,
A pleasant gale their swelling sailes did fill;
No signe of storme or tempest did appeare,
To such as in the weather had best skill:
But loe the weather oft doth change her cheare,
Eu'n as a woman oft doth change her will,
For sodainly they had such stormes of wether,
As if that heau'n and earth would come together.

65

The aire doth on the sodaine grow obscure,
But lightned oft with lightnings dreadfull light,
And saue their houre glasse kept them reckning sure
Twas hard for to discerne the day from night:
The desprat marriners do all endure,
As men inured to the waters sight,
The heau'ns above, the waues beneath do rore,
Yet are not they dismayd one whit therefore.

66

One with a whistle hang'd about his necke,
Showes by the sound which cord must be vndone,
And straight the shipboy readie at a becke,
Vnto the tops with nimble sleight doth runne,
The other marriners vpon the decke,
Or at the steere the comming waues do shunne,
And then by turnes they pumpe the water out,
By paine and care preuenting eu'rie doubt.

67

He returns to
them in the xix.
booke. 34 staffe.

Now while this noble crew with tempest toft,
Went in the sea as winde and weather draue,
And looke each minute to be drownd and lost,
The Christians with a fresh assault and braue,
Set on the Pagans sorely to their cost:
Who now began the worser side to hane,
But chiefly then their courage gan to quaille,
When noble *Dardanellos* life did faile.

68

Renaldo.

Renaldo him had noted from the rest,
Full proud of slaughter of so many foes,
And to himselfe he said tis surely best,
To crop this weed before it higher growes,
Therewith he sets his fatall speare in rest,
And cries to *Dardanello* as he goes,
Alas poore boy, much wo to thee they bred,
That left to thee that sheild of white and red.

69

He trie if you defend those colours well,
(He saith) which if with me you cannot do,
Against *Orlando* fierce, I can you tell,
For to defend them will be great adoe.
Thus said *Renald*, and noble *Dardanell*,
In valiant wise thus answerd thereunto,
Know this (quoth he) that these my colours I
Will brauely here defend, or brauely die.

70

Dardanello slain
Virg. 1. Aen.
Infelix puer at-
que impar con-
gressus Achilli.

With that he spurr'd his horse (as this he spake)
And with great force *Renaldo* did assaile,
But loe the staffe vpon his armor brake,
So as his blow but little did auaille,
But straight *Renaldos* speare a way did make,
And pierce the double folds of plate and maile,
And went so deepe into the tender skin,
The life went out there where the staffe went in.

71

Looke how a purple flowre doth fade and drie,
That painefull plowman cutteth vp with sheare,
Or as the Poppeys heads a side do lie,
When it the bodie cannot longer beare;
So did the noble *Dardanello* die,
And with his death fild all his men with feare,
As waters runne abroad that breake their bay,
So fled his souldiers breaking their array.

72

They fle vnto their tents with full perswasion,
That of the field the masterie was lost,
Wherefore to fortifie against inuasion,
They spare no time, no trauell, nor no cost;
Now *Charles* by forhead meanesto take Occasion,
And follows them full close with all his host,
And comming to their tents so brauely venterd,
That he with them themselues almost had enterd.

73

Had not his valiant attempt bene staid,
By ouer hastie comming of the night,
So that of force as then it was delaid,
And either side was driu'n to leaue the fight,
But with this difference, all the Turks dismayd,
And newly gatherd from their fearfull flight,
The Christians on the tother side pursewing,
And day by day their hope and powre renewing.

74

The number of the Turks that day were slaine,
Was more then fourscore thousand (as they say)
Their bloud did fat the ground of all that plaine,
And makes the ground more fertile to this day:
Among the dead some men halfe dead remaine,
Left there for theeues and robbers as a pray,
Within the Pagan campe great mone they make,
Some for their friends, some for their kinsfolks sake.

75

Two youths as there were among so many more,
Whose friendship fast and firme, whose faithful harts
Deserued to be plait the rest before,
And to be praised for their good defarts,
Their names were *Cloridano* and *Medoro*,
Both borne farre hence, about the Ester parts,
Their parents poore, and not of our beleeve,
Yet for true loue they may be praised chiefe.

76

The elder of the two hight *Cloridan*,
An hunter wilde in all his life had beene,
Of actiue limbs, and eke an hardie man,
As in a thousand men might well be seene:
Medoro was but yong, and now began
To enter too, of youth the pleasant greene,
Faire skind, black eyd, and yellow curled heare,
That hangd in louely locks by either eare.

77

These two among the rest kept watch that night,
And while the time in sundry speech they spent,
Medoro oftentime most sadly sight,
His masters death did cause him so lament,
Oh (said *Medoro*) what a wofull spight:
What cruell scourge to me hath fortune sent?
That *Dardanel Almontes* worthy sonne,
So sodainly should vnto death be done?

Behold

78

Behold his noble corse is left a pray,
To be deuoured by the Wolfe and croe,
A tooke too fine to be so borne away,
But I shall remedie that hap I troe,
He finde the meane his corse thence to conuay,
I am resolu'd my selfe will thither goe,
That for the good he did me when he liued,
At least his corse by me may be relieved.

79

When *Cloridano* heard this saying out,
He stood amazd, and musing in his mind,
In tender yeares to finde a heart so stout,
Vnto so dangerous attempt inclinde,
And straight dissuades him, casting many a doubt,
To make him change the thing he had assignde,
But still *Medoro* doth resolute to trie,
To burie *Dardanell*, or else to die.

80

When *Cloridano* resolute him found,
Of his owne franke accord he vow doth make,
To follow him in broken state and sound,
And neuer him to leaue or to forsake;
And straight they two do leaue this fenced ground,
And pointing new supplies their roomes to take,
They find the Christen campe lie all neglected,
Like those that feare no harme, nor none suspected.

81

I say those Christens that the watch should keepe,
Lay as they cared not for foe nor frend,
Their senses so posselt with wine and sleepe,
That none of them their office did attend:
But *Cloridano* that saw them drownd so deepe,
(Said thus,) *Medoro*, now I do intend,
To get for our great losse, this small amends,
To kill some foes, that killed all our frends.

82

Stand thou and watch and harken eu'ie way,
And for the rest let me alone to trie,
This said, he goes where one *Alfeo* lay,
That tooke vpon him knowledge in the skie,
By which he dreamt he should liue many a day,
And in his wiues beloued bosome die,
But all was false his cunning him deceaued,
For now this Pagan him of life bereaued.

83

And many more whom here I do not name,
That sleepe on boords, or making straw their bed:
At last where wretched *Grillo* lay he came,
That on an emptie barrell coucht his hed,
Himselfe had emptied late before the same;
A deadly sleepe the wine in him had bred,
The Turke his sword within his bowels fixed,
Out came the blood and wine together mixed.

84

Neare *Grillo* slept a Dutchman and a Greeke,
That all the night had plide the dice and drinke,
To both of them at once he did the leeke,
That dreamt perhaps of seu'n, and of lyfeline:
They had bene better watched all the weeke,
Then at so bad a time as this to winke:
Death certaine is to all the Prouerbe seath,
Vncertaine is to all the houre of death.

85

Looke how a Lion fierce with famine pinde,
That comes vnto a flocke of silly sheepe,
Where neither fence, nor people he doth finde,
Doth spoile the flocke the while y^e shepheards sleepe;
So *Cloridano* with as bloudie minde, (keepe,
That found those husht that watch and ward should
Could not his cruell rage and mallice bridle:
Nor was this while *Medoros* weapon idle.

86

For he that did disdain to make to die,
Those of the common and the baler sort,
Came there where Duke *Labretto* then did lye,
Embracing of his Ladie in such sort,
As yuie doth the wall, they lay so nye,
Now soundly sleeping after *Venus* sport,
So close, the aire could not haue come betweene;
Medore their heads at one blow cuts off cleene.

87

Oh happie state, ô life, ô death most sweete,
For sure I thinke their soules embracing so,
In heau'nly seat do oft together meete,
And in good peace and loue did thither go.
Then next a captaine of the Flemish flecte,
And th'Erle of Flaunders sonnes with other moe,
Medoro kild, and so far forward went,
He came but little from the Emp'rors tent.

88

But loe they both with shedding blood now tyred,
And fearing least at length some few might wake,
Er long time past, both by accord retyred,
And mind their first attempt in hand to take,
(As both, but as *Medoro* chiefe desired)
Most secretly vnto the field they make,
They meane although they both were faint & wery,
The noble *Dardanellos* corse to burie.

89

The heaps of men that in the field remaine,
Some dead, and some betweene aliue and dead,
Had made their labor to haue bene in vaine,
Had not the moone shewd out her horned head,
So bright, as cleare discouerd all the plaine,
That then was couerd with Vermillion red,
Were it a chaunce or else his earnest prayre,
That made the moone at that time shine so faire.

90

Now after search by *Phœbes* friendly light,
The good *Medore* espide him on the ground,
Who when he saw that grieuous wofull sight,
He was for sorrow readie there to sound;
And out he cries, alas ô worthy wight,
Not worthy, in this sort to haue bene found,
Now my last duetie, do I meane to pay,
And then to say, farewell to you for ay.

91

Thus spake *Medoro* shedding many a teare,
And minding now no longer time to tarrie,
The loued corse doth on his shoulders beare,
And *Cloridano* holpe the same to carrie,
And they that erst were stout and void of feare,
Were waxen now so timorous and warie,
Not for their owne, but this deare burdens sake,
That eu'ie little noise did cause them quake.

N

*Boccaccio has
the like conceit
so this.*

*Phœbe the name
of the moone.*

92

This while the noble Zerbins, hauing chafte
His fearfull foes while others were a sleepe,
That had his heart on vertues lore so plaist,
As did to noble deeds him waking keepe, (hast
Came with his troope where these two made great
By hills, by dales, by stonie waies and steepe,
The carkas of their Lord to beare away,
When much it wanted not of breake of day.

93

The Scots that were of noble Zerbins band,
And saw two men go loden downe the plaine,
Make after them a gallop out of hand,
In hope to light vpon some prey or gaine:
When *Cloridano* spying ore the land,
Did say 'twas best to let the corse remaine,
Alledging that it was a foolish trickie,
In sauing one dead man to loose two quicke.

94

And herewithall his hold he letteth slide,
And thinkes *Medoro* would the same haue done,
He meanes himselfe in the next wood to hide,
And toward it in great hast he doth runne;
But good *Medoro* that could not abide,
To leaue the office he so late begunne,
Although with double paine and duller pafe,
With all the burthen fled away in chafe.

95

And to the wood the nearest way he went,
In hope to get it ere the horsemen came,
But now his breath and strength were so far spent,
As they had verie neare him ouertane,
Yet in his deed he doth no whit relent,
To leaue his Lord he counts it such a shame:
But they that thinke this storie worth the reeding,
Must take a little respite in proceeding.

Morall.

In this eighteenth booke, we may note first how hurtfull a thing it is to a Prince or great Magistrate to iudge without hearing both sides: and contrarie how great a praise it is in them to do (as *Alexander* is noted to haue vsed) to keepe one eare for the aduerse partie, or (as we terme it) for the defendant. In the punishment of *Martano*, we may note how false accusers euer come to some filthie end, as their vile and filthie lines deserue. In *Norandine*, that finding he had done *Griffino* wrong, is willing to make amends for it, and to be friends with him, we may see a notable example of princely clemency, which I could wish all Christian Princes to follow, though in deed commonly they do quite contrarie; and rather where they do one wrong, make amends with a greater, according to that heathnish (nay diuellish) saying of *Machiauell*, that whom you haue done a great iniurie to, him you must neuer pardon, but still persecute. (*Tempora tempora quod monstrum aluistis?*) Oh times what a monster haue yee bred? how far is this doctrine from his, that taught to forgive, not seuen times, but seauentie times seuen times?

Lastly in *Medoro*, we may note a notable example of gratitude towards his masters dead corse, in hazarding his own life to burie it; which is indeed (though he were a heathen) a most Christian act, and one of the works of charitie commended in the Scripture, as namely in *Tobias* who was greatly rewarded and blessed for it: And further we may note in all ages, buriall hath bene thought a most necessarie thing, and religious: but of *Medoro's* gratitude I shall speake more in the next booke.

Historic.

Concerning the description of the Ile of Cypres, set downe in 63. staffe, where it is praised for the pleasantnes of it, as all that write of it do testifie, and *Horace* proues it was called *Venus Ile*, in this verse to *Venus*:

— Regina Gnidi Paphique
Sperne dilectam Cipron, &c.—

Allegoric.

We may obserue a good Allegoricall sence, in that *Rodomont* is first assailed by *Jealousie*, then how *Jealousie* breeds *Discord*, and how *Pride* increaseth it, still edging it forward: saying what a shame is it to put vp such an iniurie? and what will the world say of it? and who could beare it? these be the whetstones to sharpen reuenge, and to kindle the coales of strife. Also we note how mine Author pretily noted, that *Discord* and *Pride*, when they went from the Abbey, left *Fraud* and *Hypocrisie* for their sufficient deputies in their places: for where *Fraud* works, there neuer wanteth seed of strife: and where *Hypocrisie* is, there wants no pride, though it be not plainly discovered.

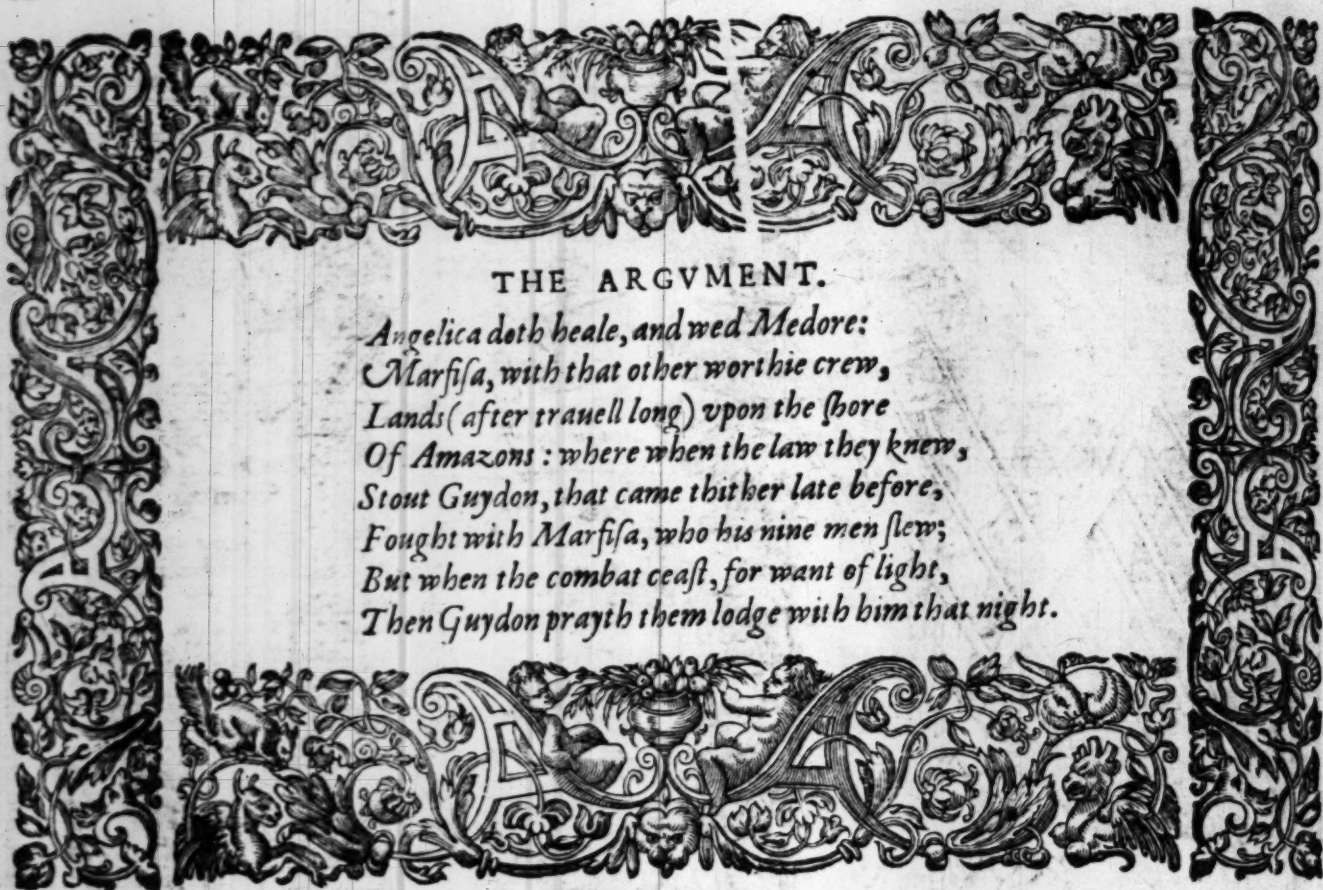
Allusion.

In *Dardanellos* meeting with *Renaldo* and encountering him, and after being slaine by him, he altogether alludes to the conflict betwene *Troilus* and *Achilles*.

Infelix puer atque impar congressus Achilli.

The end of the annotations of the 18. booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Angelica doth heale, and wed Medore:
 Marsifa, with that other worthie crew,
 Lands (after travell long) upon the shore
 Of Amazons: where when the law they knew,
 Stout Guydon, that came thither late before,
 Fought with Marsifa, who his nine men slew;
 But when the combat ceast, for want of light,
 Then Guydon prayth them lodge with him that night.*

*Divers have
 written to this
 effect of the fic-
 tious of friends:
 but specially
 Quod. Donceru
 falsos multos nu-
 mirabunt amicos:
 Tempora fissus
 ruit nobile solus
 ora*



1 One can deeme right who
 faithfull friends do rest,
 While they beare sway &
 rule in great degree,
 For then both fast and fai-
 ned friends are prest,
 Whose faiths seeme both
 of one effect to be:
 But then reuolts the faint
 and fained guest,

When wealth vnwinds, and Fortune seems to flee,
 But he that loues indeed remaineth fast,
 And loues and serues when life and all is past.

*Hiace. Pulgri
 illam ut me-
 reat: retro per-
 me cadit.*

2 If all mens thoughts were written in their face,
 Some one that now the rest doth ouercrow,
 Some other eke y wants his souerains grace, (know:
 When as their Prince their inward thoughts should
 The meaner man should take the better place,
 The greater man might stoope and sit below.
 But tell me now how poore Medoro sped,
 That lou'd his master both aliue and ded.

3 In vaine he sought to get him to the wood,
 By blinde and narrow pathes to him vnknowne,
 Their swift, and his slow pace the same withstood,
 Forst by the burden that he bare alone.
 But now, when Cloridano vnderstood
 Medoros case, he made for him great mone,
 And curst himselfe, and was full ill apaid,
 That he had left his friend deuoid of aid.

4 Medoro all about so straight beset,
 To leaue his loued lode was then constrained,

But all in vaine he sought fro thence to get,
 His masters carkas that behind remained,
 Was vnto him so fierce and strong a let;
 It staid his wearie steps, and him retained,
 Eu'n as a Beare that would defend her whelpes,
 About doth houer though she cannot helpe.

Simil.

5 So good Medore about the corse did houer,
 The while that Cloridano cometh backe,
 And (for the day was dawnd) he might discover,
 How greatly his Medore, his helpe did lacke;
 Wherefore to do his best him to recouer,
 He takes his bow and quiuier from his backe,
 And at a Scot he tooke his aime so well,
 He strake him in the braine that downe he fell.

6 The fall and death so sodaine of the Scot,
 Amated much the courage of the rest,
 And much they marueld whence should come this
 Andfore this accident did them molest: shot,
 But Cloridan for this forbare them not,
 But shot another in, about the brest,
 The which inflam'd Zerbino's mind so sore,
 That for reuenge he would haue slaine Medore,

7 And fastning in his golden curled heare,
 His warlike hand, thou shalt said he aby,
 Thou shalt the penance and the burthen beare
 Of him, that here hath made my men to dye:
 Yet for all this, Zerbino did forbear
 To kill him, when he saw with gracious eye,
 His sweet sad looke, and harkned to his speech,
 That in this sort for pardon did beseech.

Sir

8

Sir knight (he said) for thy Mefsias sake,
I thee do pray and earnestly coniure,
So much compassion now on me to take,
To let me giue my Lord his sepulture:
I little care what spoile of me yee make,
What paines or tortures I my selfe endure,
I onely sue, to long my life to saue,
As I may lay my master in his graue.

9

Now while Medoro spake these words and such,
Whereby Zerbino was to mercie moued,
And to his fauour was inclined much,
As one that gratefultesse had euer loued,
A vile base swaine so rudely did him tuch,
As him not onely from his place remoued,
But with his staffe most rudely ouerthrew him,
That eu'ry one do deeme him dead that vew him.

10

This fact did so Zerbino's mind offend,
That presently the villaine he did chase,
And to haue killed him he did intend,
And had, but that the other fled apace:
But when that Cloridano saw his frend,
With bleeding wound lie prostrate in the place,
He meanes himselfe no longer now to hide,
But eu'n to die by deare Medoro's side.

11

And as he purposed, so he did indeed,
For fighting manfully he there was slaine,
The Scots do onward on their way proceed,
Medoro halfe aliue doth now remaine:
And still his brest in wofull sort doth bleed,
The staffe had cut therein so large a vaine,
And sure he had bled out his life and all,
But for one rare good hap did him befall.

12

For lo, a damfell came, though meanelly clad,
In shepherds weeds, yet fresh and faire of fauour,
And such a one as in those base clothes had,
A shew of princely birth and high behauiour,
She finding him lie there in case so bad,
Did thinke it charitie to be his sauiour:
This was (if you forget) the Ladie faire,
That of Cataya was vndoubted haire.

13

I shewd you by what hap she gat the ring,
And how the same had fild her with such pride,
And her into so high conceit did bring,
That all her suters now she flat denide,
She careth not for Earle, nor Duke, nor King,
Orlando she and Sacrapant defide,
But chiefly she would blush and be ashamed,
If she but hapt to heare Renaldo named.

14

So great her folly grew, so vaine her pride,
As she esteemed all the world at nought,
The which when once the blind boy had espide,
(Not blind when any mischief may be wrought)
He will no longer this presumption bide,
And for a fit occasion long he fought,
And finding this, he thought himselfe now sped,
And vp he drawes his arrow to the hed.

15

Now when this Indian Queene did there behold
A louely youth lie dying in the place,
His bodie feeble in a mortall cold,
A deadly pale amid his liuely face,
A kind of passion straight on her tooke hold,
That mou'd her mind to pitie this his case,
And much the rather when he did declare
The wofull cause that bred him all this care.

16

She hauing learnd of Surgerie the art,
An art which still the Indians greatly prife,
Which fathers to their children do impart,
Whose knowledge in tradition chiefly lies,
Which without bookes the children learne by hart,
I say Angelia doth then deuise,
By skill she had in iuyce of herbes and flowres,
For to renew Medoro's liuely powres.

This art as Sir P.
Sainy noteth in
his Arcadia,
was an great esti-
mation in some
past.

17

And calling to her mind she late had seene,
An herbe whose vertue was to stanch the blood,
As Dittamie, or some such herbe I weene,
That for such purpose wholesome was and good,
Straightway she seekes this herbe vpon the greene,
With all the hast and diligence she coud,
And finding it, she takes thereof a branch,
Whose vertue was the course of blood to stanch.

Of Dittamie
Virgil speaks
in his Eclogues.
Dittamum ge-
neris (retea
carpit ab Ida.

18

Then comming backe againe, she met by hap,
A silly shepherd seeking of his cow,
That brake out of his ground at some small gap,
And now was straid he knew not where nor how,
She prayes him take the herbes were in her lap,
(A scrutor more fit to serue a sow)
And beare her companie vnto the place,
Where poore Medoro lay in dang'rous case.

19

Then from their horse she and the shepherd light,
And straight between two tiles those herbs she bruted
And tooke the iuyce betweene her fingers bright,
And so into the wound the same infused,
Whose vertue great reuiu'd Medoro's spright,
To find himselfe so well and kindly vsed,
That doubt it was which most his wound did salue,
The precious surgeon or the precious salue.

20

And now he had recouerd so much force,
As what with hers, and with the shepherds aid,
He clamerd vp vpon the shepherds horse,
Howbeit in the place so long he staid,
Vntill he saw his loued masters corse,
Into a graue with Cloridano laid;
And then, and not before he did agree,
To do as he by her should pointed be.

21

From thence vnto the shepherds house she went,
And made her patient eke with her to go,
And there to bide with him she was content,
Till he were cleerly rid of all his wo,
But in this while she felt her heart relent,
With sundry quames that wonted not be so,
And when his comely personage she saw,
A secret heate she felt her heart to gnaw.

N iij

22

For while she heald his wound, another dart
Did wound her thoughts and high conceits so deep,
As now therewith was rauisht her proud hart,
Possessing it although she wake or sleepe:
Her wound to heale, there was no herbe nor art,
For more and more like flame the same doth creep,
Yet her chiefe care is him to helpe and cure,
That all this torment doth to her procure.

*Ouid. 1. Metam.
Hec munda quod
nullu amor est
medicabili her-
bu.*

23

Thus while Medoro better growes and better,
She feeles her selfe tormented more and more,
And he that for his loue to her was debter,
Is he alone that plagueth her so sore:
Wherefore though modestie awhile did her let,
Yet now perforce no further she forbore,
But plainly to Medoro told her grieve,
And at his hands as plainly askt reliefe.

24

O stout Orlando, valiant Sacrapant,
O fierce Ferraw, o hunderds more beside,
Where are those valiant acts of which you vaunt?
Where is your pompe, your glory and your pride?
One poore Medore, all your desires doth daunt,
One poore Medore doth all your powre deride,
And she whom all of you haue woo'd in vaine,
To woo Medoro doth not now disdaine.

25

She suffers poore Medoro take the flowre,
Which many sought, but none had yet obtained,
That fragrant rose that to that present houre
Vngatherd was, behold Medoro gained,
And ouer her to giue him perfit powre,
With sacred rites a marriage was ordained,
And with the veile of this so sacred order,
She couers this her folly and disorder.

*Ouid. in Fedras
Epistle
Est aliquid pri-
mum pomaria car-
pere ramis; &
secum primum,
deligere vngue
rosam.*

26

Now when the solemne marriage was done,
Of which god Cupid askt the banes (I trow)
She going forward as she hath begun,
Continu'd there with him a month or mo,
From rising to the setting of the Sunne,
With him she doth sit, talk, lie, stand and go,
Forgetting so all maidenly sobrietie,
That she of him could neuer haue satietie.

27

If in the house she staid, then would she craue
Medoro in the house with her to stay,
If in the field she walke, then must she haue
Medoro leade or guide her in the way:
And by a river in the shady caue,
They oft did vse to spend the heate of day:
Like to that caue where (shunning stormy wether)
The Trojan Duke and Dido met together.

Virg. 4. En.

*There is no plea-
sure in pleasure
it selfe, if one may
not vnderstand, (as
Tully saith) If a
man went vp to
heauen, & were
bound to say no-
thing of it as he
returne, he would
be sorie for it.*

28

Amid these ioyes (as great as ioyes might be)
Their manner was on eu'ry wall within,
Without on eu'ry stone or shadie tree,
To graue their names with bodkin, knife or pin,
Angelica and Medore, you plaine might see,
(So great a glorie had they both therein)
Angelica and Medore in eu'ry place,
With sundry knots and wreathes they enterlace.

29

Now when she thought in this well pleasing place,
She had already made sufficient stay,
And, for she longd to do Medore that grace,
To giue to him her kingdome of Catay,
From whence she had bene absent so long space,
From this poore house she meanes to go away,
Yet minds she ere she go, her host to please,
With whom she found such pleasure and such ease.

30

Angelica had since she was a gerle,
Worne on her arme (as for Orlandos sake)
A bracelet rich, of precious stone and perle,
Which as a token she of him did take,
And though she had it of this worthy Erle,
Yet did she thereof chiefeft reckning make,
Not that the giuer she did much esteeme,
But for the gift was rich, and so did seeme.

31

By her this bracelet many yeares was worne,
Not onely in her time of peace and ioy,
But eu'n when she remained most forlorne,
And subiect to each danger and annoy,
Eu'n then when nakt as euer she was borne,
The Orko came in hope her to enioy:
This bracelet (wanting store of coyne and pence)
She giues her host as for a recompence.

32

Next day betime she getteth on her way,
And makes Medoro sole her Lord and guide,
He kept her companie both night and day,
And none but he with her did go and ride;
Their meaning is at Bertelon to stay,
A port in Spaine, vntill they may prouide
A vessell, that with helpe of oare and winde,
May them transport from Spanish seas to Inde.

33

But ere they were arriued at this port,
They met a mad man of his wit bestraught,
Besmeard with dirt and mire in filthy sort,
His outward sence expeld with inward thought:
This mad man made them, but ilfauour'd sport,
And had made worse, had he them rightly caught,
But as it was he put them in great danger,
And flies at them as dogs do at a stranger.

*Of this po
find more
29. book. 14*

34

But how she scaped and away did get
With her new loue, hereafter I declare:
For why Marfisa I may not forget,
And those with her that in the tempest are,
With Griffon, Aquilant and Sansonet,
And th'English Duke that hath the horne so rare,
Which siue I left in danger and dis ease,
To st terrably in the tempestuous seas.

*Marfisa
Griffon
Aquilant
Sansonet
Alfons*

35

Now while the wind continu'd blowing hard,
And of his rage did small or nothing bate,
The master lets his compasse and his card,
And cals to counsell first the masters mate,
And then the marriners of best regard,
Consulting of the weather and their state,
And eu'ry one doth tell his guesse and thought,
Neare to what coast the tempest had them brought.
Some

36
Some say Lymisso, Tripoly some say,
Some say Satila, full of rocks and sands,
And sweare that all of them were cast away,
Except they keepe aloofe from off those lands;
This causeth some to curse, and some to pray,
And lift to heau'n their wofull hearts and hands,
Their stufte nor merchandize none care to saue,
But hurle the same into the greedie waue.

37
Well might they bost of iron heart and brest,
That could at such a time be voyd of feare,
The stout *Marfisa* at that time confest,
She wisht with all her heart not to be theare,
So fore the swelling seas did them molest,
As though it would the ship in peeces teare,
Nor was there any signe the wind would cease,
And that the sea would graunt them any peace.

38
One makes a vow to visite holy toome,
Another to Galicia vowes to go,
Vnto Saint *James*, some others vnto Roome,
Or other hallowd places that they know.
The mariners feare nought but want of roome,
Sea roome they wish, then care they for no mo,
At foure dayes end it cleard and waxed faire,
Or were't the season, or their earnest praire.

39
And as the weather grew more cleare and cleare,
They did discover plaine a goodly coast,
And to the port as they drew neare and neare,
Borne in by tide, their sailes and tackle lost,
Behold a goodly citie did appeare,
With towres and stately buildings of great cost,
Of which when once the master was aware,
It bred in him no little feare and care.

40
To cast his anker straight he doth prouide,
For vaine it was to labour to go backe,
The vessels wanted sailes to stem the tide,
The tempest had put all thing so to wracke,
And yet he feared on the other side,
They of the towne would sure be on his iacke;
In fine so full his mind was of confusion,
He knew not whereupon to make conclusion.

41
Now while he stood confused in this sort,
The English Duke demaunds what cause of doubt
Made him refuse so faire and safe a port,
And striue against the streame to keepe still out?
Sir (quoth the master) briefly to report
To you the cause, know this, that hereabout,
And namely in that citie dwels a nation,
That vse a barbarous and cruell fashion.

42
They call them Amazons that here do dwell,
Here women guide, and rule, and gouerne all,
The men from gouernment they do expell,
Some they do kill, the rest keepe bond and thrall,
He sole shall scape that runs at tilt so well,
As first to make ten men of theirs to fall,
And next in venery and flesh delight,
Can satisfie ten women in one night.

43
And if a man performe the first of these,
And haue such hap to ouerthrow the men,
And yet at night his force do faile to please,
In act of generation damfells ten,
He must be kild or drowned in the seas,
Or kept a prisoner in some caue or den;
But they that both performe, shall haue their liues,
And thole ten damfells euer for their wiues.

44
When as the pilot out his tale had told,
Of women that delight in spoile and murder,
The English Duke could hard his laughter hold,
To heare of so fantastical an order,
And all the five affirmed straight they wold
Land at this place, and go by sea no furdur,
Each place to them was safe and out of feare,
Where they might haue the vie of sword and speare.

45
But all the shipmen carrid other minds,
As men that better were to stormes inured,
And wold haue thought their liues in waues & winds
More then in conflicts and in fights assured:
But whether reason leades, or causes binds,
Or that the better part the same procured,
The ship with broken mast and tackle torne,
By force of tide into the hau'n was borne.

46
No sooner was the vessel in the port,
But straight a gally ready for such need,
Stor'd with artillery of eu'ry sort,
And one that could both row and saile with speed,
Did boord them, and (to make the matter short)
A woman clad in graue and auncient weed,
As old as *Sibill*, or as *Hectors* mother,
Spake in effect these words with many other.

47
My friends (quoth she) or yeeld or looke to die,
For hope is none to scape away by flight,
But thus if any of you meane to trie,
If he alone can vanquish ten in fight,
And afterward with twise five maidens lie,
And of them maids make women in one night,
Then such a one shall rule among vs chiete,
And saue his frends from punishment and grieve.

48
But if that any shall the fact attempt,
And faile but in the first or in the last,
Then he shall die because of his contempt,
And into prison ye shall all be cast.
They made her answer all they were content,
Not one man there was therewithall agast,
For in both kinds the knights had so bene proued,
As with the danger they were nothing moued.

49
The English Duke with these three youths of France,
Straight for this enterprise themselues prepare,
But chiefe the Duke that doubted no mischance,
By vertue of his booke and horne most rare:
Marfisa eke (though for the second daunce
She was not fit) so manly mind she bare,
As she would needs her force and fortune trie,
And sware her sword all weapons should supplie.

N iij

The was wont to
be the manner in
these dangers.

*Sibilla and He-
cuba very old
women.*

*Cornelius Agrip-
pa in the vanitie
of sciences, writes
that Hercules
made fifty maids
women in one
night.*

The countrey of
the Amazons,
and a mad law
of theirs.

50

And straight they all agreed some lots to draw,
And to conclude on her the hazard fell,
But she that quite was void of feare and aw,
Did promise to performe her office well:
This sword (quoth she) shall abrogate this law,
And plague them all that in this citie dwell,
And to vndo these doubts I will prouide,
As Alexander Gordius knots vntide.

Alexander cut
the knots in pec-
ces that he could
not vntie, called
Gordius knots.

51

No forreiner hereafter shall bewaile
The wicked law of this vngodly land:
This said, she putteth on her coate of maile,
In hope alone against ten men to stand.
Then came the ten were pointed to assaile,
But he that was the formost of the band,
As far as by apparance might be guest,
Was one that farre surpassed all the rest.

52

His horse was blacke as pitch, or polisht ieat,
Saue in one foote, and in his brow a starre,
A shining spot of white, not very great,
A loftie raine, an eye that threatned warre;
Such as the horse, such was his owne conceat,
His sorrows did exceed his ioyes so farre,
And deadly care so drownd his small delight,
As did the blacke the little spot of white.

53

This knight (that euer vantage did eschew)
Would not accompanie those other nine,
But standeth still on horseback taking vew,
Which way the victorie did most incline:
Marfisa rode a horse of daintie hew,
Giu'n vnto her of late by Norandine,
His colour pide powderd with many a spot,
Small head, fierce looke, cleane limbd, and lofty trot.

54

Now when that giu'n of battell was the signe,
On her alone all nine at once did flie,
And she alone sustained the force of nine:
The tenth (I said) was quiet standing by,
As one that did against that vse repine,
When more then one should seeke to make one die;
And with the first encounter thus she sped,
She layd downe foure of them on ground for ded.

55

The fift she iustles, and by force vnhorses,
And with a trunch the sixt she gaue a blo,
That to the ground both man and horse inforces,
With mazed head, and foltring feet to go.
The standers by admire her passing forces,
And chiefe their wiues that saw them killed so,
For as a chainshot sweeps all in the way,
So with those nine Marfisa then did play.

Some.

56

She bathd her blade in blood vp to the hilt,
And with the same their bodies all she mangled,
All that abode her blowes, their blood was spilt,
They scaped best that here and thither rangled,
Or those whose horses ouerthrowne at tilt,
Lay with their masters on the earth intangled.
Thus of nine enemies remained none,
For all were kild, or maimd, or ouerthrowne.

57

The knight that was arrayd in blacke attire,
And stood aside, and saw this hardie fight,
To shew that he for feare did not retire,
But to make knowne his curtsie shining bright,
Straight steppeth out, and first he doth desire
To speake with her whom he esteemd a knight,
For he could not imagine nor suppose
A woman could haue giu'n such manly bloes.

58

And thus he saith, me seemes the ods too great,
That I of you should take to fight straightway,
Sith both your horse and you are in a sweat,
Mine offer is to respite you a day,
Till you may be refresht with rest and meate,
That with mine honour fight with you I may,
For I should thinke my selte disgraced fore,
To vanquish one wearid and spent before.

59

Wearid and spent (quoth she) alas the while,
Thinke you I am so wearid and so spent?
Your courteous offer causeth me to smile,
To thinke how quickly you will it repent;
You do deceiue your selfe, and much beguile,
To thinke that I to pause would be content,
I doubt not you shall find but little cause,
(When you haue tride) to offer me to pause.

60

Well, said the knight, if you will trie it straight,
That you accept, I cannot well refuse:
Forthwith two speares of mighty strength & waight
Were brought, and he doth bid Marfisa chuse:
Now was the Sunne foure howers past his haight,
When as these two began their speares to vse,
The trumpets sound, they set their speares in rest,
And each determining to do their best.

61

The speares in spels and sundry peeces flew,
As if they had bene little sticks or cane,
Yet of the blowes to both did hurt ensue.
Their steeds were welnigh brought vnto their bane,
Quite ouerthrowne in all the peoples vew,
As though their legs had quite fro them bene tane,
So both their horses tumbled on the ground,
Yet both then selues from hurt were safe and sound.

62

An hundred and an hundred knights and more,
Marfisa had subdude (it was well knowne)
Yet such a chance she neuer had before,
To haue her horse so strangely ouerthrowne:
Also the knight that blacke apparell wore,
Doth maruel whence this great mishap was growne,
And not a little wondred at her force,
That had so stoutly ouerthrowne his horse.

63

Forthwith on foote the combat they apply,
In which the tone the tother doth not spare,
And either thinks to make the other die,
And either of the tother doth beware.
But all the while among the standers by,
Appeared great attentiuenesse and care,
For neuer could they guesse from the beginning,
Which of the two was in best hope of winning.

Now

64

Now gan *Marfisa* to her selfe to say,
It happie was that he before stood still,
For had he holpe the tother nine to day,
No doubt with me it could haue bene but ill,
That now alone so hard doth hold me play,
As scant I saue my selfe with all my skill,
Thus to her selfe the stout *Marfisa* thought,
And all the while couragiously she fought.

65

Contrarie, to himselfe the knight thus seth,
Twas well for me, that he before was spent,
For had he bene but fresh in perfect breth,
I doubt me that er this I had bene shent,
Surely (thought he) I scant had scaped deth,
If he to rest himselfe had giu'n consent.
No question I did great aduantage take,
That he refused that offer I did make.

66

Thus did the combat long twixt them endure,
And neither party boasted of their gaine,
Vntill the nights darke shadow and obscure,
Did couer citie, wood, and vale, and plaine,
And that that rest to all thing doth procure,
Did force them two to respite their paine;
And first the knight thus said, what can we do?
Behold how night is come to part vs two.

67

You may said he one night prolong your life,
And longer not, such is the curled law,
Against my will (God knows) I hold this strife,
And now I feare and haue no little aw,
Lest eu'rie one that was to them a wife,
Whom late you kild, will from your beds you draw
For eu'rie one of those vnhappy men,
Whom erst you slue was husband vnto ten.

68

So that for those same nine that you haue slaine,
Nine times ten women seeke reuenge to take:
Wherefore I wish that you and all your traine,
Within my roose this night abode do make,
For so perhap from wrong they will abstaine,
If not for right, at least for reuerence sake.
He take your offer sir, *Marfisa* saith,
So that hereof to me you giue your faith.

69

That as in fight you shew your vaw great,
As I haue proued in this present place,
So I may find your words without deceit,
Lest falsehood should your noble deeds deface:
I will accept your lodging and your meat,
And will periwade my fellows in like case;
But rather then for feare you should it thinke,
Lets fight it out by light of torch and linke.

70

And thus in fine they all of them agreed,
That vnto him that night they would be guest:
Straight to a sumptuous pallace they proceed,
By torch light brought to chambers richly drest,
But when that each put off their warlike weed,
Then each of them with wonder was possest:
She, that the knight did by his face appeare,
To be a boy of age but eightene yeare.

71

And he, when by her haire her sex he knew,
Wonderd to see a woman of such might,
As namely that in fight nine tall men slew,
And after had with him prolonged the fight:
And either pleased the others vew,
Behold the one the other with delight,
Then each desir'd the others name to learne,
As in th' ensuing booke you shall discearne.

In the first staffe of this Canto, is an excellent morall of the prooffe of frends, which my father many yeares since did Morall.
translate almost word for word as I haue set it downe, applying it to his master, the worthie Lord Admirall Seymor:
and because the verse was my fathers, I count I may without vsurpation claime it by inheritance. He applied it to that
noble peere (verie aptly) diuers wayes: both for his life, and for his death, but specially (which I count worthy the noting)
for his seruants, who loued him so dearely, that euen in remembrance of his honorable kindnesse, they loued one another
exceedingly: and my father I remember, but a weeke before he died, which was in the yeare 1582. wrote with his owne
hand the names of those were then liuing of the old Admiraltie (so he called them that had bene my Lords men) and there
were then xxxiiij. of them liuing, of which many were knights and men of more reuenew then himselfe, and some were
but meane men, as armorers, artificers, keepers, and farmers; and yet the memorie of his seruice, was such a band among
them all of kindnesse, as the best of them disdained not the poorest, and the meaner had recourse to the greatest, for their
countenance and ayd in their honest causes, and many of them are euen now liuing, and yet it wants little of fortie
yeares since that noble man was put to death. His picture my father gaue after to the Queenes Maiestie that now is, with
a prettie verse written on it, and it hangs now in the gallerie at Somerset house.

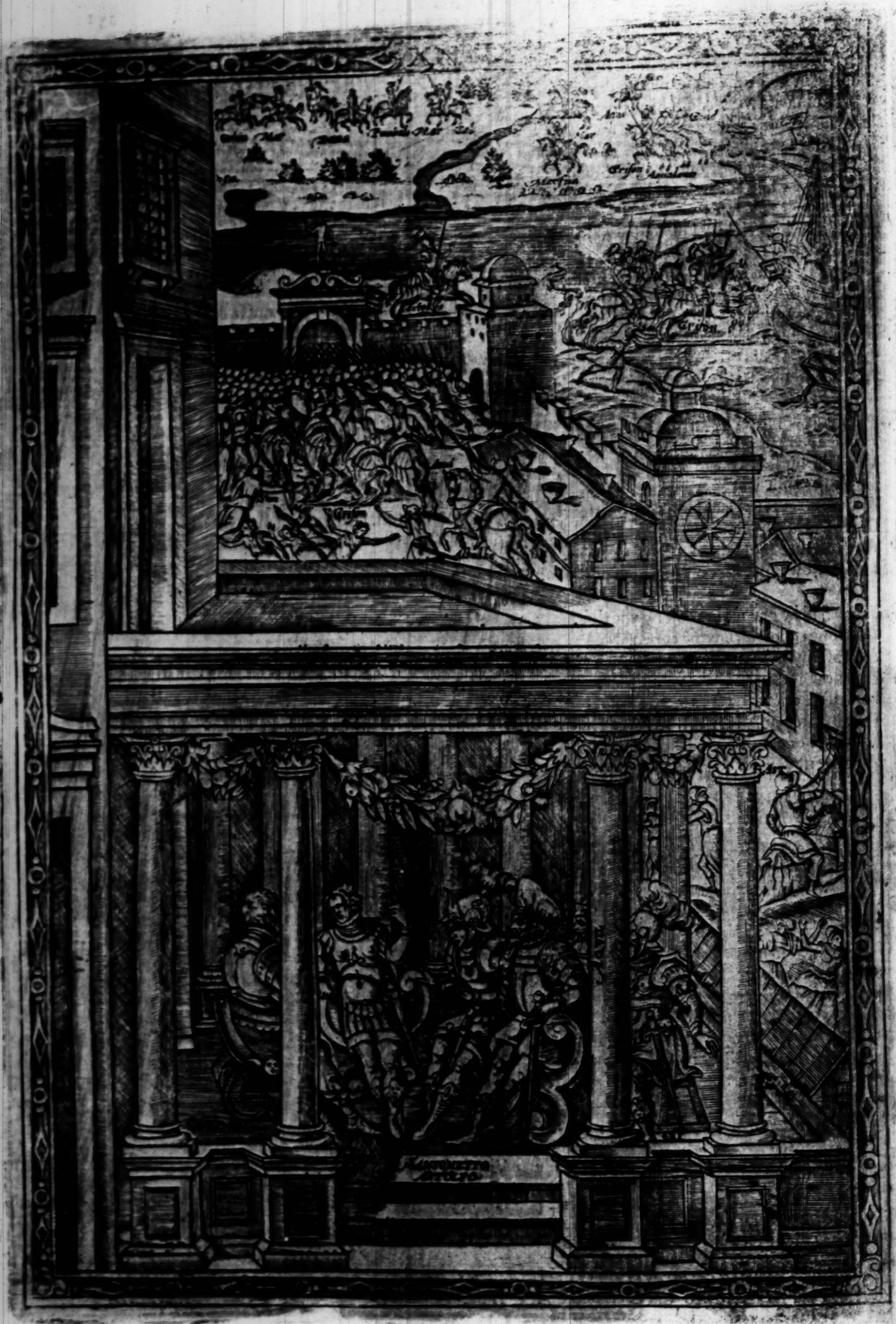
That there were Amazons, I thinke no man doubteth that hath read of Alexanders conquests.

In Angelicas wedding of Medore I gather this Allegorie, Angelica is taken for honor, which braue men hunt after, Allegorie.
by blood, and battels, and many hardy feats, and misse it: but a good seruant with faith and gratefulnesse to his Lord
gets it.

Allusion.

Cloridan and Medore allude to Eurialus and Nisus in Virgils *Aeneids*.

The end of the notes of the xix. booke.



Harpal
Camilla
sable w

Corinna
Sappho,
mythos.

THE ARGUMENT.

With Guidon all his worthie guests agree,
 To breake from th' Amazons the morrow morne:
 Astolfo doubting lest it would not be,
 Doth drive them thence and scares them with his horne:
 Zerbino laughs Gabrina gay to see,
 Marfisa seemes to take it in great scorne,
 And gainst his will commits her to his guiding,
 By whom he hears of Isabella tiding.

R

ight wondrous deeds by di-
 uers dames were donne,
 In times of old, as well by
 sword as pen,
 Whereby their glorie shi-
 ned like the sunne,
 And famous was both far
 and neare as then,
 The fame Harpalice in
 battell wonne,
 Camillas worth is eke well knowne to men,
 Corinnas praise, and Saphos are discerned,
 Aboue the rest, because they both were lerned.

She made him answer, and did not disdaine,
 To tell both what she was, and whence she came,
 Yet (as her fashion was) both brieft and plaine;
 She saith thus to the knight; I called am
 Marfisa: and she need to say no more,
 For all the world had heard the rest before.

The tother, when his turne to speake came in,
 First making long and farther circumstance,
 In such like manner doth his tale begin,
 (And sighing deepe) you all haue heard perchance,
 Both of my fathers house and of my kin,
 Of fame in Italie, in Spaine and France:
 For sure I am the house of Clarimount,
 In all the world is knowne and of account.

He that Charello and Mambrino slew,
 And did their kingdoms ruine and deface,
 Out of one stocke with me together grew,
 Although we were not all borne in one place,
 For why at Ister flood (to tell you trew)
 My father me begat, and in that case,
 My mother great with childe he left behind,
 And went to France by helpe of saile and wind.

Thus seu'nteene yeares I liu'd like one exild,
 Vntill I able was to breake a launce,
 And for that place me seemd too base and vild,
 I meane to seeke my friends and kin in Fraunce:
 They name me Guidon sauage of a child,
 As yet I could not much my name aduance,
 For hither by a tempest I was borne,
 As you were now, with ship and tackle torne.

Here begins
 the tale of the
 Amazons.

Rinaldo brother
 to Guido, but not
 by the same ven-
 der.

Guidon sauage,
 looks in the table

What art so deepe? what science is so hie,
 But worthy women haue thereto attayned:
 Who list in stories old to looke, may trie,
 And find my speech herein not false nor fained,
 And though of late they seeme not to come nie,
 The praise their sexe in former times haue gained,
 No doubt the fault is either in backbiters,
 Or want of skill and iudgement in the writers.

For sure I see in this our present age,
 Such vertuous parts in their sweet sexe to grow,
 The young so sober, and the rest so sage,
 And all so chaste, as writers shall (I know)
 Haue worke enough to fill full many a page,
 With their great praise that from their worth will
 To win the fame their ancestors did leese, (flow,
 And passe Marfisa not in few degrees.

But now to turne my speech to her againe,
 I say that when the knight did aske her name,

Harpalice and
 Camilla two no-
 table warriors.

Corinna and
 Saphos, learned
 writers.

THE TWENTITH BOOKE

154

8

Here first *Argillon* with nine men I killed,
A leau'n months since, and that same day at night,
The office of an husband I fulfilled,
Vnto ten Amazons in flesh delight;
This done, to take my choise then was I willed,
Of any ten that pleased best my sight,
And these remaine my wiues, and must vntill
One come that me with other nine can kill.

9

Vnto the knights this seemd a maru'lous storie,
And much they wonderd at this gouernment,
They maruell that so great a territorie,
For want of men was not consum'd and spent:
They thought no lesse the women would be sorie,
For want of men, to liue so continent;
Twas strange one man sufficed ten of theafe,
Sith one with vs can scant one woman pleale.

10

And straight they were inquisitiue to know,
When first this foolish order there began,
And vpon what occasion it did grow,
That women in that countrie ruled man?
Then *Guidon* answerd thus, I shall you show
The whole discourse as briefly as I can,
According as my selfe haue heard the same,
Since (by mishap) into this realme I came.

11

When as the Greekes had quite defaced Troy,
And after twise ten yeares returned home,
(For ten whole yeares in danger and annoy,
Of surging seas they vp and downe did come)
They found their wiues that had but little ioy,
So long a time, to liue and lye alone,
Each one a lustie louer to haue chosen,
Left with the cold they might be staru'd and frozen.

12

Their houses full of bastard brats they see:
In fine, they purpose after consultation,
To pardon all their wiues and let them free,
But for these boyes that bred some alteration,
To driue them out a doore they do agree,
And make them seeke a forraigne habitation;
It was contrarie much to their desires,
That others brats should warme the at their fires.

13

Thus some thrown out, some close their mothers keep
In corners, from their angrie husbands sight,
And when as elder yeares on them do creepe,
Each one betakes him to his most delight;
Some plow, some get them herds of goats & sheep
Some sciences, and some do learne to fight.
Thus eu'rie one betooke him to some trade,
As he assignes that all the world hath made.

14

Among the rest that Art of war ensue,
Phalanto sonne of *Clytemnestra* Queene,
But eightene yeares of age, and fresh of hue,
And in the floure of youths well pleasing greene,
This one to him an hundred gallants drue,
And getting ships and things that needfull beene,
With writs of Mart (a thing that breeds much sorow)
He gets him to the sea, in mind to borow.

Looke in the Hi-
storie of the
booke.

15

Now while *Phalanto* with his curled fleet,
Abode at sea with that more curled traine;
It fortund at that time that they of Creet,
Had *Idumeo* driu'n out of his raigne,
Wherfore for better strength they thought it meet,
Phalanto and his men to entertaine.
They giue to him great hire, and great reward,
The citie of *Ditea* for to guard.

16

Ditea was a towne of great estate,
Rich and frequented with no small resort,
And yeelds in plentie large, betimes and late,
Of sundrie kinds of pleasures and of sport;
And as they all men vsd, so in like rate,
They vld their souldiers in so friendly sort,
As though they had agreed by bound accords,
To make them all their masters and their Lords.

17

But chiefe they found with women so great grace,
As they wan most of them vnto their lure;
But when the warres were ended in short space,
And that their pay no longer did endure,
They all prepar'd to leaue this pleasant place,
Which to the damfels did great grieve procure;
To leese their husbands, brother, or their father,
Then these new louers eu'rie one had rather.

18

And when they saw they could not make them stay,
By no deuice of theirs, nor no request,
They do agree with them to steale away,
And take such things as were of value best;
Thus came these damfels loden with their pray,
And thence to sea, and were now gone at least
An hundred leagues, with these new lawles louers,
Before *Ditea* this their flight discouers.

19

The wind so good then for their purpose blew,
Phalanto quickly landed in this coast,
And here the amorous and wanton crew,
Vnto their loues of this their lewdnesse bost;
But now that saying was confirmed trew,
That pleasant things do often cloy the most:
And there can be a greater clog to no man,
Then to be wearie of a wanton woman.

20

Wherfore like men that were, and had bene euer,
Of gaine most greedie, sparing of expence:
They secretly consulting do endeuer,
To take the goods, and then to steale from thence.
Thus while the women still in loue perseuer,
They that regard not pleasure more then pence,
Lode with their wealth, of which there was good
Stale to the sea, & left them on the shore. (store

21

Sore were the damfels daunted and dismayd,
When once they saw their loues had the forfaken,
For what more spite can be, then be betraid
Of him to whom one hath her selfe betaken?
And sith they find that weeping doth not ayd,
They meane betime some order shalbe taken,
What they shall do, and how hereafter liue,
And eu'rie one doth straight her verdit giue.

One

Sentence.

Sentence.

22

One home to turne againe doth thinke it best,
And to their kin and friends them to submir,
And with repentance pardon to request,
And vow the like fault neuer to commit;
Another that good motion doth detest,
And sweares it shewd the mouer had no wit,
And that with greater honestie or ease,
They might go drowne them headlong in the seas.

23

Among the rest one *Orontea* hight,
That lineally of *Mynos* was descended,
And past the rest in beautie and good sprite,
And had lesse grievously then they offended,
For to *Phalanto* she her troth did plight,
And to haue bene his honest spoule intended:
This one declareth thus her resolution,
And makes the rest put it in execution.

24

She wishes them to tary in this land,
That had both fruitfull earth and pleasant aire,
And fountaines sweet, and woods on eu'ry hand,
And medowes greene, and pastures fresh and faire,
Beside large hau'ns, where ships at ease might stand,
To which the merchants often made repaire,
By tempest driuen, well loden with good trafficke,
Of things that come from *Egipt* and from *Affricke*.

The commodities
of a good seat of
a ciuitie.

25

Wherefore this place she minds not to forsake,
But that they may as chiefly they desire,
A sharpe reuenge on men for euer take,
They vow to put to sacke, to sword and fire,
Such ships as to their hauen repaire do make,
And kill the men, and this they all conspire;
And still when any come, this trade they vse,
Nor left a man aliue to carry newes.

26

But when this cruell law some yeares had lasted,
Which they had meant to haue confirmd for ay,
They find that they so fast consumed and wasted,
That this their barren kingdome would decay,
Except to find some remedy they hasted,
And hauing long consulted on the way,
They meane of this their law to bate some rigor,
Yet leaue the substance still in strength and vigor.

There were too
many speakers
(belike) in their
Parliament whil
they made such a
law as they were
driven to change
so soone after.

27

And thus they do, they chuse among such men,
As tempests driue to this their wicked nation,
Some few as were so lustie, as with ten
They could performe the act of generation,
All in one night, the rest into a den
They cast, and kill them in most cruell fashion,
And build vnto reuenge a solemne alter,
And ouer this they make them stretch a halter.

The Romans did
use to build au-
tels to all the af-
fections of the
mind, as feare,
hope, and such
like.

28

Such men as liue are to this order sworne,
To kill all such as hither shall repaire,
And all men children that to them are borne,
They sell or change as in an open faire,
So when some die with age and weaknesse worne,
Then other women do the want repaire,
Their powre and number thus doth still increase,
Their wealth & pomp augmented, with long peace.

29

But after many yeares it thus befell,
Elbanio, one of *Hercles* noble race,
A comely tall strong man, and fauord well,
And in his speech and manners passing grace,
Arriued where these homicids do dwell,
And ere he knew the fashion of the place,
The cruell sergeants tooke him as they found him,
And like a felon hand and foote they bound him.

30

It fortuned as they carrid him to slaughter,
Among the rest that did the same behold,
Was *Alessandra*, *Orontea*'s daughter,
A fine yong girle, about twise eight yeare old,
Elbanio humbly as he went besought her,
To be a meane this foule death to withhold,
That like a man he might be kild at least,
And not be drawne to slaughter like a beast.

31

To beg my life (quoth he) it were a vanitie,
(Which in your seruice I would gladly spend)
Where humane hearts be voyd of all humanitie,
But all the sute that I to make intend,
(Which to denie were too too much immanitie)
Is this, that thus my life I may not end,
But with my sword in hand to fight with men,
With seu'n at once, or eight, or nine or ten.

32

This he to her, thus she to him replies,
Though to mankind we all professe hostilitie,
Yet thinke not (this she spake with watric eyes)
That all our hearts are void of all gentilitie,
What *Progne* or *Medea* could despise
Your passing beautie, courage and nobilitie?
And were my fellowes all so ill inclin'd,
Yet I my selfe would beare a better mind.

Progne and *Me-
dea* two cruell
bloody women.

33

And though the rigor of our law be such,
That no man can obtaine a pardon free,
And eu'n this small you aske, to graunt is much,
If our law strictly should obserued bee,
Yet such remorse I feele my heart doth tuch,
To graunt thy sute if others will agree
Although I feare thou wilt in such a strife,
Prolong thy paine, and not preferue thy life.

34

Oh (said *Elbanio*) blest were such a day,
That in the field my manhood I might trie,
Could but your credit carry such a sway,
Not ten, but ten times ten I would desie.
This said, she causd the execution stay,
And to her mother goes she by and by,
With thousand stings of *Cupid* in her brest,
And vnto her expoundeth his request.

35

Straight *Orontea* doth her counsell call,
And in such sort thereof to them she spake,
In guarding of our hau'n and citie wall,
Tis good that of the strongest men we take:
Therefore to know who be most stout and tall,
I thinke it very good some prooffe to make,
For else we shall vnto our selues do wrong,
To saue the weaker men, and kill the strong.

Orontea's oration
in *Elbanio*'s be-
half.

O

36

And who can wish to make a better triall,
Then for one man to fight with fiue and fiue,
And if he vanquish them and make them die all,
Twere certes meet he should be kept aliue:
Thus *Orontea* said, and they replie all,
That in this point with her they cannot strue,
Sauer old *Artemia* (carren witherd iade)
Mislikt the motion, and this answer made.

37

*Artemia's oratio
against Elbanio.*

The cause that first we did some men admit,
Was not to keepe our hau'ns or citie wall,
For we our selues haue strength enough and wit,
To keepe our towne (I trust) and euer shall.
Were we as well for procreation fit,
Without mans helpe, nor one should liue at all;
Now for necessitie some few we spare,
Such as most able for that seruice are.

38

This motion quite gainfaith our auncient law,
To keepe one man as strong as halfe a score:
How many women would he keepe in awe?
Had we ten such we should beare rule no more.
And further, tis an old and certaine law,
Both vsed and proued many yeares before,
That they that giue a weapon to their stronger,
Are like themselues to carry rule no longer.

Sentence.

39

But put the case this one by our consent,
And his good hap ten of the others kill,
How shall an hundred widowes then lament,
That long must lie alone against their will?
If he an hundred women would content,
Then him to saue I should not thinke it ill,
Then were he to be lou'd, admir'd and wonderd,
If he alone could satisfie an hunderd.

40

This cruell speech did all the rest displease,
And loth they were *Elbanio* should be flaine,
His comely shape their sharpnesse did appeale,
And chiefly she that ouer all did raigne,
Doth seeke herein her daughters mind to please,
With many reasons answring her againe,
And point by point did all her speech confute,
And in the end obtained her daughters sute.

41

Thus to *Elbanio* pardon they impart,
Prouided if he overcome the men,
And after brauely play the husbands part,
Not with an hundred women, but with ten.
Elbanio thanketh them with chearfull hart,
Then was he freely loosed from the den:
In fine, when all things ready were ordained,
In both exploits the conquest he obtained.

42

Then *Allessandra*, in whole tender mind
Loue had alreadie made so deepe impression,
With other nine, were vnto him assignd.
And princely mace was put in his possession.
But first by solemne vow they do him bind,
To hold this law for euer by succession,
To sacrifice all men, saue such as trie,
To kill ten men, and with ten women lie.

43

And though that many haue in ages past
Attempted both, yet few haue had successe,
To scape the first exploit, and trie the last,
In which to faile, the danger were no lesse,
But he that both performs, forthwith is plapt
In princely seate, and free from all distresse:
And this their law (as by records appeares)
Alreadie lasted hath two thousand yecars.

44

The last but I, that held this cursed place,
Argillon hight, whom I in combat killed,
And him and his thereby I did displace,
And then their roomes with me and mine I filled,
Where we haue tarrid now a twelue moneths space,
Among these wights of goodnesse all vnskilled,
And leade a life full of dildaine and scorne,
As better had bene neuer to be borne.

45

For why these dallyings and wanton toyes,
That wonted are to please our foolish youth,
With costly fare, gay clothes, and *Venus* ioyes,
Of which repentance is the frute ensweeth,
Doth breed to me but anguish and annoyes,
And pensue cares, and euer during ruth;
And chiefly when vnto my mind I call,
My libertie is lost, and I a thrall.

*Non bene pro
fulua libertas
venditur auri.*

46

To loose my lustie time in this vile place,
Remou'd from kin and friends, and countrey farre,
A wofull and remediless disgrace,
Mou'd by some ill aspect of angry starre,
Eu'n as a stallion kept for breed and race,
Whom some mishap hath made vnfit for warre,
By losse of fight and foudring of his feete,
For seruice quite vnable and vnmeet.

*Simile.
This Simile Tell
hath taken home.*

47

The while this tale the sauage *Guidon* told,
The English Duke that all this while stood by,
And heard his speech, and did his face behold,
And noted all his grace with watchfull eye,
And made by all these obseruations bold,
He runneth to embrace him by and by,
And said, deare cosin, I were much to blame,
Except I lou'd the house from whence you came.

*The end of the
Amazonian tale.*

48

Your mother could not tie a better lace
About your necke, to make your linage knowne,
Then this your value in this present place,
Against *Marfisa* in the battell showne:
I am *Astolfo* one of *Ammons* race,
Friend to your house, and kinsman of your owne,
I much reioyce to find by this mitchance,
So neare a kinsman so far off from France.

49

But he that otherwise would haue bene glad,
To meet a friend, a Prince of kin so neare,
Now on the other side he was full sad,
And shewd the same in countenance and cheare,
For eu'ry way the sequell must be bad,
For if he win they die, the case is cleare,
And if he do not win, he is but ded,
Thus by ones good the tothers harme is bred.

On

50

On th'other side his yeares and tender age,
Did all of them so farre with pittie moue,
And did *Marfisa* heate so much assuage,
Her enmitie was welnigh turnd to loue:
At last she makes a motion wise and sage,
Which was, that all to scape by force should proue,
She sweares if he would take part with his cosen,
Not all the towne could vanquish that halfe dosen.

51

Most glad (said *Guidon*) I would take your part,
Though vaine it is against so great a number,
To enterprife by force hence to depart,
Their very multitude will vs so cumber:
For often (to the terror of mine hart)
Ten thousand armed women I do number
Here in the streets, and with as many more,
They do defend the port, the hau'n and shore.

52

Tush (quoth *Marfisa*) this I not regard,
Were they in number as the sands of seas,
To valiant hearts no enterprife is hard,
Take you but part, and ioyne with me and these.
Yes, answerd *Guidon*, be I made or mard,
Or bee't with paine, with danger or discafe,
I will take part with you, but if I may,
I would aduise you to a safer way.

53

If we this matter wisely take in hand,
This is the safest way that I do know,
They let no men to touch the salt sea sand,
Left any should attempt from hence to go:
And sith tis hard their forces to withstnd,
He trie a better way then that, I trow,
Among my ten I haue one speciall wife,
Vpon whose trust I venter dare my life.

54

She shall a barke prouide in secret sort,
And other needfull things for vs prepare,
And when as to the tilt-yard they resort,
And of our fight in expectation are,
We suddenly will make vnto the port,
And ship our selues ere any be aware:
To leade the way my selfe I am content,
So you and yours to follow will consent.

55

Marfisa straight, and all the rest agreed,
That *Guidon* for that time should be their guide,
And that accordingly they would proceed,
As he for them had promist to prouide:
Though (said *Marfisa*) sauing this my weed,
My shape and sexe from all of them doth hide,
I know my selfe from harne could be excused,
And of them all both welcome and well vsed.

56

But now (said she) such part I mind to take,
As you shall tast (how good or bad it proue)
That night with his *Aleria* *Guidon* spake,
(So was her name that bare him chiefest loue)
And points that she prouision good should make,
For things that needfull were for their remoue,
And she no time, nor paine, nor trauell spard,
But out of hand a galley straight prepard.

57

And that her fellowes might no fraud suspect,
To go to seeke a prize she doth pretend,
And with great diligence she doth direct,
All meanes to serue their passage to defend:
And they within no time nor meane neglect,
To bring their stout designement to an end
Thus eu'ry one their charge so well attended,
That ere the morning all was done and ended.

58

No sooner came the dawning of the day,
But that those Amazons like bees in twarmes,
That seeke new dwellings in the month of May,
So came they well appointed all in armes,
To see an end of that vnended fray,
Not looking for such new and strange alarmes,
For straight those five I nam'd and all their traine,
Came with intent to scape or else be slaine.

59

First *Guidon* breakes the way to all the rest,
Soone after him *Marfisa* did ensue,
Then *Sanfonet* and th' English Duke were prest,
And next two brothers came, then all the crew;
But yet with numbers they were so opprest,
Both with the shafts they shot, and darts they threw,
That notwithstanding all they had deuised,
They were in danger great to be surpris'd.

60

But when the English Duke the danger saw,
Vnto himselfe these words or such he said,
I see our foes in troupes together draw,
I see our friends are weakned and dismaid,
Now will I strike our enemies in aw,
Now will I bring out friends vnlookt for aid,
With this he tooke his horne and blew a blast,
That made the hearers eu'ry one agast.

61

So great a terror in their minds was bred,
That straight as if with sprites they had bene scard,
This way and that, confusedly they fled,
And left the gates without defence or guard,
As tumults often are at stage-playes bred,
When false reports of sudden fires are heard,
Or when the ouerladen seates do cracke,
One tumbling downe vpon anothers backe.

62

One breakes a leg, another breakes an arme,
And some are choakt and stifled in the presse,
Some kill themselues for feare of further harme,
And whence the danger comes they cannot guesse,
But all of them in hast themselues vnarme,
And vnto fearefull flight themselues addresse:
Nor women onely with this feare are punished,
But euen the men themselues were all astonished.

63

Yea euen *Marfisa* courage late so fierce,
(So great a vertue this enchantment had)
That strange and sudden feare the same did pearce,
And she by flight to saue her selfe was glad:
The knights likewise whom late I did rehearse,
And all the men, as if they had bene mad,
To seaward fled, as doth a fearfull Doue,
When any noise doth scare her from aboue.

O ij

64

Thus doth the blast annoy both friends and foes,
Yet so as all the men to shipboord went:
Astolfo still about the citie goes,
For them to terrifie is his intent,
And more and more in all the streets he bloes,
And chiefly thole where they do most frequent,
The while his friends were now to shipboord gotten,
And launched out, and him had quite forgotten.

65

The ship *Aleria* did before provide,
And *Guidon* taking ship with all the rest,
Would not content neare to the shore to bide,
But stale away with dreadfull feare posselt.
Now came the Duke vnto the water side,
And seeing all were gone, he thought it best
Some other meane and way to take in hand,
By which he might conuey him home by land.

66

*He proceedeth to
rel of Astolfo, 22
booke, 5 stasse.*

But how he gate him home, and there did speed,
When from those countries he was come to France,
And how his horne did stand him in great steed,
Defending him from danger and mischance,
Hereafter I will shew, now I proceed
To her whole deeds do still her name aduance,
I meane *Marfisa* stout, that made great hast
To shun the hearing of the fearfull blast.

67

But when they were remoued from the shore,
By helpe of sailes and oares, so great a space,
As now the fearfull sound was heard no more,
Each thought them guiltie of a great disgrace,
And of their feare they were ashamd so sore,
One shund to looke another in the face,
The while their bark had so good wind and wether,
As all arriu'd in Tythen seas together.

68

And to *Marfisa* thence by sea they went,
Where *Bradamant* bare all the rule and sway,
Who late as gouernesse was thither sent,
Though thence she had bene absent many a day:
For had she present bene, by her assent,
Vnertained they should not go away.
Here when they were refreshit with meate and rest,
Marfisa tooke her leaue of all the rest.

69

And said she thought it great disgrace and shame,
So many in one company to see,
For crows (quoth she) and pigeons do the same,
And Deere, and sheepe, and beasts that fearfull be,
But Falcons that do flie at stately game,
With other birds and beasts in their degree,
That feare not others force, and trust their owne,
Shun companie, and loue to go alone.

70

But yet the rest that were of other mind,
Together kept, and bad the Dame farewell,
Vntill by hap a castle they did find,
Wherein a Lord of great estate did dwell,
That in appearance courteous seemd and kind,
But not in acts, as after I shall tell,
For he surprisd them all that night asleepe,
And made them sweare a cruell law to keepe.

*Of shil he speaks
farder on the 22.
booke, 41 stasse.*

71

The while *Marfisa* on her way doth ride,
Appareld like a knight of some renowne,
And as she passed by the riuier side,
She met a woman in a tawnie gowne,
Ilfaour'd, crooked, old and hollow eyd,
Her forehead furrow'd with continuall frowne,
Her bodie tyr'd with trauell and ill fare,
Her guiltie mind afflicted more with care.

72

This filthy hag, this carren witherd iade,
Was she whom in the caue *Orlando* found,
When of the theeues such massacre he made,
That kept faire *Isabella* vnder ground:
This wretch that holpe them in that wicked trade,
And feard the plague that might on her redound,
Fled from all companie for feare of danger,
Vntill she hapt to light vpon this stranger.

73

And for she saw her clad in strange array,
Though gracelesse, yet she gathers heart of grace,
And at the foord her comming she doth stay,
And when *Marfisa* came vnto the place,
Sir knight (for so she seemd) I shall you pray,
(Said this old hag) to do me so much grace,
That on your horse behind you I may ride,
Till I be past the streame on th'other side.

74

Marfisa that was euer from her cradle,
Of courteous kind, doth grant her her desire,
And made her clamber vp behind her saddle,
To passe the riuier and a filthy mire,
That to her horse had almost bene a stable:
And when they were ascended somewhat higher,
They met a faire yong Ladie with a Knight,
Both richly clad, both comely to the sight.

75

But both their minds were false, their manners bad,
And therefore matcht together very fit,
For he was *Pinnabell*, that lately had
Faie *Bradamant* deceiu'd at *Merlins* pit.
She was his loue, for whom he was so sad,
When *Bradamant* on him did hap to hit,
Till after by this noble Damsels meane,
That strange enchantment was dissolued cleane.

*In the second
booke.*

76

This Ladie that was *Pinnabellos* loue,
And was both proud and scornfull of behauour,
And sees this hag, did straight her laughter moue,
To scorne her writheld skin and euill fauour:
For which *Marfisa* stout doth her reprove,
And with a sharpe reply she straight doth braue her,
Because (quoth she) I find thou dost disdain her,
Against thy knight and thee I will maintaine her.

77

I say this woman fairer is then thou,
Now let thy knight come fight in thy defence,
For I by force my laying will auow,
And if that I preuaile, ere thou go hence,
Thou shalt thy horse and garments all allow
To this old woman for a recon pence.
Then *Pinnabell* to fight doth him addresse,
Because in manhood he could do no lesse.

But

78

But when they met (*Marfisa* passing force,
Was such) she quickly vanquished the knight,
And ouerthrew him quite beside his horse.
This done, she makes the stately dame to light,
And with the aged woman cloths to scorne,
At which the tone tooke sport, the tother spite,
She tooke likewise the Ladies ambling nagge,
And thereupon she sets the trotting hagge.

79

Who in this youthfull tyre and rich array,
Doth looke in shew more vgly then before,
Thus three dayes with *Marfisa* she did stay,
Before they hapt to meet with any more;
The fourth they met *Zerbino* on the way,
The Scottish Prince that would haue sau'd *Medore*,
And now in anger great the Scot pursude,
That in his presence prou'd himselfe so rude.

80

Now though *Zerbino* were but ill apaid,
Yet was he straight with laughter great surprisde,
To see an aged woman so arraid,
In youthfull cloths as though she were disguisde:
And to *Marfisa* merily he said,
Sir knight it seemeth you are well aduisd,
To get so faire a peece to carrie by you,
As you are sure that no man will enuie you.

81

The woman seemd some hundred yeares of age,
Her witherd skin such store of wrinkles had,
And like an ape or monkie in a cage,
So looked she in this apparrell clad:
But now she looked worse, when with new rage,
Her eyes enflamed were, and she halfe mad:
For what more spite can be a woman told,
Then if one say she looketh foule and old?

82

Marfisa seemeth wroth (to make some sport)
And thus she saith, surcease your slanderous tounge,
Your vertue of her beautie commeth short,
She is (in spite of you) both faire and young:
And if you dare contrarie my report,
Or that hereby you feele your courage stoung,
I will maintaine against you eu'rie word,
On horse, or foote, by speare or else by sword.

83

Zerbino at this challenge did but laffe,
And said he would not leese their frendship so:
Tis fit (quoth he) that swine should feed on drasse,
I am not I, so mad and fond I trow,
For her to draw a sword or breake a staffe,
But as you came you may together go:
No doubt you are a fitly matched paire,
If you as lustie be as she is faire.

84

Wherefore I list not paine and trauell take,
To get a conquest better lost then wonne:
Then (answerd stout *Marfisa*) I will make
Another offer which you may not shunne,
On this condition let vs for her sake,
A course at field one with the other runne:
That if you win then I will keepe her still,
If I, then you shall serue her while she will.

85

Content (quoth *Zerbino*) and with that they ran,
With couched spears, and met amid the plaine:
But *Zerbino* had the worse, *Marfisa* wan,
As better horst, and stronger of the twaine:
Who seeing *Zerbino* downe, she then began,
To talke with him and iest with him againe,
Behold (quoth she) I here to you present,
This louely damsell for your more content.

86

Now see you keepe your promise and your troth,
To this faire dame to be a champion trew,
And do not breake the bands of sacred oth,
And so (quoth she) for now I bid adew.
Zerbino was mou'd with shame and anger both,
Shame for his foile, a thing most strange and new:
And wrath for her whom he thereby did gaine,
Which he might deeme the greater losse oftwaime.

87

Then of his mistresse new he doth enquire,
What knight it was that did him ouerthrow,
She willingly did graunt him his desire,
Supposing to his griefe might greater grow,
It was a Ladie in a knights attire,
Marfisa hight (quoth she) that layd you low,
The which strange news I thinke not much did lacke
To make his armor blush vpon his backe.

88

Vpon his horse in anger great he gets,
And curst himselfe he had not sit more sure,
He bites his lips, and inwardly he frets,
And she in him more anger to procure,
With byting words his discontentment whets;
Yet he doth for his oth sake all endure,
Like tired horse he quiet all abides,
That hath the bit in mouth, and spurs in sides.

89

At last into this bitter plaint he burst,
On thee o fortune well I may complaine,
And call my selfe vnhappie and accurst,
That dost at once two plagues for me ordaine,
Two plagues that of all plagues I count the worst,
As first this foile, my former fame to staine;
And hauing lost a Ladie of rare features,
To haue this mistresse, fowlest of all creatures.

90

She, whose surpassing beautie well deserued,
All worldly blisse, whose match was neuer found,
She from misfortune could not be preferred,
But that by cruell stormes she must be dround,
And this, who if she had bene rightly serued
Ought longer this, haue fed worms vnder ground,
Thou hast these many yeares and still dost laue,
That I by her at last this plague might haue.

91

By these and such like words as *Zerbino* spake,
That aged woman giues a sured guesse;
That this was he, to whom, and for whose sake,
Faith *Isabell* (kept erst in great distresse,
There where *Orlando* did from theeues her take)
Was wont so great affection to profess,
And to describe his parts and shape so trew,
As eu'rie one might know him at a vew.

O iij

*Though it is not
set downe how
Gabrina knew
Marfisa to be a
woman, yet it is
to be gathered
that in 3. dayes
company shee
might know it.*

*Simile.
Horace hath this
similitude of an
asse.
Demitto auricu-
las, ut iniqua
mentis a sellis.
But this of a horse
is more worthy.*

*He had heard
newes that Isa-
bella was dround
by some flying
reports.*

Zerbino.

92
And now that by his words she plainly found,
That this was Zerbino, and that he beleued
Faile Isabella was in tempest dround,
With which conceit she saw he sore was greued,
She that did know her to be safe and sound,
Yet meaning not his griefe should be releued,
She telleth onely that that would diseale him,
And doth conceale that which she thought would
(please him.)

93
You sir (quoth she) that me so greatly scorne,
If you but knew what tydings I could tell,
Other whom you lament as dead and lorne,
You would both speake me faire and vse me well:
But first I will with horses wild be torne,
And suffer all the paines of earth and hell,
Before that I will condescend to show it,
Or then by me you euer come to know it.

94
Looke how a gentle grewnd, that doth assaile
And flies vpon a stranger at the furst,
Will on the fodaine faune and wag his taile,
If so of bread one profer him a crust:
So Zerbino that before on her did raile,
And bitterly vnto her face her curst,
Now he intreats her, and doth pray and flatter,
To giue him farther notice of the matter.

95
At last with long intreatie she replies,
And saith, faire Isabella is not ded,
But so she liues, that sure she death enuies:
And neuer hope to haue her maidenhed,

Moral.

In the tale of Phalanto and his companie, women may note the notable inconstancie of young mens dishonest loves, how sweet and pleasant so euer they be at the first. In Pynabello and his wife that scorned Gabrinas olde age and deformitie, we may obserue the foule sinne and the iust punishment of pride and contempt of others. In the good Zerbino, that for his promise sake suffers himselfe to be so notoriously abused of a spitefull malicious old wretch, we may marke a notable example of a man true and faithfull of his word.

Historie.

In the beginning of this booke he reciteth the names of foure women famous, two for warre, two for learning, and indeed there haue bene many more, excellent in either kind: as Thomeris that killed Cyrus, Zenobea, Hipficratea wife to Mythridates, Debora the Hebrew, whom the Scripture commendeth; Valcsca queene of Boemia, Thencia queene of Slauonia, Amalasunta queene of the Gothes: All these are famous for their wise gouernment. And for learning diuers women haue greatly excelled; as Eriana, Alpasia, Cleobulyna, Theana, Leontio, Manto, Hicostрата, Carmenta, the Sibils, Sulpicia. But for a perfite patterne of excellency in both kinds, both in gouerning the common wealth most wisely, peaceably, prosperously, and skill in all kind of learning, and languages, Greeke, Latine, French, Italian and Spanish I may say it truly, and without flatterie, that our gracious soueraigne is to be preferred before any of them, yea before all of them, and therefore may iustly be called the iewell, or rather the wonder of all her sex.

Allegoric.
Allusion.

All the Allegoricall matter of this booke is onely in Astolfo's horne, of which I haue spoken before this. This tale of the Greeks comming home from Troy, and finding so many bastards, alludes to a like hap that fell vnto the Spartans when they made warre on the Messenians; from whence one in deed named Falanto or Phalanto with other bastards called Parthenians went to the Oracle to know what they should do, and were directed by the said Oracle to go to Tarentum: Their answer they receiued of the Oracle was this,

Statireum, & pingue solum, tibi trado Tarenti
Incolere, & late sedem per Iapygas ædes.

So as they taking heart vpon this, went from Sparta, and as some thinke built the citie of Tarentum.

The end of the notes vpon the xx. booke.

For I haue scene (quoth she) with these mine eyes,
How twentie lawlesse men her captiue led,
And eu'rie one might haue her at their pleasure,
As hauing libertie, and lust, and leasure.

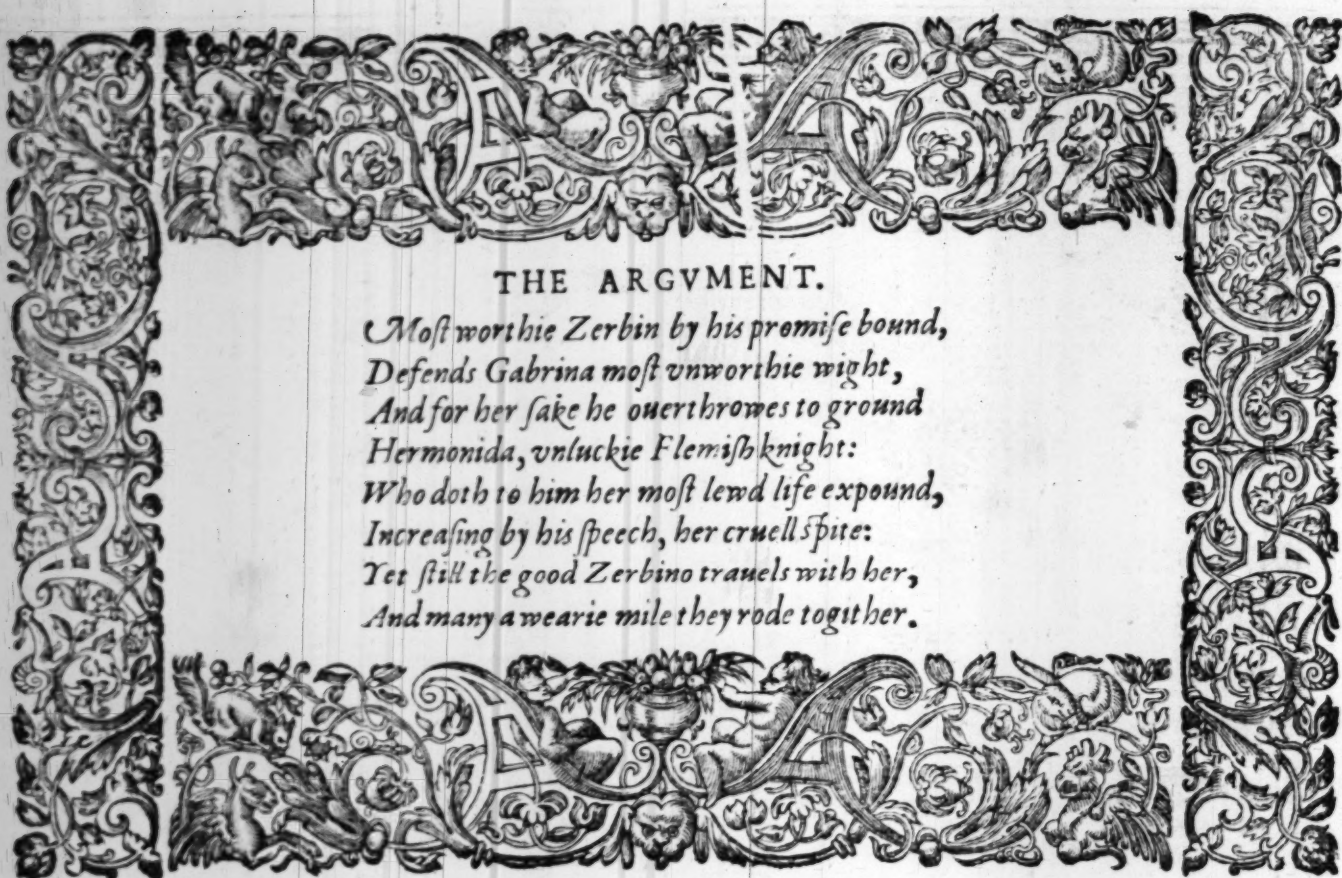
96
Ah wicked hagge, thou know'st it is a lie,
And yet behold how thou canst paint it out,
Thou know'st that none of them with her did lie,
Thou know'st Orlando thence did fetch her out:
And made the malefactors all to die,
That of her danger now there was now doubt.
But now alas this lying storie bred,
A thousand ielousies in Zerbines hed.

97
He askt her where and when his loue she saw,
He speakes her oftentimes both foule and faire;
But not a word more could he from her draw,
Neither by threatning words, nor yet by prayre:
He feesles a corzie cold his heart to gnaw,
His little hope was turnd to great dispaire:
And thus this old ilfauord spitefull Callet,
Gaue good Zerbino such a choking faller.

98
What patience thus prouoked could haue borne,
At such a womans hands so vile a spite?
And saue he was vnto her seruice sworne,
No doubt he would haue done her then her right.
Thus she of mallice full, and he of scorne,
Went on their way, vntill they met a knight:
But what became hereof if you will know,
The booke ensuing shall the sequell show.

Callet is a nickname that they use to a woman as signifies an Irish a much.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Most worthie Zerbino by his promise bound,
Defends Gabrina most unworthie might,
And for her sake he ouerthrowes to ground
Hermonida, unluckie Flemish knight:
Who doth to him her most lewd life expound,
Increasing by his speech, her cruell spite:
Yet still the good Zerbino trauels with her,
And many a wearie mile they rode togither.*

*Enigma.
Alma fides opta
penitus et suis
Tandem totum.*



N Or Iron nailes make fast a
planke or boord
More firme, nor cords a
burden surer binde,
Then faith once giu'n by
promise or by word,
Tyes most assuredly the
vertuous minde,
Old times to vs good store
of samples foord,

How praise deuine was vnto faith affinde,
And how in garments white she still was painted,
That ech smal spot or staine might shew her tainted.

2
Faith euer should be kept in secret sort,
Although to one, or whether giuen to more,
Although in deserts farre from all resort,
Or else a iudge or multitude before:
What though the witness wants to make report:
Yet must we keepe our cou'nant euermore,
As well by word and priuate protestation,
As by record and publike obligation.

*Read the morall
upon this in the
end of this booke.*

3
And so did Zerbino as before I told,
His promise firme vniolate preserue,
And though Gabrina was both foule and old,
Though her misdeeds all rigor did deserue:
Yet he his faith and promise firme doth hold,
And left his former busines her to serue,
Till as they traueled on the way by chance,
They met a Flemish knight late come to France.

4
The knight of stature comly was and tall,
And in his shield he bare an azure bend,

His name *Ermonida* they vse to call,
It seemd he was not this old womans frend,
For straight his sight her heart did to appall,
Vnto her guide her life she doth commend:
And praid him (as he promist) to vouchsafe,
From this her enemy to keepe her safe.

5
This man (quoth she) my guiltlesse father killed,
For malice onely that to me he bare:
This man my onely brothers blood hath spilled,
Because he wisht my safetie and welfare:
Yet with reuenge his rage cannot be filled,
But still he seekes to worke my farther care.
Well (quoth Zerbino) be of better cheare,
For none shall do thee harme whilst I am heare.

6
Now when the knight of Flaunders saw that face,
That of all faces he did most detest:
With me to combat in this present place,
You must prepare (quoth he) and trie your best,
Or yeeld to me this woman void of grace,
That as she hath deseru'd she may be drest:
If you resistance make you will be slaine,
For so it fals to such as wrong maintaine.

7
Zerbino curteously doth thus replie,
Bethinke your selfe with more consideration,
To make a woman of your hand to die,
What staine it is to knightly reputation:
As for the combat if you needs will trie,
Her to defend is my determination:
For I am sworne to fight in her defence,
And therefore cannot with mine oth dispence.

This

9

10

II

12

13

14

35

16

17

18

19

20

21

*Julenai in his
13. satyre, Pana
autem vehemens
ac multo sauior
illu.
Nocte dieq. suum
portare in pecto
re testem.
Ouid. Pariter &
facto torquet
ipse meo.*

22

But though my bodie he haue so defild,
Yet is my mind from sinne deuoid and cleare,
Although from sight of men I am exild,
Nor dare I once in publike place appeare:
This said, with thousand names she him reuild,
So that *Argeo* that the tale did heare,
Beleeued it, and straightwithall intended
To punish him that neuer had offended.

23

He taketh horse forthwith and followth post,
All on reuenge his mind was wholly bent,
And, for he perfittly did know the cost,
And for my brother faire and softly went,
He met him in an hower at the most,
Bidding him stand or else he should be shent:
My brother would dissuade him if he might,
But all in vaine, *Argeo* needs would fight.

24

The tone was strong and full of fresh disdain,
The tother weake and loth to hurt his frend,
So that himselfe defending long in vaine,
My brother was constrained to yeeld in th'end:
And thus at last he prisoner doth remaine,
And yeelds, himselfe vnable to defend:
Which scene, *Argeo* doth surcease to strike,
But speaketh vnto him these words or like.

25

God neuer let my heart so farre be moued,
With rightfull wrath that I thy blood should spill,
Since once I thee esteemed well and loued,
Whom once I loued, I will neuer kill:
And though thy act may iustly be reprov'd,
The world shall see my goodnesse by thine ill,
For be it loue, or be it in disdain,
I will be found the better of the twaine.

26

Another meane then death to vse I mind,
In punishing this sinne and foule misdeed,
This said (with willow bands he there did find)
He makes a hurdle fit to serue such need,
On which my brothers bodie he doth bind,
That with old hurts and new did freshly bleed;
And to his castle he doth him conuay,
In mind to keepe him there a prisoner ay.

27

Yet though with him a prisoner he remaind,
In other things he felt no lacke nor want,
Sauer that his libertie was him restraind:
But lo, this wretch that late did him supplant,
And to her husband so of him complaind,
Thought she would trie if he would yet recant,
And (for at her commaund she had the keyes)
She goes to him, and thus to him she sayes.

28

Now sir (quoth she) I trust you feelee the frute,
That this your foolish constancie hath wrought,
Had you not better bene to graunt the sute,
That I in friendly sort so often sought:
You see tis vaine to argue or dispute,
Say what you can, you are a traitor thought:
And he to whom you shewd so great fidelitie,
Imputes to you treason and infidelitie.

29

I thinke both for your ease and reputation,
You had bene better graunted my request,
You see you haue a soerie habitation,
And in the same for euer looke to rest,
Except you change your first determination,
And mollifie your stonie hearted brest,
Which if you yet will do, I do assure you,
Both libertie and credite to procure you.

30

No, neuer hope, no said *Filandro*, neuer,
(So my vnhappy brothers name they call)
In vaine to change my mind you do endeuer,
And though *Argeo* causelesse keepe me thrall,
Yet I in faith and troth will still perseuer,
Sufficeth me, that he that seeth all,
Doth know mine innocencie and doth see me,
And when he list can both reward and free me.

31

I care not though the world of me thinke ill,
I hope another world will make amends,
Yet let *Argeo* slay me if he will,
Or let him (as it seemeth he intends)
Though wrongfully, in prison hold me still,
Yet one day he will find he hurts his frends,
And know by prooffe how he hath bene beguild,
When truth appears, and time brings forth her child. *Sentence.*

32

Yet for all this, this woman void of shame,
Did cease no whit *Filandro* still to tempt,
And oftentimes in vaine to him she came,
And euer turnes repulst and with contempt,
And in this frantike fancie she doth frame
A thousand sleights to further her attempt,
And many things in mind she doth reuolue,
Before on any one she do resolute.

33

Sixe months entire she doth her selfe absent,
Nor euer came *Filandro* to entice,
Which made him hope that she was now content
To cease her sute, and follow his aduice;
But lo, how fortune (that is euer bent
To further wicked persons in their vice)
Doth vnto her a fit occasion lend,
To bring her wicked lust to wofull end. *Sentence.*

34

There had bene hate and enmitie of old,
Betweene her husband and another knight,
Morando call'd, who often would be bold,
If so *Argeo* absent were a night,
To come with force and to assault his hold,
Or thereabout to do him some despight:
But if he were at home, then all that whiles
He came not neare him by a dozen miles.

35

Wherefore to be reueng'd on this his fo,
That often did him wrong and great outrage,
Argeo giues it out that he will go
Vnto Ierusalem on pilgrimage:
And from his house disguysd he parted so,
In secret sort, without or man or page,
And eu'ry night comes in at the posterne,
That none but she his comming might discern. *Thus*

*Horace scilicet,
Morsum alium
esto, nil confite
sibi, nulla palam
scire culpa.*

Sentence.

36

Thus all the day he wanders all about,
In woods, in groues, in pastures here and thither,
To see if he could find *Morando* out,
That in his absence vsed to come hither:
And farre he keeps himselfe from any rout,
Vntill that darknesse doth obscure the wether,
Then would he get him home a secret way,
Of which his wife did keepe a priuie key.

37

Thus all but she, *Argeo* absent thought,
By which his wicked wife with wonted skill,
Another meanes and new occasion sought,
To bring to passe her foule vnbridled will:
With weeping eyes (her eyes to weepe she thought)
And all with teares her bolome she doth fill,
Then came she to my brother and complained,
That (but he helpe) her honour would be stained.

38

Nor mine alone, but mine *Argens* too,
Who were he here (quoth she) I would not care,
You know what harme *Morando* wents to doo,
When as mine husbands absence makes him dare,
And now behold the caitiue me doth woo,
And to intrap me sets full many a snare,
And offred seruants great reward and hire,
So they would helpe to further his desire.

39

And hearing that *Argeo* was away,
And would continue to no little space,
He came within the castle wall to day,
(His absence gaue him so much heart of grace)
Where, had my husband bene but in the way,
He durst not onely not haue shewd his face,
But sure he would not haue presum'd at all,
To come within a kenning of the wall.

40

And what by message he before had done,
Now face to face by mouth he doth the same,
So as I hardly know which way to shunne,
That which to do, would breed my endlesse blame.
Had not my sugred speech his fauour wonne,
By faining I my will to his would frame,
He would perforce haue had his foule intent,
Which now he hopes to get by my assent.

41

I promist him (but promise made for feare
Is voyd) and I performance neuer ment,
But so that aft I made him to forbear,
Which he to do by force was fully bent.
Now if you be a friend, or euer were,
Vnto *Argeo*, you may this preuent,
Nor onely saue mine honour thus distressed,
But his to whom such loue you haue professed.

42

Which if you me denie, then I may say,
Not honestie, of which your boist you make,
But crueltie did cause you say me nay.
And of my sute so small regard to take:
And that you were not moued any way
With friendships rule, or for *Argens* sake:
Although twixt vs it might haue secret beene,
But now my shame must needs be knowne & scene.

43

Tush (quoth *Filandro*) this is more then need,
To vie such circumstance in such a case,
As I began, to meane I to proceed,
And though *Argeo* hold me in disgrace,
Yet vnto him I not impute this deed,
But ready will be still in time and place,
To do him seruice any way I may,
So you but shew to me the meane and way.

44

Sir then (said she) the way were this, to kill
Him that doth seeke my husbands shame and mine,
Which you may easly do, if so you will
A while vnto my words your care incline:
I haue put off his comming hither, till
It be betwixt the houres of ten and nine,
What time I promist him so to prouide,
To let him in, so as he were not spide.

45

Now then my counsell is, that you do stay
Here in my chamber, vntill I procure
Him to disarme himselfe, so as you may
Slay him with small ado, and make him sure.
This is (quoth she) the onely ready way,
And safest for your selfe, I you assure:
To this device *Filandro* doth assent,
Thinking hereby his friends hurt to preuent.

46

Now more and more approcht the cursed night,
When as his wife (if I a wife may call)
This hellish hag and foule infernall sprite,
Did place my brother armd behind a wall,
And as she wisht, eu'n so it fell aright,
For ill device amisse doth seldome fall;
Her husband in the eu'ning somewhat late,
Enterd his castle at the posterne gate.

47

Filandro at one blow cuts off his hed,
Taking him for *Morando* in exchange,
She stands fast by that him had thither led,
Nor shewes in word or gesture any change:
Argeo there remaineth slaine and ded,
And kild by him (O chance most hard and strange)
That while he friendly thought to do him good,
Most cruell and vnfriendly shed his blood.

48

Now when this feate had thus bene brought to passe,
Gabrina (so is this good womans name)
That doth in craft the fiends of hell surpasse,
Vnto my brother for his weapon came,
Which he deliuerd as his promise was,
And that once done, then she without all shame,
Prayes him to take in hand a lighted candle,
And view him well whom he so ill did handle.

49

There first he saw how he had kild his frend,
A sight that made him at the heart repent,
And she afresh the matter to amend,
Doth threate, except he would to her assent,
That she should bring his life to shamefull end,
For to accuse him of this fact she ment,
Wishing him though his life he did despise,
To shunne a shamefull death if he be wise.

Sentence.

Sentence.

50

Filandro mazd, and full of feare did stand;
When of his error he was first aware,
He thought at first to kill her out of hand,
By whom he was intrapt in such a snare,
But she had got his weapons in her hand,
And to defend her selfe did straight prepare:
But sure he could haue found it in his hart,
By peccemeale to haue torne her eu'ry part.

51

Like as a ship in midst of seas oppress,
Betweene two winds that do together strue,
Can haue no time of respire or of rest,
But goes what way the stronger wind doth driue:
So now *Filandro* doubting which was best,
To die, or in such sort to bide aliue,
Stood long in doubt, and neither way did bend,
Yet chose the worse bargain in the end.

52

His reason open layes before his face,
The danger great if once the fact were knowne,
Beside the infamie and great disgrace,
That would about the world of him be blowne:
Beside to chuse he had but little space,
So as his wit and sence was scant his owne:
At last he doth conclude what euer come,
To swallow this vnfaury choking plum.

53

Wherefore against his will, inforst by feare,
He promileth to take her for his wife,
And vnto her he solemnly doth sweare,
To marry her if now she saue his life:
And (for it was not safe to tarry there)
When once the murder should be publisht ripe,
He turnes vnto the place where he was borne,
And leaues behind him infamie and scorne.

54

And still he carri'd in his pensue heart,
His friends mishap, lamenting it in vaine,
How for a iust reward of such defart,
A *Progne* and *Medea* he did gaine;
And saue his oth restrained him in part,
No doubt he would the wicked hag haue slaine:
But yet he hated her like toade or snake,
And in her companie small ioy did take.

55

From that to this, to laugh or once to smile,
He was not seene, his words and looks were sad,
With often sighs, and in a little while,
He grew much like *Orestes*, when he had
First slaine his father by his mothers guile,
Then her, and last of all fell raging mad,
With spirits vext so was my brothers hed,
Still vext till sickness made him keepe his bed.

56

But when this cursed strumpet plainly saw,
How small delight in her my brother tooke,
She doth her feruent loue from him withdraw,
And in short space that fancie she forooke:
And lastly she resolves against all law,
So soone as she can fit occasion looke,
To bring *Filandro*s life to wofull end,
And after her first husband him to send.

57

An old Phisition full of false deceit,
She findeth out most fit for such a feate,
That better knew to giue a poysond bait,
Then for to cure with herbs or wholsom meate:
Him, that for gaine most greedily doth wait,
By profers large she quickly doth intreate,
To take vpon him this vngracious cure,
With poysond cup to make her husband sure.

58

Now while my selfe was by, and others more,
This old Phisition came to him ere long,
And brought a cup, in which was poyson store,
And said, it cordiall was, to make him strong:
But lo, *Gabrina* that denisd before,
Eu'n in the prise of wrong, to do some wrong,
Before *Filandro* of the cup did tast,
Stept twixt the leach and him in no small hast.

59

And taking in her hand against his will,
The cup in which the poysond drinke was plast,
She said, good Doctor do not take it ill,
That I require you first the drinke to tast,
I will not haue my husband drinke, vntill
You haue your selfe before him tane the tast:
I will (said she) be certaine by the rood,
That this you giue him, wholsome is and good.

60

Now in what pickle thinke you was the leach?
The time was short to take a sound aduice,
He might not vse perswasion now nor speach,
He durst not tell how she did him intice,
Nor could he guesse what was herein her reach,
To make him tast first of the poysond spice,
Wherefore to take a tast he thought it best,
And then he giues my brother all the rest.

61

Euen as a hawke that hath a partridge trust
In griping talents, sits and plumes the same,
Oft by a dog whom she doth not mistrust,
Is kild her selfe and reaued of her game:
So this Phisition gracelesse and vniust,
While he to greedie gaine his mind doth frame,
Was vld by her euen as he well deserued,
And so I wish all such Phisitions serued.

62

The poore old man that felt his stomacke ake,
Began to take his leaue, and homeward hasted,
He thinks some strong Antidoton to take,
Against the poysond cup he lately tasted:
She sweares his home returne he may not make,
While th'operation of the potion lasted,
And that she will see plainly ere he go,
If so it do her husband good or no.

63

By humble sute and offers he doth trie,
That with her licence he may thence depart,
But all in vaine, his sute she doth denie:
Now had the liquor welnigh toucht his hart,
Wherefore perceiuing plainly he must die,
He doth the secret to vs all impart:
Thusto himselfe he did the same at last,
Which oft he did to others in time past.

And

Simile.
Thou one *Salus*
an *Italian* used
in a latin poeme,
Non grauiore
momento vnti
certamina mole,
&c.

Hirace.
Cane petus &
angue.

Orestes looks in
the historie.

This of the Phisition
is word taken out
of the x. booke of
Apuleius golden
Ass, and yet is
here by mine au-
thor very aptly
inferred to be-
cause his sale, and
so poynt fortie
leadenesse of a
wild woman.

Simile.

antidoton
is a medicine
taken against
sickness.

64
And straight in little space my brother dyde,
And after him dide this same false Phisition.
We that had heard and seene the matter tride,
Of which my selfe before had some suspition;
Both hand and foote we then this monster tyde,
And bring her vnto such as had commission,
Where her confession, and our accusation,
Made them pronounce her doome of condēnation.

65
Thus in the gaile in fetters she was laid,
Adiudged to be burned at a stake,
Thus (said the knight) and more he would haue said
How she escaped, and how she prison brake,
But so he fainted, as they were affraid,
He would haue sounded as those words he spake:
Wherefore his page him to his horse doth lift,
And then to binde his wounds they make a shift.

66
Then Zerbin tooke his leaue and made a skuse,
That he had hurt the knight in her defence,
Affirming he had done, as is the vse,
To saue his charge from damage and offence:
And y^e thenceforth with him he would haue truce,
This said, he tooke his leaue and parted thence,
And promist him with words of great ciuilltie,
To further him vnto his best abillitie.

67
Sir (said the knight) for this I do you thanke,
And wish you of that woman to beware,
Lest that she serue you some such slipper pranke,
As may procure your farther woe and care:

For hard shall any scape from danger franke,
That in her companie long season are:
Gabrina silent all the while stands by,
For hard it is to proue the truth a lye.

Sentence.

68
Thus hence they part, and for his promise sake,
At her commandment Zerbin doth attend,
And wisht in heart, the diuell might her take,
Though with his hand he must her still defend:
And those last words the knight of Holland spake,
To giue him warning of the cursed fend,
Do fill his mind with so great griefe and spight,
That now he scant could well abide her sight.

69
And this same old and weather beaten trot,
Perceiuing how Zerbino was inclin'd,
Would not once yeeld or be behind a iot,
In spitefull wishing, nor in euill mind:
Her eye and tongue and looke conceale it not,
Nor yet her deeds as after he did finde,
Thus in this harmony and concord good,
It was their hap to trauell through the wood.

70
Now when the time approched neare the night,
They heard a noise of buttling and of blowes,
Caus'd as they guessed by some brall or fight,
But where it was yet neither of them knowes,
Zerbino longed much to see the fight,
And thither wards in no small hast he goes,
And in no lesse, Gabrina maketh after,
As shalbe shewd you more at large hereafter.

A more necessarīe morall (as I thinke) cannot be found for our age we now line in, then that, with which this booke Morall
begins: namely, of the keeping of faith, and promise, which euen among Turkes and heathen Philosophers hath bene re-
ligiously kept; and yet among vs that call our selues Christians, and boast of an extraordinarie light of the Gospell, is
often most irreligiously broken: so that as Ouid saith of his time in ironical manner.

Aurea nunc verē sunt secula, plurimus auro
Venit honos, auro conciliatur amor:

In English thus,

This may indeed, be call'd the age of gold,
For honour, loue and all, for it is sold.

So may I say, this is a notable time for credite, for now generally (euen with some of the better sort) mens words be as
good as their obligations: namely, neither of both worth the taking for a farthing. Secondly, in Filandro we may note a
speciall good nature and inclination, that would rather abandon a place which he liked very well, then either breake the
lawes of friendship and hospitalitie; or accuse the wife to her husband. In his killing Argeo, and all the tragicall procee-
dings of the wicked Gabrina, we may note the most rous effects of an vnbridled affectiō in a mischieuous woman, that kil-
led both her husbands, and lastly the Phisition, and stil continued working fresh mischief til her death, as after foloweth.

Orestes, whom he spake of in the 55. staffe of this 21. booke was sonne of Agamemnon, who being slaine by the Historie.
trecherie of his wife Clytemnestra, Orestes in reuenge thereof killed his mother, and after that, was himselfe tormented
with furies, or rather with his conscience for so horrible an act, and so fell mad, and was healed againe; and after, that
notable accident of Pilades and him fell out.

Simon Fornarie affirmeth that in this tale of Gabrina, my authour doth allude to a woman of like lewdnesse, lining Allusion.
in his time, and by Argeo and Filandro to be ment two Gentlemen of Naples; but the truth is, the tale is almost verba-
tim, taken out of Apuleius golden Asse. Specially for that part of the Phisition: Sed vxor, quæ iam pridem nomen
vxoris cum fide perdiderat, medicum conuenit quendam notæ perfidiæ qui iam multarum palmarum spectatus
prælijs, magna dextræ suæ trophœa numerabit, as I before noted on the 57. staffe.

The end of the notes vpon the xxj. booke.

P.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Astolfo doth dissolve the charmed place,
And spite of Atlant, sets his prisoners free:
Then Bradamant doth see Rogeros face:
To helpe an unknowne knight they craued be;
But by the way Rogero in short space,
Subdewd foure knights, of worth and good degree,
That were by Pinabell in prison hild,
Whom Bradamant with iust reuengment kild.*



YE courtly dames, that are
both kind and true,
Vnto your loues, if kinde
and true be any,
As sure I am in all your
louely crue,
Of so chaste minde, there
are not ouer many;
Be not displeas'd with this
that doth ensue,

For neither must I leaue it, neither can I,
And beare with me for that I said before,
When on *Gabrina* I did raile so fore.

2

Mine earnest words, nor yet her great offence,
Cannot obscure in honour and cleare fame,
Those few, whose spotlesse liues want no defence,
Whom hate nor enuie no way can defame:
He that his master sold for thirtie pence,
To *John* nor *Peter* breeds no blot nor blame:
Nor men of *Hipermestra*, worse haue thought,
Although her sisters were vnchaste and nought.

3

For one that in this verse I shall dispraise,
As driu'n by course of this my present storie,
Whole hunderds are whom I intend to praise,
And magnifie their well deserued glorie,
If this then be offensive any wayes,
To all or any, I can be but sorie:
Now of the Scottish Prince a word or two,
That heard a noise, and went forthwith thereto.

4

Betweene two mountaines in a shadie dale,
He doth descend that way the noise him led,

But when he came he saw vpon the vale,
A Baron lately slaine and newly ded.
But er I enter further in this tale,
I first must tell you how *Astolfo* sped:
Whom late I left in that most curled cittie,
Where women murder men without all pittie.

5

I told you how his horne with mightie blast,
Not onely all his foes had driuen away,
But also made his friends so sore agast,
As not the stowtest of them there durst stay:
Wherefore (I said) he was constraind at last,
Alone to get him homward on his way,
Forthwith on *Rabicano* he doth mount,
An horse of which he makes no small account.

6

His horne that serues him still at all assaies,
He carries with him and his learned booke,
First by *Armenia* he goes his wayes,
Then *Brusia* and the way of *Thrale* he tooke,
So that within the space of twentie dayes,
The streame *Danubio* he quite forsooke:
Then from *Boemia* ward he doth decline,
Vnto *Franconia* and the streame of *Rhine*.

7

Then through *Ardennas* wood to *Aquis graue*,
And thence to *Flanders* where he shipping found,
What time a Northeast winde did blow so braue,
As set him soone in sight of English ground:
So that no whit annoyd with winde nor waue,
His natiue soile receiu'd him safe and sound:
He taketh horse, and er the Sunne was downe,
At *London* he arriu'd the chiefeest towne.

P ij

*He comes to the
matter in the 25.
Booke. ff. 29.*

*Quid. Parete
paucorum dis-
fundere crimina
in omnes.*

Iudas Iscariot.

*Hipermestra one
of the 50 Sisters.
Looke in the Sto-
rie of this booke.*

8

Here at his first arrivall straight he heares,
How that the Turkes faire *Paris* did beseege,
And how his fire (a man well stroke in yeares)
Was there, and sent for ayd to raise the leege:
And how of late the Lords and chiefeſt peares,
Were gone with new ſupplies to helpe their leege,
But little ſtay he makes theſe words once hard,
But taketh ſhip againe to Callice ward.

9

And for the winde ſeru'd then not very well,
They were by force thereof borne quite aſide,
So that the maſter ſcant himſelfe could tell,
What courſe he held, they were borne downe ſo
Yet at the laſt ſo luckie it befell, (wide,
Within a kenning they ſome land had ſpide,
And drawing neare they found the towne of Roan,
Where preſently the Duke tooke land alone.

10

And croſſing through a wood when time drew neare,
That neither day could well be cald nor night,
He hapt to finde a chriſtall ſpring and cleare,
And by the ſide thereof he did alight,
With mind to quench his thirſt and reſt him heare,
As in a place of pleaſure and delight,
He ties his horſe vnto a tree, and thinketh
To haue him tarrie ſafe there while he drinketh.

11

Sentence.
Multa cadunt
inter calicem ſu-
gremq; labra.

Strange things may fall betweene the lip and cup,
For ſcant *Aſolfo* yet had wet his lip,
But from a buſh a villaine ſtarted vp,
Vntide the horſe, and on his backe doth ſkip:
The Duke that ſcant had taſted yet a ſup;
And finds himſelfe thus tane in ſuch a trip,
Forgets to drinke, and followes in a rage,
For wrath not water doth his thirſt aſſwage.

12

The little villaine that the horſe had got,
(Like one that did in knauish pranks delight)
Although he might haue run yet did it not,
Because *Aſolfo* ſhould not leeſe his fight:
But with falſe gallop, or a gentle trot,
He leads the Duke vnto that place aright,
Where many knights and Lords of high degree,
Without a priſon, more then priſners be.

Atlantis caſtell.

13

Aſolfo, though his armour doth him cumber,
Yet fearing leaſt he might arrive too late,
In following the villaine doth not ſlumber,
Vntill he came within the pallace gate,
Where (as I ſaid) of Lords no little number,
Were wandring vp and downe in ſtrange eſtate:
Aſolfo of their preſence doth not force,
But runneth vp and downe to finde his horſe.

14

The craftie villaine was in no place found,
Though many a homely place for him was ſought,
Yet ſtill the Duke doth ſearch the pallace round,
And for his beaſt he takes no little thought:
At laſt he gueſt it was enchanted ground,
And as by *Logeſtilla* he was taught,
He tooke his booke and ſearcheth in the table,
How to diſſolue the place he might be able.

15

And ſtraight in th'index for it he doth looke,
Of pallaces fram'd by ſuch ſtrange illuſion,
Among the reſt, of this (ſo ſaith the booke)
That it ſhould neuer come vnto confuſion,
Vntill a certaine ſtone away were tooke,
In which a ſprite was kept by ſtrange incluſion,
And if he did but liſt the threshold ſtone,
The goodly houſe would vaniſh and be gone.

16

The Duke not doubting now of good ſucceſſe,
Go'th to the threshold where the ſtone was laid,
And which it was he preſently doth gueſſe,
And then by force to moue it he aſſaid:
But *Atlant*, that expected nothing leſſe,
And ſees his bold attempt, was ſore affraid,
And ſtraight an hunderd meanes he doth deuife,
To hinder him from this bold enterpriſe.

17

He makes the Duke, by this his diuellish ſkill,
To ſeeme of diuers ſhapes vnto the reſt,
To one a darſe, of face and fauour ill,
To one a gyant, to a third a beaſt,
And all their hearts with hatred he doth fill,
He thinks by them the Duke ſhould be diſtreſt:
By ſeeming vnto eu'rie one the ſame,
For which each one into the pallace came.

18

Behold *Rogero* ſtout, and *Brandimart*,
Prasido, *Bradaman*, and others moe,
Vpon *Aſolfo* ſet with cruell hart,
As to reuenge themſelues vpon their foe:
But with his horne the Duke then plaid his part,
And brought their loſtie ſtomackes ſomwhat low:
But had not th'horne procur'd him this exemption,
No doubt the Duke had dyde without redemption.

Rogero.
Bradaman.

19

For when they heard the ſtrange and fearfull blaſt,
They forced were for feare away to runne,
As fearefull Pigeons flie away agaſt.
When men do ring a bell or ſhoot a gunne;
The Sorcerer himſelfe was not the laſt,
That ſought by flight the fearfull noiſe to ſhunne:
Yea ſuch it was, that neither rat nor mouſe,
Durſt tarrie in the circuit of the houſe.

Simile.

20

Among the horſes that did breake their bands,
Was *Rabican* of whom before I told,
Who by good hap came to *Aſolfo*'s hands,
Who was full glad when of him he had hold,
Alſo *Rogeros* Griffith horſe there ſtands,
Faſt tyed in a chaine of beaten gold,
The Duke, as by his booke he had bene taught,
Diſtroyed quite the houſe by magike wrought.

21

I do not doubt but you can call to minde,
How good *Rogero* loſt this ſtately beaſt,
What time *Angelica* his eyes did blinde,
Denying moſt vnkindly his requieſt:
The horſe that ſored ſwifter then the winde,
Went backe to *Atlant* whom he loued beſt,
By whom he had bene of a young one bred,
And diligently taught, and eoſtly fed.

Glad

22

This English Duke was glad of such a pray,
As one that was to trauell greatly bent,
And in the world was not a better way
For him to serue his purpose and intent;
Wherefore he meaneth not to let him stray,
But takes him as a thing from heau'n him sent,
For long ere this he had of him such prooffe,
As well he knew what was for his behoofe.

23

Now being full resolu'd to take in hand,
To trauell round about the world so wide,
And visite many a sea and many a land,
As none had done, nor euer should beside,
One onely care his purpose did withstand,
Which could him yet a little time to bide,
He doth bethink him oft, yet doth not know
On whom his Rabiçano to bestow.

24

He would be loth that such a stately steed
Should by a peasant be posselt or found,
And though of him he stood then in no need,
Yet had he care to haue him safe and sound,
In hands of such as would him keepe and feed;
While thus he thought and lookt about him round,
Next day a while before the Sunne was set,
A champion all in armes vnwares he met.

25

But first I meane to tell you what became
Of good Rogero and his Bradamant,
Who when againe vnto themselues they came,
The pallace quite destroyd of old Atlant;
Each knew and cald the other by their name,
And of all courtesies they were not scant,
Lamenting much that this enchanted pallace,
Had hinderd them so long such ioy and tollace.

26

The noble maid to shew her selfe as kind,
As might become a virgin wife and sage,
Doth in plaine termes as plaine declare her mind,
As thus, that she his loues heate will assuage,
And vnto him her selfe in wedlocke bind,
And spend with him all her ensuing age,
If to be christned first he were content,
And afterwards to aske her friends consent.

27

But he that would not onely not refuse
To change his life for his beloueds sake,
But also if the choise were his to chuse,
To leese his life and all the world forsake,
Did answer thus, my deare, what ere ensues
I will performe what ere I vndertake,
To be baptizd in water or in fire,
I will consent if it be your desire.

28

Though Rogero
were willing to
be baptizd, and
after still defer-
red it, you must
note he knew not
in what danger
his master was in
till afterwards in
the xxv. booke.

This said, he goes from thence with full intent,
To take vpon him christend state of life,
Which done he most sincerely after ment,
To aske her of her father for a wife;
Vnto an Abbey straight their course they bent,
As in those dayes were in those places rise,
Where men deuout did liue with great frugalitie,
And yet for strangers kept good hospitahie.

29

But ere they came to that religious place,
They met a damsell full of heauy cheare,
That had with teares bedewed all her face,
Yet in those teares great beautie did appeare,
Rogero, that had euer speciall grace
In courteous acts and speech when she came neare,
Doth aske of her what dangers or what feares,
Did moue her so to make her shed such teares.

30

She thus replies, the cause of this my grieve,
Is not for feare or danger of mine owne,
But for good will, and for compassion chiefe,
Of one yong knight, whose name is yet vnknowne,
Who if he haue not great and quicke reliefe,
Is iudgd into the fier to be throwne,
So great a fault they say he hath committed,
That doubt it is it will not be remitted.

31

The fault was this, there was good will betweene
Him and the daughter of the King of Spaine,
And lest his loue should be descride and teene,
He finely doth himselfe a woman faine,
And went and spake as if he had to beene,
And thus he plaid (to tell the matter plaine)
The maid in shew, the man in deed so well,
That in a while he made her belly swell.

32

But out alas, what can so secret be,
But out it will when we do least suspect;
For posts haue eares, and walls haue eyes to see,
Dumbe beasts and birds haue tongues ill to detect,
First one had found it out, then two or three:
And looke how fire doth creepe that men neglect,
So this report from mouth to mouth did spring,
Till at the last it came vnto the King.

Sentence.

Sentence.

Simile.

33

The King straight sends a trustie seruant thither,
Who making search when they two were in bed,
Found out the troth, and tooke them both together,
Found him a man, and found her belly sped,
Away they carrid her I know not whether,
Away vnto the prison he was led,
And must be burnd this day or else to morow,
The thought wherof doth moue my mind to sorow.

34

This made me purposely to come from thence,
And not to see one of so comely shape,
So sharply punisht for this small offence,
As if it were for murder or for rape,
Nor any hope could sinke into my sence,
How possible it were for him to scape,
And who could see or thinke without compassion,
A fine yong youth tormented in such fashion?

35

Twas strange to thinke how nie this tale did touch
The noble Bradamants most tender hart,
It seemd she pittide this mans state as much,
As if her brother had playd such a part:
Some cause there was to make her fancie such,
As afterward at large I shall impart:
And straight she makes this motion, that they twaine
Might saue this wofull youth from being flaine.

It was indeed
her brother, as
you shall see after
in the 25. booke.

36

Rogero much commends her noble mind,
And to the mourning damsell thus they said,
We both are to this enterprife inclind,
If fortune serue we will the yong man aid,
But when they saw that still she mournd and whind,
Tush (quoth Rogero) cease to be afraid,
Tis more then time that we were going hence,
Not teares but force must serue for his defence.

37

These comfortable words Rogero spake,
With that his warlike looke and manly show,
Did cause her heart of grace forthwith to take,
Yet still she doubts which way were best to go,
Not that she feard the right way to mistake,
For all the wayes she perfectly did know,
To turne the way she came she was afraid,
Lest in the way they haply might be staid.

38

There are (quoth she) two wayes vnto the place,
Of which the one is easie, faire and plaine,
The tother foule, and farre the greater space,
Yet at this time the safer of the twaine,
But yet I feare, except God send more grace,
That ere we thither come, he may be slaine:
Thus stood this damsell still, not little musing,
Betweene the nearer way and safer chusing.

39

Rogero that was resolute and stout,
Did aske what reason mou'd her to perswade
Them two to take the farther way about,
And straightway she to them this answer made,
Forsooth (said she) the cause that moues my doubt
Is this, I feare that some will you invade,
By meanes that Pinnabell (*Anselmus* sonne)
Hath here of late a custome leud begunne.

40

As namely that who euer that way ride,
Of what estate soeuer or degree,
Must leese their horses first, and then beside
Must of their clothes and raiment spoiled be.
Foure valiant youths of strength, and courage tride,
Are sworne to this, so that no he nor she
Can passe that way without this euill payment,
That he must weapons leese, and she her raiment.

41

The custome is, as yet but three dayes old,
By Pinnabell and his wife deuised,
Who meeting haply (as I heard it told)
A knight, or one in knightly clothes disguised,
With whom a woman vgly to behold,
And by this couple scorned and despised,
This Pinnabell the worse had of the quarrell,
His wife was spoild of horse and of apparrell.

*This was Mar-
sa and Gabrina,
as you might
reade before in
the latter end of
the 20. booke.*

42

This spite enraged so the womans mind,
That wishing to reuenge, not knowing how,
Yet wrath and folly so her sence doth blind,
That straight she makes a foolish tolemne vow,
And he that was to euill deeds inclind
No lesse then she, doth of the same allow:
The vow was this, for anger of this foile,
A thousand others in like sort to spoile.

43

That very night came to that house by chance,
Foure valiant knights as euer armor bare,
To fight on horse or foot with sword or lance,
But few may with the worst of them compare,
These foure I say were first that led this dance,
By night surpris'd ere they were aware,
Both Griffin, Aquilant and Sansonet,
And Guidon Savage, scant a man as yet.

44

These foure in shew he gently entertained,
And makes them friendly countenance and cheare,
With courteous speech and friendly manner fained,
As if he lou'd them well and held them deare:
But while secure they in their beds remained,
And when Sunne rising now approched neare,
He did beset the lodging where they lay,
And tooke their armor and their clothes away.

45

And further bound them in that present place,
Both hand and foote as if they prisners were,
And ere he did those causelesse bonds vnlace,
He makes them solemnly to vow and sweare,
To keepe this order for a tweluemonths space,
That whosoever hapned to come there,
They foure endeavour should with all their forces,
To take away their raiment and their horses.

Pinnabell's law.

46

To this by solemne oth are sworne they foure,
Constrained thereto by this their cruell host,
And though herewith they were offended sore,
Yet must they sweare for feare of farther cost,
Alreadie not so few as twise a score,
Their horses and their furniture haue lost,
And none as yet so able haue bene found,
But one of these haue laid him on the ground.

47

But if some one do hap so strong to be,
To make his partie good with one of those,
Then straight the order is, the other three
Must him assist, thus none vnconquerd goes.
Wherefore if you will be aduised by me,
Tis best to shun this way as I suppose,
Sith each of these is such as I recited,
How great thinke you will be their force vnited?

48

But presuppose that you their force withstand,
As your great courage makes me thinke you might,
Yet needs it hinder must the cause in hand,
And make you tarry hereabout all night:
Sith then this case so dangerously doth stand,
I would perswade you now to shun this fight,
Lest while you in this enterprife remaine,
The poore yong man may fortune to be slaine.

49

Tush quoth Rogero, haue no doubt at all,
Let vs endeavor still to do our best,
And then hap good or ill, fall what may fall,
Let God and fortune gouerne all the rest:
I hope this enterprife I finish shall
So well, as I shall eke do your request,
And there arriue to saue him in good time,
That should be burned for so small a crime.

Sentence.

This

50

This said, he gets him on the nearest way,
Fast by the place where *Pinnabell* doth dwell,
And at the bridge they forced were to stay,
And straight a man (whose name I know not well)
Came out in hast, and stand to them doth say,
And then begins their order them to tell,
Perswading them, if they will shunne the perell,
To yeeld in peace their horses and apparell.

51

Peace (quoth *Rogero*) leaue thy foolish prating,
A tale alreadie knowne thou dost repeate,
Children with bugs, and dogs are scard with rating,
With me it small auailles to brag or threate,
I leese but time with thee to stand debating,
Shew me the men that mind to do this feate,
My hast is such that long I may not stay,
Wherefore I pray you bid them come away.

52

Lo here comes one of them, this old man fed,
And as he spake the words, out came a knight,
A tall strong man, all armd from foot to hed,
His armor like a fornace shined bright,
His colours that he ware were white and red,
This was the first, and *Sansonet* he hight,
And, for he was a man of mightie strength,
Two massie speares he brought of mightie length.

53

The one of these he to *Rogero* gaue,
The other to himselfe he doth reserue,
Then each, in hope the victorie to haue,
Do spurte their stedic steeds that will not swerue,
Rogeros shield from wounding doth him saue,
The others did him not so well preferue,
The speare both pierst his shield and prickt his arme,
And ouerthrew him to his further harme.

54

You do not sure, nor cannot yet forget,
What of *Rogeros* shield before I told,
That made the fiends of hell with toyle to swet,
And shind so bright as none could it behold,
No maruell then though valiant *Sansonet*,
Although his hands were strong and hart were bold,
Could not preuaile so strong a shield to pierce,
Of so great force as late I did rehearse.

55

This while was *Pinnabell* approched nie
To *Bradamant*, and askt of her his name,
That in their sight his force so great did trie,
To ouerthrow a knight of so great fame.
(Lo how the mighty God that sits on hie,
Can punish sinne when least men looke the same)
Now *Pinnabel* fell in his enemies hands,
When in his owne conceit most safe he stands.

56

It was his hap that selfe same horse to ride,
Which eight months past from *Bradamant* he stole,
Then when he falsly let the pole to slide,
At *Merlins* caue (if you did marke the tale)
But now when she that traitor vile had spide,
That thought by trechery to worke her bale,
She stept forthwith betweene him and his castle,
And sweares that she with him a pull would wastle.

57

Looke how a fox, with dogs and hunters chaff,
That to come backe vnto her hole did weene,
Is vtterly discourag'd and agast,
When in her way she nets and dogs hath seene:
So he that no such perill did forecast,
And sees his fo stept him and home betweene,
With word him threatning and with sword assailing,
Doth take the wood his heart and courage failing.

58

Thus now on flight his onely hope relying,
He spurd that horse that chiefe his trouble bred,
No hope of helpe, and yet for helpe still crying,
For doubt of death almost already ded,
Sometime the fact excusing or denying,
But she beleeuing not a word he fed,
None in the castle were of this aware,
About *Rogero* all so busied are.

59

This while forth of the gate came th'other three,
That to this law so solemnly had sworne,
Among the rest that came was also she
That causd this law, full of disdaine and scorne,
And none of these but sooner would agree
With horses wilde to be in peeces torne,
Then to distaine their honor and good name,
With any act that might be worthy shame.

60

Wherefore it grieved them to the very gall,
That more then one at once should one assaile,
Saue they were sworne to runne together all,
If to the first of victorie did faile:
And she vncessantly on them did call,
What meane you sirs (quoth she) what do you aile?
Do you forget the cause I brought you hither?
Are you not sworne to take part all together?

61

Fie, answerd *Guidon*, what a shame is this?
Let rather me alone my fortune trie,
And if of victory I hap to misse,
At my returning backe then let me die.
Not so quoth she, my meaning other is,
And you I trust will not your word denie:
I brought you hither for another caue,
Not now to make new orders and new lawes.

62

Thus were they vrged by this scornfull dame,
To that which all their hearts abhorred sore,
And which they thought to them so great a shame,
As neuer like had chanced them before:
Also *Rogeros* words increast the same,
Vpbraiding them, and egging more and more,
And asking why they made so long delay,
To take his armor and his horse away.

63

And thus in maner forst and by constraint,
They came all three *Rogero* to intade,
Which act they thought wold fore their honors taint,
Though full account of victory they made,
Rogero at their coming doth not faint,
As one well vld through dangers great to wade,
And first the worthy *Oliueros* sonnes,
With all their force against *Rogero* runnes.

P iij

Sentence.

Simile.

Sentence.

Of this ye might
made in the end
of the 2 booke.

64

Rogero turnd his horse to take the field,
With that same staffe that lately ouerthrew
Stout *Sanfnet*, and with that passing shield,
That *Atlant* made by helpe of hellish crew,
That shield, whose ayd he vsed very seeld,
Some v unexpected danger to eschew:
Twice when *Aicynas* kingdome he forsooke,
Once when the Indian Queene h^o th' Ork he tooke.

65

Saue these three times he neuer vld the aid
Of this his shield, but left it couerd still,
If he abroade, or if within he staid,
He neuer left it open by his will.
As for these three, he was no more afraid
Of all their strength, their number nor their skill,
Nor made no more account with them to fight,
Then if they had seemd children in his sight.

66

And first he met the yonger of the twaine,
That *Griffin* hight, who had to great a blo,
As in the saddle he could scant remaine,
But quite amazed reeled to and fro;
He strake *Rogero*, but it was in vaine,
For why, the stroke fell ouerthwartly so,
That quite beside *Rogeros* shield it slipt,
But yet the case it all to tare and ript.

67

Now when the renting of the silken case,
In which *Rogero* vld the shield to hide,
Had cast out such a light in each mans face,
That none of them the force thereof could bide,
They fell downe all amazed in the place,
Admit they sit, or stand, or go, or ride,
Rogero with the cause not yet acquainted,
Did maruell how his foes so soone had fainted.

68

But when he once was of the cause aware,
And how the couer of his shield was rent,
By meane whereof it open lay and bare,
And thence such light vnto the lookers sent:
He looks about where his companions are,
Because forthwith to get him thence he ment,
I meane his *Bradamant*, and that same maid,
That for that youth did erst demaund his aid.

69

But his belou'd as then he found not, where
He erst had left her when he went to iust,
And when he plainly saw she was not there,
And that that happend he could not mistrust,
He parted thence, and with him he doth beare
The maid that made to him the sute so iust,
Who lay that time amazed with the rest,
With sudden blasing of the light distrest.

70

He takes her kirtle, and with it doth hide
The light that did so dazle all their eyes,
That light on which to looke none could abide,
As if two Sunnes had shone at once in skies:
Forthwith him selfe all malcontent doth ride,
To haue this combat ended in such wise,
As might imputed be to Magicke art,
And not his prowesse or his valiant hart.

71

Now while this thought such passions did him yeeld,
That though he had indeed most brauely donne,
Yet men would thinke the glorie of the field,
Not by his valiantnesse to haue bene wonne,
But by the force of that enchanted shield,
That cast a light more piercing then the Sunne,
I say as thus he thought, he passed by
A large deepe well, that by the way did lie.

72

A well at which the beasts in summers heate
Did vse their thirstie drought to quench and coole,
And chew againe their vndigested meate,
And walke about the shallowes of the poole.
Here did *Rogero* oft these words repeate,
Thou shield, that late didst make me such a foole,
To cause me get a conquest with such shame,
Lie there (quoth he) with thee go all my blame.

73

With that he threw the shield into the well,
The well was deepe, the shield of mightie weight,
That to the bottome suddenly it fell,
The water ouer it a monstrous height:
But lo dame Fame the thing abroade doth tell,
How he because he would not win by sleight,
But by meere value, had his target drown'd,
Where it should neuer afterward be found.

74

Yet many (that had heard the strange report)
Of those that dwelled thence, some faire, some nire,
To seeke the target thither did resort,
And to haue found it out had great desire,
But it was cast away in such a tort,
As none vnto their purpose did aspire,
For why the maid that onely did behold it,
And knew which well it was, yet neuer told it.

75

But when the knights came to themselues againe,
And were awake, and one the other saw,
That late were vanquishd with so little paine,
As if to him they had bene men of straw,
They wondred much what troubled had their braine,
And all of them did thence themselues withdraw,
And all that day they argue and deuise.
How that same light should dazle so their eyes.

76

This while came notice of the wofull fall
Of *Pinnabell*, whom *Bradamant* had killed,
With which they greatly were displeased all,
Not knowing why or who his blood had spilled;
His wife and sire that heard what was befall,
His sonne, her spouse, the place with outcries filled,
And curst and chafed with too late repentance,
That none on *Pinnabell* had giu'n attendance.

77

Now when the damsell iustly had him slaine,
And tane away his horse, sometime her owne,
She would haue turnd the way she came againe,
But that the same was vnto her vknowne;
To purpose small, she trauels with great paine,
To seeke it out, as after shall be showne:
For here to stay is my determination,
And pawle a litle for my recreation.

Ouid.
Atque iterum
pasto pascunt
ante cibo.

In

In the person of Bradamant, that was so readily inclined to the ayd of a young man, though then unknowne to her, we may note, how to a noble disposition, a little perswasion sufficeth, to moue them to the succour of such as are distressed. In Pinabello and his wife, that thought to reuenge the scorne they receiued, with doing the like scorne to others, we may see, how base and dunghill dispositions follow not any course of value or true reputation, but onely to wreake their malice on some bodie, not caring whom: as they are wont to tell of Will Sommer (though otherwise a harmelesse foole) that would euermore if one had angered him, strike him that was next him. Lastly in Bradamant that met Pinabell by hap, riding on the same horse that he had stolen from her long before (what time he left her for dead) and thereby now discovered him, and killed him, we may note a most notable example of diuine iustice, in the like cases, as many times it falleth out, and in this Poet you shall find many of them: as Polynessos death in the fift booke; Martanos punishment in the eighteenth booke, Marganorres execution in the seuen and thirtieth booke: all which examples (whether true or fained) haue this chiefe scope and end, to make men know that there is a diuine power, that will iudge and punish the actions of men, be they neuer so secure or so secret; and onely the cleare conscience it is that assureth a man of his estate, both in this world and in the world to come: and he that feareth not that diuine power, it is vnpossible that he can liue free of most wicked acts. That wise and honorable counsellor Sir Walter Mildmay, as in all other things he shewed himselfe an vncorrupt man to his end, so his writings and sayings were euer spiced with this reuerent feare of God: for *ex abundantia cordis os loquitur*: and among other of his (worth the noting) of which he himselfe gaue me a little volume when I was a boy of Eaton colledge (the which since his death haue bene published in print) but one speciall verse he had to that effect in Latin, and was by me put into English at the request of that honorable Gentleman his sonne in law, Master William Fitzwilliams.

Vltio peccatum sequitur, delinquere noli,
Nam scelus admissum poena seuera premit:
Quod si forte Deus, patiendo differat iram,
Sera licet veniat, certa venire solet.
Flie sinne, for sharpe reuenge doth follow sinne,
And wicked deeds, do wrathfull doomes procure:
If God stay long ear he to strike b-ginne,
Though long he stay, at last he striketh sure.

A worthie saying of a most worthie man, and thus much for the morall.

Hipermestra was daughter to Egittus, this Egittus had fiftie daughters, who caused them all to be married to Da-naos fifty sonnes; and being commanded by their tyrannous father, killed them all in one night, only Hipermestra refused to obey so filthie a commandement, and saued her husband, whose name was Linus.

Astolfo that with helpe of his booke dissolues the enchanted pallace, and with his horne draue away those that assauled him and put him in great danger, signifieth allegorically (as I haue in part touched before) how wisdom with the helpe of eloquence, discovereth the craftiest, and tameth the wildest. Furder in that Rogero casteth away the enchanted shield, and refuseth the vse thereof, the Allegorie thereof signifieth, that though a man for necessitie sake, sometimes be driuen to take some helpes of no verie honorable sort, and sometimes to relieue himselfe with policies scarce commendable, yet one should when that vrgent necessitie is past, hurle such conceipt from him where it may neuer be found again, as Rogero flang his shield into that well, and so fame shall blow abroad our noble mind in so doing, as it did Rogeros for refusing an ayd of such force.

The end of the Annotations vpon xxij. booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Astolfo on the Griffith horse doth mount:
To Zerbin Pinnabellos death is laid;
Orlando saueth him: fierce Rodomont
Frontyno takes from Bradamantes maid:
The Paladyn and Mandricard confront;
They part by chance, and each from other straid:
Orlando falls starke mad, with sorrow taken,
To heare his mistres hath him quite forsaken.*



¹ Et eu'rie one do all the
good they can,
For seldom cometh harme
of doing well,
Though iust reward it wā-
teth now and than,
Yet shame, and euill death
it doth expell,
But he that mischieueth a-
nother man,

Doth seldom carrie it to heau'n or hell:
Men say it, and we see it come to passe,
Good turns in sand, shrewd turns are writ in brasse.

*Sentence.
The Latine pro-
uerbe is,
Scribit in mar-
more lesus.*

*Sentence.
Looke in the mo-
ral of the former
booke, where this
paine is touched
more largely.*

Sentence.

² Seeld mountaines meet, but men may often meet,
(The Prouerbe saith) and who so sets a trap,
May catch himselfe, as here you plainly se e't
In him, that thought this dame in woes to wrap,
But hurts himselfe; a punishment most meet;
God still defending her from all mishap:
God her preferu'd, and will all those preferue;
As shunne all vice, and him sincerely serue.

³ It little did auaille to Pinnabell,
To be amid his kinsfolke and his frends;
And neare the castle, where his fire did dwell,
Where eu'rie one, him honours and attends,
Loe here the end of him doth plainly tell,
How wicked liues haue often wretched ends:
But to proceed, I said when he was slaine,
The noble damsell sought her way againe.

Sentence.

⁴ Which when she saw she could by no meanes know,
But more and more vncertainly did roue;

And sees the sunne was now declining low;
She meanes that night to rest her in the groue:
And sleepe sometime, or else sometime (I trow)
To looke on Mars, on Saturne, or on Ioue,
But chiefly, whether she awakes or sleepest;
Rogeros image in her heart she keepes.

*Meaning the
Planets.*

⁵ Oft times she fretting to her selfe would say,
Loe; hate with me farre more preuailed hath,
Then loue could do, that now haue lost my way,
And left my comfort to auenge my wrath;
Nor had my wit so much forecast or stay,
To take some marke of my foretrodden path:
I did (quoth she) as fooles are wont to do,
Take one shrewd turne to do another two.

Sentence.

⁶ These words and many like to these she spake,
To passe the rest of that her restless night,
Till starres gan vanish and the dawning brake,
And all the Easter parts were full of light,
Then at aduenture she her way doth take,
Not knowing yet if it were wrong or right;
And hauing traueled in that way some miles,
By hap *Astolfo* came that way the whiles.

Astolfo.

⁷ He rides the winged horse, but in his hand,
He leades the famous Rabican behinde;
And eu'n as then, in great doubt he did stand,
Where to bestow a beast of so good kind:
She knowing him, went to him out of hand,
With words, with shewes, and with embracements
And ioyd to find this kinsman of her owne, (kind,
And vnto him her selfe she maketh knowne.

8

Asolfo much reioyft at this their meeting,
Then one the other askt of their well fare,
And after their long talke, and friendly greeting,
In which each shewd of other louing care:
Sith I (quoth he) intend hence to be fleeting,
To see what fights in forren countries are,
This horse of me, I shall request you take,
Till I returne, and keepe him for my sake.

*Argalus in-
chaunted speare
called Lance-
d'oro golde-
launce.*

Also he said, this corslet and this speare,
With you I leaue till I returne againe,
(This speare the sonne of *Galafron* did beare,
Whom as you heard before *Ferraw* had slaine,)
With head whereof, if any touched were,
Straight wayes to fall to ground they must be faine,
All these he left behind to make him light,
Before that he begins to take his flight.

10

*He returnes to
Asolfo the 3. q.
booke about the
88 staffe.
Samle.*

Thus leaue once tane, away the Duke doth sore,
First low, and after still more hye and hye,
Till at the length she could him see no mores
So doth the Pylot first, with watchfull eye,
Guide out his vessell softlie by the shore,
While he doth thinke the rocks and shallowes nye:
But after when he dreads no more such doubts,
He sayles apace, and claps on all his clouts.

11

Now when the Duke was from the damsell gone,
What she might do she mused in her minde,
And carefully she meditates thereon:
How she may take the iourney first assignd,
And not neglect her kinsmans charge; anon
A wandring peasant twas her hap to finde,
To him she doth betake the horses spare,
Though of the wayes they both vnskilfull are.

*One horse of A-
solfos, the other
her owne that
she tooke from
Pinabell.*

12

Her meaning was to go to *Vallumbrose*,
As first her loue and she concluded had,
Whom there to finde she certaine doth suppose;
Whom there to find, she would haue bene full glad,
But loe a quite contrarie course she goes,
And sees a sight that made her then full sad,
Her fathers house *Montalbanie* she spide,
In which as then her mother did abide.

13

If she shall forward go, approaching nire,
She shalbe stayed there, she stands in doubt,
If she stand still, or backward do retire,
She feares to meet acquaintance there about;
If she be staid, she feels such burning fire,
Of longing loue as cannot be put out:
She chaunst amid these thoughts, and many other,
To meet *Alardo* there her younger brother.

14

This meeting in her minde bred much vexation,
When as she found her brother her had spide,
And made her alter her determination,
Which that she might from him the better hide,
She vsd some common words of salutation,
And to *Montalban* with him she doth ride,
Where as her mother, full of care and feare,
Had wisht, and wayted for her comming there.

15

But all those kind embracings and those kisses,
She had of parent, kinsmen kinde, and friends,
She deems of little vallue to those blisses,
That she had lost, and thought them small amends:
But sith to meet *Rogero* now she misses,
To send a messenger she now intends,
Some such to whom she may commit the charge,
To tell her mind vnto her loue at large.

16

And if neede were to pray him in her name,
As he had promist her, to be baptised,
And to excu'e, that thither she not came,
As they together had before deuised:
Besides his horse *Frontino*, by the same,
She sent a horse of goodnes not despised,
No horse in France or Spaine esteemed more,
Bayardo sole except, and *Brigliadore*.

17

Rogero (if you call it well to minde)
What time the Griffith horse he first did take,
That soard away as swift as western winde,
And forst him quickly Europe to forsake,
That gallant beast *Frontino* left behind,
Whom *Bradament* then, for his masters sake,
Tooke home, and with much care and costly feeding
Made him by this time, faire and fat exceeding.

*In the fourth
booke.*

18

And straight her mayds and women seruants all,
That skilfull were to sew, to weaue, and knit,
She doth to worke in hast together call,
And she her selfe among them all doth sit,
To worke a net, of art and cost not small,
For his caparison to make it fit:
When this was done, and finisht, straight way after,
She calls her nurse *Callitrifeas* daughter.

19

This mayd knew best her minde of all the rest,
And oft had heard her praising to the skyes,
Rogeros comly shape, and valiant brest,
His sugred speech, sweet face, and lou'ly eyes;
This mayd with secrets all shee trusted best,
On this mayds secrecie, she much relyes;
Hyppalca named was this trustie mayd,
Her then she cald, and thus to her she said.

20

Hyppalca mine, you know of all my crew,
Of women seruants, I esteeme you most,
As one that hath bene secrete, wise, and trew,
(A praise of which we women feld can boast)
My meaning is to make a choise of you,
To haue you to *Rogero* ride in post;
And vnto him mine absence to excuse,
And shew, that I could neither will nor chuse.

21

Your selfe (quoth she) may ride a litle nagge,
And in your hand lead by *Frontino* spare,
And if perhap some foole wilbe so bragge,
As that to take the horse from you he dare,
To make him that he shall no farther wagge,
But tell who owes the horse, and do not care:
She thought *Rogero* was of so great fame,
That eu'rie one would quake to heare his name.

Thus

22

Thus when *Hypalca* was instructed well,
Of all that to her arrant did belong,
And that no more remaind behind to tell,
She tooke her horse, and there she stayd not long,
In ten miles space (so luckie it befell)
None offer made to do her any wrong,
No traueiler, no knight, nor peasant staid her,
Nor once with word or deed so much as frayd her.

23

About the time the Sunne to South did mount,
She met (poore soule) a knight, vnto her cost,
That Turke most terrible cald *Rodomont*,
That followd armd on foote, a page in post;
Who when he saw an horse of such account,
He God blasphemd and all the heau'nly host,
That such a gallant seruiceable beast,
In some mans hand, he had not found at least.

24

He had before profest by solemne vow,
When wanting horse, he traueled on his feet,
That were't fro knight, or knaue that driues a plow,
To take perforce the next horse he should meet:
Yet though he likt the horse, to take this now,
And rob a mayd thereof, he thought vnmeet,
He sees her leade a horse, and he doth lacke,
And oft he wisht his master on his backe.

25

I would he were (quoth she) he soone would make,
You change your mind, and glad to get you hence,
And you should find how much you do mistake,
Your strength and force to offer him offence.
And who (quoth he) is this, of whom you craue?
Rogero she replies: forsooth, and sence
So great a champion is the horses owner,
I may (said he) then take him with mine honor.

26

To take his horse (quoth he) I now intend,
For of a horse you see I stand in need:
And if I find it true as you pretend,
That he so stout a champion is in deed,
I *Rodomont* this action will defend,
Now on my present iourney I proceed,
And where I go my vertues shine so bright,
He soone may find me if he list to fight.

27

This said, with cruell threats, and part with force,
He gat his will, full fore against her will,
And straight he mounteth vp vpon that horse,
She cursing followd him, and banning still,
But of those curses he doth little force;
Then winners boast, when leasers speake their fill,
Best pleasd was he, when as she wisht him worst,
As still the foxefares best when he is curst.

28

But what she saith he little doth regard,
Suppose she curst, or prayd, or rayld, or cride,
He seekes out *Doralice* and *Mandricard*,
And had the little dwarfe to be his guide,
No little hast he maketh thitherward:
But here a while mine author steps aside,
And to that place of purpose makes digression,
Where *Pinabell* was shriu'n without confession.

29

The noble Dame no sooner left the place,
Where late this caitiue by her hand was slaine,
But *Zerbino* there arriu'd in litle space,
With old *Gabrina*, who perceiuing plaine,
One murderd, straight he followed the trace,
(Lest murder vnreuedged should remaine)
He minds if fortune be so much his furerer:
To be reuenged sharply on the murderer.

*Zerbino,
Gabrina.*

30

Gabrina to the quarrie straight approcheth,
Looke all about, searching the corse and prying,
(As one that still on eu'rie gaine enerocheth)
To win both by the liuing and the dying,
In purses and in pokets all she pocheth,
Of him that murderd on the ground was lying,
As hauing this, conioynd to other euills,
In couetile to passe the verie deuills.

*Quarrie is a
word properly
signifying the
foule: thus she
halke hath killd,
and sometime by
metaphor is used
for a dead bodie.*

31

She would haue had his cote and armor faine,
Saue that she knew not how them to haue hidden,
But from great part of that desired gaine,
By want of leysure she was then forbidden;
Howbeit she did conuay away his chaine,
And er *Zerbino* backe againe was ridden,
She put it safely where it was not scene,
Her vpper gowne and peti cote betweene.

32

And sore it grieved her to leaue the rest,
But now *Zerbino* was returned backe,
And for the time drew nigh of taking rest,
And night came now to spred his mantell blacke,
To seeke some lodging out they thought it best,
Of which, in that wild countrie was great lacke,
They leaue the valley, and they came that night,
Vnto a castell *Altarina* hight.

*Altarina was
Anselmus house
father: o Pinabell.*

33

They thither went, and long they had not stayd,
But in came people with great exclamation,
With wofull news, that many hearts dismayd,
And filld their mouths and eyes with lamentation,
How *Pinabell* was murderd and betrayd,
And lost his life, & worldly habitation. (torches
And straight they brought the corle with light of
And led the same through all the courts & porches.

34

Great were the plaints, the sorow and the grieve,
By kindred made, by tenants and his frends;
But by his father, old *Anselmus* chiefe,
Who, though reuenge be but a small amends,
And his sonnes life was now past all reliefe,
By search to find the murderer he intends.
Zerbino hereof makes himselfe a stranger,
As well to shunne suspition as danger.

35

Now when the funerals in stately sort,
Ordained were with pompe and superstition
To which great store of people did resort,
And all that would, had franke and free permission,
Straight with oyes, a crier doth report,
Thereto assigned by that Earles commission,
That who so could the murderer bewray,
Should haue a thousand duckats for his pay.

Q

*Sentence.
Sentence.*

*He comes to Ro-
domont 24. book.
78. page.*

36

This newes from mouth to mouth, from eare to eare,
(As newes are wont to do) did flie so fast,
That old *Gabrina*, being present there,
Among the rest, heard of it at the last:
Who either for the hatred she did beare,
To good *Zerbino*, for some matters past,
Or else for gaine of that so great reward,
Straight to destroy *Zerbino* she prepard.

37

And that she might more surely him entrap,
With th' Earle himselfe to speake she doth request,
And probably, she tels how this mishap,
Was by *Zerbino* wrought his new come guest:
And straight she puld the chaine out of her lap,
Which sole might serue to verifie the rest:
That aged fire, that all the tale beleued,
Was fore inrag'd herewith, not onely grieved.

38

And lifting vp his hands vnto the skies,
With age now feeble, feeble now with woe,
With fainting voice he spake, and watrie eies,
(My sonne) thou shalt not vnreuenged go:
And while in bed secure *Zerbino* lyes,
Not thinking he had bene betrayed so,
With armed men his lodging was beset,
He naked tane, as is a byrd in net.

39

With as great crueltie as could be showne,
His princely armes were piniond fast behind him,
And to a dungeon deepe he straight was throwne,
And that vile place, to bide in was assignd him,
Vntill the sentence of his death were knowne:
In fine *Anselmus* (so did passion blind him)
(Her likely tale, his wrath so rashly leading)
Condemned him, and neuer heard him pleading.

40

Thus was this worthy Prince without all cause,
Condemnd to die (such is the wo full being,
Where hefts of lawlesse lords, must stand for laws,
Though from all lawes and reason disagreeing)
Now neare and neare his execution drawes,
And gazing people, greedie still of seeing,
In clusters march and follow all confused,
On horse, on foot, as at such time is vsed.

41

But loe how God that euer doth defend,
Those innocents that put in him their trust,
A helpe vnlooked for did thither send,
And freed him from this doome of death vniust:
Orlando did eu'n then the hill ascend,
Orlando is the man that saue him must,
And at that time there did with him remaine,
The daughter of *Galego*, king of Spaine.

42

This was that *Isabell*, whom he of late,
Recouerd from the outlawes in the caue;
And hauing brought her out of that ill state,
Yet still he promist care of her to haue,
And whatsoeuer danger or debate,
To him befell, yet her he still did saue:
Orlando all that great assemblie saw,
That did the knight to execution draw.

43

He thither went and askt of him the cause,
Why he was drawne vnto a death so cruell,
Forsooth (*Zerbino* said) against all lawes,
I am condemn'd if you the matter knew well,
Anselmus rage, that will admit no pause,
Vnto this flame, doth kindle all the fewell:
Beleeuing falsely that I slue his sonne,
Whereas by me (God knowes) it was not done.

44

Thus *Zerbino* said, and said it in such sort,
As made *Orlando* vow him to releue,
For verie apt he was, each ill report,
Of any of *Maganza* to beleue:
Each house still thought to cut the the other short,
Each house still sought the other how to greeue:
Each house long time, had tane a pride and pleasure,
To worke the tother danger and displeasure.

45

Vnloose the knight ye caitiues (straight he cride),
Else looke for death to be your due reward:
What man is this (quoth one) that gapes so wide?
And speakes so foolishly without regard?
Were he of Steele, of strength and temper tride,
And we of straw, his sute might hap be hard.
This said, he taketh vp a mighty launce,
And runnes against the *Palladine* of Fraunce.

46

Orlando ran at him with couched speare,
And though his armour were both good and sure,
As namely that *Zerbino* erst did weare,
Yet was the stroke too grieuous to endure,
For though the beauer did it stiffly beare,
Yet did the blow a greater hurt procure:
For on the cheeke, it gaue him such a checke,
That though it pierced not, it brake his necke.

47

Nor at that course did all his furie cease,
Six other of that speare the force then felt,
Then with his sword among the thickest prease,
Such store of thrusts, and deadly blowes he delt,
That many in the place did straight decease;
And eu'n as snow against the Sunne doth melt,
So melted they and fainted in his sight,
That in an houre he put them all to flight.

48

When they were fled, he set *Zerbino* free,
Who would haue kist the ground whereon he trod,
And done him reuerence humbly on his knee,
But that the Earle such courtisie him forbod:
But yet he thankd him in the high'st degree,
As one he honourd most, excepting God:
Then did he put his armor on againe,
Which late was worne by him that there was slaine.

49

Now while *Zerbino* there a little staid,
Preparing with *Orlando* to go hence,
Behold faire *Isabell*, that princely maid,
That all the while had staid a little thence,
And sees no farther cause to be affraid,
Came neare, & brought great ioy and great offence
By diuers passions bred of one desire,
Some cold as ice, and some as hot as fire.

For

50
For where before *Zerbino* thought her drownd,
Now certaine he reioyced very much,
To see her in his presence safe and sound,
And that her misadventure was not such:
But weying in whose hand he had her found,
A iealous feare forthwith his heart doth tuch,
And inwardly a greater anguish bred,
Then late it had, to heare that she was ded.

51
To see her in the hands of such a knight,
It greatly did him anger and displease,
From whom to offer, her to take by might,
It were no honestie nor haply ease,
But for *Orlandos* sake he ought of right,
All passions, both of loue and wrath appease;
To whom in thankfulness it were but meete,
To lay his hands vnder *Orlandos* feete.

52
Wherefore he makes no words, but on he goth
In silent sort, till comming to a well
To drinke they lighted, being thirstie both,
And each his drought with water doth expell,
But when the damsell saw and knew for troth,
That was *Zerbino* whom she lou'd so well,
(For when to drinke his beuer he vnde)
Straight she her loue had through his beuer spide.

53
With open armes she runs him to embrace,
And hangs about his necke a pleasant yoke,
And speechlesse she remaind a pretie space,
And with her cristall teares (before she spoke)
Surprisd with ioy, she all bedewd his face,
And long it was ere into speech she broke,
By which the noble Earle did plainly see,
That this could no man but *Zerbino* be.

54
Now when she had againe her vitall sprites,
And that she able was her mind to show,
First she *Orlandos* great desarts recites,
That rescude her from place of shame and wo,
Commending him aboue all other knights,
That vndefiled had preferd her so,
And prayd her deare, when she had made recitall
Of his good deeds, to make him some requitall.

55
Great thanks were giu'n, and profers great there were
Of recompence and seruice on each side,
But lo a hap that made them speech forbear,
For why an armed knight they had espide:
Twas *Mandricardo* that arriued there,
Who as you heard, these many dayes did ride
To seeke this Earle, till meeting by the way
Faile *Doralice*, a while it made him stay.

56
In the 14. booke. You heard how *Mandricard* sought out the tracke,
(Mou'd thereunto by enuie and disdain)
Of this fierce knight, appareld all in blacke,
By whom the king of *Tremysen* was slaine,
And those *Noritians* all, so put to wracke,
As few of them vnwounded did remaine,
And now he found him as it came to passe,
Yet knew he not that this *Orlando* was.

57
But marking well the signes and tokens like,
To those he heard, of such as thence were fled,
You are (quoth he) the selfe same man I seeke,
By whom so many of my friends are ded:
I haue (he said) traueled about a weeke
To find you out, and now at last am sped,
You are the man that I haue sought (I guesse)
And sure your manly looke doth shew no lesse.

58
Sir (quoth *Orlando*) though I want your name,
A noble knight you are it may be guesst,
For sure a heart so thirsting after fame,
Is seldome bred in base vnnoble brest:
But if to see me onely now you came,
I straight herein will graunt you your request:
And that you may behold me to your fill,
I will put off mine armour if you will.

59
But when you well haue viewd me all about,
If yet you haue a farther mind to trie,
Which of vs two can proue himselfe most stout,
And first in field can make the tother flie:
Attempt it when you list, and make no doubt,
But hereunto right soone agree shall I:
That (quoth the pagan) is my mind indeed,
And thus to fight together they agreed.

60
But when *Orlando* viewd the Pagan king,
And saw no pollax at his saddle bow,
No sword by side, no bow, nor dart, nor sling,
But eu'n a speare, he needs of him would know,
When that were burst, vnto what other thing
He then would trust, to giue or beare a blow:
Tush (quoth the pagan prince) you need not feare,
But I will match you onely with the speare.

61
I haue (quoth he) an oath most solemne sworne,
Since first the noble *Hectors* armes I wan,
That by my side should neuer sword be worne,
Nor other iron weapon, till I can
Get *Durindana* by *Orlando* borne,
Though how he gate it, well I cannot scan,
But since he gate it, great reports do flie,
That noble deeds of armes he doth thereby.

62
No lesse (quoth he) I faine on him would wreake
My fathers death, whom falsly he betraid,
For well I wot my fire was not so weake,
With any Christen to be ouerlaid:
At this *Orlando* could not chuse but speake,
It is a lie (quoth he) that thou hast said,
I am *Orlando*, and I will not beare it,
This sword is *Durindan*, win it and weare it.

63
And though this sword is iustly wholly mine,
Yet for this time I frankly do agree,
A while it shall be neither mine nor thine,
And if in combat you can vanquish me,
Then tak't, and thereat I shall not repine:
This said, he hangd the sword vpon a tree,
Indifferently betweene them both to stand,
Vntill the strife by combat might be scand.

Qij

64

Now one at th'other ran with couched speare,
And on the head-peece each the other strake,
The staues in sundry peeces rend and teare,
But by the blowes the men small hurt do take:
And now the trunchens onely left them were,
And at foure blowes the trunchens likewise brake,
Thus when they saw all other weapons mist,
At last they were inforst to fight with fist.

65

6 mile.

So haue I scene two clownes fall at debate,
About some watercourse or marke of land,
And either clap the tother on the pate,
With crabtree staffe, or with as crabbed hand;
Such of this conflict was the present state,
And each of them doth to his tackle stand,
And being tyr'd with giuing frutelesse stripes,
At last they flatly fell to handie gripes.

66

Antheus. Lookes
on the Historie.

The Pagan, part by sleight and part by force,
Thought to haue done as *Hercles* in time past,
To fiersce *Antheus* did, and th' Earle inforce,
To yeeld himselfe, or leaue his horse at last.
Orlando that could surely fit his horse,
With all his strength belrides the saddle fast,
Yet did the Pagan heaue him with such strength,
That all his gyrfes broken were at length.

67

Downe came the Earle, yet kept his saddle still,
Nor what had happend was he well aware,
But as he fell, intending by his will,
Vnto the Pagan king to worke some care,
He meant (but his attempt succeeded ill)
To ouerthrow the horse the Pagan bare,
But missing hold, the horse vnhurt remaines,
Yet off he puld his headstall and his raines.

68

The horse that had at libertie his head,
Runs ouer ditch and valley, hedge and wood,
As partly feare, and partly courage led,
For nothing was that his mad course withstood:
But *Mandricard* still beates him on his head,
And eu'n as if he speech had vnderstood,
He threatens him (except he stay) to beate him,
And with faire speech somtime he doth intreat him.

69

But all was one, three mile outright he rode,
Ere he could make the harebraine horse to stay,
Or cause him once to make a small abode,
But more and more he gallops still away:
At last with hast the horse and eke the lode
Fell downe into a ditch, and there they lay,
Both horse and man all foyld and rayd with durt,
Yet neither horse nor man had any hurt.

70

This while Dame *Doralice* that saw her guide
Thus post away against his will amaine,
She thought it were not safe behind to bide,
And therefore followd him though with great paine,
And seeing that he could no farther ride,
Because his wilfull horse did want a raine,
She prayes him take her horses raine and bit,
For mine (quoth she) will go though wanting it.

71

Much did the Pagan praise her gentle offer,
Yet did refuse it as a part too base,
To let her want and take her bridle of her,
He thought it were to him a great disgrace.
But lo good chance a better meane did profer,
Gabrina came vnwares vnto the place,
She that betraid of late the Scottish Prince,
And heard (of like) of his deliuery since.

72

And therefore fearing punishment and blame,
And clogd with guiltie conscience, fled the light,
Vntill by hap vnwares she thither came,
And on this couple fortun'd to light:
They could not chuse but make great sport & game,
To see so strange and vnagreeing sight,
As such a witherd old ilfauord hag,
To ride in purple on an ambling nag.

Quimall
oderum lacumSimia in purp
ra, the old pr
uerbe.

73

He that of right or wrong did little passe,
Meanes with her store his lacke there to supply,
Nor once demaunded who or what she was,
But takes away her bridle by and by:
She skreecheth out, and weepes, and cries alas,
Eu'n ready fearing hurt, vn timer to die:
Hereafter I shall tell you what became on her,
Now for a farewell I do wish a shame on her.

He comes in G
brina, 24. Junij
31. Iulij.

74

This while *Orlando* had his girfes mended,
And new provided what before did lacke,
And mounting on his horse, a while attended
To see if to the Pagan would come backe;
But seeing that he came not, he intended
To follow him, and find him by the tracke:
But first (as one that well good manners knew)
He bad *Zerbino* and his spouse adew.

75

Faine would *Zerbino* with this Earle haue gone,
And take such part of eu'ry hap as he,
But that the noble Earle hereof would none,
And said there could not more dishonor be,
Then for a knight to thun to fight alone;
Wherefore he would not thereunto agree:
Thus *Zerbin* loth doth from this Earle depart,
Poore *Isbell* shedding teares for tender hart.

76

But ere they went, this Earle *Zerbino* praid,
If first he hapt on *Mandricard* to light,
To tell him how long time for him he staid,
And meant to seeke him out againe to fight,
Now that his coming was so long delaid,
He meant to Paris ward to go that night,
To *Charls* his camp, where if he wold enquire of him
At any time he should be sure to heare of him.

77

Thus much he praid, and thence away he went,
To seeke out *Mandricard*, but found him not,
And (for the day now more then halfe was spent,
The Sunne and season waxing somewhat hot)
A shadie groue he found, and there he ment
To take some ease, but found small ease God wot:
He thinks his thirst and heate a while to swage,
But found that let him in worfe heate and rage.

For

78

For looking all about the groue, behold
In sundry places faire ingrau'n he sees,
Her name whose loue he more esteemes then gold;
By her owne hand in barks of diuers trees,
This was the place wherein before I told,
Medoro vld to pay his surgeons fees,
Where she, to boist of that that was her shame,
Vld oft to write hers and *Medoros* name.

79

And then with true loue knots and pretie poses,
(To shew how she to him by loue was knit)
Her inward thoughts by outward words discloses,
In her much loue to shew her little wit.
Orlando knew the hand, and yet supposes
It was not she that had such posies writ;
And to beguile himselfe, tush, tush (quoth he)
There may be more *Angelicas* then she.

80

Yea, but I know too well that pretie hand,
Oft hath she sent me letters of her writing:
Then he bethinks how she might vnderstand
His name and loue by that same new inditing,
And how it might be done long time he scand,
With this fond thought so fondly him delighting.
Thus with small hope, much feare, all malcontent,
In these and such conceits the time he spent.

81

And ay the more he seekes out of his thought
To driue this fancie, still it doth increate,
Eu'n as a bird that is with birdlime caught,
Doth beate her wings, and striues, and doth not cease
Vntill she hath her selfe all ouerwrought,
And quite intangled in the slimie greafe:
Thus on went he, till him the way did bring
Vnto a shadie caue and pleasant spring.

82

This was a place, wherein about the rest,
This louing paire, leauing their homely host,
Spent time in sports that may not be exprest,
Here in the parching heate they tarrid most,
And here *Medore* (that thought himselfe most blest)
Wrote certaine verses as in way of boist:
Which in his language doubtlesse sounded prittie,
And thus I turne them to an English dittie.

83

Ye pleasant plants, greene herbs, and waters faire,
And caue with smell, and gratefull shadow mixt,
Where sweet *Angelica*, daughter and heire
Of *Gafronne*, on whom in vaine were fixt
Full many hearts, with me did oft repaire
Alone, and naked lay mine armes betwixt;
I poore *Medore*, can yeeld but praise and thanks,
For these great pleasures found amid your banks.

84

And pray each Lord whom *Cupid* holds in pray,
Each knight, each dame, and eu'ry one beside,
Or gentle or meane fort that passe this way,
As fancie or his fortune shall him guide,
That to the plants, herbs, spring, and caue he say,
Long may the Sun and Moon maintaine your pride,
And y faire crew of Nymphs make such purueyance,
As hither come no heards to your annoyance.

85

It written was there in th' Arabian toong,
Which toong *Orlando* perfect vnderstood,
As hauing learnt it when he was but yoong,
And oft the skill thereof had done him good,
But at this time it him so deeply stoong,
It had bin well that he it neuer coud,
And yet we see, to know men still are glad,
And yet we see much knowledge makes men mad.

Sentence.

86

Twise, thrise, yea fise times he doth reade the rime,
And though he saw and knew the meaning plaine,
Yet, that his loue was guiltie of such crime,
He will not let it sinke into his braine,
Oft he peruled it, and eu'ry time
It doth increafe his sharp tormenting paine,
And ay the more he on the matter mused,
The more his wits and senses were confused.

87

Eu'n then was he of wit welnigh bestraught,
So quite he was giu'n ouer vnto grieffe,
(And sure if we belecue as proote hath taught,
This torture is of all the rest the chiefe)
His sprite was dead, his courage quaild with thought,
He doth despaire and looke for no reliefe;
And sorrow did his senses so surprise,
That words his toong, and teares forsooke his eyes.

Sentence.

88

The raging pang remained still within,
That would haue burst out all at once too fast:
Eu'n so we see the water tarry in
A bottle little mouthd, and big in wast,
That though you topsie turvy turne the brim,
The liquor bides behind with too much hast,
And with the striuing oft is in such taking,
As scant a man can get it out with shaking.

Simile.

89

At last he comes vnto himselfe anew,
And in his mind another way doth frame,
That that which there was written was not trew,
But writ of spite his Ladie to defame,
Or to that end, that he the same might vew,
And so his heart with ieaiousie inflame:
Well be't who list (quoth he) I see this clearly,
He hath her hand resembled passing nearly.

90

With this small hope, with this poore little sparke,
He doth some deale reuiue his troubled sprite,
And for it was now late, and waxed darke,
He seekes some place where he may lie that night,
At last he heares a noise of dogs that barke,
He smells some smoke, and sees some candle light,
He takes his Inne, with will to sleepe, not eate,
As fild with grieffe, and with none other meate.

Virgil hath the
like. But this is
described with
more particulars
Et iam summa
procul villarum
culmina fumant.

91

But lo his hap was at that house to host,
Where faire *Angelica* had layne before,
And where her name on eu'ry doore and post,
With true loue knots was ioyned to *Medore*,
That knot his name whom he detested most,
Was in his eye and thought still euermore:
He dares not aske, nor once the matter tuch,
For knowing more of that he knowes too much.

Q iij

of the wife of
writing in trees,
good Poets
have testified.
Propertius, Pos
with testifies, si
mes habet arbor
mores.
Pagan & Arca-
do Pinn amata
Deo.
Quid in the Epi-
de of Eron.
Iaci's seruans à
in mea nomina
figi.

Simile.

*Take of this in
the Allusion.*

92
But vaine it was himselfe so to beguile,
For why his host vnasked by and by,
That saw his guest sit there so sad the while,
And thinks to put him from his dumps thereby,
Beginneth plaine without all fraud or guile,
Without concealing truth or adding lie,
To tell that tale to him without regard,
Which diuers had before with pleasure heard.

93
As thus, how at *Angelicas* request
He holpe vnto his house to bring *Medore*,
Who then was sorely wounded in his brest,
And she with surgery did heale his sore:
But while with her owne hands the wound she drest,
Blind *Cupid* wounded her as much or more,
That when her skill and herbs had cur'd her patient,
Her curelesse wound in loue made her vnpatient.

94
So that, admit she were the greatest Queene
Of fame, and liuing in those Easter parts,
Yet so with fancie she was ouerseene,
To marry with a page of meane defarts;
Thus loue (quoth he) will haue his godhead seene,
In famous Queens, and highest Princes harts:
This said (to end the tale) he shewd the iewel
That she had giu'n him, which *Orlando* knew well.

Sentence.

*A phrase of
speech used in
the Latin:
Injucere securum.*

95
This tale, and chiefly this same last conclusion,
Was eu'n a hatchet to cut of all hope,
When loue had after many a vaine collusion,
Now for his farewell lent him such a rope
To hang himselfe, and drowne him in confusion,
Yet faine he would denie his sorrow scopè,
And though a while to shew it he forbears,
It breaketh out at last in sighs and teares.

96
And as it were inforst he giues the raine
To raging griefe, vpon his bed alone,
His eyes do shed a very shovre of raine,
With many a scalding sigh and bitter grone,
He slept as much as if he had then laine
Vpon a bed of thornes, and stuff with stone.
And as he lay thereon and could not rest him,
The bed it selfe gaue matter to molest him.

97
Ah wretch I am (thus to himselfe he sed)
Shall I once hope to take repose and rest me
In that same house? yea eu'n in that same bed
Where my vngratefull loue so leudly drest me?
Nay, let me first an hundred times be ded,
First wolues deuoure, and vultures shall digest me.
Straight vp he starts, and on he puts his clothes,
And leaues the house, so much the bed he lothes.

*Vulture is that
bird that we call
Rauens: but there
are diuers kinds
of them.*

98
He leaues his host, nor once doth take his leaue,
He far'd so ill, he bids them not farewell,
He leaues the towne, his seruants he doth leaue,
He rides, but where he rides he cannot tell.
And when alone himselfe he doth perceaue
To weepe and waile, nay eu'n to howle and yell,
He doth not cease to giue his griefe a vent,
That inwardly so sore did him torment.

99

The day the night to him were both alecke,
Abroade vpon the cold bare earth he lies,
No sleepe, no food he takes, nor none would seeke,
All sustenance he to himselfe denies.
Thus he began, and ended halfe the weeke,
And he himselfe doth maruell, whence his eyes
Are fed so long with such a spring of water,
And to himselfe thus reasons on the matter.

100

No, no, these be no teares that now I shed,
These be no teares, nor can teares run so rise,
But fire of frenzie drawth vp to my head,
My vitall humor that should keepe my life;
This streame will neuer cease till I be dead,
Then welcome death, and end my fatall strife:
No comfort in this life my wo can minish,
But thou who canst both life and sorrow finish.

101

These are not sighs, for sighs some respite haue,
My gripes, my pangs, no respite do permit,
The blindfold boy made me a seeing slaue,
When from her eyes my heart he first did hit.
Now all inflam'd, I burne, I rage and raue,
And in the midst of flame consume no whit:
Loue sitting in my heart a master crewell,
Blowes with his wings, feeds with his will the fewell.

102

I am not I, the man that earst I was,
Orlando, he is buried and dead,
His most vngratefull loue (ah foolish lasse)
Hath kild *Orlando*, and cut off his head:
I am his ghost, that vp and downe must passe,
In this tormenting hell for euer led,
To be a fearfull sample and a iust,
To all such fooles as put in loue their trust.

103

Thus wandring still in wayes that haue no way,
He hapt againe to light vpon the caue,
Where (in remembrance of their pleasant play)
Medoro did that epigram ingraue.
To see the stones againe, his woes display,
And her ill name, and his ill hap depraue,
Did on the sudden all his sence inrage,
With hate, with fury, with reuenge and rage.

104

Straightways he draweth forth his fatall blade,
And hewes the stones, to heau'n the shiuers flee,
Accursed was that fountaine, caue and shade,
The arbor and the flowres and eu'ry tree:
Orlando of all places hauocke made,
Where he those names together ioynd may see,
Yea to the spring he did perpetuall hurt,
By filling it with leaues, boughs, stones and durt.

105

And hauing done this foolish franticke feate,
He layes him downe all weary on the ground,
Distemperd in his bodie with much heate,
In mind with paines that no tongue can expound,
Three dayes he doth not sleepe, nor drinke, nor eate,
But lay with open eyes as in a sound.
The fourth with rage, and not with reason waked,
He rents his clothes, and runs about starke naked.

His

*Callimachus
hath the story
his elegy that is
gen. Quicquid
ille fuit pueri
qui puerum
rem. etc. and
per his faith, the
ego sed rem
vapulatus
mor.*

*Quid de ferendo
the death of
sta:
— Sub Iaculo
disq.
Sedes huius
modis inconspu
capilla.
Perq. non
cibis.
Rore mero, in
chorum, etc.
inimica pueri*

106

His helmet here he flings, his poulderns theare;
 He casts away his curats and his shield:
 His sword he throws away, he cares not wheare,
 He scatters all his armor in the field:
 No ragge about his bodie he dorth beare,
 As might fro cold or might from shame him shield,
 And saue he left behind this fatall blade,
 No doubt he had therewith great hauocke made.

107

But his surpassing force did so exceed,
 All common men, that neither sword nor bill,
 Nor any other weapon he did need,
 Meere strength suffild him to do what he will,

He rootes vp trees as one would root a weed:
 And eu'n as birders laying nets with skill,
 Pare slender thornes away with easie strokes,
 So he did play with ashes, elmes and okes.

108

The heardmen and the shepheards that did heare,
 The hideous noise and vnacquainted sound,
 With feare and wonder great approached neare,
 To see, and know, what was hereof the ground.
 But now I must cut off this treatise heare,
 Lest this my booke do grow beyond his bound;
 And if you take some pleasure in this text,
 I will go forward with it in the next.

Simile.

In Bradamants sorow for want of Rogero, we may note how it falleth out many times, that ouer great desire of reuenge, worketh to our selues as great displeasure, as we wished to our enemies. In Rodomont, that would not take the horse from Hippalca, till he knew that a braue chāpion was the owner thereof; we may note, that though wrong be in deed a thing reprobable, to whom soeuer it is done, yet it is far more tollerable, or at least excusable, to be done to ones equal, then to poore or inferior persons. In Zerbinos happie deliuerance, from a shameful death, by Orlandos meanes, we may obserue that which can neuer be too much obserued, namely how diuine providence neuer failes the innocent. In all the proceedings of Zerbinio and Ilabella, a patterne might be taken of gratitude, of constantnesse, and of noble and princely inclination.

Morall.

Of Hercules and Antheus, though the originall it selfe seeme but fabulous, yet thus it is written, that they two wrastring, Hercules perceiued that Antheus strength increased by falling to the ground, and therefore to take him from his force, he tooke him vp in his armes, and so held him from the ground till he had vtterly vanquished him. Plutarke in the life of Sertorius saith this Antheus was threescore cubits high.

Historic.

In Astolfo, that put off his armor, and gaue away his spare horse, and all his superfluous weapons, when he was to take the Griffith horse, and fly about the world, may be gathered a good allegoricall sence, or rather it may be called Theologicall; namely that he that will betake himselfe to so high a profession, as to teach and studie the high mysteries of Christen religion, and liue in contemplation of heavenly things, should cast away the burdenous clog of all worldly incumbrances, and to vse the phrase of our Sauour himselfe, (leauē father, wife and children) and whatsoeuer else may be a hinderance to our proceedings in that kind: but this discourse is fit for another place, and my selfe also handled it more amply in a little dialogue of mariage that I made in mine young dayes, and therefore here I will cut it off for auoiding tediousnesse. Concerning Orlandos madnesse there is a notable allegorie to be gathered thereof, of which (because I now haue taken vpon me to go thorow with the whole worke,) I will deferre to speake till I come to restoring of his wit againe: which I count more proper for this subiect.

Allegoric.

But in the manner of his falling mad, my author hath (in mine opinion) shewd himselfe his crafts master, setting it out, verie pathetically, or (to speake English) passionately. Furder there is in it a notable Peripetia, which signifies the agnition, or taking knowledge of a sudden mutation of fortune, either good or bad to a contrarie extreame: of which kind there be many examples, but specially one, to which mine author seemes to allude. Namely that of Oedipus in Sophocles; for when a messenger came to him, to tell him how by the death of Polybus he was elected king of Corinth, Oedipus refused to come thither, for feare of committing incest with his owne mother (of which the Oracle had foretold him) the messenger thinking to cleare him of that scruple; vnadvisedly told him whose sonne he was (which he knew not before) and thereby now knew certainly that, which before he mistrusted, namely that he had laine with his mother, whereupon in deed he fell starke mad, and was after recured as appeares in the storie.

Allusion.

Here end the first xxij. bookes of Ariosto.





THE ARGUMENT.

*The noble Zerbino, pardon doth afford
To Odrik and Gabrina, gracelesse payre:
A Turke with him fights, for Orlandos sword,
He dies, in armes of Isabella faire.
Fierce Rodomont with sundrie passions sturd,
Doth fight with cruell Agricanes haire,
But them in their chiefrage their mistres parted,
From whence to ayd their Prince they both departed.*

Sentence.



*Sent: Virgil
Iust of Dido.
Vr: in infelix
Dido toray, va-
gatur
Vrbe furens.
Sentence.*

Sentence.

Sentence.

¹ Ho so shall set on Cupids
snares his foote,
Must seeke to draw backe,
least it be caught,
And madnes meer, in loue
to ouershoot,
The foole hath felt, the
wife hath euer taught,
And though in all alike, it
take not root,

Yet all shall finde that loue's a thing of naught,
For sure, it is an open signe of madnes,
To haue an others pleasure breed thy sadnes.

² Now though effects proue not in all alike,
Yet all are mad in sort, all go astray,
As in a wildernes where men do seeke,
And more and more in seeking loose their way,
Wherefore let no man this my wish mislike,
In whom fond loue, shall carie long the sway,
I wish for due reward, such doting dolts,
Like wilfull prisners, store of iron bolts.

³ Some man perhap will say, what soft my frend,
You spie our faults, in your owne errors blind;
And true it is, yet speake I to this end,
To bring vs both into a better mind.
As for my selfe I hope er long to mend,
And from these hands, in time my selfe vwind:
Though it hath tane in me such root, I prooue it,
As hard tis on the sudden to remoue it.

⁴ I shewd you in the booke that went before,
By what mishap Orlando waxed mad,

And lost not onely care of vertues lore,
But reason, wit, and all the sence he had:
His armor he disperst, his cloths he tore,
The verie cloths, wherewith his corps was clad:
And though he wanderd, all vnarmd and naked,
Yet at his presence, all the countrie quaked.

⁵ The countrimen that heard the noise aloof,
Of trees, that with their fall, made no small crackes:
Came neare, and saw by plaine and open proof,
His mostrous strength, by their so monstrous wracke,
And straight they found it best for their behoof,
With all the hast they could, to get them backe,
For those he caught he did this lesson teach,
To keep a loof from out a mad mans reach.

Sentence.

⁶ Away they fled, but he pursu'd so fast,
That some he caught, and some surprisd with feare,
Stood still (as oft it happens) all agast,
Not knowing how to hide themselves nor wheare:
Some other ploughmen seeing what had past,
Thought it but litle wit to tane theare,
But clim'd (for feare) their houses and their churches
Not trusting strength, of elmes, of beech, & burches

⁷ Among the rest he takes one by his heele,
And with his head knocks out anothers braine,
Which caused both of them such paine to feele,
As till dooms day they neuer shall complaine:
Another with his fist he made to reele,
Till paine it selfe made him past sence of paine,
And when the men fled all away affeard,
Then with like rage he set vpon their heard.

R ij

8

The voice of men, the bellowings of beast,
About the countrie ray'd so great a sound,
As might haue well bene heard fūe leags at least,
And all the people straight were rayfed round;
Each man prouiding (as he could) the best,
And for the present time might then be found,
With bows, with bills, with staues, & pikes, & prongs
To be reueug'd, on these outragious wrongs.

Simile.

Looke how the waues are driu'n by westerne blast,
And one and one, do rise still more and more,
Vntill their force so great be at the last,
They sprinkle all the banks, and beat the shore,
So now these countrie folke came in so fast,
By two, and three, a dozen and a score:
Till at the last they grew so great a number,
Their verie multitude themselues did cumber.

10

But when they saw their force could do no good,
And that his skin so strange protection had,
That though they smot thereon they drew no blood
They thought, y they might worfe be thought then
To fight with one that all them so withstood, (mad,
Wherefore they parted home dismaid and sad.
The madman went vnto the nearest village,
Although he cared not for spoile or pillage.

11

And finding no man there, nor small nor great,
For all were fled away from thence for aw;
As famine forst him, he sought out some meat,
And were it fine or course, the first he saw,
In greedie sort he doth deuoure and eat,
Not caring if it rosted were or raw,
And when thus homely he had tane repast,
About the countrie bedlemlike he past.

12

He scares both man and beast without regard,
He takes swift goates and fallow Deare in chase,
Sometimes a Lion fierce, a bore, a pard,
He kils by strength and swiftnes of his pase.
At last he came where as a knight did guard,
The passage of a bridge, and by the place,
Had built a towre of no small worke and charge,
As shalbe shoud hereafter more at large.

He returneth to
Orlando in the
29 booke the 41.
staffe.

13

Now must I tell what hap Zerbino had,
Who with faire Isabell together rode,
A long that place where this good Earle fell mad.
But by the way, these two made some abode,
Where they beheld two men in armor clad,
That driue a horse that bare a wofull lode,
A knight a prisoner to Zerbino knowne,
That had bene once a seruant of his owne.

14

Oderik taken pri
soner & brought
to Zerbino.

This prisoner Oderik of Biskie hight,
In whom the Prince had put so great a trust,
He made chiefe choise of him, as of a knight,
That of his promise would be firme and iust.
But he (fond beast) esteeming small delight,
And fruitlesse hope, of his vnbridled lust,
Above his sacred oth and promist fealtie,
Would haue deflowered her against all lealtie.

15

Faire Isabell by hap eu'n then was telling,
How in the boat she desperately was saued:
And hauing scapt the stormie seas and swelling,
How trecherouslie this wretch himselfe behaued,
That (had not outlawes thereabout bene dwelling)
He would haue forst her, vnto that he craued,
And eu'n as these, or some such words she sed,
She saw the man she spake of captiue led.

16

Those two that led the wicked O'drik tide,
Knew well their Lord when as they came in vew,
Both by the Lady, that was by his side,
And by the rampant Lyon red of hew,
Borne by the Prince, not for a shew of pride,
But his as from his predecessors dew,
They light, and with a courtisie to the ground,
And cap in hand, salute their Lord thus found.

17

Zerbino knew and cald them both by name,
Corebo tone, Almonio tother hight,
Which two with Isabell from Bayon came,
In conduct of that most vnworthy wight.
And straight Almonio thus his speech doth frame,
My Lord (said he) I shall to you recite,
Some little part, of that vnpleasant story,
That till this houre, had made my heart full sory.

18

Sith (thank be God) this Lady here doth liue,
Who felt these storms, and therein chiefly smarted,
I know that she thercof could notice giue,
And hath er this to you the same imparted;
I onely shall declare what did me grieue,
And what had hapned, since from her I parted,
What time by this vile wretches lewd intent,
For horse and men to Rochell I was sent.

Almonio's story

19

And as I went, so backe I turnd in hast,
With men and horse as good as I could get,
To seeke them out mine eies about I cait,
But yet mine eyes on them I could not set,
Their tracke I found, and following that full fast,
It brought me to a wood where as I met,
My fellow Coreb, panting then and groning,
This caitife cursing and himselfe bemoning.

20

He told me how, he fighting in defence,
Of Isabella, was so sorely wounded,
That from that place he had not sturred sence,
And how with bleeding much, he oft had sounded,
At which report I tooke so great offence,
That in my wits I was welnie confounded.
And to reuenge, my heart so sharpe was whet,
That Corebs danger quite I did forget.

21

But when in vaine this wretch I long had sought,
To Coreb I returned backe againe,
Who was so weake, and low by bleeding brought,
That scant the life did in his limbs remaine.
For which his wofull state, I tooke great thought,
As one that deemd it fitter to ordaine,
Some Priests and Friers, buriall to procure him,
Then Surgeons or Phisitions that might cure him.

Yet

22
Yet him vnto the towne at last I caried,
Where, by such helpe our friendly host procured,
It pleased God, *Corebo* not miscaried,
But of his grievous hurts was soundly cured;
Which done, no longer in those parts we taried,
But being there by sundry men assured,
That *Odrick* in *Alfonso's* court was biding,
We thither went to heare of him some tiding.

23
And there I challengd *Odrick* face to face,
And by the noble iustice of the King,
And chiefly (as I deeme) by Gods great grace,
That onely rules and gouernes eu'ry thing,
I tooke him prisoner in the present place,
From whence aliue I did him hither bring,
For why that king that heard his great offence,
Did graunt vs libertie to bring him thence.

24
I might haue slaine him, as he well deserued,
But yet I chused rather of the twaine,
Vnto your doome to haue his life reserued,
That you might point him death with worthy paine,
And much Ioy that lucke so well hath serued,
That we so safe haue found your grace againe,
And much more I reioyce, if much more may be,
At health and welfare of this noble Ladie.

25
Thus much *Almonio* said, and then did cease,
Expecting what *Zerbino* would reply,
Who all the while stood still and held his peace,
And viewd the prisoner with an heedfull eye,
And much it did his griefe of mind increase,
To think a friend could stray so farre awry.
Then sighing deepe; what *Odrick* is this true,
Wherewith (quoth he) *Almonio* chargeth you?

26
Odricks speech. The caitiue, humbly prostrate on the ground,
Forgiue my Lord (said he) your seruants crime,
Sentence. What wight on earth can voyd of fault be found?
What Saint is such as doth not sinne sometime?
Sentence. Tweene good and bad this diffrence sole is found,
That good men sin but seeld, and mend betime,
The bad man (making scruple none nor question)
Yeelds wilfully to eu'ry leud suggestion.

27
If you to me some fortresse had committed,
And I the same had wittingly betraid,
I graunt such fault were not to be remitted,
But if I had with force bene overlaid,
Then sure I am my case would haue bene pittyd,
At least no sinne should to my charge be laid,
For when the enemy is once the stronger,
Tis vaine to make resistance any longer.

28
Eu'n so my Lord, my faith I ought to guard,
No other then a fortresse or a hold,
Put in my charge with carefull watch and ward,
As long as strength will serue me it to hold:
And so I kept my faith with due regard,
Nor was I any way to be controld,
Vntill at last I was so strong assailed,
That faith gaue place, and fancie then preuailed.

29
Thus *Odricke* said, and what he said beside,
I doubt it somewhat tedious were to tell,
As namely, none so great assault could bide,
That loue all other passions doth excell,
But sure if it were euer plainly tride,
That humble speech doth often wrath expell;
Now *Odricke* found of lowly words the fruit,
That holp him to obtaine so hard a suit.

30
Zerbino stood a while in mind confused,
To punish or to pardon his offence,
Sometime his thoughts all clemencie refused,
Sometime the loue and seruice done long since,
Aswagd his wrath, and soothers fault excused,
And mou'd him with his folly to dispence:
And still as rage did kindle fire of wrath,
To quench it mercie store of water hath.

31
Now while in this same doubt *Zerbino* staid,
Behold by hap *Gabrin* there was brought,
She that of late had this good Prince betraid,
And had to him so great a danger wrought;
Her horse that heard where other horses naid,
Came to the noise, as nature had them taught,
Against her will, she wanting force to sway him,
And hauing lost the raines, wherewith to stay him.

32
The beastly wretch cride helpe, and out alas,
While thus her horse ran ouer fields and lands,
But when the Scottish Prince saw who she was,
And how she thither came he vnderstands,
He gaue God thanks that so had brought to passe,
To giue those two at once into his hands,
Which two, for their misdeeds about the rest,
He had great cause to malice and detest.

33
And after he had made a little pause,
Vnto his seruants turning thus he said,
Sirs, *Odricke* shall not die, although by lawes
His fact deserues no lesse vprightly waid,
For sith he saith affection was the cause,
Content I am, on loue the fault be laid,
The sinne to which a man by loue is driuen,
So much the rather ought to be forgiuen.

34
The force of strong affection hath ere this
Distemperd, yea and sometime ouerthrowne
A wiser and a staidier head then his,
As is to me by mine experience knowne,
And that here in he did his dutie misse,
I must confesse, the fault was part mine owne,
That gaue to him such charge, and did not know
How quickly flaming heate can kindle tow.

35
Then to the caitiue *Odricke* thus he spake,
Here I forgiue thee, and do thee enlarge,
But yet the penance I will haue thee take,
Is this, to take this woman in thy charge,
And I weare to me thou shalt her not forsake,
For one whole yeare, but this thine oth discharge,
And that thou shalt if any would offend her,
Do thy denoir, and vnto death defend her.

R. iij

Great praise in
a Prince to pro-
tect the innocent
has not malice-
fieri.

Sentence.

Sentence.

Sentence.

Odricks punish-
ment.

36

This was the punishment on him he layd,
And certainly this same had bene enow,
If so the circumstance were duly wayd,
And *Odericke* had right performd his vow.
For why so many men she had betrayd,
And done such sinnes euen from her youth till now,
That wherefoere they had together traueled,
In her defence he must at last be graueled.

37

Thus *Zerbino* let this wicked couple go,
And thinks sufficiently to plague them both,
But sweares if euer he did hap to know,
That he therein should violate his troth,
His flesh should serue as feeding for the crow,
A fit reward for such as breake their oth.
Thus went this honest couple thence together,
Lurking in corners, wandring here and thether.

38

But what in th'end of these same two became,
I know not, and mine author doth not write,
I onely heard a speech, or flying fame,
That when they once were quite from *Zerbino's* sight,
Odericke (to shun the quarrels and the shame,
That by her companie on him might light)
Did hang her vp, and after in short space,
Almonio made him runne the selfe same race.

Gabrius death.

39

The Prince that faine some tidings would haue heard
Of that Earle *Palladine*, who tother day,
Fought hand to hand with loftie *Mandricard*,
Vntill his rainlesse horse bare him away,
Doth trauell on his way to Paris ward,
Though faire and soft, and lingring by the way,
And his two seruants he doth send before,
And kept with him his Ladie and no more.

40

They rode not farre but that they found the caue,
And that same pleasant arbor and the spring,
At which *Medoro* vld such sport to haue,
With that faire daughter of the Indian king;
Where she their names together did ingraue,
All tide with true loue knots (a wondrous thing)
They looke, and see the stones, the words and letters
All cut and mangled in a thousand fitters.

41

And as they muid hereon, they might espie
Orlando's armor and his famous blade;
Hight *Durindana* on the ground to lie,
That sword that first for *Hector* had bin made,
They saw where *Brigliador* was feeding by
Vpon the grasse amid the pleasant shade:
This sight did make them both exceeding sad,
Yet little did they deeme that th'Earle was mad.

Hector.

42

Had they but seene one little drop of blood,
They would haue surely thought he had bin slaine,
But while in this most carefull doubt they stood,
Behold there came a country silly swaine,
That with no little speed ran through the wood,
And scapt the mad mans fury with great paine;
He told them how a man bestraught of fencens,
Had done these outrages and great offences.

43

And further gaue them perfect information,
And told each circumstance at their request:
Zerbino standeth still in admiration,
And as the manner is, himselfe he blest,
And with great grieve of mind and lamentation,
He takes the sword and armor, and the rest,
And *Isabella* helpeth them to gather,
And so they lay them on a heape together.

44

This while by hap came by faire *Fiordeliege*,
Who (as I told before) with penfue hart,
Went to seeke out her loued Lord and Liege,
I meane *Orlando's* friend, King *Brandimart*,
Who leauing Paris in the wofull siege,
To seeke *Orlando* did from thence depart,
Till *Atlant* to that cage him did intice,
Which he had fram'd by magicall deuice.

Fiordeliege

45

The which enchantment being now defeated,
By good *Astolfo's* value and his skill,
And all the knights as I before repeated,
At libertie to go which way they will,
King *Brandimart*, though much in mind he freated,
To thinke how long in vaine he had stood still,
Backe vnto Paris ward his course he turned,
Yet missing her, the way that he returned.

Astolfo's value
the enchantment
Booke 21.

46

Thus (as I said) faire *Fiordeliege* by chance,
Saw much of that which hapt, and heard the rest,
How that same worthy *Palladine* of France,
With inward giese of mind and thought opprest,
Or by some other great and strange mischance,
Went like a man with some ill sprite possesst,
And she likewise enquiring of the peasant,
Heard all the circumstance, a tale vnpleasant.

47

Zerbino being farre from any towne,
Hangs all *Orlando's* armor on a Pine,
Like to a * Penon, and lest any clowne
Or peasant vile should take a thing so fine,
He writes vpon the tree, Let none take downe
This armour of *Orlando* *Palladine*;
As who should say, if any man attempt it,
Orlando would ere long cause him repent it.

At the burial
of Knights of the
order, or great
persons, they lay
up their arms,
with a sword &
a headpiece.

48

And hauing brought this worthy worke to end,
And ready now to take his iourney hence,
Fierce *Mandricard* hapt thither to descend,
And when he saw the tree, he askt of whence
Those weapons were: which knowne, he doth intend
To take away good *Durindana* thence,
He steps vnto the tree and takes the sword,
Nor so content, he adds this spitefull word.

Mandricard

49

Ah sir (quoth he) this hap doth make me glad,
My claime vnto this sword is not vnknowne,
And though before I no possession had,
Yet now I lawfully feize on mine owne:
Alas poore foole, and doth he faine him mad?
And hath away his sword and armor throwne,
Because he was not able to maintaine it,
And was afear'd that I by force would gaine it?

Zerbino

50

Zerbino crieth out, what? peace for shame,
Take not his sword, or thinke not I will beare it,
If by the coate of *Hector* lo you came,
You stale it, and vnworthy are to weare it:
Tush (quoth the Pagan) I will beare that blame,
As for your threatning, do not thinke I feare it:
Thus tones sharpe answers, tothers sharpe replying,
Made them to fall to termes of flat defying.

51

The combat be-
tweene Mandri-
card & Zerbino.

And either shewing signes of plaine hostilitie,
Prepares the tother fiercely to inuade,
Zerbino with his skill and great agilitie,
His partie good against the Pagan made,
And voided all the blowes with much facilitie,
Though hauing great disuantage in the blade,
And in that armor massie so and strong,
That in times past to *Hector* did belong.

52

Looke how a Grend that finds a sturdie Bore,
Amid the field far straying from the heard,
Doth runne about, behind him and before,
Because of his sharpe tusks he is afraid:
So Zerbino that had seene oft heretofore
That blade, and of the force thereof had heard,
With heedfull eye to shun the blowes he watched,
Because he was in weapons ouermatched.

53

Thus warily this worthy Prince did fight,
And though by heedfull skill he escaped oft
The furious bloes of this Tartarian knight,
Yet lo, at last one blow came from aloft,
And Durindan so heauie did alight,
As pierced through the hard vnto the soft,
A finger deepe, and went in length a span,
Downe from the place where first the wound began.

54

The Prince so earnest was, he felt no smart,
Yet ran the blood out of the brest amaine,
And of his curats all the former part
With crimson streame of blood it did distaine:
So haue I seene her hand that to mine hart
Hath bene a cause of anguish and much paine,
When she a purple seame or flowre hath drawne,
In siluer kirtle, or in sleeue of lawne.

55

The wound was great, but yet did greater show,
Which sight faire *Isabella* much amated,
The Prince that seemed not the same to know,
With force increased rather then abated,
Vpon the Pagans brow gaue such a blow,
As would no doubt haue made him checkt & mated
Saue that (as I to you before rehearst)
His armor was not easie to be pearst.

56

The blow was such as caused him to reele,
And on his stirrops staggering he stood,
Had not his armor bene of passing steele,
The blow would sure haue entred to the blood,
The grievous paine that he thereof did feele,
Did put him in so fierce a raging mood,
So that for all Zerbinos skill and sleight,
He wounded him in places seu'n or eight.

57

Which when his louing *Isabella* saw,
She went to *Doralice*, and her doth pray,
The fury of her husband to withdraw,
And ioyne with her to part the bloody fray,
Who both because she was in feare and aw,
Lest yet the Prince her spouse indanger may,
And for of nature kind she was and meeke,
Of that good motion she doth not mislike.

58

Thus those two Ladies this fierce battell parted,
In which the prince receiued many a wound,
Though being (as he was) most valiant harted,
He neuer gaue the Pagan inch of ground:
From thence each couple presented departed,
Fierce *Mandricard* to pagan campe was bound,
To Paris ward the Prince, but driu'n to stay,
By reason of his bleeding by the way.

He returns to
Mandricard in
the book, 76. flaf.

59

Dame *Fiordelice* that stood this while aloofe,
And saw how *Mandricard* preuailed had,
And how the Prince had fought with euill prooffe,
Departed thence all sorrowfull and sad,
Reuiling *Mandricard* with iust reprooffe,
That of this euill gotten sword was glad,
And wished that her husband *Brandimart*,
Had present bin to take Zerbinos part.

60

But as she traueled homeward to the campe,
She saw the noble *Palladine* of France,
Not like himselfe, but of another stampe,
Besmeard and nakt as antiks wont to dance:
Quite was extinguished the shining lampe,
Of vertue bright that did his name aduance:
This sight in *Fiordelice* much sorrow bred,
But tell me now how good Zerbino sped.

He returns to
Fiordelice and
Orlando both, in
the 29. booke, 44.
flaf.

61

Who on his way with painfull steps proceeding,
With *Isabella* onely and no more,
His former taken hurts still freshly bleeding,
Which now with cold were stiffe and waxed sore,
And yet this grieve in him the rest exceeding,
To thinke that sword of which I spake before,
Should mauer him, be by a Turke posselt,
I say this grieu'd him more then all the rest.

62

Now gan the dreadfull pangs of death assaile him,
So great a streame of blood his wound had draind,
His eyes were dim, his speech began to faile him,
Strong hart to yeeld to weake limbs was constraind:
What can poore *Isabella* do but waile him?
She blam'd the heau'ns and fates that had ordaind
Her to escape such dangers and such harmes,
And now to haue her deare die in her armes.

63

Zerbino though he scant could draw his breath,
Yet hearing her lamenting in such fashion,
Doth ope his closed lips, and thus he seath,
Both shewing then, and mouing much compassion:
So might I (my deare loue) eu'n after death,
Be deare to thee as I do feele great passion,
To think when as my death fro hence shal reauue me,
Alone in wo and danger I shall leaue thee.

R. iij

64

Might I haue left thee in some safer place,
I should esteeme my death a blessed hap,
And that the heau'ns had giu'n me speciall grace,
To end my life in thy beloued lap,
Now greiues it me to thinke of thine hard case,
In what a world of woes I thee shall wrap,
When I must die, and leaue thee here alone,
And none to helpe thy harme or heare thy mone.

65

To this the wofull *Isabell* replies,
With watred eyes, and heart surprisd with anguish,
Her face to his, and ioyning her faire eyes
To his that like a witherd rose did languish,
No thought (said she) my deare in thee arise
For me, for know I neither do, nor can wish
Thee to suruiue, I will be thine for euer,
Life could not, and death shall not vs disseuer.

66

*Horace hath the like to this.
Ab te, mea si
partem animae
rapit.
Maturior vis,
quid moror al-
terat*

No sooner shall thy breath thy brest forsake,
But I will follow thee I care not whither,
Griefe or this sword of me an end shall make,
And if some stranger after shall come hither,
I hope of vs such pittie he will take,
To lay our bodies in one graue together:
This said, about his necke her armes she clasped,
And drawes the fainting breath that oft he gasped.

67

The Prince inforcing his foreseebled voyce,
Said thus, I thee coniure my sole delight,
By that deare loue that made me first thy choyce,
And thee from natiue soyle to take thy flight,
If euer in my loue thou didst reioyce,
If to commaund thee I haue any right,
That thou still liue (as long as God shall graunt thee)
And not despaire how euer fortune daunt thee.

68

Th'almightie God, from danger and from ill,
Hath hitherto, and will (I trust) thee saue;
Eu'n as he sent that noble Earle to kill
Those caitiues that did keepe thee in their caue,
And sau'd thee from the Biskins wicked will,
First hauing thee preferu'd from salt sea waue,
Liue then my deare, and trust in him aboue,
And while you liue be mindfull of my loue.

69

These latter words his lips had scanty past,
When death vnto his heart was sottly crept;
And as the lampe go'th out when oyle doth wast,
So quietly the noble *Zerbino* slept:
What tongue can tell how fore she was agast,
How she lamented, wailed, mournd and wept,
To her owne eyes and faire haire doing force,
When as she saw her deare a senselesse corse?

70

And griefe had set her in so great a rage,
With *Zerbino's* sword she thinks an end to make
Of her owne life, her sorrow to assuage,
Neglecting those last words *Zerbino* spake,
But lo, a certaine saintlike personage,
That sword from hand, that thought from hart doth
A certaine godly hermit and deuout, (take,
That was by hap abiding thereabout,

71

Who came and said, oh damsell leaue despaire,
Mans nature weake, and womens sex is fraile,
Feare him that rules both heau'n, and earth, and aire,
Who saith the word, and his word cannot faile,
That those that vnto him for helpe repaire,
And put their trust in him, shall neuer quailer:
Then shewd he her, to proue his saying true,
Examples out of Scriptures old and new.

72

Of saintlike women that in time of old,
Their liues and prayre in chastitie had spent;
And further to the damsell faire he told,
And prou'd and shewd by reasons eident,
That worldly things are vaine and haue no hold,
Alone in God is ioy and true content:
In fine, he makes to her this godly motion,
Her future life to spend in true deuotion.

73

His godly speech by helpe of heau'nly grace,
Poured in her heart by hie diuine infusion,
Wrought such effect, and found so great a place,
She ceast to seeke or worke her owne confusion;
But leauing the profession of her race,
Profest her selfe a Christen in conclusion;
She gaue her selfe to prayre and pure diuinitie,
And vovd to God her life and her virginie.

74

Yet did she not remoue out of her thought,
The feruent loue *Zerbino* had her borne,
But by the hermits helpe the corse she brought,
And thinks it sin to leaue it so forlorne,
And in some village thereabout she bought
Sweet balmes to fill the flesh all cut and torne,
Then in a Cypres coffin she doth close it,
Not being yet resolu'd where to dispose it.

75

That aged fire, though being wise and staid,
Yet would not trust in his owne stay so well,
To carry such a faire and goodly maid
To sojourne with him in his little cell,
Twere perill great (thus to himselfe he said)
That fire and straw should nie together dwell,
Wherefore he meanes to Prouince her to carie,
And there to place her in a monestarie.

76

But as he thitherward with *Isbell* went,
And by the way deuoutly did her teach,
All things vnto religion pertinent,
And of the same most learnedly did preach,
Behold a Pagan fierce with foule intent,
This purpose and their iourney doth impeach,
As I shall shew more largely afterward:
Now back I must returne to *Mandricard*.

77

Who hauing ended that same cruell fight,
In which the worthist Prince aliue was slaine,
Soone after by a shadie banke did light,
And turnd his horse a grazing on the plaine,
Dame *Doralice* in whom he tooke delight,
Alone with him in that place did remaine,
When looking sodainly by chance aside,
An armed knight come toward them the spide.

*Looks in the
bury of the*

*There is a
man made of
marriage, a
wherefore he
poseth *Zerino*
(being a
owne Christian)
her a woman
though she
so her praye*

Sentence

*He turneth
bell in the
booke 90. f. 4*

Sonnet.

78

She guest, but yet she knew not by the view,
Who it might be, vntill she spide her page,
That came with him, then certainly she knew,
Twas *Rodomont*, full of reuenge and rage,
Wherefore vnto her knight she nearer drew,
And said (my Lord) mine honour I dare gage,
That yon is *Rodomont* mine ancient loue,
Who thinks by fight from you me to recouer.

79

Looke how the Falcon in the aire doth mount,
When she espies a Bittor or a Herne,
So when this Prince espied *Rodomont*,
And by his haft his furie did discerne,
Like one that made of conquest full account,
He starteth vp with visage grim and sterne:
Straight armd, and horst he is, his foe to meete,
In hand the raynes, in sterops are his feete.

80

When as the tone the tother came so neare,
As each might harken what the tother sed,
Fierce *Rodomont* spake lowd as he might heare,
With threatening gesture, both of hand and hed:
And sayd, be sure Ile make thee buy it deare,
That with a short vaine pleasure halt bene led,
To do to one so foule and open wrong,
That can and will it wreake on thee er long.

81

The Tartar Prince that for him little cared,
Made answer thus, in vaine you me do threat,
Poore boyes with words, or women may be scared,
Not I that fight as willingly as eat,
Proue when you please I am not vnprepared,
At any time for any warlike feat,
On horse, on foote, in field, or in the list,
I shalbe readie, trie me when you list.

82

Thus words bred wrath, and wrath engendred blowes,
And blowes encreast their sharpe auenging will,
Eu'n as the wind that first but calmly blowes,
But after more and more increasing still,
At last it trees and houses ouerthrowes,
And seas and lands with tempest it doth fill:
So cruell grew the fight them two betweene,
Whose match might hardly in the world be seene.

83

Their hearts were stout, so were their bodies strong,
Desire to win, in both a like was great,
One doth maintain, tother would venge his wrong,
And loue their furie equally doth whet,
In equall paife the fight endured long,
Nor each of tother any gaine could get,
But each of them so firmly kept his ground,
As if each inch thereof had cost a pound.

84

Among an hundred blowes the Tartar smit,
Of which small hurt to *Rodomont* did rise,
Yet one at last so heauily did hit,
Vpon his helmet, ouer both his eyes:
His senses all were so amazzd with it,
He thought he saw more starres then are in skies,
And almost downe he was eu'n in her sight,
For whom he first began this cruell fight.

85

But as a strong and iustly temperd bow,
Of Pymount steele, the more you do it bend,
Vpon recoile doth giue the bigger blow,
And doth with greater force the quarrell send,
Eu'n so the Sarzan king that stoupt so low,
As highly to reuenge it doth intend,
And to acquite himselfe of this disgrace,
He striketh at the Tartar Princes face,

86

So fierce he strake, in this so furious mood,
An inch or little more about his sight,
That saue those armes of *Hector* were so good,
No doubt that blow had finisht all the fight,
But so astond therewith the Tartar stood,
He could not tell if it were noone or night:
And while in this amazment he abode,
The tother ceaseth not to lay on lode.

87

The Tartars horse that saw the glittering blade,
That *Rodomont* about his head so toft,
Did start aside, and with a turne he made,
Rescued his master, sore to his owne cost,
Downe with the blow fals this vnluckie iade,
And with his starting he his life hath lost:
To ward his head he wanted *Hectors* shield,
And therefore dead he tumbleth on the field.

88

Now came his master to himselfe againe,
Inflamd with greater anger then before,
To see his horie so pitifully slaine,
But *Rodomont* forbears him neare the more.
But spurrs on him, and thinks with furie maine,
To beare him downe, but he so strongly bore
The push, and thrust withall *Frontino* backe,
He made his master glad to leaue his backe.

89

Thus now with minds more aliend from all peace,
In eager sort the combat is renewed,
To strike, to thrust each other doth not cease,
In hope with blood their swords to haue embrewed
Fell rancor wrath and pride do still increafe,
And death of one or both must haue enfewed,
Er either of them would from thence haue started,
Had not a certaine messenger them parted.

90

One that had traueled all about the coast,
To seeke them out, to aske their helpe and aid,
To raise the siege, that by the Christen host,
Vnto the campe of *Agramant* was laid:
Yet though he came in peace, and eake in post,
To speake to them at first he was affraid,
And though his office were sufficient warrant,
Yet to themselves he dares not do his arrant.

91

But seeing *Doralice*, to her he told,
How *Agramant*, *Marsilio*, *Stordylan*,
And others more, like men pent vp in hold,
Were in great danger to be kild or tane,
Wherefore he wisheth her for to vnfold,
Thus much to them, that sought each others bane:
And to perswade them to so good accord,
As they might go to helpe their soueraigne Lord.

Simile.

Another phrase
to strike one so
make him think
as night, as the
Spaniard that
had but one eye,
having the to-
ther strike in one
as tennis, said.
'Buena Noche.

A phrase to
make fire out of
eyes and so
make him see
starres as moone.

92
 She that a woman was of passing sprite,
 And knew that neither of them would offend her,
 Stept them between, and chargd them stay the fight,
 As they their honour and her loue did tender,
 And helpe their king, that is in wofull plight,
 And end this fray begun of cause so slender,
 At least defer so long to trie this quarrell,
 Till *Agramant* their king were out of perrell.

93
 When she thus much to them declared had,
 Then doth the messenger declare the rest,
 And other strong perswasions he doth ad,
 And doth expound to them their kings request,
 Alledging that their absence made him sad,
 That but they helpe, the campe would be distrest,
 And that if they to rescue him neglected,
 A present ruine were to be expected.

94
 With his report and with her strong perswasion,
 The hardie knights the combat do defar,
 Till *Agramant* be freed from this inuasion,
 And all the Christen forces moued ar,

Thus of this friendly truce she is occasion,
 That first was causer of their deadly war;
 To her they binde themselves by solemne oth,
 That vntill then, they will be quiet both.

95
 There Discord was and Pride, and what they may,
 They do this league to interrupt and breake,
 But at that time, Loue bare so great a sway,
 That to withstand him, they were both to weake:
 In vaine it was to argue and gainsay,
 When once dame *Doralice* the word did speake,
 By her perswasion, firmly they agreed,
 Like friends vpon their journey to proceed.

96
 One onely want there was, that let them sore,
 Which was that *Mandricardos* horse was ded,
 But loe eu'n then, came thither *Brygliadore*,
 That since his masters madnes there had fed,
 Full glad the Prince of Tartar was therefore,
 Of such a horse, so quickly to be sped:
 But least my tale with tediousnes molest you,
 I wish you lay aside the booke and rest you.

Morall.

In the great offence of *Oderike*, and the notable clemencie of *Zerbino* in pardoning the same, we may note in the one the great frailtie of men in offending (specially in this kinde of fleshly concupiscence,) in the other a notable magnanimitie as well as mercie in forgiving him: For that (indeed) is true clemencie in a Prince, to forgine that offence that is committed against his priuat (as they call it) that is, against his owne person, rather then that, which is done against the law, for that is rather parcialitie and iniustice, then clemencie. Secondly we may obserue both in *Zerbino* and *Isabella*, a notable example of gratitude toward *Orlando*, first in gathering his dispersed armour, next in that *Zerbino* fought with *Mandricardo* in defence of *Orlando's* sword, in which conflict he receiues his deaths wound, and though indeed, all that is told of this couple, tendeth to a tragicall end, yet is it withall set downe by my author in a sort, to moue so great compassion, that it seemes all that read it are as it were in loue with them, and lament their so vnfortunate end; which hath made me say sometimes (in sport) to some of mine honorable friends, that if I could without wronging mine author, I would surely haue saned their liues, or giuen them a more fortunate end: though (to say true) sith an end is of necessitie due to all mankind, what more honorable death can a Prince haue, then by a wound in fight, specially for a good quarrell? what more sweet death, then in her beloved armes whom he was bethrothed to, and intended to marrie? what more happie reward, then fame and loue in this world, and heauen in the next? Further though *Isabella* were after slain by *Rodomont* in his drunkennes, as is noted in the xxix. booke, yet that notable title that is there giuen her (the martir of chastitie) makes her so famous, and her vertue so admirable, as she could neuer haue wisht a better end if she had liued as long as *Hecuba*. Wherefore if it be true that *Ouid* said of *Cadmus*,

—Scilicet vltima semper,
 Expectanda dies homini, dicique beatus
 Ante obitum nemo, supremaque funera debet.

In English thus,
 Our onely dying day, and end doth show
 If that a man haue happie beene or no.

Then (I say) by the death of these two, though in shew vnfortunate yet in deed most glorious, they may be called happie. Lastly, for the end of this morall, we may take one speciall obseruation of great integritie in the religious man, that conuerted her to the faith, and yet afterward would not trust himselfe alone with her; for in the fleshly conflicts and temptations, the onely way to conquer, is to play the coward and runne away, and thus much for the morall.

Historie.

The examples of the vertuous women that are praised by the hermit (though not named) in the 72. staffe of this booke, are many, recited in the Scripture it selfe: as namely the blessed virgin *Marie*, *Anne*, and *Magdalen*, all which betooke themselves most deuoutly to the seruice of God, and therefore are worthy to be canonized for examples of chastitie and Zeale of religion.

Allegorie.

In the sodaine parting of the fray betweene the two famous riuals, onely vpon the commandement of *Doralice*, with whom they were both exceedingly in loue, thus allegorically is supposed to be meant that the strongest passions that are, as anger, and reuenge, or what else soeuer, are often ouermastered with loue.

Allusion.

The speech of *Isabella* to *Zerbino*, wishing to die at the same instant with him, alludes to the wish of good *Bawcis* and *Philemon*.

—Quoniam concordēs egimus annos,
 Auferat hora duos eadem, nec coniugis vnquam,
 Busta meæ videam nec sum tumulandus ab illa.

Here end the notes of the xxiiij. booke.



Nano.

M. D. RICCI

DORALICE

RODOMONTE

Corriero.

Don.

THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero saueh (to his fame and glorie)
His spouses brother, that had else bene ded:
Who doth recount to him the wofull storie,
That so great danger vnto him had bred:
His cousin cheares them, though himselfe were sorie,
Next morne, they arme them all from foote to hed,
Good Malagige, and Vinian to releene,
Whose thraldome did their kinsmen greatly greene.*

*Loue and ambi-
tion, two strong
passions.*

Smile.



¹ He strife is great y grows
in youthfull minde,
When honor falls at vari-
ance with affection,
Nor could it yet be known
or well finde,
Which passion keeps the
tother in subiection,
For both allure, both do
our iudgements blinde,
And both corrupt the heart with strong infection:
Yet lo sometimes these hurts procure our weale,
Eu'n as one poyson doth another heale.

² For here you see these princes that of late,
Straue fiercely tone the tother to subdew,
Agreed to respit this their sharpe debate,
And to repaire vnto the Turkish crew,
To succour *Agramants* distressed state,
To whom they ought in dutie to be trew,
And yet herein loue claimeth halfe the praise,
For she commanded them to go their wayes.

³ And on they went without more disagreeing,
Fairst *Doralice* with these her seruants twaine,
The tone in suit, one in possession being,
And yet as then in concord they remaine:
At last they came vnto a place, where seeing
Foure knights themselues did solace on a plaine,
(Of which two were vnarm'd, two armour bare)
With them a Ladie was of beautie rare.

*He commeth to
them againe in
the 26 booke.*

⁴ With these a while they staid, but who these weare,
And what they did, and whither then they went,

A little while to tell I do forbear,
For to *Rogero* now my tale is ment,
Who would no more the shield enchanted beare,
But in the well did drowne it, with intent
That men might know his valiant deeds of armes
Were done by force of vertue, not of charmes.

⁵ He scant had gone a mile or little more,
From this same well, but that he met a post
From *Agramant*, of which there went good store,
The Captaines to recall vnto the host.
He told him how the king (besieged sore,
And like if succour come not to be lost)
Commanded him as his true Lord and leege,
To come without delay to raise the seege.

⁶ Much was *Rogero* with the message moued,
And diuers passions straue within his minde,
He faine would haue his Princes seege remoued,
Yet loth he was to leaue his loue behinde;
But be his doing praised or reproued,
He was so to the present cause enclinde,
First with his guide he goes to stay the slaughter,
Of him that had deflowrd *Marsilius* daughter.

⁷ They came vnto the place an houre er night,
Where this same execution should be done,
A castle that belongd to *Charles* of right,
But late the Spanish king the same had wonne,
And kept it in the mids of France by might,
By count'nance of the great *Traianos* sonne:
Rogero commeth in, and none denyde him,
Because they knew the damsell that did guide him.

There

8
There first he saw prepar'd a flaming fire,
In which they meant to burne the wofull youth,
He thought so small a sinne did not require
Such punishment, no more it doth in truth:
But when he markt his face and his attire,
And heard and saw the manner of his ruth,
Now sure I know (quoth he) I am not I,
Or this is *Bradaman* that here should die.

9
Tis certaine she, I see which way it went,
Belike while I at yonder castle staid,
She hither came afore me, with intent
To bring vnto the prisoner here some aid,
For which (poore soule) her self should now be shent,
Yet I am glad and very well apaid,
That I am hither come in so good season,
To saue her that should die against all reason.

10
And euen with that, most furiously he flies
With naked sword vpon the gazing rout,
Who ~~er~~ standeth in his way, he dies,
With so great force he hurles his blade about:
Then straight the prisoners fetters he vnties,
Nor was there one so hardie or so stout,
That once durst make resistance or forbid it,
No not so much as aske him why he did it.

11
As fearfull fowle that in the sunshine bright,
Sit pruning of themselues vpon a banke,
When as a Faulcon doth among them light,
Flic without care of order or of ranke:
So when these caitiues saw this noble knight,
Forthwith they from his manly presence thranke,
So did their fearfull hearts and courage faile them,
When as they felt *Rogero* once assaile them.

12
No maruell tho, for why *Rogeros* force
Was not as mens that now borne later are,
The strength of Lion, Beare, or bull, or horse,
Were nothing, if with his they do compare,
And chiefe sith now he doth himselfe inforce,
To do as much as he or can or dare,
Hereby from danger thinking to recouer,
Her vnto whom he was professed louer.

13
Now when the youth from danger quite was freed,
And all that sought his death away were fled,
He thanks the author of this worthy deed,
And thanketh her that had him thither led
Then, when of helpe he stood in greatest need,
When otherwise he doubtlesse had bin dead,
And executed like a malefactor,
Agnizing him his Lord and benefactor.

14
And furthermore he doth *Rogero* pray,
To let him vnderstand his name and nation;
Rogero musing to himselfe doth say,
What meaneth this so strange congratulation?
In face, in shape, in gesture, in array,
This is my loue, I see no alteration,
Yet strange it is her voice should be so changed,
More strange that she from me is so estranged.

15
It doubtlesse is not she, for if it were,
Could she within three houres my name forget?
Wherefore to tell his name he doth forbear,
Vntill he may more perfect notice get:
And thus he said, I haue I know not where,
Seene you ere this, and I bethinke me yet
Where it might be, for sure I know your face,
Though now I haue forgot the time and place.

16
Most noble sir (said tother) I agree,
You may haue seene me, though I know not when,
I rather iudge it should my sister be,
That fights and carries armes as well as men:
My mother at one birth bare her and me,
And we be both so like, that now and then
Our seruants, yea our father and our mother
Haue tane vs in exchange the one for tother.

17
Chiefly since in her head she had a wound,
For which she was constrained to cut her haire,
Twere long the circumstances to expound,
How she was hurt and heald, by whom and where;
Since that betweene vs diffrence none is found,
Saue sex and names that from our birth we beare,
She *Bradaman*, I *Richardet* am calld,
She sister, and I brother to *Renald*.

18
And further if you please, I shall you tell,
As we do onward on our iourney go,
A strange mishap that vnto me befell,
By being tane for her not long ago;
A hap that at the first I liked well,
But after wrought my danger great and wo:
Yes with good will, *Rogero* said, and than
Yong *Richardetto* thus his tale began.

19
It happend (as in part I toucht before)
My valiant sister passing through a wood,
Was hurt with certaine Sarazins so sore,
As had her cost almost her vitall blood,
Which wound to cure, her tresses short she wore,
For so as then her surgeon thought it good;
The wound once cur'd, for which her head was sold
Abroade to go againe she waxed bold.

20
And hauing traueled till the heate of day,
All clad in armor, as her manner was,
At noone she tooke occasion to make stay,
Fast by a watric streame as cleare as glasse,
And putting off her helmet, downe she lay,
Vpon a pleatant banke well clothd with grasse,
And sleepe at last her heauie eyes did close,
The place inuiting her to take repose.

21
Now while she did there fast asleepe remaine,
There happend to arriue vnto that place,
The daughter of *Marsilio* king of Spaine,
That there by chance was hunting in the chase,
And seeing signes of manhood very plaine,
With that her sweet and amiable face,
As horse, and sword, and target all of Steele,
A little amorous passion she doth feele.

22

And taking then my sister for a man,
As by all circumstances well she might,
She offers her all courtship that she can,
And askt her if in hunting she delight;
And then to chuse a standing they began,
And finding one far off from others sight,
She opened more plainly that affection,
That had her heart already in subiection.

23

And saue her maiden modestie forbad,
She would the same in words haue plainly told,
Howb't with sighs, with rufull looks and sad,
And silent signes she doth her grieve vnfold:
And when she thus long time discoursed had,
Surprild with hope, she could no longer hold,
But steps vnto her, and giues her such a kisse,
As that alone shewes what her meaning is.

24

My sister at the first doth thinke it strange,
That such a sute should vnto her be made,
And finding she had tane her in exchange,
She thinks it best (before she further wade,
Or let the tothers humor further range)
Tell troth, for thus she doth her selfe perswade,
Tis better to be knowne a Ladie gentle,
Then to be deemd a base man and vngentle.

Of this looke on
the morall of the
booke.

25

For what could be more cullen-like or base?
Or fitter for a man were made of straw,
Then standing in a faire yong Ladies grace,
To shew himselfe a cuckow or a daw,
And leese occasion both of time and place?
My sister therefore that this ill foresaw,
And knew she wanted that, that her should aid,
Told her by circumstance she was a maid.

26

And thus she told her how the worthy fame,
Hippolita and stout *Camilla* wonne,
In deeds of armes, mou'd her her mind to frame,
To do the like while others fowd and sponne:
And that she thought it to her sex no shame,
To do as women of such worth had done;
She told her this, in hope this would appease her,
But this alas did so much more diseate her.

27

For why the fancie was so firmly fixt,
That in her mind she had before conceiued,
By meanes of speech had passed them betwixt,
That fore it grieu'd her to be thus deceiued,
Before her feare with some good hope was mixt,
But now eu'n hope it selfe was her bereaued:
And this is one extremest point of grieve,
Still to despaire and hope for no reliefe.

Sentence.

28

He that had heard her wofull plaint and mone,
Must needs haue greatly at the same bin griued,
Ah wo is me (she said) that I alone
Should liue in such despaire to be relieued:
In passed times I thinke there hath bene none,
In time to come it will not be beleued,
That loue should make by such a strong infection,
One woman beare another such affection.

29

○ *Cupid*, if thou didst my state enuie,
And that thou hadst a mind me to torment,
To send such paines as others more do trie,
At least me think thou shouldst haue bin content:
Shall in so many ages none but I,
Yeeld of so vncouth loue such president?
The female with the female doth not wish
To couple, nor in beast, nor foule, nor fish.

Look in the
Lusion of the

30

I sole am found in earth, aire, sea, or fire,
In whom so strange a wonder thou hast done,
On me thou shewst the power of thine ire,
And what a mightie conquest thou hast wonne.
The wife of *Nynus* had a strange desire,
To ioyne in copulation with her sonne;
Faure *Myrrha* by her fire was made a mother,
And made *Adonis* both her sonne and brother.

Look in the
Story of the

31

Pasyphae, except it be a tale,
Was buld, inclosed in a wooden cow;
Yet in all these the female sought the male,
But nature doth my fancie disallow;
No *Dedalus* could remedie my bale,
Nor art can frame, nor sense imagine how,
This knot dame nature hath so firmly knit,
It cannot be dissolu'd by any wit.

32

This *Fiordispina* faire (so was her name)
In piteous sort her wofull state doth waile,
My sister vnto her, her speech doth frame,
As chiefly to her comfort might auaille:
And wisht her this vnbridled will to tame,
Sith nature could not suffer it preuaile,
And that she would let that desire be daunted,
Which possibly by no meanes could be graunted.

33

All this but all in vaine my sister said,
To seeke that fancie from her mind to wrest;
She that for comfort car'd not, but for aid,
Doth more and more her selfe vexe and molest:
Now night grew on as they together staid,
What time all creatures seeke repose and rest,
The Ladie prayes my sister for her sake,
A lodging at her castle then to take.

34

To this request doth *Bradamant* assent,
And so together to that place they came,
Where I (but that you did my harme preuent)
Should haue bene cast into the burning flame:
She that all kindnesse to my sister ment,
By many outward courtships shewd the same:
And caused her to weare a womans weed,
That men might know that she was one indeed.

That place was
Marfilius castle
where *Richard*
des should have
bene burned.

35

For why the semblance false she saw before,
Of manly shape to her was so pernicious,
She would now see her in those weeds no more,
The rather eke lest folke should be suspicious,
(If she had bene as shewd the weed she wore)
Lest that they two did liue together vicious:
She further was by phisick rules assured,
That contraries by contraries are cured.

And

36

But nought could salve that sore, nor swage her woes,
That night they lay together in one bed,
But sundry and vnlike was their repose,
One quiet slept, the tothers troubled head
Still waking, or if she her eyes but close,
That little sleepe strange dreames and fancies bred:
She thought the gods and heau'n would so assist her,
Into a better sex to change my sister.

37

As men tormented with a burning feuer, (thirst,
Do dreame with drinke they swage their grieuous
But when they wake, they feeble their thirst perseuer,
And to be greater then it was at first; (feuer,
So she whole thoughts from loue, sleepe could not
Did dreame of that, for which she wake did thirst,
But waking felt and found it as before,
Her hope still lesse, and her desire still more.

38

How feruently did she to *Macon* pray?
What vowes did she vnto her prayre annex?
If so by mightie miracle he may,
Her bedfellow turne to a better sex?
Now neare approcheth the dawning of the day,
When she in vaine her selfe doth greiue and vex:
And so much more her passion grew the stronger,
Because my sister now would stay no longer.

39

When *Fiordispina* saw she would be gone,
She caus'd a gallant genner to be brought,
All richly barbd, and furniture thereon,
Which with her owne hand partly she had wrought,
This frankly she bestoweth her vpon,
My sister takes it kindly, as she ought,
And takes her leaue, and on her way doth get,
And home she came that night ere Sunne was set.

40

We that long time of her had heard no tiding,
I meane her mother, brothers, and her kin,
Do welcome her, and aske of her abiding,
Why she so long from vs had absent bin?
Who straight from vs the troth of nothing hiding,
Doth tell vs how great danger she was in;
And opned from the ending to beginning,
The course of all her leeing and her winning.

41

As namely first how hardly she had sped,
And in a conflict had receiu'd a wound,
For which she was constrained to pole her head,
Before her health she could recover sound;
She told how fortune afterwards her led,
Where that faire huntresse had her sleeping found;
She told vs how the Ladie did her woo,
And all the circumstance that longd thereto.

42

To heare this story I was passing glad,
For why at *Saragoza* I had scene
This *Fiordispina*, and some knowledge had
Of her likewise when she in France had beene,
And likt her well, yet was I not so mad,
In vaine to set my loue on such a Queene:
But now againe I gaue that fancie scope,
When by this tale I had conceau'd some hope.

43

Loue was my counsellor that me aduised,
My meaning secret I to none impart,
This was the stratageme that we deuised,
This was the plot, the cunning, and the art,
To go in *Bradamant* as clothes disguised,
And for a while to play the womans part:
I knew my face my sisters so resembling,
Would be the better helpe for my dissembling.

44

The day ensuing ere it yet was light,
I tooke my way, my loue and fancie guiding,
I there arriu'd an houre before twas night,
Such hap I had, such hast I made in riding:
No sooner came I in the seruants sight,
But well was he of me could carry tiding:
They looke (as Princes oft to giue do vse)
Some recompence for bringing so good newes.

45

Straight out she came, and met me halfe the way,
And tooke me fast about the necke and kist me,
And told me how in this my little stay,
In anguish great and sorrow she had mist me,
Then she did cause me alter mine array,
In which with her owne hands she doth assist me;
A cawl of gold she set vpon my crowne,
And put on me a rich and stately gowne.

46

And for my part to helpe the matter, I
Did take great heed to all I did or said,
With sober cast I carrid still mine ey,
And bare my hands before me like a maide:
My voice did serue me worst, but yet thereby
Such heed I vsd, my sex was not bewraid:
And thus arrayd, my Princeesse led me with her,
Where many Knights and Ladies were together.

47

My looke and clothes did all them so beguile,
They all had thought I had a woman beene,
And honour such was done to me that while,
As if I were a Dutchesse or a Queene:
And (that which made me oftentime to smile)
Some youths there were of yeers & iudgment green
That cast vpon me many a wanton looke,
My sex and qualitie they so mistooke.

48

At last came meate, both store of flesh and fish,
What kinds of both to tell I ouerslip,
I maidenly tast here and there a dish,
And in the wine I scant do wet my lip,
The time seemd long that staid my wanton wish,
And still I doubted taking in some trip:
When bed time came, she told me I must be
Her bedfellow, the which well pleased me.

49

Now when the maids and pages all were gone,
One onely lampe vpon the cubbard burning,
And all coasts cleare, thus I began anon:
Faie dame I thinke you mule of my returning,
And cause you haue indeed to muse thereon,
For yesterday when I did leaue you mourning,
I thinke both you and I did thinke as then,
We should not meet againe till God knowes when.

S ij

50

First let me tell you why from you I went,
Then why I come, hereafter I shall show:
Deare Ladie (thus it was) I did lament
Your fruitlesse loue on me was placed so,
And though I could haue ay bene well content,
To waite on you, and neuer part you fro,
Yet since my prefence did but make you languish,
I thought mine absence minish would your anguish.

51

But riding on my way, I somewhat straid,
As fortune and aduenture did me guide,
And lo I heard a voice that cride for aid,
Within a thicket by the riuer side:
A Satyr taken had a naked maid,
And with a twisted cord her hands had tide,
And in his vlsage seemed so to threaten her,
As if he would haue kild her straight and eaten her.

52

I rusht to them with naked sword in hand,
And death to him, and freedome I did giue her,
She diuing vnder water out of hand,
Vnrecompensd thou shalt not me deliuer,
Quoth she, for I will haue you vnderstand,
I am a Nymph that dwell here in this riuer;
And for this courtisie I do much regard you,
And am well able richly to reward you.

53

Aske of me what you list, and I will giue it,
For I vpon the elements haue powre;
I can with charms bring down the Moon, beleue it,
I can swage stormes, and make faire weather lowre,
What is so hard, but my skill can atchieue it?
To drayne the sea, or build in aire a towre?
Yea eu'n with simple words (and if I will)
I can inforce and make the Sunne stand still.

54

When as the Nymph had made me this great offer,
(Lo Ladie what great loue to you I bare)
I neither askt with gold to fill my coffer,
Nor victory, of which some greedie are,
This fauour onely I demaunded of her,
To make me able to aswage your care:
Nor nam'd I any meanes for feare of erring,
The onely way and meanes to her referring.

55

No sooner this request to her I told,
But in the christall streame againe he diued,
And sprinkled me with drops of water cold,
Which to my skinne so sooner were arriued,
But I was changd from that I was of old,
And of my former state I was depriv'd;
Ifelt, I saw, yet scant beleuee I can,
That of a woman I was made a man.

56

And sauing that eu'n now I am so nie you,
As you may quickly proue my tale not fained,
Else you might thinke I said it but to trie you:
Now lo, since I for you this wish obtained,
Aske what you please, I nothing shall denie you,
Enioy that which my loue for you hath gained:
When I had pleaded thus, and she had heard it,
On sight of euidence she gaue her vardit.

*This is a fruitlesse
tale, deuised by
him to please her
eyes, and therefore
it is not requisite
it should be prob-
able, though Ca-
ssellus an Ita-
lian writer, found
fault with this,
because he saith,
it should haue
had more proba-
bilitie.*

57

As one whose state is ouerwhelmd with debt,
By lending or by spending out of measure,
That looks ech houre when prouling shrecus wil fet
Himselfe to ward, and of his goods make seasure,
If some vnlookt for gaine he hap to get,
By some mans death, or by some trouie treasure,
Is so surprisd with ioy, he scant doth know,
If true it be, or if he dreamed so.

58

So she that now did see, and feele, and tuch,
That which she long had longed for in vaine,
It ouerfild her mind with ioy so much,
It seemed in a trance she did remaine;
Therein her incredulitie was such,
As to resolute her I did take much paine:
If these be dreames (quoth she) for these dreams sake
I euer wish to dreame and neuer wake.

59

Not sound of drum, of trumpet, or of phife,
Nor warlike instrument of any sort,
Did sound alarum to our friendly strife,
But douelike billing followd louely sport,
This battell hazards neither limbe nor life,
Without a ladder I did scale the fort,
And stoutly plant my stander on the wall,
And vnder me I made my fo to fall.

60

If that same bed were full the night before
Of teares, of plaints, of anguish and annoyes,
No doubt but now it had in as great store,
Both smilings, sports, and solaces and ioyes:
No luy doth embrace the pillar more,
Then she did me, nor Apes can find more toyes,
Then we yong fooles did find to make vs merie,
Till ioy it selfe of ioy did make vs werie.

61

The thing twixt vs did secret long remaine,
And certaine months this pleasure did endure,
Till some had found, and told it to my paine,
As you well know that did my life assure:
Yet I confesse great grieve I still sustaine,
Not knowing how her safetie to procure.
This Richardetto to Rogero told,
And all the while their iourney on they hold.

62

By that time Richardettos tale was done,
They gan vp to a little hill to mount,
And when an houre and more was set the Sunne,
They came vnto the castle Agrismount,
Kept then by Aldiger the bastard sonne
Of Bono, of the house of Clarimount,
A wise and sober man and of good qualitie,
And bountifull in keeping hospitalitie.

63

And after he had bid them welcome both,
One as his kinsman, tother as his frend,
I heare ill newes (quoth he) that I am loth
To tell to you, least it should you offend:
But thus it is, to let you know the troth,
I heare that Bertolage doth sure intend
To buy the prisoners that Ferraw hath tane,
As namely Malagige and Viniane.

Simile.

*The end of the
tale of Fier-
dispine.*

Aldiger.

*Bertolage of the
house of Morgan-
za.
Malagige and
Viniane.*

Lanfusa

64
Lanſus taketh vpon her to ſell them,
 And as I heare to morrow is the day,
 Vnto your brothers I ſent one to tell them,
 But they be abſent hence ſo farre away,
 As ere they come, from hence they may expel them,
 I am too weake to force, too poore to pay,
 My loue is great, to wiſh all good vnto them,
 But powre ſo ſmall, as good I can none do them.

65
 Young *Richardetto* much miſliketh the newes,
 So did *Rogero* for the tothers ſake,
 And when he ſaw they both were in a muſe,
 Nor knew what counſell, or what courſe to take,
 No feare (quoth he) let me this matter vie,
 On me this enterpriſe I'll vndertake,
 So I ſhall handle this affaire ſo handſome,
 This ſword alone ſhall pay your kinſmens ranſome.

66
 This ſpake *Rogero* his companions chearing,
 But notwithstanding *Aldiger*, his hoſt,
 Gaue to thoſe loſtie promiſes ſuch hearing,
 As if there were great boalt and little roſt:
 Which vnto *Richardetto* plaine appearing,
 Who knew his vallew, greater then his hoſt:
 Good coſen if you knew him well that ſed it,
 You would ſaid he vnto his word giue credit.

67
 Then *Aldiger* on better information,
 Gaue care and credit to his noble gueſt,
 And made him cheare to ſute his reputation,
 And plaſt him at the boord aboue the reſt:
 And ſupper done, he was in ſeemely faſhion,
 In chamber lodgd, of all the houſe the beſt,
 The maſter of the houſe in nothing ſcant,
 His worthy gueſt will ſuffer nothing want.

68
 Now was the time when all men ſoundeſt ſleepe,
Rogero onely cannot ſleepe a winke,
 For cares and thoughts that him do waking keepe,
 And in his troubled braine profoundly ſinke,
 The ſiege of *Agramant* doth pierce him deepe,
 And what diſhonor men of him may thinke,
 And deeme his heart but faint, his faith but fickle,
 To leaue his ſoueraigne in ſo wofull pickle.

69
 Had he reuolted at ſome other time,
 Men might haue thought that true religion mou'd
 None could haue it imputed as a crime, (him,
 Nor no man probably could haue reſprou'd him:
 Now, when his maſters fortune did decline,
 And when to aid him chiefeſt it behoou'd him,
 Feare, men will thinke, his change procured chiefe,
 Nor iuſt remorse, nor zeale of true beliefe.

70
 This troubled him, and little leſſe then this,
 It troubled him, to thinke of his deare hart,
 Whom now by euill fortune he doth miſſe,
 Nor cannot once ſalute er he depart;
 Wherefore to write to her his purpoſe is,
 And ſo to her at large his minde impart,
 Both that of him ſhe may haue certaine newes,
 As that he may his ſodaine going ſcuſe.

71
 The chamberlaines both prudent and diſcreet,
 Vpon *Rogero* quicke attendance gaue,
 Prouiding him of needfull things and meet,
 Inke, paper, light, and what he elſe would craue:
 Then (as the manner is) he doth her greet,
 Vpon the front, as letters vie to haue;
 Thus after verie hartie commendations,
 Or ſome ſuch phraſe of friendly ſalutations.

72
 Then tels he her how that the Turkiſh Prince,
 Had for his ayd, by ſpeciall meſſage ſent,
 Who is beſiegd, and hath bene long time ſince;
 And how to reſcue him is his intent:
 Leaſt men of cowardiſe might him conuince,
 That he away in time of danger went:
 And now would leaue his lawtull Lord and liege,
 Then when his enemies did him beſiege.

73
 He prayeth her to weigh, how foule a deed,
 How full it were of infamie and ſhame,
 To yeeld his Prince no aid in ſuch a need,
 That ſent to him of purpoſe for the ſame:
 He wiſht her for her owne ſake to take heed,
 That no ſuch ſtaine might ſpot her ſpouſes name,
 That being ſhe, ſo true and ſo ſincere,
 She ſhould no blemiſh in her husband beare.

74
 He further doth his zeale to her proteſt,
 As erſt he had in word ſo now in writing,
 And ſwears that when his Prince were vndiſtreſt,
 The ſiege quite raiſd, by concord or by fighting,
 That fooliſh people might not make a ieſt,
 To his reproch, that common ſpeech reciting,
Rogero loues to take the ſurer ſide,
 And turnes his ſailes, as fortune turnes her tide.

75
 I ſhall (he writes) when that time doth expire,
 Which in a month I hope will be effected;
 Finde ſome occaſion from them to retire,
 And of no breach of honour be ſuſpected.
 Then ſhall I full accompliſh your deſire,
 And do, as I by you ſhalbe directed:
 This onely for my honour I demand thee,
 And after this thou euer ſhalt command mee.

76
 Theſe things, and like to theſe *Rogero* wrate,
 As then by hap came in his troubled hed,
 To certiſie his loue of his eſtate,
 And of the cauſe that his departure bred:
 By that time he had done, it was full late,
 And then againe he got him to his bed,
 And cloſd his eies, when he had cloſd the letter,
 And after tooke his eaſe a great deale better.

77
 Next day they all aroſe at breake of day,
 With minde to go to ſet their kinſmen free,
 And though *Rogero* earneſtly did pray,
 That none might take that enterpriſe but he,
 Yet both the other ſtiſly ſaid him nay,
 And thereunto by no meanes would agree,
 Vnto the place aſſignd they ride together,
 And by the time appointed they came thither.

*Rogero's letter
 to Bradamante.*

Proverbe.

The place they came to was a goodly plaine,
In which no tree nor bush was to be seene,
Here Bertolage did point to take them twaine,
As was agreed Lanfuse and him betweene,

But first they met, while here they did remaine;
One that a Phenix bare in field all greene,
With armor faire embest, and guilt with gold,
As in the booke that follows shalbe told.

Morall.

In this xxv booke, in Rogeros valiant proceeding for the deliuerie of Richardetto (though as then not knowne to him what he was) may be noted a wonderfull courage and promptnes to honorable exploits: In the great likenes of face of Bradamant and Richardetto (though this be but a fiction) yet we may obserue the rare, and (as it were) cunning workmanship of nature, admirable, as well in making so many sundrie countenances, one vnlike another: as also sometimes in making some so exceeding like, which in deed though it seldomer fortunes, and sooner alters in brother and sister, yet in two brothers, it is seene many times, and therefore not improbable to be written, as it is here for the forenamed couple. I haue heard in England of the two Tremaines not many yeares past: I haue knowne my selfe two of the Wrothes in Eaton schoole, and lately in her Maiesties court two Tracies, two proper and valiant young Gentlemen; whom my selfe being familiarly acquainted with, yet I could verie hardly know one from the other. But to come to the tale of Richardetto and Fiordispina, (which name signifieth as much as the flowre of thorne, and not vnapt for her priskling condition) I must confesse my author sheweth in the tale, rather pleasant wit, then any sober grauitie, and the best I can say is this, that it is a bad matter not verie ill handled. But as I vnderooke in the beginning to make speciall note of all the good matters by which the honest reader might take profite, so I thinke it as conuenient, where any light and lasciuious matter falls (as this is surely one) to temper it in such sort, or at least to salve it so, as it may do least hurt. Namely, I would not haue that xxv. staffe by misapplying it, made worse: being perhaps bad enough at the best.

For what can be more cullen like and base,
And fitter for a man were made of straw,
Then standing in a gallant Ladies grace,
To shew him selfe a cockow or a daw,
Leeling occasion both of time and place? &c.

This taken, as many will take it, may seme but lewd doctrine, but thus it ought and may be honestly taken, that he that in good honorable sort (as put the case in the way of marriage) may obtaine the loue of some worthy Ladie, and stands in her high fauour, and then will be so bashfull, either for want of wit or heart, to leese that oportunitie, he may be in good reason indued with those gentle titles; neuerthelessse to vnderstand it generally were vngoodly, considering the Scripture commendeth to vs the example of Ioseph, that refused his mistres kindnes. But to conclude the morall of this tale, we may note how full of doubts and feares these vnlawfull pleasures are, howsoeuer some men like better, to hunt by stealth in another mans walke, then to haue the fairest course that may be at game of their owne.

Historic.

The examples that Fiordispina recites of other womens vnlawfull lusts, preferring them before her owne, for their possibilitie (hers being vnpossible) are confirmed by diuers authors, as of Nynus wife Semiramis, that lusted after a horse: Nynus wife after a bull, and other such tales, though I thinke vntrue, or rather cullerd by such names: as in that of Pasiphae, it is thought she loued one that was called Taurus (to say a bull) and thereupon the light headed Poets, that haue a priuiledge as free for the pen, as painters haue for the pencill, make a great wonder of it, whereas perhaps indeed it was but euen an ordinarie matter, that is dayly (or at least nightly) committed, by many in these times.

Allusion.

This tale of Fiordispina alludes to that in the ninth of the Metamorphosis of Iphis, and the complaint she makes is much taken from thence, and is wonderfull finely written by Ouid, as you may reade there more at large.

Vixquetenens lachrimas; quis me inanet exitus inquit,
Cognita quam nulli, quam prodigiosa nouæque,
Cura tenet Veneris? si dii mihi parcere vellent,
Perdere debuerant: si non & perdere vellent,
Naturale malum saltem, & de more dedissent,
Nec vaccam vaccæ, &c.

Here end the notes of the xxv. booke.



RIGVETROG RICHARDETT

And with George, ship is of course

That good life men now play in bunches,
Now when the right way of life is away.

THE ARGUMENT.

*The learned Malagize strange riddles shewes,
To his companions out of Merlins well:
With Mandricard the Sarzan thither goes,
And each tooke quarrels new, as there befell:
For Discord seed of strife among them sows,
But Doralices horse, by fiend of hell
Affrighted, doth his mistres beare away,
Which causd the Pagans both breake off the fray.*

R

¹ight worthy dames there
were in times of old,
That more esteemd of
vertue then of wealth,
But now our iron age is
all for gold,
For bad, and worse, in sick-
nes and in health,
But she that will that elder
custome hold,

And leaue this new, deserues where ere she dwelt,
Here in this life to haue a happie choice,
And in the next for euer to reioice.

²Such was the noble *Bradamant* as mind,
Who sought not after wealth and rich abilitie,
Nor state, nor pompe, that many women blind,
But after vertue pure, the true nobilitie:
And well deserued he to find her kind,
That shewd in him such proofs of high gentilitie,
And tooke vpon him actions for her sake,
Which time to come for miracles may take.

³*Rogero* (as before I did recite)
With *Aldiger* and *Richardetto* came,
To rescue those two prisoners (if they might)
That should be sold with great reproch and shame.
I told you how they met a gallant knight,
Whose shield had painted that same bird of fame,
That still renews it selfe, and neuer dies,
And onely one, in all the world there flies.

⁴Now when this knight was of these three aware,
That stood like nien new plait in battell ray,

He comes to them, and seeing what they are,
Will there (quoth he) some one of you assay,
If so his value can with mine compare,
With staffe, with sword, or any any other way?
If any will, come then, and let vs trie it,
If none, then say so quickly, and denie it.

⁵Sir answerd *Aldiger*, I were content,
To trie my selfe with you, about or two,
But we three came not here for this intent,
We come, a greater feate then this to do,
And at this time, a little time mispent,
May hinder vs, and little pleasure you,
We three intend (if God do say Amen)
Two take two prisoners from sixe hundred men.

⁶Sure (said that other) if you mind indeed,
So great an enterprize to take in hand,
No doubt it doth of valiant mind proceed,
And pittie 'were, your purpose to withstand:
I rather shall assist you in this deed,
If you vouchsafe to make me of your band,
And by my seruice I will quickly shoe,
Good prooffe if I deserue such grace or no.

⁷Perhaps that some would know, and if they may,
What valiant knight this was that did intreat,
To take *Rogeros* part in such a fray,
Whereas the danger could not be but great.
Now she, not he, hereafter I must say,
Marfisa was, of whom I did repeat,
How she both fought, and foyle a little since,
And with *Gabrina*, chargd the Scottish Prince.

Rogero

Phoenix.

Marfisa.

8

Rogero stout, and they of Clarimount,
Of her and of her offer well esteemed,
She ioynd with them, they making full account
That she had bene of that same sex she seemed.
Straight ready on their horses backs they mount,
They see aloofe a cornet (as they deemed)
Of horse, and mingled some on foote together,
And all of them directly tending thether.

9

Their march, their ensignes, penons, and their flags,
Did cause for Moores they knowne were & discride,
Amid this crew, ypon two little nags
The prisners rode with hands behind them tide,
That must be changd for certaine golden bags,
That Bertolage had promist to provide;
Come (saith Marfisa) to the other three,
Now let the feast begin, and follow me.

10

Soft (quoth Rogero) there be wanting some
Of those that to the banquet must be bidden,
And to begin afore the guests be come,
In reason and good manners is forbidden;
By this, the tother crew had overcome
The hill, that late before from them were hidden,
These were the traitrous wretches of Magaunte,
And now was ready to begin the daunce.

11

Maganza men of one side, merchant like,
Brought laden moyles with gold and costly ware,
The Moores their prisners brought with sword & pike
Enuiron'd round about with heed and care;
The Captains meet with mind a match to strike,
The prisners present at the bargaine are,
And now are bought and sold (for ought they know)
To Bertolage their old and mortall foe.

12

Good Aldiger and noble Ammons sonne,
Could hold no longer seeing Bertolage,
But both together at him they do runne,
With hearts all set on fierce reuenge and rage,
His force nor fate their fury could not shunne,
Their speares his armor and his brest did gage,
Downe falls the wretch, his wealth him cannot saue,
Such end I wish all wicked wretches haue.

13

Marfisa and Rogero at this signe,
Set out without expecting trumpets blast,
And with two stauces of straight well seasond Pine,
Twise twentie men vnto the ground they cast;
The Captaine of the Moores doth much repine,
They of Maganza murmured as fast:
For each side deemed, as they might in reason,
That this had happend by the tothers treason.

14

Wherefore each side with wrath and fury kindled,
Vpbraiding tone the tother with vntruth,
With swords and bills, pel mel together mingled,
Do fight, and then a bloudy fray ensu'th,
The Moorish Duke was by Rogero singled,
A man eu'n then in prime and strength of youth,
But youth, nor strength, nor armour could not saue
From such a blow as good Rogero gaue him. (him,

15

Marfisa doth as much on tother side,
And in such sort besturd her with her blade,
That looke which way soeuer she did ride,
An open lane for her the people made:
If any were so stout the brunt to bide,
Yet loone they found their forces ouerlaid; (enter,
Through coats of proof they prou'd her sword wold
She sent their soules below the middle center.

16

If you haue seene the hony making Bees
To leaue their hives, and going out in swarms,
When as their kings and masters disagree,
And they make camps in th'aire like men at armes,
Straight in among them all the Swallow flees,
And eates and beates them all vnto their harmes:
So thinke Rogero and Marfisa then,
Did deale among these bands of armed men.

Simile.
Virgil writes
that Bees do fight
for battels many
times.

17

Now Aldiger and Richardet no lesse,
Vpon Maganza merchants lay on lode,
Both free to let their kinsmen from distresse,
And for they hated them like snake or tode,
They that the cause nor quarrell could not guesse,
And saw their Captaine dead, made short abode:
Their plate, their coine and treasure all they yeeld,
And were the first that faintly left the field.

Horace: Cana
pauis & angue.

18

So fie from Lions silly heards of Goates,
That haue deuourd and spoild them at their list,
And torne their sides, their hanches and their throtes,
Yet none of them their fellowes dare assist:
So fled these men, and cast away their coates,
And weapons all, and durst no more resist:
Nor maruell if these two had Lions harts,
That ready find such two to take their parts.

Simile.

19

Whose acts at large to tell I do refraine,
At which that age did not a little wonder,
And now to tell them, men would thinke I faine,
Yea though my words their actions far were vnder:
For at one blow oft horse and man was slaine,
From head to foote whole bodies clou'n in sunder,
And either standing on their reputation,
Bred for their foes a costly emulation.

20

Still tone of them markt tothers valiant deed,
And each of tother fell in admiration,
She deemed him Mars, or one of Mars his seed,
And farre aboue all humane generation:
And saue he was deceiued in her weed,
He would haue giu'n her equall commendation,
And likned her, as well he liken might,
Vnto Bellona for her valiant fight.

21

Thus of two bands these foure the bartell wonne,
And all their stufte and carriages they got,
The prisners loofd, their bands were all vndone,
Their foes all foild, such is their happie lot:
The man was well whose horse could swiftest runne,
Small count they make of amble or of trot:
The tone side leaue their gold on asses lode,
The tother of their captiues are forbidden.

*Flanders hath
excelled for ar-
ray.*

22

The noble vanquishers do seize the pray,
Which was both rich and sumptuous to behold,
Of Flanders worke an hanging rich and gay,
(To hang a stately roome) of filke and gold;
They also found rich clothing and array,
That should haue bene vnto *Lanfusa* sold,
And namely mong the rest a gallant gowne,
Embroiderd round with cost of many a crowne.

23

They further found good vittels and good store,
Wine bottels coole and fresh, and good of tast,
With which (not hauing eate that day before)
They do agree to baite and breake their fast,
And eu'ry one prepares himselfe therefore,
And to that end their curats they vnlast:
Now when *Marfisa* had put off her beauer,
To be a woman eu'ry one perceaued her.

24

Her golden haire trust vp with carelesse art,
Her forehead faire, and full of stately grace,
Her eye, her lip, and eu'ry other part,
So futing to her comely shape and face,
As bred eu'n then in each beholders hart,
A reu'rend loue and wonder in like case; (them,
And straight they askt her name, the which she told
And with as great delight she doth behold them.

25

But she her selfe farre more then all the rest,
Rogeros shape and person doth regard,
His vallew great, his vnappalled brest,
Before the others all she much prefard,
To him alone her speeches she addrest,
Of him alone she would her speech were hard:
Thus she in him, and he delighted in her,
The while the other had prepard their dinner.

26

The place they din'd in was a pleasant caue,
And one of foure that famous *Merlin* wrought,
Where he in milke white marble did ingraue
Strange stories, which things future strangely taught,
The very images seemd life to haue;
And sauing they were dumb you wold haue thought
Both by their lookes and by their liuely features,
That they had mou'd, and had bene liuing creatures.

27

*Of this looke in
the Allegory.*

From out a desert wood an vgly beast
There seemd to come, whose shape was thus defined
An asses eares, a wolfe in head and brest,
A carkas all with pinching famine pined,
A Lions grizly iaw, but all the rest
To foxlike shape did seeme to be inclined:
In England, France, in Italy and Spaine,
Yea all the world this monster seemd to raigne.

28

Where ere this cruell monster set his foote,
He kild and spoild of eu'ry sort and state,
No height of birth or state with him did boote,
He conquerd kings and clownes, all in a rate,
Yea this beasts powre had tane so deepe a roote,
It enterd in Christs vicars sacred gate,
And vexed Cardinals and Bishops chiefe,
And bred a scandall eu'n in our beliefe.

29

Vnto this beast men seemd to bow and bend,
This beast brake through each wall and eu'ry fence,
No citie could it selfe there from defend,
Strong castels made from it but weake defence,
In fine, her powre did seeme so farre extend,
That many were so fond and void of sense,
To thinke and to beleue this monster fell,
Had powre of all things both in heau'n and hell.

30

But when this beast had rang'd a while, behold
One wearing on his head a lawrell crowne,
With three that wore the flowre de luce of gold,
Embroiderd richly on their purple gowne,
And with these three a stately Lion bold,
Did ioyn his force to put the monster downe;
The titles and the names that them concerned,
Might in their garments plainly be discerned.

31

One that with sword the beast thrusts in the paunch,
Was he whole praise no time shall euer smother,
Francis the first of that name king of France,
Of *Austria Maximillen* is another,
Then *Charles* the fift that with a mightie launce
Smites through the beast, frō one side to the tother:
The fourth that in the brest with arrow wounds him
Was *Henrie* th'eight, the writing to expounds him.

32

Leo the tenth, the Lion fierce is called,
Who chaft him, and fast caught him by the eare,
And in the chafe the beast so tyrd and galled,
As others tooke him while he held him there:
By this the world seemd freed that erst was thralld,
By this men seemd secure and void of feare,
Seing that beast whose look late made them tremble
Stroyd by the powre of this so braue assembl.

33

This story so set forth (as I haue told)
With costly workmanship great pleasure bred,
In all their minds that did the same behold,
And on this sight more then their meat they fed,
And chiefe *Marfisa* wisht to heare it told,
What men these were, if men already dead,
Or else a prophecie of things ensuing,
By hidden skill, laid ope to each mans vewing.

34

Then *Malagigi* was by them requested,
As one in *Mathematikes* scene right well,
And had the method thereof so digested,
As he all hidden mysteries could tell,
To shew what monster thus the world molested,
And who be these that him frō earth expell: (them,
For though they saw their names, they did not know
But he they knew by his great skil could show them.

35

Know then (quoth he) that these whose names appeare
In marble pure, did neuer liue as yet,
But long time hence, after six hundred yeare,
To their great praise in princely throne shall sit,
Merlin the English prophet plast them here
In *Arthurs* time, and by his passing wit,
Set here (as yet) their vnperformed deeds,
And noted all their names vpon their weeds.

This

36

This beast you saw, had first her habitation
Beneath amongst the wicked fiends of hell,
And staid there till that wicked generation,
(I meane the iron age) on earth did dwell,
When none durst trust without an obligation,
When fraud first came tween them that buy and sel,
And when the mightie (to their great reproch)
First on the poore mens liuings did inroch.

37

Then first this monster cruell got abrode,
And euer since her powre doth still increase,
And wherefoere she maketh her abode,
There is no friendship firme, nor godly peace;
Conscience and iustice vnder foote are trod,
Good gouernment and wholsome lawes do cease,
That Python Phœbus kild with thousand darts,
Was monster lesse then this by thousand parts.

38

Thus Malagigi said, and then he told
Who those should be that should the monster kill,
That should come then when as the world were old,
That should renew each good, and mend each ill,
Whose names in sacred stile to be inrold
Deserue, and to be praid and honourd still,
That should in time to come, as he did conster,
With bountie kill that miserable monster.

39

Those five I nam'd, and more by five times five,
Mine author names, that holpe to slay the beast,
Rogero and the rest, the time did driue,
In such like talke during the present feast,
And ere they rose, behold there did arriue
Vnto this caue vnwares another guest,
By name that maid from whom of late by force,
Fierce Rodomont had tane Rogeros horse.

40

She hauing heard by hap vpon the way,
Her mistris brother was at Merlins caue,
Where she had bin her selfe an other day,
Not thinking now Rogero there to haue;
Him when she saw, she not one word doth say
To him, nor any show or inckling gaue,
Like one that knew so well to do her arrant.
As she durst go, sometime beside her warrant.

41

But vnto Richardet she frames her tale,
Yet so as tother might her speeches heare,
How one from her a gallant courser stole,
Which Bradamant her mistris held full deare,
The horse (quoth she) Frontyno she did call,
And I had led him thirty mile well neare,
Marfilia toward, where she bad me stay,
And pointed me to meet me at a day.

42

So fond was I, I feared no mans force,
Nor doubted no mans will to do me wrong,
When once I should but shew them how the horse
Vnto Renaldos sister did belong:
Yet one fierce Pagan voide of all remorse,
Met me, and tooke him from me, and ere long
Did meet a fo, with whom I fighting left him,
That hath I hope by this of life bereft him.

43

Rogero with this tale was so much moued,
That scant hereof Hyppalca made an end,
But Richardetto straight by him was moued,
Yea and coniu'd, as he would be his frend,
That this attempt might sole by him be proued,
And (but this damsell) none might him attend:
That she may bring him to the Pagans fight,
That tooke away her horse against all right.

44

Stout Richardet (though thinking too much wrong,
So oft to let another vndertake
Those enterprises that to him belong)
Yet sith so earnestly Rogero spake,
He giues consent, and tother staid not long,
But of the companie his leaue doth take,
And leaues them all, in wonder great to see,
That such hie worth could in a yong man be.

Sentence.

45

Now when Hyppalca was quite out of sight,
She opned to Rogero all the troth,
How she that counts him her beloued knight,
And voweth to be his by solemne oth,
Sent her of purpose to him this last night,
Which she before conceald (as being loth
Her mistris brother should her counsell know,
How she that horse vpon him did bestow.)

46

She told him how that he that tooke the steed,
Did adde these proud and scornfull words beside,
Because it is Rogeros horse indeed,
So much the rather on the horse I ride,
And if he will be grieu'd at this my deed,
Tell him I do not mind my selfe to hide,
For I am Rodomont (he said) whole name
Where ere I passe filleth the world with fame.

47

One might haue scene it in Rogeros face,
In how great dudgeon this great wrong he tooke,
Both for the gift and giuer in like case,
And grosse abuse, for which he did not looke:
He thinks what infamy and foule disgrace
It were to him, so great despite to brooke;
Which if he would, then iustly eu'ry body,
Might take him for a dastard and a nody.

48

Wherefore with heart vpon reuenge full set,
He followeth forthwith his female guide,
She that did thinke the fray vnparted yet,
That Rodomont and Mandricardo tride,
By darke blind wayes, the nearest she could get,
Vnto the place directly she did ride,
But as you heard, they had deferd the quarell,
And hasted thence to help their Liege from perell.

49

And as I toucht before, their hap them brought
Vnto the foresaid Merlins famous caue,
There where before good Malagigi taught,
What secret meaning all the pictures haue:
Now had Marfisa (by the rest belought)
Put on a womans garment passing braue,
Which lately for Lanfusa had bin made,
And so attyrd, refresht her in the shade.

Rodomont.
Mandricard.
Doralica.

50

When that Tartarian Prince had spide this dame,
Straight in his mind he plots this new found drift,
I will (thought he) by conquest win the same,
And giue her *Rodomontee* as my gift,
(As though that loue were but a sport and game,
That might be sold and changed for a shift)
For why (he thought) what needs a man complaine,
If leeling one, he do another gaine?

Sentence.

51

Wherefore the tothers damage to repaire,
And that he might his owne in quiet haue,
And for *Marfisa* seemly was and faire,
As no man need a dame more comely craue:
He doth forthwith vnto them make repaire,
Denouncing straight the challenge stout and braue,
That he with those foure knights at tilt wold runne,
Till they slue him, or he their Ladie wonne.

52

Straight stept out *Malagigi* and *Viuian*,
Both prest in her defence to breake a speare,
Nor fearing to encounter man to man,
With those two Pagans they saw present there;
But when the fray betweene them now began,
Fierce *Rodomont* stood still and doth forbear,
As comming thither with another mind,
And not to change his purpose first assignd.

53

Now of the brothers *Viuian* was the first,
That with great might the Pagan did invade,
Vpon whose crest in vaine his speare he burst,
His blow no hurt it did, no signe it made,
His force was least, so was his fortune worst,
For *Mandricard* (more perfect in his trade)
With so great strength and skill his speare inforced,
That he was ouerthrowne and quite ynhorfed.

54

To venge his brother, *Malagigi* thought,
But of his thought he quickly was deceived,
His force thus ouermatcht preuailed nought,
From off his saddle he was quickly heaued.
Next *Aldiger* his comming dearly bought,
For in his side a great wound he receaued,
So downe vpon the grasse he fell halfe dead,
His visage waxing pale, his armor red.

55

Then *Richardetto* came with mightie lance,
And prou'd him selfe by his great force to be
Worthy the name of *Palladine* of France,
As oft his foes did feeble, his friends did see;
But at this time one ouerthwart mischance
Did hap, that downe among the rest lay he,
His horse wherein he put so great a trust,
Fell downe with him, and tumbled in the dust.

56

When at no other champion did appeare,
But all were ouerthrowne in this late fight,
Thinking this conquest now obtained cleare,
Without more stay he from his horse doth light,
And comming vnto her with smiling cheare,
Faile dame (quoth he) you now are mine by right,
You cannot it denie, or once excuse it,
For by the lawes of battell so we vse it.

57

Indeed (*Marfisa* said) it were no wrong,
And I were yours I grant by law of warre,
If I were theirs, or did to them belong,
That you haue foiled in this present iarre,
But I shall make you know I hope ere long,
You misse your marke, your aime did greatly erre,
I am mine owne, mine owner is within me,
He that will haue me, from my selfe must win me.

58

I handle can (quoth she) both sword and speare,
And haue ere this made more then one man bleed,
Then cald she for her armor which was there,
Which by a page was brought to her with speed,
Off go'th her gowne, and for she still did weare
A slender trusse beneath her womans weed,
Her well shapt limbs therein were plainly seene,
In shape like *Mars*, in face like *Egypt's* Queene.

59

When at all peeces she was armed round,
She vaueth nimbly vp into her seate,
And twise or thrise she makes her horse to bound,
To bate a little of his furious heate,
And makes a turne or two about the ground,
Then turnes she to her fo to do her feate;
Such was (I iudge) *Penthesilea's* fight,
Against *Achilles* famous Greeckish knight.

60

Thus each them selues vpon their horse aduances,
And with their couched speares forthwith they run,
Vp in a thousand splinters flies the lances,
But vnto them no hurt at all is done:
The Pagan greatly maruels how it chanches,
That she should scape, and curses *Moone* and *Sun*;
And she with her successe as ill content,
Blasphemeth eke the heau'ns and firmament.

61

Then they assayd with swords most dreadfull dint,
To wound the one the tother, and to kill,
Their strokes were such as might haue pierst y flint,
And to their force was ioyned passing skill:
They lay on lode amaine, and do not stint,
The sound doth all the place with eccho fill,
But neuer was it more for their behoofe,
To haue their armour of so passing prooffe.

62

But while they now did most apply the fray,
Fierce *Rodomont* doth step them both betwixt,
And blames him much for making such delay,
Of that which late by him was firmly fixt;
And then with courteous speech he her doth pray,
With lowly words and loftie, quaintly mixt,
That she would helpe to aid *Traianos* sonne,
Whose tents were in much danger to be wonne.

63

To this request *Marfisa* doth assent,
As well to helpe king *Agramant* thereby,
As for she came to France with that intent,
The forces of the *Palladines* to try;
This while *Rogero*, wroth and malcontent,
After the stealer of his horse doth hie;
And hauing found of him the perfect tracke,
He sends againe his guide *Hippalca* backe.

And

64
And for he thought that none could do it better,
The messenger he makes her of his mind,
And sends by her his lately written letter,
Protesting he will still continue kind,
And that he doth himselfe acknowledge debter,
And would himselfe to her for euer bind,
He onely prayes her for a time excuse
His absence, which he would not, might he chuse.

65
With this dispatch *Hippalca* went her way,
And came to mount Albano that same night.
Rogero made but very little stay,
Vntill he had *Frontino* in his fight;
Which seen and known, forthwith there was no way,
But he will haue his horse againe, or fight
With him, that had with so vnnoble force,
The damsell robbed of the gallant horse.

66
And straight in shew of warre he coucht his speare,
And to his face the Pagan he deside,
But *Rodomont* doth patiently forbear,
Eu'n as a *Job*, and all his words abide;
Not that of him he had one sparke of feare,
For his great value often had bin tride,,
But that the danger of his Lord and King,
Weyd more with him then any other thing.

67
Wherefore he gently tels him for what cause
He may not fight, and him exhorted to,
What all diuine, and what all humane lawes,
Vnto his Prince commands a man to do.
I (saide *Rogero*) am content to pawse,
In this respect, and make a truce with you,
So that this horse againe to me you render,
Which so to take, your reason was but slender.

68
Now while these two herein do square and braue,
The Tartar king doth vnto them approch,
And when he saw what armes *Rogero* gaue,
He set another brabble straight abroch:
Mine are (quoth he) these armes that now you haue,
How dare you on my titles thus incroch?
The cause why *Mandricardo* spake these words,
Was that *Rogero* gaue the King of burds.

69
An Eagle argent in a field of blew,
Rogero gaue, whilom the crest of Troy,
As one that thence deriu'd his pedegrew,
And did by due descent the same enioy;
But hereof *Mandricardo* nothing knew,
Or nought beleeu'd, and call'd it but a toy,
And tooke it as an iniury and scorne,
To see the same by any other worne.

70
For he himselfe did giue, as for his cote,
That bird that bare vp *Ganimed* on hie,
Ere since he wan (as I before did note)
Don *Hectors* armes, and wan such praise thereby,
The good successe hereof makes him astote,
So that he did *Rogero* straight desie,
I shall (quoth he) some better manners teach thee,
Then in such sawcie sort to ouerreach thee.

71
As wood well dride will quickly fall on fire,
If so a man a little do it blow;
So was *Rogero* kindled now in ire,
To heare the Pagan reprehend him so;
Thou thinkst (quoth he) to haue thy fond desire,
By charging me now with a double so,
But know that I my partie good will make,
From him mine horse, from thee mine arms to take.

72
Did not we two about this matter boord?
And then to take thy life I did abstaine,
Because that by your side I saw no sword;
But now sith you begin this brawle againe,
This shall be fight in deed, that was but word,
And that your crest shall turne you to much paine,
Which vnto me descent and propagation
Hath left, but you do hold by vsurpation.

73
Nay thou vsurp'st, the tother straight doth say,
And with that word he *Durindana* drew,
That sword that erst *Orlando* flang away,
And then a cruell fray was like enlew:
But straight the tother two did cause them stay,
And chiefly *Rodomont* did seeme to rew,
That *Mandricard* of lightnesse shewd such token,
That twise by him his promise had bin broken.

74
First when to get *Marfisa* he had thought,
He had conflicted more then twise or thrise,
And now with tother quarrelled for nought,
About a bird or some such fond deuise:
Nay then (quoth he) if needs you wold haue fought,
We two should trie the title of our prise,
Which by consent should stand still vndecided,
Vntill our Princes safetie were provided.

75
Wherefore for shame do as you haue agreed,
And let vs ceate and lay all quarrels by,
And when our Prince from danger shall be freed,
Then first betweene vs two the matter trie,
And after if you liue, you may proceed
To fight it out with him, and so will I:
Though well I wot, when I haue done with you,
But little will remaine for him to do.

76
Tush (saith the Tartar Prince) for him nor thee,
Nor all the world beside, I passe one straw,
For though you fight, or though you do agree,
Of neither of you both I stand in law,
As water in a spring, so strength in me
Shall still supply much more then you can draw;
I hope by that time I haue done my feate,
From head to toot with blood ile make you sweate.

77
Thus one ill word another doth draw on,
And wrathfull *Mandricard* them both desies:
Rodomont would haue peace, but they would none,
If this speake sharpe, then that more sharpe replies;
If one strife be compounded, yet anon
Another strife as bad or worse doth rise;
In vaine *Marfisa* labours to compound them,
For more and more vntoward still she found them.

Smile.

*Meadow and a-
rable ground.*

78

Eu'n as the painfull husbandman doth thinke,
By care to keepe the riuer in his bounds,
That swels with raine, readie to passe the brinke,
And ouerflow his mowd or lowed grounds,
He strengthens eu'ry place that seems to shrinke,
Yet more and more the water still abounds,
And while he stops one vent, another groweth,
Till ouer all perforce at last it floweth.

79

So when the dame, of whom I last made mention,
Saw how *Rogero* stout and *Mandricard*,
With *Rodomont* continue in contention,
And each would seeme for tother two too hard,
She willing to compound this sharpe dissention,
Perswades them, but they little it regard,
For still as one at her request forbears,
The other two are at it by the cares.

80

When as she saw their furie still increase,
Let either vs (quoth she) our Prince assist,
And in the meane time let all quarrels cease;
Or if you in this fury still persist,
Then I with *Mandricard* will haue no peace.
Do herein (quoth *Rogero*) as you list,
For I resolued am to haue my horse,
Although it be by faire meanes or by force.

81

Then do (said *Rodomont*) your worst and best,
For with that horse to part I not agree,
But here before you all I do protest,
That if our King by this stay damag'd be,
And that for want of ayd he be distressed,
The cause thereof did not proceed of me;
Rogero little weyes his protestation,
But firmly holds his first determination.

82

And at the Sarzan furiously he flies,
And with his shoulder gaue him such a thrust,
He lost his stirrups, and so loofd his thies,
That hard he scaped lying in the dust.
What? hold *Rogero*, *Mandricardo* cries,
Either not fight, or fight with me you must,
And in great rage, as that same word he spake,
Rogeros beauer with great might he strake.

83

The blow was such, as made him forward leane,
And ere that he himselfe againe could reare,
Vpon him smote the sonne of *Vlyen*,
With so great strength as no strength might it beare
That had his armor bene of temper meane,
No doubt they had an end made of him there:
Rogeros hands flie ope with senselesse paine,
The tone his sword, the tother leaues his raine.

84

His horse away beares him about the Greene,
And *Balifard* his blade is left behind:
Marfisa that had to *Rogero* beene
Fellow in armes that day, was grieu'd in mind,
To see him vld so hardly them betweene,
And being strong of limbes, and stout by kind,
She smiteth *Mandricardo* on the crowne
So hard, as wants not much to fell him downe.

*Rodomont was
sonne of Vlyen
king of Algier.*

85

After *Rogero* *Rodomont* doth get him,
And now *Frontino* had welnigh bin wonne,
But by the way stout *Richardetto* met him,
And with him ioynd his cousin *Bonosonne*,
Tone iustles him, and furdur off doth set him,
The tother, namely *Viuian*, doth runne,
Vnto *Rogero* that by this was waked,
And lends his sword vnto his right hand naked.

86

Now backe he doth returne, enrag'd with scorne,
Minding to pay his damage home againe,
Eu'n as a Lion, whom the Bull hath borne
Vpon his head, is full of fierce disdainne,
Flies at him still, nor feares his cruell horne,
His anger making him forget his paine,
And on his beauer with such force he thundered,
As though he weld his head in twain haue sundered.

87

And sure he had performd it very neare,
If *Balifarda* had bene in his hand,
Which he let fall, as you before did heare.
Now when as *Discord* saw how things did stand,
She thinks no peace can possibly be here,
And taking *Pride* her sister by the hand,
Now sister let vs turne vs to our Friers,
For here (quoth she) are raisd sufficient fiers.

88

And so away they went, and let them go:
And let me tell you how *Rogero* sped,
Who gaue to *Rodomont* so fierce a blow,
That such a great amazement in him bred,
That twise or thrise he reeled to and fro;
Frontino with his senselesse master fled,
Also his sword had falne out of his fist,
But that a chaine did tie it to his wrist.

89

This while *Marfisa* held the tother tacke,
And yet on either side the conquest swayd,
Each had so good an armor on their backe,
Of piercing it they need not be afraid,
Yet by a chance *Marfisa* hapt to lacke,
And likewise hapt to haue *Rogeros* ayd,
For in a turne she made, her horse did trip,
And in the durt vpon one side did slip.

90

And as againe he labourd vp to rise,
The cruell Tartar iustled him so crosse,
That on his side the horse constrained lies,
Foundring againe vpon the slimie mosse;
Which when *Rogero* from aloofe espies,
How neare she was to danger great and losse,
He steps to *Mandricard*, fiercely assailing him,
While *Rodomont* stands mazd, his senses failing him.

91

The Tartar doth as fiercely him resist,
But yet *Rogero* strake so great a blow,
Both to auenge himselfe, and her assist,
Whom *Mandricardo* hapt to ouerthrow,
That sure I thinke that blow had little mist,
Quite to haue clou'n him to the saddle bow,
Saue that the Tartars armor was so hard,
And that *Rogero* wanted *Balifard*.

By

92

By this the Sarzan king againe did wake
And seeing none but *Richardetto* neare,
He cald to minde how for *Rogeros* sake,
That youth to him was troublesome while care.
Straight with great rage he toward him doth make,
Minding to make him buy that curtsie deare:
And sure good *Richardetto* had repented it,
But that his cosin with great art preuented it.

93

His cosin *Malagige*, whose skill was great,
In all that doth to magicke art pertaine,
With words that he without booke could repeat,
Did coniure vp a spryte of hellish traine,
And by this meanes he works a passing feat:
For (though he namd no place) he doth ordaine,
This sprite in *Doralices* horse to enter,
And beare her thence away at all aduenter.

94

The sprite thus coniurd, quickly doth his part,
Into the damselfs gentle nag he crept,
And so his quiet nature did peruart,
That one the sudden thirtie foot he lept,
And ten foot high, yet with so easie start,
That *Doralice* still the saddle kept,
Yet cride she out, in doubt to haue miscarried,
For in the diuels name she thence was carried.

95

Forthwith to helpe her *Rodomonte* go'th,
Because she fled, and cride to him for aid,
To stay behind the Tarrar is as loth,
For feare betweene them he may be betraid,
He leaues *Rogero* and *Marfisa* both,
Nor in the place so little time he staid,
As to accord with them vpon some truce,
Or make at least some mannerly excuse.

In the xxvi. booke I obserue that *Aldiger* did discretely refuse the challenge of *Marfisa*, which might perhaps haue hindered his better purpose in rescuing of his kinsmen. In *Hippalca* we may note the wisdom of a warie messenger, that knows as well to hold her peace as to speake. Lastly in *Rogero*, *Rodomont*, *Mandricard* and *Marfisa*, the confused effects of discord.

The Princes named by mine author to be killers & vanquishers of the miserable monster (as I called it) by which auarice is ment, are so famous in all writings of this age, that I need not speake of them, specially our king *Henric* the eight, whose bountie and magnificence can neuer be forgotten while this realme shall be peopied, or any histories read. Morall.

This description of the monster of couetousnesse, is (in my fancy) very well handled by mine Author, far beyond the like in *Dant* who maketh her onely like a Wolfe, pined with famine; But *Ariosto* goeth farder, and more significantly, describing her first to be vgly, because of all vices it is the most hatefull; eares of an asse, being for the most part ignorant, or at the least carelesse of other mens good opinions; a Wolfe in head and breast, namely rauenous and neuer satisfied; a Lions grisly iaw, terrible and deuouring; a foxe in all the rest, wily and craftie, and timorous of those that are stronger then himselfe: all which applications are so proper and so plaine, as it is needlesse to stand vpon them. Historic.

Some verie fondly haue surmised, and published the same in print, that this was alluded to the Bishop of Rome, but how absurd that imagination is, the praise of the Pope, then liuing, following in the 32. staffe doth plainly shew. But *Fornarius* supposeth it to be meant rather by some temporall Prince of Italie, that with his couetousnesse oppressed the people, and therefore might be, not vnfitly, termed such a monster. Allegoric.

Here end the notes of the xxvj. booke.

T ij

96

This while *Marfisa* was got vp againe,
And now she means to venge her on her fo,
But he was gone, at which in great dildaine,
She frets and chafes, that he had seru'd her so,
Rogero chafes as much, for all in vaine,
He knew it would be, after them to go:
They know their steeds (and this doth grieue them
Cannot out run *Frontin* & *Brigliadore*. (more)

97

Wherefore supposing (as it was indeed)
That they were gone vnto the Turkish host,
To follow them forthwith these two agreed,
Though not to follow as they went in post,
Not doubting but when *Agramant* were freed,
At leasure them to meet, and to their cost:
They onward go, but yet *Rogero* ment,
To bid his friends farewell afore he went.

98

Downe from his horse he gently doth descend,
And *Richardetto* he aside doth take,
And promist him for ay to be his frend,
And to his noble sister for his sake:
To whom (said he) I pray you me commend,
Yet in such prettie sort the same he spake,
His inward loue was not thereby detected,
Nor her great loue to him, one whit suspected.

99

Thus solemne leaue once tane on either side,
And profers of great loue and curtsie made,
To him was hurt, and all the rest beside,
As still among great nobles is the trade,
Rogero with *Marfisa* on doth ride,
But how they did the Christen campe inuade,
And what great losse did *Charls* thereby receiue,
In next ensuing booke you may perceiue.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero and those other Pagan kings,
 Make Charles againe to Paris wals retire:
 Among the Turkes new seed of quarrell springs,
 And kindles in their hearts a quenchlesse fire:
 Which all their campe in great disorder brings.
 Agramant to appease them doth desire;
 Fierce Rodomont doth leaue the campe in wrath,
 Because his mistres him forsaken hath.*



*A*mong the many rare and
 speciall gifts,
 That in the femal sex are
 found to sit,
 This one is chiefe, that
 they at todayne shifts,
 Giue best aduice, and show
 most readie wit:
 But man, except he thinks
 and chews, and sifts,

How eu'ry part may answer tother fit,
 By rash aduice doth often ouershoot him,
 And doth attempt the things that do not boot him.

2
 Good *Malagigi* thought he had done wisely,
 In making *Doralice* to Paris fly,
 But if he had the matter wayd precisely,
 (Though *Richardetto* was perseru'd thereby)
 He would haue sure confest it done vnwisely,
 His safetie with so great a losse to buy:
 For by this act (which he then not forethought)
 A losse vnspeakeable to *Charles* was wrought.

3
 Alas how much might he haue better done,
 If he had made the fiend the wench conuay,
 Vnto the fall or rising of the Sunne?
 To West, or East, or any other way,
 Where *Rodomont* and *Agricane* lonne,
 From Paris wals might haue gone far astray?
 But he that euer wisheth Christens euill,
 So at this time did proue himselfe a Deuill.

4
 The fiend her silly horse most sily enterd,
 And, not before prescribed any place,

He quickly all the company distemperd;
 Nor bare he her away a common pace,
 But ouer brooks, and streams, and ditchies venterd:
 She crying still for ayd as in such case,
 Nor leaues her bealt to fling, run, snore and stampe,
 Vntill she quite was past the Christen campe.

5
 There did she come eu'n as she could desire,
 Among the midst of *Agramantes* traine.
 And there at last she found the king her fire,
 That of *Granara* did possesse the raigae:
 The while her louers both themselues do tire,
 And in pursuing her do take great paine,
 By tracing her with as great toile and care,
 As huntmen do with pleasure trace the Hare.

6
 Now *Charles* tis time for thee to looke about,
 Vnto thy wals and strengths in time betake thee,
 Thou neuer canst escape this plunge, I doubt,
 Except thou stir vp quickly, and awake thee,
 Thy strength, the lamps of France are quenched out
 I meane thy frends & champions chiefe forsake thee,
Orlando thee, his wits haue him relinquished,
 And all his vertues drownd and quite extinguished.

7
 Likewise *Rinaldo*, though not fully mad,
 Yet little lesse then mad seekes there and heare,
 For faire *Angelica*, and is full sad,
 To see that he of her no news can heare;
 For why a certaine old inchaunter had,
 Told him a forged tale, that toucht him neare,
 How she, to whom of loue he made profession,
 Was in *Orlando's* keep ng and possession.

8

This made him at the first so loth to go,
To England, whither he was sent for ayd;
This made him backe againe to hasten so,
Then when the Turks his presence so dismaid,
And thinking after that, some news to know,
By priuie search the Nunries all he laid,
And Castels all, in Paris and about,
To see if he by search could finde her out.

9

But when he heard of her no news nor tiding,
And that *Orlando* there likewise did want,
He could in Paris make no longer biding,
Doubting his riuall sought him to supplant,
But vp and downe about the countrie riding
Sometime to Braua, sometime to Anglant,
Supposing still *Orlando* her had hidden,
Lest of his pleasure he might be forbidden.

10

And thus the wicked fiend his time espide,
To giue the Christens such a fatall blo,
When as thesetwo, in whom they most affide,
Were absent now their Prince and countrie fro;
Furder for souldiers of the Turkish side,
All that were valiant men, or counted so,
Were all against this time entised hither,
Wholly vnting all their force together.

11

Gradasso stout, and *Sacrapantee* fearece,
That in that charmed castell long had dwelt,
Which th'English Duke, as I did late rehearse,
Disfolued quite, and could like snow to melt.
These two likewise the Christen campe do pearce,
The forces of these two the Christens felt.
Rogero and *Marfisa* made lesse hast,
And so it happend, they arriued last.

12

The first two couple neare the Christens tents,
Did meet, and then after long consultation,
Each vnto other shewing their intents,
They all conclude with on determination,
And all of them to this giue their consents.
In spite of all the Christen generation,
To succour *Agramant* their Lord and Liege,
And mauger *Charls* his might, to raise the siege.

13

Straight in one crew they foure together knit,
Breake through y^e Christen watch by force amaine,
Neither in hugger mugger did they it,
But crying lowdly, *Africa* and *Spaine*,
They lay on lode, and eu'rie one they hit,
Dead or astonished doth there remaine:
Alarum then all ore the campe was rung,
Though few could tel the cause fro whence it sprung.

14

Some thought the *Gascoigns* or the *Switzers* bold,
By mutiny had made some insurrection,
And their surmise vnto the Emp'ror told,
Who came with minde to giue them due correction
But when he did the bodies dead behold,
Incurable vntill the resurrection,
He standeth still like one with wonder mazed,
And on their wofull wounds long time he gazed.

15

Eu'n as a man that with a bolt of thunder,
Hath scene his dwelling house smit vnaware,
Straight searcheth with no little feare nor wonder,
Which way the bolt did passe that cauld his care:
So *Charles* that saw mens bodies cut in sunder,
Inquires, of so great wounds who authours are,
And when he knew how few they were that did it,
Did wish himselfe there present to forbid it.

16

This while *Marfisa* on another side,
With good *Rogero* do them sore impeach,
And through the campe in spite of them they ride,
Killing or wounding all within their reach:
As in a migne that lies close vnespide,
With trayns of gunpowder men make a breach:
Or as a tempest goes along by coast,
So suddenly these two brake through the host.

17

Many that scapt the tother foure by flight,
In flying, fell vnwares vpon these twaine;
And felt by prooffe that neither flight nor fight,
Can saue a man ordained to be slaine.
Eu'n as a Foxe, whom smoke and fire doth fright,
So as he dare not in the ground re maine,
Bolts out, and through both smoke & fire she flieth,
Into the *Tariers* mouth, and there he dieth.

18

Thus last of all, by this most noble paire,
The Christen armie once againe was sundred,
And then to *Agramant* they all repaire,
Who welcoms them, and at their value wondred.
Now hope and courage, driue away dispaire,
One Turke, of Christens straight decide an hundred,
So great a boldnesse in their mind doth rise,
By helpe and succour of these new supplies.

19

Straight way on both sides out their men were brought
Their standers and their banners all displaid,
And there that day a bloodie field was fought,
And neither side made shew to be dismaid,
For hopes alike in either armie wrought,
Tones passed conquests, tothers present aid.
But fortune on the Christens so did frowne,
That they againe were driu'n vnto the towne.

20

The passing force of cruell *Rodomount*,
The strength and value great of *Mandricard*,
Rogeros vertue, that doth all surmount,
Gradassos courage of no small regard,
Marfisas heart, of principall account,
The skill of *Sacrapant*, with best compar'd,
These were the causers of good *Charls* his losse,
And sent the Christens whom by weeping crosse.

21

Great store were drownd in *Sequana* with hast,
The bridge so narrow was for to receiue them,
Wishing (as *Dedals* sonne had in time past)
Some wings wherewith aloft in ayre to heaue them,
Some thrusting, straued to get them in so fast,
That strength & breath, & life at last did leaue them
But that, whereby king *Charls* was chiefly shaken,
Was this, that many *Palladyns* were taken.

Thus

22
Thus fortune once againe did turne the wheele,
The good king Charles had her, but could not hold
And of this foile this hurt he then did feele, (her,
It fainter made his friends, his foes the bolder:
The Marquis of Vienna true as Steele,
Was at that seruice wounded in his shoulder,
And many hurt, but none did play his part,
So well that day, as valiant *Brandimart*.

23
He stoutly bare it out, no little space,
And when he saw there was no other way,
Then to the furie prudently gaue place,
And spard himselfe, against another day:
Now once againe is *Charles* in wofull case,
Now once againe to Paris siege they lay.
Young Orphans, and old widdows prayre and cries,
Again vnto Gods heau'nly throne arise.

24
The Angell *Michel*, was but ill appaid,
Finding the cause of those good Christiens teares,
He thought his maker was but ill obaid,
And that he may be blamd therefore he feares;
He calls himselfe deceiued and betraid,
By her should let the Pagans by the eares,
From which (it seemed) now she did so vary,
As she had rather done the quite contrary.

25
Eu'n as the Seruitor whose loue and zeale,
More then his memory may be commended,
Forgetting in some waightie cause to deale,
That by his Lord to him was recommended,
Would with new care his former fault conceale,
That er his master know, it may be mended:
So this good Angel, went not vp to God,
Till he had done as much as he was bod.

26
To seeke dame *Discord* he doth leaue the skie,
And to the Abby he returnes againe,
Where her amid the monks she might espie,
That change old officers, and new ordaine:
She laughes to see their portiles to flie,
Readie to knocke out one anothers braine:
The Angel takes her by her painted locks,
And with great furie giues her many knocks.

27
He brake a crosses handle on her crowne,
And grievously doth beat her, backe and side,
The wretch vpon her mary bones falls downe,
At th' Angels feet, and mercie, mercie cride:
Packed to the Pagans then, that siege yon towne,
(Quoth he) and see that you among them bide,
For if this place againe thou euer trouble,
Assure thy selfe, thy payment shalbe double.

28
Though *Discords* back and arms were sore with beating
Yet thence with all the hast she could she went;
Sore terrifd with that great Angels threatening,
Doubting againe in like sort to be shent:
Yet in this hast, behind her not forgetting,
Bellows and coles, in steed of those were spent,
By which in many minds, and hearts inuincible,
She quickly kindle might a fire inuincible.

29
Rogero, *Mandricard*, and *Rodomont*,
Gan now their former quarrels to renew,
As making of the Christians small account,
That vnto Paris walls themselves withdrew:
Wherefore to *Agramant* they do recount
Their quarrels, & the grounds of whence they grew,
Each one by challenge his iust cause auerring,
The combats order to the king referring.

30
Also *Marfisa* doth the king intreat,
That she may end her combat first begunne,
With as great hast thereof, and as great heat,
Against the Tartar, *Agricanes* sonne:
This she desires with hast and instance great,
As one that thinks, great wrong to her was done,
If in regard of any state or powre,
She should attend one day, or yet one howre.

31
But *Rodomont* alledgeth that of right,
He first should end the matter with his riual,
Sith by accord they first deferd the fight,
Till time might serue, after their here arriual:
No lesse *Rogero* for his horse takes spight,
And sweares, that whether they agree or striue all,
To take *Frontino*, no man should restraine him,
Or else to fight with him that doth detaine him.

32
Further, the matter farther to entangle,
The argent Eagle in the azure field,
Gaue to the Tartar matter more to iangle,
And quarrell with *Rogero* for his shield:
And so confusedly he then did wrangle,
As though with all at once he would the field,
And in his furie sure he had attempted it,
But that the kings commandment flat preuented it.

33
Who first with graue and frendly admonition,
To peace and good attonement did exhort them,
But when beyond all meanes of composition,
He saw that wrath and furie did transport them,
To certaine Marshals, he doth giue commission,
According to the law of armes to sort them:
And of all wayes, this was not thought the worst,
To trie by lots, which two should combat first.

34
Foure little scrowles were put into a pot,
The first had *Rodomont* and *Mandricard*;
Rodomont and *Rogero* next they wrot;
The third *Rogero* was and *Mandricard*;
The fourth paire that must trie the present lot,
Was stout *Marfisa* ioynd to *Mandricard*:
When lots were cast, these two first out were tane,
Fierce *Rodomont* and sonne of *Agrican*.

35
Mandricard and *Rogero* next they finde,
Rodomont and *Rogero* next was said:
Mandricard and *Marfisa* staid behinde,
With which the stately dame was ill apaid:
Nor was *Rogero* well content in minde,
Doubting that when they first their parts had plaid,
The combat will be such betwene them two,
He and *Marfisa* should haue nought to do.

50

Wherefore to be aveng'd of so great wrong,
He steppeth backe and out his sword he drawes,
The tother doth no farther time prolong,
Though in respect of order there was cause,
Nay which was more, he thought himselfe so strong
To fight with all at once, he askt no pause,
But to them both at once he makes defiance,
In his owne strength he had so great affiance.

51

This man is mad, but let me with him trie it,
Gradasso laid, Ile make him wise againe:
Nay softly (quoth *Rogero*) I deny it,
For this same combat doth to me pertaine:
Stand backe saith one, saith tother nay not I yet,
Backe you; yet both still in their place remaine:
Thus do these three with mallice great and spite,
Strangely begin a combat tripartite.

52

And sure to much confusion it had growne,
Had not some men, more stout perhap then wise,
Themselues among them vndiscreetly throwne,
With courage great, but yet with small aduise,
To succour others danger with their owne:
Yet could no force them part, nor no deuise,
Till *Agramant* himselfe, their dreaded Lord,
In person came their quarrell to accord.

53

The reu'ence great that vnto him they beare,
Made them forthwith their forces to restraîne,
Who straight the causes of these broiles did heare,
And to compound them fought, but all in vaine,
For scant *Gradasso* could be made forbear,
The sword so long with tother to remaine,
Vntill the fight were ended now in hand,
Of which the sequell could not yet be scand.

54

Scarfe had the king with words of great perswasion,
This quarrell new begun, a while appeald,
But that another strife, by new occasion,
In *Rodomontes* tent them all diseald:
An hurlyburly and a fieree inuasion,
There grows betweene two Princes sore displeald,
Betweene stout *Sacrapant* and *Rodomount*,
As I to you will presently recount.

55

King *Sacrapant*, as late before I told,
Helping to arme the cruell *Sarzan* king,
With those selfe armes that *Nimrod* ware of old,
From whom this Prince, his pedigree did bring,
Whiles he (I say) did curiously behold
His furniture, and eu'rie other thing,
That to his horse, or vnto him belong,
To see they might be sure and firme, and strong.

56

While he, that stately steed *Frontino* vewd,
That proudly champing stood vpon his bit,
And all his raines with snowlike fume bedewd,
Without regard, whose hands embroderd it,
A thought vnpleasant in his mind renewd,
And to his heart did seeme full neare to fit,
He thinks this horse was verie like in sight,
To one of his, that *Frontlat* whilom hight.

57

And more and more with heedfull looke still eying,
The markes and shape, and colour of the steed,
After his long and verie curious prying,
He saw and knew it was his horse indeed:
Which horse from him (then at *Albracca* lying)
Brunello stale, for want of better heed;
And shewed him an vnusuall cunning knacke,
To steale his horse while he sate on his backe.

58

Brunello stale that time more things beside,
By name *Orlandos* sword hight *Balisard*,
Angellicas faire ring, of vertue tride,
Which she recouerd as before you heard:
Likewise a sword eu'n from *Marfisas* side:
This done, he gaue *Rogero* afterward,
Orlandos sword, and this horse to the same,
But to *Frontino* first he changd his name.

59

Now then I say, when *Sacrapant* was sure,
This horse was *Frontlat* that sometime was his,
And that the markes he saw did him assure,
That he therein tooke not his marke amis,
To hold his peace he could not long endure,
But said; good sir, know mine *Frontino* is,
Stolne late from me, as I can make good prooffe,
Although (I trow) mine owne word is inough.

60

One at *Albracca* stale from me this steed,
Yet for our late acquaintance I consent,
Because I see that now you stand in need,
That you shall vie him now I am content:
Conditionally, that first it be agreed,
You shall acknowledge him not yours, but lent,
Else here I claime him as my goods and chattell,
And will defend my right in open battell.

61

The *Sarzan* king, that past (I thinke) in pride,
All kings and knights that euer carrid sword,
And past (I thinke) in strength and courage tride,
All samples that old stories vs afford,
Made answer thus; if any man beside,
Durst vnto me haue spoken such a word,
He should haue found, I tooke it in such scorn,
He had bin better haue bin speechles borne.

62

But for our late begunne acquaintance sake,
I am content this at your hands to beare,
So as you this, do as a warning take,
The like attempt hereafter to forbear,
And if you will but harke what end I make,
With *Mandricardo*, then I do not feare,
But you shall see such sample of my force,
Shall make you glad, to pray me take your horse.

63

Then villany is courtesie with thee,
(Saith *Sacrapant* inflamd with high disdain)
When you be offerd faire you cannot see,
Wherefore my purpose is, I tell you plaine,
My horse shall seruiue do to none but mee,
And with these hands I will my right maintaine:
And that is more, if these same hands should faile,
I will defend my right with tooth and naile.

A latin proverb
Dentes & un-
guibus.

64

Thus galling speech, betweene them multiplyi ng,
Till each last word, the former worser made,
At last they fell to acts of flat defying,
And tone the tother fiercely doth inuade:
Rodomont on his strength and armes relying;
Yet tother so defends him with his blade,
And makes it so about his head to houer,
That seemes alone his body all to couer.

65

Eu'n as a charret wheele that runnes apace,
Seemes to the eye all solyd, firme and sound,
Although twixt eu'rie spoake there is a space,
Concealed from our sights by running round:
So *Sacrapant* seemd armed in that place,
Though armour then about him none was found,
So dextrously himselte he then besturd,
As well it stood vpon him with his sword.

66

But quickly *Serpentino* and *Ferraw*,
With naked sword in hand, stept them betwixt,
With others more that present were and saw,
As friends of eijther part togither mixt,
Yet them no force, nor prayre could once withdraw,
Their loftie hearts were on reuenge so fixt,
And wrath had quite so put them out of frame,
Till *Agramant* to them in person came.

67

Vpon the sight of him, their soueraigne Lord,
They both agreed their furie to withhold,
Who straight perswaded them to good accord,
And much good counsell to them both he told:
But peace and good perswasions they abhord,
And eijther on his manhood made him bold:
Their king doth but among them leese his winde,
For more and more he froward them doth finde.

68

By no meanes *Sacrapant* will be intreated,
Vnto the *Sarzan* king his horse to lend,
Except that he (as I before repeated)
To borrow it of him, would condescend:
The tother at this verie motion freated,
And swears nor heauen, nor he should make him
To seek to haue by prayer or request, (bend,
A thing of which by force he was posselt.

69

King *Agramant* doth aske by what mischance,
He lost his horse, or who it from him stole:
The tother open'd all the circumstance,
And blusht for shame, when as he told the tale;
Namely, how late before he came to France,
One tooke him napping, as it did befall,
And vnderpropt his saddell with foure stakes,
And so from ynder him his courser takes.

70

Marfisa, that was come to part this fray,
Hearing of this stolne horse among the rest,
Was grieu'd in minde, for why that verie day,
Her sword was stolne as she most truly guest:
And then king *Sacrapant* she knew straight way,
Whom erst she knew not, and that gallant beast,
For which of late those two began to fight,
She knew, and said belongd to him in right.

71

While these things passed thus, the standers by,
That oft hereof had heard *Brunello* boast,
Straight in such sort to him did cast their eye,
As turned greatly to *Brunello*'s cost:
By which *Marfisa* plainly did discric
Him, by whose theft her sword she late had lost,
To be *Brunello*, whom she saw there sitting,
Among great Lords, a place for him vsitting.

72

She heard, and much it griued her to heare,
How for these thefts and many mo beside,
The king rewarded him, and held him deare,
Whereas in law for them he should haue dide:
These news so greatly chang'd *Marfisa*'s cheare,
That hardly she her wrath could longer hide,
Let *Agramant* accept it as he will,
She minds *Brunello* presently to kill.

73

Straight way she armed is from head to heele,
And makes her page her helmer close to claspe,
To him she goes, and with her gloue of Steele,
She giues him such a blow as made him gaspe,
And while the paine hereof doth make him reele
With her strong hād, his weak corse she doth graspe
As doth the Faulcon fierce the Mallard gripe,
To which a while before she gaue a stripe.

74

With furie great from thence away she flings,
While he for helpe, and oft for mercie cride,
But wil he, nill he, him away she brings,
Like to a thiefe with hands togither tide,
Where *Agramant* among the meaner kings,
Sate like a iudge their causes to decide,
Then making some obeyfance for good manner,
She speaketh thus in short but stately manner.

75

Sir king, I minde to hang this thiefe your man,
That by defart should long ere this haue dide,
For when he stole that horse from him, eu'n than
He stole my sword that hanged by my side:
But if there any be, that dare or can
Deny my words, or say that I haue lides
Here in your presences I do desire,
To trie by combat whether is the lier.

76

But least some should, as some by fortune may,
Affirme I chuse this time to make new strife,
Alone at such a time, on such a day,
When other quarrels in the campe are rise,
I am content a day or two to stay,
And to prolong this wretched caitiues life,
To see if any man will him defend,
And after sure to hang him I intend.

77

I meane (quoth she) to bring him three mile hence,
And keepe him as a prisoner in yon towre,
And with his life I promise to dispence,
For two dayes space, and longer not an howre,
If any list to fight in his defence,
There let him come and trie my force and powre:
Away she gallopt when she this had said,
And on her saddle bow the wretch she laid.

The

Sunt.

A preie i est &
possible to be true

78

The King was sore displeas'd at this attempt,
And much it did his princely mind enrage,
And minds himselfe to wreake so great contempt,
Vntill *Sobrinio*, one both graue and sage,
Told him in wisdom he must be content,
His choler in this matter to assuage;
And said it were a base part for his highnesse,
To fight for one sprung vp by theft and sinnesse.

79

Yea though before hand he were sure to win,
Yet would such victorie dishonor haue,
Because a woman vanquish't were therein:
Wherefore (quoth he) if you his life might saue,
With one words speech, to speake that word were sin:
For sure she doth but law and iustice craue:
And Princes neuer do themselues more wrong,
Then when they hinder iustice, or prolong.

80

You may (said he) to satisfie your mind,
Send after her, in manner of request,
And promise her, that if iust cause you find,
He shall be hangd, and so all strife may rest;
But if to this you find her not inclin'd,
Giue her her will, for so I thinke tis best;
So that she firmly in your friendship bide,
Hang vp *Brunello*, and all theeu's beside.

81

This good direction *Agramant* obeying,
Went not himselfe, nor sent none to molest her,
But yet according to *Sobrinio's* saying,
He sent a messenger that might request her:
Himselfe the while doth travell in allaying,
The tumults fierce that all his campe do pester:
Pride laughs at this, and Discord so reioyes,
As vp to heau'n flie their eternall voyces.

82

Five men most resolute haue set their rest,
To be the first that will begin the fight,
The strife so intricate, as would molest
Apollo to descide or set it right,
Yet *Agramant* still striues to do his best,
And to compound the matter if he might:
And thus to end the matter he begonne,
Twixt *Rodomont* and *Agricanes* sonne.

83

He makes to them this good and friendly motion,
That sith for *Doralice* they onely strae,
They would agree to stand at her deuotion,
And let her take her choise which she will haue,
And that once made, to raise no more commotion.
This pleas'd them both, to this consent they gaue;
A certaine hope and trust them both alluring,
Each on himselfe of her firme loue assuring.

84

The Sarzan king doth thinke, that needs she must
Giue sentence on his side, and be his owne,
Sith oft he had in turneys and in iust,
Her fauours worne, and his affection showne:
How can she loue (thinke he) or put her trust
In one, who she scant three dayes space hath knowne?
Nor was alone his owne opinion such,
But all the campe beside did thinke as much.

85

They all thinke *Mandricardo* ouerseene,
And made no question but she would reiect him:
But he that knew what past had them betweene,
And found that she did inwardly affect him,
Was sure, although his seruice were vnseene,
And done by night, that she would not neglect him;
Wherefore of her good will he nothing doubting,
Did scorne their scorns, and flouted at their flouting.

86

Thus hauing put the matter in her choyce,
And put the choice in her owne declaration,
She with a sober looke and lowly voyce,
Chose *Mandricard*, against all expectation:
The Tartar prince her ear did much reioyce,
But all the rest were filld with admiration,
And *Rodomont* himselfe was so astound,
As hardly he could lift his eyes from ground.

87

But when his wonted wrath had driu'n away
That bashfull shame that dyde his face with red,
Vniust he cald that doome, and curst that day,
And clapping hand vpon his sword, he led,
This better arbitrate our matters may,
Then womens foolish doome by fancie led,
Who oftentimes are so peruerse in chusing,
They take the worst, the offerd best refusing.

88

Go then (quoth *Mandricard*) I little care,
I hope that fight shall yeeld you like successe:
And thus againe to fight they ready are,
But *Agramant* doth loone that rage repress,
And said, vpon this point againe to square,
Quite were against all lawes of armes expresse:
And *Rodomont* he sharply then controld,
That in his fight was against law so bold.

89

The Sarzan king that saw himselfe that day,
So noted by those Peeres with double scorne,
Both from his Prince, whom he must needs obey,
And her to whom so great loue he had borne,
With fury great he flings from thence away,
And counts himselfe disgrast and quite forlorne:
Of all his traine two men he onely taketh,
The king, the campe, the place he quite forsaketh.

90

And as a Bull his loued heard that leaues,
By his strong riual forced to be gone;
Among the trees all clad with thickest leaues,
Doth hide himselfe, and seekes to be alone:
So he, whom shame of comfort all bereaues,
Flies sight of men, yet still he thinks thereon;
And chiefe when he remembers what disgrace,
His mistris did him in so open place.

91

Rogero gladly would haue him pursue,
To get his horse, but yet he doth refraine,
Lest men should thinke he had the fight eschude,
That did twixt *Mandricard* and him remaine:
But *Sacrapant* whom no cause doth include,
Pursues the Sarzan king, the horse to gaine:
And doubtlesse had outgone him that same day,
But for mishap that chanced by the way.

Sentence.

Simile.
Lucan hath the
like of two Bulls
in his 2 booke of
Pharsalia.

92

A damsell fell by hap into a riuer,
And was in perill great to haue bin drown'd;
He lighting from his horse backe to relieue her,
Lept in, and brought her out all safe and sound:
But doing this good act, her to deliuer,
Scarce all that day his horse againe he found,
His horse got loose, and he with all his cunning,
Could scantly catch him in six howers running.

93

At last with much ado he doth him get,
And after *Rodemont* he then doth make;
But where, and how long after him he met,
And how the Sarzan did him prisoner take,
I may not now proceed to tell as yet:
First tell we what vild words the Sarzan spake,
That cald his Prince and mistris both vnkind,
And for her fault doth raile of all her kind.

94

With scalding sighes, that inward pangs bewrayd,
He breathes out flames in places where he goes,
From rocks and caues his plaints doth echo ayd,
And takes compassion on his rufull woes;
O womens wits, how weake you are (he sayd)
How soone to change you do your selues dispose?
Oblersuers of no faith, nor good direction,
Most wretched all that trust in your protection.

*Rodemonts in-
uective against
women.*

95

Could neither seruice long, nor sured loue,
By me aboue a thousand wayes declared,
Thy fickle mind to fastnesse so farre moue,
But wilfully to let thy selfe be snared?
If reason could haue led thy mind to proue,
Was *Mandricard* with me to be compared?
Hereof can reason be alledgd by no man,
But this alone, my mistris is a woman.

96

I thinke that nature, or some angry God,
Brought forth this wicked sex on earth to dwell,
For some great plague, or iust deserued rod
To vs, that wanting them had liued well:
As in the wormes, an Adder, Snake and Tode:
Among the beafts, Beares, Wolues and Tygers fell:
And makes the aire the Flie and Waspe to breed,
And Tares to grow among the better seed.

97

Why did not Nature rather so prouide,
Without your helpe that man of man might come,
And one be grafted on anothers side,
As are the Apples with the Peare and Plome?
But Nature can no meane nor rule abide,
But still she must exceed in all or some;
Full easie tis the cause thereof to render,
For Nature selfe is of the womans gender.

98

Yet be not therefore proud and full of scorne,
O womankind, that men come of your seed;
The fragrant Rose growth on the pricking thorne,
The Lilly faire comes of a filthy weed;
In lothsome soyle men sow the wholesome corne;
The basest mould, the fairest flowre doth breed:
Vngratefull, false and craftie y'are and cruell,
Borne of our burning hell to be the fuell.

*Similia.
Sentence.
Virgil. Inuerg.
maiestas culta.
Infelix solis
& steriles domi-
natus arena.*

99

These words, and like to these the Pagan scarce,
Doth spend amid his rage and frantike fumes;
And like a mad man did the same rehearse,
Sometime in hie, oft times in baser tunes:
Itremble to set downe in my poore verse,
The blasphemie that he to speake presumes;
And writing this I do, know this that I
Full oft in heart do giue my pen the lie.

100

But passion did this Pagans sense so blind,
And left within the same so sharpe a sting,
That he not onely blam'd his loue vnkind,
But also rag'd against his soueraigne King,
And curst him, and wished in his mind,
That fortune so great woes on him might bring,
That he might loose his state and princely crowne,
And see his country turnd quite vpsidowne.

101

And being to such miseries once brought,
And with aduersitie assaild so fore,
That then by him his freedome might be wrought,
And that he might his former state restore,
That *Agramant* might by such prooffe be taught,
Offfaithfull friends indeed to set more store,
And learne to know, that such a friend as he,
Deseru'd in right and wrong preferd to be.

102

Thus blaming oft his Lord, more oft his loue,
To his owne natiue soyle his course he bent,
But changing place, could not his sorrow moue,
Nor trauels paine, his paine of mind relent;
It seemd his horse Frontino well to proue,
Before his bridle should be drawne, he ment,
To Sonna he doth ride without a bait,
And minds fro thence to passe to Prouence strait.

103

And there to cast away all care and carke,
And all his anguish quickly to appease,
For Affrica he will himselfe imbarke,
And passe the large Mediterranean seas;
But, for the weather now waxt dim and darke,
First in his Inne he minds to take his eate,
For all the counntry, eu'n as farre as Spaine,
In *Agramantes* powre did then remaine.

104

Now he resolues to lodge about the coast,
And long he is not of a place to seeke,
For straight he was inuited by an host,
To take his houte, if so it might him like:
It pleas'd the Pagan well, to heare him boast,
That he had Corlike wine, and French and Greeke,
For though he were a Turke in all the rest,
Yet did he like French fashion drinking best.

105

The pleasant host, that was indeed of those,
That can with double diligence attend,
As hauing sau'd, amid both friends and foes,
His goods, and gaine by that which both do spend:
When by that princes view he did suppose
Him some great man, he straight abroad did send,
And thither doth his kin and friends request,
To helpe to waite, and welcome such a guest.

But

106

But loe, his guest sits musing all apart,
And of his Mistres runneth all his thought,
Which (though he would forget) spite of his hart,
He thinks on still, so strong the fancie wrought:
The standers by are not so malypart,
To talke to him, till he occasion sought:
Which hauing found, vp from his chaire he started,
And salutations to them all imparted.

107

Then askt he many questions of them all,
And as occasion seru'd, discourses varid;
But still we finde, and euer finde we shall,
By thought of heart the speech of tongue is carid:
For last to treat of marriage he doth fall,
And asketh of the men if they be marrid:
And if they be, he prayth them to declare,
Of their wiues truthes, what their opinions are.

108

Straight all of them made answer they had wiues,
And but mine host, all praisd the happie state;
And said they were the comforts of their liues,
That draw a happie yoke without debate:
A playfellow, that farre off all grieve driues,
A steward, early that provides and late;
Both faithfull, chaste, and sober, mild, and trustie,
Nurse to weake age, and pleasure to the lustie.

109

Tush (quoth mine host) vnder your good correction,
(Most noble guest) these fellows say not right,
But either with fond loue, or foule subiection,
So blinded are, they take the blacke for white:
I once my selfe, was toucht with this infection,
But now I see, that then I wanted sight:
And now I know, as being better taught,
That theirs and mine be all vnchast and naught.

110

For as the Phoenix is a bird alone,
And of that kind, the whole world hath no more;
So (thinke I) of all wiues there is but one,
That liueth chaste in loue and vertues lore:
He blest may be, that lighteth her vpon,
Small hope (thinke I) there is in so scant store,
That many should haue one of such a kind,
Of which in all the world but one I finde.

Simile.
Iuuenal saith,
Rara anu in cer-
tu nigros simi-
lata.

111

I once so blinded was, as now be thease,
Till by good hap vnto my house there came;
A Gentleman of Venice from the seas,
Francis Valerio was he cald by name:
He knew, and could declare them all with ease,
All womens wiles, and stories to the same,
He had of old, and of the later times,
To shew both wiues, and single womens crimes.

112

He said, and bad me hold it as my creed,
That all of them are false, if they be trides;
If some seemd chaste, it did of this proceed,
They had the wit to do, and not be spide,
And knew, by deepe dissembling, and good heed,
With sober looks their wanton lusts to hide:
And this to proue he told me such a tale,
As while I liue, I still remember shall.

113

And if it like you sir, to lend me eare,
In my rude fashon, I shall it recite,
Right glad (quoth Rodomont) by hea'ns I sweare,
For thou hast hit my present humor right:
Wherefore (said he) sit downe I pray thee theare,
For in thy speech alreadie I delight:
But heare I end this booke, for doubt I haue,
That in his tale, mine host will play the knaue.

In this booke we may obserue, how important a thing it is in an army, to haue store of good leaders; as Linie noteth of Morall the old Remaines: Fortiorem rem Romanam ducibus esse, quam militibus. That the strength of the Romaines, consisted more in Captaines, then in souldiers. In quarrels that grew in the campe vpon trifling causes, we may note a fault that many of English Seruitors (though otherwise braue men) haue many times bene noted of in their forren seruice, where they verie seldome agree together, but seeke to disgrace one another. In Agramant, we may note a princely maiestie, in compounding such controuersies. In Rodomonts bitter inuective against women, we may see how passionate extreames loue and hate be. In mine Host, we note how such base fellows are still readie to feed the humors of Princes, though it be in shamefull vices, or manifest errors.

Hippolita to whom Marfisa is compared, as also the whole cuntry of Amazons, and their lawes, I haue spoken of Historie elsewhere: this is that Hippolita, that was brought by Theseus to Athens, and there had a sonne called Hippolitus.

In that he saineth, that the spright entring into Doralices horse, conueyed her into the campe of the Pagans, to Allegorie the great damage of the Christians, we may thereby note how that ghostly enemy doth indeed watch (as the scripture saith) like a roring Lion whom he may deuour, to do mankind all the hurt that may be; and therefore, we must not giue him an inch, least (as the prouerbe saith) he take an ell.

In the solemnitie of their combats and preparation, Fornarius noteth, that he alludes to a policie, vsed by Isabella Allusion. wife to Ferdinando, king of Spaine. She, to make her men of armes more valiant and courageous, caused them to fight with the Moors in the verie sight of their Ladies and Mistresses, and partly thereby expulsed the Moores out of Granata. But for Doralices reiecting of Rodomont, and chusing Mandricard; it alludes to a like thing, written by Plutarch in his loue discourses, where Calisto was taken and Strato refused: of which afterward ensued the death of al three.

Here end the notes of the xxvij. booke.

V



THE ARGUMENT.

*Fierce Rodomont hears of his prating Host
A lying tale, to womens great disgrace:
Vnto Algier he minds to passe in post;
But by the way he finds more pleasing place,
Faire Isabell passeth by that cost;
The Pagan changeth mind, and sues for grace:
The Hermit warnes her keepe her vow and oth,
At which the Pagan Prince is passing wroth.*



You Ladies, yee that Ladies
hold in prise,
Giue not (perdie) your eare
to this same tale;
The which to tell, mine
Host doth here deuse,
To make men think your
vertues are but small:
Though from so base a
tongue there can arise,
To your sweete sexe, no iust disgrace at all;
Fooles will find fault without the cause discerning,
And argue most, of that they haue no lerning.

Turne ou'r the leaf, and let this tale alone,
If any thinke the sex by this disgraced,
I write it for no spite, nor mallice none,
But in my Authors booke I finde it placed;
My loyall loue to Ladies all is knowne,
In whom I see such worth to be imbraced,
That theirs I am, and glad would be therefore,
To shew thereof a thousand proofes and more.

Peruse it not, or if you do it reed,
Esteeme it not, but as an idle table;
Regard it not, or if you take some heed,
Belieue it not, but as a foolish fable:
But to the matter, thus it was indeed,
When all the guests were cheared at the table;
Neare Rodomont (so was the Pagan named)
Downe fate mine Host, and thus his tale he framed.

*Asolfo, whilom king of Lombardy,
To whom his elder brother left his rayne,*

Was in his youth so fresh and faire to see,
As few to such perfection could attaine:
Appelles match, or *Zences* he might be,
That such a shape could paint without much paine,
Great was his grace, and all the world so deemd it,
But yet himselfe of all men most esteemd it.

*Two excellent
painters.*

He did not of his scepter take such pride,
Nor that degree that common men are vnder,
Nor wealth, nor frends, nor meaner kings beside,
That there about dwelt neare or far asunder;
But of his beautie, which he would not hide,
At whole rare worth, he thought y world did won-
This was his ioy, and all that he intended, (der,
To heare his comely face and shape commended.

Among his courtiers, one aboue the rest,
Fausto by name; by birth a Romane knight:
Who hearing oft so praisd, as they know best,
His face, and hands, and all that praise he might,
The king did bid him tell at his request;
Neare or far of, if he had scene that wight,
That in all parts so perfectly was wrought:
But he was answerd as he little thought.

My Liege (quoth *Fausto*) plainly to declar e,
Both what my selfe doth see, and others say.
But few with your rare beautie can compare,
And that same few were none, were one away:
Iocundo hight, a man of beautie rare,
And brother mine, excepting whom, I may
Prefer your grace before all other creatures,
But he doth match or passe you for his features.

V ij

8

The king to heare such tidings strange it thought,
As hauing still till that day kept the prize,
And with a deepe desire straight wayes he sought,
To know this man, and see him with his eyes:
In fine, with *Faustus* so far forth he wrought,
To bring him to his court he must deuise:
Although (quoth he) to bring my brother to it,
I shall be sure of worke enough to do it.

9

The cause is this, my brother neuer went
Foordth of the gates of Rome scant all his life,
And such small goods as Fortune hath him lent,
He hath enioyd in quiet, free from strife,
Left by our fire, and them he hath not spent,
Nor yet increast, his gaines are not so rife:
And he will thinke it more to go to Paui,
Then some would thinke toth' Indies in a Nauy.

10

But I shall finde it hardest when I proue,
To draw him from his louing wife away;
To whom he is so linkt in chaines of loue,
That all is vaine, if once his wife say nay:
But yet your grace is so far all aboue,
You shall command me, certes all I may.
Thanks (quoth the king) and addeth such reward,
As might haue moued any to regard.

11

Away he posts, arriuing in few dayes
At Rome, and to his brothers house he went,
And with such earnest words his brother prayes,
That to returne with him he doth consent:
Also his sisters loue he so allayes,
That she doth hold her peace, as halfe content,
Beside great thanks, laying before her eyes,
Preferments large, that hereof might arise.

12

Iocundo now resolu'd to go his way,
Gets men and horse against he should depart,
Sets forth himselfe with new and rich aray,
As still we see nature adorn'd by art.
His wife at night in bed, at boord by day;
With watric eyes to shew a sorrie hart,
Complaines his absence will so sore her grieue,
Till his returne she doubts she shall not liue.

13

Ay me, the thought (quoth she) makes me so fraid,
That scant the breath abideth in my brest;
Peace my sweete loue and life (*Iocundo* said)
And weepes as fast, and comforts her his best:
So may good fortune ay my iourney aid,
As I returne in threecore dayes at least:
Nor will I change the day I set thee downe,
No though the king would grāt me halfe his crowne

14

All this might not assuage this womans paine,
Two months were long, yea to to long she cries,
Needs must I die before you come againe,
Nor how to keepe my life can I deuise:
The dolefull dayes and nights I shall sustaine,
From meat my mouth, from sleepe will keepe mine
Now was *Iocundo* readie to repent, (eyes:
That to his brother he had giu'n consent.

15

About her necke a iewell rich she ware,
A crosse all set with stone in gold well tride,
This relicke late, a Boem Pilgrim bare,
And gaue her father other things beside:
Which costely things he kept with no small care,
Till comming from Ierusalem he dyde:
And her of all his goods his heire he makes,
This precious crosse to her goodman she takes.

16

And prayes him for her sake to weare that token,
And thinke on her: the man that was most kind,
Receiu'd it with more ioy then can be spoken,
Although he needed not be put in mind,
For why no time, nor no state sound nor broken,
Nor absence long, a meane should euer find,
To quayle his loue, not only while his breath
Maintains his life, but neither after death.

17

That verie night that went before the morrow,
That they had pointed surely to depart
Iocundos wife was sicke, and sounds for sorrow,
Amid his armes, so heauie was her hart:
All night they wake, and now they bid Godmorrow
And giue their last farewell, and so they part;
Iocundo on his way with all his traine,
His louing wife doth go to bed againe.

18

Scant had *Iocundo* rode two mile forthright,
But that his crosse, now came into his minde,
Which on his pillow he had laid last night,
And now for hast had left the same behinde:
He would deuise to scuse it if he might,
But no excuse sufficient could he finde:
But that his loue must needs be much suspected,
To finde the precious iewell so neglected.

19

When no excuse within his minde could frame,
But that all seemed friuolous and vaine;
To send his man, he counted it a shame,
To go himselfe it was but little paine:
He staid, and when his brother did the same,
Ride soft (quoth he) till I returne againe:
For home againe I must, there is no nay,
But I will ouertake you on the way.

20

Th' affaire is such as none can do but I,
But doubt you not, I will returne as fast;
Away he spurres as hard as he could hy,
Alone without or man or page, for hast:
Now had the sunnes new rising cleard the sky,
With brightest beames, ear he the streame had past,
He hies him home, and findes his wife in bed,
Full sound asleepe, such cares were in her hed.

21

He draws the curtaine softly without sound,
And saw that he would little haue suspected;
His chaste and faithfull yokefellow he found
Yokt with a knaue, all honestie neglected:
Th' Adulterer, though sleeping verie sound,
Yet by his face was easily detected:
A beggers brat, bred by him from his cradell,
And now was ryding on his masters sadell.

Now

22
Now if he stood amazd and discontent,
Beleeue it yee, to trie that would be loth;
For he that tries it, doubtlesse will repent,
As poore *Iocundo* did, who was so wroth,
That out he drew his sword, with iust intent,
For their vngratefull act to kill them both:
But lo, the loue he bare her, did withstand,
Against his heart, to make him hold his hand.

23
O ribald loue, that such a slaue couldst make,
Of one that now was subiect to thy force;
He could not breake her sleepe for pitties sake,
That brake all bonds of faith without remorse;
But back he goes before they did awake,
And from his house he gets him to his horse:
Loue so pricks him, and he so pricks his steed,
He ouertakes his companie with speed.

24
His looke is sad, all changed is his cheare,
Full heauie was his heart they well perceiued,
They see no cause of griefe, nor guesse they neare,
And they that guesse most likely are deceiued;
They thought he went to Rome, but you do heare
How at Cornetto he his hurt receiued:
Each man espide that loue procur'd that passion,
But none descride the manner nor the fashion.

25
His brother deemes that all his griefe doth grow,
Because his louing wife is left alone;
But he a cleane contrary cause doth know,
Her too much companie did cause his mone:
He bends his browes, his looks he casts alow,
With powring lips, and many a grievous grone;
In vaine doth *Faustus* comfort seeke to bring him,
For why he knowes not where the shoo doth wring
(him).

26
He giues a salve afore the sore is found,
His plaisters are as poison to the smart;
He seeks to heale, and wider makes the wound,
He names his wife, but her name kills his hart:
Gone was his tast, his sleeps do grow vnfound,
Nature decayth, and little helpeth art;
And that faire face that erst was of such fame,
Is now so chang'd, it seemeth not the same.

27
His eyes are sunke so deepe into his hed,
It made his nose seeme bigger then it should,
His flesh doth shrinke, his bones do seeme to spred,
He was so chang'd, as more cannot be told;
At last an agew makes him keepe his bed,
And bait at Innes more often then he would:
His faire complexion now is pale and withered,
Much like the Rose that yesterday was gathered.

28
With this mishap was *Faustus* sore aggriued,
Not onely for his brothers wofull state,
But fearing of his Prince to be reproued,
Vnto whole grace he vndertooke so late,
To shew the goodliest man, as he beleeued,
Now growne vncouth, by force of inward bate:
Yet as they could, their way they so contriued,
That at the last in Paue they arrived.

29
He would not straightway shew him to the King,
Lest eu'ry one might deeme his iudgement small,
But sent by letters notice of the thing,
And what mishap his brother was befall;
How scant aliue he could him thither bring,
A secret griefe so greatly did him gall,
And with an agew puld him downe so sore,
He seemd not now the man he was before.

30
And yet behold this noble King is glad,
That he is come, and meanes to make him cheare,
As if he were the dearest friend he had,
So sore he had desird to see him beare;
Nor would the worthy naturd Prince be sad,
In praise of beautie to haue found a Peare;
He knew *Iocundos* beautie had excelled,
But that by this disease it was expelled.

31
He placeth him to his owne lodging nie,
He visits him each day and eu'ry houre,
Great plentie of piousness he doth buy,
To welcome him he bendeth all his powre:
But still *Iocundo* languishing doth lie,
His wifes misdeeds makes all his sweet seeme sowre,
No songs, no sights, which oft he heard or saw,
One dram of this his dolour could withdraw.

32
Fast by his lodging was, amongst the rest,
A faire large roome, which very few did vse,
Here would he walke, as one that did detest
All pleasing sights, and comforts all refuse:
Here the wide wound he bare within his brest,
With thousand thoughts vnpleasant he renewes;
Yet here he found, which few would haue belieued,
A remedy for that which had him griued.

33
For at the vpper end of this old hall,
There was a place of windowes voyd, and light,
Saue that the lime new moulten from the wall,
Let in a litle beame that shined bright,
Here did he see, which some may thinke a tale,
A very strange and v unexpected sight,
He heard it not, but saw it in his vew,
Yet could he scant beleeue it should be trow.

34
For at the chinke was plainly to be seene,
A chamber hangd with faire and rich aray,
Where none might come, but such as trusty beene,
The Princesse here in part doth spend the day,
And here he saw a Dwarfie embrace the Queene,
And strue a while, and after homely play:
His skill was such, that ere they went asunder,
The Dwarfie was got aloft, and she lay vnder.

35
Iocundo standeth still as one amazed,
Supposing ture that he had seene a vision,
But seeing plaine when he a while had gazed,
It was an act, and not an apparition:
Good God (said he) are this Queenes eyes so dazed,
To loue a dwarfie, more worthy of derision?
Whose husband is a Prince of worthy fame,
So braue a man, such loue? now fie for shame.

36

He now began to hold his wife excused,
His anger now a little was relented:
And though that she her bodie had abused,
And to her seruant had so soone consented;
Not her for this, but he the sex accused,
That neuer can with one man be contented:
If all (quoth he) with one like staine are spotted,
Yet on a monster, mine was not besotted.

37

The day ensuing he returned thither,
And saw the dwarfe couragious still and iolly;
Eke he another day repaired hither,
And still he found the Queene committing folly:
He oft returnes, he finds them oft together,
They cease not worke, on dayes prophane nor holy:
Yea which was strange, the goodly Queen cōplained
That of the dwarfe she found she was disdained.

38

One day when in the corner he had stayd,
He sees her come all sad and malcontent,
Because the dwarfe his comming still delayd,
For whom of purpose twise before she sent,
Once more she sends, this answer brings the mayd,
Forsooth vnto his play he is so bent,
That for mistrust at Chesse to leese a shilling,
To come to you the apes face is not willing.

39

Iocundo, who before had still bene sad,
Vpon this sight became of better cheare;
The paines, the plaints, the cloudie stormes he had,
Away were blowne, the coast began to cleare:
Most ruddie faire he chearfull grew and glad,
That angellike his beantie did appeare,
So as the King and others thought it strange,
In so short time to find so great a change.

40

Now as the King desired much to know,
The meane whereby his hurt so soone was healed,
No lesse *Iocundo* did desire to show,
And would not haue the thing from him concealed,
So as his choller might no greater grow,
Then his had beene when as it were reuealed:
But first he made him sweare on his saluation,
Vpon the parties vse no castigation.

41

He made him sweare, for ought he heard or saw,
Wherewith his mind might fortune be diseased,
Yet from his choller so much to withdraw,
As that in shew he may not seeme displeased,
Nor punish it by might nor yet by law,
Nor first nor last, but hold himselfe appeased,
So as th' offenders might not haue suspected,
That their misdeeds were to his grace detected.

42

The King so sure, by oth so solemne bound,
As one that little thought his Queene so stained,
Iocundo first his owne griefe doth expound,
Why he so long so dolefull had remained,
And in whose aimes his owne wife he had found,
And how the griefe thereof so sore him pained,
Had not that salve vplought for bene applied,
Of that conceit no doubt he should haue died.

43

But lying in your highnesse house forlorne,
I saw (quoth he) that minisht much my mone;
For though it grieved me to weare a horne,
It pleased me well, I ware it not alone:
This said, he brought him where the wall was torne,
And shewd him that, that made his heart to grone,
For why the dwarfe did mannage with such skill,
Though she curuets, he keeps his stirrop still.

44

Much did the King this foule prospect mislike,
Beleeue my word I say, I need not sweare,
Horne wood he was, he was about to strike
All those he met, and his owne flesh to teare;
His promise to haue broken he was like,
If of his oth he had not had some feare;
But vnreuenged all must now be borne,
For on his *Agnus Dei* he had sworne.

45

Now to *Iocundo* gently he doth speake,
Good brother mine, aduise me what to do,
Sith I am bound by oth I may not wreake
The fact, with such reuenge as longs thereto;
Forsooth let's trie if others be as weake,
(*Iocundo* said) and make no more ado:
This was the counsell he did giue the King,
Into their order other men to bring.

46

We both are yong, and of such pleasing hew,
Not to be matcht with such another paire;
What she will be so obstinately true,
But will be wonne with youth, and being faire:
If youth and beantie both do misse their due,
The want herein our purses shall repaire:
Let vs not spare our beantie, youth and treasure,
Till of a thousand we haue had our pleasure.

47

To see strange countries placed farre apart,
Of other women eke to make some triall,
Will ease the paine that whilom pierst our hart,
And salue our sore, there can be no deniall:
The King that longd to ease his new found smart,
Consented straight, and to auoid espiall,
Himselfe, the Knight, two pages, and no mo,
Out of the Realme forthwith disguised go.

48

Away they past through Italy and France,
And though the Flemish and the English land,
And those whose beauties highest did aduance,
Those still they found most ready to their hand:
They giue, they take, so luckie is their chance,
They see their stocke at one stay still to stand:
Some must be woode forsooth they were so chaste,
And some there were that wooed them as fast.

49

In countries some a month or two they tarsied,
In some a weeke, in others but a day;
In all of them they find the women married,
Like to their wiues, too gentle to say nay:
At last, because they doubt to haue miscarried,
They meane to leaue this sport and go their way:
They found it full of danger and debate,
To keepe their standings in anothers gate.

They

*Journal satir
of one Iberna.
Vnus Iberna
vix sufficit
oculis illud,
Exorquetur ut
hac oculo con-
sensa su vno.*

*He calls him
other because
were, both of
societas.*

Sententia.

50
They do agree to take by common voyce, (both,
Some one whose shape and face may please them
In whom without suspect they might reioyce;
For wherefore (quoth the King) should I be loth,
To haue your selfe a partner in my choyce?
I must haue one, and I beleue for troth,
Among all women kind there is not one,
That can content her selfe with one alone.

51
But of some one, we two might take our pleasure,
And not inforce our selues beyond our ease,
But as they say, take meate and drinke, and leasure,
And by our doings, other not displease;
Well might that woman thinke she had a treasure,
That had vs two, her appetite to please;
And though to one man faithfull none remaine,
No doubt but faithfull they would be to twaine.

52
The Roman youth much praisd the Princes mind,
And to performe it, seemed very faine,
Away they posted as they had assignd,
By towne and citie, ouer hill and plaine,
Till at the last a pretie peece they find,
The daughter of an Inkeeper in Spaine,
A girle of person tall, and faire of fauour,
Of comely presence, and of good behauour.

53
She was new entring in the flower and pride,
Of those well pleasing youthfull yeares and tender,
Her father many children had beside,
And pouertie had made his portion slender;
And for them all vnable to prouide,
It made him soone consent, away to send her;
The price agreed, away the strangers carry her,
Because the father money wants to marry her.

54
In concord great she did with them remaine,
Who tooke their pleasure one and one by turne,
As bellows do, where *Vulcans* wonted paine,
By mutuall blast doth make the mettall burne:
Their meaning is, now they had traueld Spaine,
By *Siphax* realme to make their home returne;
And hauing left *Valenza* out of sight,
At faire *Zatiua* they did lodge at night.

55
The masters go abrode to view the towne,
And first the Churches for deuotions take;
And then the monuments of most renowne,
As trauellers a common custome take:
The girle within the chamber fate her downe,
The men are busied, some the beds do make,
Some care to dresse their wearid horse, and some
Make ready meate against their masters come.

56
In this same house the girle a Greeke had spide,
That in her fathers house a boy had beene,
And slept full often sweetly by her side,
And much good sport had passed them betweene;
Yet fearing lest their loue should be descride,
In open talke they durst not to be seene,
But when by hap the pages downe were gone,
Old loue renewd, and thus they talke thereon.

57
The Greeke demaunds her whither she was going,
And which of these two great estates her keeps?
She told them all, she needs no further woiing,
And how a night betweene them both she sleeps:
Ah (quoth the Greeke) thou tellest my vndoing,
My deare *Fiametta*, and with that he weeps; (thed: *Fiametta*.
With these two Lords wilt thou from Spain be bani-
Are all my hopes thus into nothing vanished?

58
My sweet designements turned are to sower,
My seruice long, finds little recompence;
I made a stocke according to my power,
By hoording vp my wages, and the pence
That guests did giue, that came in luckie hower,
I meant ere long to haue departed hence,
And to haue askt thy fires good will to marry thee,
And that obtaind, vnto a house to carry thee.

59
The wench of her hard fortune doth complaine,
And saith that now she doubts he sues too late:
The Greeke doth sigh and sob, and part doth faine,
And shall I die (quoth he) in this estate?
Let me enioy thy sweetnesse once againe,
Before my dayes draw to their dolefull date;
One small refreshing ere we quite depart,
Will make me die with more contented hart.

60
The girle with pittie moued, thus replies,
Thinke not (quoth she) but I desire the same;
But hard it is, among so many cies,
Without incurring punishment and shame,
Ah (quoth the Greeke) some meanes thou wouldst
If thou but felt a quarter of my flame, (deuise,
To meet this night in some conuenient place,
And be together but a little space.

61
Tush (answerd she) you sue now out of season,
For eu'ry night I lie betwixt them two,
And they will quickly feare and find the treason,
Sith still with one of them I haue to do.
Well (quoth the Greeke) I could refute that reason,
If you would put your helping hand thereto,
You must (said he) some pretie scule deuise,
And find occasion from them both to rise.

62
She first bethinks her selfe, and after bad
He should returne when all were sound asleepe,
And learned him, who was thereof right glad,
To go and come, what order he should keepe.
Now came the Greeke as he his lesson had,
When all was hush, as soft as he could creepe,
First to the doore, which opend when he pushed,
Then to the chamber, which was softly rushed.

63
He takes a long and leisurable stride,
And longest on the hinder foote he staid,
So soft he treds, although his steps were wide,
As though to tread on eggs he were afraid;
And as he goes, he gropes on either side,
To find the bed, with hands abroad displaid,
And hauing found the bottome of the bed,
He creepeth in, and forward go' th his head.

V iij

*Imitatio of Ouid
in 1. de fastis.
Surgit amans
animamque se-
mens, vestigia
furtim.
Sussensu digitum
fert taciturnam
gradu.*

64

Betweene *Fiametta's* tender thighes he came,
That lay vpright, as readie to receaue,
At last they fell vnto their merry game,
Embracing sweetly now to take their leaue;
He rode in post, ne can he baite for shame,
The beast was good, and would not him deceaue,
He thinks her pace so easie and so sure,
That all the night to ride he could endure.

65

Iocundo and the King do both perceaue
The bed to rock, as oft it comes to passe,
And both of them one error did deceaue,
For either thought it his companion was:
Now hath the Greeke taken his latter leaue,
And as he came, he back againe doth passe,
And *Phebus* beames did now to shine begin,
Fiametta rose and let the pages in.

66

Now with *Iocundo* gan the King to iest,
Brother (quoth he) I doubt we do you wrong,
It were more time for you to take your rest,
That haue this night a iourney rode so long.
Iocundo answers him againe in iest,
Oh for you do mistake, you sing my song;
Take you your ease, and much good do your grace,
That all this night haue rid a hunting pace.

67

I, quoth the King: I would in faith I sweare,
Haue lent my dog a course among the rest,
But that I found your selfe so busie were,
And rode so hard, you could not spare the beast.
Well (said the Knight) it seemeth me to beare,
Although you breake your promise and behest,
Yet priuie quips and taunts there needed none,
You might haue bid me let the wench alone.

68

One vrg'd so farre, the tother so replide,
That vnto bitter words their tongues were moued,
Scarce one forbore to say the tother lide;
And plaine to trie whole truth should be reproc'd,
They cald the girle, the matter to decide,
Who was afraid, as well it her behoued;
And she must tell, they standing face to face,
Which of them two deserued this disgrace.

69

Tell (quoth the King) with grim and angry sight,
Nor feare not him nor me, but tell vs true,
Which of vs two it was, that all this night
So gallantly performed all his due.
Thus either deeming he did hold the right,
They looked both, which should be found vntrue:
Fiametta lowly layd her selfe on ground,
Doubting to die because her fault was found.

70

She humbly pardon craves for her offence,
And that they pittie would her wofull case,
That she with pittie mou'd to recompence
His loue, that lasted had no little space,
And who it was, she told them, and of whence,
Had this ill luck in this vnluckie place,
How she had hop'd that though they hapt to wake,
Yet for his partner either would it take,

*Her guiltie con-
science made her
shinke the fault
found.*

71

The King and his companion greatly mused,
When they had heard the practise so detected,
And their conceits not little were confused,
To heare a hap so strange and vunexpected:
And though no two were euer so abused,
Yet had they so all wrathfull mind reiected,
That downe they lay, and fell in such a laister,
They could not see nor speake an houre after.

72

And when at last their stomachs and their eies
Waterd and ake, they laughed had so much,
Such shifts (quoth they) these women will deuise,
Do what we can, their chastitie is such:
If both our cares could not for one suffice,
That lay betwixt vs both, and did vs tuch,
If all our haire were eyes, yet sure they said,
We husbands of our wiues should be betraid.

73

We had a thousand women prou'd before,
And none of them denied our request,
Nor would and if we tride ten thousand more,
But this one triall passeth all the rest:
Let vs not then condemne our wiues so sore,
That are as chaste and honest as the best,
Sith they be as all other women be,
Let vs turne home, and well with them agree.

74

When on this point they both were thus resolved,
They gaue the Greeke, *Fiametta* for his wife,
And tide the knot that cannot be dissolued,
With portion large, to keepe them all their life:
Themselues went home, and had their sins absolued,
And take againe their wiues, and end all strife.
And thus mine Host the pretie storie ended,
With which he prayth them not to be offended.

75

The Pagan Prince, of whom I erst made mention,
Was pleased with this storie passing well,
And heard the same with heed and great attention,
And praised it, and said it did excell,
And swears he thought no wit nor no inuention,
No pen could write, no tongue attaine to tell,
By force of eloquence, or helpe of art,
Of womens trecheries the hundredth part.

76

But at the table sat another guest,
Of riper yeares, and iudgement more discreet,
Who such vntruths to heare could not digest,
And see their praises so trod vnder feet;
Wherefore his speech he presently addrest
Vnto his host, and said, we dayly meet
With slaunders, and with lying fables told,
And this is one, to say I dare be bold.

77

Nor thee, nor him that that told thee, trust I will,
No though in other things he gospell spake,
I dare affirme it well, that euill will,
Not any triall that him selfe could make,
Mou'd him of all the kind to speake so ill,
Belike for some one naughtie womans sake:
But he that would enter in womens praise,
On higher steps aloft his stile might raise.

But

78

But tell me now, if any one of you
That married are, haue not awrie yet stept
No scarfe a man, that hath not been vntrew,
And with some other woman hath not slept:
Nay that is more, they woo, they seeke, they sew,
They trie, they tempt those that be safest kept,
Yet women seeke not after men I ween,
(I meane not such as common harlots been.)

79

Surely the man on whom your tale you father,
Cannot himselfe, nor other men excuse,
Who still to take an vnkowne peece had rather,
Although there owne, were better far to chuse:
But if themselves were wood, I surely gather,
Such courtesies, they neuer would refuse,
But rather straine themselves beyond their might,
Such kindnes, with more kindnes to requite.

80

But be't some woman breaks chaste wedlocks laws,
And leaues her husband, and becomes vnchaste,
Yet commonly it is not without cause,
She sees her man, in sin his substance waste;
She feels that he, his loue from her withdraws,
And hath on some (perhap) lesse worthie plaste,
Who striks with sword, the scabberd she may strike,
And sure loue craueth loue, like asketh like.

81

Indeed in their behalfe, agree would I,
That all wiues that adulterie do commit,
Should by a law, condemned be to die,
If so their husbands guildes be of it.
But if that men vnpunisht walke awry,
Doubtles in fence and reason tis not fit,
The weaker sex should for this sin be vext,
Do as you would be done to, faith the text.

82

Yet when a man is bent to speake his worst,
That in despite he can of women say,
He calls them but incontinent and curst,
No greater fault, he to their charge can lay:
To rob, to spoile, houses to breake and burst,
Whole Cities, townes, and countries to betray,
Vsurie, murder, all such sinnes appeare,
Proper to men, women of them are cleare.

83

This said this graue wise man, and would haue told
Some storie to the same, his speech to verifie,
Of women that had liu'd till they were old,
Chastlie and vertuouslie, and with sinceritie,
But that the cruell Turke, did him behold,
With so grim looke as did the poore man terrifie,
And made him hold his peace with threats & terror,
Yet hating inwardly the Pagans error.

84

These brables ended, night on them did creep,
To rest they went hauing their bodies fed:
But Rodomont scant all the night could sleep,
For cares, that ran still in his troubled bed,
His vnkind mistres him doth waking keep,
She troubles him, whether he lye on bed,
Whether he go, or ride, or sit, or stand,
Whether it be, by water or by land.

85

But though himselfe could take but little rest,
Yet of his horse he takes no little care,
Both that he should be diligently drest,
And haue good prouander, to mend his fare:
To go by water now he thought it best,
Himselfe to ease, and his good horse to spare,
That horse he gat, as he might iustlie vant,
Spite of Rogero, and of Sacrapant.

86

He takes a barke, and downe the pleasant streame
Of Sonna he doth passe, with winde and ore,
Great hast he makes, to get to his owne Reame,
But changing place doth helpe him neare the more;
In sleepe, of her vnkindnes he doth dreame,
A wake, he sighs and still renews the sore:
To talke was best, and yet not much the better,
Say what he list, yet cannot he forget her.

87

Anoyd by bote, againe he taking land,
Vienna, Lions, and Valenza past,
(All which then were in Agamantes hand,
His late good hap, had to them all agast:
To Aquamort, he turns on his right hand,
And thence he will to Algier turne in hast,
And in his way, his iourney to abridge,
He past Auignon, at the sumptuous bridge.

88

Not far from Mompeliet a towne he saw,
Of Bacchus, and of Ceres well beloued,
Though then so spoild by souldiers that for aw,
The dwellers all, themselves fro thence remoued:
Also there was a Church for Christen law,
But yet the Priests (in this to be reprobud)
To saue themselves, their Church had quite forsaken,
So as the same by Rodomont was taken.

89

This seat this place, did so the Pagan please,
That here he minds to make his firme abode;
For of the one side, he might see the seas,
On tother side, the ground with corne well lode:
Here all prouisions he might finde with ease,
Here he doth cause his men his stuffe vnloade,
And makes that Church (oh horrible abuse)
Serue him, to his profane vngodly vse.

90

Now standing pensieue, in this pleasing place,
As still he vld, he saw a Ladie faire,
(Though mourning, yet most full of pleasing grace) *Isabella.*
Who with a fire, made thither her repaire:
A goodly horse, they led a soft slow pace,
And as they went, he taught her many a praire:
That horse did beare a coffin on his backe,
All ouerspred in mourning sort, with blacke.

91

Me thinke by this description you may guesse,
Who this same Frire, and who this damieil is,
Yet for more plainesse sake, I will expresse
Her name, lest any may the matter misse:
Twas *Isabella*, who did late profess,
That state that leadeth strait to heau'nlie blisse,
He was the Frire, that to that mind conuerted her,
When as dispaire, had almost quite subuerted her.

*Horace xvi.
Ode 2 booke.
Quid terras alio
cadentes sole man-
tamus? patria
quae exul. Se
quoque fugis.
Scandis aras
vatisa naves
cura: nec turmas
equum relin-
quis.*

*That is to say,
slored with
corne and wine.*

Christianitie.

*Quid scilicet.
Vr, male diffi-
mulari scilicet illa
capit.*

Sententia.

Sententia.

91

Within the mourning coffin was enclosed,
His corse, whom she so lou'd aliue and dead,
And though to griefe she seemed all disposed,
Though all in blacke, she went from foot to head,
Yet in that wofull shew there was disclosed,
So worthie grace, as in the Pagan bred
A fancie, mouing such an alteration,
As made him change his first determination.

93

For where before he did dispraise and scorne
All women, now againe he doth commend
That sex, that doth indeed the world adorne:
His second loue to place he doth intend
On this, sith that his first hath him forlorne;
Here now he hopeth all his wo to end,
And with this passion to driue out the tother,
As men do driue out one naile with another.

*Semile.
Clasum clasum
pellis.*

94

And straight in mildest manner that he can,
Saluting her, he askt what cauld her paine?
And she the wofull tale to tell began,
How her true loue by *Mandricard* was slaine,
For whose sake she would neuer marrie man,
But serue God all her life that doth remaine.
The Pagan laughs at that the damsell saith,
As one that knows no God, and hath no faith.

Morall.

In Iocundo and Astolfo both, may be noted the vanitie of beautie in men, and how weak a protection it is, against the blow that neuer smarteth, as some haue termed it. Furder, in Iocundos wife, that after all the great protestations of kindnesse, was taken in bed with his man, we may note the fraud as well as frailtie, of some of that sexe. In Fiametta, that lying between a king and a knight, tooke vp a Tapster into her bed, I cannot tell what to note, but that which Ouid saith.

Non caret effectu, quod voluere duo.

Nought can restraine, consent of twaine.

In the Queene of Lombardie, that bestowed her loue so basely, we may see that no state nor degree is priuiledged from shame and slander, except vertue and grace from aboue, do keepe them from such enormous offences. Further we may see it is a verie desperat enterprise, to thinke by any restraint, to keepe an vnchast woman from putting in practise her lewd desires. Lastly the defence of women, by the graue wise man, too truly proueth, that though many women are bad, yet many men are worse, and therefore if euery one would mend one (as the Prouerbe saith) all shal be mended. And as for Rodomonts new loue, it shewes that no passiō grows so strong by accident, to remoue & take away a natural disposition.

Allusion.

Historie nor Allegorie, nor scant any thing that is good, can be picked out of this bad booke: but for Allusions they come in my mind so plentifully, as I can scant tell how to make an end when I am once entred into them: Onely I will touch one or two, (to fill vp this page withall) that allude to that point of Iocundos patience, in leauing the adulterer unpunished, and his wife reprobred, taking her in so shamefull an act. As I haue heard of one of honest calling (But namelesse he, for blamelesse he must be) that finding one in bed with his wife, and seeing evidently, that she had plaid false at tables, and borne a man to many, drew out his dagger resolutely, and sware a great oth, that if he had not bin his verie friend, he would at least haue killed him: and when he had done he put vp his dagger againe, and went about some other businesse. Another, hearing one was newly gone out of his house, that had done that for him, which no bodie desires to do by a deputie, tooke his sword and his buckler and followed in a great rage, and hauing ouertaken him, laid adultery to his charge: the man so hotly pursude, and so hardly charged, confessed it was true: with which the tother (being fully satisfied, as it seemed with his honest confession) left him, swearing if he had denied it, he would not so haue put it vp.

95

And greatly he her good intent controlld,
Affirming her to merit as great blame,
As doth the miser, that hoords vp his gold,
And neither doth himselfe imploy the same,
And yet from those that would, doth it withhold:
So shut not vp your selfe (quoth he) for shame;
Fierce Lions, Bears, and serpents that haue stings,
Should be shut vp, not faire and harmlesse things.

96

The godly Frire, that tooke no little care,
Lest this ill speech might turne her to small good,
With new exhortings, bad her to be ware,
That such intisements strongly be withstood:
And for that end, forthwith he doth prepare,
A sumptuous messe of ghostly inward tood:
But this vile Pagan did no sooner tast it,
But vp againe, his squemish stomacke cast it.

97

And seeing that the speeches of this Frire,
(Whō he could make by no means hold his peace)
Seemd greatly to contrarie his desire;
Wrath kindled, and at last did so increafe,
That this poore priest gat but a sorie hire.
But heare a while my storie now shall cease,
Lest my mishap or punishment be such,
As was this Priests, for talking ouermuch.

Here end the notes of the xxviii. booke.



JOSEPH ISABELLA

THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Isabell, to loose her head is glad,
To saue her chastitie from Pagans might:
To pacifie her ghost, the Pagan sad,
Doth make a bridge at which fals many a knight:
Orlando commeth thither, being mad,
And in the water both together light.
From thence the madman onward still proceeds,
And by the way doth strange and monstrous deeds.*



O thoughts of men, vncon-
stant and vnstable,
As subiect vnto chaunge,
as Westerne wind,
In al designments fond, and
variable,
But chiefly those, that loue
breeds in the mind:
Lo he that late deuild all
he was able,

To slander and deface all women kinde,
Yet now with them whom he so fore reuild,
Eu'n on the sudden he is reconcild.

Indeed (most noble Dames) I am so wroth,
With this vile Turke, for this his wicked sin,
For speaking so great slander and vntroth,
Of that sweet sex, whose grace I faine would win,
That till such time, he shall confesse the troth,
And what a dammed error he was in:
I shall him make be so in conscience stoung,
As he shall teare his flesh and bite his toung.

But with what folly he was then possessed,
The sequell of the matter plaine doth show;
For he that yesterday himselfe professed,
To all the kind, a sworne and open foe:
Now to this stranger, one in state distressed;
Whose birth, whose kin, whose name he doth not
Wlth one small glance, & sober cast of ey, (know,
Was so enthralld, he woos her by and by.

And as new fancie doth his heart inflame,
So to new speech it doth his tongue direct,

A new discourse, new reasons he doth frame,
With great perswasions, but to small effect:
For still the godly Frire refutes the same,
Exhorting her such speeches to neglect,
And fast to hold her purpose good and holly
Of seruing God, and leauing worldly folly.

He saith the way of death is large and spacious,
But that to life is straight and full of paine.
But *Rodomont* that saw him so audacious,
In spite of him this doctrine to maintaine,
Steps to him, and with hand and tongue vngracious,
First bids him get him to his cell againe,
Then his long beard, growne on his aged chin,
All at one pull, he pillesh from the skin.

And so farre forth his wrath and furie grew,
He wrings his necke, as pincers wring a naile,
And twise or thrise about his head him threw,
As husbandmen that thresh, do tosse a flaile:
Reports most diuers afterwards ensue,
But which be true, and which of truth do faile,
Is hard to say: some say he was so battered,
That all his limbs about a rocke were scattered.

Some say that to the sea he hurled him,
Though diuerse furlongs distant from the place,
And that he dide, because he could not swim:
Some others tell, some saint did him that grace,
To saue his life, and heale each broken lim,
And to the shore did bring him in short space.
The likelihood hereof, who list may way,
For now of him, I haue no more to say.

Thus

8
Thus cruell Rodomont that had remoued
The babling Frire that did him so much spight,
The fearfull damfels loue to win he proued,
By all kind words and gestures that he might;
He cald her his deare heart, his sole beloued,
His ioyfull comfort, and his sweet delight,
His mistresse and his goddesse, and such names,
As louing knights apply to louely dames.

9
Her reasons he doth curteously confute,
(Loue soone had made him such a learned clarke)
In phrases mannerly he moues his sute,
And still his sute was leueld at one marke,
And though he might by force haue pluckt the frute,
Yet for that time he doth but kisse the barked:
He thinks it will more sweet and pleasing make it,
If she do giue him leaue before he take it.

10
Wherefore a while he is content to pawse,
In hope by time to win her loue and grace:
She deems her selfe like mouse in cats sharpe clawes,
In strangers hands, and in as strange a place;
She sees he feard not Gods, nor humane lawes,
Nor had no pittie of her wofull case,
That onely for his lust would her perswade,
To breake the vow that she to God had made.

11
Her heart and eyes, oft times to heau'n she lifts,
And prayes the blessed Virgin and her Sonne,
To saue her from this Pagans filthy drifts,
That vnto her no villanie be donne:
She doth bethinke her of an hundred shifts,
How she his beastly lust may safely shunne,
That like an open gulf on her did gape,
So as it seemd vnpossible to scape.

12
She finds out many scuses and delays,
That to prolong, which faine she would preuent,
Sometime in humble manner him she prayes,
That to release her he would be content:
But being still repulst at all assayes,
At last she doth a way and meanes inuent,
Not onely how to shun that present shame,
But merit to her selfe eternall name.

13
Vnto the cruell Turke that now began
From all good course of curtesie to swarte,
She commeth in the meekest sort she can,
And saith, if he her honor will preferue,
(Which is the part of each true valiant man)
She would of him that fauour well deserue,
And giue him such a gift as in due measure,
Should farre surpasse this momentarie pleasure.

14
But if you needs will me desfloure, I wis
(She said) when you haue done you will repent,
To thinke how fondly you haue done amisse,
And lost that might haue bred you true content:
As for your carnall loue, you need not misse
More faire then I, and fitter for your bent,
But in ten thousand, one you shall not know,
That such a gift vpon you can bestow.

15
I know (quoth she) an herbe, and I haue scene
A little since the place where as it grew,
That boild vpon a fire of cypresse cleene,
And mixt with elder berries and with rew;
And after strained harmlesse hands betweene,
Will yeeld a iuyce, that who in order dew,
Annoint therewith, shall neuer damage feele,
By flame of fire, nor yet by dint of Steele.

16
I say if one therewith annoint him thrise,
These strange effects thereof will strait ensue,
Prouided alwayes that in any wise
He must each month the liquors strength renew:
I haue the way to make it in a trice,
And you shall see by prooffe that it is true;
This thing I thinke should ioy you more to gaine,
Then if you conquerd had all France or Spaine.

17
And now for my reward of you, I pray
Let me obtaine this fauourable meed,
To sweare that you henceforth will not assay
My chastitie, by either word or deed:
Full Rodomont thinks this a blessed day,
And hopes he now shall neuer armor need,
And sweares he will her honour safe defend,
Though to performe it he doth not intend.

18
Yet till she might this worke bring to effect,
He doth himselfe against his mind inforce,
And that she might no violence expect,
He doth not offer any signe of force:
But that once done, his oth he will neglect,
For of an oth he neuer had remorse;
But specially he thought it least disgrace,
His oth to violate in such a case.

19
He makes to her a solemne protestation,
And with most damned oaths the same doth bind,
That he will neuer do her molestation,
It she procure a iuyce of such a kind:
This sinkes so deepe in his imagination,
Of Cygnus and Achilles runs his mind,
For by this meanes he doth himselfe assure,
Such priuiledge as they had to procure.

20
Poore Isabella glad of this delay,
By which a while her chastitie she shields,
Receiuing this his promise, go'th straightway
To seeke these herbs amid the open fields,
In eu'ry bank and groue, and hedge and way,
She gathers some, such as the country yeelds;
And all the while the Pagan walketh by,
And to the damsell casteth still an eye.

21
And least she should want cypresse wood to burne,
He with his sword cuts downe whole cypresse trees,
And in all other things to serue her turne,
That each thing may provided be he sees:
Now with her herbs she made her home returne,
The caldrons are on fire (no time to leese)
She boyles and perboyles all those herbs and flowres,
In which he thought there were such hidden powres.

Looke in the
Allusion.

They are sayd to
haue bene so in-
charmed that
they could feele
no paine of fire
nor Steele.

22
At all these ceremonies he stands by,
And what she doth he many times doth looke,
The smoke and beate at last him made so dry,
That want of drinke he could no longer brooke,
Greeke wines there were, and those he doth apply,
Two firkins late from passengers he tooke,
He and his men by drinking both that night,
Their heads full heauie made, their hearts full light.

23
Though by their law they are forbidden wine,
Yet now that here they did the liquor taste,
They thought it was so sweet and so diuine,
That Nectar and that Manna farre it past:
At that restraint they greatly do repine,
That did debar them of so sweet repast,
And at their owne law and religion lassing,
They spend that night carowling and in quaffing.

24
Now had faire Isbell finisht that confection,
Which this grosse Pagan doth beleue to be,
Against both Steele and fire a safe protection:
Now sir (she said) you shall the triall see,
And that you may be sure that no infection
Is in these drugs, you first shall proue by me,
I shall you shew thereof so perfect triall,
As you shall see the prooffe past all deniall.

25
My selfe (quoth she) mind first to take the say,
That you may see I do not faine nor lie,
Then after on your selfe you proue it may,
When you haue made a witness of your eye:
Now therefore bid your men to go away,
That none be present here but you and I,
And thus, as with her selfe she had appointed,
Her neck and breasts, and shoulders she annointed.

26
Which done, in chearefull sort she open layd
Her naked necke before the beastly Turke,
And bad him strike, for she was not afraid,
She had such skill and trust in this rare worke:
He vnaduid, and haply ouerlayd
With wine, that in his idle braine did worke,
Was with her speech so vndiscreetly led,
That at one blow he quite cut off her head.

27
The head where loue and all the graces dwelt;
By heedlesse hand is from the bodie seuered,
Alas whose heart at such hap could not melt?
Yea that is more, the head cut off endeuered
To shew what pleasure of her death she felt,
And how she still in her first loue perseuered:
Thrice from the floore the head was scene rebound,
Thrice it was heard *Zerbino's* name to sound.

28
His name to whom so great loue she did beare,
As she to follow him would leaue her life,
To whom tis hard to say if that she were
A truer widow or a kinder wife;
O soule that didst not death nor danger feare,
(A sample in these latter times not rare)
To saue thy chastitie and vowed truth,
Eu'n in thy tender yeares and greenest youth.

29
Go soule, go sweetest soule for euer blest,
So may my verse please those whom I desire,
As my poore Muse shall euer do her best,
As farre as pen can paint, and speech aspire,
That thy iust praises may be plaine exprest
To future times. Go soule to heauen or hyer;
And if my verse can graunt to thee this chartir,
Thou shalt be cald of chastitie the Martir.

30
At this her deed so strange and admirable,
He that aboue all heau'ns doth ay remaine,
Lookt downe, and said it was more commendable
Then hers for whom *Tarquinio* lost his raigne.
And straight an ordinance inuiolable,
Ay to be kept on earth he doth ordaine,
And thus he said, eu'n by my selfe I swear,
Whose powre, heau'n, earth, sprites, men and Angels
(feare,

31
That for her sake that dide of this name last,
Who euer shall hereafter beare that name,
Shall be both wise and continent and chaste,
Of faultlesse manners, and of spotlesse fame,
Let writers strue to make their glorie last,
And oft in prose and verse record the same,
Let Hellicon Pindus, Parnassus hill,
Sound *Isabella*, *Isabella* still.

32
Thus said the Hy'st, and then there did ensue
A wondrous calme in waters and in aire,
The chaste soule vp into the third heau'n flew,
Where *Zerbin* was, to that she did repaire:
Now when the beastly Turke saw plaine in view,
How he had prou'd himselfe a woman's layre,
When once his drunken surfet was digested,
He blam'd himselfe and his owne deed detested.

33
In part to satisfie for this offence,
And to appease her ghost as twere in part,
Although he thought no pardon could dispence,
Not punishment suffice for such desert:
He vowes a monument of great expence,
Of costly workmanship and cunning art,
To raise for her, nor minds he to go furdur,
Then that selfe church where he had done *his* murder.

34
Of that selfe place he minds her tombe to make,
And for that cause he gets of workmen store,
For loue, for mony, and for terrors sake,
Six thousand men he set to worke and more;
From out the mountaines massie stones they take,
With which wel wrought, & hewd, & squared therefore
With hie and stately arch that church he couers,
And in the midst intombs the blessed louers.

35
And ouer this was raised with curious sleight,
A Pyramid, a huge and stately towre,
Which towre an hundred cubit had in heigh,
By measure from the top vnto the flowre;
It seemd a worke of as great charge and weight,
As *Adrian* made, to boist his wealth and powre,
Of goodly stones, all raised in seemly ranks,
Vpon the edge of stately Tybris banks.

Now

Isabella
now of chastitie

A prophesie
all things shall
beare the name
of *Isabella*

Moses *Adrian*
now called *Colosseum*
Saint *Angelo*
in Rome

36

Now when this goodly worke was once begunne,
He makes a bridge vpon the water by,
That of great depth and force did euer runne,
In former time a ferrie there did lye,
For such as would a further circuit shunne,
And passe this way more easie and more nye;
The Pagan takes away the ancient ferrie,
And leaues for passengers, nor bote, nor wherrie.

37

But makes a bridge where men to row are wont,
And though the same were strögg, & of great length,
Yet might two horses hardly meet a front,
Nor had the sides a raile or any strength,
Who comes this way he meanes shall bide a bront,
Except he haue both corage good and strength,
For with the armes of all that this way come,
He means to bewtifie faire *Isbels* toome.

38

A thousand braue Atchieuements he doth vow,
Wherewith he will adorne this stately worke,
From whom he taketh all these spoiles or how,
He cares not whether Christian or Turke.
Now was the bridge full finished, and now
His watchmen on each side in corners lurke,
To make him know when any one comes neare,
For all that come, he means shall buy it deare.

39

And further his fantaſlike braine doth thinke,
That ſith by drinking wine he did that fin,
In lieu thereof he now would water drinke,
As oft as by miſhap he ſhould fall in:
For when he ſhould vnto the bottome ſinke,
The top would be an ell aboue his chin,
As who ſhould ſay, for eu'rie euill action
That wine procures, were water ſatisfaction.

40

Ful many there arriued in few days,
Some men, as in the way from Spaine to France,
Some others fondly thirſting after prayſe,
In hope by this exploit their names t'aduance,
But *Rodomont* doth meet them both the ways,
And ſuch his vallew was ſo good his chance,
That ſtill as many men as there arriues,
Loſt all of them their arms, and ſome their liues.

41

Among the many priſners that he tooke,
All thoſe were Chriſtians to *Algyre* he ſent,
And willd his men ſafely to them to looke,
Be cauſe ere long himſelfe to come he ment:
The reſt, ſaue that their armors they forſooke,
All harmeleſſe backe into their countries went:
Now while ſuch feats were by the Pagan wrought,
Orlando thither came of wits beſtraught.

42

At that ſame inſtant that *Orlando* came,
Was *Rodomont* all armed ſaue his hed,
The naked Earle with wits quite out of frame,
Leaps ou'r the bar, and went (as folly led)
To paſſe the bridge, the Pagan him doth blame,
For his preſumption, and withall he ſed,
Stay ſawcy villen, proud, and vndiſcreet,
For ſuch as thee, this paſſage is not meet.

43

For Lords and knights and ſquyres of good eſtate,
This bridge was built, and not for thee thou beaſt:
He that no ſence had in his idle pate,
Not heeding what was ſaid ſtill onward preſt:
I muſt (the Pagan thinks) this fools pride bate,
It ſeems belike he thinks I am in iſt,
And thereupon he makes the madman towards,
And minds to drowne him, ſith he was ſo frowards.

44

He little lookt to find a match ſo hard,
Now while they two together gan to ſtrive,
Behold a gallant dame of great regard,
At that ſame bridge by fortune did arriue,
Faire *Fiordeliege*, that late before had hard,
How loue did of his wits this Earle depriue:
She hither came to ſeeke out *Brandimart*,
That now in Paris was with penſiue hart.

45

And thus this Ladie (as before I told)
Came at that ſeaſon to this dangerous place,
And knew this Earle, when ſhe did him behold,
And wonderd much to ſee him in ſuch caſe:
Now held *Orlando* with his foe hard hold,
In vaine the Pagan ſtrives him to diſplace,
And grinning, to himſelfe he ſaid at length,
Who could haue thought, a foole had had ſuch
(ſtrength?)

46

And ſetting that he had his purpoſe miſt,
He doth by ſleight the madmans force aſſay,
Sometime he puts his hand below his twiſt,
Sometime aboue, ſometime another way:
Orlando ſtands vnmoũd, do what he liſt;
The Pagan ſeemd to do by him that day,
As doth the Beare, that would dig vp the tree,
From whence ſhe fell, but ſees it will not be.

Simile.

47

Orlando full of force, though void of ſence,
About the middle tooke the Pagan faſt,
And heaues him vp from ground, & ſo from thence,
Into the ſtreame himſelfe he backward caſt:
Vnto the bottome both do ſinke, from whence
Each one was glad to get him in great haſt,
Orlando nakd and light, ſwam like a fiſh,
So that he ſoone gat out as he would wiſh.

48

And being out, away he ſtraight doth runne,
Nor tarries he to heare, or to expect,
If men do blame or praife that he had donne,
But follows on his former courſe direct:
This while the Pagan dranke nye halfe a tunne
Of water, ere he could himſelfe erect,
And hardly he elcaped being drownd,
So heaue armd, and in place ſo profound.

49

Now, while the Pagan ſwimmeth for his life,
Faire *Fiordeliege* with ſad and penſiue hart,
A liuely patterne of a vertuous wiſe,
Doth ſearch the ſepulcher for *Brandimart*,
She tooke her time while they fell fiſt at ſtriſe,
And vp and downe ſhe lookt in eu'rie part,
But here ſhe finds nor arms nor yet his mantell,
Nor meets with ſuch as of him tydings can tell.

X ij

Mantell is a ve-
ſtment of ſolemn
mourne worn by
Princes.

*He returns to
Ferdinande in
the 31. booke,
stasse 36. and
after againe
stasse 51.*

50 But leaue we her awhile thus mourning sad,
And seeking him each where saue where he was,
And tell we now what hap Orlando had,
And what strange feats his furie brought to passe,
You might perchance beleue that I were mad,
If none of his mad pranks I ouerpasse.
Which were so strange, and in so great a number,
As you to heare, and me to tell would cumber.

51 I onely shall some few of those recite,
As to my present purpose shall pertaine:
The madman westward held his course forthright,
Straight to the hils that seuer France fro Spaine,
He seldome bayts, but trauels day and night,
So much he was distemperd in his braine,
And by the mountaines side as he did passe,
He met two young men driuing of an asse.

52 This asse they hoden had with clefts of wood,
Fast bound vpon his burden bearing backe;
They seeing one runne nakt as he were wood,
Amid their way, they cride, hoe sirra backe,
But he makes answer neither bad nor good,
For sence and vnderstanding he did lacke,
But with his foote, the poore asse he so spurned,
That both his lode and him he ouerturned.

53 He tost him like a football vp on hy,
Whence downe he fell and brake his necke with it;
Then at the men he doth with furie fly,
Of which the tone had better hap then wit,
For downe the rocke the tone leapt by and by,
Deep threescore yards, and by the way did hit,
Vpon a banke of furze, growne in the place,
And scapt with onely scratching of his face.

54 The tother that of feare like passion feels,
Did thinke to clammer vp vpon the rocke,
But straight Orlando takes him by the heels,
And puls him downe and beats him like a stocke,
As fishers vse to beat their sliding Eels,
And eu'n as fawlkners teare some time a cocke,
To giue vnto their hawks their intrals warme,
So he tears leg from leg, and arme from arme.

*Smile.
Smile.*

*Stupendious, that
is to say wonder-
full.*

*Vast, that is to
say huge or
great.*

*Two sonnes in
Spaine heate
the sea.*

55 These same and other like, stupendious deeds,
He put in practise while those hils he past,
Eu'n such as speech and credit all exceeds,
His fits so furious were, his strength so vast:
So far vnto the westward he proceeds,
That to the sea, he now was come at last,
Eu'n to the sandie shoars of Tarracona,
That leadeth right the way to Barcellona.

56 Vpon those sands (such was his mad conceat)
He purposed with himselfe a house to build,
And being noyed with the parching heat,
He thinks with sand his skin thereto to shild:
Straight with his hands he digs him out a seat,
And though the oes his bodie all defild,
Yet with that mould his members all he couered,
That nothing but his head could be discouered.

*Oes is the moulde
that the tyde
leaueth behind
on the banks.*

57

Now as he lay halfe burid in the sand,
(For saue his head, the rest was all vnseen,)
There thither came, as in their way by land,
Medoro with Angelica his Queen,
She not aware what in her way did stand,
(Of her lorne louers boasting then I ween)
Came vnto him so neare and on such soden,
That vpon him her horse had welny troden.

58

But seeing straight vp start a naked man,
The sight did her greatly amaze and fright,
She knows him not, nor guesse at him she can,
She thinketh sure, he is some hellish spright:
Rough griffy heard, eyes staring, visage wan,
All parcht, and sunne burnd, and deformd in fight,
In fine he lookt (to make a true description)
In face like death, in cullor like a Gyptian.

Smile.

59

But she at this strange sight (as erst I said)
Did gallop thence as fast as she could ride,
And screeching lowd, she crieth out for aid,
Vnto Medoro her beloued guide:
The mad Orlando was not ill apaid,
When such a prettie damzell he had spide:
Though he no knowledge nor remembrance had,
How this was she, for whom he first fell mad.

60

Yet, as delighted with her pleasing hew,
And liking well to see so faire a face,
With great desire he straight doth her pursew,
Eu'n as a hound the feartull Doe doth chase,
Medoro mou'd herewith, his rapier drew,
And after this mad fellow rides apase,
And with his horse he thinketh downe to tred him,
And with his blade he thinketh to behed him.

61

But by effect, contrariwise he found,
That he without his host his reckning made,
The madman shrinketh not an inch of ground,
And his bare skin was harder then the blade,
Yet sodenly when as the madman found,
That one behinde his backe did him inuade,
He turnd and with his fist so smote the horse,
As made him ly on ground a senselesse corse.

62

And in a trise he backe againe doth goe,
To catch Angelica who spurrs with speed,
And thinketh still her palfreys pale too floe,
For such a turne, and so it was indeed,
For had it gone like arrow from a boe,
It hardly could haue holpe her at this need;
At last her onely hope was in the ring,
For now to helpe her was none other thing.

63

The ring that neuer faild her at her need,
Did make her now to vanish out of sight,
But whether that it were for want of heed,
Or that the sodainenesse did her affright,
Or that her beast did founder with the speed,
Or that she did determine to alight,
Of all thete which it was I cannot tell,
But topsie turvie from the beast she fell.

Had

64

Had she false shorter, or on tother side,
In likelihood the madman had her caught,
Which if he had, she doubtles should haue dide,
But great good fortune her deliuerie wrought:
But now another beast she must prouide,
For this another pafe will soone be taught,
Orlando still doth her pursue so fast,
That needs he must ou'rget her at the last.

65

As for *Angelica* I take no care,
I know that she a beast long will not lacke,
But rather steale one, as she did that Mare,
That now in madmans hands will suffer wracke.
To follow her *Orlando* doth not spare,
Till he her stayd and lept vpon her backe,
Then gallopt he as long as she was able,
And lets her rest in neither field nor stable.

66

Vntill at last in leaping ou'r a ditch,
The poore Mare put her shoulder out of ioynt,
He with his fall, tooke neither ach nor stich,
Nor of the brule he passeth not a poynt;
Nor seeketh he for turpentine or pitch,
The poore beasts brused members to annoynt,
Though he might see with this fall he had mard her,
Yet faine he would, she should haue borne him far-

67

At last on his owne shoulder her he laid,
And bare her so about an arrow shoot,
But feeling then that she too heauie waid,
He leadeh her and lets her go on foot,

She limping follows him, and still he said:
Come on, come on, but little did it bode,
At last to make her, her slow pace to alter,
About his right leg he doth her halter.

68

And tels her now with ease she follow may,
And so to harry her he doth begin,
The sharpe stones lying in the rugged way,
Fret of her haire, and afterward the skin,
The beast misused thus, liues scarce a day:
Orlando hath her tyde vnto his shinne;
He sees not, nor he knows not she is ded,
But on he draws her as his furie led.

69

And sure he would haue seru'd her such a tuch,
I meane his mistres, if he could haue taught her,
Had not the vertue of that ring beene such,
As how to walke inuisible it taught her:
Ah cursed be that ring, and curst as much
Be he that so vnluckily it brought her,
Else sure *Orlando* had reuenged then,
Her often wrongs, to him and other men.

70

Yet why wish I this curse on her alone?
I would the like might hap to all the kinde,
For in a thousand good there is not one,
All be so proud, vnthankfull and vnkinde,
With flintie hearts, carelesse of others mone,
In their owne lusts carrid most headlong blinde,
But more herein to speake I am forbidden,
Some time for saying truth one may be chidden.

*Ouid de arte am.
Fallite fallentes
ex magna parte
profundum sunt
genus.*

*Veritas odium
parit. Terence.*

*Quantum
virescit
sapientia.*

Morall.

In the death of *Isabella* is a notable example of chastitie, which I must confesse I haue indououred to set forth to the vttermost of my poore skill, of a speciall loue and reuerence I bare to the name, hauing had an *Isabell* to my mother, and such an *Isabell*, as if nature did not make me to partiall a praiser, I would boldly affirme (both for the honorable place she liued in, and for the vertuous sort she dyed in) to be worthie to whom the prophetic in the 31. staffe of this 29. booke may be worthily applyed: As a better pen then mine, approued by this made Epitaph and intiled in this sort:

A true report of mistres *Isabell* Harington, sometime of her Maiesties priue chamber, written by a credible person that was well acquainted with her conditions.

Abody chaste, a vertuous mind, a temperat tongue, an humble hart,
Secret and wise, faithfull and kind, true without guile, milde without art,
A frend to peace, a foe to strife, a spotlesse maid, a matchlesse wife.

And thus much for the name of *Isabella*. In *Rodomont* we may see effects of inconstancie, sensualitye and drunkenness, all which end (for the most part) in fruitles repentance.

Historie.

Whereas this fact of *Isabella* is preferred before that of *Lucretia*, who killed herselfe after she was deflowered, I thinke that no man can iustly make any comparison betweene them, for the storie, I will not stand long vpon to recite it being so well knowne, but refer the studious reader, either to *Liuius* who writes it in prose very faithfully, or to *Ouid de Fastis*, where it is also recorded verie Poetically and passionatly.

Quid faciat, pugnet: vincetur forma pugnans;
Clamet: at in dextra qui vetet ensis erat.
Aufugiat: positus vrgentur pectora palmis,
Tum primum externa pectora tacta manu.

Allegoric.

Some perhaps will picke a prettie Allegorie in the confection that *Isabella* made, and in deed it is a prettie receit, if it be well marked: It is in the 15. staffe: an herbe, which she named not, (suppose it to be trettifollie or prettiffolly) mingled with elder berries and rew, (which may signifie sage counsel and repentance) and strained between harmles hands, which betokens innocencie, boyled on a fire of Cypres, which the ancient Romanes vsed at funerals, and therefore may be taken either for death, or persecution, or martyrdome: this confection vsed in due order will be a good Antidoton or medicine, against fire and sword: vnder which is signified, all the perils and aduersities of the world.

Allusion.

The death of *Isabella* alludeth, or in deed is meerly taken from the like example of one *Bratilla* of *Durazzo*, that in the selfe same sort deceived a souldier, and was killed her selfe: as *Fornarius* noteth at large.

Here end the notes of the xxiii booke.

X iij



THE ARGUMENT.

Strange feats by mad Orlando are atchieued,
 Fierce Mandricardis by Rogero slaine:
 Himselfe so hurt, that all the campe beliened,
 He had bin dead the formost of the twaine:
 His loue with his long absence sore is grieved:
 To breake his word his wounds do him constraime:
 Renaldo with his kinsfolke and his frends,
 To set his Prince at libertie intends.



When men with wrath and
 sodaine pangs of ire,
 Permit themselues to be
 overwhelmed & drownd,
 And hot reuēge that burns
 like flaming fire,
 Moues hearts to hurt, or
 tongs or hāds to wound,
 Though after to amend it
 they desire,

Yet place of pardon seldome can be found:
 Ah (worthy Ladies) I do you beseech,
 To pardon that my former foolish speech.

For I am growne like a diseased man,
 That when he finds by phisicke no reliefe,
 And now no more with patience suffer can,
 The burning torture of his lingring griefe
 Doth fall to raue and rage, and curle and bar,
 Blaspheming God, renouncing his believe:
 But when that fit is past, then would he faine,
 But ah he cannot call it backe againe.

Yet Ladies of your clemencie I hope,
 I pittie shall not onely pardon finde,
 Although I somewhat swarue from reasons scope,
 And rash words flow from vnaduised minde:
 She onely beare the blame that slayes my hope,
 And for true seruice shews her selfe vnkinde:
 That I did speake was partly of compassion,
 With sympathy mou'd of Orlandos passion.

Who (as I partly did before declare)
 In monstrous sort, suruayd Marsilius raigae,

And wrought great wo, great danger, and great care,
 To all the then inhabitants of Spaine:
 I told you how he drew the silly Mare,
 Tide to his leg, till she was dead with paines:
 And how he had so small sence in his head,
 He drew her after him when she was dead.

But coming to a great deepe running water,
 He was constrained to let her there abide,
 And (for he swimmes as perfect as an Atter)
 He quickly passed to the tother side,
 Where then a herdman came his beasts to water,
 And on a curtall he himselfe did ride:
 And though he saw the madman and did view him,
 Yet being naked he would not eschew him.

The madman prayeth him that he would spare
 His horse; that they two might together cope:
 I left (quoth he) on tother side my Mare,
 And fast about her necke I left a rope:
 I left her dead; but yet with heed and care,
 Of her recouerie there is good hope:
 The herdman laugheth at his sencelesse words,
 And vnto him no answer he affords.

Hoe (saith Orlando) fellow, dost not heare?
 I must thy curtall haue, thou needst not lasse:
 And with that word approaching somewhat neare,
 The crabbed herdman with a crabtree staffe,
 Gaue him a bastinado on his eare,
 Which put the mad Erle into such a chafe,
 That with his fist he made the herdman reele,
 Till paine it selfe made him no paine to feele.

8

This done he leapeth on the horses backe,
And at aduerture on he takes his way,
Where ere he comes he putteth all to wracke,
His horse tastes neither prouender nor hay:
But though this tyrd; a horse he may not lacke,
The next he meets by force he takes away:
To striue with him it was but little boote,
He is resolu'd not to go a foote.

9

He passeth to the straites of Zibeltar,
Or Zibelterra (call it which you will)
And as he went, with force of open war,
Townes he did burne, and all the dwellers kill:
Ten yeares will hardly make that he would mar
Within one houre, and thus he traueled still,
Till on a day, riding vpon the sand,
He saw a ship new loosed from the land.

10

The aire was cleare and mild, and calme the wether,
And certaine Gentlefolke had hyr'd the barke,
With mind to take their solace there together,
And to returne againe er it were darke:
The madman cries, hoe sirs let me come thither:
His deeds, his words, they neither marke nor harke,
Or if they did, you may be sure they thought,
They would not comberd be with such a fraught.

11

He hallows after them, and whopes and hayles,
To haue them stay, & with faire words doth wo the,
Glad might they be they went with oars and sayls,
For might he come, he surely would vndoe them,
The foole that sees how small his speech preuayls,
Beats on his horse, and meanes to ride vnto them:
In vaine his horse would shun this hard aduenter,
But he perforce makes him the sea to enter.

12

First he his feete doth wet, and then his knees,
And next his belly, after that his backe,
Now scant his nose one in the water sees,
And still he layes him on; poore horse alacke,
That either in these seas his life must leese,
Or swim to Affricke er he can turne backe:
At last with swimming tyrd, with water cloyd,
His belly filld, till limbs of life were void.

13

The horse vnto the bottome quickly sunke,
And had for company his burthen drownd,
If fortune that helpe frantike men and drunke,
Had not him safe conueyd to Affrike ground:
Orlando at the danger neuer shrunke,
But to the shore he swam both safe and sound:
It happie was the seas were then so still,
Else had the Erie bin drownd for all his skill.

14

Now being safe arriued at the shore,
Neare Setta strait he ranged ou'r the coast,
And did such deeds as he had done before,
On tother side to many poore mens cost:
At last he came where as he found great store,
Of warlike weapons, and a mightie host:
But how with them this madman disagreed,
I may not in this booke to tell proceed.

*Fortuna fauet
facum, as the La-
tine proverbe
saith.*

*Here returns to
Orlando in the
39. book 36. leaf.*

15

And further how *Angelica* the faire,
Did meet her loue againe, and what a Lord
He grew, by matching with so great an haire,
And liu'd with her in loue and sweet accord,
(Although in birth an vnfit matched paire)
I leaue for other Muses to record:
For now I must adresse my selfe to tell,
What haps in *Agramantes* campe befell.

16

I told you two bookes past, or thereabout,
How *Mandricard* was *Doralices* choice:
And how in face of all the Pagan rout,
She gaue that doome, that made him much reioyce,
For she was deem'd for beautie (out of doubt)
The best in Europe by the common voice:
Now chiefe since faire *Angelica* was fled,
And worthy *Isabella* lost her hed.

17

But yet this pleasure was not so entire,
But that it sawced was with some annoy,
For wrath and enuie set his heart on fire,
And much abated of his present ioy:
It spites him that *Rogero* dare aspire,
To giue his coat, being a berlesse boy:
And further that the king of *Sericane*,
Should openly lay claime to *Durindane*.

18

And first *Rogero* will by no meanes yeeld,
By no intreatie, nor by no request,
That *Mandricard* should carrie that same sheeld,
Which had the *Argent Eagle* on the crest,
Except he first could win it in the feeld:
On tother side *Gradasso* doth not rest,
But he will be the first to trie by fight,
Which of them two had to the sword most right.

19

With *Agramant* *Marsilio* tooke great paine,
In all or part these quarrels to appease,
But when they saw their labour was in vaine,
To gouerne or perswade with one of these:
The chance (quoth *Agramant*) shal make that plain,
For which you striue, and eu'n as fortune please,
So let it be, and let some lots be cast,
Which two or three, shall fight the first or last.

20

And yet this iust request denie me not,
Before the matter any further goth,
(Though now you be so violent and hot,
That speech of peace and all accord you loth)
To grant that who shall combat first by lot,
May leeing leese, and winning win for both:
This motion, most indifferent must seeme,
Sith both their valles equall we esteeme.

21

This motion neither of them do mislike,
And straight *Gradassos* and *Rogeros* name,
Vpon two scroles were writ so passing like
You would haue iudgd them both to be the same:
A boy of fourteene yeare of age they pike,
To draw the lot, and he that first out came,
Must fight with *Mandricard*, and make it knowne,
He fights for tothers title and his owne.

When

22

When on this order all parts were agreed,
The lot to fight vpon *Rogero* fell,
Which hap great griefe did in *Gradasso* breed,
Although in shew he seemd to take it well:
Contrariwise it did all ioy exceed,
The ioy *Rogero* had, it so befell:
So well of his owne vallew he believed,
He ioyd at that at which the tother grieved.

23

But yet *Gradasso* doth with great regard,
Both fauour and aduance *Rogeros* side,
And sheweth him how he must lie to ward
A comming blow, how he might slip aside:
How for a thrust he may be best prepard:
Which blowes be firme, and which be falsifide,
When best time is to follow thrust or blow:
How one may best take vantage of his foe.

24

The rest of that same day that did remaine,
Ensuing this same course of casting lots,
They spent as pleated each mans pleasing vaine,
In talke, or banquetting, or tossing pots:
To see this fight the people glad and faine,
Clammer the scaffolds, gazing still like lots,
Some for desire do come by breake of day,
And some all night within the place do stay.

25

Thus (as I say) these simple fooles do long,
To see the combat these braue knights betwixt,
And blame the stay, and thinke the time too long,
That for the same the Herralds had prefixt:
But sober men that knew what did belong
To such exploits, whose wiser heads were fixt,
On publike good, this quarrell much lament,
And traueled all they can it to preuent.

26

And chiefe *Marfilio* and *Sobrino* sage,
Aduise king *Agramant* to stay the fight,
And these same champions furie to allwage,
And to take vp the quarrell if they might:
Forewarning him when he must battell wage,
With *Charles* of France, the losse of one such knight,
Will do him greater hurt and damage then,
Then would the losse of thousands other men.

27

But *Agramant* knew all was true they spake,
And faite he would their counsell wise obey,
But could not tell his grant how to reuoke:
Onely he doth in curteous sort them pray:
That he may strike with them so great a stroke,
Either to end or to defer the fray;
And yeeld the rather vnto his perswasion,
Because it rose vpon so light occasion.

28

Or if they did esteeme such toyes so far,
As though they matters were of true renowne;
That yet they would the fight so long defar,
Vntill the sonne of *Pipen* were put downe:
And till they conquerd had the Realme by war,
And tane from him his mantle and his crowne,
This motion had in likelihood taken place,
Sauc each thought first consent would be disgrace.

29

Above them all and more then all the rest,
That in this sort their speech in vaine had spent:
Faite *Doralyce* doth *Mandricard* request,
That to the kings desire he would assent:
She doth exhort, intreat, periwade, protest,
She doth complaine, and languish, and lament:
To thinke that by his ouer hastie cholor,
She still must liue in anguish and in dolor.

30

How can I hope (saide she) that ere I shall,
Liue any houre in solace and in ioy?
When still I see you readie be to brall,
With eu'rie man, for eu'rie trifling toy:
The Sarzans foile doth me no good at all,
My choyce of you hath bred me more annoy:
To end that quarrell, ah what did it boot,
Sith straight another quarrell is on foot?

Doralyces speech
to persuade
Mandricard
to peace.

31

I simple foole, in minde was proud and glad,
That such a Prince, so braue a man as you,
For loue of me his whole state venterd had;
But now I finde by this that doth ensue,
That I had far more reason to be sad,
Sith each like cause, like danger doth renew,
And not my loue, but your owne native furie,
To bide such hard aduentures did procure yce.

32

But if your loue be such as in your speech,
You do professe, and in your open show:
Then by that loue I humbly you beseech,
And by that fancie which too well I know,
Doth eu'n my heart and soule with loue bewitch;
Let not this quarrell any further grow:
I see not why it should you so molest,
To see your Eagle in anothers crest.

33

If needs you will attempt this hardie feat,
And venter life vpon a thing so vaine,
The hazard that you make must needs be great,
But none, or verie small can be the gaine:
But if that fortune change her fickle tear,
Thinke then, ô thinke, what woe shall I sustaine?
There neuer yet was Emperor or king,
Could boast that he had Fortune in a string.

Sentent.

34

But if that life be vnto you lesse deare,
Then is a painted bird vpon a sheeld:
Yet for my take, whom it doth touch more neare,
Let me intreat you to this motion yeeld:
If you were slaine, what ioy could I haue heare?
Death tole from wo, both could & should me sheeld
Nor feare I death; my onely griefe would bee,
Before my death thy wofull end to see.

35

Thus earnestly faire *Doralyce* delt,
All that same night, as in his armes she lyes,
And as she spake, the teares distill and melt,
In warrie streames, downe from her cristall eyes:
The Tartar that no litle passion felt,
To comfort her faith all he can deuise:
And wipes her cheekes, and her sweet lip doth kisse,
And weeps for company, and answers this.

You almost the
cause why
marls between
princes and
great states be so
often taken up

*Mandricards
answer.*

36
Ah do not griue thy selfe so sore (my deare)
Ah do not griue thy selfe for such a toy,
Plucke vp thy sprights, and be of better cheare,
There is no cause of feare mine onely ioy:
No though that all the kings and captains heare,
Had sworne my death, and vowed mine annoy:
Yet all the kings and captaines I would vanquish,
Why then should you caules in sorrow languish?

37
What, did not I with trunchen of a speare,
(You know your selfe whether I say the truth)
Not hauing sword nor other weapon there,
Win you from all your gard: and shall a youth,
A beardless boy, cause you my safetie feare,
And breed in you so vnauided ruth?
Well might you deeme I were a dastard lout,
If of *Rogero* I should stand in doubt.

38
Gradasso, though vnto his griefe and shame,
Yet if one aske him can it not gaine say,
That when he last vnto *Sorya* came,
I met and tooke him prisoner by the way,
Yet he is of another manner fame,
Then is *Rogero*, you your selfe will say:
I had him there a prisoner at my will,
And if I listid might haue kept him still.

39
And least I should of this good witnes want,
Beside *Gradasso*, there be hunderds more,
As namely *Isolyr*, and *Sacrapant*,
Whom I let free and had great thanks therefore:
Also the famous *Griffin* and *Aquillant*,
That there were taken, but few dayes before:
With diuers more both Turkish and baptised,
That by my force were taken and surprised.

40
Their wonder in those countries still doth last,
Of that great vallew I that time did show,
And should I now a doubt or perrill cast?
Am I in greater danger now you trow?
Shall one young youth me hand to hand agast?
Shall I now doubt his force, or feare his blow?
Now hauing *Durindana* by my side,
And *Hectors* armour on my backe beside?

41
Why did not I, as pointed was by lot,
With *Rodomont* first bloudie battell wage?
That by his ill successe you might forewot,
The speedie end of this young forric page.
Drie vp these teares (my deare) and bring me not,
Before the combat such an ill presage:
Nor thinke an Eagle on a target painted,
Moues me hereto, but doubt of honor tainted.

*They say in Latin
Maledominatus
parcite verbum.*

42
Thus much said he, but she such answer made him,
With words expressing such alouing mone,
As were not onely able to perfwade him,
But might (I thinke) haue moulded a marble stone:
The force was great wherewith she did inuade him,
In fine so farre she conquers him alone,
He grants thus farre to be at her deuotion,
If peace be offerd, to accept the motion.

43
And so I thinke indeed he would haue done,
Had not *Rogero* early in the morne,
Got vp before the rising of the Sunne,
And enterd in the lists, and blowne his horne,
To shew that he the battell would not shunne,
And that *Ioues* bird by him was iustly borne:
Which either he will carrie on his shield,
Or else will leaue his carkas in the field.

44
But when the Tartar fierce did heare that sound,
And that his men thereof had brought him word:
He thinks great shame should vnto him redound,
If any treatie he of peace afford:
Arme arme he cries, & straight he armes him round,
And by his side he hangs his trustie sword:
And in his countenance he lookes so grim,
Scarfe *Doralyce* her selfe dares speake to him.

45
And armed at all pieces, vp in hast
He gets, and that same courser he bestrides,
That was that Christen champions in time past,
Who now doth runne his wit and fence besides:
And thus he comes vnto the lists at last,
The place that all such quarrels still decides,
The king and all his court soone after came,
And now ere long begins the bloudie game.

46
Now on their heads their helmets are made fast,
Now are the Lances put into their hands,
Now was the token giu'n by trumpets blast,
Which both the horse and horseman vnderstands:
Now in a full carrye they gallop fast,
And either strongly to his tackle stands:
Now with such force the tone the tother strake,
As though that heau'n did fall, and earth did shake.

47
The Argent Eagle comes on either side,
With wings displaid on either captaines sheeld,
The bird which *Ioue* (men say) was seene to ride,
(Though better wingd) ou'r the Theſſalian feeld:
As for their mightie strength and courage tride,
Their massie speares sufficient witnesse yeeld:
Nor sturd they more with those tēpestuous knocks,
Then wind sturs towres, or waues do stur the rocks.

48
The splinters of the spears flew to the skie,
(As *Turpin* writeth that was present there)
And were on fire by hauing bin so nie,
Vnto the scorching of the fierie Spheare:
The champions out their swords draw by and by,
As those that neither sword nor fire did feare,
And either thrusteth at the tothers face,
And seekes by force the tother to displace.

49
They neuer fought to hurt each others steed,
Not that they made together such accord,
But that they deemd it an vnworthie deed,
Not worthie of a worthie knight or Lord:
Of base reuenge they count that act proceed,
And meet of noble minds to be abhord.
So that in those dayes none were knowne to kill
A horse, except it were against his will,

Vpon

50
Vpon their vizers both do strike at once,
And though the same were firme and plated double,
As being made of prooffe and for the nonce,
Yet did the force of such fell strokes them trouble;
And still they lay on lode as thicke as stones
Of haile, that often turne the corne to stubble:
I thinke it needlesse further to alledge,
If they haue strength, or if their swords haue edge.

51
Yet long they fought together in that field,
Ere any signe or any blow was left,
Such wary heed each tooke himselte to shield;
But Durindan at last fell with such heft,
Full on the circle of *Rogeros* shield,
That halfe way through the argent bird it cleft,
And pierst the coate of male that was within,
And found a passage to the very skin.

52
The cruell blow made many hearts full cold,
Of such as wisht well to *Rogeros* part,
For most of those that stood by to behold,
Rogero fauourd in their mind and hart,
So that afore to say one might be bold,
If fortune follow would the greater part,
Fierce *Mandricard* were slaine, or else should yeeld,
So that this blow offended halfe the field.

53
But surely some good Angell I beleuee,
The force of this so fearfull stroke abated,
Rogero though the wound him somewhat grieue,
Yet was his mind therewith no whit amated,
Great vsury he mindeth him to giue,
And that the strife may quickly be debated,
He frankly strikes with his whole force and might,
Full on the helmet of the Tartar knight.

54
With so great force and furie came the blow,
As to the teeth no doubt had clou'n his head,
Sauing by what mishap I do not know,
But want of heed that too much hast had bred,
It lighted flatling on him, else I trow,
That stroke alone had him most surely sped,
But as it was it made his head so idle,
He opend both his hands and loold his bridle.

55
Good *Brigliadore* that felt the slacked raine,
(I thinke still mourning for his masters change)
Ran vp and downe at randon on the plaine,
His senselesse rider suffering him to range;
Who when he came vnto himselte againe,
And saw his horse to run a course so strange,
A spurned *Viper* hath not so much wrath,
Nor wounded *Lion*, as the Tartar hath.

56
He claps the spurs to *Brigliadores* side,
And on his stirrups he himselte aduances,
And to his fo with furie he doth ride,
And vp on hie his right arme he inhances,
To strike a blow; but when *Rogero* spide
His arme lie ope, as oft in fight it chances,
He chopt his swords point vnder tothers arme,
And puid it out with blood both wet and warme.

57
By which he did not onely maim his fo,
By letting blood vpon so large a vaine,
But bated much the furie of the blo,
Which notwithstanding fell with force so maine,
As made *Rogero* stagger to and fro,
And mazed his head, and dazd his eyes with paine;
And much it was that time for his behoofe,
To haue his helmet of so good a prooffe.

58
But hauing now againe recouerd force,
And as it were new wakned from his dreame,
Vpon the Tartar Prince he turnd his horse,
And on his thigh he strikes with strength extream,
That through the steele he did the sword enforce:
Out spins the blood in pure vermilion streame,
Nought could auaille enchanted *Hectors* armes,
Against this sword with stronger temperd charmes.

59
The Tartar feeling to his great diseafe,
His body wounded as he little thought,
Did rage as terrible as do the seas, Simile.
With highest winds and strongest tempests wrought,
He curleth heau'ns, his smarting pangs to ease,
The shield that had the bird for which he fought,
Away he hurleth from him for the nonce,
And to his sword he lets both hands at once.

60
Ah (quoth *Rogero*) too plaine triall this is,
That to that Eagle thou no title hast,
That first didst with thy sword cut mine in peeces,
And now thine owne away from thee dost cast:
Thus much said he, but whatsoeuer he sees,
He must the force of *Durindana* taste,
Which fell vpon his forehead with such might,
A mountaine might haue seemd to fall as light.

61
I say the blow vpon his forehead fell,
But yet his beauer sau'd it from his face,
It happend at that time for him full well,
That in the hollow there was so much space:
Yet harmlesse quite to scape him not befell,
For why the sword that euer cuts apace,
Did pierce his plated saddle, and beside
An inch did enter into *Rogeros* side.

62
Thus each with crimson had his armor dide,
And bloud did streame from both a double way,
Yet hitherto it could not be descride,
On whether side would chances ballance sway:
At last *Rogero* did that doubt decide,
With that same sword that euer home doth pay,
And where the tothers target wants, there iust
Rogero payes him with a speeding thrust.

63
The blade, gainst which preuailes no Magick art,
His curats prest, and ribs and flesh it tore,
And found a passage to the naked hart:
Now must the Tartar Prince for euermore
In sword and painted shield forsake his part,
Not onely so, but that which grieues him more,
He must forsake his much beloued life,
More loued honour, and most loued wife.

64

The wretch yet vnreunged did not die,
But gaue hard recompence ere he departed,
At good *Rogeros* head he doth let flie,
And had (no doubt) the same in sunder parted,
Saue that his arme was maymd, and so thereby
Much of his force from thence had bin diuerted,
Much of his force diuerted was from thence
Before, when for his arme he wanted fence.

65

But as it was, yet to to hard it fell,
And could the noble knight great paine to feele,
His helmet it did cleaue, though plated well,
And made for prooffe of tough well temperd Steele,
And in the very skull it cloue a spell,
Two fingers deepe, and made him backward reele,
He backward fals, the paine was so exceeding,
With grievous wound his hed most freshly bleeding

66

Rogero was the first that tumbled downe,
And *Mandricardo* fell a good while after,
All thought *Rogero* dead, because his crowne
Still bled, but chiefly *Stordilanos* daughter
Ioyes, that her spoule had won this fights renowne,
Now hopes she, she shal turne her teares to laughter,
And as she thought, so was the common voyce,
So that the Tartars friends did all reioyce.

67

But when there did appeare by certaine signes,
The liue man liuing, and the dead man slaine,
Then *Doralyce* wrings her hands and whines,
And grieve came there, and comfort here againe:
The chiefest part, whose fauour all inclines
Vnto *Rogero*, are full glad and faine,
And gratulate his good successe, and grace him,
And runne to him, and in their armes embrace him.

68

Nor was this shew of loue, dissimulation,
But true vnfaigned kindnesse, and good faith,
But yet *Gradassos* faint congratulation,
Makes men surmise he thinks not as he saith:
He secretly enuies such reputation,
Though outwardly the flatterer he playth,
And curseth (were it destinie or chance)
That to this enterprize did him aduance.

69

But *Agramant* that euer did before,
Do him great honor, and him well esteeme,
Now he doth him admire, extoll, adore,
So highly of his vlew he doth deeme:
In him alone he puts affiance more,
Then all his campe together it should seeme,
Now that the seed of *Agricane* was spent,
And *Rodomont* gone thence a malcontent.

70

What should I tell the praise that many a Ladie
Gaue of this knight, of Affrike and of Spaine?
Who knew that *Mandricardo* was no babie,
And saw him now by this mans vlew slaine;
Yea dolefull *Doralyce* her selfe (it may be)
Saue that for modestie she must refraine,
Would haue bene moued with a small request,
To speake as well of him as did the rest.

71

I say it may be, but I cannot tell,
For why before vnconstant she was proued;
And sure *Rogeros* parts did so excell,
As any Ladie doubtlesse might haue moued,
While tother liu'd, perhap she likt him well,
But now to seeke a new it her behoued,
Such one as she her selfe might able warrant,
To ride both day and nightly on her arrant.

72

Now brought the King *Rogero* with great care
To his owne tent, that there he may be cured,
The best Phisitions thither sent for are,
To search his wounds, they straight his life assured:
The shield and armes that *Mandricardo* bare,
The which this bloudie battell first procured,
All saue the sword that was *Gradassos* right,
Were hanged vp by his beds head that night.

73

Howbeit that braue courser *Brigliadore*,
Rogero needs would giue vnto the King,
Who tooke it thankfully, and set more store
By that same steed then any such like thing:
But hereof now a while I treate no more,
First must you heare what news the maide did bring,
(I meane *Hyppalca*) to her mistris deare,
Whom loue had made to be of heauie cheare.

74

She told her first what hap to her befell,
How *Frontine* by a Turke was tane away;
And after, how she found at *Merlins* well
Richardo and *Rogero* that same day,
To whom she did her hard aduenture tell,
And how *Rogero* went with her straightway,
To win the horse out of the Pagans list,
But at that season he his purpose mist.

75

Also she told to *Bradamant* the cause,
Why her deare loue himselfe did now absent,
Who promist her, to take a little pawse,
And then her mind most thoroughly content:
In fine *Hyppalca* from her bosome drawes
That letter which was to her mistris sent,
Who so much lesse did seeme to like the letter,
Because she would haue likt his presence better.

76

For sith before she did himselfe expect,
Now paper in his steed to haue and inke,
It caused her to feare and to suspect,
And made some doubts into her thoughts to sinke,
Yet likt she well the meaning and effect,
And kist the letter oft, and sure I thinke,
Had burnd it with the heate of her desire,
Saue that the teares she shed did quench that fire.

77

She read the writing ou'r, siue times or six,
The words, the phrase, the sence her pleas'd so well,
And then she made the maid, each time betwix,
The message that *Rogero* sent to tell,
And saue he did so short a time prefix
To come to her, and ay with her to dwell,
I thinke she neuer would haue ceased mourning,
Till she had seene, or heard of his returning.

Rogero

78

Rogero to Hippalca promist had,
Fifteene, or twentie dayes at most to stay,
And her, to tell her mistresse so he bad,
But swearing to come sooner if he may:
But neare thesle good Bradamant is sad,
Still doubting chances to prolong that day.
All things (said she) to fortune are subiected,
And chiefe in warres that are by chance directed.

79

Ay (my Rogero) who could once haue thought,
Sith I more then my selfe esteemed thee,
That thou by any means couldst haue bin brought,
To beare thy verie foes more loue then me?
Whō thou shouldst hurt, by thee their help is sought
Whom thou shouldst saue, by thee they spoiled be;
Needs must I blame thy negligent regarding,
As well in punishing as in rewarding.

80

Traiano slue thy sire, I thinke thou knowest,
(For sure the stones it know) yet to his sonne,
Thou thinkst in honor thou such dutie owest,
That thou must see no hurt may him be donne:
Is this sufficient a reuenge thou trowest,
Thinkst thou true fame can by such facts be wonne?
Lo vnto what thy shew of honor tends,
To serue thine enemies, and slay thy friends.

81

Thus Bradamant spake to her absent loue,
With passion great, and euermore her maid,
With reason seeks that fancie to remoue,
Assuring her she need not be affraid:
And wishing her with patient mind to proue,
If so he would not do as he had said,
And that she would in all things hope the best,
And then to God and fortune leaue the rest.

82

With this good speech of hers, and strong perswasion,
She doth his comming till the day expect,
Which good Rogero brake, not by occasion
That he his word and promise did neglect;
But that which hurt against his expectation,
His wounds had bred so dangerous effect,
But chiefe the same he last tooke in his bed,
Which made him fortie dayes to keepe his bed.

83

Now Bradamant doth waite the twentie dayes,
And staid at Montalbano with her mother,
And making still enquirie many wayes,
If she might heare some news of one or other.
But none she heard, saue that which to his praise,
Was told her after by her younger brother,
Which though she ioyd to heare, as was most meet,
Yet mingled was some soure with that same sweet.

84

For why the vallew of *Marfisa* rout,
Which did assist them greatly, as he told,
To win their kinsmen from the moorish rout,
That vnto *Bertolage* should haue bin sold,
This bred in *Bradamantes* minde some doubt,
And strake into her heart a ieaulouse cold;
Because it was said they two together went
To *Agramant*, that in his campe was pent.

85

For though she could not chuse but greatly praise her,
That did her selfe so stout and valiant proue,
Yet one the tother side, her beautie frayes her,
Lest he perhap on her might let his loue:
But yet in fine, hope of his promise stayes her,
So that in twentie dayes he did not moue
From Montalbano, and in that same space,
There thither came the chiefe man of her race.

86

I meane not chiefe of birth, but chiefe of name,
For two there were, in birth more old then he,
Renaldo vnto Montalbano came,
His brothers, cosins, and his friends to see,
Whom he had heard by speech of flying fame,
Now safe arriued at that place to be,
And how *Rogero* and *Marfisa* wrought
Their libertie, when they were sold and bought.

87

Wherefore he came to see them face to face,
And vnderstand with them how each thing stood,
It seemd he was as welcome to the place,
As is the swallow to her tender brood,
That almost starued and in torrie case,
Haue long expected sustenance and food,
And when they there had staid, a day or twaine,
Both they and he to Paris went againe.

88

Alardo and *Guichiardo*, *Richardet*,
And *Malagisy* and good *Viuiane*,
Close after this braue Lord themselves do get,
And *Bradamant* with them they would haue tane,
But she alledg'd she could not come as yet;
(But hopes ere long they should be ouertane)
She prays them for that time content to hold them;
For why she was not well at ease she told them.

89

And true it was, she was not well at ease,
Not that she had a fit of any feauer,
Or any other corporall disease,
It was a fit of loue, that burneth euer;
Whole heat no herbe nor phisicke can appease;
This fit did her from that braue crew disseuer:
But in another booke I shall repeat,
What succour they did bring to *Charls* the great.

In this thirtieth booke, in Orlandos mad pranks (though they be fained things) we may note, what hard and impossible matters are attempted, and sometime atchieued by mad men, of which the reason is doubtfull; a naturall reason is giuen (though many will doubt thereof) that the cause of their extraordinarie strength, is that nature (Intendens omnem vim) as they terme it, that is to say, bending her whole force at one instant, doth by that means double the strength and abilitie to any hard and vnmeasurable matter: as we see men often at the pang of death (though otherwise but weake) yet so strong that three or foure men cannot hold them: or as men sometimes in a feare leape ouer a wall, or downe from a window without harme, which at another time would breake their neckes. Another reason of mad mens vnreasonable strength, is metaphysicall, or supernaturall, and that is when they are possessed with spirits, of which there are

many examples. In Agramant that endeours to end two quarrels with one combat, we may obserue, that it becometh the wisdom of a Prince, either to take vp quarrels and ciuill dissensions betweene their great subiects absolutely, or at least to draw them to as speedie a triall, and with as little damage as may be.

Historie and
Allusion.

Concerning the Eagle about which the two champions straued who should beare it for his armes or Cognizance (as we terme it) becometh to allude to the ciuill warres that were betweene Cæsar and Pompey, whereas Lucan complayneth in his excellent Poem,

—Infestisque obuia signis

Signa, pares aquilas & pila minantia pilis,

For the Romaines Ensigne was the Eagle, and it is strange that is reported by credible writers, how in a battell fought neare Theffalia, betweene Brutus and Cassius of the one side, and Octavius and Anthony of the other side, two Eagles were visibly seene fighting in the ayre with their beaks and tallents, in most fierce manner: And finally, that of Anthonies side preuayled, and put the other to flight.

Here end the notes of the xxx. booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

Unwares doth Guidon with Renaldo fight,
 But afterward is by his brethren knowne,
 By whose great courage, and united might,
 The Turks are vanquished and ouerthrowne.
 Good Brandimart seeks out that wofull knight,
 Whose wits by loue distraught, are not his owne,
 Is tane, and of his life was in great perrell.
 Renaldo and Gradasso fall to quarrell.

Against iealousie.

* Marriage.



¹ That state of life more plea-
 sing may we find,
 Then theirs, that true and
 heartie loue do beare?
 Whom that * sweete yoke
 doth fast together bind,
 That man in Paradise first
 leard to weare:
 Were not some so tormen-
 ted in their mind,

With that same vile suspect, that filthie feare,
 That torture great, that foolish frenesie,
 That raging madnesse, called iealousie.

*Dulcia non me-
 ruit qui non gu-
 stauit amara.*

Sennals.

Sentence.

² For eu'rie other sowe that gets a place,
 To seat it selfe amid this pleasant sweet,
 Doth helpe in th'end to giue a greater grace,
 And makes loues ioy more gratful when they meet,
 Who so abstaines from sustenance a space,
 Shall find both bread and water rellish sweet:
 Men know not peace nor rightly how to deeme it,
 That haue not first by war bin taught t'steeme it.

Sentence.

³ Though eyes want sight, of that they would see faine,
 The thought yet sees, & hearts with patience take it,
 Long absence grieues, yet when they meet againe,
 That absence doth more sweet and pleasant make it:
 To serue and sue long time for little gaine,
 (So that all hope do not eu'n quite forsake it)
 One may endure, for when the paine is past,
 Reward, though long it stay, yet comes at last.

⁴ The sharpe repulses, and the deepe disdaines,
 And all the torments that in loue are found,

At last with pleasure recompence the paines,
 And make far more contentment to abound:
 But if this hellish plague infect the braines,
 Though afterward it seeme both whole and sound,
 The qualitie thereof is so mischieuous,
 The verie thought is to a lower grieuous.

5

This is that cruell wound, against whose smart,
 No liquors force preuailes, nor any plaster,
 No skill of starres, no depth of Magicke art,
 Deuis'd by that great claike Zoroaster:
 A wound that so infects the soule and hart,
 As all our sence and reason it doth master;
 A wound whose pang, and torment is so durable,
 As it may rightly called be incurable.

6

This is a plague that quickly doth infect
 All louers hearts, and doth possesse their thought,
 As well with causlesse, as with iust suspect:
 By this, a man to madnesse meere is brought:
 Oh plague, by whose most damnable effect,
 In deepe dispaire to die haue diuers sought;
 Oh iealousie, that didst without desert,
 Possesse the noble Bradamantes hart,

7

Not for the tale her mayd or brother told,
 Which made with in her mind a sharpe impression,
 But other news that made her heart full cold,
 How her loue of new loue did make profession;
 As I more plaine hereafter shall vnfold,
 For now I needs a while must make digression,
 To braue Renaldo, that to Paris ward
 Did march, with that same crew of great regard.

The

8

The day ensuing ere it yet was night,
They met an armed knight vpon the way,
A Ladie faire accompanid the knight,
His armour all was blacke, saue that there lay
A thwart the brest a wreath of Argent bright.
And straight the formost man in their array,
Which *Richardetto* was, as then did chaunce,
He challenged with him to breake a launce.

9

The gallant youth that neuer man refused,
Straight turnd his horse, a space for course to take,
As one that (for his time) had often vied,
Such feates as this to do and vndertake:
Renaldo standeth still, and them perused,
To see which knight the fairest course would make,
Now *Richardet* thinks, if I hit him iust,
I shall this gallant tumble in the dust.

10

But otherwise it then to him befell,
And of his reckning he was quite deceaued,
The tother knew to hit, and sit so well,
That *Richardet* was from the saddle heaued:
Alardo seeing how his brother fell,
Did thinke t'auenge the foile that he receaued,
But he likewise inferiour did remaine,
His arme was bruisd, his shield was rent in twaine.

11

Gnicchiardo next, the selfe same fortune tride,
And was constraind vnto the ground t'encline,
Although to him *Renaldo* lowdly cride,
Stay, hold your hands, for this course should be mine.
Viuian and *Malagige*, and more beside,
That at their kinsmens foyle did much repine,
Would then haue fought with this same stranger
Saue that *Renaldo* claymd it as his right. (knight,

12

And said my friends, we must to Paris hast;
But to himselfe he said, it were a iest,
For me to stay till all they downe were cast
By one and one, the fight and they shall rest;
This said, he spurres his horse and commeth fast,
And as he runs he sets his speare in rest;
The tother doth as much, and eithers speare,
The stroke doth in a thousand peeces teare.

13

The horsemen with the stroke stur not an inch,
They both had leard so perfectly to sit,
But on their horses it did shrowdly pinch,
Yet Bayard scarce his course doth intermit,
The tothers horse had such a parlous wrinch,
That mard him quite, and brake his backe with it,
His master that was greatly grieu'd to see't,
Forfakes his seate, and takes him to his feet.

14

And to *Renaldo*, that with naked hand
Came toward him in shew of truce, he sed,
Sir knight I giue you here to vnderstand,
I likt so well this horse that here is ded,
I thinke it would not with mine honor stand,
To leaue him vnreuengd, which hath me led
To challenge you, eu'n as you are true knight,
That you will answer me againe in fight.

15

Renaldo answerd, if your horse you lost,
The onely cause of this your quarrell be,
Then comfort you, for of mine onely cost,
Your want herein shall be supplide by me,
With such a horse, as I may boldly boast,
To be as good a one as ere was he:
Not so fir, said the tother, you mistake it,
I will expound my mind, and plainer make it.

16

Though I lykt well my seruiceable horse,
Yet sith he now is in this conflict slaine,
Thinke not that of his death I so much force,
As that alone moues me to fight againe;
But in plaine termes on foot to trie your force,
As well as erst on hortebacke I would faine.
Renaldo, that of no mans force accounted,
Without delay straight from his horse dismounted.

17

And sith (quoth he) I see your noble mind,
Of this my company hath no suspition,
They shall go on, and I will stay behind,
And so will fight with you on eu'n condition.
This said, his band to part thence he assignd,
Who went their way vpon their Lords commission,
Which bred great admiration in the stranger,
To find a man so little fearing danger.

18

Now when his standerd quite was out of sight,
And all *Renaldos* companie was gone,
Then hand to hand they do apply the fight,
With force and furie great they lay it on;
Each maruels at the tothers passing might,
And yet of either side the gaine is none,
They felt the blowes so heauie and so hard,
That glad they were to lie well to their ward.

19

Thus these two knights, for honors onely sake,
Together combat in such eager sort,
That eu'ry little error they should make,
Endangerd life in this vnpleasant sport:
An houre and halfe this trauell they did take,
Each labouring to cut the tother short,
And in his mind *Renaldo* maruels much,
Who this should be, whole skill and force was such.

20

And, saue that he could not with his reputation,
He would haue wishd the battell at an end,
And offerd of a truce communication,
And of his vnknowne foe haue made his friend:
Likewise the tother felt such inclination,
Now finding scarce he could himselfe defend,
That he repented his rash hardie part,
And would haue had a truce with all his hart.

21

It waxed darke, there fell an eu'ning mist,
So that at last they neither of them know,
When he did hit aright, or when he mist,
Nor how to giue, nor how to ward a blow:
When first *Renaldo* wishd him to desist,
Sith now the Sunne descended was so low,
And that the combat might be now reiourned,
Till *Phebus* were about the world returned.

Y ij

22

Offering (at which the stranger greatly mused,
And his rare curtesie therein commended)
To lodge him where he should both be well vsd,
And like a man of honour well attended:
The tother his great curtesie not refused,
And so betwene them two the fray was ended:
And straight Renaldo gaue him as his gift,
His pages horse, that was both strong and swift,

23

Thus on they rode vnto Renaldos tent,
And grew acquainted ere they thither came,
By meanes in certaine speeches as they went,
Renaldo happened to tell his name:
By which the stranger knew incontinent,
That this was that same Palladine of fame,
And that himfelfe was to Renaldo brother,
By fathers side alone, and not by mother.

24

The sauage Guidon, this braue warriour hight,
That traueled had full many a hunderd mile,
With those two brothers, nam'd the black and white,
And Sansonet, vntill by craft and guile
They were surpris'd, as you heard last night,
And made against their wils to wait a while,
For maintenance of lawes vniust and bad,
That wicked Pinnabell deuised had.

25

Now when as noble Guidon certaine knew
That this Renaldo was, whom he before
Desired long to see, he much did rewe
That he had done, and did lament it sore:
A blind man would not be more glad to vew
The light, he doubted he should nere see more,
Then Guidon in his mind was well apaid,
To see this knight, and thus to him he said.

Smile.

26

What strange mishap, what sinister aduenter,
Hath bred this fault in me, my noble Lord,
That I with you into this strife should enter,
With whom I ought to haue all kind accord:
I am your fathers sonne, not by one venter,
I euer haue your name and stock adord,
Guidon I hight, Constanza was my mother,
Borne beyond Euxin seas, and yet your brother.

27

Wherefore I pray, pardon my fond offence,
That haue in steed of dutie offerd wrong,
And tell me wherein I may recompence
This ouersight, and I will do ere long:
Renaldo that had heard of him long since,
And to haue seene him did not little long,
Embrast him, and not onely did forgiue him,
But commendation great and praise did giue him.

28

He said his valew was a perfect signe,
To shew himfelfe in fight so fierce and stout,
That he was truly come of that same line,
Whose noble brute was blowne the world about:
For if your manners did to peace incline,
Then had there bene (said he) more cause of doubt,
The fearfull Hart comes not of Lions seed,
Nor doth a silly Doue a Faulcon breed.

Sens. Nec im-
bellis feroces
progenerant a-
guile columbam

29

Thus fell they two acquainted on the way,
And talkt together friendly as they went,
But neither did their talke the iourney stay,
Nor did their riding make their speech relent,
Vntill they came where all their brothers lay,
When as a great part of the night was spent,
Who with great ioy and pleasure did behold them,
And chiefe when who this was Renaldo told them.

30

For though he must to them (no doubt) haue euer
Bene verie welcome as a brother deare,
Yet could he be to them more welcome neuer,
Then now, what time as you before did heare,
They all did mind to do their best indeuer
To rescue Charles that was of heauie cheare:
Wherefore for this one cause about the rest,
He was vnto them all a welcome guest.

31

Thus now the day ensuing on went Guidon,
Ioyning himfelfe vnto Renaldos crew,
And as to Paris walls they forward ride on,
They met two valiant youths that well him knew:
Further with them conferring, they descride one,
A Ladie richly clad, and faire of hew:
These warlike youths had Gismond to their mother,
White Griffiin, and blacke Aquilant his brother.

Griffi.
Aquilant.
Ferdinand.

32

Now Guidon knew them, and to them was knowne,
As hauing bene together many dayes,
By whom they were vnto Renaldo showne,
And prais'd for gallant men at all assayes:
As in your iudgement, likewise in mine owne,
(Renaldo said) these youths do merit praise,
For they haue oft bene prou'd two perfect warriors,
As well in spite as sport, at tilt and barriers.

33

Renaldo did by their apparell know them,
Tone euer wearing white, the tother blacke,
And friendly countenance he now did show them,
Chiefly because the King did succour lacke:
Wherefore into his band he doth bestow them,
That band that to y^e Turks must bring much wrake,
And they do ioyne them to Renaldos banner,
Forgetting all old iarres in louing manner.

34

Betweene the house of Ammon and these twins,
About one Truffaldin a iarre there fell,
The matter at the first not worth two pins,
Wherefore the circumstance I will not tell,
But now Renaldo their affection wins,
By vsing them so curteously and well,
For curteous speech and vsage mild and kind,
Wipes malice out of eu'ry noble mind.

Sant.

35

Now after these another knight there came,
Hight Sansonet a man of great account,
Who welcom'd was, and tooke it for no shame,
Of stout Renaldos band himfelfe to count:
While this thus past, behold the gallant dame,
That knew this noble Lord of Clarimount,
(For she was one that all the French Lords knew)
Told him a tale that made him greatly rewe.

Sansonet

My

36

My Lord (said she) I bring you sory tiding,
He whom the Church and Empire held so deare,
Runs all about, in no one place abiding,
Of sence and argument deprived cleare:
He naked goes, not natures secrets hiding,
Which me to tell, and you must grieue to heare,
Orlando, that same light and lampe of France,
Hath lost his wits, God knowes by what mischance.

37

His armes and sword that he away had throwne,
As things by him left and forsaken clearely,
I saw a courteous knight, to me vnknowne,
But one (it seemd) that lou'd *Orlando* dearely,
Them gather where they scatterd were and sowne,
And eu'n of charitie as seemed mearely,
In triumph wise on tree he hangd the same,
And vnderneath he grau'd *Orlando's* name.

38

But straight the sword that hanged on the tree,
With force and scornfull speech away was tane,
(As I can witnesse well that did it see)
By *Mandricard* the sonne of *Agricane*:
Thinke you what hurt this will to Europe be,
That once againe the Turks haue *Durindane*:
The gentle knight straued long with him to saue it,
But in the end was forst to let him haue it.

39

I saw *Orlando* late in monstrous guise,
To runne about vncouth and all vnclad,
With strangest clamours and most hideous cries:
In fine I do conclude that he is mad;
And saue I saw it so with these mine eyes,
I would not trust if any told it had.
She further told how she had seene him later,
With *Rodomont* to tumble in the water.

40

And last of all she told him she had heard,
How that about this sword there grew some strife,
Betweene *Gradasso* stout and *Mandricard*:
And how the Tartar hauing lost his life,
The sword was ginen *Gradasso* afterward,
As ouer all the Pagan campe was rife:
And hauing ended this so sad narration,
Thereto she addeth this short exhortation,

41

That he and eu'ry one that were not foe
To stout *Orlando*, would take so much paine,
In Paris or elsewhere him to bestow,
Till he had purged his distemperd braine:
Mine husband *Brandimart* (said she) I know,
To do him any good himselfe would straine:
Thus *Fiordeliege* spake, the louing wife
Of *Brandimart*, that lou'd her as his life.

42

At this strange tale and wofull accident,
Such inward griefe the good *Renaldo* felt,
That with the thought, his heart incontinent
Did seeme like snow against the Sunne to melt,
And with all speed he might to go he ment,
And by all meanes he might so to haue delt,
To seeke *Orlando*, whom if he can find,
He hopes to bring him to a better mind.

43

But sith he now had thither brought his band,
Or wer't the will of God, or were it chance,
He first doth mind to end the cause in hand,
And rescue Paris and the king of France:
Wherefore he makes his men all quiet stand
Till night, what time himselfe will leade the dance,
And then betweene the fourth and second watch,
He meanes at once the matter to dispatch.

44

He makes his men lie close for all that day,
By way of Ambuscado in a wood,
And ease themselves and horses all they may,
And take the sustenance of rest and food,
The place within three leagues of Paris lay,
And when the Sunne was set, he thought it good,
What time the world doth vse his letter lampe,
To Paris ward to moue his silent campe.

45

And as he purposd, he performed in deed,
For straight himselfe, with that same gallant grew,
Set out by night, as first they had decreed,
In silent sort suspicion to eschew.
Now came the time that they must do the deed,
Now neare vnto the Turkish campe they drew,
When first the heedlesse Sentinels intrapping,
They kild them al, because they took them napping.

46

The watch once slaine, they are no longer dumme,
But after stout *Renaldo* soone they came,
They sound the trumpet, and strike vp the drumme,
And calling still vpon that noble name,
That often had the Pagans overcome,
(I meane *Renaldo's* house of Montalbane)
Which crie he could both his owne men to quicken,
And that the Turks might in more feare be stricken.

47

Himselfe well mounted on his famous horse,
Doth presse amidst the Pagan Princes tents,
And with his owne, and with his horses force,
He treds them downe, and all in peeces rents,
Vnarmd or armd he kils without remorse,
Who euer commeth in his way repents,
The drowsie men halfe armd make poore resistance
Against so braue a man with such assistance.

48

For why, beside those men I nam'd before,
Whose vertue and whose value oit were showne,
Renaldo had sixe hundred men and more,
All perfect traind, of strength and courage knowne,
Which about Clarimont he kept in store,
For his owne vse and causes of his owne,
Though at this need his Princes turne to furnish,
He soone agreed his owne townes to vnfurnish.

49

And though *Renaldo* had no great reuenue,
The which chiefe sinews vnto warre affords,
Yet kept he still six hundred in retinue,
What with good vsage and with gentle words,
That all of them did still with him continue,
At his commaund with launces, horse and swords;
Nor was there any that from him away went,
Though diuers others offerd greater payment.

Y iijj

They vse in camp
to deuide the
night into foure
watches.

Sentence.

50

Now thinke when this braue crue the Turks assailed,
 At vnawares halfe wake or halfe asleepe, (led,
 How that same name and that same noise them quai-
 How here they fled and there, with hold and keepe:
 But smally flight, and lesse their fight preuailed;
 But euen as Goates from Lions, or as sheepe
 Fro Wolves make small defence, such in comparison
 These Pagans made against *Renaldos* garison.

Smile.

51

On tother side king *Charles* (that by espiall)
 Had notice of *Renaldos* comming hither,
 With all that crue so noble and so loyall,
 That to his aid combined were together,
 With diuers Lords came forth in person royall,
 And all his men of armes likewise came thither:
 Eke *Brandimart*, rich *Monodantes* heire,
 Did with king *Charles* vnto the field repaire.

52

Whom when his spoule, that neare about did hower,
 Had found out by his standard and his armes,
 And plainly saw it was her dearest louer,
 She rusheth in among the men of armes,
 And vnto him her selfe she doth discouer,
 Who straight embraced her in open armes;
 And leauing then the battell drew apart,
 That each to other might their minds impart.

53

And after sweet embracing oftentimes,
 They did conferre together of their state:
 O vertue of those vnuspicious times,
 When Ladies early wander might and late,
 And yet be faultlesse deemd, and free of crimes,
 Where now each small suspect turnes loue to hate,
 Yea eu'n for all their watching and safe keeping,
 They doubt their wiues do wake while they are slee-

54

Among the conference this couple had,
 The Ladie did vnto her spoule vnfold,
 How his good friend *Orlando* was false mad,
 How she her selfe his madnes did behold,
 His running naked, carelesse and vnclad,
 Not credible had any else it told,
 But credible it was now she had fed it,
 For in far greater things he gaue her credit.

55

She further did to *Brandimart* recount,
 How she had teene the bridge the Pagan made,
 (I meane the cruell Pagan *Rodomont*)
 Vpon the streame so deepe as none could wade,
 Where he the passengers of best account,
 Did from each side with furie great inuade,
 And with the spoiles of those he kild and tooke,
 Did beautifie a tombe made by the brooke.

56

And last she told how with his strength extreame,
Orlando heau'd the Turke armd from the ground,
 And so with him fell backward in the streame,
 With perill great there to haue both bene drownd,
 From whence *Orlando* went about the Reame,
 Where his mad parts wold make him soon be found.
 This tale in *Brandimart* did breed such sorrow,
 He staid not for the next ensuing morrow.

57

But taking for his guide faire *Fiordeliege*,
 And being readie armd, as then he was,
 He go'th to seeke that foresaid parlous bridge,
 In mind (what euer hap) the same to passe,
 Where many men their liues line did abridge,
 As in such dangers soone it comes to passe:
 No sooner came he to the vtmost ward,
 But *Rodomont* had notice by his guard.

58

He greatly did to heare such newes reioyce,
 And straight he cometh forth with warlike gesture,
 And bids him with a loud and scornfull voyce,
 Vnto the tombe to yeeld his armes and vesture,
 Or threatens him if he refuse this choyce,
 To make him drinke beyond all good disgesture:
 But *Brandimart* his threats did nothing feare,
 And makes no answer, but with couched speare.

59

Then straight to horses side he sets the spurs,
 The horse he rode vpon *Batoldo* hight,
 The horse though good, yet snores, and starts & sturs,
 Much scar'd with narrow bridge and waters sight:
 Eke *Rodomont* his good *Frontino* spurs,
 Who neuer starts, as vsed to this sight,
 Although the bridge did shake all vnder feet,
 When in the middle way these kinghts did meet.

60

Their speares that were of firme well seafond wood,
 With so great force vpon their armour strake,
 That though their horses were both strong & good,
 Yet both fell from the bridge into the lake,
 Quite ouerwhelmd with water and with mood,
 Yet neither horseman did his horse forsake;
 Long taried they within the streame below,
 To search if any Nymph dwelt there, I trow.

61

This had not bin the first time nor the fift, (downe,
 That from this bridge the Turke had bene throwne
 Wherefore his horse and he could better shift,
 For neither horse nor he did doubt to drowne;
 For where the streame was most profound and swift
 He often had bene plung'd about his crowne,
 Which made his horse and him the more audacious
 Amid the streame, although profound and spacious.

62

He knew by prooffe (for he had tride it oft)
 Where all the shelues, and where the channell lay,
 Which parts were grauelly, and which were soft:
 The tother ignorant, was borne away,
 Toft here and there, now low, and then aloft,
 The while the Pagan greedie of his pray,
 At all aduantages doth still assaile him,
 Whose horses footing more and more did faile him.

63

At last with plunging and with striuing tired,
 He backward fell into the weeds and mud,
 Where he was like to haue bin drownd and mired,
 Saue that his spoule that by the riuer stood,
 In humble wise the Pagan Prince desired,
 And in most earnest manner that she cou'd,
 Eu'n for her sake, whose ghost he did adore,
 To helpe her worthy knight vnto the shore.

Al

64

Ah gentle sir, if euer you did tast,
Of loue (she said) or of a louers passion,
Saue that same knight, on whom my loue is plapt,
And let him not be drownd in so vile fashion:
Suffice it you, your tombe will be more graft,
With one such prisoner of such reputation,
Then hunderds other, that shall here arrive;
Then take his spoiles, and saue himselfe aliue.

65

These words that might haue mou'd a stone I thinke,
Mou'd him to rescue noble *Brandimart*,
Who without thirst had tane such store of drinke,
As from his limbs, his life did welny part:
But ere he brought him to the riuers brink,
He cauld him with his sword and armes depart,
And made him sweare now he was in his powre,
To yeeld himselfe true prisoner to his towre.

66

The dame of comfort all was quite bereaued,
When as she saw how ill her spouse had sped,
And yet lesse grieve of this chance she conceaued,
Then if he had beene in the water dead:
She calls herselfe the cause that he receaued
This harme, that fondly had him thither led,
Into a place of danger such and ieopardie,
As needs must hazard either life or libertie.

67

About the place in vaine she long did houer,
Then parted she in mind to seeke some knight,
Of *Charles* his campe, that might her losse recouer,
And proue himself, though not more strong in fight
At least more fortunate then was her loue:
Long did she trauell all that day and night,
And eake the day ensuing, ere she met one,
Yet was it her good hap at last to get one.

68

Renaldo
as appears
in 35. booke.
of France.

A champion in a rich attyre she met,
All wrought with witherd leaues of Cypresse tree,
Hereafter I will tell you, but not yet,
What wight this was, whether a he or she:
Now turne I to the campe, least I forget
The noble knights that set their loueraigne free;
I meane *Renaldo* and his new come brother,
With cunning *Malagigi* and many other.

69

Vnp possible it was account to keepe,
Of those were kild that night, and those that fled,
Fierce *Agramant* was wakned from his sleepe,
And with all speed that might be, vp he sped,
He weighes the perill and the danger deepe,
His souldiers runne away near making hed:
Marfillo, with *Sobrino* and the rest,
With him to flie, for feare he be distrest.

70

Advising him, with fortune now gan frowne,
Vnto this tempest wisely to giue place,
And go to Arly, or some other towne,
So strong to dure assault no little space:
So might he saue his person and his crowne,
As first was to be car'd for in such case;
And then with wisdom warily proceeding,
To waite till time might serue of better speeding.

71

Thus *Agramant*, to so great danger brought,
Well knew not what to do, nor what to say,
But did as by his counsell he was taught,
And in great hast conueyd himselfe away:
The while much woe vnto his men was wrought,
The Christens them discomfite, kill and slay:
The darknesse cauld the number be vknowne,
That in this fight were kild and ouerthrowne.

72

With hast full many were in water drownd,
That saw there was no safetie in the land,
More succour in their heeles then hands they found
Against such fierce assaylants few durst stand:
But greatest damage did to them redound,
By those six hunderd of *Renaldos* band:
Who did distribute strokes in so great plentie,
As eu'rie one of them massacred twentie.

73

Some thinke that *Malagigi* plaid his part,
In this conflict not wounding men nor slaying,
But making of their foes by Magike art,
To heare to huge a noyse of hortes naying,
Such sound of Drums, such shouts from eu'ry part,
As all the world had vowed their decaying:
By which they all were stricken in such feare,
As not a man of them durst tarrie theare.

74

Yet though the Turkish Prince fled thence so fast,
The braue *Rogero*, he would not forget,
But caused him from danger to be plapt,
And on an easie paced horse him set:
Thus now the Turks were by the Christens chapt,
And glad they were a walled towne to get:
But yet *Gradasso* and his valiant band,
Did still vnto their tackle stoutly stand.

75

Nay, which was more, when as he vnderstood,
How that *Renaldo* Palladine of France,
Was he that shed such store of Turkish blood,
He was so glad he ready was to dances:
He thanks his Gods that were to him so good,
To tend him this so much desired chance,
By which he hopes and makes account most clearly,
To win that horte *Renaldo* held so dearly.

76

For why, *Gradasso* king of Serycane,
Long since to France came with an army Ryal,
With onely hope to conquer *Durindan*,
That famous blade of so good prooffe and triall:
And eake *Renaldos* courser to haue tane,
That *Bayard* hight: and now when by espiall,
He knew *Renaldo* was on that beast mounted,
The conquest sure, the horte his owne he counted.

77

So much the rather, for that once before,
About this matter they had made a fray,
Fast by the sea vpon the sandie shore:
(To tell the circumstance I may not stay)
But *Malagigi* thence his cosin bore,
And did into a barge him safe conuay:
And thereupon *Renaldo* euer since,
Wastane but for a coward by this Prince.

78

Wherefore in hope so rich a spoile to reape,
Two howres before the rising of the sonne,
All armed on Alfana he doth leape,
And with his lance to death are diuers done;
On French the Moores, on Moores he French doth
And all he meeteth he doth ouerrunne: (heape,
So did ambition set his heart on fire,
To meet *Renaldo*, such was his desire.

79

Soone after this each met with speare in rest,
(But neither then at first the tother knew)
Each brake his speare vpon the tothers crest,
Vnto the heau'nly car the splinters flew:
Then with their swords either was readie prest,
(Their lances thrown away, their swords they drew).
Each laying on the other so fell strokes,
As if not knights had fought, but clownes feld okes.

80

Gradasso though he knew him not by sight,
(For yet the morning beames were not displaid)
Yet did he guesse both by the horses might,
And those fierce strokes the tother on him laid;
Wherefore with words that sauord scorne and spight,
He straight begins *Renaldo* to vpbraide:
And said he had his challenge disappointed,
And not appeared at the day appointed.

81

Belike you thought I should haue met you neuer,
But now (said he) you here are met right well,
Assure your selfe I will pursue you euer,
Were you tane vp to heau'n, or downe to hell;
No height nor depth, should hinder mine endeuer,
I meane to finde you out where eare you dwell,
To shunne the fight with me it doth not boote,
Vntill you leaue your horse and go on foote.

82

At this his speech, were diuers standing by,
As *Guidon*, *Richardet*, and others more,
Who would haue slaine *Gradasso* by and by,
Had not *Renaldo* stepped them before,
And said in wrath, what masters am not I,
Well able wreake my priuate wrongs therefore?
Then to the Pagan gently thus he spake,
And wisht him marke the answer he did make,

83

Who euer saith, that I did fight eschew,
Or shew defect of vallew any way,
I say and do auouch he saith vntue,
And I will proue by combat what I say;
I came vnto the place to meete with you,
No feules I did seeke, nor no delay,
And frankly here to you I offer fight,
But first I wish you were informed right.

Morall.

In this xxxi. Canto I finde little worth any speciall noting, but that which in the beginning of the booke is said against
iealousie, which is one of the three incurable diseases noted in our old English Proverbe: From Heresie, Phrenesie, and
Iealousie, good Lord deliuer me. The rest of the booke hath no new matter, but such as hath bin noted before: and ther-
fore I will end this little space with this short note.

Here end the Notes of the xxxj.

84

Then tooke he him aside, and more at large,
He told what hapned him and how by art,
His cofin *Malagige* into a barge
Conuayed him, and forst him to depart:
In fine himselfe, of blame quite to discharge,
He brought him out to witnes eu'rie part,
And then to proue that this was true indeed,
He offerd in the combat to proceed.

85

Gradasso that both curteous was, and stout,
Gave care vnto the tale *Renaldo* told,
And though it seemd he stood thereof in doubt,
Yet him in all his speech he not controlld:
But in conclusion, hauing heard it out,
He doth his former purpose firmly hold:
Which was by combat fierce to try and know,
If so he could *Bayardo* win or no.

86

The Palladine that passed not a point
Of no mans force, to meet him gave his word:
The place in which to meet they did appoint,
Was neare a wood, and by a pleasant foord,
There only added was a further point:
Which was that *Duridan*, *Orlando*'s sword,
Should to *Renaldo* as of right accrew,
If he the Pagan ouercame or flew.

87

Thus for the present time departed they,
Vntill the time approcht of pointed fight,
Although *Renaldo* frendly did him pray,
To rest him in his tent that day and night:
And offerd franke safe conduit for his stay,
So curteous was this same couragious knight:
Gradasso greatly praisd the noble offer,
But yet refused the courtisie he did profer.

88

The feare was great that secretly did lurke,
In all the minds of all *Renaldos* kin,
Who knew the strength and cunning of this Turke
Was such, as doubt it was which side should win:
Faine *Malagigi* by his art would worke,
To end this fray, before it should begin:
Sawe that he feard *Renaldos* vtter enmity,
In so base sort for working his indemnity.

89

But though his friends did feare more then was meet,
Himselfe assurde himselfe of good successe:
Now at the pointed time and place they meet,
Both at one verie instant, as I guesse,
And first they kindly do embrace and greet
The tone the tother with all gentlenesse,
But how sweet words did turne to bitter blowes,
The next booke sauing one, the sequell shoves.



THE ARGUMENT.

Good Bradamant Rogero long expecteth,
 But heareth newes that touch her verie nie,
 How he all other loues beside neglecteth,
 To wed Marfisa, thus the fame doth flie:
 To Arly Bradamant her course directeth,
 To kill Marfisa, or her selfe to die:
 Three kings and Ullany, she doth subdew,
 Those with her speare, and this with passing hew.

The first fiftie
 flauces of this 32.
 booke are of ano-
 ther translator as
 you shall see wo-
 rded in some part
 of the notes vpon
 this booke.



¹ Now remember how by
 promise bound,
 Before this time, I should
 haue made you know,
 Vpon what cause faire
 Bradamant did ground,
 The iealousie humors ouer
 charg'd her so:
 She neuer took before so
 fore a wound,

She neuer felt before such bitter wo,
 No not the tale which Richardetto told her,
 In such a fit, and so great pangs did hold her.

² To tell you first, when I should haue begonne,
 Renaldo call'd my tale another way;
 No sooner with Renaldo had I done,
 But straight with Guidon I was forst to stay:
 From this to that, thus vnawares I ronne,
 That I forgot of Bradamant to say:
 But now I meane to speake of her before
 I speake of those two champions any more.

³ Yet needs I borrow must a word or twaine,
 How Agramant to Arly d detyre,
 And gatherd there the few that did remaine,
 Escaped from the furie of the fire:
 Where not farre off, from Affrica nor Spaine,
 He plants as fit as he could we I desire,
 For lying on a flood so neare the seas,
 Both men and vitell were supplyde at ease.

⁴ To muster men Marfilio had commission,
 That may supply the place of them were lost,

Of ships of warre there was no small prouision,
 Soone had he gatherd vp a mightie host:
 There was no want of armour and munition,
 Ther was no spare of labour nor of cost,
 That with such taxes, Affrica was fessed,
 That all the Cities were full sore oppressed.

⁵ And further Agramant, that he might win
 Fierce Rodomont, to aid him with his power,
 Did offer him a match of his neare kin,
 King Almonts daughter with a Realme in dower,
 But he his proper weys not worth a pin,
 But keepe the bridge and doth the passage scower,
 That with his spoiles the place was welny filled,
 Of those he had dismounted, tane, and killed.

⁶ But faire Marfisa tooke another way:
 For when she heard how long the siege had lasted,
 How Agramant his campe at Arly lay,
 How both his men were slaine, and store was wasted,
 She sought no cause of any more delay,
 But thither straight without inuiting hasted,
 Her purse and person offering in the fight,
 In iust defending of his crowne and right.

⁷ She brings Brunello, and the king she gaue him,
 Who had giu'n cause of very iust offence,
 Ten dayes and ten, she did of courtisie saue him,
 To see who durst to stand in his defence;
 But when y no man made the meanes to haue him,
 Though she to kill him had so good pretence,
 She thought it base, her noble hands to file,
 Vpon an abiect dastard, and a vile.

She

Looke heren in
 the Moral.

8

She will deferre reuenge of all his wrong;
And vnto Arly brought him to the king;
Whose ioy to tell, would aske a learned tongue,
Both for the aid, and present she did bring:
(For shew whereof, before it should be long,
He offerd her to make *Brunello* wring:
And at what time she pleased to appoint,
To haue him sent to crack his chiefeft ioynt.)

9

Vnto some desert place he banisht was,
To serue for meat for carrion crows and pyes,
Rogero that had helpt him oft (alas)
Now cannot heare his pittious moanes and cries:
He lyes sore wounded, as it comes to passe,
And litle knowes where poore *Brunello* lyes:
And when he vnderstands thereof at last,
It is so late already it is past.

10

This while what torments *Bradamant* indured,
Those twentie days, how did she waile and mourne:
Against which time she thought her selfe assured;
Her loue to her, and to the faith should turne:
She makes no doubt but he might haue procured,
Within that space to make his home returne,
(Yea though he were in prison kept or banished)
If troth and care of promise were not vanished.

11

In this long looking she would often blame,
The fierie courtiers of the heavenly light,
She thought y^e *Phæbus* wheelles were out of frame,
Or that his charriot was not in good plight:
Great *Iosuahs* day seemd shorter then these same,
And shorter seemd y^e false *Amphitrions* night: (bled
Each day and night she thought was more then dou-
So fancie blind, her sence and reason troubled.

12

She now enuyes the Dormouse of his rest,
And wisht some heauy sleepe might ouertake her,
Wherewith she might most deadly be possest,
Till her *Rogero* should returne to wake her:
But waking cares ay lodged in her brest,
That her desired sleepe did quite forsake her:
To sleepe so long doth so much passe her power,
She cannot frame her eyes to wincke one hower.

13

But turnes and tosses in her restless bed,
(Alas no turning turnes her cares away)
Oft at the window she puts forth her bed,
To see how neare it waxeth vnto day:
When by the dawning, darke some night is fled,
She notwithstanding stands at that same stay:
And during all the time the day doth last,
She wishes for the night againe as fast.

14

When fiftene dayes were of the twentie spent,
She growes in hope that his approach is ny,
Then from a towre with eyes to Paris bent,
She waytes and watches if she can descry
At least some messenger that he hath sent,
May bring the news where her sweet heart doth ly:
And satisfie her mind by what hard chance,
He is constrained to stay so long in France.

15

If farre aloofe the shine of armour bright,
Or any thing resembling it she spies,
She straightway hopes it is her onely knight,
And wipes her face and clears her blubbred eyes:
If any one vnarm'd do come in sight,
It may be one from him, she doth surmise:
And though by prooffe she finde each hope vntrue,
She cealeth not for that, to hope anew.

16

Sometime all arm'd she mounteth on her steed,
And so rides forth in hope to meet her deare,
But soone some fancie her conceit doth feed,
That he is past some other way more neare:
Then homeward hasteth she with as much speed,
Yet she at home no newes of him can heare:
From day to day she passeth on this fashion,
Higher and thither tossed with her passion.

17

Now when her twentie dayes were full expired,
And that beside were passed some dayes more,
Yet not *Rogero* come, whom she desired,
Her heart with care and sorrowes waxed sore:
With cries & plaints, the woods and caues she tyred,
Her breasts she beat, her golden locks she tore,
Not while these gripes of griefe her heart embrace,
Doth she forbear her eyes or Angels face.

18

Why then (quoth she) becommes it me it vaine,
To seeke him still, who thus from me doth slide?
Shall I esteeme of him that doth disdain
My sute, and scorne the torments I abide?
Him, in whose heart a hate of me doth raine,
Him, that accounts his vertues so well tride,
As though some goddesse should fro heau'n descēd
Before that he his heart to loue would bend?

19

Though stout he is, he knows how well I loue him,
And how I honor him with soule and hart,
Yet can my hot affection nothing moue him,
To let me of his loue possesse some part:
And lest he might perceiue it would behoue him,
To ease my griefe, if he did know my smart,
To giue me hearing of my plaint he feares,
As to the charme the Adder stoppes his cares.

20

Loue; stop his course that doth so loosely range,
And sit so fast before my sorrie pace:
Or with my former state else let me change,
When I sought not to tracke thy tedious trace:
I hope in vaine; remorse to thee is strange,
Thou dost triumph vpon my pittious case:
For hearts thy meat, thy drinke is louers teares,
Their cries the Musicke doth delight thine cares.

21

But whom blame I? it was my fond desire,
That first entist me to this killing call,
And made me past my reach so far aspire,
That now I feele the greater is my fall:
For when aloft my wings be toucht with fire,
Then farewell flight and I am left to fall:
But still they spring, and still I vpward tend,
And still I see my fall, and finde no end.

Z

Sentence against
loue.

22

Desire quoth I: my selfe I was too light,
To giue desire an entrance in my brest,
Who when he had my reason put to flight,
And of my heart himselfe was full posselt,
No roome for ioy is left, or hearts delight,
Since I do harbour this vnruely guest,
Who though he guide me to my certaine fall,
The long expectance grieues me worst of all.

23

Then mine the fault be, if it be a fault,
To loue a knight deserues to be beloued,
With all good inward parts so richly fraught,
Whose vertues be so knowne, and well approued;
And more, whom would not his sweet face haue
My self, I must confes, his beautie moued: (caught)
What blind vnhappy wretch were she would shun,
The pleasing prospect of the precious Sun?

24

Beside my destinie which drew me on,
By others sugred speech I was entrained,
As though I should by this great match anon,
Another Paradice on earth haue gained:
But now their words into the wind be gon,
And I in Purgatorie am restrained:
Well may I *Merlin* curse the false deceiuer,
Yet my *Rogero* I shall loue for euer.

25

I hop't of *Merlins* and *Meliffas* promises,
Who did such stories of our race foretell:
Is this the profit of beleeuing prophesies,
And giuing credit to the sprites of hell?
Alas they might haue found them better offices,
Then me to flout that trusted them so well:
But all for enuie haue they wrought me this,
So to bereaue me of my former blis.

26

Thus sighs and lamentations are not fained,
Small place was left for comfort in her brest:
Yet spite of sorrows hope was entertained,
And though with much a do, yet in it prest:
To ease her mourning heart when she complained,
And giuing her sometimes, some little rest,
By sweet remembrance of the words he spake,
When he was forst of her his leaue to take.

27

The minding of those words did so recure,
Her wounded heart that she was well content,
For one months space his absence to endure,
Yea when his dayes of promise quite were spent:
Yet still she lookt for him you may be sure,
And many a time that way she came and went,
Till by the way at last such news she hard,
That all the hope she had before, was mard.

28

For she by chance did meet a Gascoigne knight,
That in the warres of *Africa* was caught,
One that was taken captiue in that fight,
Then when fore *Paris* the great field was fought.
What she requires to know, he could recite,
But carelesse of the other news he brought,
Of her *Rogero* chiefly she enquires,
To heare of him is all that she desires.

29

Of whom the knight could let her vnderstand,
(For in that Court he late his life had led)
How *Mandricard* and he fought hand to hand,
And how much blood on either part was shed:
And though by wounds himselfe in perrill stand,
That he subdewd his foe, and left him ded.
Now if with this, his storie he had ended,
Rogeros scuse had verie well bin mended.

30

But he proceeds to tell, how one was there,
A Ladie hight *Marfisa* in the feeld,
Whose fame for martiall acts did shine most cleare,
Whose beautie rare to few or none did yeeld.
Rogero her, she held *Rogero* deare,
They neuer were asunder or but seeld;
And that they two, as eu'rie one there saith,
The tone the tother plighted haue their faith.

31

And if *Rogero* once were whole and sound,
Their wedding should be celebrate with speed;
That such a paire as yet was neuer found,
And happie they should come of such a seed:
How much it ioy'd the Pagan Princes round,
To thinke vpon the race they two should breed,
Which likely were all others to excell
In feats of arms that erst on earth did dwell.

32

The Gascoigne knight of all that he had sed,
Himselfe had reason to beleue was sooth,
So generall a fame thereof was spred,
There were but few but had it in their mouth.
Some little kindnesse she did vse, had sed
Their foolish humors of this false vntrowth;
Still fame will grow if once abrode it flie,
Although the ground be troth or be a lye.

33

They came indeed together to this fight,
And many times together they were scene,
For he was warlike, stout and worthy knight,
And she a gallant, faire, and daintie Queene,
By which, suspition neuer iudging right,
Did gather straight they had assured beene:
And specially because when she departed,
To visite him she was so soone reuerted.

34

Of iust suspect their reason was put slender,
If they had weighed well their vertues rare,
Though of his wounds she seemd to be so tender,
And of his danger had so great a care,
Against bad tongues no goodnes can defend her,
For those most free from faults, they least wil spare,
But prate of them whom they haue scantly knowne,
And iudge their humors to be like their owne.

35

Now when the knight auowd the tale he told,
(And yet in truth you know 't was but a tale)
The damfels heart was toucht with shiuering cold,
The little hope she had away it stole,
Almost in sound her seate she scarce could hold:
With mourning cheare, and face both wan and pale,
She said no more: but mad with grieve and ire,
Her horse she turnd, and homeward did retire.

All

36
And all in armour on her bed she lyes,
She wisht a thousand times she now were ded,
She bites the sheets to dampe her sobs and cries,
The Gascoigns news still bearing in her hed;
Her heart is swolne, and blubberd be her eyes,
With trickling teares bedewed is her bed,
When griefe would be no longer holden in,
Needs out it must, and thus it doth begin.

37
Ah wretched me, whom might a maiden finde,
In whom she might be bold to put her trust?
Since you *Rogero* mine, become unkinde,
And tread your faith and promise in the dust;
You only you, mine eye so farre did blinde,
I still esteemd you faithfull, true and iust:
Ah neuer wench that loued so sincerely,
Was in requitall punisht so seuerely.

38
Why (my *Rogero*) why do you forget?
(Sith you in beautie passe each other knight,
And do in feats of armes such honor get,
As none can match your chiuallrie in fight)
This golden vertue with the rest to set,
By which your glorious name wil shine more bright
If as in other graces you abound,
So in your promise constancie were found?

39
This is the vertue breeds most estimation,
By which all other vertues shew more cleare,
As things most faire do loose their commendation,
Which by the want of light can not appeare:
What glorie was it by false protestation,
Her to deceiue whose Saint and God you were?
Whom your fair speeches might haue made belecue
That water would be carride in a secue.

40
From any haynous act wouldst thou refraine,
That murderst her who beares thee so good will?
How wouldst thou vse thy foe, that thus in paine,
Dost let thy frend to be tormented still?
Thou that with breach of faith thy heart dost staine,
No doubt thou dost not care for doing ill;
Well this I know, that God is euer iust,
He will er long reuenge my wrongs I trust.

41
For why, vnthankfulnesse is that great sin,
Which made the Diuell and his angels fall,
Lost him and them the ioyes that they were in,
And now in hell detaines them bound and thrall:
Then marke the guerdon thou art like to win;
For why like faults, like punishment do call,
In being thus vnthankfull vnto me,
That alwayes was so faithfull vnto thee.

42
Besides of theft thy selfe thou canst not quit,
If theft it be to take that is not thine;
The keeping of my heart no that's not it,
That thou shouldst haue it I do not repine,
Thy selfe thou stalst, which I can not remit,
Thy selfe thou knowst thou art, or shouldst be mine,
Thou knowst damnation doth to them belong,
That do keepe backe anothers right by wrong.

43
Though thou *Rogero* do forsake me so,
I can not will nor chuse but loue thee still;
And since there is no measure of my wo,
Death is the only way to end mine ill;
But thus to cut of life, and thou my fo
It makes me do it with a worser will;
Yet had I dyde when best I did thee please,
I should haue counted death, no death but ease.

44
When with these words she was resolu'd to dy,
She tooke her sword in hand for that intent,
And forst her selfe vpon the point to ly;
Her armour then her purpose did preuent,
A better spirit checkt her by and by:
And in her heart this secret reason went,
O noble Ladie borne to so great fame,
Wilt thou thus end thy dayes with so great shame?

45
Nay rather if thou beest resolu'd to dy,
Vnto the campe why dost thou not repaire,
Where bodies of braue knights in heaps do ly?
Lo there to honor the directest staire,
The losse of life with glorie thou mayst buy,
To die in thy *Rogeros* sight were faire,
And happily by him thou mayst be slaine,
So he that wrought thy wo, may rid thy paine.

46
Thou mayst be sure *Marfisa* there to see,
Who hath so falsly stolne away thy frend;
If first on her thou couldst reuenged be,
With more contented mind thy dayes would end.
Vnto this counsell she doth best agree,
And onward on this iourney straight doth tend;
She takes anew deuice that might implice,
A desperation, and a will to die.

47
The collour of her bales was almost,
Like to the falling whitish leaues and drie,
Which when the moisture of the branch is lost,
Forsakenly about the tree doth lye.
With Cipresse trunks embroderd and embost,
(For Cipresse once but cut will alwayes die)
A fine conceipt, she thinks to represent,
In secret sort her inward discontent.

48
She tooke *Astolfo* horse and Goldelance,
As fittest both for this her present fear,
That speare could make the brauest knight to dance,
And caper with a touch beside his seate.
But where *Astolfo* had it, by what chance,
Or why he gaue it, need I not repeate,
She tooke it, notwithstanding her election,
Not knowing of that magicall confection.

49
Thus all alone without both Squire and page,
Thus furnished she set her selfe in way,
To Paris ward she traueled in a rage.
Whereas the campe of Sarzins lately lay,
And (as she thought) kept vp king *Charles* in cage,
Not vnderstanding how before that day,
Reinaldo aiding *Charles* with *Malageeze*,
Had forced them from thence to raise their sege.

*Flavia.
Looke in the al-
lusion, of this
shield of gold.*

50

Now had she left mount Dordon at her backe,
When little way behind her she descride,
A gallant Damsell following of her tracke,
A shield of gold vnto her saddle tide;
Of Squires and other seruants none did lacke,
And three braue knights were riding by her side,
But of the Squires that ouertooke her last,
She askt one what those were that by her past.

51

And straight the worthie Ladie it was told,
How from Pole Artike that same damisell came,
Sent from a Queene, with that faire shield of gold,
Vnto king Charles (that there was knowne by fame)
But so, as he must this condition hold,
That on a knight he must bestow the same,
Such one as he in his imagination,
For prowesse deemed most worthy reputation.

52

For she of Island Ile that holds the raigne,
And is (and knows it) that she is most faire,
Doth thinke she should her worth not little staine,
And her great fame and honour much impaire,
If any knight her Ile and her should gaine,
Except he stood so high on honors staire,
As that he were adiudg'd in feats of warre,
The prymer man, and passing others farre.

53

Wherefore the cause she sends to France is this,
She thinks it she shall finde one any where,
That in the Court of France he surely is:
And therefore she doth send to greet him there.
As for those three, because you shall not misse,
To know the truth, Ile tell you what they were:
They were 3 kings, of whom great fame there goth,
Of Norway one, one Swethland, one of Goth.

54

These three, though far they dwell from Island Ile,
Yet loue of that same Queene hath brought the hi-
This Ile is calld Perduta otherwhile, (ther,
Because the seamen leese it in foule weather:
These kings liu'd from their country in exile,
And to this Queene were suters all together:
And she that knew not well how to forbid them,
With this same pretie shift from thence she rid them.

55

She saith, she minds to wed for her behoofe,
That wight that most excels in warlike action,
And though (quoth she) you shew no little prooffe,
Of valew here (as twere in priuat faction)
Yet I must haue you tride more far aloofe,
Before my mind can haue full satisfaction:
Wherefore I meane my selfe and crowne to yeeld,
Alone to him that bringeth backe my sheeld.

56

This is the cause that these three kings did moue,
Each one to come from so remote a nation,
With purpose firme their vtmost force to proue,
To win the golden shield with reputation,
Or leese their liues, for that faire Ladies loue,
It that they failed of their expectation,
When he had told her thus, he her forooke,
And loone his company he ouertooke.

57

The Damsell rode a softer pace behind,
And to as in a while she lost their sight,
And often she reuolued in her mind,
The tale the fellow told, with small delight.
She doubts this shield bestowd in such a kind,
Will be in France a cause of brall and fight,
That this wilbe a meanes she greatly feares,
To let her kin together all by th'cares.

58

This fancie mou'd her much, but more then this,
That former ielouse fancie did her moue,
That her Rogers kindnesse altered is,
That on *Marfisa* he had plait his loue:
This so posselt her sence that she did misse
Her way, nor neuer thought as did behoue,
Till night was almost come, and Sunne nigh set,
Where she a lodging for her selfe may get.

59

Eu'n as an emptie vessell that was tide,
Vnto the wharfe, with some old rotten cable,
If that the knot do hap to breake or slide,
So that to hold it be no longer able,
Is borne away, as please the wind and tide:
So *Bradamant*, with mind and thoughts unstable,
Was in such muse, as she the right way mist,
And so was borne, where *Rabicano* list.

60

But when she saw the Sunne was almost set,
She tooke more heede, and asking of a clowne,
(A shepherd that by hap there by she met)
Where she might lodging get er Sunne went downe
The shepherd made her answer, that as yet
She was almost a league from any towne,
Or other place where she might eate or lodge,
Saeue at a Castle cald sir *Tristrans* lodge.

61

But eu'rie one that list, is not assured,
Though he do thither come, to stay therein,
To martiall feats they must be well inured,
With speare and shield they must their lodging win:
Such custome in the place hath long indured,
And manie years ago it did begin,
Wherefore tis good that one be well aduised,
Ere such an act by him be enterprised.

62

In brieft thus is their order, if a knight
Do finde the lodgings void, they him receaue,
With promise, that if more ariue that night,
Either he shall to them his lodging leaue,
Or elle with each of them shall proue in fight,
Which of them can of lodging tother reauce:
If none do come that night he shall in quiet,
Haue both his horsemeat, lodging, and his diet.

63

If foure or fise do come together first,
The Castle keeper them must entertaine,
Who cometh single after, hath the worst,
For if he hope a lodging there to gaine:
He must (according to that law accurst)
Fight with all those, that did therein remaine:
Likewise if one come first, and more come later,
He must go fight with them yet neare the later.

The

*Smile.**The order of
Tristrans lodge.*

64

The like case is, if any maid or dame
Do come alone, or else accompanied,
Both they that first, and they that latest came,
Must by a lurie haue their beauties tried:
Then shall the fairest of them hold the same,
But to the rest that come shall be denied:
Thus much the shepherd vnto her did say,
And with his finger shewd to her the way.

65

About three miles was distant then the place,
The damsell thither hasts with great desire;
And though that Rabicano trot apace,
Yet was the way so deepe and full of mire,
The snow and drift still beating in their face,
She later came then manners good require;
But though it were as then both darke and late,
She boldly bounced at the castle gate.

66

The porter told her that the lodgings all
Were filld by knights that late before them tooke,
Who now stood by the fire amid the hall,
And did ere long to haue their supper looke:
Well (answers she) then haue they cause but small
(If they be supperlesse) to thanke the cooke;
I know (quoth she) the custome, and will keepe it,
And meane to win their lodging ere I sleepe yet.

67

The Porter went and did her message bold,
To those great states then standing by the fire,
Who tooke small pleasure when they heard it told,
For thence to part they had so small desire;
Now chiefly when twas rainie, darke and cold;
But so their oth and order did require,
That they must do it, were it cold or warme,
And therefore quickly they themselues did arme.

68

These were those three great kings, whom that same day
Dame Bradamant had scene but few houres past,
Though they had sooner finished their way,
Because she rode so soft, and they so fast.
Now when they were all armd, they make no stay,
But all on horsebacke mount themselues at last:
No doubt but few in strength these three did passe,
Yet of those few, sure one this damsell was.

69

Who purposed (as it seemeth) nothing lesse,
Then in so wet and in so cold a night,
To lack a lodging and sleepe supperlesse:
Now those within at windowes see the fight,
The men themselues on horsebacke do addresse,
To looke thereon, for why the Moone gaue light:
And thus at last, though first twere somewhat late,
They did abase the bridge and ope the gate.

70

Eu'n as a secret and lasciuious loue,
Reioyceth much, when after long delays,
And many feares, in which his hope did houer,
He heares at last the noise of pretie kayes:
So Bradamant that hopes now to recouer
A lodging, for the which so long she staves,
Did in her mind in such like sort reioyce,
When as she heard the watchfull porters voyce.

71

Now when those Knights and some few of their traine,
Were past the bridge, the dame her horse doth turne
To take the field, and then with speed againe,
With full careere she doth on them returne,
And coucht that speare, yet neuer coucht in vaine,
For whom it hits it still doth ouerturne;
This speare her cosin, when he went from France,
Gaue vnto her, the name was Goldelance.

72

The valiant king of Swethland was the first
That met her, and the next the king of Goth,
The staffe doth hit them full, and neuer burst,
But from their saddles it did heave them both;
But yet the king of Norway sped the worst,
It seemd to leaue his saddle he was loth,
His girles brake, and he fell vpside downe,
In danger with the mire to choke and drowne.

73

Thus with three blows, three Kings she down did beare,
And hoist their heels full hie, their heads full low,
Then enterd she the castle voyd of feare,
They stand without that night in raine and snow;
Yet ere she could get in, one causd her sweare
To keepe the custome, which they made her know;
And then the master doth to her great honor,
And entertainment great bestowed on her.

74

Now when the Ladie did disarme her head,
Off with her helmet came her little caul,
And all her haire her shoulders ouerspred,
And both her sex and name was knowne withall,
And wonder great and admiration bred
In them that saw her make three Princes fall:
For why she shewd to be in all their fight,
As faire in face as she was fierce in fight.

75

Eu'n as a stage set forth with pompe and pride,
Where rich men cost, and cunning art bestow,
When curtaines be remou'd that all did hide,
Doth make by light of torch a glittering show;
Or as the Sunne that in a cloud did bide,
When that is gone, doth clearer seeme to grow:
So Bradamant when as her head was barest,
Her colour and her beautie seemed rarest.

Simile.

Simile.

76

Now stood the guests all round about the fire,
Expecting food, with talke their eares yet feeding;
While eu'ry one doth wonder and admire,
Her speech and grace, the others all exceeding;
The while her host to tell she doth desire,
From whence and who this custom was proceeding,
That men were driu'n vnto their great disquiet,
To combat for their lodging and their diet.

77

Faire dame (said he) sometime there rul'd in France
King Feramont, whose sonne a comely knight,
Clodian by name, by good or euill chance,
Vpon a louely Ladie did alight:
But as we see it oftentimes doth chance,
That ielousie in loue marres mans delight;
Thus he of her in time so ielous grew,
He durst not let her go out of his vew.

Z. iiij

78

Smile.
Nor euer *Argus* kept the milkwhite eow
More straight, then *Clodian* here did keepe his wife,
Ten Knights eke to this place he doth allow,
Thereby for to preuent all casuall strife;
Thus hope and feare betweene, I know not how,
As he prolongs his selfe tormenting life,
The good sir *Tristram* thither did repaire,
And in his companie a Ladie faire.

79

Smile.
Whom he had rescude but a little since
From Giants hand, with whom he did her find,
Sir *Tristram* sought for lodging with the Prince,
For then the Sunne was very low declind:
But as a horse with galled backe will wince,
Eu'n so our *Clodian* with as galled mind:
For casting doubts and dreading eu'ry danger,
Would by no meanes be won to lodge a stranger.

80

When as sir *Tristram* long had prayd in vaine,
And still denide the thing he did demaund,
That which I cannot with your will obtaine,
In spite of you (said he) I will commaund:
I here will proue your villanie most plaine,
With launce in rest, and with my sword in hand:
And straight he challenged the combat then,
To fight with *Clodian* and the other ten.

81

Thus onely they agreed vpon the case,
If *Clodian* and his men were ouerthrowne,
That all then presently should voyd the place,
And that sir *Tristram* there should lie alone:
Sir *Clodian* to auoid so great disgrace,
The challenge tooke, for why excuse was none:
In fine, both *Clodian* and his men well knockt,
And from the castle that same night were lockt.

82

Triumphant *Tristram* to the Castle came,
And for that night, as on his owne he leasd,
And there he saw the Princes, louely dame,
And talkt with her, who him not little pleased:
This while sir *Clodian* was in part with shame,
And more with thought and ielous feare diseasd,
Disdaining not in humble sort to woo him,
By message mild to send his wife vnto him.

83

But he, though her he do not much esteeme,
For why, by meanes of an enchanted potion,
If *Isotta* fairest vnto him did seeme,
To whom he vowed had his whole deuotion:
Yet for he did the ielous *Clodian* deeme
Some plague to merit, he denide his motion;
And swears it were no manners nor no reason,
A Ladie to vn lodge at such a season.

84

But if (saith he) it do his mind offend,
To lie all night alone and eke abrode,
Tell him I will this other Ladie send
To him, that shall with him make her abode:
Now tell him that to keepe this I intend,
The which to win, I haue such paine bestowd;
Tis reason that the fairest should remaine
With him that is the strongest of vs twaine.

85

Smile.
Clodian in mind was wondrous malcontent,
Vf'd so not like a Prince but like a patch,
That puffing, blowing vp and downe he went
All night, as one were set to keepe a watch:
But whether he do chafe or else lament,
He found the Knight for him too hard a match.
Next day sir *Tristram* let him haue his wife,
And so for that time finisht was the strife.

86

For openly he on his honour swore,
That he her honour had that night preferued,
Although discourtesies he had before
Had at his hands a great reuenge deserued;
Yet in that *Clodian* had lodg'd out of dore,
He was content that penance should haue serued;
He nathelesse tooke it for no good excuse,
To say that loue was cause of such abuse.

87

Smile.
For loue should gentle make rude hearts and base,
And not in gentle mind breed humors vile:
Now when sir *Tristram* parted from the place,
Sir *Clodian* meant to stay there but a while,
But to a knight that stood much in his grace,
He graunts the keeping of this stately pile:
Keeping one law for him and for his heires,
With eu'ry one that to the place repaires.

88

That namely euer he that was most strong,
Should there be lodg'd, and she that was most faire,
And that the rest should take it for no wrong,
To walke abrode into the open aire:
This is the law which hath endured long,
And no man may the strength thereof impaire:
Now while the man this storie did repeate,
The steward on the boord did set the meate.

89

The boord was couerd in a stately hall,
Whose match was scarce in all the country scene,
With goodly pictures drawne vpon the wall,
All round about, but chiefly on the screene;
These they did looke on, with delight not small,
And would haue quite forgot their meate I weene,
Saue that their noble host did them aduise,
To feed their bellies first, and then their eyes.

90

Now as they downe did at the table sit,
The master of the house began to lowre,
And said they did an error great commit,
To lodge two Ladies come in sundry howre;
Needs one must be put out, where ere it hit,
And go abrode into the cold and showre:
The fairest (sith they came not both together)
Must bide, the foulest must go trie the wether.

91

Two aged men and women more beside
He cald, and bad them quickly take a vew,
Which of the twaine should in the place abide,
And namely which of twaine had fairest hew:
This Iurie do the matter soone decide,
And gaue their verdict, as it was most trew,
That *Bradamant* past her in hew as faire,
As she exceld the men in feates of warre.

Then

Then spake the knight vnto the Island dame,
Whose mind was full of timorous suspicion,
I pray you thinke it not a scorne or shame,
For hence you must, there can be no remission.
Poore Villany (so was the damselfs name)
Doth thinke she now is driu'n to hard condition,
Yet in her conscience true she knew it was,
That *Bradamant* in beautie her did passe.

Eu'n as we see the Sunne obscur'd sometime,
By sudden rising of a mistie cloud,
Engendred by the vapor breeding slime,
And in the middle region then * embowd:
So when the damself plainly saw that time,
Her presence in the place was not allowd,
She was so chang'd in count'nance and in cheare,
That eu'n vnlke her selfe she did appeare.

But much astonysd with the sudden passion,
She readie was to sound in all their sight;
But *Bradamant* that would not for compassion
Permit that she should go abroad that night,
Did say, this triall was of no good fashion,
And that the iudgement hardly could be right,
When men obserue not this same chiefe regard,
As not to iudge before both parts be hard.

I, that on me do take her to defend,
Say thus, that be I faire, or lesse or more,
I came not as a woman, nor intend
As woman now to be adiudg'd therefore;
Who knowes my sex, except I condescend
To shew the same? and one should euermore
Shun to confirme things doubtfull, or deny it,
When chiefly others may be harmed by it.

Yet who can say precisely what I am?
For many men do weare their haire as long,
And you do know that as a man I came,
And all my gestures to a man belong;
Wherefore in giuing me a womans name,
To both of vs perhaps you may do wrong;
Your law points women (if their right be donne)
By women, not by warriors to be wonne.

But yet admit it were as you do guesse,
That I indeed were of the female gender,
Though that it is so, I do not confesse;
Should I to her my lodging then surrender,
If that my beautie of the two were lesse?
No sure, in that the reason were but slender:
The price that vnto vertue longs of dewtie,
Should not be tane away for want of bewtie.

*The first fiftie staues of this booke I may call mine, as the Poet Martiall saith in a little Epigram of his, of a Gentle-
womans periwig, fiftene hundred yeares since, I thinke the verse was this, or such another,*

*Esse suos iurat, quos emit Galla capillos,
Dic fodes, numquid peierat illa mihi?*

To this effect in English:

*The goodly haire that Galla weares,
Is hers, who would haue thought it?
She sweares it is, and true she sweares,
For I know where she bought it.*

And if your law were such, that needs of force,
Vnto the fairest lodging should be giuen,
Yet at this feast I tary would perforce,
And from my lodging I would not be driuen:
Wherefore mine argument I thus enforce,
That this same match betweene vs is not euen,
For striuing here with me, the case is plaine,
She much may lesse, and little she may gaine.

And where the gaine and losse vnequall is,
The match is euill made in common sence;
Wherefore I thinke it were not much amisse,
With this same law for this time to dispence;
And if that any dare mislike of this,
Or seeme to take the matter in offence,
I will with sword be readie to maintaine,
That mine aduice is good, and his is vaine.

Thus noble *Ammons* daughter mou'd with pittie
In her behalfe, who to her great disgrace
Should haue bin sent, where neither towne nor cittie
Was neare almost in three leagues of the place,
Fram'd her defence so stout and eke so wittie,
That to her reason all the rest gaue place;
But chiefe the perill great and hazard waying,
That might haue grown to them by her gainsaying.

As when the Sunne in sommer hath most powre,
And that the ground with heate thereof is riu'd,
For want of raine the drie and parched flowre
Doth fade, and is as twere of life depriued,
But if in season come a fruitfull showre,
It riseth vp, and is againe reuiued:
So when the damself this defence did heare,
She waxed faire againe, of better cheare.

And thus at last they fell vnto their feast
In quiet fort, for none did come that night,
To challenge any of them, or molest,
No traoueller, nor any wandring knight;
All merry were but *Bradamante* least,
Fell iealousie hard her of all delight,
Her stomacke so distemp'ring, and her tast,
She tooke no pleasure of that sweet repast.

When supper ended was, they all arise,
Although perhaps they would haue longer fate,
Saue for desire they had to feed their eyes;
And now the night was spent and waxed late,
The master of the house in seemly wise,
Doth call for torches to set out his state,
And straight with torch light filled was the hall,
But what they saw, hereafter shew I shall.

And so may I as truly sweare these are mine, for they were given me by my brother (Francis Harington) who made them for a prooffe of his reine in this kind; and if his sloth had not bin as blame-worthy, as his skill is praise-worthy, he had eased me of much of the paine that I tooke with the rest: and me thinks when I reade his and mine owne together, the phrase agrees so well, as it were two brothers. Though he (in his modestie) would needs giue his elder brother leaue to take all the paines, and praise (if there were any,) following herein the example of diuers, indeed studious and learned Gentlemen, that haue either disdained to bestow so much paines on another mans worke, or at least would not leese so much time from more graue or more profitable studies; or (which perhaps is the chiefeest reason) because they feele, that though it is but a sport to write now and then a little odde sonet, yet it is some labour to write a long and settled stile: as Tullie saith of writing in prose, *Stilus est optimus dicendi magister, sed laboris magni est, quem plerique fugimus*. Writing is the best schoolmaster for eloquence, but (saith he) it is a painfull thing, and that most of vs cannot away withall. And yet I find (hauing written in both kinds now and then, as my slender capacitie would serue me) that prose is like a faire greene way, wherein a man may trauel a great iorney and not be weary; but verse is a miry lane, in which a mans horse pulls out one leg after another with much ado, and often driues his master to light to helpe him out: but I shall trauell anon so far in this greene way, that I shall be out of my right way, or at least beside my matter; and therefore I now come to the morall.

Morall.

In the Morall of this xxxij. booke, in the person of Agramant we may note, how a Generall must not vpon one foyle or one ill day (as they call it) despaire of his affaires, or abandon his enterprize, but betake him to some strong place of aduantage, till they may make head againe. In which kind, the old Romanes (conquerors of the world) aboue all other things shewed their vnconquered minds; and specially then, when Terentius Varro had receaued that great foile and ouerthrow by Hannibal, as Liuius noteth in the end of the xxij. booke. *Quo in tempore ipso, adeo magno animo ciuitas fuit, ut Consuli ex tanta clade (cuius ipse magna causa fuisset) redeunti, & obuiam itum frequenter ab omnibus ordinibus sit, & gratia acta, quod de republica non desperasset. Cui si Carthaginiensium ductor fuisset, nihil recusandum supplicij foret*. What time (saith Liuius) the citie was of so great courage, that the Consull returning from so mightie an ouerthrow (of which himselfe had bin a great occasion) yet was publikly and solemnly met by all the companies, and had speciall thanks giuen him because he despaired not of the common state: who had he bin captain of the Carthaginians, no punishment had bin too much for him. Further, in Brunello that had sometimes bin Agramants secretary, and yet now was hanged for iustice sake, we may note, that wicked men, though they be sometime aduanced by their Princes to great honors and wealth, yet when their oppressions and thefts shall be plainly bouted out and manifestly proued, law will haue his course, and iustice must be done. And yet we see also in this booke, in Bradamants defence of Villany against the law of sir Tristrams lodge, that for the most part Lawes are but like Spiders webs, taking the small Gnats, or perhaps sometime the fat flesh flies, but Hornets that haue sharpest stings and greater strength, breake through them.

Historie.

Of Iosuas day, which he toucheth in the xi. staffe, the holy Scripture speakes of, how he made the Sunne stand still. But for the false Amphitrios night, though it seeme meere fabulous as it is told, that Iupiter made the night three nights long, to take the more pleasure of Alcmena, yet me thinke it is worth the obseruation, how the very prophane and vaine writings of old times do concur with the sacred Scriptures, for whensoever the birth of Hercules was, which I dare not affirme to haue bin at that time, and yet by computation it wil not fall long after. For Hercules was a great while before the last Trojan warres, and many old writers agree, that Priamus liued in Dauids time, and sent to him for succor; but howsoever that may be proued for the certaine time of his birth, certain it is, when the Sunne stood still in one part of the world, then in reason at their Antipodes and in the other Hemisphere it must needs be night all that while. And if the Sunne were almost downe when Iosua spake (as it may be coniectured) because he would not feare want of light to pursue his enemies untill the Sunne were neare setting, then it might be night euen in the same Hemisphere within a few degrees. As for example, it is night one hundred miles Eastward sooner then it is so farre Westward by a good while: (as they that are Astronomers can easily resolue the simplest that is.) But to be short, it is verified by many writers, that there was one night obserued to be longer then her fellowes, which night either Hercules was borne vpon, or else was fained to be begotten vpon, and therefore they surnamed him *Tripontoc* of that night that was as long as three nights. But thus I submit to the iudgement of learned Diuines.

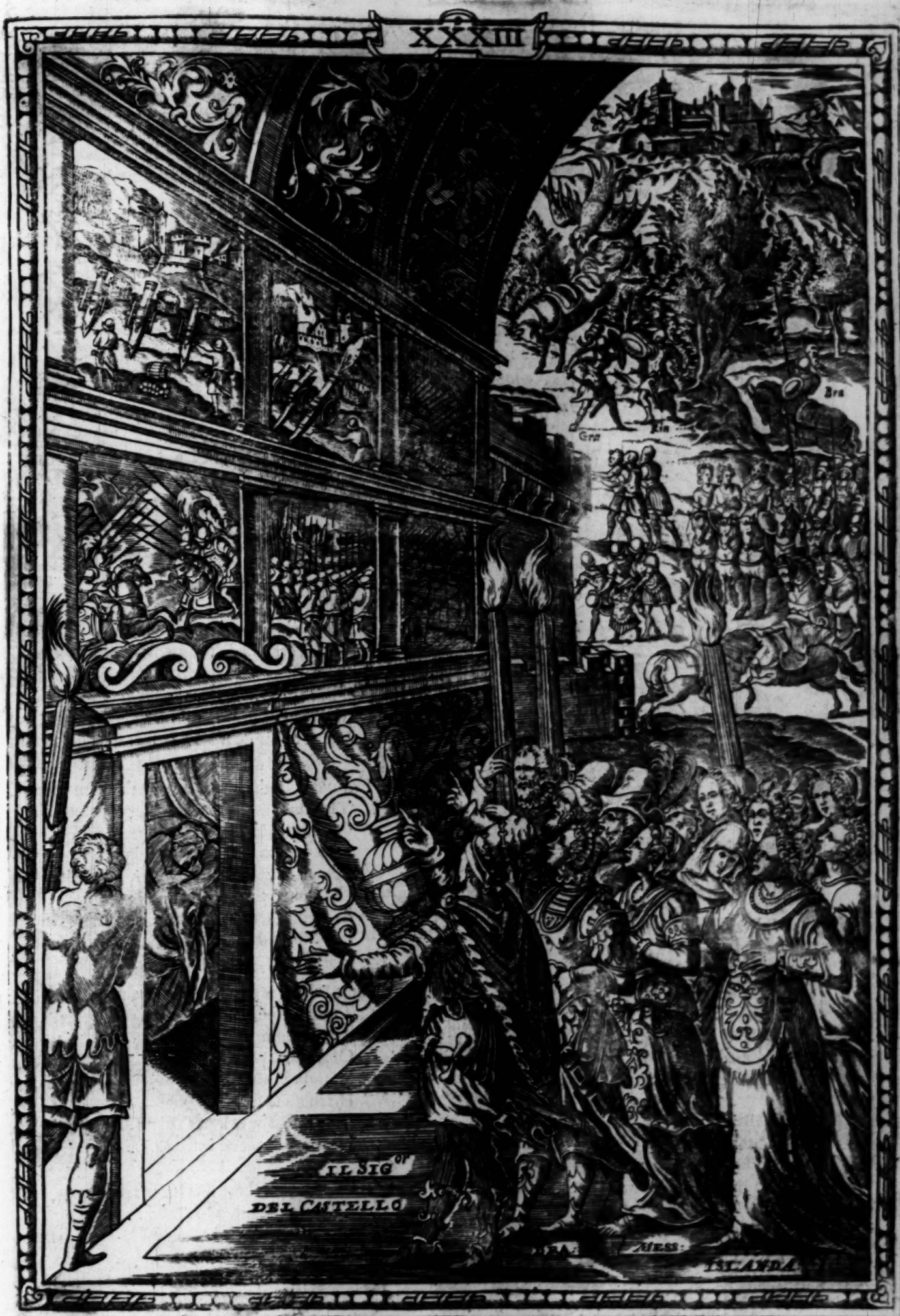
Allegoric.

The colour and embroidery of Bradamants bases in the 47. staffe, betokening desperation is there shewed, I need not long to stand vpon: for as for those hidden mysteries of colours, with their applications, of blue to constancie, tawmie forsaken, white to virginie, and the rest, they are very well knowne to all our gallant Gentlemen, who often haue more cost in their clothes, and wit in their colours, then coyne in their coffers, or learning in their heads.

Allusion.

Of the Island Queene that sent the shield of gold to France, which Bradamant thought would but breed quarrels, Fornarius noteth, that mine Author did therein couertly allude to a matter betweene England and France, for Ariosto liued in Henry the eight his time, and maketh very honorable mention of him. But thus it was. After the death of Lewes of France, Marie the younger sister of K. Henrie the eight remaining his Dowager, our King sent for his sister to come into England: but Francis the first, loth she should go out of France, in respect of the great dower she should carry with her, which by the custome of that country was a third part of the reuenuue of the Crowne; and yet fearing to haue warres with king Henrie, made this offer, that if he would send some braue man at armes that could win her in the field, he should haue her: our King made no dainties to accept the offer, and making it knowne to his Court, Sir Charles Brandon tooke the matter on him, and in fine ouercomming foure French men, with the franke consent of both Kings married the Queene Dowager, and was here in England (as we all know) made Duke of Suffolk; of whose offspring there remains yet some most worthy branches, but the like to him for armes and cauallary (as we terme it) is my noble good Lord, the Lord Strange, whose value and vertue need not this my barren and brieft testimonie.

The end of the annotations vpon the xxxij. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Faire Bradamant sees graun by passing art,
The future wars of France upon a screene.
Bayardos flight the combat fierce doth part,
Renaldo and the Serican beweeene.
Assolfo hauing past the greater part
Of all the world, and many countrie scene,
Unto Senapos kingdome last arrines,
And from his boord the foule Harpias driues.*

*Of these famous
drawers looke on
the history of this
booke.*



*Imagoras, Parrhasius, Polignote,
Timant, Protogenes, Apollodore,
With Zewces, one for skill
of speciall note:
Apelles eke, plast all the
rest before:
Whose skill in drawing,
all the world doth note,*

*And talke of still (to writers thanks therefore)
Whose works and bodies, time and death did wast,
Yet spite of time and death their fames doth last.*

*With others that in these our later dayes
Haue liu'd, as Leonard and Iohn Belline,
And he that carues and drawes with equall praise,
Michell more then a man, Angell diuine,
And Flores, whom the Flemmings greatly praise,
And Raphael and Titian passing fine,
With diuers others that by due desert,
Do merit in this praise to haue a part.*

*Yet all these cunning drawers with their skill,
Could not attaine by picture to expresse,
What strange euent should happen well or ill,
In future times, no not so much as guesse:
This art is proper vnto Magike still:
Or to a Prophet, or a Prophetesse.
By this rare art, the Brittain Merlin painted
Strange things, with which our age hath bin acquain-*

*He made by Magike art, that stately hall,
And by the selfe same art he could be,*

*Strange histories ingraued on the wall,
Which (as I said) the guests desir'd to see.
Now when they were from supper risen all,
The pages lighted torches two or three,
Making the roome to shine as bright as day,
When to his guests the owner thus did say,*

*I would (quoth he) my guests, that you should know,
That these same stories that here painted are,
Of future warres the sequels sad do show,
That shall to Italie bring wo and care:
Whereas the French full many a bloodie blow
Shall take, while others they to harme prepare,
As Merlin here hath layd downe, being sent
From English Arthur, chiefe for this intent.*

*King Feramont that was the first that past
The streame of Rhine with armie great of France,
And being in possession quiet plast
Of all those parts, sturd with so luckie chance,
Straight in ambitious thought began to cast,
His rule and scepter higher to aduance.
Which that he might to passe the better bring,
He made a league with Arthur English king,*

*Informing him how that his meaning was,
Of Italie the rule and crowne to get,
And askt his ayd to bring the same to passe,
Which neuer had atchieued bin as yet.
Now Merlin that did all men far surpass
In Magike art, his purpose sought to let,
For Merlin had with Arthur so great credit,
He thought all Gospell was, if once he sed it.*

This

*This part is but
a fiction, for
Merlin was not
years after
Arthur.*

8

This Merlin then did first to Arthur show,
And then by Arthur was of purpose sent,
To Fieramont of France, to let him know
The cause why he misliked his intent.
As namely, many mischiefs that would grow,
To all that now, or that hereafter ment,
The like attempt, aduising him abstaine
From certaine trouble, for vncertaine gaine.

9

Looke out of in
the history of this
book.

And that he might his courage more appall,
And quite remoue him from this enterprife,
He made by Magicke, this so stately hall,
Adorned as you see in sumptuous wise,
And drew these histories vpon the wall,
That what he saw in mind, they might with eyes,
And thereby know, that in Italian ground,
The Flour de luce can near take root profound.

10

And how as often as the French shall come,
As frends to aid and free them from distresse,
So oft they shall their foes all ouercome,
And fight with honor great, and good successe:
But be they sure to haue that place their toome,
If so they come their freedome to oppresse;
Thus much the owner of the house them told,
And so went on, the storie to vnfold.

11

Write.

Lo first how Sigisbert in hope of gaine,
And promises of Emperour Mauricins,
Doth passe the mountaines with a mightie traine,
With mind to Lombardie to be pernicious:
But Ewtar driues him backe by force againe,
When he of such attempt is least suspicious,
So that his enterprife is quite reuerfed,
Himselfe doth flie, and leaue his men dispersed.

12

Next after him the proud Clodouens went,
And had with him one hundred thousand men,
But him doth meet the Duke of Beneuent,
With scarfe for eu'rie hundred souldiers, ten,
Who doth intrap him in an ambushment,
So as the French might well be lik'ned then,
While Lombard wines too greedily they tooke,
To fish beguiled with a baited hooke.

13

Looke in the hi-
story.

Childibertus host
consumed with
the plague.

Straight Childibertus with a mightie host,
Doth come with mind to wipe away this blot:
But of his gainings he may make small host,
For of his purpose he preuailed not:
His enterprife by heau'nly sword is crost.
The plague doth grow among his men so hot,
What with the burning feauer, and the flixe,
Of sixtie men, there scant returneth fixe.

14

Another picture liuely doth expresse,
How that king Pepin and king Charles his sonne,
Fought both in Italie with good successe;
Nor with intent that Realme to ouerrunne,
But to set free Pope Steu'n from sharpe distresse,
And wrongs, that by Astolfo were him done,
One tames Astolfo that was Steu'n's oppressor,
Tother takes Desiderius his successor.

in Astolfo as
mountable prom-
d of Lombar-

15

Behold another Pepin yet an youth,
Not like his father, doth that Realme invade,
And thinking to procure their wofull ruth,
Ot ships and boats a mightie bridge he made:
But marke what ill successe to him ensuth,
Ear he through his great enterprife could wade,
A tempest did his massie worke confound,
His bridge was broken, and his souldiers drown.

This happend at
the siege of Real-
so an Island near
Venice, where he
wold haue made
the bridge.

16

Lo Lews of Burgundie, descending theare
Where, as it seemes he taken is and bound,
And he that takes him, maketh him to sweare,
That he shall neare beare arms gainst Latian ground
Lo how he breakes his oth without all feare,
Lo how againe his foes do him confound,
And like a moldwarpe, make him loose his eyes:
A iust reward for such as oths despise.

Lews of Burgun-
die had his eyes
put out for his
peruaria.

17

See here how Hugh of Arly doth great fears,
Driuing the Beringars from natie soile,
Forcing them twile or thrise to change their seats,
And cause the Hunnes and Bauiers backe recorde:
But greater force at last his acts defeats,
First he compounds, and after all his toile,
He dies, nor after long his heire doth tane,
But yeeldeth vp his crowne to Beringarie.

Hugo of Arly o-
uerthrowne by
the Beringars.

18

Lo heare another Charles that by perswasion,
Of euill shepherd, lets on fire the fold,
And kills two kings in this his fierce inuasion,
Manfred and Corradin, which makes him bold:
But his owne faults of his fall gaue occasion;
His crueltie was such, so vncontroll'd,
That he and his were all kild (as they tell)
Eu'n at the ringing of an eu'nlong bell.

Looke of this in
the historie.

19

Now after these about one hundred yeares,
For to the space betweene, did seeme to say,
From France, one shall invade those famous peeres,
The Vicount Galeasses, and shall lay
Siege vnto Alexandria as appeares,
By thote that here do stand in battell ray.
Lo how the Duke preuenting eu'rie doubt,
Prouideth strength within, deceipt without.

This man that in
waileth the Gale-
asses, was the
Erie of Arma-
make.

20

And with this warie policie proceeding,
He doth the Frenchmen at aduantage take,
Not finding his ambushment, and not heeding,
Together with the Lord of Arminake,
Who dieth of his hurts with ouerbleeding:
Lo how the streame of bloud there spilt doth make,
A sanguin colour in the streame of Poe,
By meanes Tanarus into it doth goe.

21

After all these, one comes that Marca hight,
And three that do of Anioh houte proceed.
All thete to those of Naples do much spite,
Yet none of these can brag of their good speed:
For though to French they ioyne some Latia might,
Of greedie sort, that with their crownes they feed,
Yet still for all their paine and their expence,
Alonso and Ferdinando driue them thence.

Looke of Marca
in the historie.

270

*Charles the eight
tooke in the his-
torie.*

Lo Charles the eight descending like a thunder,
Downe from the Alps with all the floure of France,
And conqu'ring all (to all mens passing wonder)
Not drawing once a sword, nor breaking lance,
(Except that rocke that *Typhens* lyeth vnder
While he to high himselfe, straue to aduance)
This Ile and castles both, that *Ischia* hight,
Defended was by *Vasso* gallant knight.

23

Now as the master of the castle told,
And pointed out each storie in his place,
It came into his fancy to vnfold,
The worthy praife of *Aluas* noble race;
Which (as for certaintie they all did hold)
Wile *Merlin* propheside, who had the grace,
To shew before hand, both with tongue and pen,
What accidents should hap, and where, and when.

24

*This is spoken in
praife of the
house of Alua.*

And namely that this knight whom here you see,
Defending to the castle and the rocke,
As though he fear'd not those same fires that flee,
As far as *Fare*, but them did scorne and mocke.
From this same knight there shal descend (quoth he)
Out of the root of this most worthie stocke,
A knight shall win such fame and reputation,
As all the world shall hold in admiration.

25

*Of these looke in
the Table.*

Though *Nereus* were faire, *Achilles* strong,
Though *Ladas* swift, though *Nestor* was most wise,
That knew so much, and liued had so long;
Though bold *Vlysses* could both well deuise,
And execute what doth to warre belong,
Though *Cesar*'s bountie prais'd be to the skies,
Yet place to giue all these may thinke no scorne,
To one that shall in *Ischia* Ile be borne.

26

*Jupiter nephew
to Celus.*

And if that ancient *Creta* may be proud,
Because that *Celus* nephew sprang therein:
If *Thebes* of *Bacchus* birth doth want so lowd,
And *Hercules*; if *Delus* of their twin:
Then may that Ile no lesse be well allowd,
To want it selfe, that hath so happie bin,
To haue that *Marquesse* borne within that place,
On whom the heau'ns shall powre so great a grace.

27

Thus *Merlin* w'd to tell and oft repeat,
How he should be for such a time referu'd,
When Roman Empires high and stately fear,
At lowest eb should be, and welnigh staru'd;
That his rare parts againe might make it great,
And that by him it might be safe preseru'd,
Which that you may see plainly to his glorie,
Marke in this table the ensuing storie.

28

*Lodowike Sforse
the notablest dis-
sembler and Ma-
chauellian that
euer was, though
before *Maxima*
welc'ome. Looke
the Historie.*

Lo here (said he) how *Lodwicke* doth repent,
That he had thither brought king *Charles* the eight,
Which at the first he did but with intent
To weaken, not to presse with so hard weight
His ancient foe; for now gainst *Charles* he went,
Making new leagues according to his sleight,
He thinks to take him prisoner by the way,
But *Charles* by force through the doth make his way.

29

But yet the souldiers that behinde him staid,
Had not the like good fortune nor successe,
For *Ferdinando* grew by Mantuan aid
So strong, that loone he did the French distresse:
To whole great grieve, this *Marquesse* was betraid
By *Gypsen* vile, when he fear'd nothing lesse,
Which doth in *Ferdinand* lo great grieve breed,
As doth his ioy of victorie exceed.

30

Next after these, he shews them *Lewis* the twelfth,
That puls out *Lodwicke Sforse* with mightie hand,
And gets by force, what he had got by steth,
And plants the Flour de luce in Millen land;
Yet he no long time there in quiet dwelth,
The great *Consaluo* with a Spanish band,
His Captaines and Liutenants oft repulles,
And in the end from Millen quite expulles.

31

Lo here (which I forgot before to show)
How *Lodwicke*'s friends, and his own men betray him,
One sells his castell neuer striking blow;
The *Swizzers* eke that might away conuay him,
And had his pay, and did him seruice ow,
For filthie lucre sake they do bewray him;
Whereby without once breaking of a lance,
Two victories came to the king of France.

32

Lo how by fauour of this mightie king,
The bastard *Cesar Borgia* grew full great,
And doth the necks of many nobles wring
Of *Italie*, that had most ancient seat.
Lo how this king doth eke the akornes bring
To *Bulloign*, lo how with another feat,
He doth the *Genowais* in fight subdue,
And maketh them their late reuolt to rue.

33

Lo here not far from thence, how all the feeld,
With dead mens bones is heald at *Geriadad*,
How all the cities vnto *Lewis* do yeeld,
How *Venice* to shut vp her gates is glad;
And scarce her selfe fro this great storme can sheeld:
Lo how the Pope (his part that herein had)
Doth take away vnto his great rebuke,
Modone and more, from good *Ferraras Duke*.

34

At which king *Lewis* (with rightfull choller moued)
Giues *Bulloign* to the *Bentiouols* againe,
And thence to *Breskie* all his force remoued,
And succours to *Felfina* doth ordaine,
What time the Churches souldiers felt and proued,
The French mens force vnto their mickle paine:
Lo after where both armies meet to fight,
Neare *Chassie* shore, to trie their vtmost might.

35

On this side France, on that the powre of Spaine
Vnited is, and deadly blows enfew,
The ditches all seemd filld with bodies flaine,
A hap to make a stonie heart to rew;
Long time in doubt doth victorie remaine,
Which way the sway would carry no man knew,
Till by the vertue of *Alfonse* alone,
The French preuaile, the Spanish (forst) are gone.

Lo

*Looke in the his-
torie of the.*

*Of Lewis the twelfth
looke the historie.*

*Sforse flying in
common (which
apparelled like a
Switzer, was
betrayed.*

*Cesar Borgia
Duke of Valentia
a notable wylde
man.*

*By the almes
meane the Pope
who gave them
for their crime.*

*This battell at
Geriadad, and
the distressed
state of *Venice*
looke in the his-
torie.*

*Of this he shew
before in a
book.*

36

Lo how the Pope his lip doth bite for griefe,
Because the French men do Rauenna lacke;
Lo how he sent to Swizzers for reliefe,
Lo how they come and driue the French men back;
And they that with their treason caused chiefe
Of Lodiwiki the ouerthrow and wracke,
To make some mends for that they erst had done,
Vnto the fathers place restore the sonne.

37

the first. But lo a prince of France then new created,
Meets with the Swizzers to their mickle cost,
And so their courage quaild, and force abated,
As all the nations seemed welnigh lost;
And of their title that them animated,
Those villens vile hereafter need not boast,
Defenders of the Church, tarmers of Kings,
They cleaped were, now clipped are their wings.

38

Lo how the French king Francis in despite
Of all the league, faire Millen doth surpise,
Bourbon defending it from Genoas might;
Lo while this King doth practise and deuise,
Some great exploit, while by foule ouersight,
His lawlesse men the towne did tyrannize;
Their hauing too much pride, and want of pitie,
Doth cause them sodainly to loose the citie.

39

Lo yet another Francis Sforse, a man
Like to his Grandfire both in acts and name,
Who to driue out the Frenchmen well began,
And Millen did recouer with great fame;
Lo France againe endeouour all they can,
To win with praise that they had lost with shame,
But Mantuas worthy Duke on Tycian streame,
Cut off his way, and kept him from that Realme.

40

Yong Fredericke, yet but a beardlesse boy,
Scant hauing on his chin a little downe,
Lo how he saues Pauia from annoy,
When furiously the French besiege the towne;
He makes their earnest plots turne to a toy,
The Lion of the sea he beateth downe:
Lo here two Marqueses both of one blood,
Both borne to do their country endlesse good.

41

The first of these is that Alfonso sonne,
That by the Negro erst you saw betraid,
Behold what feates of armes by him are donne,
How at their greatest need he them doth aid,
How oft he hath on Frenchmen glorie wonne,
That of his very name they seem afraid:
The tother that so mild doth looke in sight,
Is Lord of Vasto, and Alfonso hight.

42

This is that worthy knight, of whom I told,
Then when I did the Ile of Iskia show,
Of whom I said that Merlin had foretold
To Feramont what he by skill did know,
That when this world were worne and waxen old,
And Rome and Italy were brought most low,
Then he should spring, who to his endlesse praise,
Their foes should ouerthrow, and them should raise.

43

Lo how he with his cousin of Pescare,
And with Colonnas prolprous ayd no lesse,
The French and Dutch that at Bycocca are,
Do foyle and slay, and driue to great distresse;
Lo how againe the French men do prepare,
With new attempts to mend their bad successe,
One campe the king in Lombardie doth make,
And with another Naples he would take.

Francis invasion
of Italia with
two armies.

44

But she that vseth men as wind doth dust,
First take it vp and blow it very high,
And from that highest place straight when she lust,
She throwes it downe whereas it first did lie:
She makes this king deuoyd of all mistrust,
Thinke he hath men an hundred thousand nie,
At Paue siege beleewing others musters,
(But wo to kings whose seruants are no iuster.)

Fortune.

King Francis
ouerthrowne at
Pauia, deceaued
by his musterma-
sters in the num-
ber of his soldiers

45

So while this noble Prince mistrusts no harme,
His wicked Captaines greedy gaine to win,
Cauld that the souldiers in the night alarme,
Came to their colours slow and very thin;
Within their tents they feele their skirmish warme,
The warie Spaniards soone had entred in
With those two guides, with whom they durst assay,
In hell or else in heau'n to breake a way.

46

Lo how the chiefe nobilitie of France
Lie dead on ground, a cause of many teares,
How many an hargubush, a sword and launce,
This stout king hath alone about his cares:
His horse slaine vnder him by hard mischance,
And yet he nothing yeelds nor nothing feares,
Though all the host assaulted him alone,
And all the rescues and supplies were gone.

47

The valiant King defends him on his feet,
Bathing his blade long time in en'mies blood,
But vertue that with too much force doth meet,
Must yeeld at last, it cannot be withstood;
Lo him here prisoner, lo how in a fleet
He passeth into Spaine the salt sea flood,
Whence Vasto doth the chiefeft honour bring,
Of the field wonne, and of the prisoner king.

Francis taken
prisoner.

48

Thus both that host the king had thither brought,
And that he meant to Naples to haue sent,
Were both disperfed quite, and came to nought,
Much like a lampe when all the oile is spent.
Lo how the King againe so well hath wrought,
He leaues his sons for pledge, and homeward went,
Lo how abroade he doth new quarrels pike,
Lo how at home some do to him the like.

Simile.

Meaning the
king of England.

49

Lo here the wofull murders and the rapes,
That Rome doth suffer in the cruell sacke,
Where neither thing prophane nor holy escapes,
But all alike do go to spoile and wracke:
The league that should relieue, sits still and gapes,
And where they should step forward, they shrinke
Thus Peters successor by them forsaken, (backe:
Is straight besieged, and at length is taken.

The sack of Rome
by Bourbon, who
was the first man
that was killed.

A a

50

The King sends *Lautrek*, new supplies to gather,
Not that he should to Lombardie do ought,
But that he might set free the holy father,
That to so low an ebbe so soone was brought:
But *Lautrek* should haue come a little rather,
The Popes own coyn hath his own freedom bought,
Lautrek attempts to conquer Naples towne,
And soone turnes all that country vpside downe.

51

Lo how a faire Imperiall nauie bends
His course to succor the distressed towne,
But *Doria* backe with heaue and ho them sends,
And some of them doth burn, and some doth drown:
Lo, fickle fortune once againe intends
To change her cheare, and on the French to frowne,
With agews, not with swords they all are slaine,
Scarce of an hundred one turnes home againe.

*This pestilent
mortalitie grew
by poisoning a
water neare to
Naples, and then
flopping the
course of it, made
it overflow all
the marish
grounds, and so
infected the aire
that Lautrek
and all his men
died of it.*

52

These and such stories had the stately hall,
In marble rich ingraued on the skreene,
As were too tedious to recite them all,
Though then by them they were persued and seene;
Their wonder great, their pleasure was not small,
And oft they read the writings were betweene,
That in faire Roman letters all of gold,
The circumstance of eu'ry picture told.

53

Now when the Ladies faire and all the rest,
Had seene and askt as much as they desired,
Their host doth bring them to their roomes of rest,
Where sleepe renews the strength of bodies tired,
Onely Duke *Ammons* daughter could not rest,
Though bed were soft, room warm, and wel attired,
Yet still she tost from left side to the right,
And could not sleepe one winke all that same night.

54

With much ado her eyes at last she closed,
Not much afore the dawning of the day,
And as she slept, she in her sleepe supposed
Rogero present was, and thus did say,
My deare, what ailes thee to be thus disposed,
That false beleefe in thee doth beare such sway?
First shall the riuers to the mountaines clime,
Ere I will guiltie be of such a crime.

*Bradamants
dreaune of Ro-
gero.*

55

Beside she thought she heard him thus to say,
Lo I am come to be baptizd, my loue,
And that I seemd my comming to delay,
Another wound, and not a wound of loue,
Hath bene the cause of my constrained stay,
Suspitions vaine, and causelesse feare remoue:
With this the damsell wakt, and vp she started,
But found her dreaune, and louer both departed.

56

Then freshly she doth her complaints renew,
And in her mind thus to her selfe she spake,
Lo what I like, are dreaunes vaine and vntrue,
And in a moment me do quite forsake;
But ah, what me offends is to to true,
I dreaune of good, but none I find awake,
How are mine eyes alas in so ill taking,
That cloud see good, and nought but euill waking?

57

Sweet dreaune did promise me a quiet peace,
But bitter waking turneth all to warre;
Sweet dreaune deluded me, and soone did cease,
But bitter waking plagues, and doth not arre:
If falshood ease, and truth my paines increase,
I wish my selfe from truth I still might barre,
If dreaunes breed ioy, and waking cause my paine,
Ay might I dreaune, and neuer wake againe.

58

Oh happie wights whom sleepe doth so possesse,
As in six months you neuer open eye,
For sure such sleepe is like to death I guesse,
But waking thus, is not like life (thinke I)
How strange are then the pangs that me oppresse,
That sleeping seeme to liue, and waking die:
But if such sleepe resemblance be of death,
Come death and close mine eies, and stop my breath.

59

Now were those Easter parts of heau'n made red,
Where *Phæbus* beames do first begin appeare,
And all the thicke and rainie clouds were fled,
And promised a morning faire and cleare;
When *Bradamant* forlooke her restless bed,
And giuing for her lodging and good cheare,
Right curteous thanks vnto her noble host,
She leaues his house, and minds to part in post.

60

But first she found how that the damsell faire,
The messenger that sup't with her last night,
Was gone before, with purpose to repaire
To those three knights that lately felt her might,
When she did cause them caper in the aire,
Driu'n without stirrups from their steeds to light,
She found they had all night to their great paine,
Abid the wind, the tempest and the raine.

61

And that which greatly did increase their griefe,
Was that while those within had cheare great store,
They and their horse lackt lodging and reliefe:
But that which did offend their stomacks more,
And was indeed of all their sorrows chiefe,
Was least the maid (of whom I spake before)
Would tell their mistresse of their hard mischance,
They had at their arriual first in France.

62

And hauing full resolved and designd,
To die or venge the foile receau'd last night,
To th'end the messenger might change her mind,
(The messenger that *Vllania* hight)
Who thought their force and vawle farre behind
The vaunts that they had made of their great might,
Therefore as soone as *Bradamant* they spied,
Straight each of them to combat her defied.

63

Not thinking though she should a damsell be,
For of a damsell gesture none she vsed;
The Ladie gently spake vnto them three,
And thought her hast the fight might haue excused,
But they did vrge her still so farre, that she
Without disgrace could not haue it refused;
Wherefore she coucht the golden headed launce,
And from their saddles made them all to daunce.

And

64

And for that time thus ended was that fray,
For she sets spurs to horse, and rode so post,
That ere they rose, she quite was gone away:
They that their seats had twise together lost,
Were so ashamd they knew not what to say:
For why, they wouted were to make their host,
No knight of France should able be to stand
Against the worst of them, with spears in hand.

65

But *Vllania* further them to taunt,
That *Bradamant* a Ladie was, them told,
Now sirs (said she) you that were wont to vaunt,
From *Palladins* to win the shield of gold,
Lo how a womans forces can you daunt,
Now is (I hope) your losie courage cold:
Sure for those knights you be too weake a match,
When one poore damsell you can ouermatch.

66

What need (said she) be furdur triall had,
You haue already that for which you came,
Except that any of you be so mad,
To ioyne a future losse, to present shame;
Or if perhaps ye would be faine and glad,
To end your liues by men of worthy fame:
Trow you that vanquisht are by womans hand,
Renaldo or *Orlando* to withstand?

67

Now when as *Vllania* declared had,
How that a damsell them had ouerthrowne,
With grieve and with disdain they were so mad,
That scarce their wits and senses were their down:
Each one himselfe, of armour all vnclad, (throwne,
Their horse turnd loose, their swords away were
And vovd for penance of so great disgrace,
To tuch no armour in a twelue-months space.

68

They further vow they ne're will ride againe,
No not when that same yeare should be expired,
Although the way were mountany or plaine,
And though the way were grauelly or myred,
Vntill they could by force of arms regaine
Such horses, as for seruice are required,
And furniture for three such champions meet;
Till then they vovd to trauell on their feet.

69

Thus wilfully they walkt while others rode,
But *Bradamant* went on, and that same night,
She at a castle maketh her abode.
Neare to the way that leads to *Paris* right:
Heare by her host, the Ladie faire was showd,
How *Agramant* was vanquisht in the fight:
Good meat, good lodging, and good news she had,
Yet eat she not, nor slept, nor was she glad.

70

But now of her so much I must not say,
That I forget my storie out to tell,
Of those two knights that met this other day,
And tyde their horses at the running well:
No lands nor townes were causes of their fray,
Nor who in rule nor office should excell,
But eu'n that he that strongest was of twaine,
Should *Bayard* win, and *Durindana* gaine.

71

There needs no signe of war, nor trumpets sound,
To warne them when to strike or when to pawse,
No Heralds need to limit out the ground,
Nor reade them lectures of their warlike laws.
They met as they by promise firme were bound,
And each his weapon at one instant draws,
And then they layd about them strong and nimble,
Blows bred their smart; and smart their wrath did

Gradasso and Renaldo fight.

72

Two blades more firme in triall, and more sure,
Could not in all the world haue bin prepar'd,
That hauing bene as these were, put in v're,
Would not haue bene in peeces burst and mard:
But both these blades were of such temper pure,
So keene, so tough, and therewithall so hard,
They might a thousand times at hard-edge met,
And neither blade thereby a gap would get.

73

Renaldo quick, hither and thither goes,
And often time was forst to change his place,
And trauese ground, for why the weight he knows
Of *Durindana*, that would cut a paste:
Gradasso euer gaue the stronger blows,
But tocher still to scape them had the grace:
Or if they hit, they hit in some such part,
Where though they made great sound, they caus'd

74

Renaldo with lesse strength but far more art,
Strake once or twise the Pagan on the arme,
And with a thrust had surely pierst his hart,
Saue that his armour strenghtned was by charme,
So that no maile out of his place would start:
But while each sought to do the other harme,
A sodaine noyse did part their earnest quarrell,
They lookt and saw *Bayardo* in great parell.

Their parting.

75

If say they lookt about and spide at length,
Bayardo fighting with a monstrous fowle,
Bigger then he, her beak three yards of length,
In other shape and making like an owle,
Her tallents huge and sharpe, and of great strength,
The feathers of her wings all blacke and foule,
Her eyes like fire, a long and hideous taile,
Her wings so huge, they seemed like a saile.

76

Perhaps it was a fowle, but I thinke not,
Nor euer heard I erst of such a bird,
Onely so *Turpin* calls it well I wot,
If any will credit to him affoord:
Rather I deeme that *Malagigi* got
Some sprite infernall, that himselfe had sturd,
To come in shape as I did shew before.
Because the champions fierce, might fight no more.

77

Renaldo eake himselfe beleeu'd the same,
And with his cousin *Malagigi* fell out,
And to his charge laid not a little blame,
And gaue him euill language thereabout.
The tother sware by him that heau'ns did frame,
It was not he, to put him out of doubt,
But were it fowle, or were it a foule deuill,
Certaine to *Bayard* it did worke much euill.

Aa ij

78

The horse that was puissant, brake his raine,
When as the sharpnes of her claws he feels,
And what with terrour mou'd and what with paine,
He yerketh at her fiercely with his heels:
She leapt aloft and downe she comes againe,
And striks him so, that Bayard almost reels,
And with of other fence no meane he had,
He runs away as if he had bin mad.

79

Vnto the nearest wood he right doth runne,
And still the feathered beast him held in chase,
Till the thicke boughs holp him her gripes to shun,
So that she gaue him ouer in short space,
And seeing that her sport with him was done,
She leapt vp on high and left this place,
And to another coast her flight doth frame,
Where as she thought to find some other game.

80

Gradasso and *Renaldo* when they saw,
The horse was fled that caused all the fray,
Do by consent themselues from thence withdraw,
To find Bayardo out and if they may:
But first each promist to obserue this law,
That he that found him first of both, should stay
At this same well, till tother should come thither,
And then againe to fight it out together.

81

Thus when each had his word to th' other past,
That they would meet there at their coming backe,
They after go, but Bayard ran so fast,
As soone they lost the sight of any tracke:
Gradasso rode and therefore made more hast;
The *Palladine* that his good horse did lacke,
Remained behind, all sad and griued more,
And malcontent then ere he was before.

82

And when he traueled had about in vaine
In body wearie, discontent in minde,
With losse of all his trauell and his paine,
He turneth to the place they first assignde,
In hope the tother would returne againe,
And bring the horse, if so he could him finde:
But when he saw his looking did not boot,
He traueled backe vnto the campe on foot.

83

But yet *Gradasso's* paine succeeded well,
For why, a while afore the lights decaying,
He passed neare the place, as it befell,
Where in a caue he found him by his naying,
Still fearing that same monstrous impe of hell:
He takes him thence, and then but little waying
His promise made, he turnes another way,
And to himselfe in secret thus doth say.

84

Let them that list hold things in strife and war,
I meane to hold mine owne with peace and ease,
Onely to get this horse, I came so far,
And past so many lands, and many seas:
My promise breach to me shalbe no bar,
To keepe that I so quietly do sease;
If he desire to win his horse againe,
To come to India let him take the paine.

Looke on the
Moral.

85

As safe as France hath bin for me now twise,
So safe for him shalbe my *Serycane*,
I thither wish him come if he be wise,
Else of Bayardo now his leaue is tane:
If he will haue him he shall know the prise,
Now mine Bayardo is and *Durindane*:
This sayd, he mounted on the steed so warly,
And by another way went backe to Arly.

86

Where finding ships new riggd, to sea-ward bent,
Though then at anker in the harbour lying,
With those rich spoils, to passe the seas he ment,
In all post hast into his country hying:
Hereafter you shall heare which way he went,
And of his last conflict and of his dying:
Now him I leaue, *Renaldo* and all France,
And tell you what did to *Astolfo* chance.

87

Who mounted on his stately winged steed,
Well tamed late by *Logestillas* wit,
Tooke perfect vew of France with passing speed,
And saw how eu'rie towne of worth did sit,
Which hauing well obseru'd, and markt with heed,
From Rhine to Pyren mount, he thought it fit,
In manner like, all ouer Spaine to ride,
And many countreyes of the world beside.

88

To Aragon he passed through Nauar,
Each man that saw him wondring at the sight,
Then Taracon he did discry not far
Vpon his left hand, Biskie on his right,
Where Castill, Lisbon, and Galicia are,
And Cordoue neare, and Siuill see he might,
Which diuers crownes now ioyned in on raigne,
Are gouerned by the mightie king of Spaine.

89

There saw he Gades where erst by *Hercles* hand,
Two pillars, markes for Marriners were platt,
Then ouer Atlant sea, to Egypt land,
And ouer Affrica forthwith he past,
And saw where Balcarick Iles do stand,
Then traueled to Euiza with like hast,
And to Arzilla ward he thence departeth,
Quite ore that sea, that it from Spaigna parteth.

90

Oran he saw, Ippon, Marocco, Fesse,
Algier, Buzea, and those stately townes,
Whose Princes with great pompe and pride possesse
Of diuers Prouinces the stately crownes,
He saw Byferta, and Tunigi no lesse,
And flying ouer many dales and downes,
He saw Capisse and Alzerbee Ile,
And all the Cities to the flood of Nyle.

91

Tripolie, Bernick, Tolomit, and all
Betweene the sea and Atlas woodie sides,
Then on the Cereneys he right doth fall,
And past Carena mounts, and more besides:
Then crossing ou'r the barren fields and pall,
Where sands with wind do eb and flow like tides,
The tombe of *Battus* he doth leaue behind,
And *Ammons* temple now worne out of mind.

Then

92

Then came he by another Tremisen,
That followes eke of Mahomet the law,
Vnto another Ethyopia then
He went, the which before he neuer saw,
That differs both in language and in men:
From thence he toward Nubia then did draw,
Dobada and Coallee iust betweene,
Of which these Christend, and thole Turkish beene.

93

The bord'ers still are armd in heate and cold,
Senapo yet of Ethyop is the chiefe,
And hath great store of iewels and of gold,
And much he varies not from our belifes:
For he those principles most firme doth hold,
That can defend from euerlasting griefe:
Here is it (if mine author be no lier)
Where they do vse to be baptizd with fier.

94

The Duke here lighted after trauell long,
And to Senapos stately Court was led;
The castle was more sumptuous then strong,
And admiration more then terror bred;
The locks, barres, chaines, and all that did belong
Vnto the bridge and gates from foote to head,
Which we make here of iron to endure,
Was there faire wrought in massie gold most pure.

95

And though they haue great store of mettals fine,
Yet were the chambers and the lodgings here
Borne vp with cristall collumns, that did shine
All ou'r the stately court most bright and cleare;
A stately border cauld vnto the eie
Red, white, greene, blew, and yellow to appeare,
Enriched with diuisions for the nones,
Of Rubie, Smarag, Zaphyr, Topas stones.

96

Most orient pearls and gems of passing price,
Were sprinkled on the pauements here and there,
Hence balme doth come, hence other precious spice,
Which from Ierusalem men wont to beare;
Hence commeth muske, for odours sweet and nice,
And amber pure, that some in bracelets weare;
And finally all things grow there in plentie,
That in this country are esteemd most deintie.

97

Most true it is, else some haue written lies,
The Sowdan to this King doth tribute pay,
For that in this Kings powre alone it lies,
Great Cayre and fertile Egypt to decay,
Because that by those meanes he may deuise,
He may turne Nyle from them another way:
This Prince Senapo there is cald of many,
We call him Prester Iohn or Preter Lany.

98

Of all the Kings that euer there did raigne,
This King exceld in riches and in treasure,
But losse of sight made all his comforts vaine,
And bard him eu'ry tast of worldly pleasure,
And this did much increase his care and paine,
And grieved him indeed beyond all measure,
That all his wealth and treasure not preuented,
But that with famine he was ay tormented.

99

For when this Prince, as hunger meere him drew,
Did but prepare himselfe to drinke or eate,
Straight of Harpias came a cursed crew,
With mightie wings, huge pawes, and bellies great,
And all the dishes quite they ouerthrew,
And greedily deuoured all the meate;
And that they lest they did so file and flauer,
As few could brooke the sight, but none the sauer.

Virgil: Pollux.
ore dips.Looke in the
Allegory.

100

The cause was this, why his great plague was such,
Because in youth (when men most carelesse are)
Finding himselfe to be extold so much,
And passing other Kings in wealth so far,
So foule a pride his loftie heart did tuch,
Against his maker, he would needs moue war,
To which intent a mightie powre he led,
Vnto that mount whence Nylus hath his hed.

101

He had bene told, and did it firme beleue,
That on that mount, whole top did touch the skie,
Was that same place where Adam dwelt and Eue,
Before their fall did cause them thence to flie:
He hoping some rare conquest to atchieue,
A mightie host prepared by and by,
With mind (so hie his heart with pride did swell)
To make them tribute pay that there did dwell.

102

But high Iehoua, their foule pride repress,
And downe he sent his Angell that same night,
Who slue an hundred thousand for the least,
And him condemn'd for ay to loose his sight;
Then sent he monsters vile him to molest,
Thole vgly monsters, that Harpias hight,
Which so deuoure and so spoyle all his meate,
Scarce they permit him once to drinke or eate.

103

And that which draue him into meere despaire,
Was that one told by way of prophecie,
How those foule creatures euer should repaire
Vnto that place, till time they might espie
A gallant knight all armed in the aire,
Vpon a winged beast aloft to flie:
And for that this vnpossible he deemed,
Past hope of helpe, himselfe he then esteemed.

104

Now when the people saw from eu'ry wall,
And from each towre the strangely flying knight,
He happie thought himselfe, that first of all
Could tell the king of this vnused sight;
Who straight the prophecie to mind did call,
And with the sudden ioy, forgetting quite
His trustie staffe, went groping with his hand,
To welcome him that now came downe to land.

105

Astolfo being lighted, nearer drew,
And as he was the great court entring in,
Behold the King stood ready in his vew,
And kneeling downe, to speake did thus begin,
O heau'nly Angell, o Messias new,
Though I deserue not pardon for my sin,
Yet thinke to vs is proper to offend,
To you, to pardon those that wil amend.

Aa iij

106

My guilt so heauie on my conscience lies,
I dare not sue thou shouldst my sight restore,
Though wel I wot that thou couldst heale mine eies
That art of those that ay stand God before,
Let then this plague my want of sight suffice,
And let me not be steru'd thus euermore,
At least from me these filthy monsters driue,
And let me eate with quiet while I liue.

107

*Ouid. of Aeneas
comming to Sa-
bella.
Templa tibi sta-
tuam, tribuā tibi
honores:
but this is spoken
more Christian
like.*

And I do vow a temple vnto thee,
Of marble faire to build here in this place,
Whose gates and couer all of gold shall be,
Adorn'd with costly iewels in like case,
Nam'd by thy name, and grau'd that men may see
Thy miracle, which no time shall deface:
Thus saith the prostrate King that nothing sees,
And gropes to haue embrast *Astolfo's* knees.

108

*Also Sibyllas an-
swer is not un-
like this.
Nec deū sū cered,
nec sacri thuris
honore.
Humanum dig-
mare caput ne
mesius erres.*

The Duke to him thus friendly doth reply,
Nor Angell I, nor new Messias am,
Nor come from heau'n, but mortall man am I,
And thrall to sinne, vnworthy so high name;
But for your sake, my best skill I will trie,
To kil or driue those fowle from whence they came,
Which if I do, giue God, not me the praise,
That for your helpe did hither guide my wayes.

109

For him your Churches and your altars make,
That must of dutie, Church and altars haue:
This said, he vp from ground the King doth take,
And went with him and other Barons graue:
Straightways of meate prouision new they make,
For so the hungry King in hast doth craue,
In hope that now the monsters would be quiet,
And not to interrupt him at his diet.

110

Forthwith a sumptuous dinner was prepar'd,
In stately sort great store and of the best,
Senapo hopes *Astolfo* can him guard
From thote foule fowles that did him so molest;
But lo a sodain noise forthwith was heard,
The sent of those same viands that were drest,
Had brought them thither, ere the men were able
To set downe all the dishes on the table.

111

*The description
of the Harpias.*

Of them came seu'n together in a knot,
With womans faces, wan with deadly cold,
So hungerstaru'd, as death it selfe might not
Be at first sight more hideous to behold, (wot,
Their wings were great, but foule blacke wings God
Their talents sharpe to gripe, but strong to hold,
A large foule paunch, a filthy taile and long,
From whence there came an odour mightie strong.

112

As sodaine heard, so sodaine were they seene,
For on the table all at once they fell,
And spoild the meat, and from their wombs vncleen
Cast lothsome filth to see, irksome to smell:

Morall.

In this xxxiiij. booke there are many things worth the obseruation, both for historicall matter, as also in Allegoricall
sence, and therefore I would not stand long in the Morall: Only this note I will take of *Gradasio* for breach of his promise,
in not bringing the horse backe to the fountaine, as was covenanted betweene them: that many braue and valiant men,
such

The Duke with blade of mettall sharpe and keene,
Strikes at the monsters, thinking them to quell;
But all in vaine, his boodelle blade turn'd backe,
As he had smitten on a wollen sacke.

113

Some rau'nously deuour'd the sweet repast,
And did so eager fill their greedie gorge,
That by and by they were compeld as fast,
The same in beastly manner to disgorge:
The wofull King thinks now all succour past,
Till good *Astolfo* sware by sweet Saint *George*,
Sith force was vaine, he would another way,
To driue these monsters from the king assay.

114

The horne, which euer he about him beares,
He meanes against these monsters to employ,
He caus'd the King and his to stop their eares
With molted waxe, that no noise them may noy,
Elle might his blast haue bred in them such feares,
To driue them thence, and all the land destroy;
Then caus'd he them prepare another feast,
An vp he gets him on his winged beast.

115

The steward that did know his mind by signes,
Straightways another dinner doth addresse,
With store of daintie meates and costly wines,
But in a trife more soone then one could guesse,
The filthy flocke, as famine them inclines,
Came downe and leasd vpon the costly messes;
But straight *Astolfo* blew them such a blast,
As on the todaine made them all agast.

116

The noise into their open eares so entered,
That had no meanes to stop them nor defence,
As so their stomachs and their tafts distemper'd,
They fled, as feare expeld all other sence;
The English Duke to follow them aduenter'd,
And winding still his horne, he chafte them thence,
To that hils foote, whence *Nylus* first doth fall,
If so that Nyle haue any head at all.

117

About the bottome of this mightie mount,
There is a caue descending like a well,
By which (as dwellers by do oft recount)
A speedie passage one may haue to hell;
To this the monsters fled, and made account
Within this caue safe from the noise to dwell,
Which seene, *Astolfo* from his beast alighted,
And ceast the blowing that them so affrighted.

118

And for he did with heed the caues mouth marke,
He nearer doth approach vnto the same,
And with a listning eare he then doth harke,
If any sound from thence vnto him came;
The entrance lookt all like a dungeon darke,
With smoke that seemd to come from smothered
But more of this hereafter I will treat, (flame:
For now this booke begins to be too great.

such as he is here described to be, how euer they stand vpon termes of honor and value, yet if they may obtaine their purpose without blowes, they will many times dispence both with honour and honestie: which yet I iudge rather an example to shun, then a president to be followed. And in Senapo, that through riches and abundance grew so insolent, that he would needs thinke to conquer Paradise; we may see the course of yong carelesse men, that being left rich by their parents, or else aduanced (vnworthily in their owne consciences) to some extraordinary fortunes, straight in conceits begin to despise the diuine providence (as Senapo assaulted Paradise) and dispute with their prophane tongues, not against this or that religion, but against all religion; hauing no argument so probable indeed and so forcible, as that which the Poet Martiall reciteth of one Silius:

Nullus esse Deos, inane coelum
Affirmat Silius, probatque quod se
Factum, dum negat hæc, videt beatum.

Thus in English:

That heau'n is void, and that no gods there are,
Silius affirms, and all his prooffe is this,
That while such blasphemies pronounce he dare,
He liueth here in ease and earthly blisse.

But this matter I shall touch more at large in the Allegorie.

For the histories touched in this book they are many and diuers, but the special drift that mine author hath in this book, Historie. is to note how those kings of France that haue come to invade Italy, and to make a conquest thereof, or of any part thereof, haue had euer ill successe, and bin either taken or foyled: and of the other side, those that haue come to rescue them, and take their parts, haue many times brought backe honour and victory. Now first mine author for the finer bringing in of the matter, fathers it vpon Merlin our English prophet (as they terme him) of whom I haue spoken before in the notes of the third booke, alledging that he by Magicke framed that sumptuous hall, and therein painted vpon the skreen thereof all these stories of the time to come.

First he recites all the excellent drawers of the time past, taking by that occasion to praise the excellent workmanship of some of his owne time: their names he reciteth hudling together; but here I will particularly touch them for their sakes that haue not read of them, and are desirous to know of whence they are.

Timagoras was a Calcydonian, and was the first that is specially noted to haue compared his cunning with another Timagoras. of the same science, and to haue had the glorie from him.

Parrhasius an Ephesian, noted specially for his excellent shadowing and giuing good proportion to the countenance, Parrhasius. and in the outermost lines of the face, which is a great point of that art.

Polygnotus I find no extraordinary thing to speake of, onely I read that he vsed first to draw women in white garments, and had a speciall grace in making the opening of the mouth. Polygnotus:

Timant, they praise his wit as much as his worke, for making in a great table the picture of Iphigenia, standing at the altar to be sacrificed; and hauing drawne all the standers by very sad, and with wofull countenances, and specially her vnkle; when he came to her father, he made him with a scarfe afore his face, signifying thereby that his grieue was greater then could be seene in his countenance. Timant.

Protogenes was borne in Sycannum a country subiect to the Rhodians, he was noted for somewhat too much curiositie and tediousnesse (a fault our countymen be much noted of, that they know not when their worke is well:) howbeit his worke was held in such price, that Demetrius lying at the siege of Rhodes, and hauing oportunitie offered him to haue fierd the towne on that side where a table of his drawing did hang, he raised his siege rather then he would burne that table. Protogenes.

Appollodore was so excellent (as Plinie writeth of him thus) that he opened the doore of cunning in that art, by Appollodore. which Zewces afterwards entred into it in the citie of Heraclia. The story of the strife betweene Zewces and Parrhasius Zewces. is well knowne I thinke to all, but yet I will briefly set it downe: Zewces to shew his workmanship, brought a table, wherein he had painted grapes so naturally, that the birds came and peckt at them, thinking them to be grapes indeed: the other had drawne onely a curtaine, such as they vse to haue before pictures to keepe them from the dust; which curtaine looked so like a true curtaine, that Zewces being proud of the iudgement of the birds, bad him now to remoue his curtain to shew his picture; but being quickly aware of his error, with a kind of noble bashfulnesse, granted the prise to his aduersarie, confessing it was more to deceive a workman then a bird.

Appelles borne at Coas, was held in such reputation for his drawing, that Alexander the great gaue commandement Appelles. that none should make his picture but onely Appelles. He began the image of Venus, and died ere it was done, leauing the imperfite worke so full of the perfection of his art, that no man durst euer take vpon him to end it: so as euen to this day if any begin a work in any kind with any felicitie, and after leaue it vnfinisht, they straight liken him to Appelles. Now hauing spoken so much of all these famous men of old times, it were an enuious part to say nothing of those of this age, that haue bin famous, and are named by mine author also: wherefore I would touch one or two of them.

Leonard Vinci was a Florentine, a goodly man of person, and so excellent in the Idea or the conceiued forme of his Leon. Vinci. worke, that though he could finish but few workes, yet those he did had great admiration.

Also there was Andrew Mantinea (whom I forgot to put in by oversight in his due place, but I will make him amends Andr. Mant. here) who being but of meane parentage and very poore, yet his aptnesse to this kind being made knowne to the Marquis of Mantua, and encouraged by his liberalitie (the speciall nurse of all good arts) grew most excellent in it: and beside other rare workes that is seene and shewne of his in Rome and in Mantua, he is said to be the first that deuised cutting in brasse, which how curious a thing it is, the pictures in this booke may partly testifie.

Gian Belline. Gian Belline was a Venetian, and was the more famous because Mahomet (king of the Turkes) was so farre in loue with a table of his drawing, that he sent for him, but the Venetians would not spare him: many they sent a brother of his, a very good workman. Now (albeit the Turkes are by their lawes forbidden images) yet was this Prince so in loue with that picture I spake of, that when the other drawer came to him, he made him draw both his owne picture and the Turkes, and so after sent him backe againe, both highly commended and rewarded.

Michael Agnolo. Michael Agnolo (we pronounce it Michel Angelo) was the rare man of this age for drawing and caruing both, attaining to the excellency of the art very yong, and doing many notable works: but three be most famous, one was caruing of an Image of Pitie in Rome, another was a Giant in Florence, the third was a picture of certain naked men that went to wash themselves in Arno, and hearing of a sudden alarme in the camp, they made hast to put on their clothes: in which picture were contained all the gestures, looks and motions that men could imagine would happen in such an accident: his father surnamed him Angelo in his cradle, as a presage of some great excellencie above ordinary that he should grow to. Raphael and Sebastian were but his schollers, though both very perfect: all which I haue the more willingly noted, and at more length then I was wont in the former booke in like matters so lightly touched, both because my selfe (I must confesse) take great pleasure in such workes (as pleasing ornaments of a house, and good remembrances of our friends) as also to shew in what great reckning that science hath bin with Emperors and great Princes, and with Prelats and religious persons: howsoeuer some austere or rather vnciuil persons, will seeme either to condemne it or contemne it. And though indeed this Realme hath not bred any Michel Angelos, nor men of such rare perfection as may deserue his title:

Michel (more then a man) Angell diuine.

M. Hilliard. Yet I may say thus much without partialitie, for the honor of my country, as mine author hath done for the honor of his, that we haue with vs at this day one that for limming (which I take to be the very perfection of that art) is comparable with any of any other countrey. And for the praise that I told you of Parrhasius for taking the true lines of the face, I thinke our countryman (I meane M. Hilliard) is inferiour to none that liues at this day: as among other things of his doing, my selfe haue seene him in white and black in foure lines only set downe the feature of the Queenes Maiesties countenance, that it was euen thereby to be knowne, and he is so perfect therein (as I haue heard others tell) that he can set it downe by the Idea he hath, without any patterne; which (for all Apelles priuiledge) was more (I beleue) then he could haue done for Alexander. But I am entred so far into pictures, that I know not how to get out againe: and though there be so much other story in this xxxiii. booke as wil aske some time, yet I thought better to set downe this of these notable men here altogether, for those that haue a mind to reade it, then to haue turned them ouer to the Table, where they must looke one in one place, and another in another, according as the names would fall out in order of Alphabet. But now to the French storie.

12. staffe. Clodoucus was the first king of France, after that Clodoucus that first receaued the Christian Religion. This Prince, what time Grimoaldo Duke of Beneuent had ciuill warres in Lombardy with Perderite and Gondiberto two brothers, taking this oportunitie, made warre on Grimoaldo: but Grimoaldo doubting his strength to meet them in the field, with a notable stratagem vanquished them: he fained as if he fled and forsook his tents, leauing them full of vittall and strong wines, which the French men so eagerly deuoured, and dranke so deuoutly of the wine, that it made them sleepe more soundly that night then was for their safetie: for the Duke of Beneuent set on them in the dead of the night, and so more by force of his wine then of his weapons vanquished them.

18. staffe. In the time of Pope Urban the fourth, mentioned couertly in the 18. staffe, one Charles Duke of Aniou was called into Italy by the said Pope, and pronounced King of Sicily. But in a short time hauing done many great feats, the Sicilians conspired against him by the meanes of one Iohn of Procida, and murdered them all with great crueltie at the sound of an euensong bell: so as it is to this day a by-word vsed in Italy if any notable crueltie be done, that is withall so dauidly executed, they call it the Sicilians euensong: for they did at one euensong kill not onely all the Frenchmen, but also all the women they thought to be with child by them.

21. staffe. The Earle of Marca, mentioned in the 21 staffe, married Queene Ioan of Naples (the matter for the strangenes of the president, I thought worth the noting) this Ioan being sister to Charles the third, and heire generall to the Crowne of Naples, was contented, for auoiding the foule infamie that she had by her ouer great familiaritie, and the too much inward acquaintance of one Pandolfo a meane man, to marry with one Iames Earle of Marca, and of the bloud royall of France: but first she indented with him, that he should onely haue the bare title of King, but she would haue the gouernement wholly in her hands: he being once in possession, brake his couenant, and would needs gouerne all: but she by the help of Francis Sforse, in the end deprived him of the whole, and sent him backe into his country againe, where the poore Gentleman was glad to make himselfe an Hermit.

28. staffe. Lodwike Sforse spoken of in the 28. staffe, for emulation of the king of Naples, first brought Charles the eight into Italy, and made him so strong, that in the end he was not able to get him out againe. This Lodwike his manner was still to be plotting of new deuices, to set other Princes at variance: now taking part with one side openly, and feeding the other with money secretly; neuer fast friend to any, neuer so proud as when with his smooth tongue and faire promises he had beguiled some plaine and open man, not so fine headed as himselfe. Now though we might perhaps note some men of our time held for notable wise men, and leaning much to this kind of course, yet I see small encouragement, either by his beginning, or proceeding, or ending, why any should thinke him worth the following: he began an vsurper, he liued a dissembler, he died a begger, and (which is worse) a prisoner. Further it is noted in Guichardine that he spent (as I remember) eight hundred thousand Duckets in that kind I spake of, setting Princes together by the eares: and he gat this for his labour, that no Prince loued him, as appeared when being ten yeares a prisoner in France, no man euer made sute in a manner for his libertie. Wherefore Tully saith to Anthonie in one of his Phillippiks, Te miror Antone, quorum acta imiteris eorum exitus non perhorrescere. I maruell (saith he) friend Anthonie, that you are not afraid of their ends,

ends, whose evil acts you do follow. So surely I would wish none of my friends neither in print nor publike affaires, to follow those halting courses, but hold it for a maxim, that he that is not a true friend, shall not have a true friend.

The Marquis of Pescara touched in the xxix. staffe, at the assault of Castellnouo in Naples, being impatient of all stay, bargained with an Ethiopian slave to burne the French nauie, and to let him in at the Church called Santa Croce, but the slave hauing greater rewards given him of the Frenchmen, betrayed him, and shot him in with a forked arrow, and so killed him. 29. staffe.

In the xxxij. staffe where he speaks of Geriudad, where Liuiano the Venetian Captaine was taken, I will refer the reader to Guicciardine for the whole discourse of the matter, beginning at the league of Cambray. But the substance of the matter briefly is this: Maximillian the Emperour, Lewes king of France, and all the kings of Europe in effect, together with Pope Iulio, made a league at Cambray, combining themselves against the Venetians, and in deed preuailed so farre against them, that they left them almost nothing in terra firma as they call it, deuiding all their townes, some to the king of Spaine, some to the Pope, some to Lewes himselfe, diuers to the Emperour, and two or three to the Duke of Ferrara. But in the end (as commonly in songs of so many parts they cannot long keepe perfect harmony, but that some sing out of tune) so it fell out, that in parting the spoiles, they of the league could not well agree among themselves, and so gaue breath to the Venetians, who thereby recovered much of their state againe. 33. staffe.

In the xxxvij. staffe he speaks of the ouerthrow of the Swizzers, that had bene before wonderfull proud of their glorious title giuen them by the Pope, who sent them the Pontificall banner, with this title vnto it, Defenders of the libertie of the Church, against the pride of Princes. But after that king Francis came into Italie and besieged Millan, the Swizzers that were in the towne refusing to make a peace with him, which he offered them, comming after to battell were overcome, and seuen thousand of them slaine. 37. staffe.

In the xliij. staffe and so forward for three or foure more, he mentions the battell of Pavia, where the king of France was taken, a thing so generally known as I need not stand long on it: onely mine author touches one chiefe oversight of this kings, which was, that his muster masters deceiued him in the number of his men: but howsoeuer it was, sure it is this Prince was a most worthy man, and wanted no quality of an excellent king, valiant and bountifull and such a fauourer of learned men, that the Italians termed him, Padre e madre, the father and mother of learning and liberall sciences. 44. staffe.

In the xlix. staffe he toucheth the sacke of Rome, which the Duke of Bourbon was ringleader of, though himselfe was at the verie first assault slaine, with a barguebush shot in the head, but the other Captaines sacked the towne, and in fine draue the Pope to his ransome. And thus much for the storie of this booke: now I come to the Allegorie. 49. staffe.

Diuers excellent good Allegories may be taken out of this prettie fiction of Prester Iannic, called Senapos. One is, as I partly touched in the morall, when men through wealth and honor grow proud, and despisers of God and religion, whose state is damnable and incurable, except a flying knight come downe from heauen, I meane some Angell of God, or speciall grace of God, to remoue these monsters and monstrous opinions out of their minds. The punishment of blindness laid vpon him for that his presumptuous assaulting Paradise, shewes that no men are in deed more blind, then those that thinke they see so much more then other men, specially when they enter into that wilfull blindness, of not seeing the way to their owne saluation. Italie had bin noted long to haue had many irreligious men in it, and no maruel, for our old English prouerbe is, the nearer the Church, the furdur from God: yet surely those despisers of religion, are themselves despised of many: in so much as it is growne for a byword among them; when they speake of such a man, they will say, Oh, he is grown a profound wise mā, he begins now not to beleue in Christ, therby Ironically noting his passing folly. I would stand longer in applying al the particulars of this Allegorie, but that I doubt I am somewhat to tedious in these notes already.

In the Harpias that snatch away the meate from the mouth of this king, he alludes (as himselfe expoundeth plainly in the beginning of the next booke) to the Swizzers and other strangers that spoile Italie. But a like storie, which thus may seeme to allude vnto, is told of Calai and Zet, sonnes of Orithya daughter to Erietheus king of Athens, who are sayd to haue deliuered Phineus king of Thrace from the Harpias in such a like sort. Allusion.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxiiij. booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Astolfo heares of Lydias plague in hell,
Vntill the smoke annoyd and fould him so,
That he was faine to wash him at a well;
Which done, to Paradise he straight doth go,
Where he doth meet Saint Iohn, who doth him tell
Strange things, and as strange things to him doth show:
And there Orlandos wit he doth receaue,
And sees the fatall threeds the sisters weane.*



¹ H foule Harpias, greedie,
hunger starued,
Whom wrath diuine, for
iust reuenge hath sent
To blinded Italy, that hath
deserued
For sins both old and late,
so to be shent.
The sustenance that shold
for food haue serued,
For widowes poore and orphans innocent,
Thee filthy monsters do consume and wast it
Oft at one meale, before the owners tast it.

² He doubtlesse guiltie is of grievous sin,
That first set open that long closed caue,
From which all filth and greedines came in
To Italie, and it infected haue;
Then ended good, then did bad dayes begin,
And discord foule so farre off all peace draue,
That now in warres, in pouertie and paine,
It long hath taride, and shall long remaine.

³ Vntill she can her slouthfull sonnes awake,
From drowfie sleepe, that now themselues forget,
And say to them, for shame example take,
Let others valiant deeds your courage whet:
Why should not you the like acts vndertake,
As in time past did Calai and Zer?
That erst like aid to Phineas did bring,
As did Astolfo th'Ethiopian king.

⁴ Who hauing driu'n away these monsters sell,
From blind Senapos board, as erst I told,

And chased them so farre, vntill they fell
Into the caue most fearfull to behold;
That fearfull caue that was the mouth of hell,
To hearken at the same he waxed bold,
And heard most wofull mourning, plaints and cries,
Such as from hell were likely to arise.

⁵ Astolfo minds into the place to enter,
And visit those that haue forgone this light,
And pierce the earth eu'nto the middle center,
To see if ought may there be worth the sight;
For why he thought what need I feare to venter,
That haue this horne, with which I can affright
Foule Sathan, Cerberus with trebble chaps,
And safely keepe my selfe from all mishaps.

⁶ He ties his flying beast fast by the raines,
With mind to hell it selfe to bid defiance,
His horne fast tide about his necke remaines,
In which much more then sword he puts affiance:
But at his very entrance he complaines
Of that same smoke that bred him much annoyance,
That sauourd strong of brimstone and of pitch,
Yet still Astolfo goeth thorough stich.

⁷ But still the farder that he forward goes,
He feeles the smoke more noisome and more thick,
That in himselfe he gan now to suppose,
If farder he should wade he should be sicke;
When lo a shadow seemed to disclose
It selfe to him, of somewhat that was quicke,
And to his thinking hither wau'd and thether,
Much like a carcasie hanged long in wether.

*Here begins the
tale of Lydia.*

8
The English Duke that had desire to know,
If so he saw a bodie or a vision,
Strake with his sword thereat so fierce a blow,
As would indeed thereof haue made diuision,
If it had bin as it did seeme in show:
But when he saw his sword made no incision,
He guessed that it was (by that blows giuing)
A passed spirit, not a bodie liuing.

9
Then heard he how thus wofully it said,
Oh you that to these lower parts descend,
Bring vs no hurt, though you can bring no aid,
And be not so to those whom none can frend.
The Duke amazd, both hands and footsteps staid,
And said vnto the ghost, so God thee send
Some speedie ease of this thy painfull smart,
As thou wilt deine to tell me who thou art.

10
And if to worke your good lay in my lot,
Aboue or here I should be glad to do it.
Ah (said the ghost) my plague with such a knot
Is tide, as mortall strength cannot vndo it,
Yet your request denie you will I knot,
Because you haue so great a mind vnto it,
I will declare to you my stock and name,
And eke the cause why to this place I came.

11
My name is *Lydia*, borne of princely birth,
And bred in pompe and solaces delightfull,
Though now in place excluded from all mirth,
I lie condemn'd by Gods high doome and rightfull,
Because while I did liue aboue on earth,
Vnto my loue I shewd my selfe so spightfull;
And many more be here for like offences,
As he that all doth rule, their plague dispences.

*Anaxarite, for
loue of who Iphis
hanged himselfe
in the Ile of Cy-
prus.*

*Daphne in the
first booke of Ouids
Metamorphosis.*

12
Here lies that faire, but cruell *Anaxaritee*,
Whose corps a stone diuine reuenge did make,
Her ghost in smoke that no light ay shall clarifie,
Doth most seuerely, but most iust penance take,
Because she could without all fence of charitie,
Behold her loue hanging for her sake:
Here *Daphne* lies, that now repents her shunning
Of *Phæbus*, whom she scapt with ouerunning.

13
Too tedious it would be for me to tell
The seu'rall names of eu'ry femall spirit,
That for reward of their hard harts, in hell
Appointed are such portions to inherit.
Yet farre more are the men that there do dwell,
For like offence, who for their euill merit (them,
Are placed much more low, though somewhat nie
Where fume doth smother them, and flame doth fry (them.

*Theseus forsooke
Ariadne.
Jason forsooke
Hippisphile, and
after Medea.
* Aeneas forsooke
Dido.
Ammon son to
David, deflowered
Thamar, and af-
ter despised her,
Gave her away,
for which he was
slain by Absolon*

14
And reason good, for sith our sex is weake,
The greater sinne it is vs to deceaue,
As *Theseus* and *Jason* well can speake,
And he that * *Latin* did of rule bereaue,
With him, on whom faire *Absolon* did wreake
The wrong that rauisht *Thamar* did receaue,
With diuers that of tone and tother gender,
Refusd or left their loues for causes slender.

15
But that I may particularly tuch
The cause that brought me to this endlesse paine,
My beautie while I liu'd, and pride was such,
As none or few did to the like attaine,
And both of them in me exceld so much,
Twas hard to say which greater was of twaine;
But this I know full well my proud mind grew,
Out of conceit of my well pleasing hew.

16
It happend that a valiant knight of Thrace,
In state and liuing of the better sort,
And hearing praise of my praise-worthy face,
Confirmed oft by more then one report,
He purposed, and performed it in short space,
Vnto my fathers kingdome to resort,
That he might sue to me, and onely serue me,
In hope by his great value to deserue me.

17
In gallant sort when he to *Lydia* came,
And saw with eye what he had heard with care,
He calleth scant report, and niggard fame,
That did to him so barren tidings beare:
And rauisht with my looke he straight doth frame
Himselfe to wait in court, and tarrie there,
And shewd such worth, and vsed such behaour,
As iustly might deserue my fathers fauour.

18
Exceeding was his seruice and desert,
If to a gratefull prince it had bin done,
So perfectly he had of warre the art,
That for my fire, by his conduct he wonne
All *Caria*, and of *Cilicia* part,
And after these exploits, he then begun,
For recompence of these his merits rise,
To pray my father I might be his wife.

19
My father him repulst with answer sowe,
Because to match me higher was his will,
Not to a priuat knight, whose chiefeest dowre
Was vertue, of whose worth he could not skill;
His greedy thoughts did nought but gaine deuoure,
And couetise the branch and roote of ill,
Made him no more regard his vertuous sute,
Then doth an Assle the sound of sweetest Late.

20
Alceste (so was nam'd the worthy Knight)
Tooke this so foule repulse in great disdain,
Proceeding thence, from whence he ought of right
Expect great recompence for his great paine;
Wherefore he parted thence in great despight,
And vowd reuenge, nor was his vow in vaine.
Vnto th' *Armenian* king he thence doth go,
My fathers emulous and auncient fo.

21
Him, readie to accept each light occasion,
He soone perswades, without all intermission,
To make vpon my father fierce inuasion.
And make him chiefe Lieutenant by commission:
And hauing wonne him thereto by perswasion,
They thus agreed of spoiles to make partition,
As namely all the townes he wonne should be
The kings, and for himselfe he askt but me.

This

22
This legue thus made, what woes my fire he wrought,
I know not how in speeches to expresse,
Foure royall armies quickly came to nought,
Disperst or dead in halfe a yeare and lesse;
In fine *Alceste* by his vallew brought
My father and his friends to such distresse,
They tooke them to a fort with such small treasure,
As in so Scarbrow warning they had leasure.

23
When here a while he vs besieged had,
To such dispaire he then my father draue,
To yeeld me vp he would haue bin ful glad,
To be his wife, yea eu'n to be his slaue;
Nor would my fire haue thought the bargain bad,
It halfe the Realme with me for dowre he gaue,
So sore he feard, ere long to leese it all,
And dye in wofull bands a captiue thrail.

24
Wherefore in season to preuent the worst,
Me that had beene the cause of all this ill,
He minds to offer to *Alceste* furst,
To win thereby his fauor and good will:
I went (for why none other doe I trust)
With mind herein my fires mind to fulfill,
And offer mine owne selfe at his deuotion,
With halfe the Realme, if he accept the motion.

25
Alceste hearing I came him to looke,
Against me forth he comes al pale and trembling,
Not like a conquerour was then his looke,
But rather a captiued man resembling;
Which when I found, my first plot I forsooke,
For well I saw that this was not dissembling,
With lowring looke, I held my peace awhile,
Then fit for his estate I fram'd my stile.

26
I waxed bold the more I see him faint,
And first I curst this vnluckie loue,
And of his crueltie I made complaint,
Which harmd my friends, and chiefe that he would
Against my will to haue me by constraint, (proue
I further did most sharply him reprove,
That he so parted with the first deniall,
And neuer sought to make new friendly triall.

27
I told him that his manners were to fierce,
That though my father his iust suit denyed,
Because perhaps his nature is peruerse,
And would not at the first attempt be plyed,
He should nortough, all his good deeds reuerse,
But rather ought with constancie haue tryed,
By patient suffering, and by painfull seruing,
To come vnto reward of well deseruing.

28
And if my father would not haue beene wonne,
I would (I said) his fauour haue procured,
And would haue prayd him, to make him his sonne
If I had found his loue to me had dured;
Or else in secret I would that haue donne,
By which of me he should haue beene assured;
But sith he needs would trie another meane,
I told him plaine, my loue was alterd cleane.

29
And though I now came in this humble sort,
To yeeld my body, as the price of peace,
Because my father, whom he held to short,
Intreated me to sue for his release;
Yet did I vow to mar his hoped sport,
And if to offer force he would not cease,
I sware that rather I my selfe would kill,
Then grant such ioyes constrained against my will.

30
These words and such as these to him I spake,
Finding my powre was ouer him so great,
Wherewith I did him as repentant make,
As ere was Saint, in Hermits desert seat:
He fell downe at my feet, and prayd me take
His naked dagger, and did me intreat,
To stab him with the same into his hart,
To take iust vengeance of his lewd desert.

31
Now when I saw him at this passe, I thought
To follow this great conquest to his end,
And straight a little hope to him I brought,
Of fauour, if his errour he would mend,
And if my fathers freedome might be wrought,
And state restord, and he continue friend,
And not attempt hereafter to constrain me,
But with his seruiceable loue to gaine me.

32
He promised hereof he would not misse,
And backe vnto my fire, me safe did send,
Nor once presumed he my mouth to kisse,
Thinke you, how he vnto my yoke did bend;
I thinke that loue playd well his part in this,
And needed not for him, more arrowes spend;
Hence straight vnto th' Armenian king he went,
Whose all the winnings should be, by consent.

33
And in the mildest manner that he could,
He prayeth him to grant his good assent,
That my poore fire might I ydia quiet hold,
And he would with Armenta be content,
The king *Alceste* sharply then controld,
And in plaine termes, he told he neuer ment,
To cease that bloodie warre at any hand,
While that my father had a foot of land.

34
What if (said he) *Alcestes* wau'ring braine,
Is turnd with womans words: his damage be it
Shall I therefore loose all a whole yeares gaine
At his request? I neuer will agree it:
Again *Alceste* prayes him, and againe
But all in vaine, he sees it will not be yet;
And last he waxed angrie, and did sweare,
That he should do it, or for loue or feare.

35
Thus wrath engendred many a bitter word,
And bitter words, did breed more bloody blowes,
Alceste in that furie drew his sword,
And straight the guard on each side him inclose,
But he among them, to himselfe besturd,
He slew the king, and by the helpe of those
Of Thrace, and of Cilicia in his pay,
Th' Armenians all, he put to flight that day.

36
And then his happie victorie pursuing,
First he my fathers frends did all enlarge,
And next the Realme within one month ensuing,
He gat againe, without my fathers charge;
And for the better shunning and elchuing,
Of all vnkindnesse, with amends most large,
For recompence of all harmes he had donne,
He gaue him all the spoiles that he had wonn.

37
Yea fully to content him to his asking,
In all the countries that did neare confine,
He raisd such summes of coyne, by cursed tasking,
As made them grieue, and greatly to repine.
The while my hate, in lous faire vizer masking,
In outward show, I seemd to him incline;
Yet secretly I studied to annoy him,
And many wayes deuised to destroy him.

38
In steed of triumph by a priuie traine,
At his returne to kill him we intended,
But from such fact, feare forst vs to refraine,
Because we found he was so strongly frended;
I seemed of his comming glad and faine,
And promist when our troubles all were ended,
That I his faithfull yokefellow would be,
In wo or weale, to take such part as he.

39
Wherefore I prayd him first that for my sake,
He would subdue some of our priuat foes,
And he each hard exploit doth vndertake,
And now alone, and then with few he goes,
And safe returnes, yet oft I did him make,
To fight with cruell Giants, and with those
That past his strength oft with som monstrous beast,
Or Dragon fell, that did our Realme molest.

40
Don Hercules neuer by his cruell Aunt,
Nor by the hard Euristheus, was so wrought,
In Lerna, Thrafe, in Nemea Eremaunt,
Numid, Etolia, Tebrus where he fought,
Nor Spaine, nor no where else, as I might vaunt,
With mild perswasion, but with murthering thought,
I made my louer still to put in vre,
In hope hereby his ruine to procure.

*Hercules labors
appointed, by his
Aunt Iuno, and
Euristheus his half
brother.*

41
But as the Palme the more the top is prest,
The thicker do the vnder branches grow,
Eu'n so the more his vertue was opprest,
By hard attempts, the brighter it did show:
Which when I found, forthwith I thought it best,
Another way to worke his ouerthrow,
A way by which in deed I wrought the feat,
Which yet I shame and sorrow to repeat.

42
Against all such as bare him best affection,
I secretly did still his minde incense,
And euer one and one, by my direction,
I made him wrong, till all were driu'n from thence:
So was his heart and soule in my subiection,
So had my bewtie blinded all his sence,
Had I but winkt, or vp my finger hild,
He had not car'd whom he had hurt or kild.

43
Now when I thus had foyld my fathers foes,
And by Alceste, had Alceste wonne,
And made him for my sake, forsake all those,
That for his sake no high attempt would shunne;
I then began my selfe plaine to disclose,
And let him know what wise threed he had sponne
With bitter spitefull words, I all to rated him,
And told him plaine, that in my heart I hated him.

44
And that I wisht his life and dayes were ended,
And would haue kild him, if I could for shame,
Saue then I should of all men be condemned,
Because his high deserts were of such fame;
Yet him and them I vtterly contemned,
And loathd to see his face, or heare his name,
And sware I would wish him thenceforth no better,
Nor heare his message, nor receiue his letter.

45
At this my cruell vsage and vngate,
He tooke such griefe that in a while he died;
Now for this sinne, he that a l sinne doth hate,
Condemns me here in this smoke to be tyed,
Where I in vaine repent my selfe too late,
That I his suite so causleslie denyed,
For which, in smoke eternall I must dwell,
Sith no redemption can be had from hell.

46
Here Lidia this her wofull tale doth end,
And faded thence; now when her speech did cease,
The Duke a farther passage did intend,
But this tormenting smoke did so increase,
That backward he was forst his steps to bend,
For vitall sprites alreadie did decrease,
Wherefore the smoke to shunne, and life to saue,
He clammerd to the top of that same caue.

47
And least those woman faced monsters fell,
Might after come from out that lothsome ledge,
He digd vp stones, and great trees downe did fell,
He digd vp stones, and great trees downe did fell,
(His sword sufficing both for axe and fledge)
He hewd and brake, and labourd it so well,
That gainst the caue, he made a thicke strong hedge,
So stopt with stones, and many a ragged rafter,
As kept th' Harpias in, a great while after.

48
But now the Duke, both with his present toyle,
That did with dirt and dust, him all to dash,
And with the smoke that earst did him so soyle,
As blacke as soot, was driu'n to seeke some plash,
Where he himselfe might of his cloths dispoyle,
And both his rayment, and his armour wash,
For why the smoke, without and eake within,
Did taint his cloths, his armour, and his skin.

*Looke in the
Allegoria.*

49
Soone after he a christall streame espying,
From foote to head he washt himselfe therein,
Then vp he gets him on his courser flying,
And of the ayre he more and more doth win,
Affecting heau'n, all earthly thoughts defying:
As fishes cut the liquid streame with fin,
So cutteth he the ayre and doth not stop,
Till he was come vnto that mountaines top.

Smile.

This

50

This hill nigh toucht the circle of the Moone,
The top was all a fruitfull pleasant feeld,
And light at night, as ours is here at noone,
The sweetest place that euer man becheeld;
(There would I dwell if God gaue me my boone)
The soyle thereof most fragrant flowres did yeeld,
Like Rubies, Gold, Pearles, Saphyrs, Topas stones,
Crisolits, Diamonds, Iacints for the nones.

51

The trees that there did grow were euer greene,
The fruits that thereon grew were neuer fading,
The sundry colourd birds did sit betweene,
And sing most sweet, the fruitfull boughs them sha-
The riuers cleare as crytall to be scene, (ding:
The fragrant smell, the sense and soule inuading,
With ayre so temperate and so delightfome,
As all the place beside was cleare and lightfome.

52

Amid the plaine a pallace passing faire
There stood, aboue conceit of mortall men,
Built of great height into the clearest aire,
And was in circuit twentie mile and ten,
To this faire place the Duke did straight repaire,
And vewing all that goodly country then,
He thought this world, compared with that pallace,
A dunghill vile, or prison voyd of follace.

53

But when as nearer to the place he came,
He was amazed at the wondrous sight,
The wall was all one precious stone, the same,
And then the carbuncle more sanguine bright;
O workman rare, o most stupendious frame,
What *Dedalus* of this had ouersight?
Peace ye that wont to praise the wonders seau'n
Those earthly kings made, this the King of heau'n.

54

Now while the Duke his eyes with wonder fed,
Behold a faire old man in th'entrie stood,
Whose gowne was white, but yet his iacket red,
The tone as snow, the tother loked as blood,
His beard was long and white, so was his head,
His countenance was so graue, his grace so good,
A man thereby might at first sight suspect,
He was a Saint, and one of Gods elect.

55

He comming to the Duke with chearfull face,
Who now alighted was for reuerence sake,
Bold Baron (said the Saint) by speciall grace,
That sufferd wast this voyage strange to make,
And to arriue at this most blessed place,
Not knowing why thou didst this iourney take,
Yet know that not without the will celestiall,
Thou comdest here to Paradise terrestiall.

56

The cause you come a iourney of such length,
Is here of me to learne what must be done,
That *Charles* and holy Church may now at length
Be freed, that erst were welnigh ouerrunne,
Wherefore impute it not to thine owne strength,
Nor to thy courage, nor thy wit, my tonne,
For neither could thy horne nor winged steed,
Without Gods helpe stand thee in any steed.

57

But at more leisure hereof we will reason,
And more at large I mind with you to speake,
Now with some meate refresh you, as is reason,
Lest fasting long may make your stomack weake;
Our fruits (said he) be neuer out of season:
The Duke reioyced much, and marueld eke,
Then chiefe when by his speeches and his cote,
He knew 'twas he that the fourth Gospell wrote.

58

That holy *John* whom Christ did hold so deare,
That others thought he death should neuer see,
Though in the Gospell it appeares not cleare,
But thus he said, What if it pleased me,
O *Peter*, that thy fellow tarry here,
Vntill my conming, what is that to thee?
So though our Sauour not directly spake it,
Yet sure it was, to eu'ry one did take it.

59

He here assumed was in happie houre,
Whereas before *Enoch* the Patriark was,
And where the Prophet bides of mightie powre,
That in the fire coach did thither passe:
These three in that so happie sacred bowre,
In high felicitie their dayes did passe,
Where in such sort to stand they are allowd,
Till Christ returne vpon the burning clowd.

60

These saints him welcome to that sacred seate,
And to a stately lodging him they brought;
And for his horse likewise ordained meate,
And then the Duke himselfe by them was taught,
The daintie fruites of Paradise to eate,
So delicate in tast, as sure he thought
Our first two parents were to be excused,
That for such fruit obedience they refused.

61

Now when the Duke had nature satisfide,
With meate and drinke, and with his due repose;
(For there were lodgings faire, and all beside
That needfull for mans vle man can suppose)
He gets vp early in the morning tide,
What time with vs a low, the Sunne arose,
But ere that he from out his lodging moued,
Came that discipule whom our Sauour loued.

62

And by the hand the Duke abroad he led,
And said some things to him, I may not name,
But in the end (I thinke) my sonne he led,
Although that you from France so lately came,
You little know how those in France haue sped,
There your *Orlando* quite is out of frame,
For God his sinne most sharply now rewardeth,
Who most doth punish whom he most regardeth.

*He saith, your
Orlando, because
he was his cosin;
Sentence.*

63

Know that the champion your *Orlando*, whom
God so great strength and so great courage gaue,
And so rare grace, that from his mothers wombe,
By force of Steele his skin no hurt might haue,
To th'end that he might fight for his owne home,
And those that hold the Christian faith to saue;
As *Sampson* erst enabled was to stand,
Against Philistins for the Hebrew land.

Bb ij

64

This your *Orlando* hath bin so vgrate,
For so great grace receau'd, vnto his maker,
That when his country was in weakeſt ſtate,
And needed ſuccor moſt, he did forſake her
For loue (O wofull loue that breeds Gods hate)
To woo a Pagan wench, with mind to take her,
And to ſuch ſinne this loue did him intife,
He would haue kild his kiſman once or twiſe.

65

For this ſame cauſe doth mightie God permit
Him mad to runne, with belly bare and breſt,
And ſo to daze his reaſon and his wit,
He knowes not others, and himſelfe knowes leaſt:
So in times paſt our Lord did deeme it fit,
To turne the king of Babel to a beaſt,
In which eſtate he ſeu'n whole yeares did paſſe,
And like an oxe did feed on hay and graſſe.

66

But for the Palladins offence is not
So great as was the King of Babels crime,
The mightie Lord of mercie doth allot
Vnto his puniſhment a ſhorter time,
Twelue weeks in all he muſt remaine a ſot,
And for this cauſe you ſufferd were to climie
To this high place, that here you may be taught
How to his wits *Orlando* may be brought.

67

Here you ſhall learne to worke the ſeate I warrant,
But yet before you can be fully ſped,
Of this your great, but not forethought on arrant,
You muſt with me a more ſtrange way be led,
Vp to the Planet, that of all ſtarrs errant
Is neareſt vs, when ſhe comes ouer head,
Then will I bring you where the medicine lies,
That you muſt haue to make *Orlando* wiſe.

68

Thus all that day they ſpent in diuers talke,
With ſolace great, as neuer wanteth there,
But when the Sunne began this earth to balke,
And paſſe into the tother hemiſpheare,
Then they prepar'd to fetch a further walke,
And ſtraight the fire charret that did beare
Elias, when he vp to heau'n was carri'd,
Was ready in a trice, and for them tarrid.

69

Four horſes fierce, as red as flaming fire,
Th' Apoſtle doth into the charret ſet,
Which when he framed had to his deſire,
Aſtolfo in the carre by him he ſet,
Then vp they went, and ſtill aſcending hire,
About the fire region they did get,
Whoſe nature ſo th' Apoſtle then did turne,
That though they went through fire, they did not

70

I ſay although the fire were wondrous hot,
Yet in their paſſage they no heate did feele,
So that it burn'd them, nor offends them not;
Thence to the Moon he guides the running wheele,
The Moone was like a glaſſe all voyd of ſpot,
Or like a peece of purely burniſht ſteele,
And lookt, although to vs it ſeemd ſo ſmall,
Weligh as big as earth and ſea and all.

71

Here had *Aſtolfo* cauſe of double wonder,
One, that that region ſeemeth there ſo wide,
That vnto vs that are ſo farre aſunder,
Seems but a little circle, and beſide,
That to behold the ground that him lay vnder,
A man had need to haue bin ſharply eide,
And bend his browes, and mark eu'n all they might,
It ſeemd ſo ſmall, now chiefly wanting light.

72

Twere infinite to tell what wondrous things
He ſaw, that paſſed ours not few degrees,
What towns, what hils, what riuers and what ſprings,
What dales, what pallaces, what goodly trees;
But to be ſhort, at laſt his guide him brings,
Vnto a goodly valley, where he ſees
A mightie maſſe of things ſtrangely confuſed,
Things that on earth were loſt, or were abuſed.

73

A ſtore-houſe ſtrange, that what on earth is loſt,
By fault, by time, by fortune, there is found,
And like a merchandize is there ingroſt,
In ſtranger ſort then I can well expound;
Nor ſpeake I ſole of wealth, or things of coſt,
In which blind fortunes powre doth moſt abound,
But eu'n of things quite out of fortunes powre,
Which wilfully we wait each day and houre.

74

The precious time that fooles miſſpend in play,
The vaine attempts that neuer take effect,
The vowes that ſinners make, and neuer pay,
The counſels wiſe that careleſſe men neglect,
The fond deſires that leade vs oft aſtray,
The praifes that with pride the heart infect,
And all we looſe with folly and miſſpending,
May there be found vnto this place aſcending.

75

Now as *Aſtolfo*, by thoſe regions paſt,
He aſked many queſtions of his guide,
And as he on one ſide his eye did caſt,
A wondrous hill of bladders he eſpide;
And he was told they had bin in time paſt,
The pompous crownes and ſcepters full of pride,
Of monarks of *Aſſiria*, and of *Greece*,
Of which now ſcantly there is left a peece.

76

He ſaw great ſtore of baited hookes with gold,
And thoſe were gifts that fooliſh men prefard,
To giue to Princes couetous and old,
With fondeſt hope of future vaine reward;
Then were there ropes all in ſweet garlands rold,
And thoſe were all falſe flatteries he hard,
Then heard he crickets ſongs like to the verſes,
The ſeruant in his maſters praife reherſes.

77

There did he ſee fond loues, that men purſew,
To looke like golden giues with ſtones all ſet,
Then things like Eagles talents he did vew,
Thoſe offices that fauorites do get;
Then ſaw he bellows large that much wind blew,
Large promiſes that Lords make, and forget,
Vnto their *Ganimeds* in flowre of youth,
But after nought but beggery enſewth.

The Moone the
loweſt Planets.

This ſcene is
growing and
English pro
we ſee, that
wits are loſt
the Moon
they haue lo
up ſtamps in
circles of the
Moone.

Looke in the
Allegorie.

Pride of Princes
and vaine ſhew
their titles.

Gifts giuen
Princes in hope
of reward.

Comely ſer
uers.

Soft flatteries.

Fond loues.

Fauorites re
warded.

Great men pro
miſes.

He

78

He saw great Cities seated in faire places,
That ouerthrowne quite topsie turue stood,
He askt and learnd, the caule of their defaces
Was treason, that doth neuer turne to good:
He saw fowle serpents, with faire womens faces,
Of coyners and of thieues the curled brood,
He saw fine glasses, all in peeces broken,
Of seruice lost in court, a wofull token.

79

Of mingled broth he saw a mightie masse,
That to no vlc, all spilt on ground did lye,
He askt his teacher, and he heard it was,
The frutlesse almes that men giue when they dye:
Then by a faire greene mountaine he did passe,
That once smelt sweet, but now it stinks perdye,
This was that gift (be't said without offence)
That Constantine gaue Siluester long since.

80

Of birdlymd rodds, he saw no little store,
And these (O Ladyes fayre) your bewties be,
I do omit ten thousand things and more
Like vnto these, that there the Duke did see:
For all that here is lost, there euermore
Is kept, and thither in a trise doth flee,
Howbeit more nor lesse there was no folly,
For still that here with vs remaineth wholly.

81

He saw some of his owne lost time and deeds,
But yet he knew them not to be his owne,
They seemd to him disguisd in so strange weeds,
Till his instructer made them better knowne:
But last, the thing which no man thinks he needs,
Yet each mans needeth most, to him was showne,
By name mans wit, which here we leele so fast,
As that one substance, all the other past.

82

It seemd to be a body moyft and soft,
And apt to mount by eu'ry exhalation,
And when it hither mounted was aloft,
It there was kept in pots of such a fashion,
As we call Iars, where oyle is kept in oft:
The Duke beheld with no small admiration,
The Iars of wit, amongst which one had writ,
Vpon the side thereof, *Orlandos wit*.

83

This vessell bigger was then all the rest,
And eu'ry vessell had ingrau'n with art,
His name, that erst the wit therein posselt:
There of his owne the Duke did finde a part,
And much he musd and much himselte he blest,
To see some names of men of great defart,
That thinke they haue great store of wit, and boist it,
And here it playne appeard they quite had lost it.

84

Some loose their wit with loue, some with ambition,
Some running to the sea, great wealth to get,
Some following Lords, and men of high condition,
And some in fayre iewells rich and costly set:
One hath desire to proue a rare Magicion,
And some with Poetrie their wit forget,
Another thinks to be an Alcumist,
Till all be spent, and he his number mist.

85

Astolfo takes his owne before he goes,
For so th'Euangelist did him permit:
He set the vessels mouth but to his nose,
And to his place, he snufft vp all his wit:
Long after wife he liu'd as *Turpin* shows,
Vntill one fault he after did commit,
By name the loue of one fayre Northerne lassie,
Sent vp his wit vnto the place it was.

86

The vessell where *Orlandos* wit was closed,
Astolfo tooke, and thience with him did beare,
It was far heauier then he had supposed,
So great a quantitie of wit was theare:
But yet ere backe their iourney they disposed,
The holy Prophet brought *Astolfo*, wheare
A pallace (seldome seene by mortall man)
Was plast, by which a thicke darke riuier ran.

87

Each roome therein was full of diuers fleecis,
Of woll, of lint, of silke, or else of cotten;
An aged woman spun the diuers peccis,
Whole looke and hew, did shew her old and rotten:
Not much vnlike vnto that labour, this is,
By which in Sommer, new made silke is gotten,
Where frō the silke worme his fine garment taking
They reauē him of the clothes, of his owne making.

88

For first in one large roome a woman span
Threds infinite, of diuers stufte and hew;
Another doth with all the speed she can,
With other stufte, the distanes still renew:
The third in feature like, and pale and wan,
Doth seter faire from foule, and old from new:
Now who be these? the Duke demands his guide.
These be the fatall sisters, he replide;

89

The Parcees that the thred of life do spin,
To mortall men, hence death and nature know
When life must end, and when it must begin:
Now, she that doth deuide them, and bestow
The courle from finer, and the thicke from thin,
To that end works, that those that finest grow,
For ornaments in Paradise may dwell,
The courle are curst to be consum'd in hell.

90

The Duke did further in the place behold,
That when the threds were spent that had bin spun,
Their names in brasse, in siluer, or in gold,
Were wrote, and so into great heaps were donne;
From which a man that seemed wondrous old,
With whole loads of those names away did run,
And turn'd againe as fast, the way he went,
Nor neuer wearie was, nor euer spent.

91

This aged man did hold his pase so swift,
As though to runne, he onely had bin borne,
Or had it giu'n him as a speciall gift;
And in the lappet of his cloke were borne,
The names of men, with which he made such shift:
But now a while I craue to be forborne,
For in the booke enfewing shalbe showed,
How this old fire his cariage ill bestowed.

B b iij

*This is written
in the fourth
booke of the first
Cantos, aided to
Aristo, which
many thinke
were none of his
doing, and are
verie imperfect.*

Summe.

Morall.

In this xxxiiij. booke, is to be noted in the tale of Lydia, the punishment of ingratitude, and what an odious sin the same is, in the sight of God and the world: also here are to be obserued many kinds of ingratitude: as first of her despising of Alcestes long service, and approued good will, and secondly of the fathers ingrate recompences, for his great deserts by seruices in the wars, in which kind, it is not onely slanderous, but dangerous for a Prince to show a niggardly mind, and much more a contemptuous disposition. For though indeed no subiect (rightly considering his duty) ought to be moued by any ingratitude or iniury of his seueraigne, to forget his allegiance, yet seeing the nature of most men, and specially of braue and resolute minded men, is subiect to the passion of reuenge, and can hardly bridle the same when they shall find themselves (as they thinke) disdained, or their seruices not well regarded: therefore the wisest and safest way, and fittest for the Maiestie of a Prince, is to be liberall in rewarding, or at least thankfull in accepting such mens seruices, and to consider that loue and bountie, are stronger bands of allegiance, then feare and dutie.

Historie.

Concerning the Historie of this booke, I haue quoted some briefly by the side, and some is so plaine it expounds it selfe: onely I meane to adde a word or two what I haue read, concerning that which is here deliuered by mine author, about the Assumption of S. Iohn. First, how far the Scripture toucheth the same in the Gospell, euerie one knoweth, and how vpon the speech of our Saviour (if I will he tary till I come, what is that to thee) it was noysed among the Disciples, that that Disciple should neuer see death. After this, as other of good credit haue deliuered, S. Iohn liued till he was an hundred yeare old, and then made himselfe a tombe, and entred thereinto alieue in presence of many, and on the sodaine, a light shone all about the place, and tooke the tombe for the time, quite from their sights: but the light being gone, the coffin was found empty, and the body of that Saint was no more seene vpon the earth. Whereupon it was certainly thought that he was taken vp into heauen or Paradise, as Enoch and Elias were. Though this of S. Iohn be not recorded in the Scripture (nor no more is the assumption of the blessed virgin) and consequently, no man is bound to beleue it, as an article of our Creed: Yet for mine owne opinion, I thinke it may be verie true, and I would in such cases beleue a great deale more then I need, rather then any thing lesse then I ought; for the tone (if it be a sinne) is surely pardonable, but the other doubtles is verie damnable. But I will briefly note the Allegorie that is meant hereby.

Allegorie.

First, whereas Astolfo washeth himselfe in a christall well of cleare water, before he can fly vp to Paradise, it signifieth, that after a man shall by remorse, and deuout consideration, weigh and behold the filthinesse of his sinne, he must then wash himselfe with the cleare spring water of prayer and repentance; and then and not before, he may mount to Paradise: which may here be vnderstood the comfortable peace of conscience, the onely true Paradise of this world. And whereas Astolfo cometh to S. Iohn (whose name signifieth grace) to receiue by his helpe Orlando's lost wits, for so it is set downe that that was the secret cause why he was guided thither, though vnwares to himselfe: thereby it is to be vnderstood, that no hope nor means is left for any man that hath lost his wit, with following the vanities and pleasures of this world (as diuers carelesse christians do, in forgetting and omitting their duties to God, which is the verie highest point of follie,) I say there is no meane for them to recover their wit againe, but onely by the helpe of this S. Iohn, that is this, grace of God, which can miraculously restore it againe.

In the description of S. Iohns apparell (His gowne was white, but yet his Iacket red, The tone was snow, the tother lookt as blood. &c) by the red is signified charitie, which burneth with Zeale and feruentnesse of loue; by the white is meant virginitie and purenesse of life.

All those things that he faines to haue beene showed Astolfo in the circle of the Moone, are but similitudes, and likeness of such follies, as he that will marke them well, shall easily discerne.

The old man that ran away so fast with the Printed names of men, and flang them in the darke streame, figureth time, as in the next booke mine author verie artificially explaneth it: affirming in the person of S. Iohn, as if it were (as our proverbe saith) as true as the Gospell, that the onely defence against the malice of time, is the pen of the learned: and that fame outlasteth, and outflyeth all things: as the well learmed Gentleman, and my very good friend M. Henric Constable wrate in his Sonnet to the now king of Scotland.

Where others hooded with blind loue do fly
A low on ground, with buzzard Cupids wings,
A heau'nly loue from loue of loue thee brings,
And makes thy Muse to mount about the sky.
Young Muses be not woont to fly so hy,
Age taught by time, such sober dittie sings,
But thy youth flies from loue of youthfull things,
And to the wings of time doth ouerfly.
Thus thou disdainst all wordly wings as slow,
Because thy Muse with Angels wings doth leaue
Times wings behind, and Cupids wings below,
But take thou heed, least Fames wings thee deceaue,
With all thy speed from Fame thou canst not flee.
But more thou flees, the more it followes thee.

Allusion.

For the punishment of Lidyas ingratitude by hanging in the eternall smoke, makes me call to minde a story of the Emperour Seuerus as I remember, who hearing that a favorite of his accustomed to promise many men great furtherance in their suits, by his fauour with the Prince, and hauing taken their reward, his promise vanished into the aire like a vapor, and left the poore suiters nothing but his vaine breathed words: the iust Emperour caused him to be smothered to death with smoke, saying, Fumo percat, qui fumum vendidit. Let fume him choake, that selleth smoke.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxiiij. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Saint Iohn the praise of writers doth recount:
 Bradamant doth with good successe recover
 The prisoners, that were tane by Rodomount:
 This done, she sends a challenge to her lover,
 And sends withall an horse of good account,
 Which makes Rogero long in doubt to honer,
 The while, before his face the fall he saw,
 Of Serpentine, Grandonio, and Ferraw.*



*Aire mistresse who for me
 to heau'n shall fly,
 To bring again frō thence
 my wandring wit,
 Which I still loose, since
 from that piercing ey,
 The dart came forth that
 first my heart did hit?
 Nor of my losse, at al com-
 plaine would I.*

*Might I but keepe that which remaineth yet,
 But if it still decrease, within short space,
 I doubt I shall be in Orlandos case.*

*Yet well I wot where to recouer mine,
 Though not in Paradice nor Cynthias spheare,
 Yet doubtlesse in a place no lesse diuine,
 In that sweet face of yours, in that faire heare,
 That rubie lip, in those two starlike cyne,
 There is my wit, I know it wanders there;
 And with my lips, if you would giue me leaue,
 I there would search, I thence would it receaue,*

*But to returne vnto that English Prince,
 Whom (if you do remember) with S. Iohn,
 By vgly streame I left a litle since,
 The fatall sister spinners looking on,
 Who sometime do prolong, and sometime mince
 Our threed of life, I say he law anon,
 Among a million more, one passing fleece,
 More fine then that that Iason brought to Greece.*

The golden fleece

*So shone the thred that from that fleece out came,
 No gold, nor Orient perle could looke so bright,*

*Astolfo much desir'd to know his name,
 And time of birth, that to that thred had right,
 Straightways this answer vnto him doth frame,
 He that the darke Apocalips did write,
 The number of his birth shall noted be,
 When twentie shalbe tane from M and D.*

*And as the fleece which here so faire doth show,
 In finest substance passeth all the rest;
 So shall the person that the same doth ow,
 Make that same age in which he liueth, blest
 For all the gifts that nature can bestow,
 Or with which studie can a man inuest,
 Shall powred be on him with large proportion,
 Assigned from aboue, to be his portion.*

*There stands (said he) neare to the bankes of Poe,
 A village now of small or none account,
 Whose moorish seat the streame doth ouerflow,
 But in that time that I to you recount,
 Vnto a Citie of such state shall grow,
 As all the neighbour townes it shall surmount;
 Nor sole in walls, and buildings fayre and stately,
 But in good arts of old found out, or lately.*

*Nor thinke you this preferment to proceed,
 By peradventure, or as it twere by chance,
 But eu'n as a thing by God himselfe decreed,
 For one mans sake, his natie soile t' aduance;
 As still we see those that good fruits will breed.
 Do graffe the stocke, and prune & pike the branch,
 Or as the goldsmith pollisheth the mettell,
 In which he minds a gemme of price to settell.*

Neuer

8

For nere shall soule that shall to earth descend,
With mortall garment be more comely clad,
Neuer did God a soule from hence downe lend,
That more choise gifts, nor more rare vertues had
Then this, which vnto him he doth intend,
That shall his country and his friends make glad,
Hippolito of Est his name shall be,
To whom the heau'ns such fauours do decree.

9

For all those vertues great that wonted are,
To set forth diuers, diuersly deuied,
Shall ioyned be in this same man most rare,
Vnto such place, by heau'ns appointment guided;
Maintaind shall studies be by his great care,
All quarrels cease, and broyls shall be decided,
Whose vertues all, if I to tell prolong,
Orlando should expect his wit too long.

10

Thus much the follower of *Iesus* spake,
The while *Astolfo* those same webs doth vew,
From whence our liues, end and beginning take:
One spun, one cut, the third doth stufte renew.
Then came they to the foule and lothsome lake,
Darke, deepe and mirie, of a deadly hew,
Where was the aged man, that neuer stinted
To carry bundels of the names imprinted.

11

This was the man, whom (as I told before)
Both vse and nature so swift pac't had made,
He neuer rested, but ranne euermore,
And with his running he did vse this trade;
A heape of names within his cloke he bore,
And in the riuer did them all vnlade;
Or (plaine to speake) away he cast them all
Into this streame, which *Lethee* we do call.

12

This prodigall old wretch no sooner came
Vnto this cursed riuers barren banke,
But desprately, without all feare of blame,
Or caring to deserue reward or thanke,
He hurld therein full many a precious name,
Where millions soone into the bottome sanke,
And scant in eu'ry thousand one was found,
That was not in the gulfe quite lost and drown'd.

13

Yet all about great store of birds there flew,
As vultures, carren crows, and chattering pies,
And many more of sundry kinds and hew,
That made leud harmonie with their lowd cries:
These, when the carelesse wretch the tresor threw
Into that streame, did all they could deuise,
What with their talents some, and some with beake
To saue some names, but find themselues too weake.

14

For euer as they sought themselues to raise,
To beare away those names of great renowne,
The weight of them so heauie downward wayes,
They in the stream were driu'n to cast them downe,
Onely two swans sustaind so great a praise,
In spite of him that sought them all to drowne,
These two do still take vp whose names they list,
And bare them safe away, and neuer mist.

15

Sometime all vnder that foule lake they diued,
And tooke vp some that were with water couered,
And those that seemd condemned, they retriued,
And often, as about the banke they houer'd,
They caught them ere they to the streame arriued:
Then went they with the names they had recouered,
Vp to a hill that stood the water nigh,
On which a stately Church was built on high.

16

This place is sacred to immortall fame,
And euermore a Nymph stands at the gate,
And took the names, wherewith the two swans came,
(Whether they early come, or whether late)
Then all about the Church she hangd the same,
Before the sacred image, in such rate,
As they might then well be assur'd for euer,
Spite of that wretch in safetie to perseuer.

17

Astolfo had a great desire to know
The mysteries most high, and hidden sence
Of that old man, that full ran to and fro,
And precious things so leudly did dispence,
And of the birds, and of the nymph also,
That from the swans tooke names, and bare them
And therefore asked what they signified, (thence,
To whom the man of God thus wise replied:

18

Know first (said he) there cannot wag a straw
Below on earth, but that the signe is here;
And each small act doth correspondence draw,
Although in other shew it doth appeare:
That aged man, that running erst you saw,
And neuer baits, nor resteth all the yeare,
To worke the like effects about is bound,
As time doth worke below vpon the ground.

19

When here the fatall threed of life is spun,
Then doth below the life of man decline,
There fame, and here their names in mettall done,
Would make them both immortall and diuine,
Saue here this aged fire, that so doth runne,
And there below, time doth thereat repine,
He here flings all the names into a puddle,
Time there doth all in darke obliuion huddle.

20

And eu'n as here *Rau'ns*, *Vultures*, *Pies* and *Crowes*,
And such like birds, endeavour all they may,
To saue those names that worthiest they suppose,
But wanting strength, the names stil downward sway:
So there *promooters*, *ruffins*, *bawds*, and those
That can the parasites and iesters play,
That by great Lords are oft more made of, then
The true and plaine, and vertuous minded men.

21

And these (forsooth) good fellowes call you must,
Because they learne like *Asses* and *Porke* to be,
But when their Lords be layd full low in dust,
Their line of life cut off by sisters three,
Yea oft by their owne surfetting and lust,
Then these same goodly squires of base degree,
In their vile mouths, their names beare vp and downe
A while, and after in obliuion drowne.

*The exposition
of the former
Allegory.*

*The Asses will
beare any thing,
the Porke feeds
himselfe fat.*

22

But as the swans that here still flying are,
With written names vnto the sacred port,
So there Historians leard, and Poets rare,
Preferue them in cleare fame and good report;
O happie Princes, whose foresight and care
Can win the loue of writers in such sort,
As *Cesar* did, so as you need not dread,
The lake of *Lethe* after ye be dead.

23

But surely God their reason so doth blind,
And takes from them all sence of wit and skill,
That when their rooms on earth they haue resign'd,
Death both their bodies and their fames might kill;
Where at the least some fame would stay behind,
(Admit in part their manners were but ill)
Had they but wit to get some grace with *Cirra*,
Their fame should sweeten smel then nard or mirrha.

Cirra a sonne of
the side of *Par-*
us taken for
the *Muses*.

24

Perhaps *Aeneas* was not so deuout,
Nor *Hector* nor *Achilles* were so braue,
But thousands haue as honest been and stout,
And worthy by desert more praise to haue;
But those faire lands and castles out of doubt,
That their successors vnto writers gaue,
Made them so famous ouer forren lands,
Canonizd by the Poets sacred hands.

25

Augustus Caesar was not such a saint,
As *Virgil* maketh him by his description,
His loue of learning sculth that complaint,
That men might iustly make of his proscription;
Nor had the shame that *Nero's* name doth taint,
Confirmd now by a thousand yeares prescription,
Bene as it is, if he had had the wit,
To haue bene franke to such as Poems writ.

26

Blind *Homer* writes how *Agamemnon* fought,
And wan at last great *Troy* that long resisted;
And how *Penelope*, though greatly fought
By many suiters, yet in faith persisted:
Yet sure (for ought you know) he might haue taught
The contrary to this if he had listd,
That *Troy* preuaild, that *Greeks* were conquerd
And that *Penelope* was but a queane. (cleane,

27

On tother side, we see Queene *Didos* name,
That worthy was indeed to be commended,
Is subiect now to slander and to shame,
Because that she by *Virgil* is not frended.
But on this point I now more tedious am,
Then I was ware, or then I had intended,
For I loue writers well, and would not wrong them,
And I my selfe do count my selfe among them.

28

I wate a volume of my masters praise,
For which to me he hath not bin vngate,
But to this height of honour me doth raise,
Where (as you see) I liue in happie state;
I pite those that in these later dayes
Do write, when bountie hath shut vp her gate,
Where day and night in vaine good writers knocke,
And for their labours oft haue but a mocke.

29

So as indeed this reason is the chiefe,
That wits decay, because they want their hire,
For where no succour is, nor no reliefe,
The very beasts will from such place retire.
Thus said the saint, and (as it were with griefe
Of such offence) his eyes did flame like fire,
But turning to the Duke with sober latter,
He pacified himselfe a little after.

30

But here I leaue *Astolfo* safe and sound
With holy *Iohn*, for forthwith leape must I,
As far as from the Moone vnto the ground,
My wings would faile it stil I soard to hie:
Now come I vnto her that had the wound,
That euer smarting wound of iealousie,
I told she had, when last of her I spoke,
Vnhorst three kings with goldelaunces stroke.

31

And how she lay all at a castle sad,
Although in vaine she sought her griefe to smother,
How at that place she perfect knowledge had,
That *Agramant* was foyled by her brother,
And that to flie to *Arlic* he was glad,
With good *Rogero* and with many other,
This made her vnto *Prouence* then to hast,
Because she heard that *Charles* pursued him fast.

32

Now vnto *Prouence* onward as she went,
A comely damsell in her way she vewd,
Who though she lookt like one that did lament,
Yet could not griefe her comely grace exclude;
This dame had traueled long, with this intent,
To find some knight that from the Pagan rude,
(Fierce *Rodomont*, that prisoner held her louer)
By force of armes againe might him recouer.

33

Now when the comfortlesse dame *Bradamant*
Had met a dame as comfortlesse as she,
Such simpatie she felt of griefe, that scant
She kept in teares, so sad a sight to see,
She askt her what misfortune or what want,
Of her sad plight, vnworthy cause might be:
Faile *Fiordelise* that for a knight did hold her,
The circumstance of all the matter told her.

34

And in most rufull sort she did recount,
Both of the tombe and bridge the wofull storie,
And how the cruell Pagan *Rodomont*
Had taken him, for whom she was so sorie,
Not that he could in value him surmount,
That for his value had obtained much glorie,
But that the Pagan not to strength did trust,
But to a bridge and vantages vnust.

35

Wherefore most noble minded knight (said she)
If such you be, as by your speech I guesse,
Helpe my deare spoute from bondage vile to free,
And plague the Pagan that doth him oppresse;
Or if you cannot so, yet counsell me,
Where I may find some ayd for my distresse,
Some knight so stout of heart, and strong of hand,
As may this cruell Sarazen withstand.

So

36
So shall you do a braue and noble deed,
That wandring knights, do think they ought of due,
So might you ayd a worthy man indeed.
And one in loue most faithfull and most true:
As for his other praise, it is no need
For me to tell, mine owne gries to renue,
Sith well I know, they plainly are appearing,
To all that haue their sense of sight and hearing.

37
The worthie Dame, that thirsted still for praise,
Agrees to take this hard exploit in hand,
As one that readie was at all assayes,
On horse, on foote, by water or by land:
For either thus, she shall her glorie raile,
If to she shall the Pagans force withstand,
Or die she shall, which danger lesse doth moue her,
Because she thinks *Rogero* doth not loue her.

38
And thus she sayd, most louely louing Dame,
Gladly I shall my vtmost forces proue,
To succour one that merits so great fame,
Yet of his praises chiefly me doth moue,
Because you giue him such a noble name,
That he is true and faithfull in his loue:
Which sith you speake by triall, I must weene so,
Else I durst sweare no man aliue had bene so.

39
These last words ending with a scalding sigh,
A sigh that came indeed from grievous thought,
Then on they went, till they approched nigh
The parlous bridge, that *Rodomont* had wrought:
And straight the watch delcride them from on high,
And blew a horne, by which the Pagan thought,
That traouellers were come the bridge to passe,
Came out all armed, as his manner was.

40
But when that he one all in armour saw,
He greets them lowd with this lewd salutation:
Ho stay, and er you passe obserue this law,
Vnto this tombe, humbly to make oblation,
Of horse and armes, with feare and reu'rent aw:
Else with this speare expect sharpe castigation.
She, that before had heard of *Isbels* deth,
And of this tombe, thus stoutly to him seth.

41
Ah damned wretch, why should the innocent,
Indure the penance of thy grievous guilt?
Thy selte shouldst die, or suffer punishment,
That killedst her, if please her ghost thou wilt:
Her soule (vpon my soule) would be content,
If by my hand thy guiltie blood were spilt,
More then with all the armors, men, and horses,
That thou dost win by thy vnlawfull forces.

42
And so much more it will accepted be
To her, if thou by my right hand mayst die,
Because I am a woman as was she,
And only come on thee my force to trie:
But let vs first vpon these points agree,
That if you hap to vanquish me, then I
Shall suffer at your hands, so and no more,
Then other prisoners haue done before.

43
But if I vanquish you (as sure I trust)
Then I will haue the spoile of all the rest,
And make your horse, and arms, a guilt more iust,
Vpon the tombe of her for euer blest:
And then withall, to me you promise must,
That all your prisoners straight shall be releast.
When thus the Dame her mind had signified,
Thus the fierce Turke mildly to her replied.

44
Faie Dame, you seeme to me to speake but reason,
And thereto I my franke assent affoord:
But true it is, that I for feare of treason,
My prisoners all, haue sent from hence aboard,
So as I cannot free them at this season,
But firmly here to you I passe my word,
If you toile me, of which there is small iacobertie,
I will send word to set them all at libertie.

45
But if I conquer you, as sure I shall,
(For so it is most likely, and most meet)
I will not hang your armour on the wall,
Nor send you hence a prisoner in my fleet,
I will remit to you my conquest all.
For that faie faces sake, and looke so sweet;
Suffice it that this curtesie may moue thee,
Where now thou seemst to hate me, the to loue me.

46
Be not (faie Dame) in your owne strength beguyl'd,
I offer not such grace to eu'rie stranger,
For I am strong: at this the damsell smyled,
But such a smyle, as shewd not mirth, but anger;
And whether courage had all feare exyld,
Or that dispaire made her to doubt no danger;
She spurd her horse, nor other answer made him,
But with her speare in rest she doth inuade him.

47
This so did moue the cruell *Rodomont*,
Vpon his horse he doth himselfe aduance,
Not making doubt, but that he would dismount,
Out of her seat, the noble Dame of France;
But he was quite deceiu'd of his account,
No sooner was he toucht with Goldelance,
But eu'n as if of strength he had bin reaued,
Quite from the saddle backward he was heaued.

48
But yet the Dame her selfe in danger was,
To fall into the streame so swift and fleet,
By meanes the bridge so narrow was to passe,
That hardly two at once thereon could meet;
But *Rabican*, whose swiftnesse did surpasse
All foure foot beasts, did firmly keepe his feet:
Although so straight and narrow was the bridge,
He was constrained to runne vpon the ridge.

49
Now when the Pagan lay thus ouerthrowne,
She turnd to him, and sporting, thus she spake,
Now sir (said she) I hope it may be knowne,
Of vs two which the worse cause did take.
But he, like one whose wits were not his owne,
He either could or would no answer make;
But still he stood, looking on ground and musing,
Neither his foyle denying, nor excusing.

50

And hauing walkt some halfe a dozen paces,
He suddenly cast all his armour off,
And hurles it gainst the stones, and it defaces,
That scant he left vnbroke one peece thereof:
Determining after such foule disgaces,
To hide himselfe, and go a great way off:
But er he went, he graunted full commission,
To free his prisners without intermission.

51

*He comes not to
him till the later
end of the last
Book where Ro-
gero killeth him.*

So thence he went, and what of him became,
Or what he did, no notice cleare I haue,
But onely this, that eu'n for verie shame,
He long liu'd close, within a secret caue:
The while his armes by that victorious Dame,
Were hangd vp at the tombe, for triumph braue,
The tother armes and furnitures among,
That erst to Pagan Princes did belong.

52

*Bradamant son
to Monodante.*

But for all those that were from Christens wonne,
She laid them vp, and did in safetie set,
Among the which was *Monodantes* sonne,
And *Oliuero* and stout *Saisfnet*,
Who late before with ill successe did runne,
So that the Pagan did their armour get,
And them themselues as prisners did conuay,
Vnto *Algerie*, farre from thence away.

53

Among the rest that had their armour lost,
Was *Sacrapant*, the fierce *Circassen* Prince,
Who fought for *Frontlet*, to his paine and cost,
And with the Pagan fought but little since;
But being foyld, he quite forsooke that coast,
Where men, of such disgrace might him conuince,
And with great shame (but what could shame him
He came on horsback, & went thence on foot. (boote

54

*He speaks no
more of Sacra-
pant.*

Wherefore asham'd in such sort to returne,
He minds to follow that his former quest
Of her, whose loue long since his heart did burne,
Although her loue he neuer yet possest:
For still her froward mind did euer spurne,
Against his earnest, and most iust request.
Of her returne he late had heard the news,
(I know not how) but now he her pursues.

55

And let him her pursue, for I proceed,
Of noble *Bradamantes* acts to tell,
Who hauing done this braue and worthie deed,
To free the passage where so many fell,
She wrate it, so as eu'rie one might reed,
How all the circumstance thereof befell;
Which hauing done, then she demands to know,
Which way Dame *Fiordeliege* did mind to go.

56

Who straight her purpose, vnto her vnfolding,
Told her, to passe the sea by ship she ment,
At *Arly*, least the *Turke* his word not holding,
Might keepe her spouse too long in prison pent:
Then shall you (saith the Dame) be more beholding
To me, for sure (saith she) tis mine intent,
Vnto that towne to guard you in your passage,
So you will do for me, but one embassage.

57

And that withall, you me this grace affoord,
To giue *Rogero* this same horse from me,
And say an vnknowne champion sends him word,
To challenge him that all the world may see
He hath bin false of promise and of word;
Of which, our combat shall the triall be:
And tell him plainly there is no deniall,
But that by challenge I will make this triall.

58

This say, and say no more; and if he aske
My name, then tell him plaine you may not tell;
The while mine armes shall serue me for a maske,
This I desire, do this and so farewell;
This is (saith *Fiordeliege*) an easie taske
From you, that haue of me deseru'd so well,
As binds me both to this that you demand me,
And to what euer else you would command me.

59

This said, she takes the bridle in her hand,
And with her leads *Frontino* on the way,
Vntill they both came to the salt sea sand,
That next vnto the towne of *Arly* lay;
But *Fiordeliege* goes to the towne by land,
And *Bradamant* doth in the suburbs stay,
To th'end she may conuenient respite giue her,
To him the horse, and message to deliuer.

60

Who when the bridge and gate she quite had past,
She prayeth one of those that kept the ward,
To bring her to *Rogero* in great hast,
And through the towne of curtsie her to guard:
This done, she to *Rogero* came at last,
And did her message with most due regard,
And gaue *Frontino*, and then went her way,
Nor would she once to heare his answer stay.

61

Rogero standeth still all in a muse,
The messenger and message so beguile him,
He wonders who it is, that both doth vse
Such curtesie, and yet withall reuile him,
He thinks the partie doth him much abuse,
With fowlest blot of breach of word to file him:
And of all others, least of all he thought,
That *Bradamant* of him the combat fought.

62

To thinke it *Rodomont* he was inclin'd,
But yet it could not sinke into his reach,
Why of a sudden he should be so kind,
And wherei'n he could blame his promise breach;
And saue with him, he cannot call to mind,
With whom he had of frendship any breach:
The while the *Ladie* with a stately icorne,
In token of defiance, blew her horne.

63

Straightwayes the news to *Agramant* doth fly,
That one without did challenge some within,
And *Serpentine*, that then by chance was by,
Askt leaue to fight, with sured hope to win,
And sweares the knight should yeeld, or else should dy
And then the people flockt both thicke and thin,
And stood vpon the walls, with young and old,
Betweene these two the combat to behold.

Out

64

Out *Serpentino* came in braue array,
And brauely with his speare in rest he ran,
But at the first encounter downe he lay,
The horse runnes leere away without the man,
But noble *Bradamant*, the horse doth stay,
And backe restore: then finely as she can,
She prayes him to king *Agramant* to speake,
To send a stronger knight, sith he was weake.

65

The mightie kings of Affricke and of Spaine,
That from the wall the courteous act did vew,
From prausing of the same could not refraine,
Though none of them, thereof the author knew;
Now *Serpentino* backe returnd againe,
And to his Prince he told his message trew,
How that same champion did desire to fight,
With some more stout and more renowned knight.

66

And then *Grandonio* fierce of Volaterne,
The proudest knight that Spaine long time had bred,
Obtaind next place, and with a vilage sterne,
And threatening voice thus to the damsell sed:
Your curtsie small reward for you shall earne;
For either here in fight you must be ded,
Or at the least, I will you prisoner bring,
Vnto *Marsilio*, of great Spaine the king.

67

Well (answerd she) keepe these your threats in store,
Your villany my curtsie shall not let,
But that ile frendly monish you before,
That backe againe vnto your king you get,
Ere that your fall, may make your body sore;
And say that I desired to haue met,
A man indeed of courage, and of worth,
And not your selfe, nor him that last came forth.

68

This her replie so mild, and yet so bitter;
The Pagan with more furie did enflame;
With speare then speech, he thought an answer fitter
And toward her in full career he came,
Intending sure, some deadly blow to hit her;
But she that was accustomd to this game,
Bare well his blow, and with her Goldé lance,
She taught him how the somersault to dance.

69

But yet his horse, that loose about did runne,
She brought him backe, and thus to him she sayd,
Loe sir, you had bin better to haue donne
My message, when I curteouslie you prayd;
Yet here I will release my prisoner wonne,
So you will tell your king that I haue stayd,
To combat with a man in fight well seene,
And not with novices, of skill so greene.

70

The lookers on that sure thought nothing lesse,
Then that a virgin so could guide a speare,
With murmurings their wonder great expresse;
Still ayming with surmises who it were;
Some *Brandimart*, and some *Renaldo* guesse,
Or others whom the Turks had cause to feare,
But most they would *Orlando* haue suspected,
Saue they had heard his fencies were distracted.

71

Next stout *Ferraw* desir'd to haue the place,
Not that he hop't the conquest to haue wonne,
But that these knights may haue the lesse disgrace,
If I (quoth he) shall do as they haue donne:
A strong swift horse he takes, and sure of pace,
Well made to beare the shocke, and free to runne,
The choicest of an hundred that he kept,
And thus all arm'd vpon the beast he lept.

72

Against the small champion forth he goes,
And first they interchangeably salute,
Please it you (said the Ladie) to disclose
Your name to me? that shall be all my sute:
He (that what longs to ciuill manners knowes,)
To satisfe her therein was not mute,
And I refuse you not, then said the tother,
Although I rather would haue had another.

73

Whom? (quoth *Ferraw*) *Rogero* (she replied)
And scarce she fully could bring forth his name,
But that a blush with rosie colour dyed
Her louely cheekes, with secret honest shame:
(Further she addeth) him whose vallew tryed,
And so much pray'd, was cause I hither came;
None else I seeke, nor for none else care I,
Onely his manhood I desire to try.

74

She spake the word in plaine and simple sence,
Which some perhaps will subtilie wrest awry,
Well (said *Ferraw*) yet now ere I go hence,
Let me with you haue leaue on ecourse to try;
To see if I can make no more defence,
Then those whom last you made one arth to ly,
If I fall as did they, then I will send,
That gentle knight, that may our errour mend.

75

Her beauer open was while they confard,
At which, when her the Spaniard well had vewed,
And markt her bewtie worthy of regard,
He was alreadie more then halfe subdewd:
He thought an Angell of the heau'nly guard,
Could not with greater bewtie be endewd;
Against her speare, what sence can he deuise,
That is alreadie conquerd with her eyes?

76

Now tooke they field, and ran with all their force,
And now *Ferraw* is from his saddle borne,
The damsell doth of curtsie stay his horse,
The Spaniard lyeth like a man forlorne;
But backe he must vnto the king perforce,
Nor true to do his message doth he scorne;
He tels *Rogero* plaine before them all,
How this same knight onely for him doth call.

77

Rogero who it is yet little knowing,
In hast to make him readie doth begin,
A setled hope of conquest plainly showing,
Willing to fight, with mind assur'd to win:
As for their foyles, and their fowle ouerthrowing,
That went before, he weighd them not a pin;
But how they met, how kindly him she serued,
Vnto the booke ensuing is referued.

Cc

Morall.

In the beginning of this booke, after the excessive praises of Hippolito, he returnes to the former matter of the force of time, the Allegorie whereof I will continue in this place: onely for the Morall, I will touch two speciall faults, which mine authour reproveth in men of the better sort, one is the great account they make of Parasites, Promoters, and lechers, and such like; for their basenes and filthines, likened to the asse and porke: and other is their venerie and drunkennes, which he noteth by these words, anzi venere e bacco: I English it, by their owne surfeiting and lust; because surfeiting contains both kinds of excess in meat and drinke. And surely I must grant, that our Realme of England hath bin noted for riot in meats, many yeares since, and not without cause (though not alone) for Plato found the like fault with Italie in his time. But for this other vice of drinking, which, with the name of a health, overthrowes all health and sobriety, it is now growne as usuall and more odious then the tother, and I doubt it will not so easily be driven out, as it is sodainly crept in. I have heard a prettie tale not impertinent to this matter, of a Gentleman that had his sonne at the Vniuersitie, who being belike of so good a conscience (as most of vs are in that kind) to take but a little for his money, and growing (as it seemed) more in yeares, then either in learning, or good manners: his tutor to discharge his dutie, sent his father word, how he misdoubted the young mans well doing, because he found him giuen to dycing and gaming: the father was sorry, but yet answered, that he hoped when his sonne grew to haue more wit, he would leaue that, or at least not lose by it. The next newes he heard of his amendment, was that now he began to follow women: this touched the father somewhat nearer, yet he replied againe, that he made no question but he would leaue that ere long for his owne ease, and therefore yet he would not dispaire of him. The last newes he heard, was that he began to mend his former two faults; but that now he fell to bibbing and drinking. Out vpon the villan (said the father) I will surely disinherite him: for that fault the elder he waxeth, the more he will be subiect to it. Wherefore I conclude this Morall with this exhortation: that if wit cannot make men leaue play, nor their owne ease make theeschew venerie; at least let the vglynes, openesse, and beastlines of this sin make them leaue it; which hath no defence, nor no praise: I say praise, because the Scripture saith, The wicked man is praised in his wickednes. But I neuer heard praise ascribed to a drinker, but the well beaueing of drinke, which might be a good praise for a brewers horse, or perhaps a brewers man, but sure it is a small boist for a Gentleman.

Augustus Cæsar was not such a Saint, &c.

Historie.

Of Augustus Cæsar's faults both Suetonius, and Plutarke have written at large, and I am loth to renew the memorie of them, except I did also recite his many vertues, which made large recompence for his few vices: sufficeth it to affirme that which mine authour saith, that his bountie and loue to learned men couered his faults: and of his bountie, among other things witnesseth the faire Pallace he gaue Virgil, with a goodly Maunor, or rather indeed territorie, in the field called Ager Cremonensis, neare Mantua.

Whereas it is said, in the person of S. Iohn.

Staffe. 26.

But yet (for ought you know) he might haue taught
The contrarie to this, if he had listed,
That Troy preuayld, that Greeks were conquerd cleane.
And that Penelope was but a queane.

True it is that one Dion an Historiographer, writeth to that effect, and inforceth verie far to proue, that the Greeks had the worse end of the staffe, and onely that Homer fauoring the Greeks, wrote the contrary. Further some haue carped at Penelopes chastitie (for what may not a malicious wit carpe at?) and they say Homer himselfe insinuateth somewhat of her lightnesse; where he saith in his Odisseas, that she obiected vnto her suters that none of them could shoot so strong a shoot as her husband: but howsoeuer it is, for my part, seeing it hath bene receiued so long for a truth, that Penelope was a chaste and vertuous wife, I will not take vpon me (by S. Iohn) to write the contrarie, though mine authour make S. Iohn to cast a doubt of it.

Allegorie.

Of the Allegorie I haue not much to say, because mine authour himselfe expounds it so plainly; onely I pray you mark how rightly and with what decorum, he likens Promoters, and Parasites, to vultures, carrion crows, and chattering pyes, as likewise in the beginning of the 34. booke, he likeneth them to Harpias.

The sustenance that should for food haue serued,
For widowes poore, and orphans innocent,
The filthie monsters do consume and wast it,
Oit at one meale, before the owners tast it:

As if one would say, the gifts and rewards that belong to old seruitours, and well deseruing souldiers, are catched at the vulture by these rauinous birds, and neuer come to the ground, or if they do, they make so false a bound, that a man shall make a fault in offering at them, and many times hazard both game and set for them.

Allusion.

Bradamant a woman ouercoming Rodomont a most terrible Turke, alludes to the notable History of Iudith, that cut off Holofernes head: which story, the Lord Du Bertas, and rare French Poet, contriued into an excellent Poeme in French, and the same is translated into a verie good and sweet English verse, by one M. Thomas Hudson, which worke I the rather mention, because in the 6. booke of the vice of surfeiting, which I reprov'd afore in the Morall, it is notably described and withall sharply rebuked as followeth:

O plague, O poyson to the warriour state,
Thou makst the noble hearts effeminate,
While Rome was rulde by Curioes and Fabrices,
Who fed on rootes, and sought not for delices,
And when the onely Cresson was the food,
Most delicate to Persia, then they stood, &c.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxv. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Duke Ammons daughter with reuengefull hart,
Doth meet Marfisa, minding her to kill,
Untill the battels ioyned on either part,
And so did sunder them against their will:
Bradamant and Rogero talke apart:
Marfisa gets of both great euill will,
By troubling them, but when she knew her brother,
She reconciled is to tone and tother.*

Against cruelty



¹ Is meete a gentle heart
Should euer show,
By curtesie the fruites of
true gentilitie,
Which will by practise to
an habite grow,
And make men do y same
with great facilitie:
Likewise y dunghil blood
a man shall know,

By churlish parts and acts of inciuitie,
Whose nature apt to take each lewd infection,
Custome confirms, and makes ill in perfection.

Sentence.

² Of courteous acts, old stories he that reeds,
In auncient times shall find there hath bene store,
But in our dayes of bloody cruell deeds,
Is greater plentie then hath bene before;
For charitie brings forth but barren seeds,
And hatred still is sowed in so great store,
That when the fruites of both come to be reaped,
The tone is scarce, the tother ouer heaped.

³ What fierce Barbarian Tartar, Moore or Turke,
Could vse more crueltie then now of late,
In Latian land Venetian force did worke?
Not by consent of the wise men of state,
But by the filthy nature that did lurke
In wicked hirelings, and a hidden hate;
I speake not of the damage and defaces,
They did by fire in all our pleasant places.

Looke in the Hi-
story of this booke
concerning this
crueltie he com-
plaines of.

⁴ Though that reuenge was foule and to to cruell,
And chiefe against Hippolito, who late,

When Cesar sieged Padoa, as they knew well,
And brought it to low ebbe and wofull state,
He both withdrew the matter all and fewell,
And quencht the fires kindled by deadly hate,
Preseruing many a Church and many a village,
By his rare clemencie from fire and pillage.

5

Not those I meane, nor many actions more,
That cannot be excused or defended,
But such an act as stones might weepe therefore,
As oft as it is talkt of or reinembred:
Then when my Lord his household sent before,
There where his foes were secretly assembled,
And left their vessels on the saltish sand,
While in ambushment close they lay on land.

6

As Hector and Aeneas did by fire
Assault the Greekish fleet with hardie fight,
So saw I two, whose hearts to fame aspire,
(One Alexander, tother Hercules hight)
Assault their foes, and driue them to retire,
Vnto their trenches, nay within them quite,
But one of them returned thence full hard,
The tother of returning cleane was bard.

7

For Ferrussine Scapt, Cantelmo stayd,
O Duke of Sore, what sore griefe didst thou find,
To see thy noble sonne to foule betrayd,
Among a thousand blades left there behind:
His naked necke on side of gally layd,
And chopped off: now surely in my mind,
When that same bloudie stroke his necke smit off,
You felt like stroke eu'n with the fight thereof.

Slauonian

The first part
of this booke
is a
tough
fight
as
were
an
Epi-
taph
on
Cantelmo
mar-
tyr.
Paulus
I
mar-
tyr
both
must
be
his
name,
and
further
such
the
Cantelmo
carried
in
the
danger
of
his
will,
but
he
repairs
the
crueltie
that
he
does
by
ing
in
the
Duke
of
Sore
saw
the
same.

8

Slauonian vile, where didst thou learne to know
Such lawes of warre? within what Scythian land,
Vse men to kill a prisoner taken so,
That yeelds, and hath no weapon in his hand?
Or was it such a grievous sinne you throw,
The foes of his deare country to withstand?
Why hast thou Sunne, so long on this age shinde,
That breeds of *Atreus* and *Thiestes* kinde?

9

Barbarian vile, that kild so sweet a youth,
To satisfie thy rancor and thy rage,
So rare a youth, as to confesse the truth,
His match could not be found in this our age;
Whole beautie might haue bred sufficient ruth,
Fierce *Poliphemus* anger to assuage,
But not fierce thee, more cruell and more fell,
Then any monsters that in deserts dwell.

10

The valiant men did studie in time past,
With clemencie their honors to increase,
And hate no longer then the fight did last,
With victorie reuenge did euer cease:
So *Bradamant*, of whom I told you last,
The prisoners she had tane, did still release,
And staid their horses when themselves were downe,
And sent them backe againe into the towne.

11

And praid them but her challenge to deliuer,
Vnto *Rogero*, and to call him out,
Who meant with speare in rest her answer giue her,
Vnto her challenge that she sent so stout.
Now when the other knights were all together,
In presence of the kings, they cast a doubt,
Who this should be, and then they aske *Ferraw*,
That talkt with her, and her bare visage saw.

12

Sure (said *Ferraw*) it is not tone nor tother,
Of those on whom before your thoughts were set;
I tooke it first it was *Renaldos* brother,
Who is in yeares a very youth as yet:
But now I rather iudge it is another,
For so much force is not in *Richardet*,
I thinke it is his sister by her visage,
Who I haue heard is like him much in visage.

13

She hath ere this of value had great fame,
Renaldo and the *Palladins* among,
I must confesse I found it to my shame,
Her, then her brothers to be farre more strong:
Rogero, when he heard them her to name,
Was guiltie straight that he had done her wrong,
And blusht in countenance with bashfull grace,
And oft his heart shot blood into his face.

14

Yea feare inuaded him, not feare of danger,
For force he feared not of any wight,
Of Turke nor Christen, countryman or stranger;
The very cause of this his dolefull plight
Was loue, for loue feares nothing more then anger,
He doubts least she concei'd not of him right:
Thus wauiing thoughts his mind do both waies cary,
If so he better were to go or tary.

15

The while *Marfisa* that was present there,
And euer had a forward will to iust,
Could now no longer from the same forbear,
Though seeing some before her lie on dust.
For all their fals did breed in her no feare,
So much in her great value she did trust,
Wherefore least good *Rogero* might preuent her,
First she rides forth, and in the lists doth enter.

16

And mounted on her horse came swiftly running,
Vnto the place where *Bradamant* did stay,
With panting heart to wait *Rogeros* coming,
With mind to take him prisoner if she may,
She thinks how she might guide her staffe with cunning,
As with her stroke do him least hurt she may: (singing,
Thus commeth out *Marfisa*, nothing fearing,
Vpon her loftie crest the *Phenix* bearing.

17

Or that thereby to boost her strength she ment,
Of her rare strength, of which she tooke some pride,
Or else thereby to note her chaste intent
She had, a warlike virgine still to bide;
But *Bradamant*, who first to meet her went,
And not to be *Rogero* now espide,
Did aske her name, and by her name she knew
That this was she that made her loue vntrew.

The device of the
Phenix may be
applied either to
pride or chastitee.

18

Or to say better, whom she did surmise,
To be the sole withholder of her deare,
Her whom she hates, gainst whom her blood doth
And minding now to make her buy it deare, (rise,
With furie great and rage at her she flies,
And that she may make all suspitions cleare,
With couched speare she fiercely runneth on her,
And meanes to kill her, or to die vpon her.

19

Marfisa was constrained with the stroke,
To kisse the ground as those before her had,
Which to such rage her courage did prouoke,
That with dildaine she seemd as one halfe mad;
Nor knowing how so great a foile to cloke,
She drawes her sword with an intention bad,
But *Bradamant* cry'th out with loftie hart,
What dost thou traitor? thou my prisoner art.

20

And though I vsed curtsie to the rest,
To vse it vnto thee I am not tide,
Whose mind (as I haue heard) is eu'n a nest,
Wherein is bred all villanie and pride:
Looke how great waters rage and do not rest,
When as the winds do striue against the tide,
So rag'd *Marfisa* rather more then lesse,
And for meere spite could not a word expresse.

Simile.

21

But hurles about her blade with all her force,
Not caring what she strikes, nor where, nor how,
Vpon the horseman or vpon the horse,
Her rage in her no reason did allow:
And *Bradamant* as void of all remorse,
With mind to breake that, that refused to bow,
Ranne at her with the speare that would not misse,
And made her once againe the ground to kisse,

Cc iiij

22

But once againe vpon her feet she getteth,
And with her sword reuengement she intends,
Each fall she hath, her furie sharper whetteth,
Yet still she fals, and can haue none amends,
Nor goldelance his wonted force forgetteth,
For all it touches, to the ground it sends;
Had not the speare bene (as it was) inchaunted,
It could not so *Marfisa* force haue daunted.

23

Some of our men were hither come the while,
I meane some of the Christen host, that lay
Encamped neare the towne within a mile,
So as the wals of Arlie see they may,
And thinking (for her sex did them beguile)
Some knight of theirs maintaine so great a fray,
They thither came with will and with delight,
To see so fierce and well maintaine a fight.

24

Whom when as *Agramant* from far espide,
And thinks they came to bring their knight assistance
He thought it best in wisdom to prouide,
If they should offer force to make resistance;
Wherefore he pointed some that of their side,
May stand from that same place a little distance,
Of this last crew *Rogero* was the first,
With whom the damsell so to fight did thirst.

25

And seeing now how fierce the combat groweth,
Betwixt these two, to whom he wisht none ill,
Although in sundry kinds he fauored both,
For one was loue, the tother bare good will;
To suffer them to fight he was full loth,
Although for honors sake he must be still,
Else sure he could haue found it in his hart,
To step betweene them, and the fray to part.

26

But they that with him from the citie came,
And saw the Christen champion was so strong,
Stept in betwixt her and the tother dame,
And so withdrew *Marfisa* them among,
Which act the other Christens did inflame,
So that with mind to venge so foule a wrong,
They stept in to: thus both sides cride alarme,
And soone the skirmish waxed fresh and warme.

27

Such as before were armed, out do runne,
They that vnarmed were, their armor take,
And some runne out on foot, on horseback some,
Each to his standerd doth himselfe betake;
The diuers sound of trumpet and of drum,
That doth the horsemen, this the footmen wake,
But *Bradamant* is malcontent and wrath,
To thinke *Marfisa* thus escaped hath.

28

Then lookt she wishly all about the place,
To find out him that caused all her care,
At last she knew him, though not by his face,
Yet by the argent Eagle that he bare,
And viewing well his person and good grace,
His goodly stature and his feature rare,
She rag'd to thinke another should possesse it,
And in these secret words she doth expresse it.

29

Shall any other then that sweet lip ki sse:
And I in loue thereof stil mourne and pine?
Shall any other then possesse my blisse:
Shalt thou anothers be, if none of mine?
No certes, rather then to suffer this,
Thou by my hand shalt die, or I by thine,
If in this life we shall be ioyned neuer,
Death onely be the meane to ioyn vs cuer.

30

Although that thou shouldst fortune me to kill,
Thy death by right should pacifie my spirit,
For lawes appoint, who guiltlesse blood do spill,
Shall for reward the doome of death inherit;
Yet still I shall sustaine the greater ill,
For I should guiltlesse die, but thou by merit,
I killing thee, kill one that hates me meerly,
Thou killing me, kilst one that loues thee deerly.

31

Why shouldst not thou (my hand) be strong and bold,
That by thy stroke his hard heart may be riuend?
Who vnto me sharpe wounds and manifold,
In time of loues sweet peace and truce hath giuen,
And doth eu'n now with stonie heart behold
The wofull state to which poore I am driuen,
Heart now be stout to take thy iust reuenge,
Let this one death thy thousand deaths auenge.

32

With that at him she runs, but first aloud,
Defend thy selfe (*Rogero* false) she said,
And think not thou shalt scape with spoiles so proud,
Of heart subdued of a silly maid.
Rogero, who to her himselfe had vowd,
And to offend her greatly was afraid,
Held vp his gantlet vnto her in token,
That he with her desired to haue spoken.

33

He would her wrath with kind words haue appeased,
And shewd her how the cause he brake his day,
Was that with grievous wounds he lay diseated,
Which forced him against his will to stay;
But at this time she was so sore displeased,
She would not hearken what he had to say,
But with her speare in rest, on him she runneth,
Who such vnkind encounter greatly shunneth.

34

But when he saw she was so rash and headie,
And that her choler now so great did grow,
That she was in her full careere alreadie,
He puts his speare in rest, at least for show,
And forward sets, but when she was eu'n readie,
Him to haue giu'n a sharpe disgracefull blow,
(Or that it were that she eu'n then recanted,
Or that her heart to harme him courage wanted)

35

She bare her launce aloft quite ore his crest,
And so of purpose that same course she mist,
Yet so, as by the manner might be guest,
She could haue hit him surer, had she list,
And wrath and rage still boiling in her brest,
To bend her force gainst him she did desist,
But in that mood no little harme she workes,
Vnto the other souldiers of the Turkes.

In

Bradamant
compleat
Proprietie
the life of
Possessors
aliquid
prole
Nec mea
que mea
mea est

She call
perp
as Dido
meas
Dissembl
tram
perp
posse

36

In little time, she with her gilded lance
Had caus'd three hundred men on ground to lie,
So that the conquest to the part of France,
Was thought to haue bene gained sole thereby:
Rogero seeks her out, and last by chance,
He speaks to her, and saith, my deare I die,
But I may talke with you, what haue I done
Alas, that you my conference should shunne?

37

As when the Southerne wind with luke-warme blast,
Doth breath on hils where winter long had dwelt,
Resolues the rocks of ice that hung so fast,
And all the new made mounts of snow doth melt:
So with this gentle prayre, though spoke in hast,
The damsell such an inward motion felt,
That sodainly her hardned heart did soften,
As vnto women kind it chanceth often.

38

Yet answer made she none, but held her peace,
She onely turned Rabican aside,
And hasting to get out of that same prease,
She beckned him that after her he ride:
Thus went she thence, with mind inclin'd to peace,
Vnto a valley, where on either side,
A groue of Cypres so eu'n set was scene,
As if they all of one selfe stamp had beene.

39

Amid this groue a goodly sepulture
Was built, which these faire Cypres trees did shade,
Of Porphyrie and marble white and pure,
And faire engrau'n, to shew why it was made;
But of the tombe she tooke no care nor cure,
But there expected in the open glade,
Vntill Rogero hauing made good hast,
Approcht the wood and damsel at the last.

40

But of *Marfisa* now I must you tell,
Who hauing got by this her hor'e againe,
Her loftie heart with rancor great did swell,
To be reueng'd of this foule sufferd staine,
And seeing where she went, as it befell,
And how Rogero followd her amaine,
She little thinketh that it is for loue,
But rather that they may the combat prone.

41

Wherefore to follow them she thinks it best,
So as she came almost as soone as they,
But what a tedious and vnwelcome guest
She seemd to both, one soone coniecture may:
Much sure it did the Dordon dame molest,
Who sole to her Rogeros faults did lay,
She deemd that to come thither nothing mou'd her,
But that Rogero in ill sort had lou'd her.

42

And false, Rogero she againe doth name,
And was it not enough false man, said she,
That of thy falshood I should here by fame,
But that I with these eyes the same should see?
But sith I find thou dost thy actions frame,
To driue me with vnkindnesses from thee,
I am content to die, but ere I die yet,
She that did cause it, dearly shall abuy it.

43

Thus as a Viper angrie and malicious,
With mind indeed to do her best to kill
Her, that was come in manner so suspitious,
(Though she came more for wrath, the for goodwill)
With gilded launce she giues a blow pernicious,
That quite vnhorfed her for all her skill,
Backward *Marfisa* fell, and in the durt,
Her beauer stucke, but had no further hurt,

Simile.

44

Duke *Ammons* daughter that resolues to die,
Or kill her so, so much her selfe forgetteth,
That thinking to dispatch her by and by,
Before her head out of the mire she getteth,
The golden launce she will no farther trie, (teth,
But throwes it downe, as wrath her courage whet-
And to performe the feate, her sword she drawes,
Therewith of feare to cut away the cause.

45

But ere she came so neare, *Marfisa* met her,
Like one with rage, with spite and scorne halfe mad,
To thinke that now againe she sped no better,
And that a while before she sped so bad;
So that Rogero could by no meanes let her
From fighting, which to stop great will he had,
But both of them with choler were so blinded,
They fought like bedlem folk, and desprat minded.

46

They came vnto the halfe sword at the first,
And with their rage forgetting rules of skill,
Their ouermuch desire to do their worst,
Was onely cause that they could do none ill;
Their hearts were readie for despite to burst,
And either purposing to die or kill,
Did leaue her sword aside, in mind supposing,
With stab to kill each other at the closing.

47

Rogero sunders them, and both intreateth,
To pacifie themselues, but all in vaine,
Then of their daggers he them both defeateth,
And by perswasions mou'd them both againe;
Sometime he speaketh faire, sometime he threateth,
Except they wil at his request abstaine;
But these viragoes wil not thoe desist,
Though weapons want, they fight with feet and fist.

48

He steps betweene againe, and back he drawes,
Now one, and then the tother by the sleeces,
And makes them both against their wils to pause,
At which *Marfisa* not a little greues;
Her selfe too greatly wronged in the cause,
And him to be too partiall she beleues;
Wherefore his friendship she doth quite disclaime,
And open warres with him she doth proclaime.

49

And taking vp her sword, in termes most vile,
She saith he playes the churlish villens part,
And that he greatly doth himselfe beguile,
To thinke her fight against her wil to part,
She sweares she wil, within a little while,
Of his owne folly make him feeble the smart;
And that she wil henceforth so short him curbe,
He shall not dare her combat to disturbe.

Cc iijj

50

Rogero still bare all her words as words,
And fought by speech her to haue pacified;
But seeing that it needs must come to swords,
And that with blowes, not speeches she replied,
No longer time to walking he affords,
But to his weapon he himselfe applied,
And being moued now with rightfull anger,
To saue himselfe, he oft put her in danger.

51

But nere did spectacle breed more delight,
In stately Rome or Athens so well learned,
Then Bradamant did take to see this fight,
In which she now apparently discerned,
That of their loue she had not iudged right;
Now ieaousie, and all that it concerned,
Suspition, feare, mistrust, and wrath, and franzie,
Are of the sodaine quite put from her fancie.

*These two cities
he names chiefly
because by means
of the store of
learned men,
they had many
notable deuices
presented on their
stages and Thea-
ters.*

52

And taking vp her sword, she stands not farre,
With mind not yet awhile the fray to part,
She thinks in him she sees the God of warre,
Such grace Rogero vld, such skill, such art:
And tother seemd in that vnpleasant iarre,
Some hellish furie, (so she playd her part)
Yet true it is that he awhile forbare her,
Nor did his worst, but did of purpose spare her.

53

He knew the secret vertue of his blade,
Which he had tride in many battels well,
That euermore a way and entrance made,
Whose charme all charmed armes did far excell;
Wherefore he doth not fiercely her inuade.
With bloody blowes, nor fearfull thrusts and full,
But flatling still he cauld his blowes to light,
Till once he was of patience put out quite.

54

For once Marfisa, with intention shrowd,
Strake with such furie at Rogeros beauer,
That with that blow she very plainly showd,
That to haue kild him she did her endeuer,
Rogero with his argent Eagle trowd,
From danger of the stroke himselfe to seuer,
But though the shield brake not, gramercy charme,
Yet vnderneath the shield it stound his arme.

55

It happie was Don Hectors shield was there,
Else had she put him vnto further paine,
Scarce could he now the massie target beare,
Scarce now the siluer bird he could sustaine:
Now he intends no longer to forbear,
But hurleth out a foyne with force so maine,
In rage with that late blow so fierce and bitter,
Wo vnto poore Marfisa, had it hit her.

56

I know not what good Angell did her keepe,
The thrust mist her, and in a tree it strake,
And enterd in the same a shaftman deepe,
And on the sodaine all the hill did quake:
A secret horror on them all did creepe,
They see the hill, the trees and tombe to shake,
Till from that sepulcher a voice proceeding,
Spake vnto them, all humane voice exceeding:

*The like is in Vir-
gil of Polidorus.
Gemitus lacry-
mabulu uno au-
ditur tumultu &
vox redita fer-
tur ad aures.*

57

The voice to them with no small terror cride,
File not your hands nor hearts with so great sin,
It is a kind of cruell parracide,
To seeke to kill, and be so neare of kin:
Wherefore I charge you lay all hate aside,
And marke my speech, and all containd therein,
I say you both were gotten of one seed,
One wombe you bare, one brest you both did feed.

58

My deare Rogero, my Marfisa deare,
Let not the sister seeke to kill the brother,
But learne of me some things that touch you neare,
Which former times in ignorance did smother;
Your sire Rogero hight, who that same yeare,
He gat you of dame Gallacell your mother,
Was by your vncles of his life depriued,
Who also your destruction thus contriued.

59

They put your mother in a steerlesse bote,
Who was as then of you twaine great with child,
And in the Ocean wide they let her flote,
There to be staru'd or drownd in waters wild;
But lo how fortune holpe the lucklesse lot,
And ere you yet were borne, vpon you smild,
For why against all hope or expectation,
Your mother made a happie nauigation.

60

And being safe arriu'd at Syrtac shore,
There at one burden she brought forth both you,
And then (as if she ought this world no more)
Her blessed soule to Paradise vp flew;
But there by hap (to God be thanks therefore)
Was I at hand, and when the cause I knew,
I did as much, ere I the place did leaue,
As such a barren soile would giue me leaue.

61

Your mother then in dust of earth I lapt,
(Our auncient mother) whereto all must go,
And in my cloke your litle selues I wrapt,
To seeke some meanes to nourish you, when lo,
A Lionesse that late had whelped there hapt,
To come in sight while I went to and fro,
Her did I make to leaue her proper whelpes,
And giue you sucke, then wanting other helpes.

62

Ten months and ten in Forrests wilde and moorish,
The Lions tets you vsed were to sucke,
I after learnd with wilde flesh you to nourish,
Such as I could, of Beares, or Stag and Buckes;
But when you now began in strength to flourish,
One day while I was lacke, by euill lucke,
A band of fierce Arabians comming thither,
Weld haue conuaid you both from thence together.

63

But thou Rogero when thou sawst them comming,
Didst saue thy selfe from that mishap by flight,
But thou Marfisa, not so swiftly running,
Wert tane, and quickly carri'd out of sight,
To fetch thee backe againe I wanted cunning,
For which I soride many day and night,
But as the losse of tone did make me sad,
So of the tother greater care I had.

Ab

64
Ah my *Rogero*, thou thy selfe canst tell,
If thine *Atlanta* lou'd thee while he liued,
I saw the starres some euill haps foretell,
That thou shouldst haue which me not litle grieved:
Yet I endeuord still, as thou knowst well,
That by my meanes thou mightst haue bin relieved,
But finding thee still contrary inclined,
For very griefe at last I dide and pined.

65
But here I built this tombe afore I died,
Where I forelaw you two should make this fray;
And being dead, to *Charon* lowd I cried,
To suffer in this wood my ghost to stray,
Vntill this fight, to me foresignified,
Should happen, which was done this present day,
Now shall my soule from hence depart in peace,
Now *Bradaman* thy ieaousie may cease.

66
Thus said the voice, and left them all amazed,
With wonder great, and strangenesse of the case,
And when a while each had on other gazed,
They met in kindest manner, and embrace;
Nor *Bradaman* her selfe, who erst was crazed
With ieaousie, now tooke it in disgrace,
To see her spouse, when he most kindly kist her,
Now well assured that she was his sister.

67
Thus they agreed at last, and either twin,
Do call to mind some acts of childish yeares,
What they had sayd and done, where they had bin,
Which eu'n with tender heart did moue their teares:
At last the worthy brother doth begin
To tell *Marfisa* what great loue he beares
To *Bradaman*, whom he to wed intends,
And so at length he made them faithfull frends.

68
Then all parts pacified so well at length,
Marfisa doth intreate her noble brother,
To tell to her the storie more at length,
Of that so strange exiling of her mother,
And if their sire were slaine by fraud or strength,
And who it was that wrought the tone or tother,
For sure (said she) I thinke I neuer heard it,
Or childishnesse did make me not regard it.

69
Rogero tels her, how of Troian race,
From *Hector* they be lineally descended,
By meanes *Astianax* (of speciall grace,
That scapt *Viyses* and the snares intended,
Did leaue a child of like yeares in his place)
And from that country to the sea descended,
And came to Sicill after trauell long,
And tooke *Mefina*, and grew very strong.

70
His offspring still increasing in renowne,
Calabria rul'd in part, and thence to Phare,
And came at last to dwell in Mars his towne,
And many a noble Emperour and rare,
In stately Rome haue worne th' Imperiall crowne,
Of such as from this stocke descended are,
From *Constance* and from *Constantine* accounting,
To *Pepin* and his sonne, them all surmounting.

71
Rogero first, and *Iambaron* of these,
Rous, *Rambaldus*, and *Rogero* againe,
Of whom (as *Atlanta* told) sau'd from the seas,
Our mother by the shore brought forth vs twaine,
Their acts in auncient stories they that please
To looke, may find them there recorded plaine;
Then tels he how there came king *Agolant*,
With *Almont*, and the fire of *Agramant*.

72
How that Kings daughter, a most noble maid,
In feates of armes so valorous did proue,
That diuers *Palladines* she ouerlaid;
And then with that *Rogero* fell in loue,
And of her fathers anger not afraid,
Did match in Christen state, as did behoue,
How after this one *Beltram* sought by treason,
Incestuous loue of her without all reason.

73
And for that cause his brothers and his sire,
And his owne natiue soile he did betray,
And open *Risa* at his foes desire;
Which being tane, and seized on as a pray,
Fierce *Agolant* and his inflamd with ire,
Tooke *Gallacell* our mother where she lay,
Six months with child, and put her in a bote,
And in the Ocean wide they let her fote.

74
Marfisa all this while with glad some cheare,
Vnto her new knowne brothers tale attended,
And in her mind reioyced much to heare,
That of so noble house she was descended,
From which *Mongrana* came, as doth appeare,
And that of *Clarimount* so much commended,
Which houses both, long in great fame had flouri-
For diuers noble persons they had nourished. (shed,

75
But when of *Agramant* she heard him say,
How both his grandfire, vncke, and some other,
Contented had their father to betray,
And in so cruell sort to vie their mother,
She could not suffer any longer stay,
But breaking off his tale, said noble brother,
(With your good fauor) you haue too much wrong
To leaue your father vnreueg'd so long.

76
If not in *Almont* nor *Traianos* blood,
You can auenge this ill sith they be gone,
Yet ought you to auenge it on their brood;
Lue you, and let you *Agramant* alone?
This blot, except it quickly be withstood,
Will shame you euer, if it once be knowne,
That he that did this wrong not onely liueth,
But that to you he entertainment giueth.

77
But for my part (said she) by Christ I vow,
(Whom as my father did, so serue I will)
That I will not leaue armes, till I know how
To venge my fathers and my mothers ill;
And much I shall lament, and do eu'n now,
If in that Pagan campe you tarry still,
Or euer should be seene therein hereafter,
Except it were to worke their harme and slaughter.

In this narration
my Author fol-
lows not any true
story, but a work
intituled *Almonte*,
which not with-
standing hath
some credite,
though not
much.

Risa is a title of
good importance
in the country of
Rhegium, neare
mount *Appen-*
ninus.

Astianax, some
say was killed
by *Viyses* of old
time the storie
of the *Allusion*

some called the
city of Mars.

78

Oh how did *Bradamant* at this reioyce,
 Aduising him to follow that direction,
 And to giue eare vnto his sisters voice,
 To leaue so vile a place, and base subiection,
 And cleaue to *Charles* as to the better choice,
 Who gladly would receiue him in protection,
 Of which (she said) one sure signe she did gather,
 She heard him often so extoll his father.

79

Rogero answers thus with great regard,
 (My deare) to haue done this at first I ought,
 But then indeed the troth I had not hard,
 Whereby I might my dutie haue bin taught:
 Now sith that *Agramant* hath me prefard,
 If his destruction should by me be fought,
 That am his seruant and a daily waitor,
 The world might iustly deeme I were a traitor.

80

But this my meaning was, and so it is,
 To find some meanes I may (with honor) part,
 Which when I haue, then sure I will not misse,
 To come and to requite your great desert;
 And that (quoth he) I had performd ere this,
 Saue that a caule (of which I felt the smart)
 Enforst my stay, the wounds the *Tartar* gaue me,
 So as my friends had much to do to saue me.

Morall.

In the beginning of this Canto, he speakes against crueltie, the most vnnoble thing that can be vsed in peace or warre: for though warre of it selfe is and must needs be bloody in the heate thereof, yet hath it euer bene detested and contrary to all warlike discipline, to kill those that haue no weapon in hand. Wherefore noble Princes will euer make faire warres, as *Pirthus* said in *Ennius*:

Quorum virtuti belli fortuna pepercit:
 Horundem me libertati parcere certum est.
 Whose life the fortune of the warres doth saue,
 Frankly I graunt that they their freedome haue.

Crueltie euer proceeds from a vile mind, and often from a cowardly heart, that haue nothing in their minds nor mouthes but *Mortui non mordent*, which beside it is vnchristen, is also false: for the Scripture saith, The blood of *Abel* cried for vengeance; and it is a better approued prouerbe in England, blood will haue blood.

In *Bradamant* we further note the bad effects of ielousie. In *Rogero*, that after his long forbearance, at last thought to be reuenged on *Marfisa*, we may see that *Læla patientia fit furor*: Patience prouoked turnes to furie.

Historie.

Cantelmus whose death he so much bewailed, was taken in an ambushment by the *Venetian* armie, hauing very courageously sallied out (though *Iouius* writes it was against his wil) with another companion of his, who scaped very hardly. *Cantelmus* had his head chopt off on the side of a galley in sight of his father, against which crueltie *Ariosto* iustly inuegeth. *Astianax* sonne of *Hector* (as the most credible authors write) was throwne downe from a high towre by *Vlysses*, who in his bloudie pollicie thought good that none of the race of *Priamus* should be left aliue: but my author here, by Poeticall licence (for I know no historicall ground of it) saith that he was saued, and a boy put in his stead; and that thence (forsooth) are descended many houses of great account. But this is not credible, and the president thereof is perillous, as I will shew in the Allusion.

Allegorie.

By *Atlants* parting the fray betweene the brother and sister, we may in Allegoricall sence vnderstand, that when diuers that are neare of kin fall at variance, there is nothing so auailable for reconciling of them, as the memory of some of their worthy auncestors, which in well disposed minds will stirre a great reuerence, and be a strong motiue vnto them to giue over their vnnaturall contentions.

Allusion.

Concerning the sauing of *Astianax*, it puts me in mind of one or two perillous examples recorded in our Chronicles, of the like deuice of one *Perkin Warbecke*, who fained himselfe to be *Richard* the yonger sonne of *Edward* the fourth, that was murdered in the Tower. But what a trouble grew by that puppet for a time, may there be seen, which the Chronicles set out very largely.

Here end the annotations vpon the xxxvj. booke.

81

As she knowes well that holpe me at my need,
 And eu'ry day did sit by my beds side:
 Thus much he said, but they that tooke good heed
 To all he said, in earnest sort replide,
 Howbeit at the last it was agreed,
 That he so long with *Agramant* should bide,
 Till he some honorable cause might find,
 To leaue his master and to change his mind.

82

Well (quoth *Marfisa*) if he needs will go,
 Then let him go, but I will you assure,
 That shortly I will vse the matter so,
 He shall not long with *Agramant* endure:
 This said she vnto *Bradamant*, but tho
 She told not how she would the same procure:
 Thus for that time *Rogero* brake this parlie,
 And turnd his horse to turne againe to Arlie.

83

When lo they chanc'd a sodaine crie to heare,
 Proceeding from the next adioyning vale,
 The voice did seeme, when they approched neare,
 To be some damfels that for helpe did call:
 But who it was, hereafter you shall heare,
 For now of force I must cut off my tale,
 And pray you my abruptnesse to excuse,
 For in the next you shall heare further newes.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Rogero with his sister and his spouse,
Find Ullanie halfe stript and strangely vsed,
Straight each of them, but chiefe Marsifa vowes
To be aueng'd on him that her misused:
She heares the law that women none allowes;
She finds the man that hath the sexe refused:
She plagues the tyrant, for his proud behauiour,
And makes another law in womens fauour.*

*The praise of
women.*



They haue employed many nights and dayes;
To haue thereby some trifling want supplied,
That niggard nature had to them denied.

And further, if they could with their owne pen,
Set forth the worthie praise of their owne kind,
And not to be beholding vnto men,
Whom hate and enuie often so doth blind,
To make vs heare the good but now and then,
But eu'rie place full of their ill we find;
Then sure I iudge, their praises would be such,
As hardly men should haue attained so much.

For many writers do not onely strue,
Too highly to extoll our sexes fame.
But that they thinke they must withall contriue,
To publish womens blemish and their blame;
As fearing haply, lest they might arriue,
By their most due desert, to greater name;
And so they might thereby obscure our praise,
As doth a cloud the Sunnes bright shining rayes.

But yet, for all such sparing pens do write,
Or lauish tongues can speake in their disgrace,

Enforcing eu'rie il report for spite,
That may their credits slander and deface,
We still shall find their glorie shining bright,
We still shall see, it keepes a worthie place,
Though wanting of that height the greater part,
To which it should attaine to by desert.

Harpalicé and Thomerus beside,
With those that Turnus did and Hector ayd,
Besides that dame that in an Oxes hide,
The first foundation offaire Carthage layd,
Zenobia eke, and she that quayld the pride
Of Assur, and both Inde and Persia trayd:
I say there haue bin many more then these,
That haue bin famous both by land and seas.

Nor only Rome and Greece haue bred such store,
Of faithfull matrons, chaste, and stout, and wise,
But all the world beside, some lesse, some more,
From whence it sets, to where the Sun doth rise:
Though now their names obscured are so sore,
That few or none are laid before our eys:
And all because that they in those dayes wrate,
Were enuious, and false, and full of hate.

Yet cease not Ladies, ye that vertue loue,
To follow that your course, and so good way,
And let not feare your minds from it remoue,
That your great fame hereafter may decay:
For true it is, as we do daylie proue,
No good nor ill can still stand at a stay;
Though writers in time past were not your friends,
The present time shall make you large amends.

*Like to the
History.*

Sermon.

The

8

The worthie writers of this present time,
 Haue set your worthie praises so to vew,
 Some in graue prose, and some in learned rime,
 As none shall need this want hereafter rew:
 And though they were infected with this crime,
 Yet in this age, so learn'd are some of you,
 So well acquainted with the noble mules,
 You could your selues remedie such abuses.

9

And if I should recite the names of those,
 That by the writers of our times are prais'd,
 Or that themselues haue wrote in verse or prose,
 And haue their owne and others glorie rais'd,
 As I might please some few, so I suppose,
 I might be blam'd of others, and disprais'd,
 Or in omitting some, to do them wrong,
 Or reckning all, too tedious wax and long.

10

Shall I then all omit: that were not well,
 Sith that to please them all I do desire:
 Then will I chuse some one, that doth excell
 The rest so farre, as none may dare enuie her;
 Whose name doth in such height of honor dwell,
 As hard it is, for any to come nye her,
 Whose learned pen such priuilege can giue,
 As it can make eu'n those are dead to liue.

11

For eu'n as *Phebus* shines on eu'rie star,
 Yet on his sister casts his fairest light,
 So eloquence and grace ay shining are,
 Much more on her, then any other wight,
 And maketh her to passe the rest as farre,
 As *Phebe* doth the other stars in night,
 Her light so splendent is, and so diuine,
 As makes another Sunne on earth to shine.

12

Vittoria is her name, a most fit name,
 For one in triumphs borne, in triumphs bred,
 That passeth *Artimesia* in the fame
 Of doing honor to her husband ded;
 For though she did erect a wondrous frame,
 For her *Mausoleo*, with a Pyramed,
 Yet which is more? to lay the dead in graue;
 Or else from death, with learned pen to saue?

13

If *Laodamie*, and if *Brutus* wife,
Argia, *Artia*, and *Euadne* chaste,
 Be to be prayesd, as they are so rise,
 Because when as their husbands dayes were past,
 They willingly forooke this mortal life:
 Then in what height must she of right be plast?
 That such a gift vnto her spouse doth giue,
 That being dead, she still doth make him liue.

14

And if the great *Macedon* enuie bare,
 Vnto *Achilles*, for *Meonian* Lyre,
 Much more to noble *Francis* of *Pescare*,
 He would haue borne, whose praise is founded hyre;
 By such a wife, so vertuous, chaste, and rare
 As eu'n thy soule it selue could not desire,
 A louder trumpe thy prayes out to sound,
 Sith hardly can a march to this be found.

15

But to conclude both these and others prayse,
 That I may follow on my present storie,
 I say that both in these and former dayes,
 Faire dames haue merited great fame and glorie;
 Which though by writers enuie much decayes,
 Yet need you not therefore now to be sorie,
 Because amongst vs all it is intended,
 That this foule fault hereafter shalbe mended.

16

Now of *Marfisa* and of *Bradamant*,
 I meane to tell, that still were so victorious,
 As both my voice too faint, and skill too scant
 Would be, to counr their famous deeds & glorious;
 Yet shall good will so farre supply my want,
 As I will reckon those were most notorious,
 And were my might agreeing to my mind,
 I would deserue as well of all their kind.

17

If you remember, I declared erst,
 How good *Rogero* purposed to returne,
 And how he heard the sound I then reherst,
 Of some that seemed wofully to mourne;
 Which wayling so his mind with pittie pierst,
 As he a while his iourney did adiourne,
 Both that to know the parties he desired,
 And ment to succour them, if cause required.

18

With him those dames the noble cosins went,
 And when they nearer came vnto the place,
 They saw three damfels wofully lament,
 Appareld strangely and in sorie case,
 Their clothing all, had bene clipt of and rent,
 Vp to their nauels, to their foule disgrace,
 They sitting on the ground and durst not rise,
 To hide their secret parts from strangers eyes.

He makes them
 cosins though we
 say of, which
 we count indeed
 the noblest kin-
 red, though not
 the kindest.

19

As *Vulcans* sonne (by *Pallas* pointment nurst)
 Whom (without mother) got of earth he had,
 (For whom *Aglaure* was plagu'd, because she durst,
 Looke on him when the Goddess had forbad)
 Sat in a coach (by him deuised furst)
 To hide his leggs, that were deformd and bad:
 So sat the wofull maids their secrets hiding,
 Scarfe from the ground, to lift their looks abiding.

Erichonius son
 of *Vulcan*, demi-
 sed a coach so
 hide his leggs
 red legges which
 were like serpents.
Aglaure looks
 the Table.

20

The foule prospect, did with great wrath inflame,
 The worthie dames when they did plaine it vew,
 And in the maids behalfe, they blusht for shame,
 As do in *Pestus* gardens roses new:
 But *Bradamant*, when as more neare she came,
 Was griued more, for one of them she knew,
 Whole name was *Vllanie*, that since a while,
 Was vnto France sent from the Island Ile.

Pestus gardens
 are at a Castle so
 called in *Luca-*
nus, and beare
 roses true in the
 year.

21

She also knew both tother in effect,
 For she had met them trau'ling on that coast,
 But yet her speech she chiefly did direct,
 To *Vllany*, whom she regarded most;
 And askt her what vile wight did so neglect
 All law, and had all humane nature lost,
 As that without remorse he could abide,
 To leaue that bare, that nature seeks to hide?

D d

22

Poore *Vllanie*, that both by speech and sight,
The worthie damsell *Bradament* did know,
To be a Ladie, whom she saw last night,
To giue three Princes such an ouerthrow;
When first a while she sobbed had and fight,
The manner and the matter plaine doth show,
How people neare that place, did ill intreat them,
And clippe their cloths, and also whip and beat them

23

Fall by (said she) the Castle you may see,
Where they do keepe, that vs so ill did vse,
As for the shield of gold and Princes three,
That came to win it, she could tell no newes:
We onely ment to trudge on foote (said she)
To make complaint of those did vs abuse,
Vnto the noble Christen Emp'rour *Charles*,
Who punish will I trust such lawlesse carles.

24

Braue *Bradament* and stout *Marfisa* longs,
To go immediatly vnto this place,
And be aueng'd on such enormous wrongs,
Done as they deeme, to all the sexe disgrace:
Rogero eke, that knows well what belongs,
Vnto the law of knight-hood, in such case,
(To succour all that are by wrong oppress'd,
But chieflie women) goes without request.

25

Looke in the *Allegorie of the application of this.* With one consent, they all put off their bases,
Which seru'd the maidens verie fit to hide,
The secret parts, of those same priuie places,
That modestie to show cannot abide.
Then *Bradament* straightway behind her places,
Faire Vllany, and makes her so to ride,
Marfisa and *Rogero* take the paine,
Behind themselves, to place the other twaine.

26

Here begins the tale of *Marganor* that made the law against women. The dame of *Dordon* led them all the way,
The tother two do follow with great hast,
But *Vllany* shewd where the Cattle lay,
To which they many a hill and valley past.
But now so much was spent of that same day,
That they were quite benighted at the last,
At night to take a village they were glad,
Where they good meat, good drinke, good lodging

27

But when to looke about them they began,
They none could see but women in the place,
The women drest, brought all, and not a man,
In all the village that did show his face:
Among themselves, they on the matter scan,
And much they mused at so strange a case,
Among so many, fayre, foule, young, and old,
As there they saw, not one man to behold.

28

If sons men were called *Argonauts*, because they went in a ship called *Argo*. I thinke that *Iason* neuer marueld more,
Nor those his *Argonauts*, that with him came,
Then when they first arriu'd at *Lemnos* shore,
Where they found none but women void of shame,
That had their fires, and brethren slaine before,
And did a common wealth of women frame:
Then did *Rogero* with the Ladies wonder,
To see no men, but women such a number.

29

Wherefore (when first they had in seemly sort,
Prouided raiment for the damfels three,
If not so sumptuous, certes not so short,
But to conceale that which men should not see)
Then they desir'd some dweller there, report
To them, what might the cause and reason be,
Why in this towne there were allowd no men,
And in this sort the woman answerd then.

30

This order at the which you seeme to wonder,
Was by a tyrant pointed for our paine,
A tyrant, whose subiection we are vnder,
Who by his proclamation doth ordaine,
From mothers sonnes, frō husbands wiues to sunder;
And in such hard exile we must remaine,
And suffer not by merit, but by force,
From our deare spoules, such a long diuorce.

31

Thrise haue the trees with winter bene decaued,
Since we haue bene into this place confin'd,
Of husbands, fathers, and of sonnes bereaued,
So sore the tyrant hateth all our kinde:
And if that any chance to be perceaued,
(As some perhaps there be, that are so kinde)
To come but once to looke vpon his wife,
The man and woman both, shall loote their life.

32

The lawlesse wretch, that makes this cruell law,
Dwels two leagues hence, and is of such behauiour,
As from his purpose no man can him draw,
How much so euer he be in his fauour;
He doth all women from his land withdraw,
As if he were infected with their fauour,
He is so fierce, so sturdie, and so strong,
That none dare once protect, whom he will wrong.

33

And which is strange, he vseth strangers worst,
If any happen to his houle arriue,
(It seems he hath of womens bloud some thirst)
For though he let them part from thence aliue,
Yet first with whipping, and with vlage curst,
He doth their torment, and reproch contriue:
Wherefore if you your safeties do regard,
I with you not to trawell thither-ward.

34

At this *Marfisa* and the *Dordon* dame,
Were much incens'd, and did desire to know,
How he was cald, and whence his furie came,
That made him first to such a madnes grow:
The woman maketh answer thus, his name
Is *Marganor*, and if you please he show
The whole discourse: to this they all agreed,
And she then on her tale, did thus proceed.

35

This *Marganor*, that makes full many weepe,
Was bloodie from his birth by disposition,
But yet a while he did dissemble deepe,
That of the same there was but some suspicion;
His sonnes did make him it the closer keepe,
Because they were of contrarie condition,
Both bouiteous, frank, & curteous, of good qualitie,
Of strangers louers and of hospitalitie.

Faire

36
Faire dames and knights that hapt to passe this way,
Were still by them so frendly entertained,
That by such kind of curteous vlage, thay
The loue and praise of eu'rie one had gained;
Their honors also farther to display,
The sacred right of knight hood they obtained;
Both stout, both strong, comly and of good stature,
Not wanting ornaments of art or nature.

37
Cylandro and *Tanacro* nam'd they are,
And long they liu'd with no dishonor stained,
And longer had, if they had bene so ware,
As not in *Cupids* snares to haue bene trained;
This foolish passion foyld all their welfare,
The passion men call loue, this them constrained,
To change the worthie course they had begonne,
And do that by the which they were vndonne.

38
It happend that there thither came a knight,
Belonging to this Emperour of Greece,
Who brought with him a Ladie faire and bright,
Of good behauour, and a louely peece,
With whom *Cylandro* fell in loue that night,
And fully bent of her to haue a fleece,
He thought her beautie so possest his hart,
That he should surely dye, if she depart.

39
And, for he deemd it labour lost to pray,
To open force he doth himselfe dispose,
And secretly all armd, vnto the way
Where tother needs must passe, afore he goes,
And seeing him he would no longer stay,
But trusting to his manhood, comes to bloes;
Not seeking vantage, but with lance to lance;
He minds to trie of fight the doubtfull chauce.

40
Not thinking though but with his suer running,
To beat him downe, and beare away his wite,
But this same knight, that in this art was cunning,
Did pierce his shield, and rest him of his life:
The newes hereof vnto his father comming,
Fild all the court with plaints and sorows rise;
At last, when long the time had bene deferred,
By his great ancestors they him interred,

41
Nor did this foule mishap and ill successe,
Make *Margaror* to minish ought his port,
Tanacro still did courtesie professe,
To strangers all, and vsd them in good sort;
But loe, it chanc't within a yeare and lesse,
A noble Baron thither did resort,
A comely man of personage to see,
With him a Ladie faire as faire might be.

42
And to her beautie her behauour fitted,
Her looks are modest, manners sober are,
Her words are ware, and shew her sharply witted;
Likewise her Lord, himselfe most comely bare,
As fit to whom the charge should be committed,
Of one in shape and qualities so rare:
He hight *Olindro*, Lord of Longauilla,
The louely Lady named was *Drusilla*.

43
No lesse *Tanacro* doted on this Dame,
Then had his brother done on that before,
But that foule end to which his brother came,
Made him more warie, though not honest more;
By former good report that bred him fame,
And all his passed praise, he sets no store:
Be fame, be vertue troden in the dust,
So he may but fulfill his present lust.

44
Thus caring onely to auoyd the danger,
In which he saw before his brother dyde,
He secretly that night way-laid the stranger,
There as he knew next day he needs must ride,
Not meaning his owne person to endanger;
In fine, the Baron that to saue his bride,
Did stoutly giue and take full many a wound,
At last they left foule murderd on the ground.

45
Drusilla se'ing her deare *Olindro* ded,
In deadly lound vnto the ground she sanke,
But thence in curteous sort the men her led,
Whō to haue kild her, she would giue more thanke:
But grieve in her such will to die had bred,
That wilfully she leapt downe from a banke,
To kill her selfe, but poore soule could not dy,
But all her head and face was bruid thereby.

46
Tanacro gets some surgeons and Phisicians,
To looke vnto her health, and hurts to cure,
He causeth her to heare most rare musicions,
To cheare her heart, and solace to procure:
He maks great brags of her so chaste conditions,
With mind by marriage to make her sure;
He thinks a woman of so vertuous life,
Must not be termed a lemman, but a wife.

47
To marrie her he inwardly intends,
This outwardly in shew he doth make knowne,
And euermore he highly her commend;
And though her griete was by his doings growne,
He saith he will for this make large amends,
And that he will her loue, and be her owne:
But still the more that on that point he graterh,
The more in heart she him detests and hateth.

48
But yet her hate did not so blind her wit,
But that to keepe it close she tooke good heed;
She knew full well she must dissemble it,
If she will be reuengd of him indeed:
Wherefore vntill the time may serue her fit,
She seemes vnto his meaning halfe agreed,
And did in shew the same so smoothly carrie,
That lastly she consented him to marrie.

49
Sweet peace and loue were written in her eyes,
Reuenge and hate were in her heart engraued,
To kill him, in her thought she doth deuise,
When with most kindnesse she her selfe behaues:
He needs must die, needs die in any wise,
But eu'n thus long to liue of God she craued:
How can I better end my life (she saith)
Then in reuenging my deare husbands dethe

50
Thus seeming to forget all former wrong,
She chearfully expects the wedding day,
As though that she did for this marriage long,
And so she did, although another way,
She shortens all that might the time prolong,
And paints her selfe, and tricks her trim and gay:
She onely crau'd thus much for Christ his passion,
She might be marry'd of her country fashion.

51
Not that her speech herein indeed was trew,
That such the custome was as she pretended,
But she doth mind to forge a custome new,
With trust assuredly to be reuenged
On him, that her beloued husband slew;
Reuenge, reuenge was all that she intended:
She pray'd, she might obserue her countrie guise,
Which in this sort, she doth to them deuise.

52
The widow that to marrie new intends,
According as our countrie law allows,
Must first appeale the ghost whom she offends,
I meane (saith she) that of her former spouse,
And make vnto his spirit some amends,
By Dirges, trentals, masses, pray'rs, and vows,
In that same Church, whereas his bones be resting,
Then may she marrie new, without molesting.

53
But when of her new spouse she takes the ring,
The Priest in sight of all that stand about,
Of hallowd wine a bottle then must bring,
And in the Chalice he must powre it out;
Then ouer it he must both say and sing,
Effectual prayrs, and Psalmes, and hymnes deuout,
Then must the woman take it of the Vicker,
And drinke vnto her spouse the blessed licker.

54
Tanatro liketh well of this her motion,
Respecting little how much it imported,
To let her marrie with so strange deuotion,
He onely wisht to haue the season shorted;
And not mistrusting that same hallowd potion,
To cut of all delays he her exhorted,
Each makes like hast, though sundry in construction,
He to her wedding, she to his destruction.

55
Among her women seruants that were there,
Drusilla had one old ilfavord trot,
She calleth her, and bad her in her care,
That some strong sodaine poyson may be got,
You know (saith she) to get it, how and wheare,
Conuay it safe into some pretie pot,
For I (quoth she) haue found the way and skill,
The wicked sonne of *Marganor* to kill.

56
And doubt not, I know how to saue vs both,
As I will let thee know at better leasure,
The woman doth the feat though seeming loth,
Saue onely that it was her mistres pleasure:
Then for a cup of Candie wine she goth,
And mingles this and that in so due measure,
As made it with but little alteration,
Not lowre in tast, yet sure in operation.

57
Now came *Drusilla* on the wedding day,
With gorgeous gowns and costly iewels deckt,
There where *Olindros* corps intomb'd lay,
Raist high on collumns as she did direct:
The Priest began the solemne Masse to say,
To which came great resort, without suspect,
And *Marganor* himselfe now most contenting,
Came with his son and frends the place frequenting.

58
When all the solemne rites to end were brought,
Then in a cup of masse gold and fine,
The Priest powrd out, as she before had taught,
The curst poyson, with the blessed wine;
She soberly drinks a conuenient draught,
Inough to do the feat she did designe,
Then to *Tanatro* with a louely cheare,
She gaue it, who supt vp the chalice cleare.

59
And rendring then the chalice to the Fire,
He thought in open arms her to embrace.
But then she sodainly began retire,
Then her sweet looks, and words so full of grace,
Were gone, her eyes did seeme to flame like fire,
Then wrath and spite were written in her face,
She cries with grisly looke, and voice vnpleasant,
Auaunt, and touch not me thou traitor peasant.

60
Thoughtst thou of me solace to haue and sport,
And bring me cause of torment, teares, and wor,
No, now I trow that I haue cut thee short,
That drinke was poyson, if you do not know:
But ah this death is of too gentle sort,
And I too noble hangman am I trow,
A hangman ought with halter stop thy breath,
This was for thee, too honorable death.

61
My onely sorrow is that ere I dyde,
My sacrifice was not in full perfection,
And that thy wicked fire and more beside,
Did not with thee, tast of that strong confession:
But pardon me (my deare dead spouse) she cride,
If I haue sayld for fault of good direction,
If I perhaps haue not done all I should do,
Yet sure I haue performed all I could do.

62
And looke what I do want in all or part,
In working him torture condigne, and shame,
I hope the world to come, with greater smart,
Will pay it him, and I shall see the same,
Thus much she said, and then with chearfull hart,
Still calling on her former spouses name,
Take here in worth (saith she) this sacrifice,
That thy poore wife did for thy sake deuise.

63
And of our Lord for me a place obtaine,
In Paradise, with thy most blessed spirit,
And if he say that none must there remaine,
But they that by good works the same inherit;
Tell him I haue a cruell tyrant slaine,
Of tyrants death I bring with me the merit;
To kill a tyrant, what can be more glorious,
Or in the sight of God more meritorious?

Thus

64

Thus much she said, and fell dead therewithall,
And being dead, she kept a chearfull looke,
And sure to her the comfort was not small,
That for her spouse so sharpe reuenge she tooke.
I know not if *Tanacro* in his fall,
Did follow her, or else her ouertooke,
He ouertooke her sure, as may be thought,
That dranke the bottome, and the greater draught.

65

Fell *Marganor* that heard his sonnes last grone,
And seeing him lie dead past all reliefe,
Made at the first so great and grievous mone,
As though he would haue dide of very grieve:
Two sons he had of late, now hath he none,
Two women had hereof bin causes chiefe,
One mou'd the first to hazard life, the tother
With her owne hands gaue poison to his brother.

66

Loue, pitie, grieve, disdain, and hate, and wrath,
Desire of death and of reuenge together,
The dolefull parent so intraged hath,
Like to the roring seas in fowlest wether:
Faine to *Druzilla* he would do some scath,
But she was dead before, yet goes he thether,
As blinded hate did him still forward pricke,
He seeks to harme the corse that was not quicke.

67

Eu'n as a snake whom speare to ground doth naile,
Doth bite the Steele and wood that sence hath none,
Or as a dog that doth a man assaile,
If one do sling at him a sticke or stone,
Doth runne and bite the same without auail,
Till he that hurled it is past and gone:
So *Marganor* more fierce then dog or snake,
Seeks on the sencelesse corse reuenge to take.

68

And when that harrying it, and all to tearing,
Could not in any part his wrath assuage,
Eu'n in the Church on vs, no such thing fearing,
He drawes his sword, and in his sencelesse rage,
Doth hew and mangle women, none forbearing,
For dignitie, for beautie, nor for age;
While we cride out, and at his furie wondred,
He thirtie kild, and hurt and maimd an hundred.

69

So sorely of his people he is dreaded,
That no man dare against his acts oppose him,
Vnto his will he is so firmly wedded,
That for the time starke mad ye would suppose him;
Who would reforme him, hang'd shall be & headed,
For guerdon of his paine, when once he knows him:
His seruants do, as doth the prouerbe say,
When furie runs, lets furie haue her sway.

70

But when at last himselfe was almost tired
With killing vs, though voyd of all remorse,
Then by his friends request he was desired,
And as it were constrained by honest force;
And to his castle he himselfe retired,
Appointing there this law of our diuorce,
And clemencie forsooth he doth it call,
In that he did forbear to kill vs all.

71

Thus whether they obeyd or else repined,
Men are from wiues, babes fro their dames deuided,
And hither all the women be confined;
This towne of purpose is for vs prouided,
Where if that any man to loue inclined,
And by a good and kind affection guided,
Come but to see his wife, and thereby show it,
Wo be to him if *Marganor* may know it.

72

And worse then this, he hath ordaind an order,
Such one I thinke was neuer heard before,
All women that are tane within his border,
Must first be whipt with rods till they be sore,
And then he doth their vestiments disorder,
By clipping them behind and eke before;
And so away he sendeth them halfe stripped,
When first they haue bin beaten well and whipped.

*Marganor's law
against women.*

73

And if that any hope to haue assistance,
Or bring some knights them to defend and saue,
Forthwith he killeth them and their assistants,
As sacrifices on his childrens graue:
So as no hope there is to make resistance,
For euermore he if he list can haue
At his commaund, of men a mightie powre,
By name one thousand eu'n within an houre.

74

And further all men in his realme he takes,
By either faire perswasions or by feare,
Vpon the Sacrament to sweare he makes,
That ay they shall to women hatred beare.
Now for your owne and these faire Ladies sakes,
Iudge you if you haue reason to forbear,
Vnto his castle nearer to approach,
Except you will be sham'd with foule reproch.

75

This tale so much did moue the warriers three,
With pitie first, and then with high disdain,
That saue it was so darke they could not see,
They would haue gone eu'n then him to haue slain:
Now for that night they rest, but they decree,
So soone as *Phobus* should returne againe,
To arme themselves, and boldly to aduenter,
Vpon the tyrants hold by force to enter.

76

Now as they were about their horse to take,
They saw before them at the mountaines root,
Some twentie men, that no great hast did make,
But some on horseback were, and some on foote,
All armed, these three them soone did ouertake,
Before they full had rode an arrow shoot,
And then they saw how they did beare by force,
An aged beldam on a sumpter horse.

77

This was forsooth *Druzilla's* chamber mayd,
That to her mistris that same poison gaue,
And being then mistrustfull and afraid,
What strange effect it fortune might to haue,
Vpon the wedding day from Church she staid,
And so by secret flight her selfe did saue,
And kept her selfe three yeares from law and triall,
Till *Marganor* had found her by espiall.

D d iij

Sentence.

78
What cannot gaine and hope of many worke?
First by his coyne he learned where she lay,
Then with his coyne he set these men a worke,
Who in this fort did fetch her thence away,
And of a Lord (in whose land she did lurke,
With promise that she safely there should stay)
With coyne of that same Baron her he bought;
Ah noble men, can nobles make you nought?

Simile.

79
Looke how the great and stately streame of Poe,
The nearer he vnto the sea descends,
When Lambra, Tycin, Adda, with some mo,
Fall into him, and their due tribute lends,
The broader and the deeper still doth grow:
Eu'n so the more that *Marganor* offends,
The greater will in these three champions breeds,
To be auenged on so vile misdeeds.

80

Yet first to free this woman they intend,
Who else (at least) should haue bin hangd in chaines,
Straight on those lowts all three their forces bend,
They couch their speares, and slack their horses rains:
An host of men could scarce such force defend;
Much lesse a sort of dastard hireling swaines:
Wherefore they cast away their warlike tooles,
Their cariage left, and went away like fooles.

81

Simile.

Eu'n as a greedie wolfe that runneth loden
With his desired pray vnto his den,
That finds vnwares the way to him forbidden,
By hunting dogs, or by the hunting men,
Hurles downe his pray, and by the paths vntroden
Doth flie for life; so did these cullions then,
Not onely that their prisoner enlarge,
But leaue their horses and their other charge.

82

Some, others force, some their owne feare vnhorfes,
By meanes whereof they did at ease prouide,
For those three damfels good conuenient horfes,
That yesterday behind them three did ride:
Also *Rogero* that old trot inforces,
(Though she in vaine refused and denide)
To go with them, lamenting fore and wailing,
But all her lamentation nought auailing.

83

Now were they come vnto the towne at length,
About the which there was no ditch nor wall,
Yet were the houses built in bredth and length
Both orderly and very strong withall;
A castle in the midit of mightie strength,
Stood on a rocke that ouerlookt them all:
To this they march with great desire and longing,
Because it was to *Marganor* belonging.

84

Within this towne no sooner set they feet,
But that the guard that kept the watch, began
Behind them step, and chained fast the street:
Some others, with the greatest hast they can,
Cald *Marganor*, that straight came them to meet,
With guard of many a tall and sturdie man,
Who with a speech but short, yet full of pride,
The leud law of his Citie signifide.

85

Marfisa who before hand had agreed,
Vpon the matter with the other two,
Sets spurs to horse, and galloping in steed
Of making answere, makes no more ado,
But being of her person strong indeed,
Employing neither launce nor sword thereto,
With bended fist she giues him such a boxe,
As stonid him, and would haue feld an oxe.

86

Nor doth *Rogero*, nor the dame of France,
Grant to the others any time of ease,
But chiefe the damfell that with goldelance,
Doth throw to ground as many as she please;
No man there was that durst himselfe aduance,
To stand vnto the shoocke with one of these;
Rogero seuen, she threw downe seuen times seauen,
Eu'n as if thunder had falne downe from heauen.

87

The hurtlesse people to their houses fled,
The hartlesse souldiers followd them as fast,
None stayd behind but those were maimd or dead,
And *Marganor* alone was left at last,
And by *Marfisa* now is captiue led,
Who (with his armes behind him piniond fast)
Gave him *Drusillas* maid to be tormentd,
And wold haue burnd the town, had they consentd.

88

But all consent the law to abrogate,
The people easily were wonne thereto,
And to accept one of another rate,
Which there was ratifide with small ado,
His law and him they did detest and hate,
Yet as him list they were content to do,
As still we see the foolish, common vse,
Obey him best that doth them most abuse.

89

And why, they dare not one another trust,
Nor tell to one another their complaints,
They let him kill and banish whom he lust;
Ones goods he takes, anothers house he taints,
The silent soule yet cries for vengeance iust
Vnto the mighty God and to his Saints,
Who though they seeme in punishing but slow,
Yet pay they home at last, with heauce and how.

90

So now these silly soules inflamd with ire, (knowne,
With speech and deeds do make their stomacks
And (as the prouerbe saith) each man beares fire,
To burne the tree the wind hath ouerthrowne.
Ye Princes that to tyrannize desire,
Marke this mans end, and make his case your owne,
Beleeue it well, that God doth euer send
Vnto a wicked life a wretched end.

91

Out came the yong and old, the great and small,
In words and workes to do him great disgrace:
He that so terrible was erst to all,
Is now despidde of all (a wondrous case)
Yea thote three warriers had ado not small,
To keepe him now from killing in the place;
Not that they car'd to haue his life preferued,
But vnto greater paines they him referued.

They

92

They gaue him bound vnto that woman aged,
That erst vpon *Drusilla* did attend,
And to those three, whose minds were yet enraged,
Whom whipt and stript he lately thence did fend;
These with sharp goads and kniues his body gaged,
And to torment him, all their wits did bend, (him,
Now some cast stones, and some with needels pricke
Some scratch, some bite, with feet some spurn & kick

93

Eu'n as a brooke new swolne with rage of raine,
Or with a sodaine thaw of melting snow,
Oft bears down rocks and trees with force so maine,
As heards doth drowne and houses ouerthrow,
A drouth doth come, and then that brooke againe
Abates his pride, and is at last so low,
A woman, yea a child with small adoe,
May passe the same, and neuer wet their shoe.

94

So *Marganor* that erst in pompe and pride,
Made hearts of men to quake when he was named,
To lowest ebb now turned sees his tyde,
His combe now cut, his furie now is tamed;
Now kennel-rakers scorne him, and deride,
To looke men in the face he is ashamed,
Small children, yea the babes, be not afeard,
To pill away his haire from head and beard.

95

The while *Rogero* with those champions twaine,
The castle summond that did gladly yeeld,
Here *Vllanie* recouered againe,
Which lately she had lost, her golden shield:
Here met they those three kings, which to their pain
Dame *Bradamant* had twise ou'rthrowne in field,
At the same castle, where before I told
She wan their lodging, and made them lie cold.

96

Since which, on foote vnarm'd they vowd to go,
Which want, faire *Vllanie* from death did saue,
For all that went with a mid men garded so,
Were sacrificed on *Tanacros* graue:
Yet better of the twaine it was to show,
The parts that modestie conceald would haue,
For why both this and eu'ry other shame,
Is halfe excus'd, if force procure the same.

97

Marfisa straight a Parliament did call
Of all the towne, and made them take an oth,
Of high and low, rich, poore, and great and small,
Although they were content, or else were loth,
That to their wiues they should be subiect all;
That in their houses and the Citie both,
The women should haue rule, such powre, such gra-
As men are wont to haue in other places. (ces,

98

She further made this notable decree,
That lodging, meate and drinke should be forbode
To trauellers, of whatsoere degree,
Admit they go on foote, or that they rode,
(Within that towne) except they first agree
To sweare by some great Saint, or else by God,
That they should euermore be womens friends,
And foe vnto their foes to their liues ends,

99

And whatsoeuer stranger there arriues,
Must further sweare, before they go their way,
If, or they haue, or meane to marry wiues,
That euermore they shall their wils obey:
This must they keepe on perill of their liues,
For why she vowes to come ere twelue-months day,
And if she find her law broke in that Citie,
To lacke and burne the same without all pitie.

100

This done, the warriors three did hasten hence,
But yet their going they so long deferred,
Vntill *Drusillas* corse was tane from thence,
Where (as it seemd) it was but homely berred,
And order tane, with cost and good expence,
Her spouse and she might nobly be interred,
With Epitaphs, by which was signified,
In how great honour they both liu'd and died.

101

Marfisa made her law in marble faire,
Vpon a pillar to be written downe,
And then *Rogero* with the warlike paire
Of damels, tooke their leaues of all the towne:
But *Vllanie* her garments doth repaire,
And stayes to make some new and costly gowne,
She thinks to come to Court were great dishoner,
Except she had some sumptuous clothing on her.

102

Therefore she staid behind, and in her powre
Was *Marganor*, by those same warriors giuen,
Who had new torments taught him eu'ry howre,
And was at last by his sharpe iudges driuen,
To leape downe headlong from a mightie towre,
Where all his bones and flesh were broke and riuen:
Of him nor these I haue no more to say,
But of those three that went the tother way.

103

The rest of that same day together riding,
And halfe the next in companie they spent,
Vntill they found a way in twaine diuiding,
One to the campe, tother to Arlie went;
Here oft they take their leaues, yet still abiding,
For euer parting makes friends ill content:
In fine the knight the way to Arlie tooke,
They to the campe, and thus I end this booke.

Ouid de tristitia.
Sape vale dicto
uius sum mal-
ta loquutus.

Lord Harrie
Howard.
Historie.

In this xxxvij. booke, the praises of women are set downe to the encouragement of all vertuous minded yong Ladies, Morall. and likewise the miserable end of *Marganor* and his two sonnes, for their vnbridled lust and crueltie, to the terrifying of all great men that dispose themselves to lawlesse and tyrannous behaviour. Lastly in the law made for women, we may see that that sex is capable of rule and gouernement, and not to be excluded from the highest degree thereof (as a noble learned, and learned noble man hath most amply and excellently proued in a discourse of his, which I happened by fortune to light vpon, though as yet I thinke imparted to few.)

Concerning the historie of this booke, first it should seeme that the whole booke it selfe was incerted into the rest of the worke by mine author, to take occasion thereby to speake in praise of women, and specially of the Ladie Vittoria, wife

to the famous Francis of Pescara: but concerning the famous women by him briefly touched, I will here set downe as briefly as I can their storie.

Arpalice or Harpalice a woman of Thrace, whose father being taken prisoner by the Geties, a nation of Scythia, with great courage and expedition recovered him from their hands, of whom Virgil speakes in his *Æneads*:

Vel qualis equos Threïssa fatigat.

Harpalice volucremq; fuga preuertitur Hæbrum.

Tomeris Queene of the Massagetians. Cyrus became a suter to her to marry her, but she thinking (as it was most likely) he wooed not her, but her kingdome, refused him: hereupon Cyrus made warre on her. Tomeris sent her son against him, who was taken by Cyrus with an ambushment, and slaine. But she faining as though she fled for feare, drew Cyrus to the straits of the hills, where (they write) she slue his whole army, being two hundred thousand men, and left not a man aliue to carry newes; and after in reuenge of her son, she put Cyrus head into a great boule of bloud, vsing that wel knowne speech: *Satia te sanguine qui sanguinem sitiisti*, Fill thy selfe with bloud that didst thirst for bloud. In the 5. staffe.

With those that did Turnus and Hector ayd.

Those two were Camilla and Penthesilea, of both which Virgil writes in the *Æneads*:

Penthesilea furens, medijsq; in millibus ardet

Bellatrix, ardētque viris concurrere virgo.

She that in compasse of buls hide, &c.

That was Dido: The storie is well knowne of Pigmaliions crueltie in murdering Sycheus for hope of his money, but Dido warned in a dreame by the gift of Sycheus, tooke away all the gold, and fled with diuers confederates to Lybia in Affrik, and there bargained to buy as much ground as she could compasse with a buls hide: which bargain being made, she cut the hide into an infinit company of smal thongs, and so built the famous city of Carthage within that cōpasse, as Virgil noteth:

Mercatique locum facti de nomine Bifen,

Taurino quantum poterant circundare tergo.

Zenobia Queene of the Palmirens, widow, or as we call it, dowager of Odenatus: she rebelled against the Romaine Empire, and fought many battels very prosperously; but afterward by Aurelianus she was besieged in the citie of Palmyra, and in her flight from thence she was taken and brought to Rome in Triumph.

She that Inde and Aslure frayd: this was Symiramis wife of Nynus, who was a notable warrior; had not her vnbriyled lust of the flesh stained the honour of her other vertues, which as it became her owne destruction, so it hath left a notable example to all other Princes of her sex, to take heed and eschew the like infamie, and specially (though they be aboute all positive lawes) yet not to pollute the lawes of nature.

Allegoric.

In that it is said Marfisa and Bradamant put off their bases, therewith to hide the priuities of the damsels, it may thereby be vnderstood, that the vertues of some excellent women are so great, as not onely serue themselves to make them famous and most honorable, but also extend themselves so farre, as to serue to hide and couer the deformitie of others not so well appparelled with the garments of honor, and so (as it were with works of supererogation) beautifie those that had defects of their owne.

Allusion.

Concerning the great praise mine author ascribeth to Madam Vittoria:

Whole learned pen such priuiledge can giue,

As it can cause those that are dead to liue.

And for that cause preferreth her before Porcia wife of Brutus, and diuers others that died voluntarie soone after their husbands, it was because she wrote some verses in manner of an Epitaph vpon her husband after his decease: In which kind, that honorable Ladie (widow of the late Lord Iohn Russell) deserueth no lesse commendation, hauing done as much for two husbands. And whereas my author maketh so great boast onely of one learned woman in Italie, I may com-

The four daughters of Sir Anthony Cooke.
Ladie Barlie.
Ladie Russell.
Ladie Bacon.
Mistresse Killygreu.

pare) besides one aboute all comparison, that I haue noted in the twentieth booke) three or foure in England out of one family, and namely the sisters of that learned Ladie, as witnesse that verse written by the meaneft of the foure to the Ladie Barlie, which I doubt if Cambridge or Oxford can mend.

Si mihi quem cupio cures Mildreda remitti,

Tu bona, tu melior, tu mihi sola soror:

Sin malè cessando retines, & trans mare mittis,

Tu mala, tu peior, tu mihi nulla soror.

Is si Cornubiam, tibi pax sit & omnia læta,

Sin mare Ciliciæ nuncio bella. Vale.

In the 14. staffe.

And if the great Macedon entie bare,

Vnto Achilles for Meonian lyre, &c.

This place M. Alexander Neuell imitated, in his verses vpon Sir Philip Sidneys funerals, with farre sharper conceit then mine author here vseth it. For whereas the now King of Scotland had written among others, that pretie Epitaph of the foresaid Knight:

Vidit vt extinctum nuper Citherea Philippum,

Fleuit, & hunc Martem credidit esse suum,

Abripuit digitis gemmas, colloque monile,

Marti iterum nunquam teu placitura foret:

Mortuus humana qui lussit imagine diuam,

Quid faceret iam si videret ille rogo?

She wrote to the
Ladie Barlie, to
send a key to
others: and so
wall, where she
dwelt, and so
his going beyond
sea.

To this effect in English,

When *Venus* saw the noble *Sidney* dying,
She thought, it her beloued *Mars* had beene:
And with the thought thereof she fell a crying,
And cast away her rings and carknet cleene,

He that in death a goddesse mockt and grieved,
What had he done (trow you) if he had liued?

The verse hath a fine conceipt, and perhaps better then it shoves for. Now (as I say) M. Neuell praising Sir Philip Sidney in the like manner, yseth the like application, as mine author doth in this place, preferring his fortunatenesse in this kinde, before his, whom Alexander enuieth: for he saith (as I remember)

Plectra canant alios, cecinerunt sceptrum Philippum,
Ista coronatis sunt carmina digna cothurnis.

Harpes, other praise; a scepter his doth sing,
Of crowned Poet, and of Laureat king.

Concerning the tale of *Drusilla*, it is taken out of *Plutarke*, and thought a true Story: it is both in the *Courtier* of *Castiglione* and in *Apuleius*; but somewhat amplified by mine author.

The end of the annotations vpon the 37. booke.





THE ARGUMENT.

*Marfisa doth present herselfe before
King Charles, and in his presence is baptized:
Astolfo doth Senapors fight restore,
By whom such hardie feats are enterprised,
That Agramant therewith molested sore,
Is by Sobrino finally aduised,
To make a challenge on Rogeros hed,
To end the troubles that the warre had bred.*



¹ Aire Ladies, you with gracious care that heare,
My present storie, now me seemes I see,
By this vnwoted changing of your cheare,
That with Rogero you offended be,
For thus againe departing from his deare,

And that you take the same as ill as she,
As though you thought, and durst affirme it boldly,
That fire of loue in him did burne but coldly.

² And sure had he bin moued hereunto,
By any other cause, then that I told,
No though thereby he had attained to
Rich *Crassus* wealth, or richer *Cresus* gold,
Yet would I thinke (as now it seemes ye do)
Loues darts in him had tane but shallow hold:
For so sweet ioy, as this was to be thought,
With gold nor siluer neuer could be bought.

³ But when ones honour shall thereon depend,
Then should it merit not excuse but praile,
And chiefe when one so truly may pretend,
He cannot saue his honor otherwayes:
And that same woman that herselfe should bend,
To stop the same by prayre, or by delays,
Should giue iust cause to eu'ie one to guesse,
Her loue were little, or her wit were lesse.

⁴ For if a woman should of him she loues,
Esteeme the life and safetie as her owne,

(I speake of such, whose choice no change remoues,
And whose affecti ons are not rashly growne)
Then sure much more in reason it behoues,
That of his honour should more care be shownes;
By how much more, it should in due account,
Both pleasures all, and life it selfe surmount.

⁵ In following of his Lord so faithfully,
Rogero did but eu'n as he was bound,
And if he should haue left him then, thinke I
He should haue done it but on slender ground:
What though *Almonte* made his father die?
On *Agramant* that fault could not redound,
Who had for all his ancestors offences,
Giu'nto Rogero many recompences.

⁶ He did but well in going to his Lord,
And she as well (it cannot be denied)
In that she thereto granted her accord,
Which she might hap haue stopt, had she replied,
That from the same her liking had abhord:
What now she wants, henceforth may be supplied,
But if that honor haue one minuts staine,
An hundred yeares scant can it cleanse againe.

Sentence.

⁷ Now while Rogero vnto Arly went,
As dutie bound him to *Traianos* haire,
Vnto the Christen campe incontinent,
Rogeros spouse and sister (noble paire)
As louing friends and co'ns now they went,
And vnto Charles his tent they did repaire;
Who minds by siege, or battels doubtfull chance,
To driue these tedious troubles out of France.

8

When in the campe it was made knowne and bruted,
That *Bradaman* was come, her noblest brothers
Came forth to her, and kindly her saluted,
With *Guidon*, though they came of sundry mothers;
And she, as for her sexe and calling futed,
Did resalute both them, and diuers others,
By kissing some, and speaking to the best,
And making frendly gestures to the rest.

9

But when *Marfisa*'s name was heard and knowne,
Whose noble acts eu'n from Catay to Spaine,
And ouer all the world beside were blowne,
To looke on her all were so glad and faine,
With presse and thrust not few were ouerthrowne;
And scarce a man could in the tents remaine,
But heauing, shouing, hither-ward and thither,
To see so braue a paire as these togither.

10

Now when to *Charles* his presence come they be,
Vpon her knee *Marfisa* did decline,
And (as *Turpino* writes) no man did see,
Her knee to touch the ground before that time,
To none of anie calling, or degree,
Not vnto Christen Prince or Sarazine:
She onely doth esteeme king *Pepins* sonne,
As worthe whom such honor should be donne.

11

But *Charles* arose, and met her halfe the way,
And in kinde stately sort did her embrace,
And set her by his side that present day,
Aboue the Princes all, and gaue her place.
Then voided was the roome that none might stay,
But Lords and knights well worthie so great grace,
Excluding all the lawcie baser sort,
And then *Marfisa* spake in such like sort.

12

Marfisa oration. Most mightie *Cesar*, high renownd and glorious,
That from our Indies, to Tyrrinthian shore,
From Scythia, frosen still with breath of *Boreas*,
To *Aethiopia* scorching euermore,
Makst thy white crosse, so famous and victorious,
By value much, but by thy iustice more;
Thy praise (O Prince) and thy renowned name,
Were cause from countries farre I hither came.

13

And to say troth, flat enuie mou'd me chiefe,
Because thy powre to reach so farre I saw,
I must confesse I tooke dildaine and grieve,
That any Prince that fauord not our law,
And was to vs of contrarie belife,
Should grow so great, to keepe vs all in awe;
Wherefore I came with mind to haue destruid thee,
Or by all meanes I could, to haue annoyd thee.

14

For this I came, for this I stayd in France,
To seeke your ruine and your ouerthrow,
When lo a chance (if such a thing can chance)
Made me a friend and subiect of a fo,
I will not stay to tell each circumstance,
But this in substance, it did make me know,
That I, your bloodie enemy *Marfisa*,
Was daughter to *Rogero* late of *Ryla*.

She means the
voice out of the
combe, in the la-
ter end of the 26.
booke.

15

He by my wicked vnckles was betraid,
And left my wofull mother big with child,
Who neare to Syrté downe her bellie laid,
As strangely sau'd, as wrongfully exild;
She brought a twin, a man child and a maid,
We fosterd were, seuen yeares in forrest wild,
By one that had in Magicke art great skill,
But I was stolne from him against his will.

16

For some Arabians sold me for a slaue,
Vnto a Persian king, whom (growne in yeares)
Because he my virginie would haue,
I killed him and all his Lords and Peeres
And then such hap, God and good fortune gaue,
I gat his crowne and armes, as yet appears;
And ere I fully was twise ten yeare old,
Seuen crownes I gat beside, which yet I hold.

17

And being enuious of your endlesse fame,
(As erst I told) I came with firme intent,
By all the meanes I could, to quail the same,
And haply might haue done the hurt I ment;
But now a better minde, that minde doth tame,
Now of my malice I do much repent,
Since by good hap, I lately vnderstood,
That I was neare allide to you in blood.

18

And sith I know my father was your man,
I meane no lesse then he did, you to serue,
As for the hate and enuie I began,
To beare you I now the same reserue,
For *Agramant*, and all the harme I can,
To all his kin, that do the same deserue,
Because I now do know, and am assured,
His ancestors my parents death procured.

19

This said *Marfisa*, and withall, did adde,
That she would be baptized out of hand,
And when that *Agramant* she vanquishd had,
Returne (if *Charles* so pleas'd) to her owne land,
And Christen them, and farther would be glad,
Against all those that would Christs law withstand,
Ay to beare armes, with vow that all her gaine,
To *Charles* and holy Church should ay remaine.

20

The noble *Charles* of tongue as eloquent,
As wise in head, as valorous in heart,
Did much extoll the Ladie excellent,
And all her kin and fire by iust desert:
And of her former speech incontinent,
Most graciouslie he answerd eu'rie part,
Concluding that he would for eu' after,
Accept her as his cousin, and his daughter.

21

And her againe he did embrace of new:
And kilt her forehead as his child indeed:
It long would be to tell how braue a crew,
From *Clarimunt*, and *Mongrane* did proceed,
To welcome her, or when *Renaldo* knew
Marfisa's name, what ioy in him did breed,
He calls to mind what force in her he found,
Then when *Albracca* he besieged round.

Long

It was the
mer in the old
time, for men
kisse their child-
dren or of men
ken, in the fore-
head, not on the
mouth.

22
It long would be to tell of *Guidons* ioy,

With *Griffin*, *Aquilant* and *Sanfouet*,
That leapt with her their land, that do destroy,
Those men that in their Realme they hap to get:
No lesse did *Malagige* and *Vinian* ioy,
Remembring how she ioynd with *Richardet*,
To rescue them, as long before I told,
When vnto *Bertolage* they had bene sold.

23
Now was prepar'd against the ensuing day,
A place, as was by *Charles* himselfe deuised,
Set stately forth, and hang'd with rich aray,
Where this most worthy dame should be baptised,
Then Bishops were employ'd by whom she may,
Betaught the Christen faith and catechised,
And all that day a learned Clarke and Preacher,
The principles of Christen faith did teach her.

24
Then *Turpin* Archbishop of chiefe account,
In his robes pontificall doth baptise her,
Charles with great reuerence standeth by the fount,
And what to answer, he did still aduise her.
But now tis time that to the Moone I mount,
For that receit, must make *Orlando* wiser,
From whence the Duke, descending by strange byas,
Came with *S. Iohn* in charret of *Elyas*.

25
And by his guide he backe againe was led,
And keeps still in his hand that pot or Iarre,
That should againe make wise the mased hed,
Of that same Palladin well seene in warre.
Likewise the Saint vnto *Astolfo* led,
As soone as they allighted from the carre,
That with an herbe (of which there grew great store)
He should againe *Senapos* sight restore.

26
For which, and for his former great desert,
He should haue men t'assault *Bilerta* land,
He teacheth him those people vnexpert,
He should so traine, to make them to his hand:
He further learned him the way and art,
How he might safely passe th'vnstable sand:
And plainly thus *S. Iohn*, from point to point,
What th'English Duke should do, did him appoint.

27
Then did *Astolfo* take his winged steed,
And of the Saint deuoutly tooke his leaue,
And soaring downe, he makes no little speed,
To do that which in charge he did receaue:
So farre by *Nylus* bankes he doth proceed,
Vntill that *Nubia* he did plaine perceaue:
And following the course of that same streame,
Came to *Senapo*, head of that same Reame.

28
Great was the pleasure, triumph, and the ioy,
Senapo tooke when he thereof had woord,
Remembring well the trouble and annoy,
The foule Harpias brought him at his boord:
But when he made him eke his sight enioy,
And did so rare a grace to him afford,
That by his meanes his eye sight was restord him,
He worshipt him and like a God adord him.

29
Nor onely did he giue him souldiers then,
Wherewith he might *Bilerta* towne inuade,
But for each one he askt he gaue him ten,
That soone two hundred thousand men he made:
Scarfe had the fields roome for so many men,
But footmen all: so is that countryes trade,
For horses in that Region are but dentie,
But Elephants and Camells they haue plentie.

30
Now that same day that went before the day,
In which the men of *Nubia* made account,
To march on forward, some part of their way,
Astolfo on his Griffith horse doth mount,
And Southward he doth passe, and doth not stay,
Vntill he came neare to a mightie mount:
At foote whereof a vast caue he doth finde,
Which was the lodging of the Sotherne winde.

31
The mightie caue had but a narrow mouth,
At which the Duke (as Christ's Apostle taught)
Did watch so long, vntill the wind of South,
Came home to eale his spirits ouerwrought,
To enter in, *Astolfo* him allowth,
But when anone, to haue come out he thought,
Within a leather sacke the Duke had plapt
At that caues mouth, he caught and tyde him fast.

32
The Palladin, full proud of such a pray,
Returnes to *Nubia* ward, before twas night,
And to the Negros then he showd the way,
Appointing them how they should trauell right,
He victuals doth and cariages conuay,
All safe vnto that hill, that *Atlas* hight,
Quite ore those fields where many haue bene found,
With wind for want of water, more then drownd.

33
And being come vnto the mountaines side,
There, where he might discouer all the plaine,
He doth his bands and companies deuide,
And chuseth those that are most apt to traine,
And those he parts and putteth them aside,
And orders for the rest he doth ordaine,
Then he in sight of all the hill ascendeth,
And lookt like one that some great feat intendeth.

34
And kneeling downe (as one that did beleue,
His prayre should granted be, as well as hard)
He prayd his master their great want releue:
Then casting stones that were before prepar'd,
(What cannot firme beleefe in Christ atcheue?)
The very stones (a thing to credit hard)
Did grow, and lue, and moue by hidden cause,
And had both bellies, legges, and necks, and iawes.

35
And naying lowd, fill all the place with sound,
Of horle, some bay, some roane, some duple gray,
And of all them were readie horles found,
The spurre, the wand, the leg and voyce t'obay:
To stop, to start, to passe carier, to bound,
To gallop straight, or round, or any way:
Thus were the men well horst, with little paines,
For eu'rie horse had saddle, bit and raines.

E c

Looke in the
Allusion.

Because the wind
was wont to cal
the sand some-
times in such sort
as it ouerwhelm'd
the men that
were in it.

Quid. Metam. 7.
Saxa quæ hoc
credar: missa
pro septe vetustis

36

Thus by this vertuous Duke, within one houre,
Were fourscore thousand footmen, horsemen made,
With which so great and v unexpected powre,
Full fiercely he all Affrike did inuade,
And burnt and spoild full many a towne and towre,
All giuing way to his victorious blade,
Vntill three Princes, *Agramants* vicegerents,
Made head against the Duke, with their adherents.

37

The king of *Aldyzer*, and he of *Ferfe*,
With stout *Bransardo*, all three mightie kings,
That find their enemies to grow so fierce,
Do send their Lord by sea, word of these things.
A little fricket straight the waues doth pierce,
And of these euill newes quicke notice brings
To *Agramant* that lay that time in Arlie,
Besieged by an armie strong and warlie.

He turns to *A-*
stolfo in the next
booke, 18. flaffe.

38

Who hearing of his countries wofull case,
And by his absence what did them betide,
He cald his Lords and Princes to the place,
Consulting how for this harme to prouide;
And looking once or twise with stately grace,
Now on the tone, then on the tother side,
But on *Marfilio* and *Sobrino* chiefe,
In such like words he told to them his griefe.

39

Agramants O-
ration.

Although I wot it worst befeemes of all,
A Generall to say, I had not thought,
Yet so say I, for when a harme doth fall.
Beyond the reach of humane sence or thought,
Then sure the blame is either none or small,
And in this compasse may my fault be brought:
My fault it was, Affricke to leaue vnarmed,
If of the Nubians now they could be harmed.

40

But who could thinke (but God that vnderstands
The things to come as well as those are past)
So great an host could passe so many lands,
That were from vs so great a distance past?
Twixt whom and vs lies those vnstable sands,
That dangerously are mou'd with Southerne blast,
Yet are they come, and haue so farre preuailed,
Bylerta selfe is now by them assailed.

41

Now on this point your counsels here I craue,
If so I shall all fruitlesse hence retire,
Or trie before I go, if I can haue
The crowne of France, to which I do aspire,
Or how I may at home my country saue,
And this destroy, which is my most desire;
If any know the meane, then speake he to it,
To th'end that we may know the best, and do it.

42

Thus much the sonne of great *Traiano* spake,
And on *Marfilio* fixt his eyes, that he
As chiefe in place, thereby might notice take,
That first by him he would aduised be:
Who when he had stood vp for reu'rence sake,
And bowd his bodie, and withall his knee,
Downe sate him in his honorable seate,
And spake such words as I shall here repeate.

43

What euer fame doth bring, of good or ill,
To make it greater it doth euersie,
Wherefore (my soueraigne Lord) I neuer will
Be bold or basht with hearing flying newes,
But moue such doubt and such assurance still,
As though I would not all reports refuse,
Yet would I thinke the truth of other sort,
Then as so many mouthes shall make report.

44

And I belecue each tale so much the lesse,
By how much more from likelihood it doth arre:
Now in this present cause let any guesse,
It like it be, a king that dwels so farre,
Could come with such an host, as they expresse,
To Affrica, so often vld to warre,
And passe those parlous sands, where to his cost,
Cambises erst did leese his mightie host.

Marfilio and
so persuade
so continue the
warre in France

Look in the
store.

45

But they be Nubians, let it be allowd,
By miracle come in a showre of raine,
Or closely carrid thither in some clowd,
Sith by the way none saw so large a traine:
Hath Affrike euer to such people bowd?
Must they haue aide to driue them home againe?
I sure may think you kept a forie garison,
If them and yours betweene there be comparison.

46

I rather thinke th'Arabians are come downe,
From those their hills, and done some spoile or wast,
And tane some men, & burnt some baggage towne,
But small resistance finding as they past,
And that *Bransardo* for his owne renowne,
Whom as your deputie you there had plast,
For one sets downe one hundred in his letter,
To th'end that his excuse may seeme the better.

47

But if you will but send some ship or twaine,
That but your standard may therein appeare,
No doubt but they will hie them home againe,
By that time these but weigh their ankers here,
If they Arabians, that can bide no paine,
Or if they Nubians be, the case is cleare,
Who onely taken haue this heart of grace,
To know your person absent from the place.

48

This therefore is the summe of my perswasion,
Make sure the conquest here ere you go hence,
Charles can no more endure your sharpe euasion,
Now that his nephew is distraught of sence:
Now by the forehead let vs take Occasion,
Least after all our trauell and expence,
He hide away his haire, and turne his bald,
And we vnprouident be thought and cald.

Summe.

49

With these so warie words, and such as these,
The subtle Spaniard labourd to perswade,
The king of Affrike not to passe the seas,
Till of the warres in France an end were made:
But sage *Sobrino*, that espiide with ease,
How deepe he seemd in shallow streames to wade,
Respecting priuat more then publike cause,
Did answer thus after a little pause.

That is, how
strongly he is
forced wade
reasons.

My

50

My Liege, when first to peace I counfeld you,
I would I had not bin so true a Prophet,
Or if my sayings needs must proue so true,
I would you had beleeu'd them for your profit;
Not *Rodomont*, with that rash youthfull crue
Of *Alcyrd*, *Marbalust*, that then did scoffe it,
Whom now I wish here present, face to face,
But chiefly *Rodomont* I wish in place.

51

He that then vnderooke to make all France,
But like the dust that flies before the wind,
He that did vow, in heau'n or hell, your lance
To follow, nay to leaue it farre behind,
Now when he should the matter most aduance,
Vnprofitably lurkes in corners blind,
And I that then (because I told you true)
Was call'd a coward, still abide with you.

52

And still I will abide, what ere ensuth,
During this life, which though made weak with age,
I will not feare, against the strongest youth
That liues in France, in your defence to gage;
Nor yet can any charge me with vntruth,
Not from the proudest Prince to poorest page,
And well I wot, I haue done more then some,
That promist much ere they were hither come.

53

Thus much I say, thereby more plaine to proue,
That what I then did say, or now impart,
Came from true seruice, and of loyall loue,
And not of faint, much lesse of hollow hart:
Now I aduise you hence with speed remoue,
And that you homeward in all hast depart,
For well you wot, that wisdom it is none,
In winning other mens, to leese ones owne.

54

Yet know not I why we should call it winning,
If of our losses iust account we yeeld,
Thirtie two kings we were at the beginning,
A third part now scarce taries in the field;
And we our selues here vp in corners pinning,
Scant safe within these rampiers can vs shield,
We so decay, except in time we cease,
At last we shall be driu'n to sue for peace.

55

Orlando is not there, tis true, what tho?
Had he bin there, we had all didd ere this,
His want doth but prolong our ouerthrow,
By other men, our state in danger is:
They haue *Renaldo* there, that plaine doth show
His force and courage not much lesse then his,
There are his cousins, all the *Palladins*,
Eternall terror to our *Sarazins*.

56

They further haue a man in strength and hart,
(I needs must praise my foe against my will)
A second *Mars*, I meane king *Brandimart*,
Whose great puissance ioynd to actiue skill,
My selfe in single fight haue found in part,
And further prooffe haue seene by others ill:
Besides, *Orlando* wanted long ago,
Since which we more haue lost then won you know.

57

Now if we sped no better in time past,
We shall speed worse hereafter I do dread,
We see *Gradasso* ouer sea is past,
And that the valiant *Mandricard* is dead;
Marfisa hath forsaken vs at last,
And *Rodomont*, of whom it may be sed,
Were but his faith with force to be compared,
The rest might in a manner haue bin spared.

58

Now when as so great helpes and succors faile vs,
So many thoulands of our souldiers slaine,
And all supplies that should at all auaille vs,
Alreadie come from *Affrike* and from *Spaine*;
They haue of late got foure new knights to quaille vs,
Compar'd with any of the *Chriiten* traine,
Foure knights, that if you search from hence to *Inde*,
Foure knights to match these foure you shal not find

59

I know not if you euer heard before,
Of *Oliueros* sons, and *Sanfonet*,
With *Guidon* sauage, whom I value more
Then all their other succors that they get,
From *Almanie* the higher or the lower,
Although such aids at nought we cannot set,
And we do plainly see before our eyes,
That eu'ry day they may haue fresh supplies.

60

We may assure our selues if any more
We take the field, our side goes to the pot,
For if when we were two for one before,
Yet we must needs confesse we gained not,
Now they so much increased haue their store,
With forraine powre, both *English*, *Dutch* and *Scot*,
What can we hope but after all our toyle,
To haue bad recompence of shame and foyle.

61

Yet all is well, if you will part betime,
And hie you home before it proue too late;
But if you tarry any longer time,
You here will leele your men, at home your state:
Now if to leaue *Marfilio* seeme a crime,
For feare the world condemne you for vngrate,
To saue him harmlesse you for peace must sue,
Which they will so accept, if so will you.

62

But if you thinke such motion may not stand,
With honour of your state and high degree,
And hope by fight to make a surer hand,
Which yet how it succeeded hath you see;
Yet seeke at least to haue the vpper hand
By this deuice, and herein follow me:
Put all the quarrels triall, if you can,
To one, and let *Rogero* be the man.

63

I know, and you do know, and so we all
Do know, that our *Rogero* hath such might,
No *Christen* can so sturdie be or tall,
As hand to hand to conquer him in fight:
But if you meane to make warre generall,
Though he in strength far passe each other knight,
Yet in the fight he but for one can stand,
And what is one against a mightie band?

E c ij

64

I thinke it best, if so you thinke it good,
To offer this to *Charles*, that if he will,
If with his worthie courage so it stood,
For sauing those, whom you on both sides kill,
And shunning of the shedding guiltlesse blood,
Which both of you, on each side dayly spill,
Each side to chuse one champion at whose parrell,
To make a full conclusion of the quarrell.

65

Prouided first, that which so ere of these
Shall dye, his Prince shall pay the tother tribute:
I know this motion will not *Charles* displease,
For all his Lords, will there vnto contribute;
And this would worke our safetie, and our ease,
For to *Rogero*, so much I attribute,
That such his vallew is, this cause so iust
Were *Mars Antagonist*, yet yeeld he iust.

*Antagonist is
deriued from a
Greeke word sig-
nifying the ad-
uersarie that
fights hand to
hand.*

66

These words *Sobrino* spake with such effect,
As *Agramant* thereto gaue his consent,
And then Interpreters he did direct,
Who straight to *Charles* with such a challenge went:
Charles meanes not such occasion to neglect,
He thinks the combat wonne incontinent,
He had such store of champions, nere the latter,
Vnto *Renaldo* he commits the matter.

67

Glad were both armies of this new accord,
Henceforth to liue in quiet they intend,
And either part doth praise his soueraigne Lord,
That of these broyles would make so speedie end.
Each one in mind these foolish bralls abhorde,
That made them thus in warres their dayes to spend,
Each man could say, and no man then denyd it,
That warre is sweet to those that haue not tryd it.

*Sentence.
Dulce bellum
inexpertis.*

68

Renaldo, he in mind doth much reioyse,
To thinke his Prince had done him such a grace,
To make of him aboute so many choyle,
For triall of so great importing case:
And though *Rogero* were by common voyce,
The chiefe man deemd of all the Turkish race,
And hand to hand had killed *Mandricard*,
Renaldo this, but little did regard.

69

But good *Rogero* he was nothing glad,
Though of so many gallant men and stout,
His king to his great praitie, him chosen had,
Aboute all other knights, and pickt him out;
His heart was heauie, and his looke was sad,
Not that in mind he ought did dread or doubt,
Renaldos forces, or *Orlandos* either,
No scarce and if they had beene both together.

70

But this procur'd his griefe, because he knew,
Renaldo brother was vnto his deare,
Who did her plaints with letters oft renew,
And charged him so deepe, as toucht him neare:
Now if he should to old wrongs, adde this new,
To kill *Renaldo*, then the case is cleare,
She should haue so great reason to reprove him,
He doubts she neuer will hereafter loue him.

71

Now if *Rogero* do in silent fort,
Lament this combat tane against his will,
No doubt his spouse which heard this sad report,
Was worse appaid then he, at least as ill;
She beats her brest, and breakes her tresses short,
And many teares with sorrow she did spill,
And calls *Rogero* oftentimes vngrate,
And curseth euermore her cruell fate.

72

It needs must turne vnto her griefe and paine,
Who ere is ouercome, who euer win,
She dare not thinke *Rogero* can be slaine,
Her heart such anguish doth conceiue therein;
And if it pleased Christ so to ordaine,
For chastising his wretched peoples sin,
That man should dye, that of her houle was chiefe,
Besides his death, that brought a further griefe.

73

A griefe that was indeed beyond all measure,
To thinke she neuer might henceforth for shame,
Go to her spouse, without the flat displeasure,
Of all her kin and houle of whence she came:
And when she weigh'd the case at better leasure,
Each thing to her seemd worse and worse to frame,
For why she knew, her tongue that knot had tyde,
That while she liu'd, might neuer loose, nor slide.

74

But that deare friend of hers, that neuer faild,
To helpe at chiefeest needs, the noble maid,
I meane the sage *Melissa*, so preuaild,
That *Bradamantes* griefe was part alaid,
For when she knew the cause, and what she aild,
Against the time, she promised her aid;
And vndertooke, that of that bloody quarrell,
To her nor hers, there should arise no parrell.

75

This while the gallant knights against the fight,
Themselues, and eke their weapons do prouide,
The choise whereof did appertaine in right,
Vnto the champion of the Christen side,
Who, as a man that tooke but small delight,
(Since he had lost his famous horse) to ride,
Did chuse to fight on foot, and in this sort,
All arm'd, with axes long, and daggers short.

76

Or were it chance, or were it in regard,
That *Malagize* aduised him thereto,
Because he knew the force of *Balyard*,
Or powre all charms of armour to vndoe,
(Of whose sharpe edge you haue ere this time hard)
But this they did appoinr betweene then two,
About the place likewise they do agree,
A plaine neare *Arle* walls, the same to be.

77

Now when *Aurora* left the lothed bed,
O: *Tytan* (vnto whom she hath no list)
To th'end that no disorder may be bred,
On either side the marshalls part he list,
At end whereof, were rich pauillions spred,
Where nothing that belongs to state was mist,
And distant from each tent a little space,
On either side, they did an altar place.

*Looke in the
Table.*

Not

Not long time after this, in battell ray,
The Turkish armie with their king came out,
Glistering in gold, and stately rich aray,
In show, with all Barbarian pompe set out,
A swift Arabian horse, of colour bay
He rode, and by his side *Rogero* stout,
Rode cheeke by cheeke, and to his greater fame,
On him to wait, *Marfilio* thought no shame.

His helmet (for the which the Tartar dyde,
Slaine by *Rogero* as I did rehearse)
(Which since a thousand yeares, and more beside,
Was celebrated in more stately verse)
Marfilio carrid, by *Rogeros* side,
Well mounted on a Spanish genet scarce,
His arms, and all that did thereto belong,
Some other states, deuided them among.

On tother side came worthie *Charlemayne*,
From out his tents, strongly intrencht, anone,
And all his bands of men he did ordayne,
So as if to battell he should then haue gone:
About him was of Peers a noble trayne,
Renaldo in the mids, with armour on,
That onely helmet erst from *Mambryn* tane,
Was by *Vggero* borne, the noble Dane.

Two axes, both alike in each respect,
Salemon and Duke *Namus* beare before,
The Chieftaines on each side their men direct,
To keepe within their limits euermore;
And in the midst, was left a large prospect,
Betweene each company, and roome good store,
For present death it was, if any venter,
Saue those two champions, in the list to enter.

When second choise of weapon (as was fit)
Was giu'n *Rogero* to auoid suspect,
Two Priests before the rest came forth, to wit,
Of each side one, and one of either sect,
Each had a booke, ours had Christs holy writ,
Theirs Alcoran, with errours foule infect,
With ours came forth the Christen Prince deuout,
With that of theirs, the king of Turks came out.

Now first king *Charles* neare to his altar stands,
And this great protestation there did make,
And lifts to heauen both heart, and eyes and hands,
O God, O Christ, that suffredst for our sake,
O blessed Ladie, that in swathing bands,
Heldst him that mortall flesh of thee did take,
And didst nine months inclose that high diuinitie,
In sacred wombe, still keeping true virginie.

Be witnesses, that here I make it knowne,
And promise faithfully for me and mine,
To *Agramant*, and who so ere shall owne
The crowne of Affrike in ensuing time,
That if my champion shall be ouerthrowne,
To pay to them, each yeare of gold most fine,
Ten horsfode, and forthwith the warres to cease,
And euermore hereafter to haue peace.

And if I sayle, then let the fearfull wrath
Of both, on me at once this folly wreake,
And worke vnto my sect all wo and scath,
That all ensuing ages plaine may speake,
Loe what a plague, and iust reward he hath,
That darst his oth to you, and promise breake:
This said, his hand he laid vpon the booke,
And vp on heauen he fixt his stedfast looke.

When this was done, then all departed thence,
There where the Turks had with much superstition
Adorn'd their altar with no small expence;
And their king *Agramant*, with like condition,
Vowd neuer after this, to do offence
To *Charles*, but passe the seas with expedition,
And ay keepe peace, and equall tribute pay,
If that *Rogero* vanquish't were that day.

And in like sort he did protest alowd,
And cald on Mahomet, his Idol great,
And by that booke, that his Priest held, he vowd
To keepe most duly all he did repeat:
This done, to part from thence were all allowd,
And either Prince retired to his seat;
Then in like sort they sweare the champions both
And thus much in effect containd their oth.

Rogero promiseth, that if the fight,
By *Agramant* shall be disturb'd or parted,
That neuer after he will be his knight,
But serue king *Charles*, and be to him true harted,
Renaldo in like sort his faith doth plight,
That if to him, *Charles* any aid imparted,
Before that one of them were ouercome,
That then himselfe to *Agramant* would come.

Now when these ceremonies all were ended,
Then eu'ie man departed to his side,
And then the warriours onely now attended,
The trumpets sound, that battell signified;
Which when both heard, then each of the intended,
To show the vtmost of his vallew tride:
Now sounds the Steele with blows, not few nor soft,
Now they themselues, strike low and now aloft.

Sometime they would beguile the tone the tother,
With mind vnto their strength, to ad their art,
They profer at one place, and strike another,
Inuading still the least defended part:
But good *Rogero*, that against the brother,
Of her did fight, that did possesse his hart,
Did oft bestow his blows, with such regard,
Most thought *Renaldo* was for him too hard.

He seemed readier to ward then strike,
For he himselfe well knew not what he ment,
To kill *Renaldo*, that he did not like,
To dy himselfe that was not his intent:
But now I hope that none will it mislike,
Sith in this booke so much time hath bene spent,
And least my tediousnesse may some molett,
In this ensuing booke to heare the rest.

Morall.

In the beginning of this booke is set downe how great a regard a man ought to haue of true honor indeed, namely to do nothing wherein it may be iustly touched: not as our young gallants in these dayes, that stand vpon their puntos in trifling matters, hauing neither honor in their hearts, nor truth in their mouths. No doubt but to a noble nature and disposition, honor is the tenderest thing that may be: And therefore it may well of them be said:

Ma al honor chi manca in vn momento,
Non puo in cento anni satisfar, ne in cento.

But if that honor haue one minutes staine,
An hundred yeares scant can it cleanse againe.

But as in Religion, the true vsage thereof is most necessary to the good of the soule, but heresies and superstition be most damnable; so in this desire of worldly reputation, the good and considerat regard thereof, is the most worthy and Gentlemanly thing that can be: but the vaine and friuolous maintenance thereof is as ridiculous and to be scorned. For example, imagine some man so chaste, (as Cæsar was called) omnium mulierum vir, or to vse our homely English phrase (as the towne Bull of the Parish) so true of his word, as he that Heywood writes of that kept all the commandements, and namely that concerning false witnesse,

With witnesse false thou hurteft none, for why, Each word thou spakeft, each man doth know a ly.

So temperat in eating and drinking that he surfets but once a weeke, vidz. from Saterdag to Saterdag; and endewed with other magnificall qualities, as swearing and gaming, and now and then (of the gentlenes of his nature) not scorning a Pandars occupation. Can you maruell (I say) if such a man stand somewhat nycely vpon his honor, if he be touched therein? but the true honorable person indeed, will neither giue iust cause of offence, nor beare any wrong or disgrace; and whosoever failes either in the first of these, for want of stayd gouernment, or faints in the later of these, for want of true courage, let him know his honor goeth lame on one legge, onely the first of these two mayms may be cured, but the tother is called a priuie maim, and is vtterly incurable.

Concerning the Orations of Agramant, Marfilio, and Sobrino, a man might make a long, & not vnecessary discourse of the matter, but that I haue taken vpon me to note, and not to discourse: First therefore in Agramant we may obserue how young courageous Princes (such as he is described to haue bin) are egged on by their grand minions (to whom peace is a penance) to warre vpon other mens countryes, and many times leaue their owne vnguarded: In which kind, fooles sometimes giue wiser counsell then they. As in the time of that good king of France Francis the first, they report that when he inuaded Italy, he consulted with his counsell, where he were best to enter Lombardy: some aduising one way, some another, a foole standing by, and hearing their consultation, came in amongst them and sware that they were all fooles: for (saith he) here is euerie man that aduise the king how to enter into Italy, but none of you takes care how he shall get out againe: this though accounted (as it was) but a fooles bolt for the time, yet proued too true afterward: for in that iourney the king was taken, and was sent prisoner to a Castle in Spaine called Madrillo.

In Marfilio and Sobrino, we may see the qualities of a good counsellor to a Prince, and a bad, one hauing only a regard to his owne priuat, the tother plaine and faithfull, and carefull for his Princes best safetie. In that Sobrino the good and faithfull counsellor, aduise to make an end of the war one way or other, either by taking or paying tribute, one may obserue that indeed it is no policie for Princes, but the vtter ruine & beggering of their Realmes, to prolong their wars, & to trifle away money & time in such serious causes, & be as vncertain in the end as in the beginning. The saying of a noble & wise counsellor (another Sobrino) in England, is worthy to be remembred, that with a pretty tale he told, vtterly condemned such lingring proceedings. The tale was this, a poore widow (saith he) in the country, doubting her prouiso of wood would not last all the winter, & yet desiring to rost a ioint of meat, & a hen one day to welcome her friends, laid on two sticks on the fire, but when that would not scarce heat it, she fetched two more, & so stil burning them out by two and two (wheras one fagot laid on at the first would haue rosted it) she spent foure or fife fagots more then she needed; & yet when all was done, her meat was scorched of one side, and raw of the tother side: her friends ill content with their fare, and she enforced ere winter went about, to borrow wood of her poore neighbours, because so many of her owne fagots were spent.

Historie.

Cresus was the king of Lydia, who thought himselfe happie for his riches: but Solon was of another opinion, and therefore thought a frole by him, till in the end Cresus being bound at a stake, to be burned by his victorious enemy, he cryed out on the name of Solon, and through that thicke and darke smoke, he could see that wisdome, which before his eyes dazzled with foolish worldly felicitie could not see.

Craffus called also the rich Craffus, a Citizen of Rome, his saying was, that no man was rich that could not with his bare reuennue maintaine a Royall army: which if it be a true saying, I doubt whether any Prince Christened at this day be rich. Craffus in reproch of his couetousnesse, had molten gold poured into his mouth by the Parthians, who tooke him prisoner and slew him. Cambises sonne of Cyrus king of Persia hauing conquered Egypt, inuaded the Ammonians with a great armie, but for want of victuals was forced to giue over his enterprife. Further he sent an armie before him of fiftie thousand men, with commandement to destroy the Temple of Iupiter Amon, and they entering the deserts of that country were neuer secne againe, so as it was thought that while they sate at dinner in the field, a furious Sotherne wind raysed such store of dust and sand, as ouerwhelmed them and quite couered them.

Allegoric.

In the miracles done by Aholio, is ment Allegorically, that a man guided by vertue, and assisted by grace, makes all kinde of creatures to serue his turne.

Allusion.

His turning of stones to horses, alludes to the like thing in Ouids Metamorphosis, where Prometheus and Epime-theus made men of stones. Inque breui spacio superiorum numine saxa,
lacta viri manibus faciem traxere virorum,
Et de foemineo reparata est foemina iactu.

In his taking the Southerne winde in a bagge, it alludes to a like thing in Homers Odisses of Vlisses, that had the winde bound in a bagge, and some say the Sorcerers neare the North sea, vse to sell the winde to saylers in glasses, and it is so common among them, that they will laugh as much at those that beleue it not, as we would be to heare one tell it.

The end of the annotations vpon the 38. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*King Agramant breakes oth, and is constrained,
Vnto his native soile by sea to flye,
Where then Astolfo many townes had gained,
And at Biserta siege as then did lye:
Orlando thither commeth, madly brained,
But th' English Duke did cure him by and by:
Braue Dudon, with his nauie made of leaues,
Meets Agramant, and hotly him receaues.*



¹ Hat tongue can tell, or
learned pen expresse?
The woes, to which *Rogero*
now did runne?
In mind, and body, driu'n
to such distresse,
That of two deaths, the
tome he cannot shun:
If he be slaine, and if he
kill no lesse,

Both wayes he sees he shall be quite vndonne:
By shame in death, and if he win and liue,
By that offence he shall his true loue giue.

Renaldo.

² The tother knight whom no such thoughts encombred
Lets frankly fly his blows without regard,
In so great store as was not to be numbred,
No time, no place, nor no aduantage spard:
Rogero seemd to him, as if he slumbred,
Small list he had to strike, but all to ward,
And if he did, in such a place he strake,
His blow great sound, but little signe did make.

³ The Pagan Lords now doubt it will go wrong,
They see the combat to vnequall grow,
Renaldo seemd too lustie and too strong,
Rogero seemd too lasie and too slow.
But *Agramant* that sate the rest among,
Doth fret, and fume, and chafe, and sweat, and blow,
Doth blame *Sobrino* chiefly, whose perswasion,
Was of this combat chiefe and sole occasion.

Melissa.

⁴ This while *Melissa* sage, whose skill was great
In Magicke art, repaired to the place,

And with some secret words she did repeat,
She changd her voice, her stature, and her face,
In mind hereby to worke a wondrous feat;
She seemd all armed, in a Dragons case,
In sword, in shield, in shew, in eu'rie thing,
She seemd *Rodomont* the Sarzan king.

⁵ To wofull *Agramant* she straight doth ride,
(In likensse of an horse, she rode a sprite)
And comming to his presence, lowd she cride,
(My Liege) this was too fowle an ouersight,
To match a bearded boy so meanly tride,
With such a famous and renowned knight,
And chiefe in matter that imports so much,
As doth the whole estate of Affricke tuch.

⁶ Wherefore that you in time this losse may saue,
Permit the combat to proceed no more,
Let *Rodomont* the blame and blemish haue,
Of breaking that, which you so rashly swore:
Now each man shew how well his sword can shaue,
Now I am here, each man is worth a score.
These words in *Agramant* had so much force,
That without more aduice, he straight tooke horse.

⁷ And thinking sure fierce *Rodomont* was theare,
Forthwith the Christens host he doth inuade,
Of oth nor promise he hath now no feare,
This one mans presence him so bold had made:
Each man doth in a moment couch his speare,
Or charge his pike, or draw his glittering blade:
Melissa hauing set them thus together,
With this illusion vanisht (God knows whither.)

The

8
The two stout champions when they plainly saw,
Their combat, that all quarrell should descide,
Disturbd against all promise, and all law,
They cease all force, and lay all wrath aside,
And by consent, themselves they do withdraw,
Vntill it might more plainly be descride,
In whether Prince of faith were found such want:
In aged *Charles*, or youthfull *Agramant*.

9
And each of them of new doth vow and sweare,
That vnto him that first did cou'nant breake,
They will for euer endlesse hatred beare,
And ioyne together such offence to wreake:
The while the hosts of neither side forbear
To make quicke triall who be strong or weake,
For lightly at the first conflict they shoe,
Their hearts if they be resolute or no.

10
Euen as a grewd which hunters hold in slip,
Doth strue to breake the string, or slide the coller,
(That sees the fearfull Deare, before him skip,
Purswd belike with some *Aethons* scholler)
And when he sees he can by no meanes slip,
Doth howle, and whine, and bites the string for choler
In such like case within the tents did stay,
Marfisa with dame *Bradamant* that day.

11
All that same day vnto that present howre,
They had beheld with great despite and paine,
Such tempting baits yet had they not the powre,
To set their foote in that forbidden plaine:
But now they do the field on each side scowre,
Though erst for duties sake they did abtaine,
Now finding such a true and iust excuse,
That *Agramant* had lewdly broke the truse.

12
Marfisa ran the first quite through the brest,
And made the speare come forth a yard behind;
Then with her sword she flies among the rest,
There chiefe where most resistance she doth finde:
And *Bradamant* puts *Goldelance* in rest,
With like effects, but of another kind,
For all she toucht therewith she ouerthrew,
And yet not one among them all she slew.

13
Thus these two warriours euer as they went,
Subdewd their enemies, and kept them vnder,
Who euer met them surely should be shent,
And each of them at tothers force did wonder:
But being both to sharpe reuengement bent,
At last they part themselves, and went asunder,
Each by her selfe, such high exploits performing,
As gaue the Turks long after cause of mourning.

14
As when the Southerne winds do melt the snow,
Congeald on tops of mountaines many dayes,
It often happens that two streames do flow,
And taking in their courte, two sundrie wayes,
At last so violent and furious grow,
That bearing downe, and breaking vsuall bayes,
They wast the fields, and seeme on vye to runne,
By which of them most damage may be donne.

15
Eu'n so these twaine, incens'd with rage and wrath,
And each in seu'rall acts their forces trying,
Do worke the Turks, no little woe and cath,
And leaue them ouerthrowne, or maymd, or dying:
Scarce *Agramant* the powre by this time hath,
(Say what he list) to keepe his men from flying,
Himselfe not shrinking though, nor once returing,
But euermore for *Redomont* enquiring.

16
By onely his aduise and exhortation,
(For so the vnaduis'd Prince doth thinke)
He broken had his tolemne protestation,
He maruels now, to find him so to shrink:
Likewise *Sobrino* with great lamentation,
(Religion in his mind so deepe did sinke)
Returd to Arly, euermore protesting)
His faultlesse mind, that periurie detesting.

17
Marfilio eke vnto his countrie fled,
The shamefull promise breach, of *Agramant*
Strake in his mind such superstitious dred,
He leaueth him to beare the brunt, who scant
Against the Christen souldiers could make hed:
Thar no supplies of forren powres did want,
With *Palladines* among them fierce and bold,
Mixt like rich gemmes in faire embroderd gold.

18
But now a while I linquish this conflict,
And passe beyond the seas without a barke,
For to this tale I am not tyde so strict,
But that I will repeat (if you will harke)
Astolfos acts, who forward dayly prickt,
With new made horsemen, as (if you did marke)
I told you erst, and did all Affrike wast,
Vntill three kings resisted him at last.

19
The king of Algazer, and stout *Bransard*,
Did leuy powres, such as in hast they could,
And put them all in armes without regard,
That some to young were found and some to old;
Yea from the musters, women scant were spar'd,
For *Agramant* (as hath before bene told)
With hope of vaine reuenge, without aduise,
Of able men, vnpeopled Affrike twite.

20
Thus few were there, and of those few were theare,
(So quite his countrie weale he did neglect)
The greater part vnskilfull, armes to beare,
As was more plainly proued in effect,
For at first brunt they fled from thence for feare,
In hope *Biserta* walls should them protect:
Braue *Bucifer* was taken in the fight,
Bransardo scapt, and laud himselfe by flight.

21
For *Bucifer* alone, he tooke more grieve,
Then all the rest (he did him so esteeme)
Because *Biserta* asked great reliefe,
For which this *Bucifer* most fit did seeme,
Who was in all those parts of credit chiefe:
Wherefore *Bransardo* faine would him redeeme,
He many wayes doth cast, but none conclude on,
Till at the last he did remember *Dudon*.

Simile.

*He turns to Agramant in the
booke the 64. st.*

22
This *Dudon* was by blood and birth a Dane,
But yet esteemd the Palladins among,
He lately at the Bridge was prisoner tane,
Where *Rodomont* the sturdie Turke and strong,
Brought many worthy men vnto their bane:
To Affrike *Dudon* then he sent ere long,
Now *Bransard* thinkes (nor was his thought amisse)
Stout *Bucifer* by change to get for this.

23
He perfect notice had, by true espiall,
The Nubians leader was an English Lord.
" Who loue a Dane (there can be no deniall)
" And once were Danes, as writers do record:
Wherefore he sends a messenger for triall
Vnto *Astolfo*, who doth soone accord,
To free his kinsman, whom he lou'd so dearly,
And ioyned was in blood to him so nearly.

24
Thus *Dudon* by the English Duke was freed,
Who afterward his seruice did employ,
Now (as *Saint Iohn* had wild him to proceed)
He sought to worke the Turks some more annoy:
And that he might set *Prouence* free with speed,
Which *Aggramant* and his did then enioy,
He maketh of his men a new election,
Whom he may send to free them from subiection.

25
And hauing chosen forth some men of these,
As best from his huge armie might be mist,
Whose number was so great, as he at ease
With halfe of them three Affricks might resist:
He cauld them to be trained for the seas,
And praying God his purpose to assist,
That night was shewd *Astolfo* in a vision,
How he of ships might make a large prouision.

26
Next day the weather being faire and calme,
Astolfo walketh to the salt sea shore,
And holding in his hands in either palme,
Great store of leaues that he had tane before,
Of Bayes, of Cedar trees, of Oke, of Palme,
Into the sea he flang them in great store;
O metamorphosis beyond all credit,
O admirable powre diuine that bried it!

27
No sooner had the water wet the leaues,
But presently they chang'd their former hue,
The veines that were in them, each man perceaued
To grow to ribs and posts in order due,
And still at each end sharpe each leafe reccaues,
Eu'n of a sailing ship proportion true:
And of the ships as many sorts there weare,
As there were trees that those same leaues did beare.

28
A miracle it was to see them growne
To ships and barks, with gallies hulks and crayes,
Each vessell hauing tackling of their owne,
With sailes and oares to helpe at all assayes.
The Duke prouided, when it once was knowne,
Both marriners and masters in few dayes,
For with his present pay he soone allured
From Sard and Corsie men to seas inured.

Those two Islands
haue store of
good sailers.

29
Those that tooke shipping then, were counted more
Then six and twentie thousand strong of hand,
Great Admirall was *Dudon*, who before
Had learn'd the seruice both of sea and land:
Now while they lay at anker nigh the shore,
To wait when wind would for their purpose stand,
It fortun'd a man of warre came by them,
Full lode with prisoners, and cast anker nie them.

30
These were those prisoners whom fierce *Rodomont*
(As oft I haue declar'd) did dayly get,
When at the bridge he did them to dismount,
And sometime backward in the riuer set:
Here were (among some more of good account)
Braue *Brandimart* and worthy *Sanfonet*,
With *Oliuer*, and some I now not tutch,
Both French, Italian, Gascoigne knights and Dutch.

31
The master of the barke had first assign'd,
His prisoners at Algier to vnload,
But being driu'n by ouerblowing wind,
Farre past the place, he thought to make abode
Neare great *Biserta*, where he thinks to find
None but his countymen within the rode;
To which he thinks himselfe as welcome guest,
As *Progne* is vnto her chirping nest.

Simile.

32
But after, when th' Imperiall bird he saw,
Conioyned to the Pard and flowre of France,
He was abasht, and looked pale for aw,
Much like to him that waking new, doth chance
On poisond serpent tred, and laine would draw
Himselfe from thence, for feare of more mischance;
He quakes, and from the serpent doth retire,
Whose poison swels, and eyes do flame like fire.

Simile.
Virgil. Imperator
sum aspro velox
qui sensibus an-
guem,
Pressis humi
misens, &c.

33
But now the wretched Pilot could not flie,
And lesse could keepe the prisoners he had caught,
For both himselfe, and all they by and by,
Vnto the place against his will were brought,
Whereas the Duke and *Dudon* then did lie,
Who welcomd well the Christens as they ought,
And he that brought them thither, for his paines,
Was made a gally slaue, and bound in chaines.

34
Thus were the knights most friendly entertained,
And greatly welcomed by *Otons sonne*,
Who horse and furniture for them ordained,
And cauld to them great honor to be donne:
Eke *Dudon* with these knights some days remained,
And thinks the time so spent, not lost but wonne:
His journey purposely three dayes deferring,
To spend the same with these braue knights confer-
(ring.

35
By their relation he doth vnderstand,
In what estate King *Charles* and th' empire stood,
What are the hau'ns, where he may safely land,
And where they thought y^e same would be withstood.
Thus while discreetly on each point they scand,
And each man told what he thought ill or good,
There suddenly rose in the campe alarme,
The cause vnkown, but ech man cride, arme, arme.
The

Quid de fass
Quoniam viri
huiusce generis

36
The Duke *Astolfo* with his noble crew,
That at that time conferring were together,
Straight armd themselves, and out their swords they
And went enquiring hither thill and thither, (drew
To learne of whence this sudden tumult grew,
But yet no cause they could suspect or gether,
At last they saw a madman stare and stampe,
That nak't alone did trouble all the campe.

37
Those that had scene him first belike did flout him,
But when some few vnto their cost had found,
That with a bat he so did play about him,
His blowes made many fall in deadly sound:
They now began so much to dread and doubt him,
That they had giu'n to him no little ground,
And none of them to meet him had the harts,
They onely shot at him, or cast some darts.

38
The noble Duke, and those with him did see,
The wondrous force and most stupendious wracke,
The madman wrought, and marueld much that he
Alone could driue to many souldiers backe:
When lo, a Ladie of no meane degree,
Rode towards them attyred all in blacke,
And vnto *Brandimart* she came in halt,
And clapt her arms about his necke full fast.

39
I know you know, without my further showing,
This was the spouse of noble *Brandimart*,
Who euer since his wofull ouerthrowing,
By *Rodomont*, did with a pensiue hart,
Seeke his release, till at the last she knowing,
(As I before did more at large impart)
How he beyond the seas was prisoner sent,
Her selfe at Arly to take shipping ment.

40
But while that louing purpose she pursueth,
Bardino met with her, an Easterne knight,
Who brought vp *Brandimart* in tender youth,
And kept him at a Castell (Siluan hight)
He hearing at her mouth at large the truth,
And how in Affrica they find him might,
They soone agreed, no long time ouerslipping,
To seeke him out and so forthwith tooke shipping.

41
No sooner they on Affrike shore did land,
(*Bardino* sage, and faithfull *Fiordeliege*)
But first the people let them vnderstand,
Astolfo great *Biserta* did besiege,
With many a Captaine braue, and gallant band;
Likewise a brute of *Brandimart* their liege
Was spred, that he was there arriued newly,
But none was able to confirme it truly.

42
Vntill so long they traueled on the coast,
At last she found and saw him with her eyes,
Among those Lords, amid the Nubian host,
With which such ioy did in her thoughts arise,
As vitall sprites did faile in her almost,
Nor any word to speake could she deuise,
But hangd about his necke a burden sweet,
And he as louingly his spouse did greet.

43
Full glad was he to see her, and as glad
To see his ancient tutor and his frend,
And further talke with them he would haue had,
But he was forst to make a speedie end,
By meanes the man that naked ran and mad,
Did keepe such rule as did them all offend.
Faire Fiordeliege that lookt with eye more curious,
Cride, ah my deare, this is *Orlando* furious.

44
Astolfo eke when as he did behold him,
And saw how madly he about did range,
And no man durst him meet, nor none could hold
He wonderd greatly at the sight so strange; (him,
And by the marks that erst *Saint Iohn* had told him,
He knew it was the man; but such a change
There was in all his shape, from top to toe,
He rather seemd a beast, more then a man in show.

45
Astolfo straight did call vnto the rest,
And said my Lords, this man that you had vewd,
Orlando is: at this themselves they blest,
And eu'rie one his wofull pickle rewd:
Well (said the Duke) to helpe our frend is best,
And not to wayle; and therefore to conclude,
Come ioyn your force to mine, and let vs take him
And I do hope ere long he sober make him.

46
To this they soone assent, and *Brandimart*,
With *Sanfonet* and *Oliuero* iolly,
And *Dudon* clod him round, on eu'rie part,
But he as full of strength, as foole of folly,
At *Dudon* strake, and saue the blow in part
Was broke by *Oliuer*, and fell not wholly
On *Dudon*, sure I thinke that staffe accurst,
His shield, his headpeece, head and all had burst.

47
His shield it brake, and thunderd on his scull,
That noble *Dudon* therewithall fell backe,
But *Sanfonet* strake with his sword so full,
That of the staffe three yards he made him lacke:
Now *Brandimart* thinks backward him to pull,
And leape behind, a pick pack, on his backe,
And holds his armes: the Duke doth then deuise,
To hold his leg, and *Oliuer* his thyces.

48
Orlando shakes himselfe, and with a spring,
Ten paces off, the English Duke he cast,
But *Brandimart* from him he could not fling,
That was behind him, and did hold him fast,
But yet with *Oliuer* he was to bring,
For with his fist he smot him as he past,
That downe he fell, and hardly scaped killing,
From mouth, nose, eyes, the blood apace diltilling.

49
Of headpeece strong he neuer had more need,
For sure he could not haue escaped death,
Except it had a good one bene indeed.
This while *Astolfo* now had taken breath,
And *Dudon* both who late for want of heed,
Were by *Orlando* tumbled on the heath,
With *Sanfonet*, that par'd his staffe so well,
All these at once vpon *Orlando* fell.

50

Good *Dudon* that endeavors him to cast,
With *Brandimart*, about his shoulders hangs;
Asolfo and the rest his arms hold fast,
He seeks to loose himselfe with sudden pangs;
Who so hath seene a Bull with mastiues chaff,
That in his eares haue fixt their cruell fangs,
How he doth runne, and rore, and with him beares
The eager doggs, that still hold fast his eares.

Smile.

51

Let him imagine that *Orlando* now,
In such sort drew the warriours on the plaine;
But *Oliuer*, that had the broken brow,
Again on foote recouerd vp againe,
Did cast within his mind a reason how,
To do with ease, that they did seeke with paine:
He doth bethinke a way, that will not misse
To do the feat: and his deuice was this.

52

Handker is a long
rope with which
they tow their
ship to land.

Full many a halser, and full manie a cord
With sliding knots all knit he doth prouide,
And to the leggs and armes of this mad Lord,
He made them on the sudden to be tyde;
And then their ends on each side by accord,
They all of them amongst themselues deuide.
Thus were those Princes faine to do vnto him,
As Smiths do to an oxe, when they do shoe him.

Smile.

53

Then fell they on him when he lay on ground,
And then they bind him sure, both hand and foote:
Orlando when he felt himselfe thus bound,
Doth striue in vaine, for striuing will not boote.
Asolfo that doth meane to make him sound,
And saw his skin looke blacke as any foote,
Requested them vnto the shore to beare him,
Which soone was done, for now they need not feare

(him.

54

Then seau'n times was he washed in the place,
And seau'n times dipped ouer eares and hed,
To get the scurfe from of his skin and face,
Which with his naked going had bene bred:
Then with some herbs, the Duke gat in this space,
He made them stop his mouth, for why he fed,
For certaine secret reasons that he knowes,
He must not fetch his breath but at his nose.

55

Then kneeling downe as if he askt some boone
Of God, or some great Saint, that pot he brought,
Which he had caride from beyond the Moone,
The Iarre, in which *Orlando*'s wit was caught,
And clost it to his nostrills, and eftsoone,
He drawing breath, this miracle was wrought,
The Iarre was void, and empty'd eu'rie whit,
And he restord vnto his perfect wit.

56

Smile.

As one that in some dreame or fearfull vision,
Hath dreamt of monstrous beasts, and vgly fends
Is troubled when he wakes with superstition,
And feareth what such vgly sight intends,
And lying wake, thinks of that apparition,
And long time after in that fancie spends:
So now *Orlando* lay, not little musing,
At this his present state, and vncouth vling.

57

He holds his peace, but lifting vp his eyes,
He sees his ancient friends king *Brandimart*,
And *Oliuer*, and him that made him wife,
All whom he knew, and loued from his hart;
He thinks, but cannot with himselfe deuise,
How he should come to play so mad a part,
He wonders he is nakt, and that he feeles,
Such store of cords about his hands and heeles.

58

At last he said, as erst *Sileno* said,
To those that tooke him napping in the caue,
Soluite me: with countenance so stayd,
And with a cheare so sober and so graue,
That they vnloosed him, as he them prayde,
And sufferd him his libertie to haue,
And clothed him, and comforted his sadnesse,
That he conceiued of his former madnesse.

Looke in the
store.

59

Thus being to his former wits restord,
He was likewise deliuerd cleane from loue;
The Ladie whom he erst so much adord,
And did esteeme all earthly ioyes aboue,
Now he despisde, yea rather quite abhord:
Now onely he applies his wits to proue,
That fame and former glorie to recouer,
Which he had lost, the while he was a louer.

60

This while *Bardino* told to *Brandimart*,
How that his father *Monodant* was dead,
And how his brother *Glyant* on the part
Of all that those East Iles inhabited,
Him sent of purpose these news to impart,
And pray him (as he ought) to be their head:
Sith all the world had not a Realme more wealthy,
Nor any Prince could wish a seate more healthy.

61

Wherefore (saith he) deare sir, it is most meet,
That you should now repaire to your owne home,
For home though homely twere, yet is it sweet,
And natue soile is best: you would not rome
About the world, did you once tast and see't,
Thus much he said, but *Brandimart* in whome,
True loue & great renown were bands more strong
Then priuat profit, answerd this er long.

Sentence.

62

My brothers message, and your frendly paine
I kindly take, but lo: my word is past,
With *Charles* and with *Orlando* to remaine,
And them to serue while these garboyles do last:
Now in my steed, I will my brother raigne,
Let him be my vice-roy, and I will haue,
When once these warres are at a finall end,
To come, and there my life with them to spend.

63

Thus these did part, and next ensuing day,
Went *Dudon* with his fleet to Prouence ward,
Orlando with the Britissh Prince doth stay;
And when the state of those same warres he hard,
Vnto *Biserta* straight a siege they lay,
But euermore *Orlando* had regard,
That (as *Asolfo* followd his aduise)
To giue him th'honor of each enterprise.

But

64

But how they did the great Biserta win,
When they assaulted it, and on which side,
How at the first assault, the men within
Did yeeld, and durst no longer triall byde,
I cannot farther now proceed herein,
But must deferre it to another tyde:
Now I do purpose vnto you to show,
How *Agramant* receiu'd an ouerthrow.

65

Who was welnye abandond of his men,
Eu'n in the verie furie of the fight,
For why *Marfilio* and *Sobriuo* then
Were gone, in minde to saue themselves by flight;
In walled townes they feard themselves to pen,
But went to sea with all the hast they might,
And many Princes of the Turkish trayne,
The same follow giu'n them by these twayne.

66

Yet *Agramant* did beare it out a space,
But when he saw there was no other shift,
Then from his enemies he turnd his face,
To get into the towne was all his drift:
Him *Bradaman* purlew'd a wondrous pace,
Still spurring Rabican, that ran full swift,
She wisht vpon his corps to venge the wrong,
In keeping of her deare from her so long.

67

On tother side *Marfisa* rode as fast,
To venge though late, her fathers wofull end,
She makes her horse to feele she is in hast,
But each of them doth misse that they intend:
He got within the gates and made them fast,
And then to sea he doth himselfe commend,
He sees he was not able to withstand,
The forces of his enemies by land.

68.

As two coragious Pards, that held in chafe
An Hart, or bearded Goat vpon a plaine,
That scaped then by swiftnesse of his pace,
With no small wrath, and chafe turne backe againe,
As though they thought they had a great disgrace,
In that they follow'd had the prey in vaine,
So did the damfels chafe, and sigh, and fret,
That they to *Agramant* no neare could get.

69

But though he scapt their hands, yet sure the rest
Escaped not, full dearely then abuying,
Some wounded in the side, in backe, and brest,
Some slaine out right, some worse the dead a dying,
How sorily (poore soules) had they bene drett,
Whose safetie was not wrought, no not by flying,
For *Agramant*, himselfe more sure to saue,
To shut the Citie gates commandment gaue.

70

He made the bridges eake to be cut downe,
On Rodon streame, that was both large and deepe,
Ah wofull subiects vnto tyrants crowne,
Who that they may their persons safely keepe,
Regard not if their people swim or drowne,
But deeme of them like beasts, or silly sheepe,
That so themselves they pamper may and cherish,
They care not if their men in millions perish.

71

Twas infinite the number that was slaine,
In this same last conflict, nor fewer drownd,
While they attempted desprailly in vaine,
To passe the streame, so brode and so profound;
Of which great slaughter yet the signes remaine,
For dayly neare to Arlie walls are found,
Huge heaps of dead mens bones, and of their skulls,
Whose flesh was then deuour'd, by crows and gulls.

72

Now *Agramant* made speedie preparation,
And cauld his ships forth in the deepe to lanch,
Prouiding all that longs to nauigation,
In mind for ay to bid farewell to France:
Two dayes the winde stopt his determination,
The third it seru'd, and then he did aduance
His sayles, and eu'rie one did ship his ore,
And so away they parted from the shore.

73

Marfilio doubting least his Realme of Spaine,
Should now be driu'n to pay this costly shot,
And fearing to be forced to sustaine,
That storme alone, which fell in France so hot;
Doth land at Valence, where he did ordaine
All furniture, that might for warre be got,
Repairing all his townes against that warre,
That after him, and all his frends did marre.

74

But *Agramant*, his ships to Affrike bent,
Ill armd, halfe void of men, but full of griefe,
For most of them were sad and malcontent,
Three parts of foure, were lost past all reliefe:
And though for feare perhaps, of being shent,
None dare in publike speake to his repriefe,
Yet secretly, their burning hate to coole,
Some cald him proud, some cruell, some a foole.

75

But (as I say) they speake this in their sleeues,
For feare of blame, except some two or three,
That each to other open dare their greeues,
Yet wretched *Agramant*, he doth not see,
How he is scorn'd; but he still beleuees,
That he is lou'd, and why, because that he,
Saw neuer lookes but fawningly disguised,
Heard neuer words, but fainingly deuised.

76

Now he was fully purpos'd in his landing,
To leaue Biserta and seeke harbour nyer,
Beacause he late had perfect vnderstanding,
The Nubians spoyld those parts with sword and fier
Wherefore for doubt of dangerous withstanding,
He meant to shun that port, and land farre hyer,
And thence withall vnto his parts addicted,
To bring reliefe vnto the towne afflicted.

77

But loe his cruell fate, doth ouerthrow
His counsell sage, and quite his hope deceaues,
For, while scant winde did make him sayle but slow,
Stout *Dudon* with that nauie made of leaues,
Met him full butt, that no such thing did know,
And with a fierce assault him there receaues,
Enforcing him to vnexpected fight,
In that darke, cloudie, and tempestuous night.

Looke in the
Adorall.

78

For *Agramant* no spyall had till now,
Of these same ships, and would haue deemd a fable,
If one had told him of a little bow,
To make a hundred ships, a man was able:
Wherefore he sayled on he car'd not how,
And doubts no foe but waue, and wind vnstable,
And not expecting such strange sodaine stops,
He neuer let his watchmen in his tops.

79

On tother side, our men that had espyde,
Their enemies, at sea an houre ere night,
Came with great speed, although all vnderfide,
For eu'rie ship kept close their fire and light:
At last when as they saw their time, they tryde
Their vtmost force, and with full sayles they light
On their toes shipping, that at first did shrinke,
And many did vnto the bottome sinke.

80

Now *Dudons* men began to play their parts,
Some vsing fire, some heauie stones, some Steele,
Vpon the Turks fell such a storme of darts,
As they before, the like did neuer feele:
On our side God, with courage fill'd their harts,
On their side, each mans hart was in his beele,
They stood amazzd with feare, and quite astonish'd,
The time now come their old sins should be puni-
(shed.

81

*Description of a
bloudie sea fight.*

Thus *Agramant* is closd on eu'rie side,
With many a pike, and sword, and hooke, and axe,
The stones that fell from high, made breaches wide,
And much sea enterd at the new made cracks,

Morall.

In *Rogeros* irresolute fighting, may be noted how necessary it is for a man before he go to fight, to put on a good and firme resolution, and chiefly of the goodnes of his cause. In *Agramants* breach of the oth and promise, we may see how odious a thing it is before God and man to be *Fœdfragi*, *Truce-breakers*; which maketh them indeed, to be forsaken of their frends, prosecuted with great malice of their enemies, lothed, detested, and scorned of their owne subiects, and in the end breeds their vtter confusion. In that *Agramants* souldiers do mutine against him and reuile him secretly, and he notwithstanding thinkes himselfe to be well beloued of them, and well thought of, we may see in what a lamentable case those Princes are, that (as is said of them)

Neuer see lookes, but fawningly disguised,
Neuer heare words, but fayningly deuised.

Historie.

Of the *Historie* of this booke, first for *Sileno* that was *Virgils* Schoolemaster, it is written of him, he was one day laid to sleep, after he had bene made drunke with wine, and his schollers merily bound him, wherupon he waking said that verse,
Soluite me pueri, satis est potuisse videri.

Concerning this great battell at *Arlic*, certaine it is (as diuers *Historiographers* haue noted it) that there remaine to this houre, great heapes of bones, betokening some great slaughter of men in that place: but when it should be done, I cannot precisely affirme.

Allegoric.

In that *Melissa* by the helpe of the deuill, taking vpon her a false image of *Rodomont*, moued *Agramant* to breake truce, the *Allegorie* thereof is, that they be diuels or diuellish persons, that will moue Princes to breake their word and their promise.

Of *Orlandos* restoring to his wit, which indeed is the chiefe *Allegorie* of all the booke, and where-upon the booke taketh this name, *Orlando Furioso*, this in briebe is the meaning thereof.

Orlando a man of noble birth, Erle of *Anglant*, nephew to *Charles the great*, falls so farre in loue with *Angelica*, by which (as I haue often noted) is meant pleasure, or honor; that he leaseth his wits and becomes mad: by which may be meant any folly that young men fall into with lone, with prodigalitie, with ambition or vaine studies; (which are at large recited in the 34. booke.) *Astolfo* with the receipt he had of *S. Iohn*, makes him wise againe, that is, by the grace of God and by the Gospell, which teacheth vs how to despise all these worldly things, and either quite leaue them or turne them to our good and benefite.

Allusion.

The sea fight which is in the later end of this booke described, is like that which *Lucan* sets forth in the ciuil wars between *Cæsar* and *Pompey*: or rather indeed, to that he speaks of in the next booke of *Cardinal Hippolito* against the *Venetians*.

Here end the annotations vpon the 39. booke.

But most the fire, which they could least abide,
That takes in pitched boords, and wreathed flax,
To kindle verie quicke, but slow to quench,
Annoyd them sore with heat, & smoke, & stench.

82

Some ouer boord do fall in water cold,
And there are drown'd: some take the to their swim-
But on another bark while they take hold, (ming,
They now full fraught, and fearing ouertrimming,
With cruell sword (a foule sight to behold)
Cut of their bands, w which they now were climbing,
The bleeding stumps all mangled there remained,
And with fresh blood, the water salt was stained.

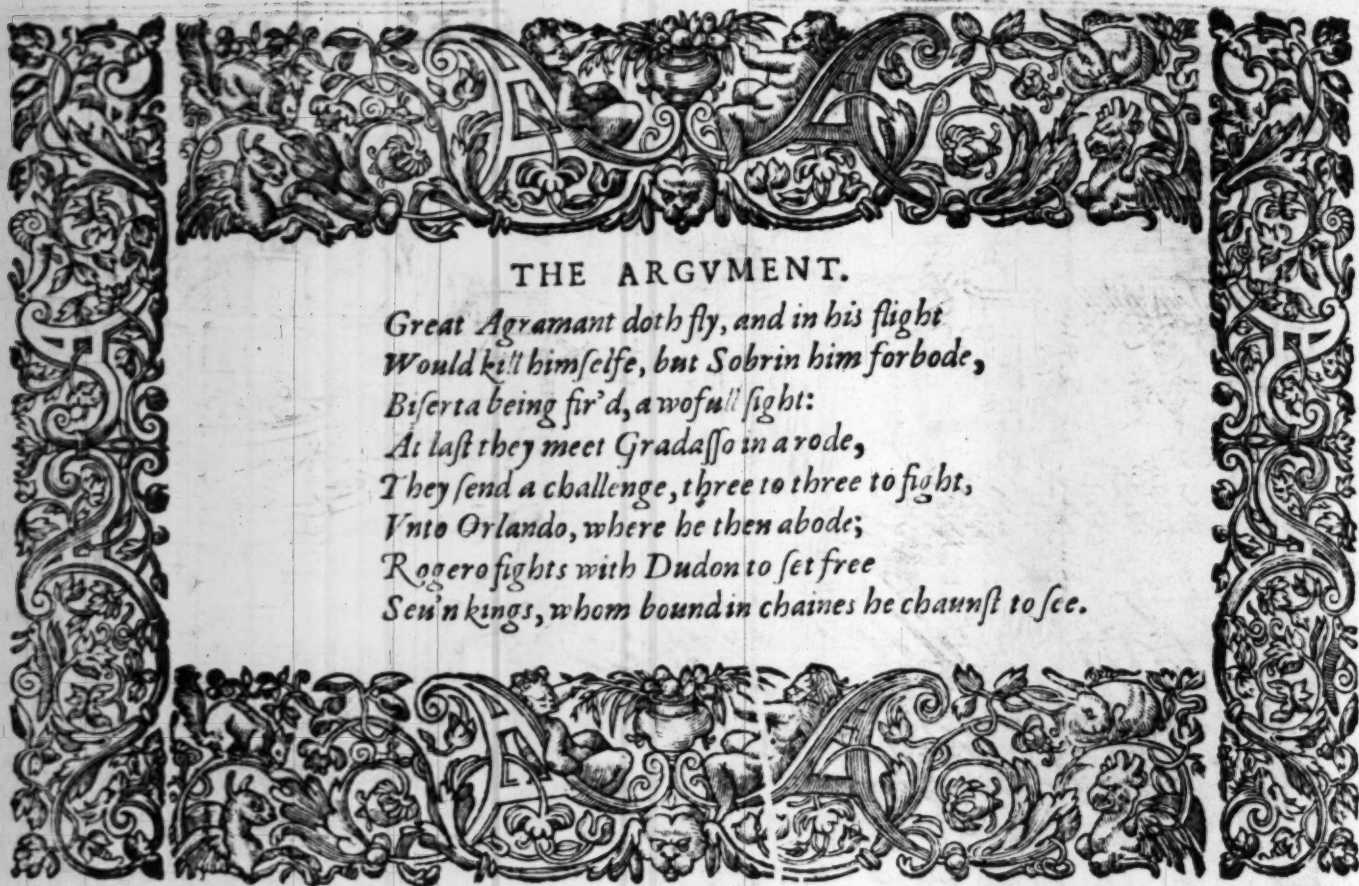
83

Some few to saue their liues that had desier,
Or at the least, to leese them with least paine,
Do leape in water to escape the fier,
Till with new feare of drowning, they againe,
Vnto the flaming shipwracks do retier,
And there, with much a do are glad and faine,
To catch some burning boord: and being loth
To dye of either death, they dye of both.

84

Some one for feare of sword, or axe, or pike,
Doth all in vaine, vnto the sea betake him,
For why some stone, or arrow, or such like,
Ere he be farre from thence, doth ouertake him:
But least the reader haply may mislike,
My too long tale, this motion I would make him,
That to another season he deferre,
To heare the sequell of this bloudy warre.





THE ARGUMENT.

Great Agramant doth fly, and in his flight
 Would kill himselfe, but Sobrin him forbode,
 Biserta being fir'd, a wofull fight:
 At last they meet Gradasso in a rode,
 They send a challenge, three to three to fight,
 Vnto Orlando, where he then abode;
 Rogero fights with Dudon to set free
 Sen' kings, whom bound in chaines he chaunst to see.

Looke in the Hi-
 story of the fini-
 litudes.



Were long (my Lord) to
 tell of all that fought,
 In that sea fight, and certes
 all the while,
 That I should tell it you, I
 should be thought,
 To beare pots (as they say)
 to Samos Ile,
 Where earthen vessels in
 great store are wrought.

Or Owles to Athens, Crocodils to Nyle:
 For more then can of this by me be told,
 Your selfe haue caused many to behold.

Your faithfull people had a long prospect,
 When all a day vpon the streame of Poe,
 Your men, as your great vallew did direct,
 The shipping of your foes assaulted so,
 That with their blood the streame they did infect,
 And brought vpon them all, a world of woe;
 Then both your selfe, and others plaine did see,
 How sundry deaths, in fights of sea there be.

Aristo was sent
 post to Rome to
 pacifie Pope In-
 lio the second,
 which he tou-
 cheth in one of
 his Satyres.
 The Lyons teeth
 and pawes mea-
 ning the Veneci-
 ans, called the
 Lyons of the sea.

It was not then indeed, my hap to see't,
 (Sent then to Rome six dayes before in post,
 To craue then, at the holy fathers feet,
 Reliefe and aid against so great an host)
 And in that time your grace with them did meet,
 In such a sort, so sorely to their cost,
 And so you par'd the Lyons teeth and pawes,
 That since that time to feare we had no cause.

But Alfonso, and Moore that saw the same,
 Affranio, Anniball, and Zerbinet,

Albert, and Bayn, and three that beare my name,
 Declar'd to me the conquest you did get:
 Alto their banners, monuments of fame,
 Which offerd in the Churches you did set,
 With fiftene Gallies tane a thousand botes,
 Of that rich conquest, giue vs open notes.

He that had seene the fire and wondrous wreake,
 That at that time was wrought vpon your foes,
 When for your few, their many were too weake,
 He might describe the deaths and diuers woes,
 Of Agramant's host, of which I speake,
 And of their great and grievous ouerthrowes,
 Then when amidst the furling waues and salt,
 Stout Dudon in the night did them assault.

When first the fight began, the night was darke,
 But when the flame vpon the pitch tooke hold,
 The fire gaue light, and did so clearly sparke,
 That Agramant might plainly now behold
 His enemies, and their great number marke,
 Incredible, if any had it told:
 Wherefore in season to preuent the worst,
 He changd the course he had intended first.

And chusing out a vessell swift of sayle,
 And placing there his things of greatest price,
 With Brigliadore (with all hope now doth sayle)
 To steale from thence he closlie doth deuise:
 And while that Dudon doth his men assaile,
 In all the hast he can, away he flies,
 His men the sword, the sea, the fire destroyes,
 And he is fled that caused their annoyas.

And

8
And in that Barke, with him *Sobrino* fled,
Who much complaind and was not little greued,
That that which he before so truly sed,
Yet then by *Agramant* was not beleueed:
But tell we now how good *Astolfo* sped,
And what exploits *Orlando* had atcheued,
Who counsell'd so to raze *Biserta* towne,
That it might neuer noy th'Imperiall crowne.

9
And so it was in publicke sort proclaymd,
That the third day th'assault they should expect,
Astolfo had some ships before ordaynd,
(For *Dudon* had not all) for this effect,
And these same ships with *Sanfonet* remaynd,
A man that could by sea and land direct,
Who rode at anker neare *Biserta* shore,
But distant from the hau'n a myle and more.

10
The Brittish Duke, and valiant *Palladine*,
That like good Christens vied euermore,
To pray to God for grace and aide deuine,
Proclaymed in the campe, three dayes before,
That to assault the towne they did assigne,
By fast and publicke prayre, Christ to adore,
And craue his aid against that wicked towne,
That they might raze it quite and beat it downe.

11
And hauing ended that their solemne fast,
And made their vowes, accustomed in such case,
Then frendly they together take repast,
And each his frend, and parent doth embrace,
And spake as if those words should be their last,
The kindly teares, oft trickling downe their face,
And eu'rie one resolued by and by,
Either to win the towne, or in the place to dy.

12
Also the wretched Priests within the towne,
With fayned show of foolish superstition,
Pray vnto *Macon*, that he do not frowne
On them: and vow to him on that condition,
Great Holocausts, with cost of many a crowne,
Of him they seeke to haue their sinnes remission,
And as if he the fates could mend or alter,
They offer sacrifices on his alter.

13
Then when they were by their great Cady blest,
They went (but faintly) to their Citie wall,
Yet did the fayre *Aurora* take her rest,
And scarce the Esterne coast yet looked pale,
When *Sanfonet*, *Astolfo*, and the rest,
That had the needfull things provided all,
The noble enterprife did take in hand,
And did assault the towne by sea and land.

14
Biserta hath this manner situation,
Two parts thereof with water are enclosed,
Two parts with goodly wall of ancient fashion,
But not so strong, as one would haue supposed:
And though to make new strength and reparation;
The king *Bransardo* all the towne disposed,
His time and warning were so short and small,
He could do little good, or none at all.

15
Astolfo did appoint the Nubian king
Such wise to noy the keepers of the wall,
With darts, and Turkish bowes, and many a sling,
That from the battlements he draue them all,
That now he might both horse and footmen bring,
Vpon the ditch in perill none or small;
And each according to his powre and skill,
Brought matter wherewithall the ditch to fill.

16
Some fagots brought, & some brought store of helme
Some heauy stones, & some light planks and boords
And lest the stream their worke might ouerwhelme,
They turned it away by other foords;
Great store of wood there grew in that same Realme
The which to them great store of stufte affoords,
And now that Prouerbe see performd you might,
That many hands make heauie works but light.

*Helme is the best
of the straw
with which they
shatch houses.*

Prouerbe.

17
The Nubians fierce impatient of all stay,
And by desire of gaine all headlong led,
The perill great and danger do not way,
But each man clapps his target on his head:
And then their battie to the walls they lay,
With rammes, and engines strongly furnished,
With which to shake the walls they do begin,
Nor were they all vnfurnished within.

18
Darts, stones, and planks, yea eu'n their houses tyle,
They flang down on the, whē they drew more neare
By which they brake and pierced otherwhile,
Their engines huge, so as it might appeare,
Dame Fortune seemd at first on Turks to smile,
But after soone againe she changd her cheare,
No sooner night was gone, and Sun once vp,
But that they tasted of another cup.

19
Then on each side they had so hot a charge,
As hardly they were able to sustaine:
Sanfonet of the shipping had the charge,
And he by sea assaults them to their paine;
And, for their powre was great, and place was large,
Each Captaine tooke with him a feuerall traine,
Thereby the more to trouble all their foes,
And of their vertue, to make larger shoes.

20
And for that speciall cause, they do deuide,
Their mightie host into foure feuerall parts,
To th'end that by that meanes it might be spide,
Which men had stout, and which had fainting harts,
Great towres on mightie wheelles did seeme to ride,
Drawne with great force like ordinary carts,
And Elephants did carrie towres so tall,
As did in height surpasse the Citie wall.

21
A scaling ladder *Brandimart* doth beare,
And clymes himselte and causeth others clyme:
For what man hauing such a guide, could feare?
Each man to stay doth thinke it haynous crime:
The ladders strength was weighd by no man there,
Each rounge a man, and some beares two sometime:
Now *Brandimart* to conquest wholly bent,
Gets to the top, and winnes a battlement.

22

With hand and foote he clammerd in such sort,
He wan a batlement and did it keepe;
Then with his sword he made them all such sport,
As could the lookers on, not laugh, but weepe:
The ladder now chargd with too great resort,
Standing aslope, and not vpright and steepe,
Brake in the midst, so that saue *Brandimart*,
All of them fell, vnto their paine and smart.

23

Looke in the
Allusion.

Their Captaine though, with this no whit dismayd,
Keepes still his place though he the hap did marke,
Although he saw his men him could not ayd,
Though he alone were all their shooting marke;
His men below cryde out to him, and prayd
Him to retire, but he no whit could harke,
But boldly from the wall into the towne,
Which was thrise ten foote deepe, he leaped downe.

24

As if the pau'ment had bene straw, not stone,
So leapt he downe, so nimble and so light,
And being there, layd so about alone,
He made them all giue place vnto his might:
Of those that fought he killed many a one,
The rest thought best to saue themselves by flight,
But they that saw him leape downe from without,
Within their minds were full of dread and doubt.

25

Straightwayes about the campe a rumor spred,
From mouth to mouth, & man to man doth come,
And fame doth fly, and flying gathers hed,
Of that hard feat, that *Brandimart* had done;
And comes at last whereas *Orlando* led
His band, and after to king *Otons* sonne,
And then to *Oliuero*, neuer ceasing,
But in her going still her tale increasing.

26

All these, but chiefe *Orlando* all among,
That *Brandimart* in minde did dearely loue,
And hearing it from thence they tarried long,
It would be hard his danger to remoue;
Vnto the walls set scaling ladders strong,
Resolued now their vtmost force to proue;
And vp they mount, with looks so grim and bold,
As scant their enemies durst them behold.

27

Simile.

As when the seas are wrought with sturdie wind,
The ventrous vessell tolt with many a waue,
Is sometime smote before, sometime behind,
And each surge striues a passage free to haue;
The fearfull Pilot with astonisht mind,
Knowes not which way himselfe he should behaue,
Till at the last one surge the whole possesseth,
And so both Pilot, ship, and all oppresseth.

28

So when those three, of whom before I spake,
Had got the wall, they did the souldiers teach,
To follow them, and so large path did make,
As thousands of them now the wall did reach:
This while the monstrous rammes the walls did
In other places, and made such a breach, (shake
That now in many parts without resistance,
They might to *Brandimart* bring good assistance.

29

Looke how that streame surnam'd of streams the king, *Simile.*
With damage great about his bankes doth grow, *Poe called the*
When some strong wind, or tyde of highest spring, *king of rivers*
Makes him beyond accustomed bounds to flow,
And thereby hurt vnto the fields doth bring,
And drowneth flockes, and houses ouerthrow,
Then trees do harbour fish, as new come guests,
Where flying birds were wont to build their nests.

30

So now *Biserta* walls were farre too weake,
To saue the Citie from both sword and fire;
The valiant Captaines first the Ice do breake,
To follow whom, the souldiers do aspire;
And what with will their ancient wrongs to wreake
And what with hope of booties, and desire,
They ruind soone that Citie, that had bene
Of *Affrica*, the sole triumphant Queene.

31

Now multitudes lay slaine in eu'ry street,
And with the blood that of their wounds did ruone,
The channels flowd vermillion vnder feet;
But when the fire to take had once begunne,
No doubt it was a wofull sight to see,
What spoile vpon the towne by fire was done:
Such cries, such plaints were ouer all the Citie,
As might haue moued any hearts to pitie.

32

Their helpees Gods now vnder foot were troden,
Their sacred iewels taken all for pray,
The conquerers come forth of houses, loden,
With gold, with plate, with faire and rich aray;
And though the souldiers flatly were forbidden
Foule beaftly lust, this was to them no stay,
Young children and old matrones could not scape,
Deflouring forced, nor vngodly rape.

33

Stout *Oliuero* with a sound blow slew,
King *Bucifer*, and brought him to his end,
Branfardo kild himselfe, when as he knew,
The Citie could not now it selfe defend;
Astolfo did in single fight subdew
Fuluo, and tooke him prisoner in the end:
These three were those, whom (as before you hard)
King *Agramant* those cuntryes left to guard.

34

But *Agramant*, who as before I told, *Agramant*
Stole from his men, and so away did sayle,
When as he did these flames from farre behold,
Much did the state of that same towne bewaile;
But when a messenger did plaine vnfold,
How farre his foes in *Affricke* did preuayle,
He would haue slaine himselfe, of woes to rid him,
Sauc that the sage *Sobrino* did forbid him.

35

Ah sir said he (in frendly sort him chiding) (thought,
Driue from your worthie minde such wretched *Sobrino's*
What could be to your foes more welcome tiding, *to Agramant's*
Then that your selfe, your owne destruction sought; *perfuade him*
They doubt, while you in safetie are abiding, *not to kill him*
But hard to keepe, that they haue easlie caught; *selfe.*
Not one of them but dreads, and greatly feares,
That *Affricke* while you liue, cannot be theirs,
Your

36

Your death would all your friends of hope depriue,
 (The onely helpe that in our case is left)
 All they haue got, while you remaine aliue,
 They can but count it robberie and theft:
 But if you dye, who shall against them striue?
 Both Affricke lost, and we of hope are reft:
 Wherefore though for your selfe you life abhord,
 Liue for our sake (at least) my soueraigne Lord.

37

The Souldan sure will helpe your cause t' aduance,
 To him you may for men and money send,
 Be sure he will be loth the king of France
 Should nest in Affricke, being not his friend:
 If *Norandino* knew of your milchance,
 He would both men, and horse, and monie send,
 The states of Media, Persia, and Armenie,
 With Arabia, will helpe you with their menie.

38

These words then spake the graue wise man and old,
 To moue his Prince a better minde to carrie,
 And bad him cheare himselfe, and still he told,
 What hopes there were (tho sure he thought contrary)
 He saw and knew their comfort was but cold,
 That long they vse to pray, and sue, and tarie,
 Who hauing lost their crownes, to sue are faine
 To other kings, to helpe them home againe.

39

Both *Hanniball* and *Iugurth* samples be,
 To Princes all, that trust in forren ayd,
 With *Lodwicke Sforce* whom this last age did see,
 Vnto a stronger *Lodwicke* foule betrayd:
 Wherefore vnto that sentence I agree,
 That Duke *Alfonso* of Ferrara said,
 A greater signe of folly is not showne,
 Then trusting others force, distrust ones owne.

40

Wherefore in that conflikt and bitter warre,
 In which he found Christs Vicar not his friend,
 And that the Venice state with him did iarre,
 And he that promised him to defend,
 From Italie was driu'n and absent farre,
 Yet neuer would *Alfonso* condescend,
 To put himselfe in other mens subiection,
 And leaue his state to forren powres protection.

41

But *Agramant* of comfort all bereft,
 Forsooke the shore, and lanced to the deepe,
 To thinke in what estate his Realme was left,
 Does make him bitterly to wayle and weepe,
 From right hand now they sayd vnto the left,
 And Eastward all the night their course did keepe,
 Vntill a storme that rose within a while,
 Did cause them harbour in a little Ile.

42

A little Ile voyde of inhabitants,
 But full of Hares, and Conies, and of Deare,
 With couerts great, of trees and slender plants,
 That had not bene cut downe in many a yeare:
 Else there was nothing to supply their wants,
 Onely some tokens plainly did appeare,
 That fishers vsed there their nets to drye,
 The while the fish in sea do quiet lye.

43

Here onely in the harbour they did find,
 A ship that had bene weatherbeaten sore,
Gradasso forced by contrary wind,
 Came in that ship from Arly late before,
 With princely gesture, and behaviour kind,
 Each king salutes the tother on the shore;
 For well they lou'd together, and were late,
 Fellows in arms neare Paris walles and gate.

Gradasso

44

The king of Sericane with no small grieve,
 Did heare the storie of their late distresse,
 And which did comfort *Agramanté* chiefe,
 His person offerd these harms to redresse,
 But that he shall in *Egypt* finde reliefe,
 He greatly doubts, and thinketh nothing lesse,
Pompeys example teacheth you (he said)
 That banisht men finde there but sorie aid.

*Pompey betrayed
in Egypt.*

45

But sith the case so stands, and that you say,
 English *Asolfo* with a Nubian host,
 And mad *Orlando*, who this other day
 As I did heare, for loue his wit had lost,
 Haue done such hurt, I haue bethought a way,
 That at this time I thinke will profite most:
 I will *Orlando* challenge hand to hand,
 Who (sure I am) in my hands cannot stand.

46

Were he once dead, the rest I count as straw,
 And for the Nubians, though I cannot dreame
 How they should come, yet know I how to draw
 Them backe again from yours, to their own Reame
 Those other Nubians, whom a diuers law
 Sunders from these, as well as *Nylus* streame,
 Shall with Arabian and Macrobian forces
 Assaile them, (these haue gold, & those good horses)

*The Arabian
horses of great
account.*

47

The king of Affricke praisd this offer kind,
 And called it a good and blessed storme,
 That could him such a friend as this to find,
 And thanks him for his offer: but the forme
 Of it (he said) doth no whit please my mind,
 No though thereby I might all harmes reformat,
 And that I might *Biserta* towne regaine,
 I would not do mine honor such a staine.

48

If any man must challenge him, then I
 It is, that am in honor tide vnto it,
 And whether I shall kill or else shall die,
 I am resolu'd, surely I will do it:
 Nay then sir (said *Gradasso*) I will trie
 Another way, if you assent but to it,
 We two will make one challenge thus: to fight
 Against *Orlando* and some other knight.

49

So I be one (then *Agramant* replide)
 I care not, though I second be or first,
 For in the world is not a man beside,
 To trust whose courage more then yours, I durst.
Sobrino that stood all the while aside,
 Into such speech, vpon the sudden burst,
 Hath age (quoth he) brought me in such contempt,
 To be excluded from so braue attempt

F f iij

Looke in the
Morall of this.

50
Disgrace me not so much, to leaue out me,
Age hath not tane away my vigor cleene,
Skill and experience good companions be,
Age knoweth whatsoeuer youth hath beene;
Wherefore let me be one, and you shall see,
That I am stronger, then perhaps you weene:
To this request of his they soone agree,
And so they send their challenge three to three.

51
They send a Herald, as it is the vse,
The challenge to *Orlando* stout to beare,
With number like to meet at *Lippaduse*,
And so by combat, end all matters theare:
The while each side should grant the other truse,
And all acts of hostilitie forbear;
This *Lippadusa* is a little Ile,
Distant from *Affricke* shore some twentie mile.

52
The Herald made good hast, and went apace,
And vnd all helpe of oares and sailes he could,
And coming to *Orlando* with good grace,
His message and the challenge plaine he told:
Amids *Biserta* in the market place,
He found him parting summes of coyne and gold,
(Of that same sacked towne the many spoiles)
Vnto his men for guerdon of their toiles.

53
Now when *Orlando* this braue challenge hard,
He did accept it, and did much reioyce.
And gaue vnto the Herald in reward,
Of many sumptuous gifts great store and choise;
He knew before the death of *Mandricard*,
And heard of *Duridan* by common voice,
How that *Gradaasso* had it, whom to find,
A voiage vnto th *Indies* he assignd.

54
But knowing that he need not go so farre,
And that his great good fortune so had wrought,
That he should send to offer single warre,
Whom he farre of had purposed to haue sought;
He now doth hope that long they should not barre
Him of his sword, that he so deare had bought,
Eke *Brigliadore* he hopes now to regaine,
That did in *Agramantés* hands remaine.

55
He chuseth for his friends to take his part,
In this so great and dangerous a fray,
His cousin, and that faithfull *Brandimart*,
Both whom he oft saw tride before that day;
Armours and horse, and swords on eu'ry part,
He seekes to get for them the best he may,
For none of them had armour of his owne,
As I before this time haue made it knowne.

56
Orlando when he first of all fell mad,
Lost both his sword and armour that same howre,
The tothers twaine, the *Sarzan* taken had,
And now they were late lockt vp in a towre:
In *Affrica* their armour was but bad,
The warres in *France* did dayly theirs deuowre:
They seldome had in those parts any store,
And *Agramant* what was, had had before.

Orlando cousin to
Orlando.

57
Such as he could, though it were old and rustie,
He caused to be scowrd and furbusht new,
And eu'rie day with his companions trustie,
He talked of the fight that should enleue.
One day, as in a morning fresh and lustie,
They walkt vpon the shore, they saw in view
A great ship vnder saile with treble top,
Saile to the shore, without all stay or stop.

58
No saylers, passengers, nor anie guide,
Within the ship to be discoverd were,
But as the tempest draue her and the tide,
She came, and safely so arriued there:
But here a while the emptie ship shall bide,
And these three knights, because the loue I beare
Vnto *Rogero* and *Renaldo* both,
To ouerpasse them longer makes me loth.

He comes to
againe in the
next booke, the
24. Page.

59
You heard how they themselues aside did draw,
And of their owne accords their combat cease,
When as they saw, against all right and law,
On either side the battell to increase:
They were so earnest, neither of them saw
Which side was first, that brake their vowed peace:
Wherefore they aske of those that neare them came,
Which king of this foule breach should haue the

Rogero.

60
Rogero had a valiant trustie man,
That serued him with faithfulnessse and care,
Who neuer since the combat first began,
Had lost the sight of him, and being ware
Of this new breach, with all the speed he can,
He did his masters sword and horse prepare,
And brought it him, and wished him to vse it,
But for that day *Rogero* did refuse it.

61
Howbeit from thence he did his course direct,
And promise with *Renaldo* doth renew,
That if his king were first did oath neglect,
And shewd himselfe in promise so vntrue,
That he would leaue him and his wicked sect;
This said, he bad *Renaldo* then adew,
Demanding all he met, who was in fault,
Of this vngodly and vniust assault.

62
Of all the world he heares it plainly spoken,
How that of youthfull *Agramantés* part,
The law of armes, and late sworne truce was broken
Which now was turnd vnto his losse and smart:
Yet thinks he, men would deeme it were a token
In him of faint or of vnfaithfull hart,
To leaue his Master in so great distresse,
Although his falshood had deseru'd no lesse.

63
The thought thereof draue him to no small muse,
If better twere for him to go or tarrie,
If he do go, he much shall her abuse
Whom he so oft had promised to marrie;
Againe he thinketh that he cannot chuse,
In his returne to *Affricke* but miscarrie,
He knowes how periurie offendeth God,
How ouer it ay hangs a heauie rod.

Saint

On

64

On tother side, he feares the great disgrace,
Men would inpute to him his Lord to leaue,
And thinke it comes of fearfull heart and base:
What if some men perhaps his scuse receaue,
When they do know, and vnderstand the case?
Yet most will say, he doth his Lord deceaue:
And that a man such promise may forsake,
As at the first, vnlawfull was to make.

65

All that same day, and all that night ensuing,
He did the matter with himselfe debate,
His loue, his Lord, on either side renewing
The doubtfull question, each in diuers rate:
But noble minde, the greater shame elchewing,
Chose lastly to releaue his masters state,
Much lou'd he *Bradament*, much thought he on her,
But more he lou'd his dutie and his honer.

66

Wherefore resolued to depart the Reame,
He sought at Arly, ships him to transport,
But neither at the sea, nor in the streame,
Could he there find a ship of any sort,
For *Agramant* in hast and feare extreame,
Had all from thence, or burnd them in the port,
Which when *Rogero* once did vnderstand,
He went vnto *Marfilia* ward by land.

67

In Arly, nor from Arly all the way,
He saw no liuing Turke, but manie a corse,
He mindeth at *Marfilia*, if he may,
To get a ship, by faire meanes or by force,
That into *Affrica* shall straight conuay
Him and *Frontino*, his well tried horse:
But while such thoughts he in his mind contriued,
Great *Dudon* with his nauie there arriued.

68

That *Dudon*, whom king *Agramant* on seas
Met to his cost, when erst his men were slaine:
He fled, his friends tane prisoners, and in theale
Seauen kings that erst in *Affrica* did raigae;
A man as then, might hardly cast a peale
Into that streame, or anie little graine,
The Nauie, and the prises, in such number,
Did so the riuer pester vp, and cumber.

69

But *Dudon* selfe was newly come on land,
And his chiefe prisoners he had set on shore,
And as in way of triumph made them stand,
The chiefe behind, the meaner set before,
With souldiers garded of his choifest band,
Who with their warlicke voices euermore,
Made that same towne, and all the places round,
Of *Dudons* praise, and *Dudons* name to sound.

70

Rogero when he saw these bands appeare,
First thought it was the fleet of *Agramant*,
But when as he approched now more neare,
He saw how much his guesse of truth did want;
He sees his captiues friends, with heauie cheare,
Bambyrage, *Aggricall*, and *Ferurant*,
Ealastro, *Rimedont*, and *Manilard*,
And *Nasamon*, that wayle their hap so hard.

71

Rogero could by no meanes it endure,
To see in miserie his noble frends,
He doubts his prayre no succour can procure,
And therefore he to trie his force intends:
His lance he presently doth put in vre,
With which not few vnto the ground he sends;
His sword he drawes, and therewith in short space,
He doth an hundred hurt, kill, maim, displace.

72

Now *Dudon* heares the noife, the harme doth see,
Done by *Rogero*, yet to him vnkowne,
He sees his men displac't and foyled bee,
And by one onely man their hurt is growne:
He takes his horle, and to that end that he
May venge these harms, or ioine thereto his owne,
He setteth in his rest, a mightie lance,
To proue himselfe a *Palladine* of France.

73

He bids his men in order to retire,
That of the field they two may haue good scope:
Rogero, that to rescue did desire
His frends, and now had put them in some hope:
And seeing vertuous *Dudon* did aspire,
In combat hand to hand with him to cope,
Did deeme he was the Captaine chiefe and guide,
And with great courage toward him did ride.

74

First *Dudon* came, but when he nearer came,
And saw *Rogero* had no speare in sight,
He cast away his owne, as counting shame
To vie aduantages in any fight.
Then saith *Rogero* to himselfe, this same
Is token of a most braue minded knight;
And sure, except mine aime be much amisse,
One of the *Palladines* of France he is.

75

Wherefore he minds, ere any more ensue,
Or any force of either part were donne,
To learne his name: and asking him, he knew
How that he was the Dane *Vggers* sonne;
Now (saith good *Dudon*) let me know of you
Your name, before our combat be begonne:
Rogero in like sort him satisfied,
And so they both each other then defied.

76

Now *Dudon* had that Axe or iron Mace,
Wherwith he wonne such fame in many fights,
As proued him to be of that same race
Of *Palladines*, so braue and worthe knights:
Rogero hath the sword that cuts apace,
And frustrateth all charms, where ere it lighs,
So that he had the vantage, had he vld it,
But for that time, it seemed he refusd it.

77

The cause was this, he was asfeard perchance,
It would offend his louing *Bradament*,
For being skilfull in the lines of France,
He knew that *Dudons* mother was her Ant:
So though this conquest might his name aduance,
He doubts her loue, it may not little daunt:
For *Turpin* thinks, this was the onely reason,
That *Dudon* scaped killing at that season.

Rogero neuer foyned, and seldome strake,
But flailing, and his sword was so good Steele,
The backe so thicke, as it no hurt did take,
Yet oft therewith he made good Dudon feele

Such thundring knocks, as could his head to ake,
And made him readie many times to reele,
But least much reading may annoy your eyes,
To lay this booke aside I you aduile.

Morall.

In Agramant that from being so victorious, fel into so great extremity, Princes may consider the great mutability of Fortune: or to speake more truly and Christianly, they may see how God can ouerthrow them, when in their own conceits they are at the very highest. In that their folly is dispraised that trust to others protection, and stand not vpon their own strength, the lamentable examples of many Princes that we haue heard of in this age, and some that we haue scene, may proue the truth of that principle; nor doth it only hold in Princes affairs, but euē in the case of meaner subiects, according as a good friend of mine, perhaps vpon some good, or (peraduenture) bad experience of his owne, wrate many yeares since:

If you be wise, this rule well minde,
Trust none for you to sue or pray,
Not friend most fast, nor kin most kinde,
In that your selfe can do or say.

Further wheras Sobrino notwithstanding his age, is chosen to be one of the three in the challenge, offering himselfe therto, we may note therby, that old men are not only to be honored for their wisdomes, but also imployed in seruice for their constant courage; if themselves be willing therto, and not to be contemned or scoffed (a vice that our time is too much giuen vnto) specially by young men that thinke they know all things, and indeed know lesse then nothing. It is a tale well knowne, and worthie to be well marked, how one day, the people of Athens being set in their theater to behold playes, two old men came in, & no man once offered to giue the place, til they came where the Lacedemonian Ambassadors sate: they straight rose, and in reuerence of their gray heads, not knowing the men, they gaue them place, which act when the people comended with great applause, the forenamed Ambassadors gaue them that pretie tuch, which hath euer since stucke by them; That the Athenians knew what was honest and commendable, but would giue others leaue to do it.

Historic.

In the first staffe of this booke, he vseth three similitudes to this effect, as we say in English, to sling water into the Teams

To beare pots (as is said) to Samos Ile,
(Where earthen vessels in great store are wrought)
Or Owles to Athens, Crocodyles to Nile.

Of Samos vessels I will recite onely that verse that was made of Agathocles:

Fama est, siculibus ornasse Agathoclea regem
Atque abacum Samio saepe onerasse luto,
Fercula gemmatis cum poneret horrida vasis,
Et mileret opes, pauperiemq; simul
Querenti causam, respondit rex ego qui sum
Sicaniz, figulo sum genitore natus,
Fortunam reuerenter habe, quicunque repente
Diues, ab exilioprogrederet loco.

Concerning the Owles of Athens, Tully vseth the phrase Hoc est Athenas noctuam mittam. But the saying rose not so much for the plentie of those birds, as because they had a coigne stamped with the same: as appeares in Plutarke in the life of Lyfander, where it was laid to the charge of a great officer named Gilippus, that he roofed too many Owles in the penthouse of his house, which was indeed, money that he had stolen in that kinde of coigne, and hidden there.

The Crocodiles of Nilus are famous, neither are any of those beasts in any other riuer, but one in Affrica called Senega that falls into the Atlantick Ocean: and because it hath Crocodiles, some hold it for an arme of Nilus, though, in my opinion with as little reason, as some say Lundy the Ile betweene Cornwall and Wales, to be part of Ireland, because it hath no snakes in it. Of the Crocodile I count this worth the noting, that being bred of an egge, he groweth to be twelue or foureene foot long, which no creature doth beside. Hanniball being overcome by Scipio, fled to Antiochus, and doubting of his fickle disposition went to Prusia king of Bithinia, who by his counsell and policie ouercame Eumenes in a sea fight, which benefite and seruice notwithstanding, the said Prusia would haue betrayed him to the Romanes, but Hanniball seeing no meanes of escape, tooke payson, which he carried about him of purpose in a ring, and so made away himselfe.

Iugurth likewise betaking himselfe to the protection of Boccus king of Mauritania his sonne in law, was by him taken and bound, and deliuered to Sylla, who caried him to Marius, in whose triumph he was after led at Rome, and forced (as some write) to leape off an high arch, or as other will haue it, starued after in prison.

Pompey being vanquished by Cæsar, fled to Egipt to Ptolomey, whose father had bene much beholding in times past to Pompey, but he for feare of Cæsar's displeasure made his head to be cut of.

Allegoric.

In Rogero that notwithstanding all his oths and promises to marrie Bradamant, and become a Christian, yet with a regard of worldly reputation is caried away, and taketh shipping into Affrica, may be allegorically vnderstood, how our sence and vnderstanding, not hauing the helpe of grace to confirme it, is caried away into the sea of errors, and tossed with waues of diuers passions, and in the end suffers shipwracke as here Rogero did, though after deliuered by prayer and faith, as is shewed in the next booke.

Allusion.

The great perill that Brandimart was in, leaping of the wall of Biserta into the towne, alludes to the like fact of Alexander, who was in the like perill at the Citie of Ossidracus in India; where also (as Iustun testifieth) he received a very dangerous wound.

The end of the annotations vpon the 40. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*His prisoners Dudon to Rogero giues,
Who in a tempest all were drowned quite,
Rogero onely escapes the storme, and liues,
And then is Christend, and beleeuies aright.
Neare Lippadusas steepe and craggie clyues,
Sixe valiant knights, a combat fierce do fight,
Where Sobrine hurt, the Marquesse lame on ground,
Good Brandimart receiues a deadly wound.*

Simile.



¹ That odor sweet wherewith
an amorous youth
Of either sexe, their gar-
ments do perfume,
Or head or beard, when
(full of louing ruth)
In flames of Cupids fire
they do consume:
We say that odor perfect
was in truth,

And of his goodnesse we do much presume,
If to a good while after it be felt,
And that the sweetnesse be long after smelt.

Simile.

*This Icarus was
not sonne of De-
dalus, but of
Bacchus.*

² That pleasant iuyce that Icarus vnwise,
Did cause his men (to his great harme) to tast,
And did the Gauls to Italie entise,
Wherethey committed so great spoile and wast,
Was doubtlesse perfect good, and of great price,
If so at twelunmonths end it pleasant last.
The tree that doth his leaues in winter nourish,
Without all question did in sommer flourish.

Simile.

*Horace saith,
Fortes creantur
fortibus, Est in
Iuuenis est me-
qua patris virtus
&c.
That vertue is
clemencie and
gratefullneſſe.*

³ The bountie that so many hundred yeare,
In your most Princely stocke did euer shine,
Is to the world an open prooffe and cleare,
That he, from whom was first deriu'd your line,
Was sure a great, and worthie minded Peare,
And had that noble vertue and deuine,
Which chiefly makes a man so rare and od,
As in that one, they most resemble God.

⁴

I shewd you in the booke that went before,
How good Rogero tooke great care and heed,

That as in other acts he shewd greates store
Of vertues rare, that other men exceed,
So in this fight he shewd as much or more,
Then he had done in any other deed:
With noble mind ambitious to all good,
For glory thirsting still, but not for blood.

⁵

Good Dudon found (for well discerne he might)
How that Rogero him to hurt forbare,
How though he had great vantage in the fight,
Yet that to vse the same he still did spare:
Wherefore though he were ouermatcht in might,
Yet therewithall he shewd this speciall care,
That though Rogero were in force superiour,
Himselfe in courtſie would not be inferiour.

⁶

Perdie sir let (saith he) our combat cease,
Your courtſie hath already conquerd me,
I cannot winne, and therefore seeke I peace;
And I (saith tother) will to peace agree:
I onely craue this grace, that you release,
Those seu'n, whom standing there in bonds I see,
Those were the kings, whom late near Affrike shore
Had taken bene a day or two before.

⁷

At his request thus Dudon gaue remission,
But ere they went, he made them first to sweare,
That neither they, nor none by their permission,
Gainst any Christen state, should armour beare;
He gaue them also leaue on like condition,
To take the choicest vessell that was theare,
Who no conuenient season ouerslipping,
For Affrica immediatly tooke shipping.

Thus

Thus had those kings their ransomes all remitted,
And with *Rogero* shipt themselves that day,
And then to faithlesse winds themselves committed,
They weigh their ankers, and their sayles display:
A frendly gale at first their iourney fitted,
And bare them from the shore full farre away:
But afterward within a litle season,
The wind discouerd his deceit and treason.

9

First from the poop, it changed to the side,
Then to the prore, at last it wherled round,
In one place long it neuer would abide,
Which doth the Pilots wit and skill confound:
The surging waues swell still in higher pride,
While *Protem* flocke did more and more abound,
And seeme to them as many deaths to threaten,
As that ships sides with diuers waues are beaten.

10

Now in their face the wind, straight in their backe,
And forward this, and backward that it blowes,
Then on the side it makes the ship to cracke,
Among the Mariners confusion growes;
The Master ruine doubts, and present wracke,
For none his will, nor none his meaning knowes,
To whistle, becken, crie, it nought auails,
Somtime to strike, somtime to turne their sailes.

11

But none there was could heare, nor see, nor marke,
Their eares so stoppt, so dazeld were their eyes,
With weather so tempestuous and so darke,
And black thick clouds, that with the storme did rise
From whence somtime great gastly flames did sparke,
And thunderclaps, that seemd to rend the skies:
Which made them in a manner deafe and blind,
That no man vnderstood the Masters mind.

12

Nor lesse, nor much lesse fearfull is the sound,
The cruell tempest in the tackle makes,
Yet each one for himselfe some busnesse found,
And to some speciall office him betakes:
One this vntide, another that hath bound,
He the Main bowling, now restraines, now flakes:
Some take an oare, some at the pompe take paine,
And powre the sea into the sea againe.

13

Behold a horrible and hideous blast,
That *Boreas* from his frozen lips doth send,
Doth backward force the sayle against the mast,
And makes the waues vnto the skies ascend:
Then brake their oares and rudder eke at last,
Now nothing left from tempest to defend,
So that the ship was swaid now quite aside,
And to the waues laid ope her naked side.

14

Then all aside the staggering ship did reele,
For one side quite beneath the water lay,
And on the tother side the verie keele,
Above the water plaine discern you may.
Then thought they al hope past, & down they kneele
And vnto God to take their soules they pray,
Worse danger grew then this, when this was past,
By meanes the ship gan after leake so fast.

15

The wind, the waues, to them no respit gaue,
But readie eu'ie houre to ouerthrow them,
Oft they wet hoist so high vpon the waue,
They thought the middle region was below them;
Oft times so low the same their vessell draue,
As though that *Caron* there his boat would shew the
Scant had they time and powre to fetch their breath,
All things did threaten them so present death.

*Vir. 1. Aeneid
Praesentemque
vixi interuent
omnia mortem.*

16

Thus all that night they could haue no release,
But when the morning somewhat nearer drew,
And that by course, the furious wind should cease,
(A strange mishap) the wind then fiercer grew,
And while their troubles more and more increase,
Behold a rocke stood plainly in their vew,
And right vpon the same the spitefull blast,
Bare them perforce, which made them all agast.

17

Yet did the master by all meanes assay,
To steare out roomer, or to keepe aloofe,
Or at the least to strike sailes if they may,
As in such danger was for their behoofe.
But now the wind did beare so great a sway,
His enterprises had but little proofe:
At last with strining yard and all was torne,
And part thereof into the sea was borne.

*They that haue
bene at the sea
do vnderstand
these phrases*

18

Then each man saw all hope of safetie past,
No meanes there was the vessell to direct,
No helpe there was, but all away are cast,
Wherefore their common safetie they neglect,
But out they get the ship-boat, and in hast,
Each man therein his life strives to protect,
Of King, nor Prince no man taketh heed or note,
But well was he could get him in the bote.

19

Among the rest, *Rogero* doth suppose
The safest way to be, to leaue the ship,
And being in his dublet and his hose,
He nimble downe into the boat did skip,
But after him so great a number goes,
Before they could the rope vntwind or slip,
The boat at length did sinke with ouerlading,
And to the bottome carry'd all her lading.

20

Twas lamentable then to heare the cries,
Of companies of eu'ie sort confus'd,
In vaine to heau'n they lift their hands and eyes,
And make late vowes, as in such case is vs'd,
For ouer them the wrathfull sea doth rise,
As though to giue them eare it had refused,
And made them hold their peace by hard constraint,
And stoppt the passage whence came out the plaint.

21

Some swamme a while, some to the bottome sanke,
Some fote vpon the waue, though being ded,
Rogero for the matter neuer shranke,
But still aboue the water keeps his hed,
And not farre off he sees that rockie banke,
From which in vaine he and his fellowes fled:
He thither labourerth to get with swimming,
In hope to get vpon the same by climbing.

Gg

22

With legges and armes he doth him so behaue,
That still he kept vpon the floods aloft,
He blowes out from his face the boistrous waue,
That readie was to ouerwhelme him oft.
This while the wind aloofe the vessell draue,
Which huld away with pafe but slow and soft,
Fró those, that while they thought their deth to shun
Now dide perhaps before their glasse was run.

23

O hopes of men vncertaine, vaine and fraile,
The ship that all forooke; as quite forlorne,
When all her wonted guides and helps did faile,
Her saylers drownd, and all her tackle torne,
A safe course held with broken mast and faile,
And by an Eddie from the rocke was borne,
And eu'n as if the storme had changd his mind,
It went with merrie gale afore the wind.

He turnes to Rogero againe in the 47. staffe of this booke.

24

And where with marriners it went awry,
Now wanting them, it went to Affricke right,
And came on land vnto Bisertany,
And gently on the sands it did alight,
What time Orlando then was walking by,
Conferring with his fellowes of their fight,
The which was vnderaken by them three,
Against three Princes of no meane degree.

Orlando.

25

And for they saw the ship was fast on ground,
They tooke a boate and went on her aboard,
With mind to question whither she was bound,
Or what good marchandise she can afford;
But vnder hatches lading none they found,
Saw good Rogeros armour, horse, and sword,
Which he behind him left, when in bad taking,
He tooke the boat, the ship it selfe forsaking.

26

Orlando vewd them well with good regard,
And hauing chiefly markt the noble blade,
He knew it was that famous Ballisard,
With which he did some yeares before inuade,
Fallarins garden, spite of all her guard,
Who by strong charms, the sword and garden made
It may be you er this haue heard the tale,
And how this sword from him Brunello stale.

All this hath reference to Brunellos booke.

27

And after to the good Rogero gaue it,
Who late had left it in this wofull wracke,
Glad was Orlando now againe to haue it,
That oft had triall both of edge and backe;
He deemd that God, did eu'n of purpose saue it,
Now to supply therewith his present lacke:
And after oft he said, and thought indeed,
That God did send it him at so great need.

28

At so great need, when as he was to fight,
Against Gradasso king of Sericane,
Who had, beside his great and passing might,
Renaldos horse, and fearfull Dudrindane.
Rogeros armour though it looked bright,
Yet was it not as thing so precious tane,
As being prisd more for the sumptuous shew,
Then for the goodnesse, which they did not know.

29

And sith himselfe for armour did not care,
And neuer did the dint of weapon feare,
He doth that armour to his cosin spare,
But not the sword, for that himselfe doth weare:
The horse, that was of shape and goodnesse rare,
Had Brandimart, and thus deuided were,
Among these three, in guerdon of their paines,
An equall share, and portion in the gaine.

30

Now each prepard against the day of fight,
Braue furniture, with cost of many a crowne:
Orlando on his quarter, bare in fight,
High Babels towre with lightning stricken downe:
His cosin had a Lyme hound argent bright,
His Lyme laid on his backe, he couching downe,
The word or Mot was this, vntill he commeth,
The rest was rich, and such as him becommeth.

Looke in the Allusion.

31

But Brandimart, who as I erst made mention,
Had heard his fathers death, went all in blacke:
Of braueries he now had no intention,
Lest men might thinke, he did discretion lacke,
He car'd for no deuice, nor new inuention,
Nor ware he sumptuous clothing on his backe,
He onely had one border richly set
With stones, but darkned ouer with a net.

32

A net that Fiordeliege his dearest Queene,
With her owne hands against that day did make,
But neit her then, nor all the time betweene,
That first she vnderooke it for his sake,
Till she had done it, was she euer seene
To laugh, or smile, or any ioy to take:
Her heart still heauie was, her looke still sad,
And yet herselfe did know no cause she had.

Fiordeliege.

33

But still in feare, and still in doubt she is,
Her spouse by death, shall now from her be sunder:
Oft times herselfe hath seene him be, ere this,
In greater fights, an hunderd and an hunderd,
Yet neuer did her heart so giue amisse,
Wherefore at her owne feare she greatly wonderd:
And eu'n that reason made her feare the more,
Because she was not vld to feare before.

34

Now when each thing in order fit was set,
The chápions three were shipped with their horses:
Vnto Astolfo and to Sansonet,
The charge was left of all those Christen forces,
But dolefull Fiordeliege, although as yet
To hide her sorow, she herselfe inforces,
Yet when the wind away the vessell beares,
She bursteth out to open cries and teares.

35

With Sansonet Astolfo tooke much paine,
To bring her to her chamber from the shore,
Who lying on her bed, she still doth plaine,
That she hath lost her spouse for euermore:
To seeke to comfort her it was in vaine,
For talking made her feare increase the more,
But now the worthie champions in this while,
Were safe arriu'd at Lippadula Ile.

No

36
No sooner set they foot vpon the land,
But (on the Easterne side) they pitch a tent,
Because perhap that part was nearest hand,
Or else vpon some politicke intent:
On tother side, with such an equall band,
Came *Agramant*: but sith this day was spent,
They all agreed all fight to be forborne,
Vntill the verie next ensuing morne.

37
A watch was charged then on either part,
That neither side the tother may deceaue,
But ere it yet was darke, king *Brandimart*,
(Though not without *Orlando*'s speciall leaue)
Doth meane a wondrous fauour to impart
To *Agramant*, if he the same receaue:
For why the tone the tother oft had scene
As frends, and had in France together beene.

38
Now after ioyning hands, and salutation,
The noble minded *Brandimart* begun
To vse vnto the Turke an exhortation,
That with *Orlando* he the combat shun:
Affirming vnto him with protestation,
Would he belecue but in the Virgins sonne,
That he both present peace would then assure him,
And all his Realmes in Affricke safe procure him.

39
Because you are, and haue bene deare to me,
Therefore (he saith) this counsell you I geue,
And sith I follow it my selfe you see,
Thereby you may be sure I it beleue;
Christ is my God, a God indeed is he;
An Idol *Mawmet* is, that doth not liue:
Wherefore deare Sir, I do desire to moue
From errors foule, your selfe and all I loue.

40
This is indeed the way of truth and life,
All other wayes but this, do leade astray:
Why should you liue in error and in strife.
When in true peace, and knowledge liue you may?
Tempestuous cares this world hath euer rife,
And if your present state you would but way,
You plainly may perceiue your venter such,
As you to win but little hazard much.

41
What if you could the sonne of *Milo* kill?
Or vs that come with him to win, or die?
Thinke you that then you shall haue all you will?
Thinke you your state you can restore thereby?
No sure, the state of *Charles* is not so ill,
But that he quickly can our lacke supply:
Wherefore deare Sir, vnto my counsell listen,
All would be well, if you would be a Christen.

42
Thus much said *Brandimart*, and more beside
He would haue said, to peace him to exhort,
Sae that with scornfull speech, and full of pride,
Fierce *Agramant* this wise, did cut him short;
A madnesse meere it is (thus he replide)
In you, or any man that in such sort,
Will counsell and aduise men what to do,
Not being cald of counsell thereunto.

43
And where you say, to this loue mou'd you chiefe,
That you haue borne, and still do beare to me,
Herein you pardon must my hard beliefe,
While in *Orlando*'s companie you be;
I rather thinke dispaire, and spite, and grieve,
Hath mou'd you hereunto, because you see,
Your soule is damned to eternall fire,
To draw vs thither with you you desire.

44
What victories, or else what ouerthrowes,
I shall hereafter haue, God onely knoweth,
Not you nor I, nor yet *Orlando* knowes,
God onely where he list, the same bestoweth:
But as for me, no feare nor foolish shewes,
Shall daunt my courage, how so ere it goeth,
Die first I will with torment and with paine,
Much rather then to yeeld, my stocke to staine.

45
Now when you list, depart from hence you may,
As little thank, as slenderly rewarded,
And if to morrow you the Champion play
No better, nor no more to be regarded,
Then you haue plaid the Orator to day,
Orlando sure will be but weakely guarded;
And these last words, in manner such he said,
As that thereby much choller he bewraid.

46
Thus parted they, and rested all that night,
But readie they were all by breake of day,
All armd, and readie for the future fight,
Small speech was vsd, no lingring, nor no stay,
They couch their spears, & run with all their might:
But while I tell you of this bloody fray,
I doubt I do vnto *Rogero* wrong,
To leaue him swimming in the sea so long.

47
The gallant youth had labourd many an howre,
To swim, and saue himselfe from being drownd,
The surging waue still threats him to deuowre,
But guiltie conscience more doth him contound;
He thinks that God will of his mightie powre,
Sith he foreslowed when he was on ground,
To be baptizd in waters fresh, and fitter,
To sowse him now in waues both salt and bitter.

48
He now remembers he had plighted troth,
To *Bradamant*, nor done as he had spoken,
How to *Renaldo* he had made an oth,
And that the same by him was fouly broken;
Most earnestly he now repents them both,
And calls to God for mercie, and in token
Of true contrition voweth out of hand,
To be baptizd, if ere he come to land.

49
And that he would renounce all Turkish lawes,
Nor gainst a Christen Prince once weapon carrie,
But serue king *Charles*, and aid the Churches cause,
And from the same hereafter not to varie,
And neuer seeke delay or farther pause,
His vertuous spouse Dame *Bradamant* to marrie.
(Twas strange) no sooner he this vow had ended,
But that his strength increast, & swimming mended.

50

And where before he greatly was affrayd,
That those same surging waters him would drowne,
He thinketh now they do his swimming ayd:
And sometime rising, sometime going downe,
He passeth on with courage vndismayd,
And scarce he seemed once to wet his crowne:
That so with cunning part, and part with strength,
He reached to the little Ile at length.

51

The rest of all his company was drownd,
Nor euer was a man of them scene more,
But by Gods onely grace, *Rogero* found
This little Ile, and clammerd vp the shore:
And finding it a small and barren ground,
A new feare rose, no lesse then that before,
Least in a place of needfull things too scant;
He should be staru'd with penurie and want.

52

But yet with constant mind and vnappald,
Resolu'd to suffer all that God would send,
Vpon the rocke with much ado he crald,
And gat vpon the leuell ground in th'end;
When lo an aged man, whose head was bald,
And beard below his girdle did descend,
That was an Hermit that did there inhabit,
Came forth to him in godly reu'rent habit.

53

And comming neare he cride, *o Saul, o Saul,*
Why persecutest thou my people so?
As erst our Sauour spake vnto Saint *Paul*,
Then, when he gaue to him that blessed blow.
Behold how God when pleaseth him can call,
From sea, from land, from places high and low,
When you did weene him farthest he was nighest,
So strong an arme, so long reach hath the highest.

*In the Acts of
the Apostles*

Sensitio.

*Of age and de-
uotion looke in
the Morall.*

54

Thus spake this Hermit so deuout and old,
Who by an Angell in his sleepe that night,
Of good *Rogeros* comming was foretold,
And of all chances should on him alight,
With all his valiant actions manifold,
That he had done, and should performe in fight,
And of his death, and of his noble race,
That should succeed him after in his place.

55

Now (as I said) this wise, this Hermit spoke,
And part doth comfort him, and part doth checke,
He blameth him, that in that pleasant yoke,
He had so long deferd to put his necke,
But did to wrath his maker still prouoke,
And did not come at his first call and becke,
But still did hide himselfe away from God,
Vntill he saw him comming with his rod.

*In sum Christ's
iudice.*

56

Then did he comfort him, and make him know,
That grace is nere denide to such as aske:
(As do the workmen of the Gospell show,
Receiuing pay alike for diuers taske)
Provided that our prayre of zeale do grow,
And serue not as a viser or a maske:
This did the man of God *Rogero* tell,
And so from thence he led him to his cell.

57

The cell a chappell had on th'Easterne side,
Vpon the Wester side a groue or berie,
Forth of the which he did his food prouide,
Smal chear God wot, wherwith to make folk merie
Yet fortie yeare he had that liuing tride,
And yet thereof it seemd he was not werie:
But eating berries, drinking water cleare,
He had in strength and health liu'd fourscore yeare.

58

Now kindled had the man of God some wood,
And on his boord he set a little frute,
The youth to drie his cloths, not farre of stood,
For why, to change he hath no other sute;
Then he by th'old mans teaching vnder stood
The faith, and how to Christ he must impute
The pardon of his finnes; yet neare the later,
He told him he must be baptizd in water.

59

And so he was the next ensuing day,
And afterward he rested in that place
A while, and with the man of God did stay,
Resolving him of eu'rie doubtfull case:
Sometime of heau'n, and of the later day,
Sometime of earth, and of his noble race,
That should in time to come, hold mightie Reames
As was reueald to him in former dreames.

60

And further vnto him he doth repeat,
How his chiefe house should be surnamed Este,
Because in time to come king *Charles* the great,
Should say to them in Latin words, *Hic este*,
Which is as much to say, be here the seat,
In which you shall hereafter euer rest ye,
And many future things to him he told,
Which were too long for me now to vnfold.

The house of Este

*He turnes againe
to Rogero in the
43. booke. 188.*

61

This while *Orlando* and king *Brandimart*,
With *Marquesse Olinero*, as I told,
Met with those three of the contrarie part,
Young *Agramanté* and *Gradasso* bold,
With good *Sobrino*, who for valiant hart,
Gives place to few of them, though being old;
Each spurres his horse, that ran a wondrous pace,
And of their blowes refounded all the place.

*The combat of
the sixe knights*

62

In this same course, each plaid his part so well,
That vp to heau'n flew shiuerd eu'rie lance,
The hideous noise did cause the seas to swell,
And some report, twas heard as farre as France;
Gradasso and *Orlando* as befell,
Did meet together, were it choice or chance;
The match seemd eu'n, saue that their horses differ,
And made *Gradasso* seeme to runne the stiffer.

63

The weaker horse on which *Orlando* rode,
Was brused so with this so fearfull shocke,
As now he could no longer beare his lode,
But sinking downe, lay senselesse with the knocke;
Orlando then did make but small abode,
His courser lying senselesse like a stocke,
Sith that with neither raines nor spurres he sturd,
He left his saddle, and drew forth his sword

Agramant

With *Agramant* the *Marquesse* hand to hand
Did most, betwene them equall went the game,
Sobrino was by *Brandimart's* hand,
Cast from his horse, I know not how it came,
But at that time it could not well be scand,
If so the horse or horseman were to blame:
But whether beast or rider wanted force,
Sobrino certaine downe was from his horse.

King *Brandimart* nere offerd once to tuch
Sobrino, when he saw him downe in vew,
But to *Gradasso* that had done as much
Vnto *Orlando*, in great hast he flew;
The *Marquesse* fight with *Agramant* was such,
As which side had the vantage no man knew,
For when their staues were shiuerd all and rent,
Their axes then they vsd incontinent.

Orlando who by hap a horse did lacke,
And saw *Gradasso* bent another way,
Whom *Brandimart* did hold so hardly tacke,
That he enforced him thereby to stay;
I say the *Palladine* then looking backe,
Saw old *Sobrino* standing in his way,
And toward him he go'th with looke so fierce,
As though his eye, as well as sword could pierce.

Sobrino gainst the force of such a man,
Sought with his surest ward himselfe to saue,
And as a Pilot doth the best he can,
To shunne the furie of the surging waue,
Eu'n so this well experienc't Turke began,
Himselfe in this great danger to behaue,
With sword and shield his best defence he made,
Against the fearfull edge of that same blade.

Which blade, of such an edge, in such an arme,
No maruell if to pierce it seldome faile,
Against the which in vaine was any charme,
For though his shield was steeld, his cote of maile,
Yet quite through shield and armour it did harme,
To saue his shoulder all could not auaille.
But he to wound *Orlando* was not able,
For God had made his skinne impenetrable.

The valiant Earle redoubled still his blow,
And thinks from shoulders off to cut his head,
He, that the force of *Clarimont* did know,
Gaued backward, or his ground still trauerfed,
But in his trauerfing he was so slow,
That with one blow he laid him downe for dead,
The blow fell flatting, but with force so maine,
As crused his helmet, and amazd his braine.

Downe fell *Sobrino* backward on the ground,
From whence long time it was er he arose,
Orlando thinks that he was safe and sound,
And that he was starke dead he doth suppose:
Wherefore since single foe he no where found,
Vnto *Gradasso* presently he goes,
To whom king *Brandimart* in armes, and horse,
In sword, inferiour was, perhaps in force.

But yet the noble minded *Brandimart*,
Vpon *Rogeros* horse *Frontino* mounted,
With that same *Sarasin* to plaid his part,
As if his forces he but little counted:
And sure *Gradasso* not in skill, nor hart,
But in his sword and armour him surmounted:
Enforcing him oftentimes to stand aloofe,
Because his armour was of no good prooffe.

But good *Frontino* bare away the bell,
For being readie to the riders hand,
It seemd where euer *Durindana* fell,
Frontino had such wit to vnderstand,
That euer more he did escape it well:
But all this while it hardly could be scand,
In tother twaine on which side fortune works,
In *Oliuero*, or the king of Turks.

Orlando had (as late before I told)
Left good *Sobrino* on the ground for ded,
Wherefore on foot he goes with courage bold,
To succour *Brandimart* if ill he sped;
But in the way by hap he did behold,
Sobrino's horse that without rider fled,
Orlando straight into the saddle valted,
Not looking if he went vpriht or halted.

One hand his sword, the tother holds his raine,
And so he rideth to *Gradasso* ward,
Who when he saw him come, did not refraine,
But to encounter with him straight prepard:
To fight with one of them, or else with twaine,
It seemd he little reckoned nor car'd;
He minds and hope: h to effect it soone,
To make them both to thinke it night ere noone.

Yet for a while king *Brandimart* he leaues,
And turnes him to the Earle, and with a thrust
Whereas his armour weakeft he perceaues,
There doth the fierce *Gradasso* hit him iust,
And enterd, but his cunning him deceaues,
Orlando's skin be pierced neuer must.
But when with *Ballisard* *Orlando* strake,
His helmet, coate of maile, and shield he brake.

So that both in his face, his breast, and side,
He wounded fore the king of *Sericane*,
Who maruels much what strange chance did betide
For neuer erst such sore hurt he had tane:
He thought there could not be a blade beside
To pierce his coate, he hauing *Durindane*;
And sure that blow had him dispatched clearly,
If it had had more strength, or come more nearly.

He sees that now he must take better heed,
And not trust armour, but a surer ward,
To seeke to saue himselfe he now hath need,
And looke vnto his limbs with more regard:
Now while twixt them the fight did thus proceed,
Good *Brandimart* did see he might be sped,
Wherefore to breath himselfe he then retired,
Still ready t'ayd each part, if cause required.

78

Now had *Sobrin* long laine in a trance,
With that same bruse, and with that bloody wound,
Giu'n him by that great *Palladine* of France,
That at two blowes had laid him on the ground,
With much a do he doth him selfe aduance,
And standing on his feet, and looking round,
He thought his Master was in weakeſt caſe,
And to his aid he moues his ſilent pace.

79

At *Oliueros* backe he comes vnſpide,
Who ſole on *Agramant* did fixe his eyes,
And that ſame horſe that *Oliuer* did ride,
He hought behind in ſuch deſpitefull wiſe,
That wanting ſtrength, he fell downe on his ſide,
And was not able any more to riſe:
And which was worſe then his vnlookt for fall,
His foot hung in the ſtirop therewithall.

80

Sobrin doubled then his blowes againe,
Thinking from ſhoulders off his head to pare,
But yet the ſteele made that attempt but vaine,
That *Vulcan* temperd erſt, and *Hector* ware:
King *Brandimart* at *Sobrin* runnes amaine,
When of his doings he was well aware,
And ouerthrew him quite, and ſtoutly ſmote him,
But th'old fierce man, ſoone on his feet vp got him.

81

And once againe at *Oliuer* he flies,
And once againe he thinketh him to kill,
Or at the leaſt cauſe him he ſhall not riſe;
But he that had his better arme at will,
Layd with his ſword about him in ſuch wiſe,
As that he kept him ſelfe from further ill
And made his foe, that was of no great ſtrength
Stand diſtant from him, almoſt twiſe his length.

82

The *Marqueſſe* hopes ere long to eaſe his paine,
If he can cauſe *Sobrin* ſtand aloofe,
Who bled ſo faſt, as now from fight t'abſtaine
He thought it would be beſt for his behoofe:
Now *Oliuero* all his force doth ſtraine,
And to get loofe he maketh manie a prooffe,
But ſtill his foot was faſt to his great hurt,
And ſtill the horſe lay tumbling in the durt.

83

This while king *Brandimart* doth go to find
Traianos ſonne, and now he hath him found,
Frontino now before, and ſtraight behind,
That good *Frontino* that can turne ſo round:
The horſe was ſure and of a paſſing kind,
The *Sotherne* kings was readie, ſtrong, and ſound:
He had that famous courſer *Brigliadore*,
The which *Rogero* gaue him late before.

84

But ſure the Turke great ods in armour had,
For he had one of prooffe, well tride, and ſure,
And *Brandimart's* was indeed but bad,
Such as he could in warning ſhort procure,
Wherefore to change it now he would be glad,
And that he ſhall, his heart doth him aſſure:
So that he waxed ſtouter ſtill and bolder,
Though *Agramant* had hurt him in the ſhoulder.

85

Gradaffo further had about his thye,
Him giu'n a blow, not to be tane in ſport,
But yet the king did ſo the fight apply,
And laid on loade in ſo couragious ſort,
As that he wounded his left arme thereby,
And pricked his right hand (thus they report)
But all this was but May game and delight,
Vnto *Gradaffos* and *Orlandos* fight.

86

Gradaffo hath *Orlando* halfe diſarmd,
And made him with one blow his ſhield forſake,
He could not wound him, for his ſkin was charmd,
But yet his headpeece on both ſides he brake:
But him *Orlando* hath in worſe ſort harmd,
Beſide that hurt of which before I ſpake,
He hath drawne blood of him in many a place,
As namely in breaſt, in throate, and in his face.

87

Gradaffo ſees him ſelfe with blood beſmeard,
And ſmarting paine in many places found,
And ſees that Earle like one that nothing feard,
Stand whole, and quite vnwounded ſafe and ſound;
Wherefore with both his hands his ſword he reard,
With mind to cleaue him, rather then to wound,
And eu'n as he deſir'd, with all his ſtrength,
He ſtrake him on his head, at halfe ſword length.

88

And ſure had clou'd him to the ſaddle bow,
Had it another then *Orlando* bene,
But now as if it had falſe flatling thoe,
The blade rebounded from him bright and cleene,
But yet that Earle was daz'd ſo with the bloe,
I thinke ſome ſtarres on ground by him were ſcene:
He loſt his bridle, and his ſword had miſt,
Saue that a chaine did bind it to his wiſt.

89

The horſe on which the good *Orlando* rode,
Was eke ſo ſcared with the fearfull ſound,
As there he durſt no longer make abode,
But on the ſands at randon runneth round,
And beares *Orlando* as a ſenſleſſe lode,
That with the paine ſtill ſtood as in a ſound,
And had *Gradaffo* little harder ſpurred,
He might haue tane the Earle ere he had ſturred.

90

But as he rode, he ſaw king *Agramant*,
Vnto extreameſt point of danger brought,
For why the valiant ſonne of *Monodant*,
Had loold his beauer, and ſuch hold had caught
Vpon his gorget, that but ſmall did want,
Eu'n with one ſtab his laſt end to haue wrought:
For why the noble minded Chriſten Prince,
Had wonne his ſword from him a good while ſince.

91

Gradaffo doth no more that Earle purſew,
But maketh haſt king *Agramant* to ayd,
And vnto *Brandimart* that nothing knew,
Nor of no ſuch miſfortune was affrayd,
He comes behind his backe quite out of vew,
And both his hands at once on ſword he layd,
And in that tort, he ſtrake with all his might,
Full on the helmet of the noble knight.

Ob

92
Oh heau'nly Father grant a resting place
In Paradice, for this thy Martyrs spirit,
That hauing runne all his tempestuous race,
He may with thee an harbour safe inherit.
Ah Durindan, hadit thou so little grace,
So ill to quite thy noblest Masters merit,
That in his fight thou could of life depriue,
His best and kindest frend he had aliue?

93
The sword did pierce a double plate of Steele.
That little lesse was then two fingers thicke,
Good Brandimart gan with the blow to reele,
It pierced had so deepe vnto the quicke,

His braines all cut therewith he plaine did feele,
And downe he fell like one most deadly sicke;
A streame of blood out of the grieuous wound,
Ran forth, and dyde with crimson all the ground.

94
By this Orlando waked, and behild
His Brandimart that lay now a la mort:
He sees the Sericane that him had kild,
This angered him, and grieu'd him in such sort,
Twas hard to say which more his stomacke fild,
His wrath or grieve; but time to moune was short,
That grieve gaue place, and wrath bare chieftest sway
But now I thinke it best awhile to stay.

In this booke may be noted the notable fondnesse of those men, that in auoiding of the lesse danger, fall into the greater, as Morall.
they did that forsooke the ship, and leapt into the boat, where they were all cast away, and the ship it selfe saved. In that
Rogero in his extremity of danger, feeleth a remorse of conscience, & straight hath recourse to God by prayer and vow,
it is a good president for others to do the like, though indeed most men are apt to do so, but all the matter is, to performe
the effect of their vow & promise to God after, for that few care for, according to that saying, made a prouerbe in Italian,

Scampato il pericolo giabbato il santo,

When danger is scaped, the Saint is — mocked.

But the example of Rogero may moue vs to more true deuotion; and this speech of the good old Hermit, let euerie one ap-
ply to himselfe that hath need of it, and it may fortune do him as much good as a sermon; for indeed it is most sweet and
comfortable and verie true doctrine, and well beseeeming the person of a deuout old man (as I called him in the 54 stasse)
for seldome goeth deuotion with youth, be it spoken without offence of our Peckedeuanted Ministers: as there goes an
old tale of three things that a blind man could see, for when his boy told him that there was brought a verie braue horse,
then saith the blind man, I see he is fat: the boy marvelled how he knew it; next he told him, there came by a passing
faire woman, then I see she is young (quoth the blind man) well guessed Master said his boy. Lastly, came by a deuout
preacher: Sir quoth the boy, here comes a good Priest, then he is old said the blind man, and that guesse was so right, the
boy was affraid his Master had had his eyes againe. For indeed age and bodie chastised with fasting and studie, are
companions of deuotion: as a frend of mine was wont to say in Italian,

Da medico rognoso,
Dio mi guarda } Da alchumista stracciato,
Da monacho ingrossato.

God defend me from a mangie Phisition, (for the Phisition that cannot cure the itch in himselfe, will hardly cure other
greater diseases in another.) From a ragged or beggerly Alchumist, for he that cannot get himself good clothes, will hard-
ly turne lead into gold. From a corpulent or fat sod Frier: for he that feeds his owne bodie fat, is not likely to giue of the
best spirituall food of the soule.

In Brandimart that laboreth to perswade Agramant to peace, we may note a noble disposition, and excellent good na-
ture, that being verie stout, and treating of peace (as they say) with his sword in his hand, yet endeuoured to take vp
the quarrell before it came to blood, which though it be a thanklesse office many times (as here it hapned to Brandimart
to be scorned for his labour) yet ought not that to terrifie a good mind from so honest an office. And sure the cause why
great quarrells rise vpon small matters, betweene great personages, and are afterward so long ere they be reconciled, and
so hollowly reconciled at last is that some of a wicked pollicie, seeke to keepe them at variance, thinking it (as the prouerbe
saith) best fishing in troubled waters: but neither S. Peter that was the good fisher of men nor his Master, were of that
opinion, but do say contrarily, Beati pacifici.

Of the house of Este, it was first called Ateste, but after (as mine Author hath deliuered) it was turned to Este, by Historie.
reason of that speech, Hic este Domini, and Fornarius writing vpon this place affirms the same.

In the deuises or impreises of Orlando and Oliuero, may be noted the decorum they vsed, for Orlando being a known Allusion.
and approued warrior, giues a more terrible deuice, yet referring the honor to God, in most Christian manner, of striking
down and confounding his enemies with lightning. Oliuero whose deuice is the spaniell, or lyam hound couching with the
word fin che vegna, doth with great modestie shew thereby, that the spaniell or hound that is at commandement, waiteth,
till the fowle, or deare be stricken, and then boldly leapeth into the water, or draweth after it by land: so he being yet a
young man, waited for an occasion to shew his valed, which being come, he would no longer couch, but shew the same.

In this kind we haue had many in our time, as the happie 17. day of Nouember can witnesse, that haue excelled for ex-
cellencie of deuice: of which if I should speake at large, it would aske a volume by it selfe. My selfe, haue chosen this of O-
liuero for mine owne, partly liking the modestie thereof, partly (for I am not ashamed to confesse it) because I fancie the
spaniell so much, whose picture is in the deuice, and if any make merrie at it. (as I doubt not but some will) I shall not be
sorrie for it: for one end of my trauell in this worke, is to make my frends merrie, and besides I can alledge many exam-
ples of wise men, and some verie great men, that haue not onely taken pictures, but built cities in remembrance of ser-
uiceable beafts. And as for dogges, Doctor Caynes a learned Phisition and a good man, wrote a treatise in praise of
them, and the Scripture it selfe hath vouchsafed to commend Tobias dogge.

Here end the annotations of the 41. booke

Gg iij



THE ARGUMENT.

Orlando of his conquest takes small ioy,
Which caused him his dearest friend to want:
Loves diuers passions, breed no small annoy,
To stout Renaldo and good Bradaman:
She wishing her Rogero to enioy,
He th' Indian Queene, but soone he did recant,
Taught by disdain: at last in Latian ground,
The Palladine kind entertainment found.



¹ Hat iron band, or what
sharpe hard mouthd bit,
What chaine of diamond
(if such might be)
Can bridle wrathfulnesse
and conquer it,
And keep it in his bounds
and due degree?
When one to vs in bonds
offrendship knit,

And dearly lou'd, before our face we see,
By violence or fraud to suffer wrong,
By one for him too craftie, or too strong.

² And if before we can such pang digest,
We swarue sometime from law, and run astray,
It may be well excusd, sith in ones brest,
Pure reason at such time beares little sway:
Achilles when with counterfai't crest,
He saw *Patroclus* bleeding all the way,
To kill his killer was not satisfide.
Except he hal'd and tare him all beside.

³ So now a little since when in his brow,
Alonso wounded was with curst stone,
And all his men and souldiers thought that now,
His soule from earth to heau'n had bene vp gone,
They kild and spoild, they car'd whom nor how,
Strong rampiers, walls, to them defence were none,
But in that furie they put all to wracke,
Both old and young, and all the towne to sacke.

⁴ Our men were so enraged with this fall,
To thinke they had their Captaine lost for ay,

That to the sword they put both great and small,
That happend then to come within their way:
And so their fortune did preuaile withall,
That they the Castle did regaine that day,
In fewer houres, to their great fame and praise,
Then had the Spaniards got it erst in dayes.

⁵ It may be, God ordained (as I guesse)
That he that time should wounded be so sore,
To punish that same sinne and soule excessse,
His foes committed had a while before,
When *Vesidell* forlorne and in distresse,
Did yeeld, and should haue had his life therefor:
Yet was he kild when they had him surpris'd,
By men whose greater part were circumcised.

⁶ Wherefore I iustly may conclude thus much,
That nothing can more hotly kinde wrath,
Then if one shall the life and honor tuch,
Of our deare friend, or do him wrong or scath.
Now (as I said) *Orlandos* griefe is such,
And such occasion of iust griefe he hath,
He sees his friend, for lacke of better heeding,
Lye flat on ground, and almost dead with bleeding.

⁷ As the Nomadian Shepherd, that a Snake,
Along the grasse and herbes hath slyding scene,
Which late, before with tooth most poytous strake
His little sonne, that plaid vpon the greene,
Doth brule and beat, and kill him with a stake:
So goes this Earle with blade most sharpe and keene
And yet far more with wrath an choller whet
And *Agramant*, was then the first he met.

Simile.

8

Vnhappie he that in his passage stood,
His sword was gone as I declar'd before,
Himselfe be smeared all with his owne blood,
Braue *Brandimart* had wounded him so fore;
Orlando comes, and in his wrathfull mood,
With *Balliard*, that payes home euermore,
He strikes (by fortune were it or by art)
Iust where the shoulders from the head do part.

9

Loofd was his helmet, as I erst did tell,
That like a Poppie quite fell off his bed,
The carkas of the Lybian Monarke fell
Downe to the ground, and lay a long starke ded,
His soule by *Charon*, ferrie-man of hell,
To *Pluto's* house or Stigian lake was led.
Orlando staid no whit, but straight prepar'd,
To finde *Gradaſſo* eke with *Balliard*.

10

But when *Gradaſſo* plaine beheld and saw,
Of *Agramant* the wofull end and fall,
He felt an vnaccustom'd dread and aw,
Who neuer wonted was to feare at all;
And eu'n as if his owne fate he foresaw,
He made the Palladine resistance small:
Feare had so maz'd his head, and daz'd his sence,
That for the blow, he quite forgot his sence.

11

Orlando thrust *Gradaſſo* in the side,
About the ribs, as he before him stood,
The sword came forth a span on tother side,
And to the hilt, was varnisht all with blood,
By that saine thrust alone it might be tride,
That he that gaue it was a warriour good,
That with one thrust did vanquish and subdew,
The stoutest champion of the Turkish crew.

12

Orlando of this conquest nothing glad,
Doth from his saddle in great hast alight,
And with a heauie heart and count'nance sad,
He runnes vnto his deare beloued knight,
He sees his helmet cut, as if it had
Bene clouen quite with axe (a wofull sight)
And eu'n as if it had bene made of glasse,
And not of Steele, and plated well with brasſe.

13

The Palladine his helmet then vnties,
And finds the scull clou'n downe vnto the chin,
And sees the braine all cut before his eyes;
Yet so much breath and life remaind within,
That he is able yet before he dyes,
To call to God, for mercie for his sinne,
And pray *Orlando* ioyne with him in praying,
And vse to him this comfortable saying.

14

My deare *Orlando*, see that to our Lord,
Thou in thy good deuotions me commend:
Likewise to thee commend I my deare *Fiorde*—
And liege he would haue sayd, but there did end;
Straight Angels voyces with most sweet accord,
Were heard the while his spirit did ascend,
The which dissolued from this fleshly masse,
In sweetest melodie to heau'n did passe.

15

Orlando though he should reioyce in hart,
Of this his end so holy and deuout,
Because he knew his louing *Brandimart*,
Was taken vp to heau'n, without all doubt,
Yet flesh and blood in him so playd their part,
That without teares he cannot beare it out,
But that he needs must shew some change in cheare,
To leese one more, then any brother deare.

16

This while *Sobrin*o brused in his bed,
And wounded sorely in his side and thye,
Vpon the ground so great a streame had bled,
It seemd his life in perill was thereby;
And *Oliuero* little better sped,
On whom his horse still ouerthrowne did lye,
He striuing, but his striuing did not boot,
To get at libertie his brused foot.

17

And sure it seemes he had bene worse apayd,
Had not his dolefull cosin quickly come,
And brought to him, both quicke and needfull ayd,
Before the paine had him quite ouercome:
His foote that long had in the stirrop stayd,
Was therewithall to void of sence, and numme,
That when he stood vpright, he was not able,
To tuch the ground, much lesse tred firm & stable.

18

So that indeed *Orlando* in his hart,
But little ioy of so great conquest had,
He wayles the death of his deare *Brandimart*,
And that his kinsman was in state so bad:
Now lay *Sobrin*o, though aliue in part,
Yet with a looke so chearleſſe and so sad,
And so much blood his aged veines had bled,
That doubtlesse in few howres he had bene ded;

19

Saue that *Orlando* with compassion moued,
To see him ly so lorne, and so distressed,
Gate him such needfull things as best behoued,
And charitably made his wounds be dressed:
So kindly, that some kinsman deare beloued,
And not his foe, a man might him haue guesſed:
Such was this Earles good nature, fierce in fight,
But fight once done, from malice free or spight.

20

The horse, and bodies of the other twaine,
He tooke away, and left their men the rest,
To be dispos'd to their owne priuate gaine,
Or to interre their Lords, as they thought best.
But here, that in my story I do faine,
Fredericke Fulgoso (as I heare) hath guest,
Sith at this Ile he late arriuing found,
In all the same no leuell foote of ground.

21

Nor doth he probable it deeme or take,
That sixe such knights as had in armes no peare,
On horsebacke should a combat vndertake,
Where no one foot of plaine ground doth appeare.
To which obiection I this answer make,
That then, in times now past seau'n hundred yeare,
Plaine ground there was, but now some inundation,
Or earthquake might procure this alteration.

Wherefore

A true praise
a noble mind.Look in the
story.

22
Wherefore *Fulgoſo*, honor of thy name,
Bright *Fulgor*, cauſing all thy ſtocke to ſhine,
If in this point thou haſt imputed blame
To me, perhaps before that Prince deuine,
From whom thy countries good and quiet came,
And did it firſt to loue and peace incline,
Informe him now, that eu'n perhaps in this,
My tale of truth or likelyhood doth not miſſe.

23
This while *Orlando* looking from the ſhore,
A little Frigot did farre of deſcrie,
That both with ſayle, and with the helpe of ore,
Vnto that Ile, ſeemd in great haſt to flie;
But ere of this I tell you any more,
I muſt to France as faſt as I can hie,
To ſee if they be merrie there or ſad,
Now they from thence the Turks expulſed had.

24
Firſt let vs ſee how faithfull *Bradament*,
Doth take his abſence whom ſhe loueth moſt,
Who in his oth, due care of faith did want,
Which he had tane in ſight of either hoſt:
Now ſure ſhe thinks his loue and faith too ſcant,
To heare he quite had leſt the Chriſten coſt:
If in his publike oth he be vniuſt,
Where to alas, then where to can ſhe truſt?

25
And ſtill returning to her former plaints,
And ſtill bemoaning her vnluckie fate,
With which her ſelfe ſhe too too well acquaints,
She calls herſelfe accuſt, and him vngrate,
Yea blaming God himſelfe, and all his Saints,
For not redreſſing this her woſull ſtate,
She ſcarce abſtaines high blaſphemie to ſpeake,
That God vniuſt, and that Saints powres are weake.

26
Then ſhe *Meliſſa* (abſent) doth reprove,
And curſt that Oracles perſwaſion blind,
That lapt her in this Laberinth of loue,
Whence ſhe her ſelfe by no meanes can vnwinde,
But to *Marfiſa* all the reſt aboue,
She open layes her ſtomacke and her mind,
With her ſhe chides and vtters all her choller,
And yet ſhe prayes her comfort this her doller.

27
Marfiſa comforts her in all ſhe may,
And tels her what a vertue Patience is,
And partly doth excuſe *Rogeros* ſtay:
And further giueth her her faith in this,
That if ſhe find he wilfully delay,
She will conſtraine him mend all is amiſſe,
Or if ſhe find that he reſuſe to do it,
To fight with him and ſo compell him to it.

28
With this ſhe did in part her paine aſſwage,
For why it is in ſorrow great reliefe,
To thoſe of either ſex or any age,
To haue ſome friend, to whom to tell their grieve,
But now if *Bradament* be in ſuch rage,
No leſſe is he that of her houſe was chiefe,
I meane *Renaldo*, that cannot expulſe
Loues fire, from eu'rie ſinew, veine and pulſe.

29
I thinke I need not now to you repeat,
A thing by me ſo often told before,
By name that loue and that affection great,
That to *Angelica Renaldo* bore:
Nor did her beautie cauſe ſo much his heat,
As did that ſpring of which he dranke ſuch ſtore,
Now all the other Palladines were free
From all their foes, now Cupids thrall is he.

30
An hundred meſſengers he ſends about,
Himſelfe the while an hundred wayes more riding,
To aſke of her, or elſe to finde her out,
Who hath her now, or where is her abiding.
At laſt, becauſe he thinketh out of doubt,
That *Malagige* of her can learne ſome tiding,
He aſketh him (but bluſhing ſore with ſhame)
If he knew what of th' Indian Queene became.

31
His coſin wonders at ſo ſtrange a caſe,
And in his mind thereon long time he muſed,
That when *Renaldo* had both time and place,
Her offers large and kind he ſtill reſuſed,
When both herſelfe did ſue to haue his grace,
And many of his friends perſwaſions vſed:
And *Malagige* himſelfe among the reſt,
Had prou'd him oft with prayre and with requeſt.

32
The rather eke, becauſe *Renaldo* then,
By taking her, had let his coſin free,
Who then was kept cloſe priſoner in a den,
And for that cauſe in perill ſtaine to be:
He marvels that he now would ſeeke her, when
No hope, nor cauſe there was, and further he
With angrie looke, did bid him call to mind,
How in this point he had bene too vnkind.

33
But good *Renaldo* now quite of tune,
Pray' th him old quarrels from his mind to moue,
And doth moſt earneſtly him importune,
Vnto his helpe, his ſkill and bookes to proue:
Which made his coſin ſo much more preſume,
Vpon his reconcilment and true loue,
And promiſt to aſſiſt him if he may,
And for his answer he prefixt a day.

34
And ſtraight from thence he go'th vnto the place,
Where he was wont the ſpirits to coniure,
A ſtrong vaſt caue, in which there was great ſpace,
The precepts of his Art to put in vſe:
One ſpright he calls, that of each doubtfull caſe
Of Cupids court, could giue him notice ſure:
Of him he aſkt what bred *Renaldos* change,
By him he heard, of thoſe two fountaines ſtrange.

35
And how *Renaldo* by miſfortune led,
Firſt happend of that hatefull ſpring to drinke,
Which his diſlike of that faire Ladie bred,
And made her loue, and profferd ſeruiſe ſtinker:
And how againe, by ſome ill ſtarre miſſed,
He drank of th' other ſpring, which cau'd him thinke
Her onely to be loued and admired,
Whom erſt he hated more then cauſe required.

Look in the
story.

36
Moreouer he to *Malagis* shewd,
How that same famous Indian Queene (nay quean)
Had on a Pagan youth herselfe bestowd,
Of parentage, of state, of liuing meane:
And how from Spaine they in a galley rowd,
All Christendome and Spaine forsaking cleane,
And passing both with safetie and with ease,
(In ventrous barks of Catalyn) the seas.

37
Now when *Renaldo* for his answer came,
His learned cofin seekes him to perswade,
Vnto some better thought his minde to frame,
Nor further in this gulf of loue to wade;
Alledging what a slander and a shame,
It was to fancy one her selfe had made,
Not like a Queene, but like a vile maide Marian,
A wife, (nay slaue) vnto a base Barbarian.

38
In fine he said, she was to th' Indies gon,
With her *Medoro*, and was welne there:
Renaldo not a little muid thereon,
Yet all the rest he could with patience beare,
And for the paine, he counts it small or none,
So he at last might finde her any where;
Wherefore of it he had no care nor keepe,
Nor could that make him once to breake his sleepe

39
But when he heard that one of birth so base
Had with his mistres laid his knife a boord,
It seemd this strake him speechles in the place,
He was not able to pronounce a word:
His heart did quake within, his lips like case
So trembled, answer he could none afford;
But ouercome with anguish of the passion,
He flang away from thence, in carelesse fashion.

40
And much lamenting this her foule abuse,
He vowes to follow her what ere issue,
But yet to *Charles* he faineth this excuse,
That sith *Gradasso*, of his word vnture,
Had tane his horse contrary to the vse
Of valiant Knights, he meanes him to pursue;
Alledging that it were his great dishonor,
To let *Bayardo* haue a forren owner.

41
And that a Turke should boff another day,
That he by fight did him thereof bereaue.
King *Charles* (though loth) yet could not say him nay
To such an honest sute, but gaue him leaue;
Which tane, alone from thence he goes his way,
And all his friends in Paris he doth leaue:
With *Guidon*, *Dudon* stout to him do proffer
Their company, but he refusd their offer.

42
Away he goes alone, yet not alone.
Griefs, teares, and plaints, still his companions are:
And oft in heart he bitterly doth grone,
To thinke that erst he should so little care,
For her great loue, which wilfully forgone,
He now esteemes at rate so high and rare,
He could haue wisht (thus was his mind perplext)
But one day to enioy, and die the next.

43
Then he bethinkes with no lesse grieve, nay rage
How she could finde in that her lofty hart,
To let her loue on such a sorry page,
The merites all, and seruice put apart,
Done vnto her eu'n from her tender age,
By men of high renowne and great defart:
Thus with a fired hart, and watred eyne,
He rode vntill he toucht the bankes of Rhyne.

44
Ere long into *Ardenna* woods he enters,
Soone after he *Basylea* quite had past:
Ardenna woods, whence many come repenter,
And in that Forrest haue bene sore agast,
To trauell through the same *Renaldo* venters,
When suddenly the skie did ouercast,
And there arose a blacke and hideous storme,
And then appeard a monster of strange forme.

45
She seem'd of womans shape, but in her hed,
A thousand eyes she had, that watch did keepe,
As many eares, with which she harkened,
Her eyes want lids, and therefore neuer sleepe,
In steed of haire, her crowne snakes ouerspred,
Thus marched she forth of the darknesse deepe,
Her tayle one Serpent bigger then the rest,
Which she with knots had tyde about her brest.

46
This sight, *Renaldos* mind appald so sore,
He feesles his heart alreadie gan to fayle him,
And sith it neuer had done so before, (him:
He marvels what, (the goody eare) now should aile
Yet still his minde misgaue him more and more,
To see the monster comming to affaile him,
He nathlesse counterfets his wonted boldnesse,
Though quaking hads bewraid his inward coldnesse

47
The monster straight assaulted him, much like
To one that parfet was and skild in fence,
And when againe he with his sword did strike,
He missed, and could doe her none offence.
Much doth *Renaldo* this ill match mislike,
And little wants to quite distract his fence,
Right blowes and reardemaine he striketh many,
But yet he cannot hit her right with any.

48
The monster stickes a Serpent in his brest,
That strake his heart in to a freeing cold,
Another fixed is below his crest,
And on his necke and shoulders taketh hold;
Renaldo thinkes to get him gone is best,
And spurres away with all the speed he could,
But that vile monster was not lame to find him,
But ouertooke him, and leapt vp behind him.

49
And whether he go straight, or go he wide,
The monster sitteth sure and holds him fast,
He knowes not how to be from her vntide,
Nor any meane within his mind can cast,
His heart eu'n quakes within him, and beside
That he was with this hideous plague agast,
He sorrowd so not knowing how to mend it,
He loth'd his life, and did desire to end it.

Look in the
Allegory.

He spurres amaine, and purposely he takes
The rugged wayes, the worst that he could find,
By craggie Rocks, and hils, through bryers & brakes
Through coppies thicke, by narrow paths and blind,
But sure the knight the matter much mistakes,
He cannot from the monster him vnwind:
And like it was, great harme had him betyded,
Had not for him, bene helpe in time prouided.

51

For loe a knight, vnto his succour went,
All armd in shining Steele, and on his shield,
He bare a yoke in sundry peeces rent,
And flames of fire all in a yellow field,
So weaponed he was, as if he ment
To make all that encountred him to yeeld,
A sword and speare he had, and to the same,
A Mace from whence he threw continuall flame.

52

His Mace was stor'd with euerlasting fire,
That euer burned, and did neuer wast,
No other weapon needed one desire,
To make good way with, wherefocu'r he past,
And sure *Renaldos* danger did require
Quicke remedie, wherefore the knight doth hast:
And when he saw this monster and did vew her,
With his stiffe speare forthwith he ouerthrew her,

53

But this same fall did her no whit annoy,
Wherefore to vse his speare he now misliketh,
He onely will his fierie Mace imploy,
And with that same the monster foule he striketh:
Then she no longer could her force enioy,
Renaldo while she fled, occasion piketh,
To scape away, as him that knight perswaded,
While he this monster more and more inuaded.

54

Now when the knight had with his fierie Mace,
Driu'n backe this monster to her darksome den,
Where she for spite doth beat her head and face,
Repining at the good of other men,
Then to *Renaldo* he doth ride apace,
And when he had soone ouertane him, then
He offerd in kind sort, with him to ride,
From out the darksome places him to guide.

55

But when *Renaldo* was from danger free,
And that same knight by whom his safetie came,
So courteously to come to him did see,
His speech to him in kind words he did frame,
And gaue him many thanks in hye degree,
And then besought him he might know his name,
That th'Emperor and all his court might know,
What knight did so great grace on him bestow.

56

The knight in courteous manner thus replide,
I would not you should take it in displeasure,
That I my name from you a while shall hide,
But ere the shadow grow a yard by measure,
I shall you tell: thus onward still they ride,
Renaldo being pleasd to stay his leasure,
So long they went together till they found,
A christall spring that ran along the ground.

57

At which full oft the herdmen, that did dwell
Neare those same woods, haue in their louing fits,
Drunke loue away, with tasting of that well,
And of those passions purged cleane their wits:
Now (for the knight that rode with him could tell
That for *Renaldos* ill, this Phisicke fits)
He doth aduise him there to stay a space,
And make that well their baite and resting place.

58

Renaldo of the motion well allowth,
And lighteth straight, and to the well doth go,
Both for that heat and trauell bred his drowth,
And that the monster had disturbd him so;
Vnto the christall well he puts his mouth,
And greedily drinks downe five gulps or mo,
And from his brest doth with one draught remoue,
His burning thirst, and his more burning loue.

59

Now when that other knight that with him went,
Saw him lift vp himselfe from that same brooke,
And found he did his foolish loue repent,
And that he now that humor quite forsooke,
Then to declare his name he was content,
And looking with a graue and loftie looke,
He said, *Renaldo*, know I hight *Dildaine*,
That came to loofe thee from loues foolish chaine.

60

This said, he vanisht from *Renaldo* quite,
His horse nor him he could not after see,
Renaldo marvels at this wondrous sight,
And lookes about, and saith, what where is he?
At last he thinks tis some familiar spright,
That by good *Malagis* sent might be:
To rid him of that tedious care and wo,
That many months had him afflicted so.

61

Orelse that God to him this helpe did lend,
Of his especiall grace and louing kindnes,
As erst he did vnto *Tobias* send,
His Angel to deliuer him from blindnes:
But let it Angel be, or be it fend,
Renaldo takes against him no vnkindnes:
He thanks and praises it, and doth acknowledge,
To haue receiu'd of him grace, wit, and knowledge.

62

Now, that same great mislike and hate retorned,
Of faire *Angelica*, whom late he loued,
Now he despised her and greatly scorned,
To thinke that he for her one foote had moued:
Yet onward into India ward he iourned,
As for *Bayardos* sake it him behoued:
Because both honor did compell him to it,
And to his Prince he vndertooke to do it.

63

He rides to *Basile* next ensuing night,
Where verie late before, some newes were hard,
How that *Orlando* challeng'd was to fight,
And for that fight, how he himselfe prepar'd,
Not, that *Orlando* newes hereof did write,
But one that came from *Sycill* thitherward,
Affirmed he had heard the same reported,
By many that to *Sycily* resorted.

Hh

Of this Well you
heard in the first
booke.

64

These newes do set on edge *Renaldo's* hart,
He faine would present be at this conflict,
He faine would take therein *Orlando's* part,
To whom he bounden was in bands most strikt,
Of friendship, of allyance and defart:
Wherefore he takes post horse, and spurd and prickt,
And changd both beasts, & guides each tē miles end
And toward Italy he still doth bend.

65

At Constance he did passe the streame of Rhine,
And then beyond the Alpes, he soone doth goe,
To Mantoa, and ere the Sun decline,
He passed ore the stately streame of Poe,
Here he did doubt, and did not soone designe,
If he should trauell all the night or noe:
Till at the last a well behaoured knight,
And full of curtesie, came in his sight.

Here you must
begin to read the
tale of the Man-
nan knight
that had the
married mans
cuppe.

66

This knight forthwith vnto *Renaldo* went,
And askt him if he were a married man,
Renaldo maruels what the question ment,
But answerd yea, then tother straight began,
And praid him, that he would be then content,
To be his guest, at such cheare as he can:
Offering to show him, while with him he tarride,
A sight well pleasing vnto all were married.

67

Renaldo glad so good a bait to make,
And no lesse willing, haps most rare to heare,
Would not the offer of this knight forsake,
Of entertainment good, and friendly cheare,
But onward with him doth his iourney take,
Vntill he saw a goodly place appeare,
So well set forth, both for the shew and sence,
As seemd not for a priuat mans expence.

68

The porch was all of Porpherie and Tutch,
On which the sumptuous building raised was,
With Images that seemd to moue, see, tuch,
Some hewd in stone, some caru'd and cut in brasse,
Likewise within, the beautie was asmuch:
Beneath a state'y arch, they straight did passe,
Vnto a court that good proportion bare,
And was each way one hundred cubites square.

69

And either side a Porch had passing faire,
That with an arch, is on two cullomns placed,
Of equall sife they seemd euerie paire,
Yet fundrie works, which them the better graced;
At each of these a wide, large easie staire,
Without the which, all buildings are defaced,
And those same staires so stately mounting, led
Each to a chamber richly furnished.

70

The cullomns hie, the chapters guilt with gold,
The cornishes enticht with things of cost,
The Marbles fet from farre, and dearly sold,
By cunning workmen carued and imboist,
With Images, and antikes new and old,
(Though now the night thereof concealed most)
Shew that that worke so rich beyond all measure,
Could scant be builded with a Princes treasure.

71

But nothing did so much the sight enrich,
As did the plenteous fountaine, that did stand
Iust placed in the middle, vnder which
The Pages spred a table out of hand,
And brought forth napry rich, and plate more rich,
And meates the choifest of the sea or land:
For though the house had stately roomes full many,
In summer season this was best of any.

72

This fountaine was by curious workmen brought,
To answer to the rest with double square,
Eight femall statues of white marble wrought,
With their left hands, an azure skie vp bare,
Which raining still, expelled heat and drought,
From all that vnder it, or neare it are,
In their right hands, was *Amaltheas* horne,
By eu'rie one of those eight statues borne.

73

Each of these statues rested both their feete,
Vpon two Images of men below,
That seemd delighted with the noise so sweete,
That from the water came, that there did flow,
They also seemd the Ladies low to greete,
As though they did their names and vertues know:
And in their hads they hold long scroles of writings
Of their owne pennings and their owne enditings.

74

And in faire golden letters were the names,
Both of the women wrote, and of the men,
The women were eight chaste and sober dames,
That now do liue, but were vborne as then:
The men were Poets that their worthie fames,
In time to come, should praise with learned pens
These Images bare vp a braten tressell,
On which there stood a large white Marble vessell.

75

This tooke the water from the azure skie,
From whence, with turning of some cocke or vice,
Great store of water would mount vp on hie,
And wet all that same court eu'n in a trice;
With sight of these *Renaldo* fed his eye,
So that his host could scarcely him entice,
To feed his stomacke, yet he oft him told,
His meate would marre and fallers would be cold.

XL Salato e fresco
the Italian style

76

Then downe at last they sat them at the boord,
And pleasant talke did helpe digest their meate,
His host that was no niggard, did affoord
Great store of delicates, to drinke and eate,
And all this while *Renaldo* spake no word,
Although he did it oft in mind repeate,
And though his tongue did itch, to pray him tell,
What twas that would pleate married men so well.

77

At last he put him mannerly in minde,
Of that he first did promise him to shew,
Eu'n then he plainly saw his host inclinde
To inward grieve, and did more pensiue grow,
With secret sighs, and leaving halfe behind;
At last a Page came in with curtise low,
And beares a standing cup of gold most fine,
Without of gemmes, and full within of wine.

With

77
With this, the Master of the feast did smile,
And on Renaldo lookt with pleasant cheare,
But one that well had marked him that while,
Might see more griefe then mirth, in him appeare:
Now noble guest (quoth he) within a while,
You shall see prou'd, a strange conclusion heare,
That needs must be full welcome to be tried,
By all that are in bonds of wedlocketied.

78
For sure I thinke (he said) each husband ought,
Make search if so his wife esteeme him dearly,
If fame, or shame, by her to him be brought,
If man or beast, he be reputed mearly:
The burthen of the horne though it be thought
To weigh so heauie, and to touch so nearly,
No doubt but many get them in their marriage,
Yet feele them not, they be so light in carriage.

79
But if a man by certaine signes may know,
How that his wife to him is true and iust,
He hath more cause more kindnes her to show,
Then he that liues in right, or wrong mistrust:
For some without a cause do iealous grow,
Whose wiues are chaste, and free from lawlesse lust:
And some y for their wiues truth durst haue sworne,
Haue for their labours, in their head a horne.

This booke begins with a Morall against wrath, and reuenge, excusing rather then allowing them that yeeld to that bloodie passion: but let all noble minded men (I speake to men of the sword) if they do as Orlando did, reuenge the death of their deere friend, yet after take example of Orlandos clemencie towards Sobrino, whom (after the furie of the combat was past) he made to be cured. Tully in his Oration pro Marcello, hath many excellent sayings to this effect, to praise Cæsar and all such as being able to reuenge, yet rather chuse to forgiue: as in one place he saith, verum animum vincere, iracundiam cohibere, victoriam temperare, &c. Hæc qui faciat, non ego eum summis viris comparo, sed si millimum Deo iudico. To ouercome the passions of the minde, to bridle ones anger, to moderate the victorie, &c. who doth these things I compare not him to the best sort of men, but I liken him to God himselfe. Further in the same oration he calls wrath an enemy to wisdom; and our common English proverbe saith, the hastie man neuer wanteth woe: all which I alledge rather to proue mine authours saying true: that it is hard to bridle wrath, and to temper reuenge; and consequently the more commendable for those that can do it: according to the saying, pulchra quæ difficilia; and therefore the more noble and great a man is either in byrth or fortune, the more honorable it is for him to be spare and not bloodie in reuenge; Posse & nolle nobile. And euen in this last booke, you read how hurtfull desire of reuenge falleth of time to him that desireth it, for Agramant came of purpose into France to be reuenged vpon Charles, and was as you see, first expelled out of that Realme, and after bereft of his life.

Of Alfonsoes hurt you may reade in Guyecharadin, and how his men recovered the Bastia from the Spaniards, who Historie, had cert aine Moores with them at that time; and therefore he saith (of men whose greater part were circumcised.) Fulgoso or Fregoso, was Archbishop of Salerne, and as it seemes, had carped at Ariostos verse of Lyppadusa: but he defends the matter prettily, alledging that an earthquake, or inundation had destroyed all the leuell ground. The like reproofe had Virgil about the hauens of Mongibello, which he describes at the roote of that hill, where indeed there was none: and the like excuse is made for him, that it filled with the continuall casting vp of stones out of the burning hill. Catalani are the chiefe house of Spaine, alledged here by the Poet, for their good succeffe in discovering the Indies, though indeed the Portugals Lusitani nor Catalani deserue the praise of it.

The monster that assaulted Renaldo signifies Iealousie that he had, that another possesse his loue: the knight that deli- Allegorie, uered him was Disdaine, that with the heat of noble courage, signified by the fierie Mace, ouerthrew the monster, and draue him quite away: it is so plaine in the verse it needs no exposition.

The cup that Renaldo was offerd, puts me in minde of the like fanisie, in the Historie of Herodotus in the second booke, Allusion, briefly it is thus. Pharao King of Egypt, hauing by ill hap, lost his eyesight, was aduised (by some Oracle) to bath his eyes in the vrine of a chaste woman. Wherefore first he proued his wiues, and after diuers other great Ladies, but he found none did him good but one poore gentelwoman, wherefore being recovered of his sight, he put all the other to death, and married that one: but because the matter of the cup is continued in the next booke, I shall speake more to this effect, in my notes vpon the same.

Here end the notes of the XLII. booke.

Hh ij

80
Now sir, if you belceue your wife is true,
As sure till one do finde contrarie prooffe,
I thinke both you, and all men ought of dew,
For that no doubt is best for their behoofe,
Here you shall see it tride within your vew,
For which I prayd you harbour in my roote:
This cup (said he) if you desire to know it,
By drinking in the same, will clearely show it.

81
Now drinke hereof, and proue this passing skill,
For if Asteons armes, be on your crest,
Do what you can, you shall the liquor spill,
Beside your mouth, vpon your lappe and brest,
But if your wife be chaste, then drinke your fill,
No such mischance your draught will then molest.
Thus much he said, and fixt on him his eyne,
And thinkes Renaldo sure would spill the wine.

82
Renaldo halfe allured to assay,
To finde a thing, which found he might repent,
Did take in hand the golden cup straight way,
As if to quaffe it off, were his intent:
Yet first he doth the certaine danger way,
To which by tasting such a cup he went.
But giue me leaue a while some breath to take,
Before you heare what answer he did make.

Asteons armes
were hornes gi-
uen him by Dra-
na, wherupon a
pleasant fellow
wrote this dis-
tichke of one that
had married a
light huswife.
Thaida se credis
di xisse, sed illa
Diana est,
Namque
Asteonem das
tribi Gauri ca-
pit.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Renaldo heares two tales to like effect,
Tone of a Bargeman, tother of a knight:
Both prouing that rewards will soone infect
The mindes of chastest dames, and make them light:
To Lippaduse he doth his course direct,
But first Orlando finisht had his fight:
That Hermit that Rogero did baptise,
Heal'd Oliuer, and Sobrine in likewise.*

I Curst, ô greedie, ô vn-
ciable

Desire of gaine, I do not
maruell sure,

If thou the base and filthy
minds art able,

To cause to stoope vnto
thy carren lure,

Sith oft we see some per-
sons honorable,

Can scarce thy weake and base assaults endure,
Who if they could thy foule entisements shun,
No doubt but they great glory should haue won.

2 Some men can measure earth, and sea, and sky,
And tell the change and cause of eu'ry season,
And wade so farre with wit, or mount so hy,
They search both heau'n & hel with depth of reason
But when thou com'st in place, then by and by,
Thou putt'st their daintie tafts so out of season,
They place their whole delight, their hope, their
In only scraping and in heaping wealth. (health)

3 Another man in warres hath great renowne,
And gets the conquest in each bloudie strife,
And wins this fortresse, and that walled towne,
Opposing his stout brest to perils rife,
Thou onely conquerst him, and thrusts him downe,
And keepest him thy prisoner all his life:
Some men, excelling in each art and studdie,
Thou dost obscure, with base desires and muddie.

4 What should I speake of dames of worth not small,
That hauing louers, men of great desarts,

Oppose their honours, as a brasen wall,
Against their suits with vnrelenting hart?
But come some miser, base deformed squall,
That saue his riches, hath no worthy parts,
They breake the wall, and make therein a gap,
To take the showre that fell in Danaes lap.

5 Nor without cause hereof complaine do I,
Take me that can, for I do rightly take it,
Nor from my matter do I swaue awrie,
Or by a vaine digression do forsake it:
Yet to my former speech I not applie,
But tending to a future tale I spake it:
Now let me tell you of Renaldo first,
That with one draught wold swage his double thirst

6 But whether that his courage did him faile,
Or that on more aduite, he changed minde,
He thought and said, what should it one auale,
To seeke a thing he would be loth to finde?
My wife a woman is, their sex is fraile,
I yet am to beleue the best enclinde;
I know I cannot better my believe,
And if I change it, it will be my grieve.

7 What good may come by such a straight espyall,
Into my fences surely cannot sinke,
Much hurt may come, there can be no denyall,
Let nothing seuer thole whom God doth linke:
Wherefore to make so vnaccustomd triall,
Were sinne, and tempting God as I do thinke:
Then drinke this cup, (quoth he) that list, not I,
I am not, nor I minde not to be drie.

Hh iij

*Ouid.
Aureum ve-
rè sunt secula:
plurimum auro
venit bonus, au-
ro conciliator a-
mor.
Danae had a
showre of gold
fell in her lap.
Looke in the
Table.*

*One thirst was
for wine, the o-
ther to know his
wines clustres.*

*Sentence, accor-
ding to that say-
ing. Malum
bene possumus ne
moueas.
Sentence.*

Sentence.



THE ARGUMENT.

*Renaldo heares two tales to like effect,
Tone of a Bargeman, tother of a knight:
Both prouing that rewards will soone infect
The mindes of chastest dames, and make them light:
To Lippaduse he doth his course direct,
But first Orlando finisht had his fight:
That Hermit that Rogero did baptise,
Heal'd Oliner, and Sobrine in likewise.*

I



Curst, ô greedie, ô vn-
siable
Desire of gaine, I do not
maruell sure,
If thou the base and filthy
minds art able,
To cause to stoope vnto
thy carren lure,
Sith oft we see some per-
sons honorable,
Can scarce thy weake and base assaults endure,
Who if they could thy foule entisements shun,
No doubt but they great glory should haue won.

2

Some men can measure earth, and sea, and sky,
And tell the change and cause of eu'ry season,
And wade so farre with wit, or mouat to hy,
They search both heau'n & hel with depth of reason
But when thou com'st in place, then by and by,
Thou putt'st their daintie tafts so out of season,
They place their whole delight, their hope, their
In only scraping and in heaping wealth. (health

3

Another man in warres hath great renowe,
And gets the conquest in each bloudie strife,
And wins this fortesse, and that walled towne,
Opposing his stout brest to perils rife,
Thou onely conquerst him, and thrusts him downe,
And keepest him thy prisoner all his life:
Some men, excelling in each art and studdie,
Thou dost obscure, with base desires and muddie.

4

What should I speake of dames of worth not small,
That hauing louers, men of great delarts,

Oppose their honours, as a brasen wall,
Against their suits with vnrelenting harts?
But come some miser, base deformed squall,
That saue his riches, hath no worthy parts,
They breake the wall, and make therein a gap,
To take the showre that fell in Danaes lap.

5

Nor without cause hereof complaine do I,
Take me that can, for I do rightly take it,
Nor from my matter do I swarue awrie,
Or by a vaine digression do forsake it:
Yet to my former speech I not applie,
But tending to a future tale I spake it:
Now let me tell you of Renaldo first,
That with one draught wold swage his double thirst

6

But whether that his courage did him faile,
Or that on more aduise, he changed minde,
He thought and said, what should it one auale,
To seeke a thing he would be loth to finde?
My wife a woman is, their sex is fraile,
I yet am to beleue the best enclinde;
I know I cannot better my beliefe,
And if I change it, it will be my grieft.

7

What good may come by such a straight espyall,
Into my fences surely cannot sinke,
Much hurt may come, there can be no denyall,
Let nothing seuer thole whom God doth linke:
Wherefore to make so vnaccustomd triall,
Were sinne, and tempting God as I do thinke:
Then drinke this cup, (quoth he) that list, not I,
I am not, nor I minde not to be drie.

Hh iij

*Ouid.
Aurea nunc ve-
rè sunt secula:
plurimus auro
Venit honos, au-
ro conciliator a-
mor.
Danae had a
showre of gold
fell in her lap.
Looke in the
Table.*

*One thirst was
for wine, she to
shew to know his
wines chastite.*

*Sentence, accor-
ding to that say-
ing. Malum
bene possumus ne
moueas.
Sentence.*

Sentence.

8

*Simile.**This was well
considered of
Renaldo.*

God would such skill from mortall men be hid,
And eu'n as Adam wrought his ouerthrow,
By tasting fruit, that God did him forbid,
So he that curiously will search to know,
All that his wife hath said, or what she did,
May fortune at the last him selfe befhrow:
And shall confound him selfe (this thinke I verily)
And liue in sorrow, that did erst liue merily.

9

Thus much said good Renaldo, and withall
He thrust away that hatefull cup of wine,
And then he saw of teares, a streame not small,
Flow from the master of that house his eyne:
Which past, he said, now foule may them befall,
That first procur'd this miserie of mine:
To proue (which I shall sorrow all my life)
That, which bereft me of my dearest wife.

10

Why was not I (said he) with you acquainted,
Ten yeares ere this, to take aduise so sound,
Before my heart was thus with sorrow tainted,
Of which no ease can now, nor end be found:
But that you may, as in a table painted,
Behold my griefes, I will royou expound,
What could this mine vncomparable woe,
And then you sure will pittie me I know.

11

Not farre from hence you left a little towne,
About the which there runnes a prettie lake,
That fells into this streame of great renowne,
But from Banaco first his head doth take,
Erected when those walls were beaten downe,
That erst Agenors dragon there did make;
There was I borne of houle and stocke not base,
Though of meane wealth inferiour to my race.

*Banaco.**Cadmus sounce of
Agenor, turned
into a Dragon,
built the towne
of Thebes.*

12

But though to me dame Fortune was but spare,
That by my birth small wealth to me there grew,
Yet Nature did with bountie great and care,
Supply that want, by faire and comely hew,
My seemly personage, my beautie rare,
To me the liking of full many drew:
My qualities thereto, were quaint and iollie,
Although I know to praise ones selfe is follie.

13

Within this towne a great rich man did tarrie,
Well leard, and wise, and old beyond all credit,
For ere he dide, he on his backe did carrie,
Full sixscore yeares and eight at least, he fed it:
An hundred yeares he liued solitarie,
But after that (you know what humor bred it)
He lou'd a dame, and with his wealth so wrought her
That at the last he gat of her a daughter.

14

And least the daughter should proue like the mother,
To sell her chastite for filthie pelfe,
Which whosoever sels, it quite vndoth her,
Although she thinks she doth enrich her selfe,
Therefore he bred her farre from sight of other,
And by the helpe of many a bellish elfe,
Which by his skill in Magicke, he could master,
He built this house of Tutch and Allablast.

Sentence.

15

He caused chaste old women, her to nourish
In this same house, in which she grew so faire,
And in those yeares when youth doth chiefly florish,
He let not any thither to repaire,
That were in looks, or speech, or manners whorish,
But contrary, he caused in Marble faire,
Or else on tables to be drawne and carued,
All such whose chastities had praise deserued.

16

Nor onely such as haue in ancient times,
Bene pattern true of manners chaste and pure,
And haue opposed against all fleshly crimes,
Most chaste and vertuous thoughts (a buckler sure)
By which their name to such high honor climes,
As their great praise shall euermore indure:
But such as shall excell in times to come,
Of which those eight, that erst you saw be some.

17

Now when this aged fire had with his skill,
Procur'd his daughter be thus choisely bred,
It was my hap, (shall I say good or ill?)
That I was deem'd most worthy her to wed:
And that old man bare her so great good will,
He gaue to me this house thus furnished,
With needfull things within it and without it,
And all the lands in twentie mile about it,

18

But her owne shape, so pleas'd my heart and eyne,
That for the rest I did but little care,
For needle workes, and for embrodries fine,
I thinke her skill with Pallas might compare;
To heare her play or sing, a thing deuine
It was, her stroke so sweete, her voyce so rare:
In other sciences, her skill was such,
As was her fathers, or almost as much.

19

Great was her wit, no lesse then wit, her fauour,
As might in tenslesse stones affection moue,
To this she had a sweete and kind behauour,
As more then all the rest ingendred loue,
It seem'd her sole delight was in my fauour,
Out of my sight, she was most loth to moue:
So liued I, and still had lined so,
But that my selfe did worke my selfe this wo.

20

For when her father finisht had his life,
Full fife yeares after I had got his daughter,
Then grew the causes of this wofull strife,
That vnto sorrow turneth all my laughter;
For when I doted most vpon my wife,
And of the world the chiefeft ieuell thought her,
A dame of noble birth, of person seemly,
Did hap to fall in loue with me extremly.

21

This dame, for passing skill in Magicke art,
Was comparable to the best Magicion,
But yet for all her skill, my constant hart,
She could not moue nor turne on no condition;
To cure her maladie, or ease her smart,
I still refused to be her Phisition,
Because, the med'cin that of me she sought,
As iniurie vnto my wife I thought.

Yet

*Chastold women
for if they be
bene vnchaste
their youth, they
be thus ill gene-
rall.**These eight were
those that sup-
posed the fountain
in the xly. booke.**It was a faire
demeanor.**Pallas was ex-
cellent in all
her works. Look
in the Table.**Sentence.**Looke in the
Allusion.*

22
Yet was her bewtie much, I must confesse,
And great her offers she to me did make,
Beside the loue she did to me professe,
Would moue a man some care of her to take;
But my wiues loue, did me so firme possesse,
I all reiected, onely for her sake,
And that which most to her my liking drew,
Was that I found her still so kind and trew.

23
The good opinion, and the strong surmise,
I had of my wiues chastitie and truth,
Would without doubt, haue made me to despise
The Dame, whose bewtie bred to Troy such ruth,
And all the wealth, though laid before mine eyes,
That *Inno* offerd to the Troian youth,
Yet my refusall, and her oft repulses,
No part of her great loue, from her expulses.

24
Melissa, so was this inchantresse name,
Perceiuing still in vaine to me she sewed,
Once finding me at leysure, to me came,
And in most cunning sort, her suit renewed,
And secretly she kindled iealous flame
Within my brest, which oft I since haue rued.
She saith, I do but well so true to be
Vnto my wife, if she were so to me.

25
But how know you (saith she) your wife is trew,
That of her faith as yet no prooffe haue made,
You neuer let her go scant from your vew,
When none can come to vice her to perswade,
Nor none can see her, none to her can sew,
Tis easie to resist where none inuade,
To praise her truth vnto, is too much hast,
Your care, and not her vertue keeps her chaste.

26
But get you but from home some little while,
That men to sue to her might take occasion,
And thinking you are absent many a mile,
With letters and with gifts to make inuasion,
And then if you shall finde in her no guile,
Except she yeeld to gifts, and to perswasion,
So she haue hope to do it vnspied
Then thinke your wife is chaste, when that is tried.

27
With these and such like words th'Inchantresse fly,
Did make me do that that hath me vndonne,
By name, to giue consent my wife to try,
If so she could by such assaults be wonne:
But how shall I be well assur'd (saith I)
To know at my returne, what she hath donne,
And whether she, with these so great assayes,
Haue at my hands deserued blame or prayse.

28
Forsooth (saith she) I will on you bestow,
A drinking bowle, not much vnlike that cup,
With which *Morgana* made her brother know,
Genewras fraud, when he thereon did sup.
Who drinks hereof, his wiues truth plaine shal know
If she be chaste, he drinks the liquor vp,
But if a cuckold to carrowse doth thinke,
He sheddeth in his bosome all the drinke.

29
Now ere you go, the cup I wish you tast,
And you shall drinke, perhaps and shall not spill,
Because as yet, I thinke your wife is chaste,
As neuer being tempted vnto ill:
But try againe when as a month is past,
And you shall see I trow, a prettie skill,
For then I grant, that if you drinke it cleanly,
Abooue all men, you blessed are not meanly.

30
I tooke her offer, and I tooke the say,
Of that same curst cup, with sweete successe,
I find my wife vnspotted to that day,
As I my selfe was sure, and she did guesse:
Now straight (quoth she) to part from hence away,
For one or two months space, your selfe addresse,
Then try at your returne, how you haue sped,
If you drinke cleane, or if the drinke you shed.

31
But now this parting such a penance seemed,
As I in deed could by no meanes endure,
Not that of my deare wife, I ought misdeemed,
For her of all the rest, I thought cocksure;
But that her company I so esteemed:
Well then (*Melissa* saith) I will procure,
If you will do, but what I shall you teach,
That you shall change your cloths, your shape, and
(speach.

32
And so you shall your selfe to her present,
And make your selfe a plaine and perfect prooffe,
I foolishlie to this deuice assent,
And so it hapt that hence, not farre aloofe,
A knight of large reuenue and of rent,
Dwelt at *Giabana*, fit for this behoofe,
His personage was braue, his purse well lyned,
His years but young, to *Venus* all inclyned.

*Giabana, it is to
be pronounced
Iabana, a town
upon the river of
Pot.*

33
That gallant youth had one day bene a halking,
His hawke by hap, into my garden flew,
He comming thither, found my wife a walking,
And much he likt her, at the very vew;
But when he had a while with her bene talking,
To burning loue, his warme affection grew,
That after that, full many wayes he prou'd her,
If his request to grant, he could haue mou'd her.

34
But hauing still such short and sharpe repulses,
He meanes no more, in that fond suit to wade,
But from his thought, her shape he not expulses,
That first to giue the bold attempt him made;
So well *Melissa* knew to touch my pulses,
To take his forme, she doth me loone perswade,
I straight was chang'd I know not how nor wheare,
In face, in clothes, in speech, in eyes, in heare.

*Looke in the
Allusion,*

35
Now hauing to my wife a tale deuild,
As though to th'East I then my iourney tooke,
And being like this youth, so strange disguild:
In gate, in voyce, apparell, and in looke,
I came as fly *Melissa* me aduild,
And she did like my Page or Lackie looke,
Vpon her arme she beares a litle flasket,
In which, of iewells rich she hid a casket.

Hh iij

*Morgana's bro-
ther was king
Merus of Corn-
wall.
This is the
husband of Arthur
and Lancelot.
Looke in the
Table.*

36

I that well knew each roome, came in securely,
 Into the house, my Page and I together;
 There where my Ladie sate alone demurely,
 For neither groome as then, nor maid was with her
 Then I expound my suit, and that more surely
 She might belecue my words, I needs would giue
 Pearls Rubies, Dyamonds of passing price, (her,
 The wicked baites, to draw good minds to vice.

Sentence.

37

I had she should esteeme this gift but small
 To that she might of me in time expect:
 I said, her husbands absence fit did fall,
 And wisdom bids occasions not neglect:
 I prayd her weigh my constant loue withall,
 Which long had lasted, though without effect,
 And last, I ware I had some grace deserued,
 That had so long, that had so truly serued.

Sentence.

38

At first she blusht, and lookt with lowring cheare,
 And would not hearken, but did still retire,
 Eutth' Orient Pearls, and stones that shon so cleare,
 Did mollifie her heart, to my desire:
 She softly saith, but so as I might heare,
 That for the thing, which I so oft require,
 She grant it would, and would on me bestow it,
 So she were sure that none beside might know it.

39

This answer was to me a poysond dart,
 To strike my soule, in desperat disease,
 And straight my heart, my head, and eu'rie part,
 I felt a frozen ieaousie to sease:
 And presently *Melissa* by her art,
 Restor'd my shape (as she could do with ease.)
 How lookt my wife (think you) when by my trapping
 She found herselfe thus foule taken napping.

40

We both do looke like ashes, pale and wan,
 We both stood dum, we both cast downe our eye,
 Scarfe able was my voyce (do what I can)
 To serue my turne, while I did thinke to cry:
 Then wouldst thou wife vnto another man,
 Mine honour sell, if he the same could by?
 She held her peace, and answer made me none,
 But onely wept and made a piteous mone.

41

The shame was much, but much more the disdain,
 That of my foolish visage rane she hath,
 Within due bonds she could not it containe,
 But that it brake to spite, to hate, to wrath:
 Retol'd with me no longer to remaine,
 When *Phobus* charret trode his Westerne path,
 That euening in a small barge of her owne,
 Downe streame she swimmeth, as if she had flowne.

42

Betimes next day she doth vnto that knight,
 Herselfe present, that her before had loued,
 In whose disguised shape, I her last night,
 Both gainst mine owu, and gainst her honor proued
 You well may iudge it was a welcome sight
 To him, that long before such suit had moued,
 From thence she sends to me this message plaine,
 That she would neuer come at me againe.

43

Ah woe was me, for from that houre to this,
 She bydes with him, where me they lout and scorne,
 And I that could not see my sugred blys,
 Now by forgoing it, am quite forlorne;
 Nor can I say but iust my penance is,
 Which still growes more, and will till I be worne,
 And sure one yeare, of life had quite bereft me,
 Saue for one onely comfort that was left me.

44

This onely comfort brought me some releefe,
 That for the space of ten yeares, all my guests,
 (Though many of their wiues had great beleefe)
 Yet still they shed the drinke vpon their breasts:
 To finde so many partners in my greefe,
 Allwageth much the paine that me molests,
 Your onely selfe hath bene the onely stranger,
 That hath refused a draught of so great danger.

A forie comfort.

45

My ouermuch desire to sift my wife,
 In so precile, and in so straight a sort,
 Doth cause that now I shall not all my life,
 Liue on good houre, endure it long or short:
 Glad was *Melissa* that procurde this strife,
 But soone I turnd and marred all her sport,
 For finding she, was of my harme procurer,
 I hated her, and could no more endure her.

46

But she that finds herselfe disdaind mearty,
 Where she had hoped to haue found reward,
 And me, whom she profess to loue so dearly,
 Her loue and kindnes nothing to regard,
 The griefe hereof did tuch her minde so nearly,
 To leaue this countrey she forthwith prepar'd,
 And euer since farre hence she is abiding,
 Whereas of her, we heare no newes nor tiding.

47

Thus told the wofull knight, in dolefull wife,
 This ruefull tale vnto his noble guest,
 Who with compassion moued, thus replies;
Melissa counsell certes was not best,
 That did without discretion you aduise,
 To anger waspes, or so to stirre their nest,
 And you your selfe did greatly ouershoot you,
 To seeke a thing, whose finding would not boot you

Sentence. u. i. in
Lazari, Noli ir-
ritare Cyathos.

48

What maruell is it if your wife were wonne
 With gifts, and were to lightnes soone alluered?
 Is she the first (thinke you) that so hath donne?
 No, nor the fiftith be you well assured,
 Yea, minds full sound haue wanted powre to shunne
 Such baites, and haue not such assaults endured:
 Haue you not heard of men that haue for gold,
 Their masters and their friends most dearest sold?

49

You should not with a dart so fierce assaile,
 If her defend herselfe to see you fought,
 What, know you not stone walls cannot auayle,
 Nor Steele, if gold be to the batt'rie brought?
 Now sure your selfe of duetie more did fayle,
 In tempting her, then she in being caught,
 Perhaps if she had tempted you so sore,
 Your folly would haue bene as much or more.

Horace.
Aurum per me-
dus ire facillius
est perire
amas saxa.

Thus

50

Thus spake *Renaldo*, and withall he rose,
And prayd he might betake him to his rest,
He minds a while himselfe there to repole,
And after to depart he doth request;
Small time he hath, and that he would dispose
With great regard, for so he thinks it best:
The gentle knight doth tel him when it please him
He may within his chamber rest and ease him.

51

But if you will vnto my counsell harke,
And that you haue (as you pretend) such hast,
I will appoint for you a little barke,
That shall with oares conuey you safe and fast,
There may you sleepe the while you find it darke,
And when your stomake serues you, take repast:
Thus may you, downe the streame in safety sliding,
Win one whole night, & saue a whole daies riding.

52

Renaldo this good offer doth accept,
And gaue him heartie thanks, then tooke his barge:
He found his host with him had promise kept,
And makes of needfull things prouision large:
No sooner was he settled, but he slept,
But yet before he gaue the steersman charge,
If that to sleepe too long it did befall him,
When he came neare *Ferrara*, then to call him.

53

Now did the knight of France in quiet sleepe,
And past by diuers townes of count the whiles,
And still the barge a pace most swift doth keepe,
Vpon that hand, where *Poe* make diuers Iles:
And now the *Rosie* colour gan to creepe
To th' *Esterne* skie, when hauing past some miles,
Eandano then the steersman wakt *Renaldo*,
When they discouerd both rocks of *Tealdo*.

54

Whereon when as the knight his eye had fixt,
He saith, O happie place that I behold,
Of which, by vew of wandring starres and fixt,
My cosin *Malagigis* oft foretold,
How that by heau'nly doome it was prefixt,
On thee to lay such blessings manifold,
As that thy glorie to such height should rise,
Of *Italie* to hold the chiefeest prise.

55

Thus good *Renaldo* spake, the while his bore
Downe that same streame did swim, or rather fly,
And when the knight came nearer he did note
The place, that seemed then all wast to ly,
And with a moorish water all on fote:
Yet did he much reioice thereof, for why,
He knew that that same towne in future time,
Ordained was to great renowne to clime.

56

His cosin *Malagige* and he whileare,
Had past that way, what time his cosin told,
That when the *Ram* had tane the golden spheare,
That fourth is plait in height, seu'n hundred fold,
Then should there be the brauest Iland there,
That euer sea, or streame, or lake did hold,
So well replenished that none should dare,
With this *Nausicas* Iland to compare.

57

And that it should for building faire, disgrace
Tiberius Ile, that *Capry* they do call,
And that th' *Helperides* should giue it place,
For passing fruits, and fundrie sorts withall:
Beside, more store of beasts, for vie or chase,
Then *Circes* erst did keepe in field or stall,
That *Venus* with her sonne, and all the Graces,
Should chuse this seat, and leaue all other places.

58

And that a certaine Prince should this fulfill,
So prouident, so stout, so wise, so stayd,
As hauing powre vnited to his will,
Should with strong Rampires fence y town (he said)
That foes should haue no force to worke her ill,
Nor she should neuer need of foraine aid:
And that the man by whom this must be donne,
Should be both *Hercles* Sire, and *Hercles* sonne.

59

Thus while the knight of France with great delight,
Did call to mind, what should another day,
Vpon that happie Citi e there alight,
His water-men did giue so lustie way,
That of the place he soone had left the sight,
And keeping on the right hand all the way,
They went beyond *Saint Georges* in an howre,
And passed by *Giabanas* ditch and Towre.

60

And now *Renaldo*, as doth oft befall,
That one concept another out doth drie,
Began the knight to memorie to call,
That last did him kind entertainment giue,
That had iust cause this City more then all
To hate, and should haue still while he did liue:
The cursed cup he further cald to minde,
In which men may their spoues falshood finde.

61

And last of his hosts later speech he thought,
Concerning that same cup, and how they sped,
I meane his guests, that that same triall sought,
Into their boloms still the liquor shed:
Now he doth halfe repent he mist the draught,
Yet was he glad thereof, for why (he led)
Had it false well, what had I got thereby?
If not, in what a case had then bene I?

62

I now belecue so well, as hauing tried
With good successe belecue I better should not;
So that I might haue well bene damnified,
But by my triall mend my state I could not:
But what grieve had it bene if I had spied,
By my most deare *Clarice*, that I would not?
Much may they leese, but gains get small or none,
That will in play a thousand lay to one:

63

These later words so lowd and plaine he spake,
(Though to himselfe) that he that steard the bore,
Who to his speech and gestures heed did take,
The words, and meaning of his words did note:
Wherefore a further cause of speech to make,
As one that though he ware a hurric core,
Yet was well spoken, and of good bold sprite,
He straight doth fall to reason with the knight.

*Of these you may
looke the table if
you be not instru-
cted in the histo-
ry.*

*This is said to the
praise of Alfonso
Duke of Ferrara*

*In this Citi e
dwells he that
keeps his wife.*

*Clarice wife to
Renaldo.
Sentence.*

64
In fine, the summe of all their argument,
Was that his wit was much to be controld,
That sought to make too great experiment,
Of womens truths, more then their force can hold:
For she that can with chaste and firme intent,
Maintaine her truth, against assault of gold,
Might eu'n as easlie defend the same,
Against a thousand swords in midst of flame.

65
To this the Bargeman said, you sure may sweare it,
They must not be assayld with darts so fierce,
For their soft brests, too tender are to beare it,
Sith coats of sounder prooffe, such shot will pierce:
And sure a prettie tale (if you would heare it)
I could (saith he) to this effect rehearse,
Of one who though his wife had sore offended,
By her, in greater sinne was apprehended.

66
I meane the tale of that *Adonio*, which
The great grift gaue vnto the Iudges wife,
A little dogge that made his owner rich,
A thing that in these parts is knowne so rife,
The knight replide, mine cares to heare it ich,
For neuer yet I heard it in my life:
Then if it please you, heare it now you shall,
The Stears-man said, and thus began his tale.

Here begins the
Steersmans tale.
Vlpian wrote
of the ciuill law.

67
There was a learned Lawyer, cald by name
Anselmus, borne here in our neighbour towne,
That so long studied *Vlpian*, till he came,
To be a Iudge, and weare a scarlet gowne,
And hauing won great wealth he woo'd a dame,
For bewtie and for state of great renowne;
They wedded were, for better and for worse,
So he her person lik't, so she his purse.

68
Her qualities and hauiour past the rest,
She seemed all of louelynes composed,
Not fit indeed for him, that was to rest,
And to his bookes, more then to sports disposed:
Wherefore foule iealous thoughts his mind possesst,
And that his wife plaid false, he still supposed,
Yet cause was none, of her so to misdeeme,
Sauc that too faire, and wittie she did seeme.

69
Now in the selfe same Citie dwelt a knight,
(Too neare a neighbour to this man of law)
That was of that same stocke descended right,
That had their offspring from the serpents iaw,
From whence the Fairy eake, that *Manto* hight,
And built our Citie, doth her lynage draw,
This knight that was *Adonio* cald by name,
Was much enamord on the louely dame.

Of *Manto* looke
in the *Hystoria*.

70
And that he might attaine this Ladies loue,
He doth begin to spend beyond all measure,
In clothes, in feasts, his calling far aboue,
In shoues, in playes, to do his mistres pleasure:
To beare the charge thereof it would behoue,
To haue that Emperour *Tiberius* treasure,
So as I weene ere winters twaine were past,
His lands were quite consum'd, he spent so fast.

This *Tiberius*
was a iust, and a
Christia Prince,
looke in the *Ta-*
bla.

71
Wherefore compeld to strike his loftie sayles,
He sodainly surceast his stately port,
The house, now that the Lords reuenue sayles,
Stood solitarie, quite without resort:
There were no Feasants, Partriges, nor Quayles,
His pittance now was growne but bare and short,
And he that earst was king of all this feasting,
Playd least in fight, now doubting of arresting.

72
And therefore lothing to be knowne or seen,
He purposed in this place not long to tarrie,
But with a minde to leaue his country cleen,
He stole away fro thence all solitarie:
Her onely loue, that of his heart was Queen,
In all his woes he still with him doth carrie,
But lo, when as his Ebb did seeme most low,
Good fortune made his tyde most high to flow.

73
For as he wanderd here and there abroad,
He saw how that a sturdie clowne and stout,
With sturdie staffe, layd on no little load,
Vpon a bush, still beating there about:
Adonio in the place makes some abroad,
And askt the cause, of that same country lout,
Who told him that a monstrous Snake and huge,
Had taken that same bush for a refuge.

Ouid in the
abrid of the *met-*
amorphosis,
hath a tale of *Tu-*
resius, that with
smiling of ioue
snakes changed
his shape.

74
And told him further, he that stir did make,
With minde to fiade, and kill it ere he part.
Adonio for his crest did giue the Snake,
And therefore lou'd and fauord Snakes in hart,
As from whose kinde he did his gentrie take;
Wherefore vnto the clowne he doth impart
His minde so farre, at last he him perswaded,
To let alone the Snake he so inuaded.

75
This done, he went as he was bent before,
Farre from his country, where he was vknown,
And so indur'd till seu'n whole yeares and more,
Of woe, and want, quite ore his head were blown:
But that great loue he to his mistres bore,
Him forst, though now all out of fashion grown,
With bushie beard, leane cheekes, & ragged cloths,
To turne vnto the place that most he lothes.

76
In this meane time, our towne had cause to send,
Some sage Ambassadour vnto the Pope,
That must vpon his Holynes attend,
And for his suit to take a whole yeare scope:
The Iudge by lot was chosen to that end,
(O curld lot that killed all his hope)
To shunne this office he tryes many shifts,
By scuses, promises, by prairs and gifts.

77
But finding that he straued against the streame,
At last against his will, he takes the place,
Though to depart into another Reame,
It seemed vnto him, a grievous case:
His ielousie therewith grew most extreame,
Misdoubting his wiues truth, so long a space,
Yet nath'les her, in graue and frendlesse speech,
To haue great care thereof, he doth beseech.

He

He saith, a woman cannot take vpon her,
With bewtie, riches, nor with high Nobillitie,
To clayme the true deserued prayle of honer,
If chastitie do faile by her fragillitie,
This is the vertue that defends her owner,
And now she may (he saith) with great facilitie,
Attaine great praise, and show thereof great prooffe,
While he is forst, to stay so farre aloofe.

79

These words he spake, and many such as these,
Thereby to moue her, to continue true,
And she (poore soule) yet free from such disease,
His parting thence, did much lament and rue;
She swears that sooner men should draine the seas,
Then draw her mind so to forget her due,
Yea first she will eu'n dye the death she saith,
Much rather then to falsifie her faith.

80

The Iudge appeard with this her protestation,
Began to haue of her the lesse mistrust,
But yet his fond and ielous inclination,
So moues him, that search further needs he must:
He had a friend that could by coniuration,
Foretell of future matters true and iust:
That were it skill in Magicke, or in starres,
His guesse was such, as that it seldome arres.

81

He speaketh to that friend to this effect,
That he his wiues natiuitie would cast,
To learne if he did right or wrong suspect,
That she would in his absence liue vnchast:
The man thus praid, the figure doth erect,
And in their place the Planets all he plaist,
Anselmus leaues him busie, and next day,
Doth come to heare him what he hath to say.

82

'Twas long before th' Astronomer would speake,
As loth to speake, that would the Iudge offend,
With many scuses friuolous and weake,
He shifts him off, but vrged by his frend,
He told him flatly she would wedlocke breake,
And that she would to him proue false in th'end,
Not mou'd by bewty, not by suit desired,
But eu'n for lucre sake directly hyred.

83

Now when *Anselmus* former bad beleefe,
Was newly reconfirmd by Spheares supernall,
It doubtlesse did so much augment his greefe,
I thinke his torture past the paines infernall:
And more then all the rest, this greu'd him cheefe,
And to his heart a corsue was eternall,
To thinke that Auarice should her entise,
Vpon her chastitie to set a price.

84

Yet to preuent all that such minde might breed,
Most earnestly he bendeth all his powre,
For (as they say) man is compeld by need,
To rob the Church, and hallow'd things deuowre,
His iewells, plate, and stocke that did exceed,
He put all in her hands, that present howre,
And made it all her owne by deed of gift,
And told her plaine what was herein his drift.

He saith he giues it her on this condition,
Not that she should strue to increase or mend it,
For why (he said) she should haue free commission,
To sell, to giue, cast it away, and spend it,
But onely that she should auoyd suspition,
Of wedlocke breach, and by no meanes offend it,
On this condition, all he then bequeaths her,
That he may find her such as now he leaues her.

86

He further doth her earnestly exhort,
That presently when he is gone away,
She should for more eschuing of resort,
Not any longer in the Citie stay,
But at his countrey house, where in good sort,
Till his returne the season passe she may:
Belike, he thought in tillers of the ground,
And countrey swaines, entilements none are found.

87

His louely wife *Argia*, all this space,
Still hanging on his necke while he did speake,
With kindly teares bedewed all his face,
And much it greu'd her to be iudgd so weake,
And to be deemed so deuoyd of grace,
That in his absence she would wedlocke breake,
Her manners haue not bene so light and vicious,
She saith, to moue him to be thus suspitious.

88

I should too long in this one matter dwell,
If all that past betweene them two at large,
When he departed, I to you should tell,
Stil itterating that his former charge:
Now on his way he goes, God speed him well,
The griefe was great that did his heart surcharge,
But thus they part, her eyes all full of teares,
His minde of ielousies, and thousand feares.

89

This while *Adonio* looking pale and wan,
As earst I told, and ouergrowne with heare,
To trauell to his countrey-ward began,
In hope that no man now would know him there,
He trauels in the secrett fort he can,
Vnseene, vnknowne, till he arriued wheare,
He rescude had the shake, ten years before,
That by the clowne pursued was so fore.

90

Arriuing at this place by breake of day,
He saw a Ladie walking neare the lake,
Who though she seemd attyrd in strange array,
Yet for some great estate one would her take,
Her count'nance did such maiestie bewray:
She toward him with stately gate did make,
And looking on him with a gracious cheare,
She spake these words so loud as he might heare.

91

Gentleman, though you do not know my face,
Yet am I bound to you, and am your frend,
I am your cosin, and of *Cadmus* race
Our royall stocke doth lineally descend,
I am that *Manto*, that in yond same place,
To build that towne did first begin and end,
And Mantua, according to my name,
Tis cald, as you perhaps haue heard by fame.

*Of Fayries, looke
in the Historie.*

92

I am a Fayrie, and to make you know,
To be a Fayrie what it doth import,
We cannot dye how old so ere we grow:
Of paine and harmes of eu'rie other sort
We tast, but yet no death we nature ow;
But which is worse then if our liues were short,
Each seu'nth day we constrained are to take,
Vpon our selues the person of a snake.

93

To be transformd to Serpents vgly hew,
That creepeth still, and on his bellie goth,
Is such a grieve to vs, to tell you true,
Not one of vs but then to liue doth loth.
Now that I further may declare to you,
From whence this kindnesse that I spake of, groth,
Know this, what day we haue this cursed shape,
We hardly dangers infinite escape.

94

*Thence comes the
saying (canope
and angue)*

No liuing thing is lothed more then they,
So that no sooner one of vs is spyde,
But we are chast and hunted out straight way,
And if we finde no place our selues to hyde,
They lay on load, and beat vs so that day,
That we the paine thereof long after byde,
And who would not rather one death haue chused,
Then beaten euermore to be and brused?

95

Now Sir, the benefit that I confesse
I haue receiu'd, in which your merit stands,
Was this, some seu'n yeares since, or not much lesse,
As you did wander ou'r these woods and lands,
You saued me from danger and distresse,
I should haue sufferd at a villens hands:
Who though he could not slay me, neare the latter,
Did seeke with cudgill me to bruse and batter.

96

For why those dayes that we be snakes (she saith)
And creeping groueling, bellies on the ground,
The heau'ns, that other times our hest obay'th,
Denyes their aid, in vs no force is found:
Sometimes the Sun at our command ment stay'th,
The stodie earth doth moue and runneth round,
And we can by our powre, cause in a trife,
Ife turne to flame, and fire congeale to Iffe.

97

Now heare I come, your courtisie to requite,
Which seu'n yeares since, I to me done did note,
Now to reward you I haue powre and might,
While I am free from serpents cursed cote,
Three times your fathers wealth, you shall ere night
Possesse, and I will set you so affote,
You neuer shalbe poore, to your liues end,
But euer haue the more, the more you spend.

98

And (for I know that in your former knot,
In which loue bound you first, you still are tide)
I will direct you so, by wayes I wot,
Your sure shall not be vnto you denide.
Now that the iealous Iudge at home is not,
Go thither straight, and I will be your guide,
She now is at her husbands countrie village,
Attending there good hufwifrie and tillage.

99

She further doth at large to him deuise,
How he shall go, in what apparell clad,
How he shall tempt her, in what manner wife,
And how to grant his suit, she should be glad;
Then told she how she would herselfe disguise,
For why, for euer in her powre she had,
Except the dayes, in which she was a snake,
What shape she list, vpon herselfe to take.

100

Thus she disguisd him like a Pilgrime poore,
That on his shoulders doth a wallet beare,
And doth for Gods sake beg from doore to doore,
A gowne of Fryers gray she made him weare,
A strange apparell for a gallant woer:
Into an Island dog, with shagged heare,
As white as Ermin, and the pretiest elfe,
That euer nature made, she changd herselfe.

101

And thus vnto *Argias* they resort,
First to some vtter roomes, in which were byding,
The Hinds and Laborers of meaner sort,
Heare he with certaine pypes of his prouiding,
His dog made dance, and make such prettie sport,
That glad was he could bring his mistres tyding,
Who needs would see as much as they had scene,
Such was the Doctors destinie I weene.

102

Adonio to her presence thus admitted,
Commands the dog which in all points obayd,
His turnes, his dances, and his gestures fitted,
So due and iust, to all the Pilgrime sayd.
They musd to see a dog so rarely witted,
And marking still the qualities he playd,
In seeing them they take great mirth & pleasure,
And prayd the little dog beyond all measure.

103

Much wonder first but after much desier,
Bred in the Iudges wife, the dog to get,
She bids the nurse the dog to buy or hier,
And try what price the man thereof would set:
Dame (said the Pilgrime) had your mistres by her,
In coyned gold, as much as euer yet,
A womans thought did wish, it would not boot,
Of this same dog of mine to buy on foot.

104

And plaine to shew that that was true he sayd,
And that it rather better was then worse,
He tooke her straight aside with him and prayd,
The dog to giue two duckats to the nurse,
The dog but shooke his eares, and out he layd
The gold; there take and put it in thy purse
Adonio saith, and thinke what price is able,
To buy a dog that is so profitable.

105

What ere I aske, this dog to me will bring,
Embroiderd gownes and kirtles cloth of gold,
A chaine of pearle, a iewell, or a ring,
In shorter time then it can well be told;
Yet tell my Lady this, she hath a thing,
For which alone my Spaniell can be sold,
To pay me gold or coyne, I count it dodging,
But I will sell it her, for one nights lodging.

*This was plaine
dealing.*

This

105

This said, he sent by her as for a token,
A gem of passing price, then newly made;
The nurse rewarded thus, and fairely spoken,
And wld (perhaps) to trafficke in such trade,
Went backe therewith, and hauing fitly broken
The matter first, her mistres doth perswade,
To buy the dog, and said she might atchieue it,
With such a price, as is no losse to giue it.

107

At first, the fayre *Argia* backward drew,
As partly, being loth to breake her faith,
And partly doubting all could not be trew,
The which the tarding nurse before her laith;
But she with othes doth her first tale renew,
And that such offers seldome come she faith,
In fine she wan her mistres to agree,
Next day more priuately the dog to see.

108

Adonios next apparance in the place,
Became the Doctors ruine and confusion,
Such duckets, such spur Ryals in like case,
Such gems he shewd indeed, or by illusion,
He mollifi'd thereby my Ladies grace,
And mou'd her make the bargaine in conclusion,
And this did (then perhaps) the rather moue her,
When as she knew he was her ancient louer.

109

Thus her true louers presence, and his prayer,
The comforts of her nurse, that whorish drudge,
The great rewards he presently did pay her,
The absence long of that same iealous Iudge;
And last'y, hope that sure none would bewray her,
Wipt from her conscience scruple all and grudge,
So that she tooke his dog, and for his labor,
Gane him free leaue to play vpon her taber.

110

Thus now *Adonio* frankly reapt the fruit,
Of that faire Ladies loue that he had wonne,
The which he followd still with sweet pursuit,
Vnto their likings both: this while the Sun,
Before the Iudge full ended had his suit,
Through twise six signes his yearely course had run,
And home he came at last, suspecting fore,
That which th' *Astronomer* had told before.

111

But ere vnto his owne house he would go,
First of th' *Astronomer* to aske he ment,
If so his wife had taryd chaste or no,
Since he from home on his Ambassage went:
The cunning man, that meant the troth to show,
Doth calculate, to see how starres were bent,
And when that he the planers well had vewd,
That she had plaid the quean, he doth conclude.

112

And that it was befallne as he foreshowed,
How she, with mightie gifts and bribes allured,
Her selfe vpon another had bestowed.
The wretched Iudge, with no small grieffe indured,
To heare these newes, & though too true he trowed
The same, yet seeking to be more assured,
He calls the nurse aside, at his home comming,
And seekes to sift her with no little cunning.

113

With diuers circumquakes and deuises,
He seeketh of the nurse to finde the trace,
But she in speech so warie and so nice is,
As one belike well studied in the case,
That all his cunning speech her not intices,
But that she still denide with shamelesse face,
That which she knew, and whereof her perswasion
Had bene in part, though not the chiefe occasion.

114

When as the iealous Iudge long time in vaine,
Had tempted her with promises and gifts,
And that he saw for all his search and paine,
He found lesse certentie, the more he sifts,
He doth expect to try a further traine,
As one not vnacquainted with such drifts,
He watcht a time, when they should fall to bralling,
As still where women are, is oft befalling.

115

And as he thought indeed so fell it out,
The testie nurse one day not pleased well,
Came vnto him at their next falling out,
And of her owne accord, the truth doth tell:
Thinke you, when as the Iudge had heard her out,
How he did chafe, and fret, and fume, and swell,
So neare vnto his heart and braine it sits,
It little wanted to haue reau'd his wits.

116

And in this agonie resolu'd to dye,
And finish both his owne dayes and his wiues,
And so his grieffe, and her great shame thereby
To wipe away, with ending both their liues,
He turneth to the Citie by and by,
As that same desperat desire him driues,
And thence a trustie seruant with instruction,
He lends of purpose for his wiues destruction.

117

He bids him tell *Argia* in his name,
That on the sodaine he was false so ficke,
That but to him without delay she came,
The doubt was great she should not find him quick:
Wherefore her iourney with more speed to frame,
To ryde behinde this man, who in a thicke,
That was right in the way vnto the Citie,
Had charge to kill her there without all pitie.

118

And straight accordingly the seruant went,
To say and do, as much as he was bidden,
But she foretold of that their fell intent,
(For nothing from her little dogge was hidden)
And taught withall, the same how to preuent,
Away with this saue seruant she is ridden,
And in few howres arriued at the wood,
Where he was purposed to haue shed her blood.

119

Then did he tell to her his masters will,
And drew his sword a speedie death to giue her,
He onely offerd, ere he would her kill,
To grant her time, to pray God to forgiue her:
I cannot tell you by what manner skill,
She did her selfe forth of his hands deliuer,
But gone she was, he seeking all about,
And for his life he could not find her out.

11

120

Backe went the fellow, with astonied face,
With trembling heart, and courage all dismayd,
And made his master, at the wondrous case,
No lesse then he had bene afore afrayd,
He knew not how, by Faery *Mantos* grace,
His wife could when she list, haue helpe and ayd,
For why the nurse that did the rest vnfold,
I knew not why, but this she neuer told.

121

The Doctour now was plagu'd with griefe extreame,
Far more then euer he had felt before,
What erst was but a mote, is now a beame,
Nor he one iot reuenged is the more;
His shame will now be blazd ou'r all the Reame,
And all men now, will laugh at him therefore,
The former error, might haue bene concealed,
But this to all the world wil be reuealed.

Proverb.

122

He thinks that sure, vpon this plaine detection,
Of his felonious mind, of which I spake,
She will, to keepe her out of his subiection,
To some great Lord, forthwith her selfe betake,
And liue in spite of him, with such protection,
And so a mocking stocke of him to make,
But most he doubts, least to some man she goth,
As is a leacher, and a ruffian both.

123

Wherefore so foule a mischiefe to preuent,
He spares no paine, no trauell nor no cost,
To eu'rie towne, in Lombardie he sent,
With letters and with messages in post,
And further, he himselte in person went
To seeke his wife that was so strangely lost,
But all in vaine, for why of her abiding,
No inckling he could heare, nor anytyding.

124

And to conclude, at last he cald his man,
That man that made to him the strange report,
And bids him show the place, and if he can,
Where his lewd mistres vanish in such sort:
The seruant straight to leade the way began,
And to the place, together they resort,
But (which was strange) where erst he left a wood,
A wondrous stately Pallace now there stood.

125

The fayre *Argia* caused had this space,
Her Faery to erect there for her pleasure,
An house of Allablaster in the place,
Adorn'd and guilt, with cost beyond all measure:
Twere hard to thinke, much lesse to tell with grace,
What beautie was without, within what treasure;
My masters house, frō whence last night you came,
Was but a paltrie Alehouse to this same.

His master was
the knight of
Mantua, at
whose house Re-
malds supped.

126

Of costly Arras, there was so great plentie,
Of beds of silke, imbroderd, fresh, and new,
As furnisht chambers, more then ten timestwentie,
And halls, and whatsoeuer was in vew,
Cups, candlesticks, and bowls of stones most dentic,
Of precious substance, and of sundrie hew,
To be imployd for eating, and for drinking,
And store of gold, and silke beyond all thinking.

127

Now sir, the wretched Iudge, as I said earst,
That out to seeke his wife had here assignd,
And findes this house, in state as I rehearst,
Where he had nothing thought, but woods to find,
With wonder great his mazed head was pearst,
And doubted not a little in his mind,
If so himselte were sleeping then or waking,
Or if his troubled brayne, were in due taking.

128

He sees a Gipsen standing at the doore,
All blab-lipt, beetle browd, and bottle nozed,
Most greasie, nastie, his appafell poore,
His other parts, as Painters are disposed,
To giue to *Esop*; such a Blackamore
Could not be scene elsewhere, as he supposed,
So vile a visage, and so bad a grace,
To make eu'n Paradise alothsome place.

129

Anselmus seeing none but this same drudge,
Went vnto him, and praith him make it knowne,
Whose house is this: the Gipsen tels the Iudge,
That he himselte, the stately house doth owne:
The Iudge, that he doth mocke him sure doth iudge
And prayes the certaine truth to him be showne:
The Negro doth affirme with many an oth,
That that which he had said before, was troth.

130

And that he plainly might the truth perceauē,
He prayes him vew the house at better leasure,
And offreth him free libertie and leaue,
Of any thing was there, at his owne pleasure,
For him or for his friends, to take and leaue,
And eu'n as of his owne, to make free seasure:
The Doctor maruels that such liberalitie,
Could be in one, of so base show and qualitie.

131

But yet the Iudge, so fayre and kind intreated,
In frendly sort, doth from his horse alight,
And sees the house, as I before repeated.
With wonder great, and with as great delight,
So richly furnished, so Princely seated,
So brauely built for vse, as well as sight,
And eu'rie part with other so agreeing,
He could not satisfie his eyes with seeing.

132

Now when the Iudge came backe againe, he told
He nere saw house, so pleasing to his eye,
And sweares he thought that ten times *Crasus* gold,
Were scant a price, so rare a house to buy:
Yet may (the Negro saith) this house be sold,
Though not for coyne (for not for coyne care I)
Yet for some other ware, which sure I guesse,
You will esteeme at price a great deale lesse.

133

In fine, he made to him the like request,
As Sodomits did make for guests of *Lot*;
The Iudge his motion doth and him detest,
Who though fūe times repulst, yet ceaseth not,
But him with so large offers still he prest,
That in conclusion, like a beattly sor,
So as it might be done, in hugger mugger,
The Iudge agreed, the Negro him should ().

Argia

134

Argia that there by vnscene had stayd,
And teene him false into the sinne forenamed,
Disclod her selfe, and sharply did vpbayd
His filthy fact, that iustly might be blamed;
A Iudge (said she) reputed wise, and stayd,
Sione thus? wherewith the Doctor was so shamed,
He wisht the earth would cleaue vnto the center,
That he to hide himselfe, therein might enter.

135

But she exclaimeth on him still anew,
For his more shame, and for her more excuse,
And said, what punishment were fit for you,
For this foule sinne, against all natures vie?
That did no lesse then death to me thinke dew,
For such a small and naturall abuse,
With one that lou'd me, and whose gift was such,
As ten such houses are not worth so much.

136

If one death did vnto my fault belong,
One hunderd deaths were fit to thine to giue,
And though my selfe am in this place so strong,
That if I list, thou shouldst no longer liue,
Yet will I do to thee no further wrong,
But pardon thee, and thou shalt me forgiue,
And quite each other, all old debts and driblets,
And set the hares head, against the goose gyblets.

137

And let henceforth peace follow in effect,
As ought to be betweene the man and wife,
Nor euer tone to tother once obiect,
Our former fault in all our future life:
The Iudge was glad, and did it not neglect,
To take this frendly end of cursed strice;
Thus as good frends, they liued many a yeare,
And while they liu'd, they lou'd each other deare.

138

And there the steers-man did his storie end,
With which he mou'd the worthy knight to lafter,
Who blam'd the Doctor, that did so offend,
And talked of the same a good while after:
But much he did *Argia* wit commend,
Or at the least, the wit of her that taught her,
To make the Iudge into that net fall in,
In which her selfe was false with far lesse sin.

139

Now when the Sunne gan mount vnto the South,
A little Table in the Barge was spred,
And then the knight began to feed his mouth,
When sleepe his eyes, and talke his eares had fed:
The Mantuan at his charges, him allowth,
All fine Acates that that same country bred,
The while his swimming vessell doth forsake
*The pleasant country, and vnpleasant lake.

140

From thence, he held his course still forward right,
*The Riuer running straight as any lyne,
Which when they passed had with speedie flight,
Vpon the tother hand they did decline:
*And by a ditch, and standing poole in sight,
Ere of that day, were spent full howers nine,
Vnto Rauenna as they were commanded,
They went, and there the braue *Renaldo* landed:

141

Although *Renaldo* could but feldome boist,
Of store of coyne, yet now such store he had,
As to the Bargemen of his frendly host,
He gaue a largesse such, as made them glad:
From thence to Rimini, he went in post,
And changing horses still, now good, now bad,
That night at Mountefior, he did but sup,
And so t'Vrbyno, ere next Sunne was vp.

142

Then Caglie, and from thence the Alpes he past,
Then th'Vmbrys and Etruscians, thence to Rome,
And so by Barke, to Ostia in great hast
He went, and to that Citie he doth come,
Which good *Aeneas* many ages past,
Ennobled with his fire *Anchyses* toome:
Then straight by sea he went vnto this Ile,
Where I did leaue *Orlando*, since a while,

That Cite is
called Trapania

Orlando.

143

I meane that Ile, that Lippadusa hight,
Wherein the famous warriors, three to three,
The combat that I spake of erst did fight,
The which *Renaldo* longing sore to see,
With ores and sayles, made all the hast he might,
But yet for all his hast, it would not be,
The wind did for his purpose serue so slacke,
More then an houre too late it kept him backe.

144

So that eu'n much about that time he came,
When as *Orlando* had that conquest wonne,
In which vnto his euerlasting fame,
Two Turkish Princes, vnto death were donne;
Yet was some sorrow mingled with the same,
Both for the death of *Monodantes* sonne,
And *Oliueros* hurt, of which he found
Such griefe, he could not set his foote to ground.

145

Now as the Earle *Renaldo* did imbrace,
He could not chuse, but shed a streame of teares,
When as he show'd him, in the present place,
Good *Brandimart*, to whom such loue he beares,
Lye newly slaine, with pale and liuelesse face:
Likewile to weepe, *Renaldo* not forbears,
To see his death, and eke his cofins bruse,
So griuous, that his foote he could not vse,

146

Renaldo comforts them in all he may,
Although himselfe of comfort tasted least,
And chiefe to thinke by his vnluckie stay,
He was come tardie, to so great a feast:
This while the wofull seruants did conuay,
Their masters coarces, to the towne distrest,
I meane Biserta, where they made it knowne,
Which side preuaild, and which was ouerthrowne.

147

Of this same conquest that *Orlando* wonne,
Astolfo and stout *Sansonet* were glad;
Yet ioyd they not, so as they would haue donne,
If *Brandimart* his death then had not had:
The fall of noble *Monodantes* sonne,
Strake them into a dumpe and made them sad,
But who shall now impart to *Fiordeliege*,
The wofull losse, of her deare Lord and liege?

11 ij

Driblets used for
pay recknings.
Arguerbe used
in English.

This lake is Pa-
disa, of which
Vergil speaks,
praising the store
of fish, but now
is almost dry.
*Thou art called
the reach of Lon-
guirino Fido,
where Poet runs
about six myle
long.
*This standing
ditch goes to Ra-
uenna 12. myle
long but now it is
scarcely navigable.
Pauze writes of
it, and calls it
Fossa Messana-
ca.

*Fiordelisee her
dreaune.*

148

Her selfe had dreamt a strange dreame ouernight,
Which did her minde, in fearfull sort dismay,
She dreamt the bates of her loued knight,
Which she imbrodred blacke this other day,
With spots of red were powdred all in sight,
And on the same, like storme of haylstones lay,
That she had done it so, she sure beleeued,
And with the thought thereof, was greatly greeued.

149

She further thought, that to her selfe she fed,
Did not my Lord command me blacke to make it,
What ment I then to mixt it so with red,
And in so strange a manner to mistake it?
An ill presage in her this fancie bred,
And for an euill token she did take it, (her,
Then came these newes which none imparted with
Till th'English Duke, and *Sanfonet* came thither.

150

When they came in, and that she well had heeded
Their count'nances, in such a conquest ad,
No further newes, no further notice needed,
To make her know, they brought her tidings bad:
Forthwith her grieve, and sorrow so exceeded,
Scarfe any powre her vitall spirits had,
But presently in pale, and deadly sound,
She fell in wofull trance vpon the ground.

151

But when that life came to his course againe,
Her tender cheekes, and her fayre haire she tare,
Oft calling on his loued name in vaine,
Whose losse had bred in her such wofull care,
She screeches and cries out, with grieve and paine,
Like those with deuils that possessed are,
Or as the *Menades*, with sound of horne,
In furious manner all about were borne.

*Menades, were
they that sacrific-
ed to Bacchus.*

152

This man, and that, to lend she doth intreat
A knife, wherewith her selfe she murder may,
Straight to the hau'n she runnes with furie great,
There where the bodies of the dead kings lay,
With minde to mangle them, and bruse and beat:
Then to the sea she will, there is no nay,
And passe to Lippaduse, and there abide,
And end her life, by *Brandimarts* deare side.

153

Ah *Brandimart* my loued Lord (she said)
What ment I without me, to let thee part?
Ay me vnluckie wretch, in that I staid,
And was not present there, to take thy part:
Mine eye might vnto thee, haue bene an aid,
My voyce might haue assisted thee in part,
And if *Gradaffo* thee behind had stricken,
One cry of mine, might thee both warne & quicken

154

Or else perhaps, so well I might haue sped me,
As to haue stept the blow and thee betweene,
If thou hadst scapt, although it did behed me,
I would haue said, that it had happie bene:
Now dye I will, though death no whit can sted me,
And though I know, my death is fruitlesse cleene,
Whereas if I had dyde in thy defence,
My death had profit bred, and not offence.

155

And if the heau'ns had bene so hard in this,
That I could not haue holpe thee in the place,
At least my last farewell, and solemne kisse,
I should haue giu'n thee, and thy louely face,
Bedewd with teares, and ere to heau'nly blisse,
Thy soule had flowne, I should haue had the space,
To say, depart from hence in peace my deare,
And know, I haue not long to tarrie heare.

156

Is this (deare *Brandimart*) is this thy raigne,
Of *Damagyre*, whose scepter I should take?
Is this the dowre, thou doest to me ordaine?
Is this the royall seat, of which you spake?
Ah fortune hard, how friuolous and vaine,
Dost thou my hopes, and my designements make?
Ah why cease I, sith so great good is reft me,
To cast away what euer else is left me?

*Damagyre the
Realme of which
Brandimart was
King.*

157

With this, againe so great her furie grew,
She made vpon her selfe a fresh assault,
And her faire haire, she rent, and tare anew,
As if her haire, had bene in all the salt,
Eu'n from her tender cheeks the bloud she drew,
Still dewing them, with watric teares and salt:
But let her here awhile lament, and mourne,
For to *Orlando* I must now retourne.

158

Who with his kinsman that did now require,
Some cunning Leach his grievous wound to cure,
And (for to *Brandimart*: he did desire,
To giue an honorable sepulture,)
To that hill went that doth the night with fire
Make cleare, and doth the day with smoke obscure,
And so the winde did fauour his intent,
In twentie houres, he came to *Agringent*.

*The mount. Et-
na, in Sicilia.*

159

Here when they were downe from their ships alighted,
The Sunne eu'n then preparing to go downe,
They sent abroad and in great hast invited,
The chiefe Nobilitie of all the towne:
Straight at the shore, of torches store was lighted,
And many men of honour and renowne,
When as *Orlando* to the shore retourned,
Went with him to the corps, and with him mourned

160

There *Eardyn* stood, a man well stricke in yeares,
And in such sort to wayle he did perseuer,
That with abundant shedding of his teares,
Men thought he would haue lost his eyes for euer;
To blame the heu'ns, and starres, he not forbears,
But roaring like a Lyon in a feauer,
Tare his gray haire, and all about it sprinkled,
And spared not his aged skin, and wrinkled.

161

When as the *Palladine* approched neare,
Straight doubled was the mourning noise and crye,
Each striu'd who should most sorrowfull appeare,
And eu'rie one lift vp his voice on hye;
Orlando with more heavy heart, then cheare,
Still keeping fixed on the beare his eye,
When silence first, by signes procur'd he had,
Pronounc't these words, with mourning voyce & sad
O stout

162

O stout, o deare champion mine, and frend,
That here art dead, but liu'lt in heavenly seat,
Where thy great ioyes shall neuer haue an end,
Nor euer be impaired with cold or heat:
Yet pardon me in that I do offend,
To wayle my woe, and miserie so great,
My sorrow is not, for thy parting hence,
But that my selfe am so long absent thence.

163

To thinke that he is seuerd now so far,
In whom I ioyd, this doth my paine increase,
I was with thee, in tempests, and in war;
Why am not I with thee in calme and peace?
O mirie flesh, that me from blisse doth bar,
Why cannot I obtaine a like release,
Sith still I was copartner of thy paine,
Why am I kept from part of so great gaine?

164

To you the happie guerdon, and the gaine,
To vs the losse, and damage all is left,
France, Germanie, and Italy complaine,
Their chiefe defence, and their chiefe buckler rest:
How shall my Prince, and vncle now sustaine,
(Depriu'd of so good helpe) so great a heft,
Thy losse of succour hath bereaued whole,
Both holy Church, and eake the Empire holie.

165

The Pagans whom thou dantedst in thy life,
How will they gather heart now with thy death:
How will they stirre new storms of fearfull strife,
Now hauing so good meanes, to gather breth:
But how great sorrow, will thy dearest wife
Sustaine? me thinks I heare eu'n now she teth
I am to blame, and that she hates me most,
And faith by me, she hath her worlds ioy lost.

166

Yet *Fiordeliege*, this comfort may reuiue
Both thee, and all that for his death are sorie,
That all the valiant knights that him suruiue,
Haue cause to enuie, and admire his glorie:
The *Decij*, nor the knight, that lept aliue
In *Curtian lake*, so praild in Latin storie,
Nor *Codrus* by the Greekes so magnified,
With greater praise, nor honor neuer dyed.

167

These words, and such as these *Orlando* spake,
The while the Fryres, both white, & blacke, and gray
A solemne, and a long procession make,
In goodly ranke, and in deuout array:
That God to heau'n, the dead mans spirit take,
Requiem aeternam, for his soule they pray,
And tapers in the midst, before, behind,
Did cause that knight, like to the noone day shind.

168

Then diuers Earles, and knights, the hearse vphold,
All ouer which a mantle rich was spread,
Of purple silke, embroderd braue with gold,
And with fayre pearle, and stone well garnished,
Of equall cost and bewtie to behold,
The coffin was; that held the bodie ded,
Prouided by the *Palladine* to be,
Fit for his calling, and his high degree.

169

Three hunderd people, of the poorer sort,
Of dwellers that inhabited the towne,
Vnto the funerals did then resort,
And vnto each was giu'n a mourning gowne;
An hunderd Pages, mounted in good sort,
On warlike steeds, clothd to the ground adowne,
And both the Pages, and the gallant steeds,
From top to toe, were clad in mourning weeds.

170

Then bare they diuers banners fayre displayd,
And painted diuers armes, that he obtaind
From armed bands alone, without all ayd,
And had to *Cesar* and to *Peter* gaind:
With hunderds more, all in blacke gowns arrayd,
To whom were diuers offices ordaind,
And last *Rinaldo*, and *Orlando* came,
But *Oliuero* staid (for he was lame.)

171

It long would be ere I could it rehearse,
And tell what ceremonies vsed were,
Nor can I comprehend it well in verse,
How orderly they were accomplisht there:
Vnto the chiefe Church, they bare a hearse,
The while nor old nor young, to weepe forbear,
His noblenesse, his value, and his youth,
Did breed in all their hearts, so wondrous ruth.

172

Now when the women finisht had, and donne,
Their bootlesse weeping, and their fruitlesse paine,
The Priest had said, their *Kyrieleysonne*,
And all the rites, that there vnto pertaine:
The carkasse of great *Monodantes sonne*,
So chested, on two collumns to remaine
Orlando causd, till time he might procure,
A costly, and more stately sepulture.

173

From *Sicilie Orlando* not departs,
Till he for *Tutch*, and *Porpherie* had sent,
And all that were most skilfull of those arts,
Had talkt with all, and told them his intent:
Then *Fiordeliege* comming to those parts,
Her time, her trauell, and her treasure spent,
To make the tombe most stately for her spouse,
At which to spend her future time she vowes.

174

And sith her plaints and teares were neuer tired,
In that selfe place she meanes her dayes to passe,
And for her husbands soule, she still desired
Continuall Dirges, and perpetuall Masse;
From company her selfe she quite retired,
And to the place (such her deuotion was)
That by the tombe, she built a lide cell,
In which till death, she purposed to dwell.

175

Orlando diuers messages did send
To her, and after that in person went,
To fetch her into France, and did pretend,
That her to place with *Galeran* he ment,
Or if the time, in prayre she still would spend,
He would a Nunrie build for that intent,
Or that he would, if so she so had rather,
Attend her to her country, and her father.

11 iij

Orlando's mother

176

But at the tombe she tarride obstinate,
And would fro thence by no meane be remoued,
Still doing, laying, both betime and late,
Penance and prayrs, for him that she so loued,
Till death in th'end, cut off her dolefull date,
And sent her loone, to find her deare beloued:
But now the knights of France, from Sicill parted,
For losse of their companion heauie harted.

177

And *Oliuer* still of his foote complained,
For why no salue, nor surgerie preuailed,
But that he was with grieve so greatly pained,
They doubted that his life would then haue failed:
Thus while they all in doubtfull dumpe remained,
The man that steard the barke in which they failed;
Did make to them this motion sage and wile,
And they agreed to follow his aduise.

178

He told them that not far from thence there dwelled,
An Hermit in a solitarie place,
That so in sanctitie of life excelled,
That he could remedie each doubtfull ease;
Diseases diuers were by him expelled, (grace)
Dumb, blind, and lame were heald (such was his
And that he could with one signe of the crosse,
Alay the waues when they do highest tosse.

179

In fine, he told them sure there was no doubt,
To find reliefe, eu'n present at the hands
Of that same man, so holy and deuour,
As scarce his match, was found in many lands.
Orlando hauing heard the Pylot out,
Inquired of the place, which way it stands,
And presently the place to him was showd,
And toward it, in hast they sayd and rowd.

180

Next morning they discouerd all the Ile,
But kept aloofe, so as their ship might float,
And there they cast their anchor, and the while,
Conuayd the wounded *Marquesse* in a boat,
Vpon the shallow waues, scant halfe a mile,
Vnto the blessed Hermits simple coat,
That verie Hermit, that before but late,
Had brought *Rogero* vnto Christian state.

181

The man of God, that had his dwelling heare,
Came forth, and met *Orlando* at the gate,
And welcomd him, with kind and frendly cheare,
Inquiring of his arrant, and their state,
(Although to him, it was apparent cleare:
For God that night, had sent his Angell late,
To tell the Saint thereof) *Orlando* sayd,
His arrant was, to get his kinsman ayd.

182

Who had a great and grievous mayme receaued,
In fighting for the Empire, and the faith,
And was of hope and comfort, quite bereaued.
Be of good cheare (the godly Hermit saith)
Who trust in God shall neuer be deceaued;
Yet oyntment none vnto his hurt he layth,
But first to Church he go' th, and makes his prayre.
Then with great boldnesse, doth to them repayre.

183

And calling on that trebble lou'raigne name,
Of God the Father, Sonne and holy Ghost,
He blest the knight, that maymed was and lame,
(Oh wondrous grace, of which Gods saints may boast)
Straight to his vse each vaine and sinew came,
No part of all his former strength was lost,
And as it pleased God, of his great grace,
*Sobrin*o present was then in the place.

184

And being now so weake with bleeding brought,
That eu'n his vitall sprites were almost spent,
And seeing plainly such a wonder wrought,
So great, so gracious and so euident,
To leaue his Macon he thereby was taught,
And to confesse our Christ omnipotent,
He prayd in most contrite, and humble manner,
To be a souldier vnder Christian banner.

185

The iust old man did grant him his request,
And Christend him, and did his health restore,
At which *Orlando* stout, and all the rest,
Reioyced much, and prayled God therefore.
Rogero eke as ioyfull as the best,
Increased in deuotion more and more,
To see those mysteries deuine, and Oracles,
Confirmed so by plaine apparent miracles.

185

Thus all this companie in sweet consort,
In this same blessed Hermits houle do stay,
Who doth them all, most fatherly exhort,
To bend their whole endeouours all they may,
That in this Inne, where mans abode is short,
They seeke to wash away the dirt and clay,
That some call life, and greatly do commend,
And sole to heau'n, their eyes and hearts to bend.

187

Then sent *Orlando* to his ship in hast,
For bread and wine, and other daintie dishes,
And this old man, whom abstinence and fast,
Had made forget the tast of beasts or fishes,
Of charitie, they prayd some flesh to tast,
And he therein consented to their wishes,
And when they all had eate to their contents,
They found discourse of sundry arguments.

188

And as in speech it often doth befall,
That one thing doth another bring to light,
Rogero was at last knowne to them all,
For that *Rogero*, that exceld in fight;
The first that him to memorie did call,
Was *Sobrin*, who did know him well by sight:
The next that knew his louely looke and stately,
Was good *Renaldo*, that fought with him lately.

189

They all do come to him with frendly face,
When of his Christendome they vnderstand,
And some do kisse him, others him embrace,
In kindest sort, some take him by the hand,
But chiefe *Renaldo* strives, to do him grace:
Yet if that you desire to vnderstand,
Why more then all the rest *Renaldo* sought it,
Turne ore the leafe and there you shalbe taught it.

In

In the tale of the Mantuan knight may be gathered this good morall, that it is no wisdom to search for that a man would not find: and how the first breach commonly of the sweet concord of matrimonie, groweth of ielousie, I must confesse, these be two knauish tales that be here in this booke, and yet the Bee will picke out hony out of the worst of them. For mine owne part I haue euer bene of opinion, that this tale of the Mantuan knight, is simply the worst against women in all the booke, or rather indeed that euer was written. The hosts tale in the xxviij booke of this worke, is a bad one: M. Spencers tale of the squire of Dames, in his excellent Poem of the Faery Queene, in the end of the vij. Canto of the third booke, is to the like effect, sharpe and well conceited; in substance thus, that his Squire of Dames could in three yeares trauell, find but three women that denyed his lewd desire: of which three, one was a courtesan, that reiected him because he wanted coyne for her: the second a Nun, who refused him because he would not swear secrete, the third a plain country Gentlewoman, that of good honest simplicitie denyed him: which also hath some liknes with that of Pharaos I spake of in the notes vpon the 42. booke: but this of the Mantuan knight passeth the all, if you marke the secret drift of it: shewing how a woman of so excellent education, so great learning, so rare beautie, so fine wit, so choise qualities, so sweet behauiour, so abundant wealth, so dearly beloved by her husband, could so easily be conquered with the sight of three or foure iewels: and then for his comfort, how for ten yeares after, he being a great house keeper, all his married guests that came to him spilt the drinke in their bosomes. This tale (admitting it to be true or probable) would argue women to be of exceeding couetousnes, but loe how easily all this is not onely to be excused for them, but retorted vpon men: for assuredly it is onely the couetousnes of men, that maketh women (as we interpret it) to sell their chastities: for women indeed care for nothing but to be loued, & where they assure themselves they are loued, there of their kind and sweet dispositions, they bestow loue againe. Now because men can protest and sweare, and vow that which they thinke not, therefore no maruell if women are hard of beliefe, and thicke listd to heare them: but when they come to giue things that cost money, and that the coyn begin to walke, which they are sure men esteeme so dearly, as they venter both body and soule for it many times, then no maruell if they belieue them, and thinke them to be in good earnest, and consequently yeeld to that they denyed before. But to go forward with the rest of the morall, both men and women may gather this morall out of both these vales; that as all vice is odious and base, so that which a bodie is hired vnto, is most shamefull and detestable.

Of the Faery Manto I cannot affirme any thing of truth, whether she were a Faery or a Prophetesse, but this I finde writen of her, that when Thebes was razed by Alexander, this Manto daughter of Tyresia, being learned in Magike as well as her father, came vnto that part of Italy, where Mantua is now, and there her sonne Ocnus (as Virgil will haue it) built that Citie, and called it after his mothers name.

Ille etiam patrijs ignem ciet Ocnus ab oris,
Faticat Mantus, & Thusei filius amnis,
Qui muros; matrisque dedit tibi Mantua nomen.

Concerning those braue men with whom Orlando compareth Brandimart, the Decij. M. Curtius, and Codrus of the Decij, one of them had a dreame or vision, that told him how in the battel which he was to fight next day with the Latins the Captain of one side, and the army of the other side should perish, wherupon he being then Consul, ran wilfully on his enemies and was slaine, and so gat the victory for the Romans. His son Decius did the like after him: Curtius leapt into the gulf, that was prophesied should neuer be stopt, till the most precious iewell the Romans had were thrown into the same.

Codrus dyed thus, the Dorians hauing warre with the Athenians, the Oracle told them of Athens, that if Codrus were slaine by the enemies, then the Athenians should haue the victorie: this newes being noised in the Dorians campe, they gaue straight charge that none should kil Codrus; but he minding to dye for the defence of his countrie, counterfaieted himselfe like a Pedler, or such like, and came to the campe of enemies, and picking a quarrell there of purpose with some of the souldiers, was slaine among them.

The cuppe presented to Renaldo, is allegorically to be vnderstood for suspition, which whosoever drinketh of, it is great ods he sheds it so into his bosome, as he shal drinke the worse after it while he liues, and therefore Renaldo said wel,

Drinke of the cup, (quoth he) that list, not I. I am not, nor I minde not to be drie.

For the Mantuans tale, it is not vnlike to that of Cephalus in Ouids Metamorphosis, in the seuenth booke, where he tels how in the like sort changed by negromancy, he tempted his wife so farre,

Dum census dare me promitto, loquendo
Muneraque augendo, tandem dubitare coegi.

I haue heard of a Gentleman that would needs court his owne wife in a maske, causing her to be told he was some other man; and made loue so long to her, till he found himselfe more gracious with her, then he had cause to boast of.

As for the Faery Manto, whether there be any Faeries or no, I wil not dispute the matter, but I haue heard strange tales reported by credible persons, of these witches and spirits whatsoeuer they be: and I haue heard it often among the simpler sort, that he that can please the Queene of Faeries, shall neuer want while he liues; and it seemes the like opinion hath crept into other countries, though taken but as a fable, or as the saying is,

It may be in my Paternoster indeed,
But sure it neuer shall come in my Creed.

Marrie for the shaghaired dog, that could dance to please Ladies so well, and had such pretie qualities, I dare vnder take my seruant Bungy (whose picture you may see in the first page of the booke, and is knowne to the best Ladies of England) may compare with any Pilgrims dog that serued such a saint this seuen yere: only he wants that qualitie to shake duckats out of his eares. But now to leaue these toying tales, and fall to the soberer matter, the solemne funeralls of Brandimart and Orlandos mourning, alludes to the buriall of Pallas, or Pallante in Virgil: Bardino to Acetes: and Orlando to Aeneas: but this here is set forth with deuout and Christian termes, and therefore more to be commended.

Here end the notes of the 43. booke.

I i iij



THE ARGUMENT.

*Renaldo to Rogero giues his sister,
Against Duke Ammon and their mothers will:
Rogero doubting lest he should haue mist her,
Vowes Leon and his father both to kill:
He leaueth France, and to the streame of Ister,
He rides and trauels in those parts, vntill
He found the Bulgars fighting with the Greekes,
And aydeth those, because he these mislikes.*

Of friendship.



¹ Et times we see, in house
of meane estate,
In fortune bad, and chances
ouerthwart,
That men doe sooner lay
aside debate,
And ioyne in sound accord
with hand and hart,
The princes courts, where
riches gender hate,
And vilde suspect, that louing mind doth part,
Where charitie is cleane consumde and vanished,
An' friendship firme, is quite cast out and banished.

² Hence comes it that twixt Princes and great Lords,
Agreements all, and cou'nants are so fraile,
To day Kings, Popes, and Emperors make accords
To morrow deadly warres, with tooth and nayle:
And why? their thoughts stil vary from their words,
They keepe not othes, but for their owne auail:
Nor weigh they wrong or right, or reckon of it,
But as the same may turne to their owne profite.

³ Now though such men, as yet were neuer taught,
What friendship is, nor euer knew the same,
(For friendship neuer growes where there is nought
But shewes dilguise, in earnest or in game)
Yet if ill fortune them so low haue brought,
To meete in meaner place, they straight do frame
Their proud hy minds to friendship true and plaine,
Which erst they knew not, or they did disdain.

⁴ The faintlik man, had in his Cell more powre,
His guests in firme and sound accord do binde,

Then others should haue had in Princely bowret
And more, this frendship was of such a kind,
That euer after, from that present houre,
Eu'n to their ends, they all agreed in mind:
Appearing to this old man and deuout,
As white within, as Swans are white without.

⁵ He found them all both gentle kind, and meeke;
And not in sort of which I erst complained,
Of those that neuer thinke and speake alike,
But euer go with speech, and visage fained.
They cleare forgot all grudge, and old mislike;
No signe, nor memorie thereof remained:
But loue together, as if they had come,
All of one seede, and laine all in one wombe.

⁶ But good Renaldo could by no meanes rest,
To shew Rogero kindnesse great and loue,
Both for his prowesse great, and valiant brest,
Which hand to hand, in fight he late did proue:
And for his courtisie, that did passe the rest,
And was praise worthy all the rest aboue:
But chiefe the cause was this, because he found,
His frends to him had sundry wayes bene bound.

⁷ He knew, for often he had heard it told,
How first Rogero saued Richardet,
Whom then Marsilio kept in cruell hold,
Because with child he did his daughter get:
And further, Bonos sonnes should haue bene sold,
But them Rogero did at freedome set:
These things in honor true, and reputation,
He knew were matters of great obligation.

8

And though before he could no kindnes show
To him, while he profest himselfe a Turke,
Yet now that him a Christian he did know,
He would now let his loue no longer lurke:
Which when the Hermit saw, he was not slow,
A farther kindnes, them between to worke: (them)
He moues them (sith he so good friends had scene)
That he might make affinitie betweene them.

9

He said it was foreshowd him from on hie,
That by the ioyning their two lines in one,
Such offspring should arise, as vnder sky
To passe or match the same, there should be none;
Wherefore, he wisheth them, that by and by
By his aduise, they would agree thereon:
Renaldo at his motion straight allowes,
That *Bradamant* should be *Rogeros* spouse.

10

Orlando, *Oliuero* soone to that,
Gaued their good will, and fauour, and assent,
Affirming that all France may ioy thereat;
They little knew how good Duke *Ammon* ment,
To match his daughter higher farre, and that
King *Charles* thereto did willingly consent:
To *Leon* namely *Constantynos* haire,
Emp'rour of Greece, who sought the Lady faire.

11

Duke *Ammon* meant not such a match to shunne,
But yet his answer he a while deferred,
Vntill such time as with his absent sonne,
He had on such a weightie cause conferred:
Not doubting but he thereto would be wonne,
And glad to haue his sifter so preferred;
But yet, though herein he did nothing doubt him,
Yet would he not resolue thereon without him.

12

But now *Renaldo* absent from his father,
And ignorant of that imperiall plot,
Vnto *Rogero* promist her the rather,
Because his present friends mislikt it not;
But chiefe that he by th' Hermits speech did gather,
That God ordaind it by eternall lot;
And of his father firmly he believed,
At such alliance he could not be grieved.

13

All that same day and night, and halfe the next,
They made abode with that same faintlike fire,
Still preaching, teaching them the blessed text,
Expounding eu'rie place at their desire:
The marriners with their long tarrying vext,
Oft sent to pray them to the ship retyre,
Because the wind blew well to serue their turne,
Compelling them in fine, to make returne.

14

Rogero that had liu'd in long exile,
(Now glad to do as that old man would haue him)
Doth bid farewell, and left that happie Ile,
When he had learn'd y^e faith that sole must saue him,
Orlando vnto him his sword this while,
And *Hectors* armes, and good *Frontino* gaue him,
Both to declare his loue so much the more,
And that he knew they had bene his before.

15

And though the Palladine in common sence,
Had iustler claime vnto the blade enchanted,
As hauing wonne it in his owne defence,
Forth of the garden with foule spirits haunted,
Whereas *Rogeros* title and pretence,
Came from *Brunello*, that of theft was taunted,
Yet gaue he it of his good nature meerly,
Although his right thereto appeared cleerly.

16

Then by the holy man they all were blessed,
And to their ship they made their backe repaire,
Their oares for waues, their sails for winds adressed,
Which then blew verie temperate and faire:
No feare of wracke, no doubt to be distressed;
No need there was of vowes, or yet of praie:
But here I leaue them sailing in faire wether,
Till th' English Duke and them I bring together.

17

Who when the victorie he vnderstood
Orlando got, of which he was lesse glad,
Because the same was wonne with so much blood,
And sith now France no feare of Affricke had;
To send *Senapo* home he thought it good,
And therefore with a count'nance graue and sad,
Yet kind and frendly he did giue him thanke,
For lending him his aid, so free and franke.

18

And *Dudon* sent a little while before,
All that his great triumphant Nauie backe,
Wherewith he plagued had the Turks so sore,
And brought them all to ruine great and wracke:
Which ships no sooner toucht that Affricke shore,
And quite disburdend of the people blacke,
But eu'rie ship his shape forsakes and leaues,
And all of them were turnd againe to leaues.

19

And now on parting were the Nubian bands:
Some mounted, some on foote pel mell together,
The winds that wont to moue the troublous sands,
Astolfo gaue their king in bagges of leather,
So firmly tyde, and in so fured bands,
As feare they need not any change of weather:
And will'd him, when they were past all ieoperty,
That they should grant vnto the wind his liberty.

20

Turpino writes that they no sooner came,
Vnto the mountaine Atlas stonie roote,
But that their horses, stones againe became,
And so they all went home againe on foote:
But after how each thing with them did frame,
In this discourse to tell it shall not boote:
Now tell we of your English Dukes proceeding,
Of his returne to France, and of his speeding.

21

Who hauing rulers for those parts ordained,
That might as pleas'd, them ruine or repaire,
No longer then in Affrica remained,
But vnto France he quickly did repaire:
By land or sea, to trauell he disdaind,
But with his winged beast he cuts the aire,
And quickly came to Protinice where he did,
As much as eist th' Euangelist did bid.

Which

Looke in the
Allegorie of
myracles.

22
Which was that enterd into Prouince, he
Should take away his saddle and his raines,
And grant him liberty, and set him free,
And put him now vnto no further paines:
For Cinthias (pheard, in which our lost wits be,
That maketh of our losses greatest gaines,
Had made his horne long since to loole his sound,
That now no vertue in the same was found.

23
Now th' English Duke vnto *Marfilio* came,
And iust at that same time arriued there,
When those three *Palladines* of worthy fame,
With *Sobrin* and *Rogero* landed were;
Much was their ioy, yet lessond was the same,
And outward shewes thereof they do forbear:
So great a sadnes in them all it bred,
To thinke their friend king *Brandimart* was ded.

24
But *Charles* that from *Sicilia* notice had,
How those two kings were slaine, and *Sobrine* taken,
And *Brandimart* deceast (which made him sad)
And that *Rogero* had the *Turkes* forsaken;
Was in his minde now well apaid and glad,
That such a peise, he from his necke had shaken,
Which for a long time had so grievous wayed,
As he therewith was welny ouerlayed.

25
Wherefore to do them honour, as was meete,
That with their courage did his crowne sustaine,
He sent his Peeres and nobles them to greete,
Vnto the verie confines of his raigne:
Himselfe in person, after did them meete,
With Lords and Princes of his chiefeest traine:
And neare the town, the *Queene* with many a *Ladie*
Came forth, to do them honor all that may be.

26
King *Charles* himselfe with chearfull friendly face,
The *Palladines*, their kinsfolke and their friends,
The noble men, and people meane and base,
To make them for their merits some amends,
With friendly shouts did fill vp all the place,
Each man and enery child his voice extends,
And cride on those two houses of account,
That of *Mongrana*, and of *Clarimount*.

27
Now to the Prince *Rogero* they did bring,
And told him how he was apparent haire
To *Risa*, and of that great house did spring:
And while they spake these words, *Marfisa* faire
Saluted him in presence of the King,
But *Bradamant* (who thither did repaire)
Yet kept her selte aloofe with more respect,
Least openly she should her loue detect.

28
Then *Charles* doth welcom him with words most sweet,
And vld him like a man of rare account,
And for he was allighted on his feet,
For reu'ence sake, againe, he made him mount;
And cheeke by cheeke, to ride through eu'ry street:
He knew and ioyd, that at the sacred fount,
Rogero by the hermit was baptised,
As he by former letters was aduised.

29
In triumph and in feasts they spent the day,
And riding through the towne at sundry houres,
Some straw greene leaues, or rushes in the way,
Some cast downe garlands made of sundry flowres.
The streets were hanged all with rich array,
And damfels from the windowes high and towres,
To gratulate their prosperous deeds and haps,
Cast showres of *Roses* from their tender laps.

30
At eu'ry corner, market-crosse or gate,
High arches triumph-like were new erected,
Some of *Byterras* fall and wofull state,
Which they had ouerthrowne and quite delected:
Some of the combat that was fought so late,
With playes and new deuises v unexpected:
Thus dedicate, and thus entitled wholly,
To those Redeemers of the Empire holly.

31
With gratefull sound, of instruments and voyce,
With sundrie sweet and muscicall conlots,
The people shew how greatly they reioyce,
With Iubiles, and shoutes, and playes, and sports.
Then *Charles* and all his knights, and Barons choise
To his owne house, and his owne court resorts:
And there with tilting, turneis, and with playes,
They spent a few of then ensuing dayes.

32
Renaldo to king time, vpon a day,
The marriage matter to his father brake,
And told him he had promist by the way,
His sister should for spouse, *Rogero* take:
By which, allyance such procure they may,
As men may count great folly to forsake:
In which himselfe the further did proceed,
Because *Orlando* was thereto agreed.

*Renaldo motiues
the marriage for
Bradamant.*

33
With much disdain this speech Duke *Ammon* hard,
Affirming, he presumptuously had donne,
To promise so, sith he had now prepar'd,
To match her to the Greekish Emp'rors sonne:
And not this priuate knight, who he had hard,
Had not one foote of land scant vnder Sunne:
Alas (quoth he) poore gentrie (small awailes,
And vertue lesse if land and riches failes.

*Sentence.
The common opi-
nion of the people*

34
But chiefe *Ammons* wife, dame *Beatrice*,
Doth call her sonne vngrate and arrogant,
And thinks to worke so by her wife aduise,
To make an Empreffe of her *Bradamant*:
Renaldo much condemneth that deuice,
Nor will not of his word one tittle want:
But said his sister (vnder their correction)
Would therein ruled be by his direction.

*Looke of this in
the Moral.*

35
The mother (in her daughter much beguild)
Perswades with her, and comforts her to say,
That she will rather dye and be exild,
Then match so meane, when higher match she may
She saith, she will not take her for her child,
If she will let her brother beare such sway:
Wherefore (saith she) be bold, and do denie it,
And with your brother, giue me leaue to try it.

36

Poore *Bradamant* doth silent stand and still,
She dares not scarfe in thought, for reu'ence sake,
Gainſay her mother, or withſtand her will,
On tother ſide, ſhe dare not promiſe make,
Of that, which to perſorme did paſſe her ſkill,
And was aboute her powre to vnderſtake:
No powre ſhe had in this, nor great nor ſmall,
For long ere this, loue ſeaſed on it all.

37

She dares not giue conſent, nor yet deny,
She onely ſighes, and anſwer maketh none,
But when ſhe is alone that none are by,
Vnto her ſelfe ſhe makes a piteous mone;
She makes her breſts and her faire haire to trie
In part her grieſe, for why ſhe beates the tone
In ſpitefull wife, the tother ſhort ſhe teares,
And thus ſhe ſpeakes amid her plaints and feares.

38

Wo me, ſhall then my will and fancie varie
From hers, whoſe will ſhould rule and gouern mine?
Shall my will to my mothers be contrarie,
Or that diſdaine, my mother doth deſigne?
Shall I preſume with ſuch a man to marrie,
At whom my parents both do ſo repine?
What fowler blot can ſtaine a damſels praiſe,
Then when her parents will, ſhe diſobeyes?

Sentence.

39

Shall then my mothers reu'ence, and my fires,
Make me my deare *Rogero* to forget?
And to new loues, new hopes, and new deſires
Betake my ſelfe, and him at nought to ſet?
Or ſhall the reu'ence which their age requires,
And which my ſelfe hath borne them euer yet,
Be now forgot, and I be wholly bent,
To mine owne ioy, and ſolace, and content?

40

*Vide meliora
prosequere,
Deteriora sequi*

I know (alas I know) my dutie well,
But powre I haue not to perſorme the ſame,
My fancie reaſons rule doth quite expell,
And my well orderd thoughts, put out of frame:
And tyrant Loue, gainſt whom who dare rebell,
Makes me caſt off all feare of others blame:
My ſpeech, my deeds, my thoughts he doth diſpoſe,
And ruleth them, againſt my will God knowes.

41

To *Ammon* daughter, and to *Beatrice*
I am, but vnto Loue I am a ſlaue,
Though I do now reſuſe their wiſe aduiſe,
Of them I may hereafter pardon haue:
But if I Loue reſiſt, who knowes the price,
Or who can me from his great furie ſaue?
He will not ſtay to harken to my ſcuſes,
But ſlay me preſently, for ſuch his uſe is.

42

With much adoe, and with long time I drew
My deare *Rogero*, to the Chriſtian faith,
What profite doth thereof to me enſew,
It ſtill ill hap my purpoſe good gainſaith?
So doth the Bee, not for himſelfe renew,
The hony that in combeſ he ſafely laith:
But ſooner of my life they ſhall me reauce,
Then force me my *Rogero* deare to leaue.

Simile.

43

But though herein I diſobey my mother,
And father to, which I to do am loth:
What though? yet I therein obey my brother,
That is reputed wiſer then they both:
Orlando eke, for me ſpeakes tone and tother,
And fauour will this match, how ere it goth;
And ſure I am, the world doth of them twaine,
Make more eſteeme then all our houſe againe.

44

Siſ then the world eſteemes and calleth thoſe,
The glorie and the flowre of *Clarimount*,
Leſſe ſhame it is for me, as I ſuppoſe,
If that I ſuffer men of ſuch account,
Of me in marriage matters to diſpoſe,
That all my kin in credit do ſurmount:
Beſide they haue the word directly ſpoken,
But to the Greeke the matter is but broken.

45

But now if *Bradamant* her ſelfe torment,
And doth her euill hap bewaile and blame,
No doubt *Rogero* is as malcontent,
Who had ſome priue iſeckling of the ſame:
He ſecretly doth his ill ſtate lament,
And curſeth fortune that vnconſtant dame,
That had for wealth, ſo ſparing left his lor,
Which diuers baſe vnworthy men had got.

46

In each thing elſe that nature man can graunt,
Or that is got by induſtrie or art,
He knowth, and each man ſaith that none can vaunt
To haue a greater, no nor ſuch a part: (daunt,
His ſtrength was ſuch, no ſtrength the ſame could
His perſon paſt his ſtrength; his noble hart,
His Princely manners, and his braue behauour,
Wan each mans loue, each mans applauſe & fauour.

47

But this ſame vulgar ſort vntaught and rude,
That as them liſt diſtribute praiſe and ſhame,
And (ſaue the wiſe and learned) I include
All men that liue on earth, within that name;
For Myters, ſtates, nor crownes, may not exclude,
Popes, mightie kings, nor Keyſars from the ſame:
But onely wiſedome graue, and learning cleare,
Gifts giuen from heau'n, that are not common heare

Sentence.

Sentence.

48

This vulgar ſort (to tell my meaning out)
That ſauiug wealth and riches, nought admyre,
And nothing thinke praiſe worthy them without,
And in their baſe conceits can looke no hyre:
That be one neu'r ſo leatnd, ſo wiſe, ſo ſtout,
Well ſhap't as eye can ſee, or heart deſire,
Well borne, well qualited of ſober carriage,
They nought eſteeme all theſe in caſe of marriage.

Sentence.
Of the common
opion of making
marriage.

49

Well (ſaith *Rogero*) if that *Ammon* needs
Will make an Empreſſe of his daughter deare,
At leaſt this haſt he makes, is more then needs,
Let him yet giue me reſpite but one yeare:
And if in that ſame yeare, I do ſuch deeds,
That both the ſonne and fire, I vanquiſh cleare:
When both their crowns I conquerd haue & wonne
Then I may worthy be, to be his ſoune.

But

50
But if he straight the marriage do effect,
With *Constantinos* heire in so great hast,
And will *Renaldos* promise quite neglect,
And eke his *Cosens*, which to few dayes past,
Before that blessed man of Gods elect,
And that good *Marquesse*, they did bind so fast:
If they shall wrong me so, what then shall I?
What can I do in such a case but die?

51
What should I do? shall I then be auenged
Of him that me contraries in this wife?
Let me be blamed herein, or commended,
Let me therein be deemd a foole or wife:
But would my state alas, be then amended
By th'old mans death? no, no, far otherwile:
I doubt this would not worke my more content,
But rather contrarie my first intent.

52
My first intention was, and yet is still,
That *Bradaman* should beare me loue, not hate,
Now then if I her father here should kill,
Or ought attempt against her brothers state:
Had she not cause of me to thinke then ill,
And to refuse me for her spouse and mate?
What shall I do? alas then shall I beare it?
Ah no perdy, first I will dye I sweare it.

53
And yet I will not die, but Ile destroy
That *Leon* that procur'd my harme and wo,
And is disturber of my chiefe ioy,
Him and his father I will kill also:
Faile *Helen* to the louer lewd of Troy,
Not cost so deare, nor longer far ago,
Proserpin cost *Perythous* price so hye,
As I will cause them this my grieffe to buy.

54
But were it possible (my deare) that thou,
Canst leaue thine owne *Rogero* for this Greeke?
Yea though that all thy brothers did allow
This match, which *Ammon* doth so fondly seeke?
Yes yes, I feare that thine owne minde doth bow
To his desire, and could far better leeke,
When with thy selfe, thou dost these offers scant,
To haue a *Cesar* then a priuate man.

55
Can then the dignitie and glorious name,
Of pompous fiewes, and of imperiall seat,
The noble heart of *Bradaman* so frame,
Her vallew rare, and vertue to defeat,
And go from her first promise, to her shame,
Which me she made with many vowes and great?
No sure I know she will them all forsake,
Much rather then vnlay, that once she spake.

56
These words *Rogero* spake, and many such,
And oftentimes he spake them in such sort,
That diuers ouerhard him, in so much
That they were told, by more then one report
To *Bradaman*, whom they did chiefly tuch,
Who tooke them not (you may be sure) in sport:
But as her priuate grieffe was great before,
So this report of him did grieue her more,

57
But most it grieu'd her and aboue the rest,
That he mistrusted she would him forsake,
At any mans commandment or request,
And specially for this same Grecians sake:
Wherefore to mone this scruple from his brest,
And this foule error from his munde to take,
She gate her pen and inke one night full late,
And to *Rogero* such like words she wrate.

58
My deare, as erst I was I still will bide,
While life shall dure, yea eu'n when life is past,
Though toward me, loue shew his grace, or pride,
Or fortune raise me vp, or downward cast:
My stable faith, shall neuer faile nor slide,
For calme, nor storme, but as a *Rocke* stand fast,
Against the surging waues still vnremoueable,
So shall my faith stand firme and vnreproueable.

59
First shall a file, or knife of drossie lead,
The *Diamond* to sundrie figures carue,
Ere any chance by Fortunes frailtie bred,
Or powre of loue, shall cause my course to swarue:
First shall the streames runne backe vnto their hed,
Ere I will iustly such a blame defarue:
Or ere I shall, for chances good or ill,
Giue my consent to change my settled will.

60
To thee *Rogero* mine, a good while since,
Of me, and of my heart I gaue dominion,
I should my selfe of lightnes great conuince,
If I so sodainly could change opinion:
As for my true allegiance, sure no Prince,
Is faithfuller belou'd of dearest minnion:
For me you need no fortresse nor no towre,
To be defences against forren powre.

61
You need no bands of men to entertaine,
To keepe this fortres, strength enough haue I,
For riches make on me assault but vaine,
So bafe a price, no gentle heart can buy:
Nor noble birth, nor name of crowne or raigne,
Which oft doth dale the common peoples eye,
Nor beautie, to the which light minds incline,
Though greater see I neuer shall then thine.

62
No, feare not, no man powre shall euer haue,
My heart to other figure to transforme,
Loue did your shape therein so deepe ingraue,
As now it can receiue none other forme:
My heart is not of wax, for why Loue gaue,
(When to his worke he did it first conforme)
An hunderd strokes with cheefsell and with male,
Ere he could fetch therefrom one little scale.

63
Pure *Iuorie*, gemmes, and eu'rie hardest stone,
That most withstandeth Steele, a man may burst,
But other figure yet receiue they none,
Then that to which they formed were at first:
My heart is not vnlike a precious stone,
Or *Adamant*, or what so cutteth worst:
Loue sooner shall it breake in thousand splints,
Ere other beauties bring it to new prints.

Kk

*Bradaman's
lett r,
Rogier qual
sempre fu tal
esser voglia.*

64

These words she wrote, and many more to these,
That him with faith, with loue, with hope so fed,
Of force to cure each desperate disease,
Or rather to reuiue him being ded:
But when they thought them safest from the seas,
And in the hau'n securely harbored,
A new and sodaine tempest rose so sore,
As draue them backe to sea from sight of shore.

65

For worthy *Bradamant* that had assignd,
To shew her meaning plaine was, and direct,
And calling wonted courage to her minde,
And quite reiecting womanly respect,
Came vnto *Charles*, and spake in such a kind;
My Leige, if ere my seruice did effect,
Ought worth your highnes thanks, at your comānd
Let not your grace denie me one demand.

66

But promise me, vpon your Princely faith
And royall word, which I may surely trust,
To grant one suit, what ere your handmaid praith,
And I will promise that it shall be iust.
(Beloued worthy mayd, the Emp'ror saith)
Your many seruices confesse I must,
Deserue no lesse, and frankly here I vow it,
If of my Realme you aske part, Ile allow it.

67

My suit is that your highnes will not yeeld,
That I (said she) may any husband haue,
That shall not first of all, with speare and sheeld,
Or else with sword in hand him so behaue,
As that he can withstand me in the feeld,
Behold the onely fauour that I craue;
I would be his that proues himselfe so stout,
The rest may be content to stand without.

68

Most noble maid (the Emp'ror straight replide)
Thy stout demand, well to thy minde doth sute,
Wherefore by me it may not be denyde,
It is so noble and so iust a sute:
Now (for she sought not this her suit to hide)
All they that heard thereof, sure were not mute,
But eu'n ere night it publisht was so rife,
As it was knowne to *Ammon* and his wife.

69

And thereupon they presently conceaued,
Against their daughter, great disdain and wrath,
For by such motion plainly they perceaued,
She to *Rogero* most deuotion hath:
Wherefore to th'end she might be quite bereaued
All hope, to follow that forbidden path,
From out the court they traind her by a sight,
And sent her to their castle that same night.

70

This was a fortresse that but few dayes past,
The Prince had giu'n to them vpon request,
Betweene *Perpignan* and *Cirtasso* plait,
And neare the sea, not of importance least:
Here as a prisoner they did keepe her fast,
With minde to send her one day vnto th'East,
They purpose, will she, nill she, she must take
Don *Leon*, and *Rogero* quite forsake.

71

The Damsell, though not kept with watch or guard,
Yet bridled with the Parents awfull raine,
Did keepe her close, with good and due regard,
And of their rigor did no whit complaine:
But yet to this her thoughts were full prepar'd,
To bide imprisonment or any paine,
Or death it selfe, by torture or by racke,
More rather then from promise to go backe.

72

Renaldo finding that his suttie fire,
Had tane his sister thus from out his fist,
Nor able as his promise did require,
Rogeros suit to further and assist,
Forgets he is his sonne, and in his ire,
Rebukes his Parents, but say what he list,
They are content to giue the words to loosers,
But in their daughters match they will be choosers.

Sentence.

73

Rogero hearing this, and greatly fearing,
Least *Leon* should by loue, or by constraint,
Possesse his Lady by his long forbearing,
He minds (but none he doth therewith acquaint,)
To giue a speedie death to *Leon*, swearing
That he of *Cesar*, will make him a saint,
And that he will, except his hope deceiue him,
Of scepter, life, and loue, and all bereaue him.

Far & Auguste
died, for whom
the Emperors
were dead, they
desied them and
called them *Leon*
which imports as
much as saint.

74

And in his minde resolued full thereon,
Don *Hector* armor that from *Mandricard*
He late had wonne, forwith he putteth on,
Frontino eake he secretly prepar'd:
But Eagle on his sheeld he would haue none,
I cannot tell you well in what regard;
In steed thereof an argent Vnicorne,
In field of Gewls by him, as then was borne.

75

One onely trustie seruant and no mo,
He takes with him his purpose to conceale,
He giueth him in charge where ere he go,
That he his name to no man do reueale:
Thus *Mofa*, *Rhyne*, he past with pace not slow,
And *Austria*, to th'Vngarian common weale:
And vpon *Isters* banke, such speed he made,
That in a while he came vnto *Belgrade*.

76

Where *Saua* doth into *Danubia* fall,
And all along that streame he might discover
Ensignes and banners all Imperiall,
That nye the streame in numbers great did houer:
Great was their multitude, and Grecians all,
Who with a hope that citie to recouer,
Which late before from them the Bulgars wonne,
Were thither brought by th'Emperor and his sonne.

77

Twixt *Belgrade*, and the streame in warlike rankes,
The Bulgars stood eu'n to the monntaines ridge,
Both armies waterd at the riuers bankes,
The Greekes endeuord there to cast a bridge;
And for that end prepared boats and planks,
The Bulgars sought their purpose to abridge:
Scarfe had *Rogero* vewd them wel, and seene them,
But that there fell a skirmish hot betweene them.

The

The Greeks were foure to one, beside they haue
 Good store of boats with many a planke and boord,
 And to the place a sharpe assault they gaue,
 And mean to passe although there were no foord:
 But this was but a policie, and braue,
 For Leon so this while himselfe besturd,
 That with a compasse that about he fer,
 Both he and his, the streame past without let.

79

With little lesse then twentie thousand men,
 Along the banks he secretly doth ride,
 And gaue to them a fresh alarm then,
 Vnlooked for, vnwares, and vnespide:
 No lesse the Emp'r *Constantino*, when
 He saw his sonne, on land on tother side,
 By ioyning planke to planke, and boat to boat,
 With all his powre, an easie passage got.

80

The Bulgar Captaine that *Vatrano* hight,
 And was a valiant warrior and a wise,
 Endeuord both by policie and fight:
 To beare the bront, but nothing could suffice:
 For Leon both by multitude and might,
 Vnhorsed him, and ere he could arise;
 Sith he to yeeld him prisoner did disdain,
 Among a thousand swords he there was slaine.

81

Till then, the Bulgars valiantly made hed,
 But when they saw their king and Captaine slaine,
 So great a terror in their minds was bred,
 In their faint hearts no courage did remaine:
Rogero seeing how the Bulgars fled,
 And none to stay or bring them backe againe:
 To helpe the weaker part resolueth briefly,
 For hate of *Constantine*, but Leon chiefly.

82

He spurres his horse that like the winde doth runne,
 And makes them stand, that fled with fainting brest,
 And hauing spide one brauer then the Sunne,
 A gallant youth, more forward then the rest:
 (This same was *Constantinos* sisters sonne)
 At him *Rogero* runnes with speare in rest:
 He brake his shield and coat like brittle glasse,
 And through his bodie made the speare to passe.

83

He leaues him dead, and *Ballifard* he drawes,
 And with that blade he shewd himselfe so stout,
 Who meeteth with him, to repeat haue caule,
 He presseth in among the thickest rout:
 Ones skull he cleaueth to the verie iawes,
 Heads, leggs, and armes flew all the field about:
 The streame that erst did run as Christall cleare,
 Vermillion now doth to the sight appeare.

84

No man that saw, much lesse that felt his blowes,
 Dare once make head against them, or resist them,
Rogero in the field triumphant goes,
 The Bulgars now march freely where it list them:
 Nor was there one amongst them all that knowes,
 What wight it was that did so well assist them:
 This change they saw procur'd in little space,
 Who lately fled, now held their foes in chafe.

85

The young *Augustus* standing on a hill,
 A place aboue the rest much eminent,
 Seeing one man his men to slay and kill,
 And that their losse and flight was euident:
 He wonders at his courage and his skill,
 And thinks that God had sure some Angel sent,
 To plague the Grecians for their old offences,
 And for the Bulgars succours and defences.

86

He sees both by his armes and Vnicorne,
 That sure he was a knight of forraine Nation,
 And where as some, more hate wold him haue born
 He rather held him in more admiration:
 His heart, whom vertuous thoughts did still adorne,
 And euer was of noble inclination,
 Made him extoll him for his deeds of armes,
 Although his men by him receiu'd such harmes.

87

Eu'n as a babe, whom sometime mou'd with ire,
 The mother beats with rod; or with it chafeth,
 Runnes not vnto the sifter, nor the fire,
 But to the Mam, and sweetly her imbraceth:
 So now though *Leons* men are made retire,
 And though *Rogero* killeth them and chafeth,
 Yet his great vawle maketh Leon loue him,
 Much more then hate him, for the harm he doth him.

Smile.

This was a true
noble nature.

88

But if that Leon loue him and admire,
 Me thinks he hath but forrie recompence,
 For why *Rogeros* hope and sole desire,
 Is to do Leon damage and offence:
 He lookes for him, and oft he doth enquire,
 Which way he was, but still the diligence,
 And long experience of the warie Greeke,
 Do caule *Rogero* him in vaine did seeke.

89

Don Leon saw his souldiers flie so fast,
 He sounds retreat, and to his father sent
 A messenger forthwith, in all post hast,
 And of his message this was chiefe content:
 To let him vnderstand how things had past,
 And wish him flie for feare of being shent:
 Likewise himselfe and his, hast all they may,
 Backe ore the streame themselves then to conuay.

90

But yet for all his hast, his men were slaine,
 And some with hast were drowned in the streame;
 The Bulgars now did conquerors remaine,
 That erst in perill were to loose their Reame:
 The knight of th' Vnicorne, they all see plaine,
 Causd all their good; wherefore with ioy extreame,
 To him they go acknowledging indeed,
 That all their glorie did from him proceed.

91

Some kisse his hands, and some do kisse his feete,
 And in most humble manner him salute,
 They thinke for him a praise diuine were meete,
 And powre diuine they do to him impute:
 They send their chiefeest Captaines him to meete,
 And all of them to him do make this sute:
 And vp to heau'n their ioyfull voyces ring,
 That he would be their Captaine, guide, and king.

Kk ij

92

Rogero vnto them this answer made,
That he will be their guide as they thinke best,
But that he will not come into Belgrade,
Nor staffe, nor scepter touch at no request,
Vntill that Leon that did them inuade,
He haue once slaine, or tane him at the least:
For why a thousand miles for this alone,
He riden had, and other cause had none.

93

This said, forthwith he biddeth them adew,
And would no longer stay at their desiring,
But that way Leon fled, did him pursue,
(For flight it was indeed, and not retyring)
Howbeit Leon and his men that knew,
What in such case for safetie was requiring, (past
Brake downe the bridge, when they the streame had
And so as then they made the passage fast.

94

Rogero failing of his first intent,
Did seeke some place to passe to tother side,
Along that streame till all that day was spent,
And all that night vncessantly doth ride:
Betime next morne vnto a towne he went,
To ease his wearied bodie, and beside,
To make his horse amends for so great wrong,
In keeping him without a bait so long.

95

Vngardo, one of reckning good and state,
Held this same towne to Constantino deare,
And footmen had, and horlemen got of late,
Since of these warres he did first tidings heare:
Rogero finding none to watch the gate,
More boldly enterd finding passage cleare:
The towne it selfe within he likewise found,
With meat and drinke, and lodging to abound.

96

Now where Rogero lodged that same night,
One of Romania, happend there to oste,
That present was at that precedent fight,
When as Rogero holpe the Bulgars host:
And at that time did him so sore affright,
That though of his escaping he might boast:
Yet still he feard him, and still did doubt him,
And still he thought that Vnicorne about him.

97

Wherefore when as he saw that sheeld, he knew
This was the man that eu'n before so late,
So many of the Grecian armie slew,
Straightway he hasted to the castle gate:
And that he may haue audience, he doth seue,
For matter that concernes the Realme and state:
But when he was admitted, what he told,
Within the booke insuing ile unfold.

Morall.

How truly and vpon how iust cause mine author blameth Princes for their weake keeping promise, and their continuall breaking of leagues (be they made euer so solemnly) I thinke our present time can witnesse, in which it is hard to say, whether any two Princes in Europe at this day be assured each of others loue: the reason is plaine,

They weigh not wrong nor right, nor reckon of it,
Further then it may tend to their owne profit.

And as the fault is theirs, so sure they haue a great punishment for it, which is, that they liue in perpetuall feare one of another, and euer one iealous of anothers greatnes: it was a happie time (if euer there was a time) when it was otherwise.

In dame Beatrice we may note the notable ambitious humor of women, specially in matching their children about their calling, which I touched more at large in the notes of the fift booke: neither are the wiser sort of men free from this folly, for if they may match their daughters, so as they may say my Lord my sonne, they thinke they haue God almightie by the toe (as the prouerbe saith) whereas many times they haue the diuell by the claw: but those that glorie so to make their sonnes their Lords, I would haue them heare that verse of Martiall to one that called his father his Lord.

Seruum te dicis natum ingenueque fateris,
Cum dicis dominum Sosibiane patrem.

A slave thou art by birth, of this I gather,
For euermore thou saist, my Lord my father.

Historie.

Perythous would needs take vpon him by the helpe of Theleus to steale away the daughter of the king of Molossus, but being both taken, Perithous was deuoured by Cerberus a great dogge that the said king kept, and Theleus was after rescued by Hercules: thence arose the fable that they went to hell together to steale Proserpina, for so was that kings daughter named.

Allegoric.

In the many lets that Rogero hath ear he can get Bradamant, the Allegorie is continued from the beginning to the end of the whole worke, to shew how hardly a man comes to a true contentment and peaceable state in this world (which is figured in the match with Bradamant) man hauing still enemies bodily or ghostly to hinder or inerrupt the same.

Allusion.

In Bradamants constant loue to Rogero, he alludes to a Lady of the house of Colonna, that married Luigi Gonzaga against the Popes will, and many of his adherents.

Here end the notes of the 44. booke.



THE ARGUMENT.

*The noble Leon doth Rogero saue,
In Theodoras cruell prison pent;
Soone after, Leon doth Rogero craue,
To win him Bradamant: he doth assent:
And fought with her xij. houres a combat brane;
Of which he after did so sore repent,
In sorrow great, he thought to end his life,
To thinke another should possesse his wife.*

*The vnstablens
of Fortune.*



Looke how much higher
Fortune doth erect,
The clyming wight, on
her vnstable wheele,
So much the nigher may
a man expect,
To see his head, where
late he saw his heele:
Polyrates hath prou'd it
in effect,

And *Dionysius* that too true did feele:
Who long were luld on high in Fortunes lap,
And fell downe sodainely to great mishap.

2

On tother side the more a man is pressed,
And viterly ou'rthrowne by Fortunes lowre,
The sooner comes his state to be redressed,
When wheele shal turne and bring the happy houre:
Some from the blocke haue grown to be so blessed,
Whole realmes haue bene subiected to their powre,
As *Marius* and *Ventidius* sample is,
In former age, and *Lews* of France in this.

*Looke in the
Allusion.*

3

That *Lews* of France (the storie well is knowne)
That to *Alfonso*s sonne, did giue his daughter,
Who was at Saint Albinos ouerthrowne,
And eu'n with much adoe escaped slaughter;
A like misfortune by like danger growne,
Coruino scaped but a little after:
And hauing past that moment by good chance;
One ruled Hungarie, the tother France.

*Looke in the
storie.*

4

Tis manifest in stories new and old,
That good and ill, each other do succeed,

And worldly blisse hath but a slender hold,
Wherefore a man of wisdom, will take heed;
And on his fortune neuer be too bold,
Although his state and riches farre exceed:
Nor yet in fortune ill, dispaire or doubt,
For euermore her wheele doth turne about.

5

Rogero, as I lately did repeat,
Now hauing both repulst the sonne and fire,
Grew to such pride therewith, and such conceat,
(Ambition euermore aspiring hire,)
He thinkes by fortune and his force so great,
To kill Don *Leon*, which was his chiefe desire,
And for that purpose aid he asketh none,
But thinketh sure, to do the feat alone.

6

But she that cannot suffer nor abide,
That any long should of her fauour boist,
Now in the midst of all his praise and pride,
When in her fauour he affied most,
Did cause him of this knight to be discride;
Who went vnto *Vngardo* straight in post,
And told him how that man that put to flight
The Greekish host, would lie in towne that night.

7

He said, twas happend eu'n as one could wish,
If so they mard not all by ill contriuing,
That he was taken now as is a fish,
That to the net approacheth without driuing;
Or rather layes it selfe into the dish,
And makes resistance none, nor any striuing,
Much did the Captaine at these newes reioyce,
And shewd the same by gesture and by voyce.

And

8
And presently prouision such he made,
That good *Rogero* taken was that night,
And kept as prisoner now in Nouengrade,
(For so the towne where he was taken hight)
What should he do? when arm'd men did inuade
Him naked and a sleepe, with so great might:
Vngardo straight doth send this ioyfull tyding,
To *Constantin*, at Belrich now abyding.

9
For since his forces late were beaten downe,
He thought it safest, quickly to withdraw
Vnto some strength, or to some walled towne,
(For of the Bulgars now he had such aw)
He doubted they would hazard eu'n his crowne,
Now hauing such a guide as erst he saw,
And this same towne was strong, and did pertaine,
To him, whose sonne was by *Rogero* slaine.

10
But when this message of their Captains taking,
By letters and by Post, was brought to him,
He was therewith, in such a ioyfull taking,
He thought he now in seas of milke did swim;
His face that pale, his heart that earst was quaking,
Vpon this newes, it chearfull was and trim;
The Bulgars now he counts as ouerthrowne,
The victorie he iudgeth sure his owne.

11
As doth the father ioy, so doth the sonne,
Of this good hap, though for a further end,
He hopeth this braue knight may now be wonne
By curtesie, to be his faithfull frend,
He needeth not enuie (if that were donne)
King *Charles* the great, (he thinks) but eu'n contend,
Both with his *Palladines*, and all his garrison,
For flowre of *Chiuallrie*, to make comparison.

12
But *Theodora* was of other minde,
Don *Leons* Ant, whose sonne *Rogero* slew,
For she with choller carri'd headlong blinde,
And for his losse, whose death she most did rewe,
To *Constantin* her Lord, and brother kinde
She went, and at his feete herselfe she threw,
And when she first had made a piteous plaint,
She with her suit, this wife did him acquaint.

13
I will not rise from these your feete (she saith)
My liege, vntill you grant me powre to wreake
My selfe on him, that brought my sonne to deth,
And did with cruell speare, his bowels breake:
Besides he was your nephew, while his breth
Did dure, you saw his loue, and seruice eake,
Your highnes knowes, it were too great a wrong,
To let his death be vnreuenged long.

14
You further see, that God of goodnes meare,
Had caus'd that wretch, the campe thus to forsake,
And come like bird to bayt (the case is cleare)
Whereas *Vngardo* did him prisoner take,
Because my onely sonne, I lou'd to deare,
Might not go vnreueng'd to Stigian lake:
Then giue me him (my Lord) and be content,
I swage my griefe, with his sharpe punishment.

15
Her plaints and mone, so well she doth deuise,
So forcibly and heartily she prayd,
Nor would not sturre from thence in any wife,
(Although the noble Emp'ror did, and sayd
Eu'n all he could, to make her thence arise)
That sith she would by no meanes be denyd,
But still renewd her suit, with piteous weeping,
He granteth her the prisoner in her keeping.

16
And thus at last, to make the matter short,
He sendeth for the knight of th' *Vnicorne*,
And gaue him her, whose chiefe delight and sport,
Was to deuise to worke him woe and scorne;
All common deaths were of too milde a sort,
To haue him hangd, and all in peeces torne,
And on each gate, to set a quarrred lim,
She thought it was not plague enough for him.

17
Chained hands and feete, and uecke, she lockt him vp
In dungeon voide of light, but full of stinke,
With mouldie bread, she made him dine and sup,
And gaue him puddle water for his drinke:
She shortly meanes, that he a sorrie cup
Shall tast, but till she may herselfe bethinke
The kinde of death, she giueth him a keeper,
Whose rancor was as deepe as hers, or deeper.

18
Oh had Duke *Ammons* noble daughter knowne,
Of her *Rogeros* now distressed state,
Or if it had bene to *Marisa* showne,
Who lou'd him deare, though in another rate,
Both tone and tother, thither would haue flowne,
And would not cease to ride betimes and late,
To rescue good *Rogero*, and assist,
Let *Ammon* and his wife, say what they list.

19
Now *Charles* the great, began to call to minde
His promise, by the which himselfe was bound,
That husband none should euer be affinde
To *Bradamant*, but he in fight were found
Her match, and (as kings vie in such a kinde)
He published the same by trumpets sound,
Ou'r all his Empire, sending proclamations,
That soone the fame, did flye to forren nations.

20
Thus much the writing made men vnderstand,
That no man *Bradamant* to wife should get,
But one that would attempt with sword in hand,
From rising of the Sun, vntill it set,
Her force in single combat to withstand;
Which if that any could, there was no let,
But she agrees, and *Charles* himselfe allows,
That such a one should haue her for his spouse.

21
This Article was likewise there set downe,
That they should name the weapon if they list,
For why her vallew was of great renowne,
To fight on horse, on foote, in field, in list.
Duke *Ammon* now that to withstand the crowne,
Wants force and will, no longer doth resist,
But after long discourses with his daughter,
Compeld in fine, backe to the Court he brought her

22

Her mother eke, though wroth and malcontent,
Yet both for nature, and for honours sake,
Good store of costly clothes incontinent,
Both gownes and kirtles she for her doth make;
Thus *Bradamant* with both her parents went,
Vnto the Court, where she small ioy did take,
She scarce esteemed it a Court to be,
When that her louer there she could not see.

23

Smile.

As one that saw in Aprill or in May,
A pleasant garden, full of fragrant flowres,
Then when fresh earth new clad in garments gay,
Deckes eu'ry wood and groue with pleasant bowres
And comes againe on some Decembers day,
And sees it mard, with winters stormes and showres,
So did this Court to *Bradamant* appeare,
When as she saw *Rogero* was not heare.

24

She dares not aske of any man for feare,
Least such a question might her loue accuse,
Howbeit secretly she lendeth eare,
To others talke, as in such case men vse:
Each man saith gon he is, but none knowes wheare,
For to the Court, of him there came no newes,
And he himselfe, when as he thence departed,
His purpose vnto no man there imparted.

25

Oh in what feare and rage these newes do set her,
To heare *Rogero* was in manner fled,
She thinks that sure, because he could not get her,
And that her father nay, to him had sed,
That now he sought of purpose to forget her,
And shunne her sight, that all his sorrow bred;
She thinks that he from thence himselfe withdrawes,
For this alone, and for none other cause.

26

Smile.

But more then all, this doubt her heart assayles,
That he was gone to seeke some forren loue,
And sith that of his purpose here he fayles,
To speed some otherwhere he straight would proue
As from a boord men driue out nayles with nayles,
So with new loue he woud her loue remoue;
But straight another thought that thought gainsaith,
She thinketh her *Rogero* full of faith.

27

And there-vpon her selfe she reprehends,
That she her louer should so much abuse,
Thus in her minde, one fancie him defends,
And then another, doth him sore accuse,
And she her thought to either fancie lends,
And in great doubt she is, which part to chuse;
But when a while she had her selfe bethought,
She leaneth most, vnto best pleasing thought.

28

Then chiefe, when in her mind she doth repeat
Rogeros promise, which he had her trust,
She thinks to him the iniurie is great,
That causlesly she now should him mistrust,
And eu'n as he were present, she doth beat
Her brest that still doth harbor thoughts vniust,
My selfe hath sinn'd (she saith) which now I curse,
But he that caused it is cause of worse.

29

Loue was the cause (quoth she) that in my hart,
Your face and grace ingraued hath so teemely,
And therewith hath set forth each vertuous part,
Beseeming thee so sweetly and so trimly,
That sure no dame, that knowes well what thou art,
Can chuse but fall in loue with thee extreemly,
And therewithall, with all her powre indeuer,
To win thy loue, and make thee hers for euer.

30

Oh if that loue had grau'd thy thoughts so well,
As it hath grau'd thy visage in my minde,
In how great ioy, and blisse should I then dwell,
For well I know, that they be true and kinde;
Then ieaiousie, the onely plague of hell,
(To which alas I am too much inclinde)
Should quickly cease, and I should free me from it,
Nor would I in my heart, once thinke vpon it.

31

Smile.

But as a miser, hoording vp his treasure,
Doth doubt in absence still, that theeues be there,
So I when thou that art mine onely pleasure,
Art absent far from me (I know not where)
I straight suspect, and straight I doubt false measure,
And straight my hope grows lesse, & more my feare
Which though I thinke both bootlesse, and vniust,
Yet still I doubt, and still I do mistrust.

32

But yet no sooner shall the pelasing light,
Of thy sweet count'nance come vnto mine eyes,
O thou my ioy, o thou my liues delight,
(Though where thou art I cannot now deuise)
But that true hope, false feare shall put to flight,
And knowledge plaine, all doubts shall satisfie,
Come then my deare, and hasten thy returning,
Ere hope & feare shal waite me quite with mourning

33

Smile.

As when the night hath spred her mantle blacke,
Faint harted folke, are wont to be affrayd,
But when againe the day-light doth come backe,
They seeme of better cheare, and well appayd:
So I do faint, when as my deare I lacke,
But in his presence I am vndismayd:
Come then my deare *Rogero*, come vnto me,
Before that hope and doubt do quite vndo me.

34

Smile.

As in the night, each little fierie sparke,
May plainly be discerned with our eyne,
But when the day doth come we then shall marke,
That all are damp't and do no longer shine,
So kindels feare, in minde with doubt made darke,
Vntill my Sunne in my Horizon shine:
Turne then my deare, and with thy light illumme me,
And driue away this care that doth consume me.

35

Smile.

As when the Sun declines to South most low,
The land doth leese the beautie that she had,
And winter stormes breed raine, and ice, and snow,
The pleasant birds all silent sit and sad:
So when as thou from me farre of dost go,
O shining Sunne, whose beames do make me glad,
A thousand feares but all vniust and vaine,
Make winter in my heart, to my great paine.

Shine

36

Shine then on me, O my cleare Sun, and bring
Thy beames more nye, this snow and ice to thaw,
Refresh these branches witherd in their spring,
And do no more thy selfe so farre withdraw:
As *Philomena* dolefully doth sing,
When as her young ones all destroyd she saw,
Or as the Turtle early mourns and late,
When she hath lost her deare beloued mate.

37

So noble *Bradamant* still mournes and plaines,
With feare *Rogero* had her loue reiected,
And with salt teares her louely cheeks distaines,
Yet secretly, for feare to be detected:
Oh had she knowne that he was bound in chaines,
And eu'rie houre a cruell death expected,
What griefe of minde thinke you, would she then
That was so grieu'd already for his sake! (take,

38

But loe, the heau'nly goodnes so ordaines,
That *Theodoras* rage, and cruell spight,
Against her prisoner, whom she keeps in chaines,
And means to kil with torture all she might,
Referuing him aliue for greater paines,
Came to the eare of *Cæsars* sonne one night,
And put into his heart to saue and cherish,
And not to suffer so great vallew perish.

39

The noble *Leon* that *Rogero* loues,
(Not knowing tho that this *Rogero* was)
Whom his rare vertue, and great vallew moues,
Which he did thinke, all humane farre to passe,
Deuising sundry wayes, this one he proues,
And by the same, he brought the feate to passe,
So that his cruell Ant could not espy him,
Nor once complaine that she was wronged by him.

40

He speaketh in the secrett fort he can,
Vnto the bloudy wretch that kept the kayes,
And prayth him show him the condemned man,
For why he must examaine him he sayes:
A knight a valiant man that was his man,
He takes with him fit for all bold assayes,
The cruell layler, that no fraud suspected,
In all points did as *Leon* him directed.

41

He leadshim secretly vnto the den,
Where good *Rogero* was in prison pent,
Nor tooke he with him any of his men,
But as their guide, the formost of them went:
Who when they saw the time best serued, then
No longer to defer th'occasion ment,
But vnawares they at aduantage catch him,
And with a sodaine stab they do dispatch him.

42

Then open they the trap doore out of hand,
And downe they let the ladder that was by,
And *Leon* with a lanterne in his hand,
Of light conceald, went where the knight did ly,
Fast bound vpon a grate with bitter band,
Not in the water, but thereto so ny,
The very dampe was such, that one might guesse,
That sole would kill him, in a month or lesse.

43

With great compassion *Leon* him imbraced,
And sayd, sir knight, the vertue you haue showne,
With lured knots, my loue hath knit and laced
To you, since first the same to me was knowne,
So as my heart and thoughts are wholly plac'd,
To seeke your safetie, rather then mine owne,
Ventring, your welfare and your loue to win,
To leese my fires good will, and all my kin.

44

To tell you true, the Emp'rours sonne I am,
Leon by name, as yet to you a stranger,
To set you free, of purpose now I came,
And put my person, and my state in danger
That both my father greatly me may blame,
And looke vpon me euermore with anger;
The losse at Belgrade which you wrought him late,
Makes him to beare to you so sharpe an hate.

45

These sugred words, and many more beside,
Which were for me too tedious to repeat,
He spake, and then his bands he all vntyde,
And secretly he causd him moue his seat:
Rogero in this wise to him replyde,
Your curtesie is such, your gift so great,
To giue me life, that you shall ay command it,
When euer it shall please you demand it.

46

Thus *Leon* in this secret sort vnknowne,
Rogero from the prison doth conuay,
And sent him to a castle of his owne,
Whereas he might secure in silence stay,
Vntill this tumult all were ouerblowne,
And till againe for him regaine he may,
His armes and gallant horse, and famous blade,
Kept by *Vngardo*, Lord of Nouengrade.

47

The keeper slaine, the next ensuing morne,
The prison gates, from off the hinges heaued,
The chaines, and manicles, in peeces torne
Each man might see, but none by whom perceaued:
All thought that *Leon* had him hatred borne,
Wherefore of him, they no mistrust conceaued,
The cause he had of hate, each man doth know,
By name his late receaued ouerthrow.

48

At this great curtesie that *Leon* vsed,
Rogero wonders much, and thinks it strange,
And sore he was in minde and thought confus'd,
And sodainly he feelles a wondrous change,
His heart relented, and all hate refused,
And turnde it all to loue, by sweet exchange,
What earst malicious, cruell was, and hatefull,
Is turned now to kinde, and milde, and gratefull.

49

So deepe into his head and heart it sinkes,
That it possessed all his soule and sence,
On this he studies when he wakes or winkes,
How he may do to him some recompence:
To spend eu'n all his future dayes (he thinkes)
Sole in his seruice, and in his defence,
Could not requite, no scarce the twentieth part,
Of so great curtesie, and so great desert.

50

In this meane while, the newes was come from France,
Which *Charles* had notifide to many a nation,
Of her that would be woo'd by sword and lance,
In single fight (so said the proclamation:)
Don Leon was quite out of countenance,
To heare of this her strange determination,
And as a man that well his owne strength knowes,
Himselfe too weake for her he doth suppose.

51

And long debating how he might supply,
His want of force and courage, by his wit,
In fine he purposed with himselfe to try,
This new made fréd, whose name he knows not yet,
Although he well could witness with his eye,
That for no braue exploit he was vnfit,
He hopeth by his manhood and his aid,
To conquer and to haue that hardie maid.

52

But two things he must do before he goes,
One is the minde of this same vnknowne knight,
Vnto this hardie enterprise dispose,
The tother is, to bring him to the fight
So secretly, as none might it disclose,
And all that while to keepe himselfe from fight:
First then, in earnest sort he doth intreat
Rogero take on him this hardie feat.

53

Much might the Greeke preuaile by eloquence,
The which he vld to leade him thereunto,
But more preuayld the bond of recompence,
So firme as no time euer could vndo,
That though the motion bred him great offence,
And seemd a thing vnpossible to do,
With gladder looke then heart he doth reply,
Deare sir, I nothing may to you deny.

54

Though he no sootier had this word pronounced,
But that he felt such griete did gripe his hart,
As if damnation were to him denounced,
Such pangs he had, such torture and such smart:
But yet his promise giu'n he not renounced,
Nor from the same once purposed to depart,
For first a thousand deaths he ment to chuse,
Then one request of *Leons* to refuse.

55

Dye sure he shall (he thinks) for if he leaue
His loue, he knowes he cannot byde aliué,
For either sorrow will of life him reaué,
Or if that nature shall with sorrow striue,
Of his owne hands he will his death receaue,
And so his soule from hated barbor driue,
Each other thing on earth, to him seems possible,
But missing her, to liue he thinks impossible.

56

Then die he must, onely he doubts what kinde
Of death, were for his state and fancie best,
Once this conceit did come into his minde,
To lay in fight his naked open brest:
Might she him slay, he deemeth in his minde,
That such a death, in death might make him blest,
But then he sees what follow would of this,
That noble *Leon*, should his purpose misse.

57

And then himselfe of promise eke should fayle,
Which was not to dissemble, but indeuer
That *Leon* in his wooing might preuaile,
And make dame *Bradamant* his owne for euer:
Thus though that diuers thoughts his minde assayle,
Yet wholly in that thought he doth perseuer,
That moueth him most plaine to deale and trew,
And to all other thoughts he bids adew.

58

This while *Don Leon* with his fathers leaue,
With such retinue as his state required,
Of knights and squyres, his natiue soyle did leaue,
And went to see the dame he so desired:
Rogero did of him before receaue,
His armes and horse, and in strange clothes attired,
Day after day they so their iorney frame,
That at the last to Paris walls they came.

59

Don Leon to the Citie would not go,
But neare vnto the same he pitcht a tent,
And by Ambassage made the king to know,
How he was come, and vnto what intent:
King *Charles* was glad, and did his gladnes show
With gifts, and vnto him in person went:
Don Leon tels what did his comming breed,
And prayes he may dispatched be with speed.

60

And that King *Charles* that noble maid would cause,
To come the day ensuing to the feeld,
That would (against all common wedlocks lawes)
Be wood and wonne, with onely sword and sheld:
King *Charles* her calls, and she that askt no pause,
Vnto the motion willingly did yeeld,
And so accordingly next day she came,
Vnto the lists prepared for the same.

61

That day that went before the day of fight,
Rogero passed with as great content,
As doth a man condemned spend the night,
The which before his execution went,
He chufd to fight all clad in armour bright,
Because as then to be vnknowne he ment,
And (for to hurt her, was not his pretence)
Saue sword, he vld no weapon of offence.

62

Lance he would none, not that he feard the lance
Which first *Argalia*, then *Astolfo* bare,
Which forced men beside their seat to dance,
And vnto many men procurde great care,
For neither he that vld it first in France,
Nor any of those other, was aware,
How all those feats were by enchantment donne,
Saue that same king, that gaue it to his sonne.

63

Likewise *Astolfo* and the Dordon dame,
That with that speare full many did vnhorse,
Thought not that it from Nigromancy came,
But from their sleight, and their owne proper force,
They thought with any speare to do the same:
But now *Rogero* did both speare and horse
Refuse, because if he had vld his owne,
He thought it would by *Bradamant* be knowne.

Needs

Simile.

The same Lancia
d'oro, was some-
time king Gala-
frons, father of
Angelica.

64
Needs must the damsell call to minde the steed,
For why she kept him long at Clarimount,
And vled him with her owne hands to feed,
And made of him a speciall deare account:
Wherefore *Rogero* that tooke speciall heed,
To go vnkowne refusd on horse to mount,
Or any other thing by which he may,
Vnto his dearest loue himselfe bewray.

65
He further needs another sword would take,
For well he knew against his Ballisard,
No Steele, nor armor none, defence could make,
Whose edge so keene, whose mettall was so hard,
Of that new sword likewise he (for her sake)
Rebates the edge, so great was his regard,
And thus himselfe both weakning and disguising,
He came into the field at *Phabus* rising.

66
And that each one for *Leon* might him note,
Vntill the controuersie were discided,
He wears vpon his backe Don *Leons* cote,
The golden Eagle with the head deuicid,
(Their making both was like, from foot, to throte)
Thus when all things were readily prouided,
The tone presents him in the open greene,
The tother kept him close, and was not seene.

67
But *Bradamant* now farre in other rate,
Herselfe in readines for fight doth set,
And if the knight do his swords edge rebate,
As fast the damsell her swords edge doth whet:
She wisheth with a heart most full of hate,
Her sword a passage to the quicke would get,
Yea comfort her it would and do her good,
If she with eu'rie blow could draw the blood.

68
Eu'n as a Barbrye horse that runnes a race,
And for the signe thereof hath long expected,
Against his will, doth stay his running pace,
With swelling nostrils and with eares erected:
Eu'n so the noble damsell in like case,
That of *Rogeros* presence naught suspected,
Did swell with wrath, and burnes like flaming fier,
Vnto the combat, such was her desier.

69
And as oft times vpon some fearfull clap
Of thunder, straight a hurlewinde doth arise,
And lifts the waues aloft, from *Thetys* lap,
Eu'n in a moment vp vnto the skyes,
The Herdman doubting of some great mishap,
About some tree, or caue, close hidden lyes,
So *Bradamant* with rage of anger driuen,
Assayld *Rogero* when the signe was giuen.

70
But neuer did a stiffe and aged oke,
Against the Northerne blast more firmly stand,
Nor better doth a rocke, indure the stroke,
Of surging waues, still wallowing to the land,
Then good *Rogero*, guarded in the cloke
Of *Hectors* armes, her forces did withstand,
Though she still layd on loade with spite and hate,
Vpon his armes, his sides, his brest, and pate.

71
Sometimes she giues a blow, sometime a thrust,
According as her vantage most she spide,
And still she watcht, if she could hit him iust
Betweene the plates, or where the same were tide,
Twas well the cote was such as one might trust,
For she doth search it still on eu'rie side,
And inwardly she fretteth in her minde,
That nought fell out of that she had assignd.

72
So shall you see some men besiege a towne,
Wel walld, and strongly flankt with rampiers mayne, *Simila.*
Assault it oft, and strue to batter downe
Some towres or gates, with perill great and payne,
And wast their time, and spending many a crowne,
To loose their men about the same in vayne,
No more the damsls force did now preuayle,
To pierce a plate, or to vnriuet nayle.

73
Sometime foorth of his helmet and his sheeld,
She made the sparks of fire fly out in sight,
Still smiting him with blowes not soft, nor seeld,
Sometime at reardemaine, and oft downe right,
As thicke as haylstones that vpon the feeld,
Or on the tyld houses do alight:
But still *Rogero* close lyes to his ward,
And not to hurt her, still he hath regard.

74
Oft standing still, now turning, then retiring,
He makes his foote accompanie his fist,
With sword, with shield, with slip (cause so requiring)
He wards the blowes, or shunnes them as him list;
And euer not to damage her desiring,
When he might hit, of purpose still he mist,
Yet in such wise, that she her selfe was ware,
And all the rest, that he the same forbare.

75
But *Bradamant* when she her selfe bethought,
What was containd in th' Emperors Edict,
That whoso eu'r with her a whole day fought,
Should haue her at the end of such conflict,
With all her force endeuord still and fought,
To gall her aduersarie and afflict;
And now the more she troubled was in minde,
To see the Sun to West so low decline.

76
And as her hope still lesse and lesser grew,
So her desire increast still more and more,
Her louing aduersarie to subdew,
That she had fought withall the day before:
As laborers whose worke by taske was dew, *Simila.*
That loyterd haue and now are sad therefore,
When night drawes on bestur their lasie bones,
Vntill their strength, and light fayle both at once.

77
Alas good *Bradamant*, if thou didst know,
The man to whom thou wishest so much ill,
That in this fight hath bene thy frendly foe,
And winneth thee (perhaps against his will)
Thou wouldest first haue kild thy selfe I trow,
Then of his blood one little drop to spill,
Thou that didst now so curse him and bestrow him
Wouldst neither of them do, if thou didst know him

78

But *Charles* and all his Lords, with full perswasion
That this so valiant champion, *Leon* was,
To praise him highly now they take occasions;
And sith his strength did hers so greatly passe,
They thinke for her, there now was no euasion,
The matter brought to such a narrow passe.
Each man esteems this match for her most fit,
Each man allowes, each man commendeth it.

79

Now gan *Don Phebus* dip his golden rayes,
(To swage their burning) in the Westerne seas,
When *Charles* himselfe comes to them both & prays
The damsell now her furie to appease,
And giueth sentence, that without delayes,
Don Leon may her marrie when he please:
Rogero doth himselfe no whit disclose,
But armed full backe to the tent he goes.

80

Don Leon, brotherly doth him imbrace,
And then he holpe him to vntie his beauer,
And with great kindnes kissed all his face,
And said that he was bound to him for euer,
And that no time, such merit could deface,
Which to reward he would for aye indeuer,
Affirming frankly of his owne meere motion,
That all he had, should be at his deuotion.

81

I neuer can such curtesie requite,
Scant in this life (he saith) or in the next,
No though I should surrender all my right
Vnto my crowne, and all thereto annex.
Rogero, that in speech tooke small delight,
And was with inward passion so perplext,
Restord to him his armes, that he had worne,
And tooke againe his sheeld of th' Vnicorne.

82

Pretending (as he truly might pretend)
He wearie was, and would himselfe repose,
And therefore to his tent vnto that end,
All priuat vnaccompanyd he goes;
At midnight horse to take he doth intend,
At midnight priuily from bed he role.
And armed, and mounted thence away departed,
But why nor whither, he to none imparted.

83

And thus away he secretly doth ride,
And giues *Frontino* leaue to chuse the way,
Now neare a wood, then by the riuer side,
(He neuer looking to what coast it lay)
He faine would die, and still come death he cride,
He thought death onely could his paine allay,
He onely wished death, to end his grieve,
That while he liues, is sure past all reliefe.

84

Ah wretch (said he) of whom can I complaine,
For sodain reauing me of all my blisse?
Shall I so great an iniurie sustaine?
Of whom else shall I be aueng'd for this?
I did the fault, and now I feele the paine,
Nor can I say, but iust the torment is,
For punishment doth properly belong,
To him that is the author of the wrong.

Sentence.

85

But had I done my selfe the wrong alone,
I might perhap forgiue my selfe the same,
Though surely cause, nor reason there is none,
To pardon such a fact, so worthie blame:
But now I haue to her bene cause of mone,
To suffer that, it were perpetuall shame:
So though I should no iust reuengement take
For mine owne cause, yet must I for her sake,

86

This wrong reuenge I may, I will, I must,
By onely death, sith this offence was such;
To dye, I soone shall finde the way I trust,
The care thereof, my minde no whit doth tuch:
Oh that I had long since bene layd in dust,
Ere that I iniured my deare so much,
I would I had bene put to death before,
When I was prisoner vnto *Theodore*.

87

If I had then bene martyr'd and tormented,
With all the plagues her mallice could deuise,
At least my deare, my death would haue lamented,
With teares, from out her christall streaming eyes:
Now when she knows, that I haue thus consented
To *Leon*, to betray her in this wise,
My part of her, vnto a stranger giuing
She will haue cause to hate me dead and liuing.

88

Now while the knight did thus lament and plaine,
The Easter parts of heau'n, with light were cleared,
And *Phebus* from his golden house againe,
Lift vp his head, wherewith all creatures cheared,
Betake them to their ordinarie paine:
And then vnto *Rogero* it appeared,
That he was in a wood, a most fit place,
For one of such a minde, in such a case.

89

He lights, and off he takes *Frontinos* saddle,
And giues him libertie, and thus he sayes,
My gallant beast so good, so seruiceable,
As I haue found thee still at all assayes,
Go, heare I set thee free, and were I able,
As I am willing, to set forth thy prayle,
Thou doubtlesse shouldst not need that horse enuie,
That was rane vp from earth vnto the skye.

90

Nor should *Arions* prayles make thee sory,
Nor *Cillarus* that *Castor* did bestryde,
Nor any praisd in Greeke, or Latin story,
For why (thy shape and readines beside)
Of all these famous steeds not one can glorie,
As thou maist do, it cannot be denide,
Of them none passeth thee in commendation,
Nor iustly challenge can such reputation.

91

Thou hast bene cherished and loued deere,
By such a Nymph, so faire and so diuine,
As all the world can hardly show her peere,
She hath thee fed, with that fayre hand and fine,
I meane my loue, but ah why liue I heere,
Sith now I may no longer call her mine?
No longer mine she is, ah cruell word,
Why end not I my dayes by mine owne sword?

Now

Pegasus, locked in
the Table.

92
Now if *Rogero* thus himselfe tormented,
And could the birds and beasts, to mone his plaint,
For none but birds and beasts, the place frequented,
Whom he with his great sorrow might acquaint;
No doubt the damsell was as ill contented,
And made a greater, or as great complaint,
Sith for her selfe she nothing hath to say,
Why she to *Leon* longer should say nay.

93
Yet all meanes possible she meanes to trye,
Before that she will her *Rogero* leaue,
And make king *Charles* and all his Lords to lye,
And *Leon* of his promise to deceaue:
Or if the worst shall hap, she meanes to dye,
And with her hands of life her selfe bereaue,
For present death she rather ment to chuse,
Then her belou'd *Rogero* to refuse.

94
How commeth it to passe (said she) my deare,
That at this time thou art so farre from hence?
How can a thing which all the world did heare,
So strangely be concealed from thy sence?
If thou hadst heard it, sure thou wouldst appeare;
For that my drift, that was my sole pretence,
Ah my ill fortune euermore accurst,
What can I deeme, but eu'n the very worst.

95
Why then *Rogero* mine, can you alone,
Not know that all the world doth know beside,
For had you known it straight you wouldst haue flown
Of purpose hither combat to haue tride;
Thou sure art tane, or slaine, for third is none:
It may be, *Leon* that thy praise enuide,
Hath like a traytor, set for thee a trap,
And thou art tane therein by some mishap.

96
I gat this grace of *Charles* to marry none,
But one that were in fight for me too hard,
Assured thou shouldst be that onely one,
For no mans force but thine I did regard;
I thought none else could vanquish me alone,
But loe how God doth this my pride reward,
That he that neuer erst in all his life
Did manly deed, hath wonne me for his wife.

97
If I be wonne and vanquished, because
He matched still my force at all assayes,
But *Charles* doth not iudge rightly of the cause,
And therefore I must seeke some new delays:
Ah if I now put in some cuffling clause,
I shall be cald vnconstant all my dayes,
But ficklenes in maids is seldome wonderd,
Nor am I first that vde it, by an hunderd.

98
Sufficeth me that in the being trew
Vnto my loue, I others all excell,
And passe the patterns either old or new,
Or neare or far, eu'n wheresou'r they dwell:
Then will I bid that constancie adew,
That may be hindrance to my doing well,
So I and *Leon* may not match together,
Let me be deemd as wau'ring as the wether.

99
This *Bradamant* vnto her selfe doth say,
And oft she breaks her speech with sighs and tears,
And that night that ensu'd that lucklesse day,
To sleepe or close her eye-lids she forbears,
But when *Apollo's* beames had driu'n away
Nocturnus shades, then lo supernall spheares,
By which all humane actions are directed,
Brought helpe to her, when least it was expected.

Nocturnus far-
ned is the god
of the night.

100
For why *Marfisa*, that braue minded dame,
The next day came and sowed new seeds of strife,
Alledging that it was great wrong and shame,
A fortener should haue her brothers wife;
And swears her selfe could not endure the same,
And that she would by comba gage her life,
According as the law of armes allows,
To proue *Rogero* was her lawfull spouse.

101
And if dame *Bradamant* would it deny,
She saith, she will it to her face auer,
As hauing witnes bene with eare, and eye,
That good *Rogero* was assur'd to her
With words, as folkes in mariages apply;
And adding she would vnto law refer,
If to the damsell to her noble brother
Affianced, might iustly take another.

102
Now whether this she spake were false or trew,
I know not, but she spake it with intent,
To stop the mariage likely to ensue
With *Leon*, which she studi'd to preuent:
Some thought perhaps that *Bradamant* it knew;
And that twas done in part by her consent,
As hauing no more safe nor honest way,
Vnto her left, to say Don *Leon* nay.

103
In euill part these newes the Emp'r'or tooke,
And called for the damsell by and by,
And told her what *Marfisa* vndertooke,
(And loe by hap, Duke *Ammon* then stood by)
She fixed on the ground her silent looke,
And to the question, said nor no nor I,
That by her gesture, eu'rie one did take,
That that was true, that earst *Marfisa* spake.

104
This made *Orlando* and *Renaldo* glad,
In hope that this might proue a lawfull meane,
To make the match which they forepromist had,
And hinder this new match, and dash it cleane:
For sith Duke *Ammon* those first banes torbad,
And vnto *Leons* side did wholly leane,
To vse pretence of law, they both had rather,
Then take by force, the damsell from her father.

105
For if that this pretence may stand for good,
The necke of *Leons* match it then would breake,
And moue no cause of warre, or shedding blood:
But *Ammon* in great wrath, thus wise doth speake;
This is a tale indeed of *Robinhood*,
Which to beleue, might show my wits but weake,
But thinke not that I will be so belotted,
Though this were true, that you haue vainly plotted.

106

For presuppose, which yet I not confesse,
My daughter was by folly so allured,
And that they are, which none of wit could guesse,
Each vnto other, man and wife assured:
I pray you yet, the time more plaine expresse,
When this was done, how long it hath indured,
This (sure I am) tis but a tale deuised,
Except it were before he was baptised.

107

And if twere done before his Christen state,
To stand vnto the same I am not tyde,
Wherefore this caueat is put in too late,
Her owne desire she hath not had denyde:
Now tis not fit, a Prince of such estate,
As for her sake, aduenterd to haue dyde,
Should by our Emp'ours promise be deluded,
And by such craft, be from his right excluded.

108

You should haue spoken then of this contract,
Before our king had sent his proclamation,
I meane not thus to haue my credit crackt,
For more then so, I weigh my reputation:
Thus pleaded he against that precontract,
The which to breake was his determination,
To either part his eare the Emperor lends,
Yet partially, to neither side he bends.

109

*Simile. Ouid.
Qualis succin-
ctus ubi trux in-
sibilat Eurus.
Murmura pne-
tu sunt, vel qua-
lia fluctus
Æquores facit
si quis procul au-
diat illos
A wonder lasts
nine dayes.*

Looke what a murmure winds do make in woods,
When Zephyrus mild blasts among them are,
Or when one hears from far the saltish floods,
When Eolus and Neptune are at square:
So did the common people in their moods,
Tallke of these matters, and the same compare,
And as the manner is (for nine dayes space)
This was the newes and talke in eu'rie place.

110

This man Rogero, Leon that defends,
According to the fancies of the men,
But yet it seemd Rogero had most frends,
Scarfe had the stranger one, for tothers ten,

Morall.

This booke began with an excellent Morall, of the instablenesse and varietie of Fortune, which as it is plainly set downe and notably proued by examples, so if a man will rightly apply it to his owne state, I know not whether any thing in this whole worke hath bene, yea or can be said to better purpose, not onely for humanitie, but in some sort for diuinitie. For in matters of the world who knoweth not, that the wisest counsell a man can giue, and the wisest course a man can take is this, Vt nec oppressus sis aduersis rebus nec elatus secundis, neither to be abasht with aduersitie, nor puffed vp with prosperitie: and in diuinitie (as the most learned diuines haue writ:en) the two onely rocks at which our vessells make shipwracke, the Silla and Caribdis that drown so many thousand Christians in this their worldly passage, are these two extreames, of presumption and dispaire: betweene which two, he that can keepe his course euen, it is vnpossible he should miscarrie, but by wonderfull, and euen most wilfull negligence.

In the great curtesie vsed by Leon toward Rogero, and afterward by Rogero toward him, as is shewed both in this booke and the next, we may note first the wonderfull effects of vertue, that breeds loue, not in strangers onely, but euen in enemies: secondly we may see that a man of a true noble nature, thinks himselfe more bound to requite a benefit, then to reuenge an iniurie. For to sayle in reuenge often proceedeth of vertue, but to be vnthankfull, is a most hatefull thing euen in the greatest, and can neuer proceed but from a most vile nature.

In Charles may be noted the iust and moderate proceeding of a wise and discreet Prince, who when the controuersie about Bradamant began to grow so intricate, that it was hard to discouer where the right was, in the hearing of the matter, he shewed no maner of partialitie, and in the end referred it to the determining of the free Court of Parliament, thereby shewing, that he presumed not too farre of his owne wit, and that he meant to haue the matter heard openly and indifferently; and yet he did wisely remoue from himselfe, the enuie and grudge that might grow to him by giuing a definit sentence in a cause so ambiguous, which a wise Prince will eschue as much as may be, specially when the matter shall concerne great personages.

Policrates,

But as I said, the king to no side bends,
And hauing duly weighd the matter then,
He points the mariage day to be deferred,
The case vnto his Parliament referred.

111

Next day Marfisa made another offer,
Sith that none could, during her brothers life,
Wed Bradamant, and be assured of her,
Her brother should (for ending of the strife)
To Leon hand to hand, the combat proffer,
So she might be the last suruiuers wife;
And he that tother could in battell kill,
Enioy her might alone at his owne will.

112

Charles vnto Leon doth impart these newes,
As he before the other did impart,
That offer Leon ment not to refuse,
But saith he take it would, with all his hart,
He minds againe the matter so to vse,
The knight of th' Vnicorne should play his part,
He little knew that in great care and anguish,
The noble knight did now consume and languish.

113

But missing him, he quickly did repent,
That he accepted had that stout defiance,
And therefore straight to seeke the knight he sent,
In whose tryde force, he put his whole affiance;
Him to Rogero to oppose he ment,
And all his frends and all his strong alliance:
Wherefore to shun both danger great and scorne,
He sent to seeke the knight of th' Vnicorne.

114

To all the Cities, and the the townes he sends,
And all the villages were there about,
And mounting on his horse himselfe intends
To go in person and to seeke him out,
But neither he nor all Regeros frends,
In France, had euer light on him I doubt,
Had not Melissa holpe him at his need,
As in the booke insuing, you may reed.

Polycrates, was king of Samos, a man so exceeding fortunate, that he tooke no exploit in hand were it neuer so difficult, but he brought it to the end he desired, so as being willing (as it seemed) to moderate this great enuie of his fortune, with a voluntarie mishap, he threw one day into the sea a iewell of exceeding great value, with purpose to leese it, and thereby to frame to himselfe a cause of sorrow: but his good fortune would not suffer it, for a Fisherman, not long after bringing him a faire fish for a present, this iewell was found in the bellie of that fish, and so most strangely recovered. Yet behold, this fortunate Polycrates going with an armie against Darius, was taken prisoner by one Oiontes one of Darius Captains, and after hanged vpon the top of a high mountaine: doubtlesse a notable example for such as make fortune their Goddesse (if any such there be) who haue indeed, no reason to thinke they are aduanced by fortune, but euen the guiltinesse of their owne base and vicious minds, worthy of no part of Polycrates aduancement, but euen his last.

Dionysius a tyrant of Sicilie (and sonne of that tyrant that spoiled the Churches, and tooke away a cloke of gold from Iupiter, saying, a cloth cloke was lighter for summer, and warmer for winter: and tooke away Esculapius golden beard, saying, it was a sawcie part for him to haue a long beard, and his father Apollo to haue none.) This Dionysius (that we may see how well the children of them prosper, that scorne the false gods and beleene not in the true) continued his fathers tyrannie in Syracuse, and was by them inforced to flye the Realme; so as being a runnegate hauing no meanes to liue, he went to Corinth, and liued there a priuate and meane life: as in the life of Tymoleon in Plutarke is set downe at large, and is verie well worth the reading, for the many prettie sayings and pleasant scoffings that were giuen him, and some returned by him againe: as that, of one that in derision comming into the roome where Dionysius sat (in a blinde tauerne, or alehouse) shooke his gowne, (so they vsed to do, that came to the presence of tyrants, to show they had no weapons about them) tush saith Dionysius, this was needlesse at your comming in, but at your going out it would not be amisse, to see if you steale nothing with you. Yet this vertue Dionysius had, (if a tyrant can haue any vertue) that he bare his aduersitie not onely patiently, but euen pleasantly, which is surely praiseworthy, according to that I spake before in the Morall, not to be abashed with euill fortune, which also Dionysius himselfe confessed he had gotten by Philosophy: and sure it is a point of good courage to be able to beare aduersitie, according to that saying:

Fortiter ille facit, qui miser esse potest.

Of Marius I need not speake much, considering how largely his whole life is set downe in the forenamed Plutarke's liues, onely I will adde a word of Valerius Maximus opinion of his fortune. Nothing in the world (saith he) could be more variable then the state of Marius: For if you will place him among the vnfortunate, you shall find him most miserable, if among the happie, you shall finde him most fortunate.

Two examples are alledged by mine author of this age. Lewes the 12. of France, and Mathia Coruino of Hungary. Of these two a word: Charles the 8. king of France conceiuing some displeasure against the Duke of Orleans, father to this Lewes, cut off his head, and was in some doubt andammering if he should not do as much to his sonne, yet after many hard aduentures, it was his hap at last to be king of France.

Mathia Coruino was kept in close prison by Vladislaus king of Hungarie, because his elder brother had slaine the Earle of Cyglia, vnckle to the said king, but the king dying young and without issue, this Mathia was made of a prisoner, a Prince: but of this kind of sodaine change, our Realme hath one example, that passeth not onely these, but all (I thinke) that haue bene heard of, or writen: and that is the Queenes most excellent Maiestie that now is, who from the expectation of a most vnderferued death, came to the possession of a most renowned kingdome: for what greater extremity could one come from? or what greater felicitie might one come to? She that was sent for from Ashbridge, with commandement to be brought either aliuie or dead, she that was committed to the Towre of London, she that was so often and so straightly examined: she that demanded if the Lady Ianies scaffold were taken downe, doubting to play on the same such another Pageant; she that doubted murdering if her keeper had bene an ill disposed man, she that sent word to her seruants that came to know how she did (tanquam ouis:) lastly, she that wrate in the window at Woodstocke with a Diamond:

Much suspected by me, }
Nothing proued can be. } quoth Elizabeth prisoner:

Became of the sodaine a crowned Queene, with greater applause, then either Lewes in France, or Coruino in Hungarie, and not onely hath reigned, but doth raigne most happily. All which her highnesse troubles, my selfe haue the better cause to remember, because the first worke I did after I could write Latin, was to translate that storie out of the booke of Martyrs into Latin, as M. Thomas Arundell and Sir Edward Hobby can tell, who had their parts in the same taske, being then schollers in Eaton as I was, and nmaely that last verse I remember was translated thus:

This little booke
was giuen to her
Maiestie.

Plurimi de me malè suspicantur,
Attamen de me mala non probantur.

Elizabetha
carcere clausa.

And thus much for example of the change of fortunes.

In Bradamants fight against Rogero, we may see how our opinion blinded with a false supposition, striueth often- Allegoric.
times most vehemently against that it would be loth to overthrow, if it were rightly informed.

The cruell minde of the Theodora alludes to the cruelty of another Theodora, wife to Iustinianus, who exercised Allusion.
all those cruelties (that this intended against Rogero) vpon Pope Vigilius.

Here end the notes of the xlv. booke.

L l ij



THE ARGUMENT.

Leon by search, doth good Rogero finde,
 And hauing learnd the cause of his annoy,
 He grants to him his loue in manner kinde,
 Whom now Rogero, sweetly doth enioy:
 Onely the Sarzan king with hatefull minde,
 Comes to disturbe Rogeros ease and ioy,
 Nathelesse he is decei'd of his account,
 In fine, Rogero kills fierce Rodomont.

Now if my compasse, and
 my card be trew;
 I am not farre from that
 desired coast,
 Where I shal pay my vow,
 and promise dew,
 Vnto my Saint, of whose
 great grace I boist.
 I looked earst with pale,
 and chearlesse hew,
 For feare in this wide Ocean to be lost,
 But now me thinke I see, I now see surely
 The hau'n, in which I harbor shall securely.

2
 Harke, harke, what peals of Ord'nance great and Guns,
 Are shot in token of congratulation,
 Harke how they sound the Trumpets, & the Drums,
 To gratulate my happie nauigation:
 See how on either shore the people runs,
 To see me after my long per'grination,
 Behold a crew of peerlesse knights, and dames,
 Now I discerne them, now I know their names.

3
 But least my ship should perish in the port,
 As oft it doth befall for want of heed,
 I will go forward in my first report,
 And tell to you how well the prince did speed
 That fought Rogero, who in wofull sort,
 Did pine and languished, and wisht indeed,
 Sith that dame Bradamant he might not marry,
 To dye all comfortlesse, and solitary.

4
 But sage Melyssa that had euer sought,
 To make that match (as often hath bene sed)

And euermore did take great care, and thought,
 That good Rogero Bradamant might wed,
 By her great skill in Magicke art so wrought,
 She had continuall notice how they sped:
 Two sprites she did imploy for that intent,
 And still as one came home, another went.

5
 By them, she quickly had intelligence,
 How he had tane so inward grieve and great,
 He taryd in a wood with firme pretence,
 To pine himselte away, with want of meat:
 Melyssa parteth presently from thence,
 And with some secret words she did repeat,
 In likenesse of a horse a sprite she tooke,
 And so met Leon, that for him did looke.

6
 And thus she said to him, sir, if you be
 So gracious, as your semblance makes me weene,
 If your good minde with your good looks agree,
 It so you haue not lost all pittie cleene,
 Come then, o come and helpe, and ioyne with me,
 To ayd the brauest knight, that ere was seene,
 Who for one curteous part that he hath done,
 (Except you helpe) is like to be vndone.

7
 The noblest, stoutest, and the prowest knight,
 That euer carryd shield, or blade forth drew,
 The seemlyest, and most worthy minded wight,
 That euer was in age, or old, or new,
 Is like to perish in most wofull plight,
 Except he may relieued be by you;
 Come quickly then, vnto his aide per dye,
 And suffer not so braue a man to dye.

8

Don Leon straight supposed in his minde,
That this same knight, of whom the stranger spake,
Was he whom long he sought and could not finde,
And he for whom such care himselfe did take:
Melissa leads the way, he close behind
Doth follow her, and so good shift they make,
That in some twaine, at most in three houres ryding
They came there where *Rogero* was abyding.

9

Now being at the place to which they hasted,
They both alighted there, with minde to stay:
There saw they how he pinde away and wasted,
For in two dayes before, nor all that day,
No liquor he had drunke, nor meat had tasted,
But in his armor on the ground he lay,
And made a pillow of that noble sheeld,
With th' *Vnicorne* vpon vermillion feeld.

10

Here as I said, he lay along and mused
On his owne miserie, and on that wrong,
With which he had his loue so much abused,
And bites for griefe, his hands, and lips, and tong;
And his conceits, and wits were so confused,
To set his thoughts vpon one thing so long,
And hauing on his griefe so firmly fixt them,
He saw not them, although he were betwixt them.

11

Don Leon harkned to his lamentation,
And heard him often call himselfe vnkind,
And saw him vexe himselfe in such a fashion,
As vnto pittie great his heart inclin'd:
He finds that loue bred all this molestation,
But yet whole loue it was he did not find,
He heard how sundry times himselfe he blamed,
But all that while his loue he neuer named.

12

And therefore pitying much his wofull case,
Although awhile he silent stood and mute,
Yet after stood before him face to face,
And with great louingnesse doth him salute,
And with affection great doth him embrace,
Intreating him, and making speciall sure,
That he would tell him plaine, and make him know,
What cause had bred him to great griefe and woe.

13

Rogero loth to liue, resolu'd to dye,
Prayes Leon now to trouble him no more,
But he most sweetly doth to him reply,
That God hath made a salue for eu'rie sore,
If men would learne the same how to apply,
And that no one thing may auayle man more,
To cure a griefe, and perfectly to heale it,
Then if he do vnto some friend reueale it.

Sentence.

Sentence.

14

And sure (said he) I take it in ill part,
Because you trust not me, that am your friend,
Not onely, since with your late friendly part,
You bound me vnto you, to my liues end,
But was eu'n then, when you with hatefull hart,
At *Belgrade* siege did me and mine offend,
Thinke not but I will still procure your good,
Both with my lands, my friends, and with my blood.

15

Why should it grieue you to declare your griefe,
To one that may perhaps your losse repayre:
Bad haps are holpe with hope, and good beliefe,
Wherefore a wife man neuer will dispayre:
I hope my selfe shall bring you some reliefe,
By force, by policie, or else by prayre,
When all meanes haue bene tryde, and all hope past
Then dye, at least keepe that vnto the last.

Sentence.

16

These words so earnestly Don Leon spake,
And with such efficacie him he praid,
Beseeching him, his friendly counsell take,
That tother now, with kindnesse ouerlaid,
Was forst an answer vnto him to make;
But in his answer, sodainly he staid,
And stammerd twise, ere he could bring it out,
Dispaire still mouing him to causelesse doubt.

17

Good sir (he said) when I my name shall show,
As I do meane, and that eu'n by and by,
You will be then full well content I trow,
To grant me leaue and libertie to dye:
I am *Rogero* (if you needs will know)
That went from France (and if I shall not lye)
Mine arrant was, your sire and you to kill,
And would haue done it, had I had my will.

18

And all because indeed I then supposed,
Your onely life, did let me of my loue,
Man purposes, but all things are disposed,
By that great God, that sits and rules aboue:
Behold it hapt I was in prison closed,
And there I did your noble courtisie proue,
For there you did me such a great good turne,
As all my hatred into loue did turne.

Sentence.

19

And hauing bound me with so great defart,
And ignorant, that I *Rogero* was,
You did your secrets vnto me impart,
And praid me win for you, that warlike lasse,
Which was all one, as to haue askt my hart;
Yet loe for you, I brought the same to passe,
Now take her to your selfe, and much good do you,
More good then to my selfe, I wish vnto you.

20

But yet withall forbid me not to dye,
As now I trust I shall, ere many houres,
For liue as well without a soule can I,
As without her, that holds my vitall powres:
And sure tis best for your behoofe, for why
While I do liue, she is not lawfull yours,
For we two are betrotht, and law allowes,
One woman, but of one to be the spouse.

21

Don Leon with these newes was so accrazed,
He seemed in a traunce, he knew not how,
And on *Rogero* stedfastly he gazed,
Nor euer mouing lip, nor hand, nor brow,
But like an Image long he stood amazed,
That some hath hallowd to performe his vow,
This act of his, so courteous he doth weene,
He thinks the like before had neuer beene.

So

22
So that he did not (when he knew his name)
Repent him of the good he had him done,
But rather greatly did increase the same,
Proceeding in the course he had begunne:
Wherefore to shew from how great stocke he came
And that he was indeed an Emperors sonne:
Although in other things he was inferior,
In courtesie, he meanes to be superior.

23
And thus (he said) my deare *Rogero* know,
If I as well had knowne your person, when
As by your meanes I had an ouerthrow,
And that you foyled me and all my men:
Yet that great vertue that you there did show,
Should eu'n in manner like haue mou'd me then;
And so I would all malice haue remoued,
And so I would your vertue great haue loued.

24
That once I did dislike *Rogeros* name,
Before I knew you, I must needs confesse,
But that I now continue should the same,
Assure your selfe I purpose nothing lesse:
And if when first I to the prison came,
To set you free from danger and distresse,
I knowne had all the truth, yet then I vow,
I would haue done the same I will do now.

25
And surely, if I would haue done it then,
When I had reason to haue borne you hate,
Much rather now I ought to do it, when
Not doing it I should be most vngrate,
And most vnthankfull of all other men;
Sith you your loue, your life, and whole estate,
Haue freely giuen for me, but as you gaue it,
Of me againe, so freely you shall haue it.

26
More due to you then me, the Damzell is,
Whom though I much esteeme of due desert,
Yet not so much, that if I her do misse,
Straightwayes the griefe thereof should kil my hart:
Nor shall your death auantage me in this,
Sith you in her already claime such part,
That lawfully while you abide in life,
She can by no meanes be anothers wife.

27
As for my part, first I will quite forsake
Both her, and all my worldly ioyes beside,
Then it shall once be said, that for my sake,
A noble knight of so great worth had died:
This onely thing I could vnkindly take,
That you that had before my kindnes tride,
Would rather chuse to end your daies with griefe,
Then at my hands haue comfort and reliefe.

28
These words Don *Leon* spake, and many more,
Which now would be too tedious to recite,
Refuting good *Rogero* euermore,
That in conclusion, being vanquisht quite:
He said, I yeeld, and ile resist no more,
I will not die; but when shall I requite
Your courtesie, that twise to me haue giuen
My life, when I to greatest woe was driuen?

29
Now had *Melissa* caused to be brought,
Both cordiall meates, and wines of her puruaying,
And made him take ſy same, who now with thought,
And fasting long, was eu'n almost decaying:
His horse likewise (as nature hath them taught)
Came where he heard the other horses naying:
Don *Leon* could his lackies him to get,
And then his saddle on his backe to set.

30
And so *Rogero* with Don *Leons* aid,
With much adoe, did clammer to his seat,
So greatly was his former strength decayd,
With which he ouerthrew an army great:
And lately did withstand that warlike maid,
So weakly weaponed, as I did repeat:
And thus with all convenient speed they might,
They brought him to an Abbey that same night.

31
Where all the night, and three dayes that enseld,
They staid, and had of needfull things good store,
Vntill *Rogero* had his strength renewd,
Which had with fasting long, bene weakned fore:
Then priuily among them they conclude,
To turne to Paris, where the night before,
A few Bulgarians, came with an embassage,
And this was all the substance of their message.

32
They said how that the people of their Nation,
To whom *Rogero* late such aid did bring,
Beyond all hope, beyond all expectation,
Had therefore cholen him to be their king:
Reiecting all their owne kings generation,
And all his royall race (no vnuall thing)
So much they loued him, so well they leeke him,
And therefore sent to *Charles* his court to seeke him.

33
Rogeros lackey that had bene their guide,
Told eake his masters friends how he had sped,
As namely how the Greekes he damnified,
And how the Bulgars hauing lost their hed,
Chose him for king, how he alone did ride,
To Nouengrade, where he was tane in bed,
And vnto *Theodora* was presented,
Who purposed to haue him fore tormented.

34
And how, he heard it commonly was spoken,
That he his cruell keeper closely slew,
And that the Prison gates were rent and broken,
And he was gone, but whither no man knew:
Now while *Rogeros* man such things did open,
Rogero closely out of all mens vew,
Did come to towne, and there that night did stay,
And he and *Leon*, came to *Charles* next day.

35
Don *Leon* arme in arme *Rogero* led,
(Thus it was then deuised them betweene)
With that selfe cote, and armes apparelled,
That were of late by all the people seene,
Then when dame *Bradamant* had combated
With *Leon*, (as they falsely then did weene)
That battered sword, that cote, that plume all torne,
That headpeece now, was by *Rogero* worne.

36

By which each man eu'n at first sight surmised,
This was that knight that had the Ladie wonne,
Don Leon selfe bare faced, vndisguised,
Came richly clothed, like an Emp'ors sonne,
And with retinue not to be dispised:
And when he had to Charles due reu'rence donne,
Rogero by the hand he then did take,
On whom all eyes were fixt, and thus he spake.

37

This is that stout and well approued knight,
That did with Bradamant fight hand to hand,
Whom sith she neuer tooke nor put to flight,
But that he did twelue houres her force withstand,
(Most worthy sir) to haue her, ought of right,
If your edict we rightly vnderstand:
And therefore now accordingly he commeth,
To lay his claime to her, as best becommeth.

38

Besides his right by proclamation knowne,
That iustly doth all others claime debarre,
I thinke the vallew that he now hath showne,
Proues his sufficiencie in feates of warre:
If loue may win her, she is sure his owne,
His loue to her doth passe all others farre;
And here he stands prepared to auer,
By law or force, that he hath right to her.

39

King Charles and all his court did greatly muse
At this, for why till then they little thought,
That he before did them so much abuse,
But that him selfe had that same combat fought:
This while *Marfisa*, that with flying newes
Of this same strange report was thither brought,
Scant him to end his speech she would permit,
But presently this wise she answerd it.

40

Sith now Rogero absent is from hence,
That might his right against this knight defend,
And proue that this is but a vaine pretence,
Because the strife shall not so easely end:
I that his sister am, in his defence,
And in defence of this same cause intend,
To fight with whomsoever in this place,
As shall deny his title, or disgrace.

41

And these last words she spake with such disdain,
That some that knew her nature (hastie cuer)
Did feare she scantly would eu'n then refraine,
But without leaue to kill him straight endeuer:
Now Leon thinks it best no longer faine;
And forthwith pulling off Rogeros beauer,
Loe here him selfe now readie prest (he said)
To answer all shall to his charge be laid.

42

As old *Aegius* at his cursed boord
Amazed sat, to finde his spouses wile,
When to his sonne she poyson did affoord,
And if he lingred had a little while,
And had not knowne the handle of his sword,
Had kild his sonne, he gate by *Pitheus* guile:
So stood *Marfisa* mazed in the place,
When as she saw and knew Rogeros face.

Simile looke in
the history.

43

And straight she runnes, and on his necke doth fall,
And long it was ere from him she could part,
Renald, *Orlando*, *Charles*, afore them all
Embraced him, and welcomd from their hart:
Good *Dudon*, *Oliuer*, with ioy not small,
And old *Sobrinio*, health to him impart,
Eake all the other Lords and knights, and Squyres,
To bid him welcome shew most prompt desires.

44

Don Leon that in speech was eloquent,
When eu'rie one had done his gratulation,
Begins to tell to Charles incontinent,
And all the rest, Rogeros commendation:
And how he to the Bulgars succour lent,
(To no small damage of the Greekish nation)
And shewd such noble courage and such force,
As him to loue Rogero did enforce.

45

So as when he was after tane and brought,
To her that vowd with torments him to slay,
Him selfe in spite of her, and all that sought
To hurt Rogero, brought him safe away:
For which kind part of his, Rogero thought
Him selfe so bound to him, that he last day,
Did him that courtesie that sure doth passe,
The greatest courtesie that euer was.

46

He further doth from point to point declare,
What for his sake, Rogero had atchieued,
But after this, with anguish great and care,
The losse of his belou'd so sore him grieved
As he to pine away did straight prepare,
Had not his sorrow bene in time releiued:
All which so rufully Don Leon sed,
Scarfe was an eye, but teares with blindnes shed.

47

Then spake he to that obstinate old man,
I meane Duke *Ammon*, that faire Ladies fire,
And with all skill, and Rhetoricke he can,
He wooes his loue, and pacifies his ire:
That by intreatie at the last he wan,
Him selfe to go in person, and desire
Rogeros pardon; praying him in th'end,
To take him for his father-in-law and friend.

48

This while to Bradamant the ioyfull tiding
Was quickly brought, by more then one report,
Who in her chamber all her sorrow hyding,
Eschewd all solace, shunning all resort:
Whereby the blood about the hart abiding,
Was drawne now thence in such a sodaine sort,
And this vnlookt for ioy so ouerfild her,
That eu'n the suddennes had almost kild her.

49

Quite speechlesse, liuelesse sinking to the ground,
(So strange a quame her tender heart did feele)
And she in whom such force was lately found,
For want of strength did here and thither reele;
But neu'r did thiefe with hands together bound,
Condemned to the rope, the axe, or wheele,
And blindfold, looking eu'rie houre to die,
Ioy more to heare some man a pardon crie.

Simile.

The

50
The houses of Mongrane, and Montalbane,
Reioyce at these their branches newly knit,
But by *Maganza* comfort small is tane,
For in their hearts they sorrie were for it:
Anselmus, Falcon, Gynamus, and Gane,
Dissembling yet their thoughts with craftie wit:
But for a time of vengeance they do watch,
As doth the Fox, the hurtlesse Hare to catch.

51
Beside old quarrels and their ancient hate,
New matters done of late did them displease,
Although the king, and wise men of the state,
For common quiet, did the same appeale:
The death of *Pynabello* slaine but late,
And *Bertolage*, did much their mindes diseale:
Yet now in shew they do dissemble deepe,
And close in minde they do their malice keepe.

52
In this meane time, th' Ambassadors that came,
To *Charles* his court, by those Bulgarians sent,
Reioycing now that things so well did frame,
In humble manner to *Rogero* went:
And did salute him king, as in the name
Of all their countymen incontinent,
And so accordingly did lowly greete,
Their new made Prince, and kneeled at his feet.

53
They told him how their Scepter and their Crowne,
Was safely kept, alone for his behoofe,
In *Adrianopolis* their chiefest towne:
And for they knew by many a former prooffe,
That *Constantino* strauie to keepe them downe,
They pray him not to stay so farre aloofe;
Affirming boldly that if he were there,
The forces of all Greece they would not feare.

54
Rogero granteth them their iust request,
And promist to defend them from the Greekes,
And vowes if God permit, to do his best,
To be with them within some thirteene weekes:
But *Leon* bids them set their hearts at rest,
He tels them that their choise so well he leekes,
He on his Princely word will undertake,
Twixt *Constantine* and them, firme peace to make.

55
Thus each thing framed now in so good sort,
As could be wisht by thought, or by deuise,
But neither did *Rogeros* good report,
Get fauour with ambitious *Beatrice*,
Nor personage that past the common sort,
Nor feats of armes, in which he wan the prize;
And of the which, all Europe now did ring,
But onely this, to see him made a king.

56
In royall fort this marriage they prepare,
(Whose charge it was, the state wil make it knowne)
Charles bare the charge, and tooke thereof such care
As if she were a daughter of his owne:
Of her and hers, so great the merits are,
And had to him so many wayes bene showne;
He thought the cost had not exceeded measure,
If he had spent vpon them halfe his treasure.

57
He kept an open court by proclamation,
Where nine dayes space, who list may freely haunt,
Men of their owne, and men of forren Nation,
To all of them he did safe conduct graunt:
And all that stood vpon their reputation,
That sought their foes in single fight to daunt,
Had license franke, to challenge whom they lists,
For euermore prepared were the lists.

58
In open fields they pitched tents great store,
Beside with Oken boughes they made such bowres,
Strawing the pauements of them euermore,
With fragrant Roses and sweet smelling flowres;
That neuer had the like bene seene before,
Nor neuer since, from that same age to ours;
Besides the furnitures of silke and gold,
Was more then can conueniently be told.

59
Th' innumerable people of each sort,
From Greece, from England, Italy and Spaine,
Th' Ambassadors that thither did resort,
Beside each seuerall Prince, a seuerall traine,
Did cause the citie walls to seeme too short,
To lodge them all, so they in fine were faine,
In houels, booths, in tents, and in pauillions,
To lodge some thousands, if I say not millions.

60
Onely *Melissas* care was to foresee,
The marriage chamber should be well attyred,
Which by her skill she ment should furnisht be,
For long to make the match she had aspired:
Which now that she accomplished did see,
She thought she had the thing she most desired:
For by her skill in Magicke, she did know,
What passing fruit, forth of that branch should grow

61
Wherefore she plac't the fruitfull wedding bed,
Amid a faire and large pauillion, which
Was eu'n the sumptuousest, that ere was spred,
Of silke, and beaten gold wrought eu'rie stich:
And more, from ouer *Constantinos* hed,
At Thracyan shore, where he his tents did pitch
Fast by the sea, for his more recreation,
She tooke the same to his great admiration.

62
Were it that *Leon* gaue consent thereto,
Or that she did the same, her skill to vaunt,
To shew what one by Magicke art can do,
That haue the skill the fends of hell to daunt:
(For what cannot their powre atchieue vnto,
When for our plague, God leaue to them wil grant?)
From Thrace to Paris in twelue houres it came,
I trow she sent one in the diuels name.

63
She cauld it to be carrid at noone day,
From *Constantino*, Emper' for then of Greece,
The beame, the staues, the cords they brought away,
The pinnes, the hoopes, and eu'rie little peece:
She placed it whereas she meant to lay
Atlantas Nephew, with his new made Neece:
In this pauillion she did place their bedding,
And sent it backe when finisht was the wedding.

*The setting of
pauillion, is so
saue occasion to
praise Hippolito.*

*Rogero Nephew
to Atlanti.*

*Gra, dei iussu
vinctum creatus
Tucum.*

*Hippolito of
Hector's race.*

*Proteus, looke in
the table.*

*That was he,
that gave Rome
to the Pope.*

*The first age gold
The 2. silver.
The 3. brasse,
The 4. Iron.*

*These were Am-
bassadors sent by
Coryno to bring
Hippolito to
Hungarie.*

Two thousand yeare before, or not much lesse,
This rich paullion had in Troy bene wrought,
By faire *Cassandra*, that same Prophetesse,
That had (but all in vaine) in youth bene taught,
Of future things to giue most certaine guesse,
For her true speech was euer set at naught
She wrought this same, with helpe of many other,
And gaue it *Hector*, her beloued brother.

The worthiest wight that eu'r man did behold,
That should proceed forth of his noble line,
She here portrayd, in worke of silke and gold,
Of precious substance, and of colour fine:
Alto the time and season was foretold,
Both of his birth, and of his praise diuine:
Don *Hector* of this gift great count did make,
Both for the worke, and for the workers sake.

But when him selfe by treason foule was slaine,
And Troy was by the Greekes defaced quite,
Who enterd it by *Synons* subtile traine,
And worse enseld thereof then Poets write:
Then *Menelaus* did this great relicke gaine,
And after on king *Proteus* hapt to light,
Who gaue to him dame *Helen* ere he went,
And for reward receiud of him this tent.

And thus to *Egypt* at that time it came,
Where with the *Ptolomeys* it long remained,
Till *Cleopatra*, that lasciuious dame,
As by inheritance, the same obtained:
Agrippas men by sea then tooke the same,
What time in Rome *Augustus Caesar* raigned:
And then in Rome, while Rome was th' Empires seat
It staid till time of *Constantine* the great.

That Emp'ror *Constantine* I meane, of whom
Faile Italy for euer shall lament,
Who when he lothed *Tibris* bankes and Rome,
Vnto the citie of *Byzantium* went,
A place of more receipt, and larger roome,
And thither this paullion then he sent:
Of which the cords were golden wire and silke,
The staues and pinnes, were lurie white as milke.

In this, *Cassandra* wrought such diuers faces,
More then *Apelles* erst with Penfill drew,
A queene in childbed lay, to whom the graces
With pleasant grace perform'd *Lucynas* dew:
Ioue, *Mercurie*, and *Mars* in other places,
And *Venus* do receiue the babe borne new:
The sweetest babe that to the world came forth,
From mans first age, eu'n downe vnto the fourth.

Hippolito they name him, as appears
Wrote in small letters on his swathing bands,
And when he is a little growne in yeares,
On one side Fortune, tother Vertue stands:
Then in another picture diuers Peeres,
Clad in long rayments, sent from forren lands,
Vnto the father and the mother came,
To begge the babe in great *Coryno's* name.

They part from *Hercles* with great reu'rence then,
And from that infants mother *Elinore*,
Vnto *Danubia* ward, and there the men
Still runne to see that infant and adore:
Alto the king *Coryno* wonders when
He saw in him both wit and iudgement more,
In thole his tender childish yeares and greene,
Then many times in older men had beene.

One doth endeuour in his childish hand,
Of the *Strigonian* Realme to put to the mace,
But euermore the tender youth doth stand,
So high in that same noble Princes grace,
That if he warre in manly *Almans* land,
Or in the *Turkes*, or any other place,
Hippolito is euer by his side,
And learneth vertue vnder such a guide:

Another place shewes how he doth dispence,
His youthfull time in Discipline and art,
Fusco instructs him in the hidden sence,
Of ancient writs, and precepts doth impart,
What actions praise, what actions breed offence,
What be reward of good and ill desert:
All which the picture did so well expresse,
That at the meaning eu'rie one might guesse.

Loe where as yet a boy in *Vatican*,
Among the grauest Card'nals he doth sit,
And speakes so wisely, that they all began,
To wonder at his towardnes and wit,
What manner man (if once he were a man)
Would this man proue? for *Peters* chaire how fit
They seeme to say: oh if he thither clime,
What holy age were that? what happie time?

Within another part described were
His youthfull sports, when he more strong did grow
Oft in the mountaines he doth meet a Beare,
Oft-times a Bore, in marriish grounds and low:
He rides his Genet fierce, and void of feare,
He chaferth oft the Buck, the Hart and Roe,
And by his horse swift pace, doth ouer-ride them,
And then doth with his sword in twaine deuide them.

Of Poets then, and of Philosophars.
About him you should see a worthy band,
To make him know the course of wandring starres,
How heau'n doth moue, & why the earth doth stand
Or reading of Elegies, or verse of warres,
Fine Epigrams, Odes hard to vnderstand:
Or sometime instruments of Musicke hearing,
In all his acts a speciall grace appearing.

Then on another part was to be vewd,
His vertues, each one by it selfe distinct,
First Prudence, Temperance, and Fortitude,
And Iustice, and a list vnto them linkt
So nye, that who with it is not indewd,
The rest may seeme or blotted, or extinct:
Good bountie, shewd in giuing and in spending,
A speciall grace to all the other lending.

One

*Fusco scholem-
ster to Hippolito*

*When he was
made a Cardinal*

Of his affinitie

*Of his studie and
company.*

His vertues.

His bountie.

78

This one place shewes he aids vnluckie *Sforse*,
Him euermore most faithfully assisting,
Sometime with policie, sometime with force,
Him helping, and his enemies resisting:
Of Fortunes change he doth but little force,
In woe and weale, in one faith still persisting:
He comforts him when euill haps do grieue him,
In dangers he doth saue, in want relieue him.

79

Then stands he studying at another season,
And for his countries safetie taking care,
He searcheth, and he finds by depth of reason,
And finding, to his brother doth declare
Their most vnnaturall and filthy treason,
That some of his owne blood for him prepare,
By which he doth deserue such name to haue,
As Rome yet free, to famous *Tully* gaue.

80

Fast by he stands all clad in armour bright,
And to relieue the Church he runnes in post,
With sodaine souldiers, raw and armed light,
Against a seled and well ordred host:
Yet did his onely presence so affright,
The aduerse part, that one may rightly boist,
It quencht the fire, ere it to burne began,
So he may say, I came, I saw, I wan.

81

Here stands he by his native riuer side,
And straight encounters with the strongest fleete,
That euer yet Venetians did prouide,
Gainst Greeke, or Turke, but he doth boldly meet,
And vanquisht them; and tooke them at one tide,
And though the bootie and the gaine was sweet,
All (saue the praise) he left vnto his brother,
For onely that, cannot be giu'n another.

82

Thus this Pauillion, as before I told,
The which *Melissa* brought so farre from thence,
Did please the knights, and damies that did behold,
The goodly imag'rie, and rich expence:
Although they had not any to vnfold,
The meaning of the same and hidden sence;
But yet by good *Melissas* wise instruction,
Dame *Bradamant* did know their whole construction

83

Rogero markt likewise with great attention,
Those goodly figures calling to his minde,
That oft his vnckle of that Prince made mention,
Hippolito, the flowre of all his kinde:
But now king *Charles*, whose care is and intention,
To giue to all men entertainment kinde,
Made playes and feasts, with sundry sports and great,
And euermore the tables filld with meat.

84

There, men might plainly see and vnderstand,
The courage and the strength of eu'rie knight,
Sometimes in single wise, now band to band,
In iusts, and turnaments resembling fight,
But still *Rogero* had the vpper hand,
In all his exercise of day and night:
In leaping, running, wrastring, and in dancing,
All men him far aboute the rest aduancing.

85

But on the last of these dayes festiuall,
Then when to take away they did prouide,
What time king *Charles* was set amid them all,
Eu'n iust betwene the Bridegrome and the Bride,
Behold they saw a goodly man and tall,
That seemd directly toward them to ride.
Most proudly mounted on a courters backe,
But yet his horse and he, all clad in blacke.

86

This was fierce *Rodomont*, king of *Algyre*,
Who at his late receiued foile, and scorne
Of *Bradamant*, inflamd with spight and ire,
All vse of horse and armor had forsworne;
Till one whole yeare, one month, one day expire,
But liue that while an Hermit all forlorne:
For so the knights were wont in ancient times,
Of their owne selues, to punish their owne crimes.

That was in the
35. booke.

87

And though this while he oft had notice how,
King *Agramant*, and how king *Charles* had sped,
Yet nathelasse, for not breaking of his vow,
Forth of the doores he neuer put his hed:
But when the yeare and month were ended now,
And day beside, himselfe he furnished,
With armor new, new horse, new sword, new lance,
And came therewith vnto the court of France.

88

Not once alighting nor so much as rising,
For reu'ence sake, to bow his head or knee,
He bare the count'nance of a man despising,
Both *Charles*, and all those Peeres of great degree:
At this each man amazed stands deuising,
What proud and sawcy fellow this might be,
From talking and from eating each man staves,
To hearken what this losie warrior sayes.

89

Now when he was to th'Emp'ror come so nye,
That he *Rogero* fully did confront,
With stately voice, and with disdainfull crie,
(He saith) I am the king of *Sarza Rodomont*,
That thee *Rogero* flatly here defie,
And ere the Sunne go downe make full account,
To proue thou hast bene false vnto thy Prince,
And openly of treason thee conuince.

90

For though thy treachery be knowne so cleare,
In being Christend, thou canst not deny it,
Yet that to all the world it may appeare,
I offer here in single fight to trie it:
Or if thy courage faile, if any here
Will take on them thy quarrell, to supply it,
I will accept of any one or more,
Yea, not to faile, of six or halfe a score.

91

Rogero, when he first had licence craued
Of *Charles*, this wise to *Rodomont* replide,
(And said) he euer had his honour saued,
And who so said contrarie, lowdly lide:
For he had to his Prince himselfe behaued,
Most loyally eu'n to the day he dide:
And said he there was readie to maintaine,
That yet his faith had neuer sufferd staine.

92

And that himfelfe was bold enough and strong,
With him to buckle hand to hand alone,
And that he hopte to make him feeble ere long,
He had enough, perhap. too much of one:
Straightwayes *Renaldo* to auenge this wrong,
Orlando, and the Marquis would haue gone,
Marfifa with the brothers white and blacke,
And *Dudon* would be on the Pagans iacke.

93

Alledging, that fith he was newly marri'd,
For him to fight, it was againſt all vie,
But from their ſpeeches his opinion varid,
And ſweares that that for him was no excuſe:
Thoſe armes that erſt the famous Tartar carid,
He takes, nor will he make one houre of truſe:
To arme him, all thoſe ſtates their aids afford,
King *Charles* himſelfe, holpe to put on his ſword.

94

His wife takes care his Curats well may fit,
Orlando tyes his ſpurs, *Marfifa* bold
Doth faſt vpon his head his beauer knit,
Aſolfo is content his horſe to hold:
His ſtirrop *Dudon*; others thinke it fit,
To rid the lyſts, and driue out young and old:
Renaldo, *Namus*, *Oliuer*, take charge
To Martiall it, and make it cleare and large.

95

Faire dames and damzels ſtand with lookes diſmaid,
With feare and trembling, like to fearfull Doues,
Who ſome black reſt-bringing cloud hath fraid,
And driu'n from fields, to ſhrowd in houſes rooues:
(Downe falls the haile w^{ch} which the corne is laid,
And profiteſſe vnto his owner proues)
So do they this fierce Pagans forces feare,
Which ſure they iugde, *Rogero* cannot beare.

Simile.

96

Nor onely do faint people ſo ſurmiſe,
But many knights of worth, the ſame did weene,
That cald to mind what erſt before their eyes,
To their griefe they had in Paris ſcene:
When he with fire and ſword in fearfull wiſe,
Did welny ſpoile the towne, and waſt it cleene:
Of which the worfull ſignes did ſtill appeare,
And would remaine yet many a month and yeare.

97

But *Bradamant* more feard then all the reſt,
Not that ſhe thought in ſtrength or ſkill well tride
The Pagan paſt her ſpouſe, nor valiant beſt,
Or that he had more reaſon of his ſide,
(Which vnto victorie auails not leaſt,
When men by combat quarels do diſcide)
Yet ſtill her minde is ſad, her lookes vncheerfull,
Nor blame her though, for loue is euer fearfull.

Sentence.

Sentence.
Et res ſollacit
plena timoris
amor.

98

Great ſuit ſhe makes, great labour to procure,
That vpon her ſhe may the quarrell take,
Yea if to haue bene ſlaine ſhe had bene ſure,
To ſaue her ſpouſe, but all in vaine ſhe ſpake:
The champions now their lances put in vre,
And each with couched ſpeare the tother ſtrake:
The ſtaues like liſe in ſhiners ſmall did flie,
The ſplints like birds did mount vnto the ſkie.

Simile.
Simile.

99

The Pagan that his lance did full direct,
Againſt the middle of *Rogeros* ſheeld,
Did ſmyte on it to ſmall or none effect,
For *Vulcan* had the ſame moſt firmly ſteeld:
The tothers Target had no knowne defect,
Yet to the ſtroke it did a paſſage yeeld:
Yet was it thicke, a quarter of a foote
Of bone, and linde with plated ſteele to boote.

100

And ſaue the lance ſuſtained not the blow,
But at the firſt did breake and was diſperſed,
So that the peeces of it ſeem'd in ſhow,
To haue bene featherd ſoules (as I rehearſed)
That ſtroke had finiſhed that ſtrife I throw,
And had his Curats and his bodie pearced:
But now it brake, and both gaue ſtrokes ſo ſound,
As made both hortes cruppers kiſſe the ground.

101

The riders neare the leſſe ſate firme and ſtedie,
And laboured ſo well with ſpurre and raine,
Their hortes were got vp on foote alreddie,
The men to fight addreſſe themſelues againe
With ſwords; their horſes both were ſtrong & redie
And each with ſkill ſome vantage ſought to gaine,
And where they thought their armors were moſt
With force they ſtraue to pierce & enter in. (thin,

102

Fierce *Rodomon* had not that Serpents hide
He viſde to weare, nor yet that ſhauing blade,
That he was wont to carrie by his ſide,
For *Nimrod* his great anceſtor firſt made;
He loſt thoſe armes, and many more beſide,
Then when as *Bradamant* did him inuade,
At that ſame church, where he a twelue month ſince,
Entombed *Iſbell*, with that peereleſſe Prince.

103

He had another armor good and ſure,
But not like that ſo paſſing tough and hard,
But neither this, nor any elſe could dure,
Againſt the piercing edge of Ballifard:
No mixture ſuch, no metall was ſo pure,
No charme ſo ſtrong, but that this blade the mard:
Rogero ſo beſturd him with this blade,
More then on hole, in tothers coate he made.

104

Now though a little while the Pagan cloyes
His hurts receiu'd, with vnappaled minde,
Yet when he ſaw his blood, and felt the ſtrokes
So ſmart, that ſtill they ſeem'd the quicke to finde:
To ſo great wrath and rage it him prouokes,
Eu'n like the ſea turmoyld with bluſtring winde,
He hurles away his ſhield, and doth endeuer,
With both his hands to cleaue *Rogeros* beauer.

Simile.

105

With force as great he ſtrikes, and as extreame,
As doth that engin in the Riuer Poe,
Borne twixt two ſhippes, vpon the ſtately ſtreame,
Enforcing downe with many a heauie bloe,
Some peece of timber, or ſome ſharped beame:
I ſay the Pagan ſmote *Rogero* ſo,
Had not the charmed helmet bene of force,
He doubtleſſe would haue clou'd him & his horſe.

Simile.
The like is at
London bridge.

Rogero

Rogero sitteth staggering in his seat,
His hand the bridell left, his thighes their hold,
Rodomont giues another blow as great,
To maze him more by all the meanes he could:
And last a third, but now he so did beat
His blade of mettall free, it would not hold,
But burst in twaine, with his continuall hammering,
And left the Pagan in no little mammering.

But yet for this the Turke doth not refraine,
But still inuades the knight that wants defence,
So had the blow amaz'd his head and braine,
So dazed had the blow his wit and tence:
The Pagan minds to waken him againe,
First he doth close with him, and so from thence,
Wringing him by the necke with all his force,
To leaue the saddle he doth him enforce.

He fell, but yet the ground he touched scant,
But that he rose, inflam'd with wrath and shame;
For looking vp, he saw faire *Bradaman*,
Whose blush did shew how ill she tooke the same:
Yea eu'n of sounding she did little want,
And still her fainting colour went and came;
Which scene, *Rogero* with his sword intends,
For this so great disgrace to make amends.

The Pagan with his horse would ouer-runne him,
And iustles him, but he with little paine,
Doth step aside, and warily doth shunne him,
And with his left hand takes the horses raine:
(So as the Turke thereby no hurt hath done him)
The while he puts in v're his sword againe,
And with two thrusts, he did the Pagan harme,
One in his thigh, another in his arme.

The Turke with whom a peece did yet remaine,
Of that same blade that was in peeces flowne,
Smote on *Rogeros* headpeece so againe,
As had wel-ny againe him ouerthrowne:
But good *Rogero* now perceiuing plaine,
His vantage that was erst to him vnknowne,
Takes him by his left arme with all his force,
And (will he nill he) puls him from his horse.

Were it his strength or sleight, I cannot tell,
But so he fell, no ods was them betweene,
My meaning is that on his feete he fell,
For in the swords, *Rogeros* odds was seene:
Rogero that did know his vantage well,
To keepe him now at bay his best doth weene:
It is not best for him he doth suppose,
With such a strong, and big bon'd man to close.

He further saw what store of blood he spilt,
So now he hopes by warily proceeding,
To force his foe to yeeld, and leane the tilt, ding:
Whose strength decayd, stil more & more with blec-
The Turke then takes the pomell and the hilt
Of his owne sword, and with force so exceeding
Did hurle the same, he smote the knight so sore,
He stund him more then eu'r he was before.

It strake him twixt the shoulders and the head,
And gaue to him a blow so firme and sound,
That good *Rogero* therewith staggered,
And scant could keepe his feete vpon the ground:
The Turke to close with him then hast'ned,
But loe his foote did faile with former wound,
So that his too much hast (as oft we see)
Did hurt, and made him fall vpon his knee.

Rogero lost no time in manfull wile,
To strike fierce *Rodomont* in brest or face,
And holds him short, and so his force applies,
He laid him on the ground, but in short space,
In spyte of him, the Pagan doth arise,
And with small kindnes he doth him embrace:
And then they striue, heaue, shoue, thrust to and fro,
And either seekes the others overthrow.

Each striues with all his skill, and his abilitie,
By force to lay the tother on the ground,
Now *Rodomont* was growne to some debilitie,
By meanes of more then one receiued wound,
Rogero had great practise and agilitie,
And vnde to wrastle, and he quickly found
His vantage, which he did not ouerslip,
But on his weakest side his foe doth trip.

The Turke most full of wrath and of despight,
Vpon *Rogeros* necke tooke stedfast hold,
Now drawing toward him with all his might,
Now thrusting him backe from him all he could:
And by and by he heau'd him quite vpright,
As strong *Antheus* was in time of old:
Rogero notwithstanding sure doth stand,
And labord still to haue the vpper hand.

Full oft the valiant knight his hold doth shift,
And with much prettie sleight, the same did slippe:
In fine he doth applie one speciall drift,
Which was to get the Pagan on the hippe:
And hauing caught him right, he doth him list,
By nymble sleight, and in such wise doth tripper:
That downe he threw him, and his fall was such,
His head-peece was the first that ground did tuch.

The Turke with such an hard and heauie fall,
Was sore perplexed, and brused in such wise,
His wounds fell fresh on bleeding therewithall,
And make the place Vermillion where he lyes.
Rogero giues him respite verie small,
But keepes him downe and will not let him rise:
And presently presents his dagger point
Vnto this throat, and to his chiefeft ioynt,

As those that digge and search for golden ore,
Within Pannonian, or Iberian hills,
Not vnderpropping sure the ground before,
Oft for a plague of their too greedie wills,
With sodaine ruine, are surprisde so sore,
As to get forth againe, doth passe their skills:
So was the Turke beld downe, and pressed to,
By braue *Rogero* his triumphant fo.

Who now his naked dagger did present,
Vnto the tothers vizer at his eye,
And with sharpe words he told him that he ment,
Except he yeeld, to kill him by and by:
But Rodomont, that rather then relent,
Or shew bafe mind, a thousand deaths would dy,
No word doth speake, but strauie himfelfe to funder
From him, or if he could to get him vnder.

*Simile, and a ve
rie apt compar-
fon, for a greiboud
will ouercome a
mafiue in conti-
nuance of fight, as
hath bene tried.*

Eu'n as a Mafiue fell, whom Grewnd more fell,
Hath tyrde, and in his throat now fastned bath
His cruell fangs, yet doth in vaine rebell,
Though vnder him, and seekes to do some skath:
For still the Grewnd preuailes, and doth excell
In force of breath, though not in rage and wrath:
So doth the cruell Pagan striue and straine,
To get from vnder him, but all in vaine.

Morall.

This last booke of Ariosto is so full of examples of courtesie, as me thinke we should offer it great discourtesie if we should not pike out some good Morall from it, to recommend to your considerations that haue perused and read ouer the booke; the first and chiefeft courtesie is in Leo, that manageth the whole matter so well for Rogero, knitting the consent of all parties like a well deuised Comedie: then Marfils kindnes is to be praised, that would haue fought in defence of her brothers honor. Thirdly Ammon doth well to aske pardon of Rogero for his hard vsage: then the Bulgars are to be allowed for their thankfulness to make him king for his good seruice: Further Charles the Emperour is to be extolled for his Princely regard in honoring and feasting them so bountifully at the marriage: Lastly Bradamant and the whole crew that would haue enerie one haue taken vpon them Rogeros defence against Rodomont, and Rogero not permitting it, yet they disdained not to do him the seruice to helpe to arme him, to put on his spurres, to stay his horse, to hold his sterop: in all which I doubt not but the noble minded readers will finde sufficient matter both to commend, and to imitate without my further labouring to set forth the same. Onely one note I may not omit, yea though I were sure to be chidden by some of you (faire Ladies) for my labor, namely, the strong ambition of your sex, which we call weake; For you see how my author in the 55. staffe of this Canto hath deliuered to vs, that Beatrice the mother of Bradamant, would neuer be wonne to accept Rogero for her sonne in-law, neither for his gentrie, nor his personage, nor his vallew, nor his wit, no nor yet her daughters owne choise and affection, till she heard he was chosen a king: with which aspiring humour of women, it seemed how that (neuer too much praised) Sir Philip Sidney was well acquainted with: making in his Arcadia not onely the stately Pamela, to reiect the naked vertue of Musidorus, till she found it well clothed with the title to a scepter, but euen Mistres Mopla, when she sate hooded in the tree to beg a boone of Apollo, to aske nothing but to haue a king to her husband, and a lusty one to, and when her pitifull father Dametas (for want of a better) plaid Apollos part, and told her she should haue husbands enough, she praid downoutly they might be all kings: and thus much for the Morall.

Historie.

Aegeus king of Athens, hauing no issue, went to the Oracle of Apolio, to know how he might do to haue a sonne, and receiuing a doubtfull answer, asked counsell of Pytheus Lord of Troezenes, that was in those dayes counted a deepe wise man; who scanning the meaning of the obscure verse, which was this,

Optime vir non ante pedem dissolueris vtri
Exsertum claras quam tu remearis Athenas.

In English not verie cleanly thus.

Good sir take heed how ear it falls, what vessell you do broch,
Before vnto the cittie walls of Athens you approach.

I say Pytheus found out such a mysterie in these verses, that he perswaded him ear he parted thence, to take the paines (or I might haue said the pleasure) to lie with his daughter Ethra: Aegeus hauing done the feat, and being belike (as many men are) sorie when he had done, tooke his leaue to be gone; but ear he went he tooke Ethra aside, and shewed her where he had hidden his sword and his shoes vnder a hollow stone of great weight, charging her that if she bare a sonne, so soone as he were of strength to remoue that stone, she should send him with those tokens to him as priuily as may be. In fine she bare that famous Theseus, who comming to Athens as a stranger, Medea then wife of Aegeus, perswaded her husband to poyson him at a banquet, to which the old man assented: but while Theseus was readie to drinke, Aegeus saw the sword handle, and calling it to mind, ouerthrew the cup and saued the life of his sonne: of which, who so please better to enforme himfelfe, may reade more at large in the life of Theseus written by Plutarke.

Allegoric.

In that mine author brings in for the conclusion of his whole worke, that Rogero immediatly vpon his marriage to Bradamant, killeth Rodomont: this is the Allegoricall sence thereof, that Rodomont which is to be vnderstood the vnbridled heat and courage of youth (for in all Rodomonts actions you shall finde him described, euer most furious, hastie, and impacient) Rodomont I say, is killed and quite vanquished by marriage; and howsoeuer the vnruinesse of youth is excusable in diuers kinds, yet after that holy state of matrimonie is entred into, all youthfull wildnes of all kinds, must be cast away: which the common saying doth proue, distinguishing in ordinarie speech, a bachelor from a married man, by these names, a good fellow, and an honest man.

But with long struiuing and with wondrous paines,
He freed his better arme, and void of aw,
His dagger that in his right hand remaines,
Which in this later bick'ring he did draw,
He seekes to stabbe into Rogeros raines;
But now the valiant youth the perill saw,
Then for his lasties sake he was constrained,
To kill the cruell Turke that grace dildained.

And lifting his victorious hand on hie,
In that Turks face he stabd his dagger twice
Vp to the hilts, and quickly made him die,
And rid himfelfe of trouble in a trile:
Downe to the lake, where damned ghosts do lie,
Sunke his dildainful soule, now cold as lfe,
Blaspheming as it went, and cursing lowd,
That was on earth so lottie and to proud.

In Rodomonts punishing of himself, by forswearing the use of armor, a yeare, a month, and a day, he alludes (I think) Allusion.
to one Bucycaldo a Frenchman, gouernor of Geneva, who being a goodly tall man of personage, was ouerthrowne and
vanquished by Galeazzo Gonzaga a little man of stature, but of great spirit, and for that cause he rowed neuer to
beare armes againe: but in the death of Rodomont to shew himselfe a perfect imitator of Virgil, he endeth iust as Vir-
gil ends his *Aeneids* with the death of Turnus,

Vitaque cum gemitu fugit indignata sub umbras.

Here end the notes of the 45. and last Canto of *Orlando Furioso*.



A BRIEFE AND SVMMARIE
ALLEGORIE OF ORLANDO FVRIOSO,
NOT VNPLEASANT NOR VNPROFITABLE
for those that haue read the former Poeme.

When I had finished this translation of *Orlando Furioso*, and being al-
most proud in mine owne conceit, that I had in these my young
yeares, employed my idle houres to the good liking of many, & those
of the better sort, I happened to reade in a graue and godly booke
these words: So diuines do hold (for examples sake) that the glory of S.
Paule is increased dayly in heauen, and shalbe to the worlds end, by reason
of them that dayly do profite by his writing, and rare exemplar life vpon
earth, as also on the contrarie part, that the torments of Arius, Sabelli-
us, and other wicked heretickes, are continually augmented by the numbers of them, who from time
to time are corrupted with their seditious and pestilent writings; If it had stayed there, it would
neuer haue troubled me, but immediatly followes, The like they hold of dissolute Poets, and
other loose writers, which haue left behind them lasciuious, wanton, and carnall deuices, as also of
negligent parents, masters, teachers, &c. This saying (gentle Reader) was such a cooling card
to me, and did so cut the combe of that pleasing conceit of mine, that I could not tel whe-
ther I should repent me or not of my former taken paine. For this was not a malicious
taunt of a wry-looking *Zoylus*, but a graue reprehension, and commination of a deuout
and diuine writer; Now though the Epithetons of *Dissolute* and *Loose*, make me partly
presume, that mine author is out of the foresaid danger, whose worke cannot iustly be dee-
med lasciuious, wanton, nor carnal, and though I haue spoken as I thinke sufficiently in my
Apologie, to satisfie all indifferent readers, both for mine authors defence and mine owne
excuse, yet because I know in mine owne conscience, that all the verses in this worke be
not so full weight, but if they shalbe tryed in so seuer a ballance, some will be found ma-
ny grames too light: I would endeouour all I might to supply that defect, with the more
weightie and sober consideration of the Allegorie; which, as I haue partly touched in eue-
ry seuerall booke, so now I intend to present to your consideration the whole bodie of
the same, to make as it were a rehearsal Oration of it, which I haue placed in the latter end,

In the Resolu-
tion, of the ac-
counting day.

Simile of a
surfet.

Armes..
Loue.

Orlando.

Rogero.

Alcyna, the
court of plea-
sure.

Idlenes, cap-
taine of all
other filthie
vices.

and as it were for a farewell, as men do at a great dinner, in which they haue almost surfetted vpon sundrie sorts of meats, more delicate then wholsome, yet in the end close vp their stomakes with a peece of a Quince, or strengthen and helpe their digestion with a cuppe of Sacke; whereas to a temperate feeder vpon wholsome meats, both of them are superfluous. Also I do the rather place it in the end of my booke, because commonly, that which men reade last stickes best in their memories, and so I wish this to do, being as it were the verie kynnell and principall part, or as the marrow, and the rest but the bone or vnprofitable shell; or according (as I said in my Apologie, vsing *Tasso's* comparison) like to the pill that is lapped in suger, and giuen a child for a medicine, who otherwise would not be drawne to take the simple drugge though it were to saue his life. But to come to the matter, mine author (as you may see from the beginning) applyeth his whole worke, and referreth all the parts thereof to two principall heads and common places: namely, *Armes* and *Loue*: in both which, men commit great oversights, and from both which, proceed many great enormous disorders, both in publique and priuate. For these two faultes of wantonnesse and wilfulnesse, are so coupled commonly with youth, that they seeme to be borne at a burthen therewith, and as it were accidents inseparable; and a man might almost canonize him for a Saint, that hath passed the heat of his youth, and not offended in one of these: but many doubtlesse offend in them both. And this is the cause that mine authour hath propounded many examples, but specially two, in the which men may see their frailtie in the latter of these (which I will handle first) namely in the passion of loue. As first *Orlando*, who with a long and tedious voyage, guardeth *Angelica* from the Indies; then hath her taken from him among his friends, after looseth her, and by sundrie aduentures pursuing her, and yet missing most narrowly of his purpose, in the end falleth starke madde for her, till by Saint *Iohn* his wits are sent him againe, which is as much to say, till by the grace of God and the light of the Gospel, he discovereth the darknes he walked in, and so comes againe to himselfe.

Secondly and principally in *Rogero*, whom he faineth to haue bene a man of infinite value, and of courage able to ouercome a thousand of our common worldly miseries, but yet ouercome himselfe of this passion of loue, without any resistance: this is the reason that he is borne away vpon a horse with wings (which would not be gouerned) vp into the aire, to the countrey of *Alcyna*, (which we may easily conceiue to be the court of pleasure:) by which mine authour giues vs to vnderstand that the principall occasion of our euill proceedeth of this, when our appetite not ruled by reason, ruleth vs, as *Horace* writeth of anger, and may be applyed to any passion that striueth with reason:

*Ira furor brevis est, animum rege, qui nisi paret
Imperat, hunc frenis, hunc tu compeſce catena.*

Wherefore this same appetite is that passionate desire of the minde that we are so often counsailed to reſtraine. Now to this desire to this inordinate lusting, is ioyned idlenesse, as an assistant and great furtherer; as I partly noted in the fourth booke out of *Ouid*, *Oia si tollas, &c.* This idlenes is fayned by the Poet, verie grosse and corpulent, drunken and drowſie, ryding vpon a Tortesse in token of slouth, and he (forsooth) is ring-leader of a monstrous band, of which some haue heads like dogges, some haue neckes like cranes, some are mounted vpon Oxen or Asses, some haue countenances and gestures of Apes, some are armed with prongs, with forkes, with hookes, with broches (all out of the Kitchen) of all which, what other meaning can be gathered but this, that idlenes and slouth, and the not betaking ones selfe to some honest trauell, causeth men to proue drunkards, gluttons, backbyters, reprochers, iesters, parasites and promoters, with other monstrous and filthie faultes, though worthie to be punished, yet not worthie to be named.

Where-

Wherefore the auncient fathers haue not without great iudgement and iust cause placed slouth among the seauen deadly sinnes, being so precise in the consideration thereof, that they haue deliuered their opinion thus farre of it, that though simply to be idle is not a mortall sinne (as they terme it) yet so to be idle as to be kept thereby from some good exercise, as hearing of Gods word, or helping our brother that wanted our assistance, may make it mortall. But now, because in common sence it had not bene fit nor probable, that a man of a high spirit and noble courage (as his *Rogero* is described to be) should be daunted with such a shamefull and base companie as these were, therefore you see he defends himselfe against them most resolutely, though their assault seeme terrible, and their number infinite, and in despite of them he proceedeth towards the house of *Logestilla* (by which is meant vertue) ^{Logestilla be- tokens vertue.} by that craggie and painfull way, and shunneth the other way to *Alcyna*, by meanes of the good warning *Astolfo* had giuen him of the daunger thereof. But loe two faire yong Ladies sent from *Alcyna*, which as I noted in the seuenth booke, caried a shew of honourable and chaste loue; these wanne him without any resistance, and make him of a resolute warriour, a dissolute loue: but trow you he can come to *Alcyna* with the bare name of a loue? no, if he be poore, there is no place for him in dame Pleasures court; he must spend, he must giue, he must lash it out. *Erisila*, a couetous wretch, keeps ^{Erisila.} the bridge, by which is vnderstood that many men are stopt from this course offolly, in regard of the great charge and expence thereof, and so stay at this bridge; and though no consideration of vertue withhold them, yet feare of the charge doth terrifie them. But when *Erisila* is once overthrowne, then they are presently receiued into the bosome of *Alcyna*, then all the cheare, sporting, dauncing and courting that can be imagined is applied to the welcoming of this youthfull *Rogero*. Thus he is drowned and vterly overwhelmed in this gulse of pleasure, which mine author hath set downe so liuely, as it were the very picture of the Prodigall sonne spoken of in the Scripture, giuen ouer to all vnthriftinesse, all loosenesse of life and conuersation. But because the Poet knew very well, that youth of it selfe hath many good gifts of nature, if the same were applied, and that many yong men coming to themselues againe, haue become notable members of their countreys, and worthy patternes of prowesse and vertue; therefore he deuisech most excellently a meane whereby *Rogero* vnwindeth himselfe out of the bonds of *Alcyna*, shewing how one day being gotten from her (a thing that seldome happened vnto him) *Melissa* recalled him againe, and gaue him that Ring that discouered all *Alcynas* trumperies, and made her odious in his sight: so as now he cursed her in his heart, and was ashamed that euer he had set his loue so basely. This is to be vnderstood, that a man besotted in the fond pleasures of this world, entring into godly consideration with himselfe of his owne estate, heareth *Melissa*, which is to be ^{Consideration.} vnderstood the diuine inspiration of the grace of God, calling him from the damned course of life, to an honest and vertuous course; and by that Ring which signifieth reason, he discouereth the odious filthinesse of that which seemed to him before most pleasant and amiable.

Therefore not without verie good cause doth the notable writer (I recited in the beginning of this treatise) lay downe in the very first chapter of his booke the daunger and inconueniences that grow to men for lacke of consideration, vsing also in another place among many his diuine similitudes this one, that men are caried by inconsideration to their euermlasting ruine without any striuing; euen as Hawkes are caried hooded verie quietly, which if their sight were free, would neuer leave bating till they had broken their lines, or vterly tyred themselues: but notwithstanding that the Ring of Reason maketh him discerne these foule deformities of *Alcyna*, yet it is maruellous to see what wonderfull impediments be set in his way ere he can discharge himselfe of his late receiued mistresse. ^{Simila.}

The Faulkner, the horse, the hawke, the dogge, that do all assaile him after a strange fashion, the particular Allegorie whereof, I touched in the eight booke, though to say truth

I needed not so curiously to haue sought for such a hidden meaning in them, when as the verie things themselves are so vntemperately vsed by many, that they keepe them from vertues and more honorable actions: How many men giue themselves so extreemely to these hunters, haukes, hounds, and horses, that they cannot scarce afford an houre to the studie of wisdom and temperance? though I do not vterly condemne the honorable vse of them all, for recreation, so as a man would remember, *Ne quid nimis*, or as our English Prouerbe saith, Too much of one thing is good for nothing.

Now when these difficulties be overcome, then yet for a great while the way is painfull, the weather is hot, the Sunne parcheth, *Rogero* rideth solitarie without companie or good fellowship; and by and by another temptation assailes him: Three Ladies sporting themselves by the sea side would stay him; one offers him wine increasing his thirst with the sight of it, another inuites him to alight, the third railes vpon him for his inciuilitie: The first of these is our concupisence, that with a perpetuall thirst still maketh vs couet things hurtfull for our selues: the second is ease, that is loth to sustaine too much labour, but is still perswading vs to giue ouer vertuous workes, because they are painfull: the third is the mockerie and lewd vse of the world, as I haue also noted in his place, to iest at such as liue austerely and vertuously, as though it were a tokē of a base mind, whereas indeed, it is the onely noble disposition that may be, to follow vertue, and to despise pleasure.

These three women though *Rogero* fled away, yet they followed him, which signifieth, that our owne imperfections euermore follow vs, neither can we be ridde of them, and it suffiseth not to overcome them once, but that we must wage continuall battell with them. Now against this perpetuall miserie we are strengthened by discipline, & made able to withstand them, which is signified by the wise and graue Pilot, that transports *Rogero* by sea, from *Alcyna* to *Logestilla*; and in sooth it may well be called a sea, in which euerie waue is readie to ouerwhelme vs, and euerie storme able vterly to discourage vs, if we had not a good Pilot both safely to guide vs, and chearfully to encourage vs, by telling vs what entertainment we shall finde, if we come once into her harbour.

40

In the tenth
booke.

*There is the food that fills and neuer cloyeth,
There is the loue, the beantie and the grace,
That maketh him most blest that them enioyeth,
To which compar'd all other ioyes are base:
There hope nor feare, nor care the minde annoyeth,
Respect of persons, nor regard of place,
The minde still finding perfect contentation,
Resting it selfe in vertuous contemplation.*

41

*There are (saith he) some better lessons taught,
Then dancings, dallijings, and daintie dyet,
There shall you learne to frame your minde and thought,
From will to wit, to temperance from ryet:
This is the path by which you may be brought
Into the perfect paradise of quiet:
This tale the Pilot to *Rogero* told,
And all the while their course they forward hold.*

This encouragement and comfort was somewhat, but by and by they discovered a great nauie sent from *Alcyna*, which vndoubtedly had surprised them, had not *Logestilla* (which drawne

drawne from the Greeke, isto say wisedome) sent a whole armie in their ayde : which signifieth writings, exhortations, instructions, examples, and precepts, that haue power in them, both to confound *Alcyna*, and to recouer all that had bene wonne by force, in former times from *Logestilla*.

The foure vertuous Ladies that are sent to guard *Rogero*, as appeareth by their names and by their Epithetons giuen them by mine author, are the foure cardinall vertues, iustice, prudence, temperance, and fortitude. Which though it be well described in the foresaid x. book, yet in my fancie, that in the last booke, where he prayseth a Cardinals vertues, I meane *Hippolito*, where also he ads a fift vnto them, and makes them foue, it doth much better:

77

*Then on another part was to be vewd,
His vertues, each one by themselves distinct,
Prudence, and temperance, and fortitude,
And Iustice, and a fift so nearely lunkt
To these, that who with it is not endude,
The rest may seeme blotted, or quite extinct,
Bountie imployd in giuing and in spending,
A speciall grace to all the other lending.*

These be the Captaines of that Armie Royall, that can ouercome legions, nay millions of vices : and sure if you will not allow the last of them for a principall leader, yet you must at least, make him treasurer and paymaster, or else it is great doubt that for lacke of pay, you will be driuen to Cassyre your bands. But to proceede, perhaps it will seeme strange to some, as it did to my selfe, at the first reading, how it comes to passe that *Logestilla* and *Alcyna* are sisters, the one legitimate, the other a bastard; and that the bastard hath vsurped vpon the others state, and hath scarce left her aboue one strong hold. The exposition is this.

The nature of man (by which is vnderstood our appetite or affection,) which ought to be subiect to reason, and to be gouerned thereby, this nature (I say) was at the first a lawfull child of God, and was by the spirite of God framed to his owne likenesse, there to gouerne and rule by reason and wisedome, so that afore nature was corrupted, all the partes of our minde were in a perfect accord and harmonie, vnder the gouernement of reason, or rather euerie one setting forward it selfe to vertuous actions : but when this first perfection was lost, and that same great rebellion was made, to the ouerthrow of that quiet and settled state, the heart became so weake, as it was not able to endure the continuall assaults of the passions that assailed it, and in the end was content to take part with them, against the reasonable part of the minde. And now euery part of the body engenders such seeds of concupiscence, that nature is become a bastard sister to reason, and vsurpes that gouernement that is due onely to her, and leaueth her onely one castell, which was so strongly situated that it was impregnable : so that now reason is retired as it were to her principall fortresse, to the head, the rest of this kingdome being possessed (by *Alcyna*) by pleasure and fond delights. Now then, what maruell is it, if this new *Hercules*, described by mine author, do with so great difficultie, and through so many impediments, clāmer vp to this stately seate of *Logestilla*, built with such rare workmanship, and of such pure stuffe, that a man may in the walls thereof, see euen into his very soule and conscience:

*In these men see the vertue, and the vice,
That cleaueth to their inward soule and minde,
Who lookes in such a glasse may grow so wise,
As neither flat ring praises shall him blind,
With tickling words, nor undeserued blame,
With forged faults, shall worke him any shame.*

M m iij

As for those gildings and paintings, that were in the Pallace of *Alcyna*, though the show of it were glorious, the substance of it was drosse, and nothing but Alcumie, and cosenage: but these of *Logestilla*, be precious stones indeed, of inestimable vantage: The looking glasse and mirrour, that will shew vs how our soule and our minde is spotted; oh he that would vse such a glasse, what a notable Antidoton it would be against the poyson of flatterie?

You faire Ladies, that spend so many houres in looking and prying in a glasse to see if this shadow sit handsomely, if your rebatoes be well set, if your wyers stand euen vpon your heads, and the pendent iust in the middle of your foreheads, and in the least of these matters you will not belecue your maids eyes, but you will see it your selues, why are you so credulous to belecue lyers and flatterers, that tell you your chastities and other womanlie vertues be extolled and praysed, and will not looke in that true glasse, to see if you deserue it or no?

It is true, that men are no fit iudges of themselues, because commonly they are parciall in their owne cause, yet is it as true, that he that will dispose him to iudge indifferentlie of himselfe, can do it better then any bodie else, because a man can see further into his owne minde and heart, then any one else can. But now, to come to this faire house of *Logestilla*, to which I would so fayne inuite you all, both Lordes and Ladies, that read this discourse, here be sweete gardens, here be wholesome herbes, here is the continuall spring: Here that vnbridled horse, that bare away *Rogero* so farre out of Europe, is taught to obey the rodde and the rayne, and made seruiceable and at commaundement. Further, by the helpe of the ring (as was touched before) manie that had bene transformed into brute beastes, were restored to their shape againe: these were such as were so drowned in vice, and in beastlie pleasures, that no part of the reasonable man was left in them. *Astolfo* was restored to his shape, that had bene turned into a myrtle, (now the myrtle was said euer to haue bene *Venus* tree;) and because he was so entangled in Venerie, that he could not get himselfe out of it, therefore he is sayned to haue taken roote in the ground as the tree doth, and so was fastened, that without *Melyssas* assistance he could not haue stirred from thence. Thus, as you see mine Authour vnder a prettie fiction, hath brought you to behold the whole miserie of the life of man, and there in the beginning of the seuenth booke, he exhorte men to consider the meaning of his tale,

*Wherefore to some my tale may seeme a fable.
Whose wits to vnderstand it, are not able.*

But now because there are diuers kindes of errours, in this laberinth of loue, and as diuers meanes by which men offend, as there are diuers sortes of men that offend; therefore you may perceiue how my authour hath filled the whole booke with sundry examples both of men and women: as beside *Orlando* of whom I spake before, whose madnesse gaue the name to his worke, calling it *Orlando Furioso*, there is *Sacrapant*, that followes *Angelica* from the Indies, and is still foded out by her with faire wordes: There is *Renaldo*, that is extreame in loue with her, till the water of disdaine draue away, and cooled the heat of his affection; and the whole booke is full of examples of men and women, that in this matter of loue, haue bene notable in one kinde or other, of which I will touch some speciall ones, and omit the rest, as not so much worth the standing vpon.

The ordinarie kindes of loue are set downe to vs of the good and the bad in two couples: *Angelica* and *Doralice* of the worse kinde, and *Olympia* and *Bradamant* of the better sort. In *Angelica*, the excellentnesse of her beautie bred such an exceeding pride, that disdayning the greatest and worthiest Princes that liued in that

age, she cast herself away at last vpon a poore seruing-man, for a iust recompence of her too haughtie conceipt. In *Doralyce*, is set downe a patterne of great lightnesse of manners and behauiour, that first louing *Rodomont*, and being forcible taken by *Mandricard*, yet in one night was so well pacified toward him, that she was content to tarrie with him, and in the end refused *Rodomont* openlie for him, (though in so doing one might make a reasonable excuse for her:) but after when *Mandricard* was slaine, she could haue found in her heart to haue loued *Rogero* also. In *Olympia* contrarie, we see an honest chaste loue, though very hardly requited, yet hath it in my opinion some reproofe, namely that it was too sodaine and violent. But in the worthy *Bradamant* is a perfect patterne of true honorable loue to *Rogero*, moued first by his value, by his courage, by his behauiour, by his worth, which made him worthie of her loue. In her you shall finde no rashnesse, no want of constancie, of faith, of all other due regards: for neither could her sundry ouerthwart chances, neither the expectation and length of time, (which is wont to breed alterations,) nor the obstinate couetousnesse of her father, nor the vaine ambition of her mother, nor the state and Empire of *Leon*, with all the promised riches and treasures his Father and he possessed, once withdraw her minde from her first loue. Further, *Bradamant* did not rashlie fall in loue, as did *Olympia*, but the Prophetesse *Melyssa*, and tokens from aboue, did encourage her to her honest loue, for showing her of her noble posteritie, and of all those blessings that accompanie the same: so as indeed, in her onely we haue a patterne of honest and commendable loue before marriage.

Now there are in like manner two payre of married women, one worthie all reproch, the tother meriting all praise. The shamelesse *Orygilla* and her filthie *Martano*, are a patterne of base and filthie loue, grounded vpon ribauldrie, and continued with all fraudulent practises that may be; in which also the fond affection, and doting fancie of *Grifino* is to be pitied, that could not see her trecherie til with notable shame and scorne, he felt the fruits of it.

Another patterne of lewdnesse in all kindes, is the tragicall life of the abhominable *Gabryna*, that for her filthie lust, brake all the lawes of hospitalitie and humanitie: First tempting *Fylandro* most impudentlie, then accusing him most falselie, lastlie circumventing him most subtilly, and making him with a most rare crueltie to kill her husband, and marrie her selfe; and finallie when she grew wearie of him, she found the meanes to poyson both him and the Phisition, and not resting there, spent all her life after in working all kinde of treason and mischief, euen to her last gaspe, which she fetcht on the gallowes. Such *Gabrynas* and *Medeas* as this perhaps there are in the world, that to effect their diuellish purposes, will not sticke to practise any kinde of trecherie and poysoning, yea and take a pride and felicitie when they can ouerthrow noble houses, set great men together by the eares, cause bloudshed, and ruine, and hurlyburlie in Cities and common wealthes, and cause brothers to cut off one anothers head: whereupon that old verse may seeme to haue bene made vpon some ground:

*Non audet Stigius Plauto tentare, quod audet
Presbiter, effrenis planaq; fraudis anus.*

But now in recompence of these two passing lewd women, we haue two excellent vertuous women: *Fiordeliege* married to *Brandimart*, and *Isabell* espoused to *Zerbino*. Which, I thinke mine author hath deuised to haue great aduersities, and to haue lost their husbands most vnfortunatly, to the end to lay before all chaste and vertuous matrones an example, how the troubles that happen to their husbands, must be a meane to set forth their praise the more. And indeed, to attribute to them the highest point of glorie in this kinde that may be, you see how he maketh them leese their husbands euen in the prime of their owne

yeares: *Zerbino* slaine in France, and *Brandimart* in Barbarie, and both of them naming their wiues at their last houre, to shew how dearely they loued them; which causeth them to breake into such piteous lamentations, as would moue not onely a tender hearted Ladie, but euen a valiant hearted man, to shed teares with compassion. Further, the deathes of both these Ladies, in sundry kindes are most admirable: *Fiordeliege* builds her a little roome in the sepulcher of her husband, and there becomes an Anchorite: *Isabella* falling into the hand of the barbarous *Rodomont*, and hauing no way to saue her chastitie from his violence, deuised a meane to redeeme it with the price of her life: Oh worthy *Isabella*, that deseruest to be painted in Tables, and set foorth in clothes of Arres, for an example to all young Ladies of constant chaltitie.

But now to goe forward, we haue to consider likewise of the inchaunted Pallace, in which as it were in an infinite laberinth, so many braue young men of great vallour, loose themselves in seeking their loues, and when they would depart thence, they heare themselves called backe, and thinke they see their faces; but when they come, thinking to finde them, they vanish out of their sights, and turne to shadowes. This enchantment is likewise referred to loue, that painteth forth in our fancie, the Image of the party loued, representing to vs the sweete speech, the seemely behauiour, the gracious lookes of our Idol that we worship: but neither can we finde it when we seeke for it, neither doth the heart take any repose, still labouring to attaine to the end which more do misse then hit, and yet when they do attaine to it, for the most part they grow as wearie, as before they grew fond. We may say that *Dido* was in this laberinth, when as *Virgil* describeth her:

*At Regina graui iam dudum sancia cura,
Vulnus alit venis, & ceco carpitur igni,
Multa viri virtus animo, multusq; recurat,
Gentis honos: haerent infixi pectore vultus,
Verbaq; nec placidam membris dat cura quietem.*

Wherefore this passion may well be called *That tickling wound, that flat'ring cruell foe*, as it is in the first booke. And no maruell if *Rogero* once againe, hauing lost his ring of reason, be drawne into this inchaunted Pallace. Onely *Astolfo* (taught by a booke *Logestilla* gaue him, to take away a fantastical Image, or some such witchcraft as lay vnder the threshold) dissolued the inchauntment. But whereas it is said that *Atlanta* did build it, thereby to keepe *Rogero* in an idle life, therein he toucheth the fond tendernes of diuers parents ouer their children, who bringing them vp in wantonnesse, ease and pride, make them the more apt to fall into this inchanting laberinth. Many more examples are alledged by mine author: as that prettie Comical tale of *Ariodant* and *Generra*: the fantastical tale of *Norandino* and *Lucyna*, that were lapt in goates skinnes: the death of *Marganorres* two sonnes: the tale of the Mantuan knight that had the married mens cup. All which haue good Moralities, and may be fitlie applied to this common place of loue.

Of armes.

Now the other common place is of armes, which indeed is more pertinent to matters of state, (as tother is to priuate life and manners,) and in this mine author hath carried his inuention verie daintilie, and well worth the marking. For he propoundeth to vs the example of two mightie Emperours, one of which directeth all his counsels by wisdom, learning, and Religion; But the other being rash, and vnexperienced, ruined himselfe and his countrie: and in this storie though much of it be fayned, yet are set downe the verie ordinarie causes, and the vsuall sequels of all such garboyls and troubles. It is almost an vsuall matter to reade of young Princes, that being left in peace and prosperitie, and hauing so much wealth they know not what to do withall, straight follow their youthfull humour of reuenging some (I know nor what) old iniuries, and be put in hope by such hare-brayne Counsellours as *Rodomont* and his fellowes, of great conquestes
and

and in the end ouerthrow indeed great armies, not of their enemies, but of their owne, as, the Oracle mocked *Crasus*:

Crasus Halim penetrans magnam perueriet opum vim.

So did *Hanniball* in Italie (though indeed he preuayled a great while) led thereto by a dreame, as some write. Now in these matters of warres, the chiefe fault commonly is, in those Counsellors that put a sword into a mad-mans hand, by putting such conceits into Princes heads. Yet we see *Agramant* hath his graue *Sobrino*, that aduised him at the first, not to inuade other mens cuntries, but to keepe his owne; that aduised him to preuent mischiefe in time, and to sue for peace: that aduised him to put the matter to a combat of one man, and the partie ouercome to pay yearly tribute: and finally, that not onely with faithfull counsell, but with valiant seruice, sticketh to him to the last; but *Agramant*'s owne rashnesse and follie ouerthrowes all the good that could be done him. Further these youthfull Counsellours, on whom *Agramant* did so much relye, did not onely hurt him by their fond perswasions to his ill succeeding warres, but also in the middest of the heate thereof, when their seruice should haue stood him in most speed, annoyed him, and in a manner quite confounded him with their continuall iarring and squaring among themselves about matters of small or no importance: So that, as *Agamemnon*, was wont to wish for ten *Nestors*, and could haue bene content to haue spared *Achilles*: so *Agramant* had iust cause to haue wished for ten *Sobrinos*, and to haue spared *Rodomont*, and the other great champions. And by the way it is to be noted, how Poeticallie mine author sendeth Discord among them, and where she was found, as you might reade in the fourteenth booke. Now to *Agramant* is on the other side opposed *Charles*, a graue and well stayed Prince, wise and valiant, not parciall in doing iustice, bountifull in rewarding seruices, and which is all in all, deuout without hypocrisie, and putting indeed his affiance in God, and consequently in his extremities is ayded by God; and in the end obtaining a most happie victorie, driuing both his enemies out of his countrie, and gayning from them a great part of theirs. Further my author hath set downe diuers formes (as I may call it) of valiant men, though not all in a sort to be imitated, but some rather greatlie to be reprobued; *Mandricard* is described to be exceeding full of courage, and withall verie quarrellsome, and yet with good successe: He takes *Doralyce* from her guard, he fights with *Orlando*; with *Rodomont*, with *Marfisa*, and still he holds his owne. But this good fortune is a cause to fooles of their ouerthrow; for (as our English Prouerb saith) *So oft goes the pitcher to the water, at last it comes broke home*. *Mandricard* would needs quarrell with *Rogero* about their cognisaunce, and by him is slaine after all his brauerie. This is written for a warning to such as are of *Mandricard*'s disposition, to take heed of *Mandricard*'s end.

Likewise in *Rodomont* there was exceeding strength of bodie, as well as courage of minde, but the same was gouerned with no deliberation; which caused him to attempt, and to giue ouer things attempted very sodainly, which finally turned to be hurtfull to himselfe as well as to others.

On the other side, *Renaldo* was a franke natured man, valiant & curteous, *Ferraw* stout, but too ful of cracking, and therby procuring himselfe enmities. *Orlando* ful of clemencie as well as courage: *Zerbino* a patterne of a most noble & thankful nature, and though not fortunate, yet most famous in despite of fortune.

Rogero, the verie Idea and perfect example of a true knight, that will by no meanes break his faith and his honour, that seekes no aduantage of the enchanted sheeld, that to be grateful to *Don Leon Augustus*, would leese both loue and life, and finally, that in defence of his honour killeth *Rodomont*.

Further, as I haue often noted in the seuerall bookes, it is a verie pleasing thing to see the due punishment of the wicked doers, and the procurers of euill, as besides those I haue noted, you may see that none scape the xxxij. kings that came out of Affricke, but

Rogero and *Sobrino*, the one a perswader to peace, the other, a iust warriour, and true of his word.

Beside, in *Astolfo* is a praise of learning, who with his sounding horne, by which is meant eloquence, and with his booke (betokening wisdom) both the gifts of *Logestilla*, becometh a tamer of monsters, as well as a conquerour of men, and accomplisheth greater matters alone, then all the rest do with their force and armes.

Further, in the praise of learning, and to moue Princes to fauour learning, he shewes how onely the pen of the learned is that that preferues the good fame of Princes, as for the common foolish Pamphlet-writers he condemneth them, likening them to Vultures, carren Crowes, and chattering Pyes, that are not able to saue their friends names from the lake of obliuion, because their writings are not durable. Thus much I thought good to note of the generall Allegorie of the whole worke, to giue you occasion to ruminare, as it were, and better to digest that, which you before in reading, did perhaps swallow downe whole without chewing. Now me thinke it is euen high time to take away, and bid much good do it you, or at least no harme do it you, or if you thinke it will for all this, the best phisicke I can prescribe you, is to take a leafe or two of *S. Matthews* Gospell, or of *S. Pauls* Epistles, and it shall restore you to your perfect health.



THE LIFE OF ARIOSTO BRIEFLY AND COMPENDIOUSLY GATHERED
OVT OF SVNDRIE ITALIAN
writers, by IOHN HARRINGTON.

Who are worthy to have their liues written.



Those that performed anie notable worke in their liues, either for the profite of their countrey, or for the aduancement of learning, or in any other thing that hath made them worth the talking of after their deceasses, haue for the most part both bene recorded in the Histories of their times, and also had their names eternized by speciall Treatises written of their liues; by which the ensuing ages might know their country, their parentage, their time of birth, their education, their disposition, their actions, and their end: Whether it be that men are willing to prosecute their deserts with a thankfull remembrance after their deaths, as it were for a kind of recompence of their trauell in this life, whether for the incouragement of those that liue, to make them by vertue hunt after fame. Neither onely haue men of good deserts bene praised for their vertues, but also the wicked haue bene blazed for their faults, that those whom desire of fame cannot allure to well doing, yet feare of shame and ignominie, may terrifie from leud actions. In both which kinds, diuerse haue employed their pennes, both in former ages and now of late, to the great good and delight of the studious reader. Witnesse *Plutarks* liues called his Paralels, comparing the notable men of Rome and Greece: *Suetonius* booke of the twelue *Casars*: anothers after him of ten Emperours (excellently written in Italian): And of our owne countrey and in our owne language, the *Mirroure of Magistrates*, in which the life and fall of many great persons is very well set downe, and in a good verse. Now (as I say) this being a common custome, and as it were a due reward to men of good desert, no maruell if this Poet, whose worke

worke hath bene acceptable to so many thousands, haue also found this fauour to haue his life written, which hath bene done by three Italians: that I haue read, namely *Gierolamo Porro* of Padoa, *Gierolamo Garofala* of Ferrara, and by *Simon Fornari* of Rheggio: out of whose three reports I haue gathered this compendious treatise, to satisfie such as are desirous to know who this *Ariosto* was, whom I haue so greatly extolled in my Apologie, as a benefactor of all studious mindes, and on whose worke I haue employed so much time, to put it into English verse, and to bestow so many notes as I haue done vpon the expounding of his Allegories, and whatsoeuer else I iudged fit for the readers of weaker capacities.

First therefore you must know, that the house or name of the *Ariosti* came first out of *Ariosto his parentage.* Bologna, (not as some haue vainely surmised deriued of the *Aristij* or *Arionisti*) for yet their name is remaining in Bologna in good account and reckning, and was long since of that reputation for gentrie and wealth, that *Margues Obizzo* the third of the house of Este, thought it no disparagement to him to marrie a wife out of that stocke, called *Lippa Ariosta*. This Ladie was of excellent beautie and wit, and bringing with her vnto Ferrara some of the *Ariosti* of her kin and followers, by her fauour and countenance, they so well fethered their nests in Ferrara in her life, that they held euer since the account of Gentlemen of the better sort: But (admit their familie were of good reckning before) yet the excellencie of this famous man we now treat of, by the consent of all that write of it, hath greatly increased the account and credit thereof. His fathers name was *Nicholas Ariosto*, *His father.* and both his father and vncles bare offices in their countrey of good vallew, his mothers name was *Aria* of the house of *Malagutise* in Reggio, as appeareth *His mother.* in one of his Satyres where he nameth her. Now though this *Lodowike Ariosto* were his fathers eldest sonne, yet he had foure brothers and fiue sisters, the names of his brothers himselfe set downe in his second Satyre, *Charles, Alexander, Galasso, and Gabriell*, *His brothers.* where also he complaineth that *Mercurie* was no great friend to his house, meaning that their wealth was but small, because none of them had vsed to increase it by trafficke or merchandize. Now though his father were a man of good reckning, as hauing bene in his youth a companion of Duke *Borso*, and after that an officer to Duke *Hercules*, in a good place, namely his *Maiordomo*, which I take to signifie as much as great master or steward of his house, and often employed as Ambassadour from him to the Pope, and to the king of France, and consequently receiued of him great preferments, as well in dignities, as reuenues and fees, yet it seemeth that he liued euer so at the vttermost of his abilitie, that he pursed vp little to the increase of his stocke, and thereby left his heire no verie rich man. *His towardnes in his childhood.* But to speake of the sonne of whom I chiefly intend my discourse, certaine it is that from his verie childhood, he shewed great tokens of forwardnes in all studie, but specially in Poetrie, in so much that his father yet liuing, he translated the tale of *Pyramus* and *Thisbee* into verse, making in a manner a Comedie of it, and so caused his brothers and sisters to play it. Howbeit his father being vtterly vnlearned, and rather regarding what studie would be most profitable to be followed by his sonne, then what his nature and inclination did best serue him to, compelled him to studie the ciuill law, in which hauing plodded some yeares verie displeasantly, and with no great prooffe, at last he left it vtterly, and fell to more sweete studies; for the barbarousnesse of the phrase agreed not with the sharpnes of his conceit, in so much that he writeth of himselfe (though rather pehaps of his modestie, then that it was so)

*Passar, vent'anni mi trouaua, e vopo
Hauer di Pedagogo, ch'a fatica
Inteso haurei quel che tradusse Esopo.*

That is to say, that being twentie yeare old, he had need of a schoolmaster to conster
N n

Esopes fables; though I see not how that could be, considering that being verie young, they say he made and openly pronounced an Oration in Latine, that gaue euen then great hope of him: the best likelihood is, that when his father set him to the Law, which he had no minde vnto, that then he lost his Latine againe, which is soone done, and so was glad to fall to it freshly, after he came to mans estate, which he did verie studiously, reading manie bookes, and especially *Horace*, whom he studied so thorowly, that he was able to expound diuers hard and obscure places in his Odes, which were then not vnderstood, and it is obserued, that when *Leo* the tenth was Pope, both his holinesse and diuers great Prelates in Rome fauored him greatly, euen in that respect. Thus as I said, his naturall inclination carrying him chiefly to Poetrie, he gaue himselfe to reade those Poets that were of best account, both in Latine and Italian, as his worke well shewes, in his oft and excellent imitations of them, and his gift was such, that though his youngest brother *Gabriel* wrote reasonable well, and by meanes of a lamenesse he had, gaue himselfe wholly to studie, yet he came so farre short of him, that there was no comparison: so that as one said of *Tully*, *Satis est non modo in una familia, sed in una ciuitate esse unum Rhetorem*; it is enough to haue one good Orator not onely in a family, but euen in a whole Citie: So one may say of *Ariosto*, it is enough that all Italy had one so excellent a Poet. Yet he was often woont to lament as before him *Petrarke*, and before them both *Ouid* is noted to haue done, that his father still draue him from Poetrie, as that verse witnesseth,

*Abi lasso, quando hebbi al Pegaseo melo
L'eta disposta, e che le fresche guancie,
Non si videan anchor fiorir, d'un pelo
Mio padre mi caccia con spiedi e lancie
Non che con spromi, a volger testi e chiose.
Em' occupo cing' anni in quelle ciancie.*

But to proceed, when he had prettilie entered himselfe in Poetrie, and was of the age of foure and twentie, his father departed his life, and as I in part noted before, left him no rich man, whether that the inheritance was deuided among all the brothers, as in some places of England and Wales, the custome of the Gauell kinde alloweth, or that his living stood most vpon offices and fees that dyed with him: but thus they write, that he was then greatly perplexed with the charge of so great a familie, and with bestowing his sisters, and prouiding for his brothers, that he was euen readie to haue giuen ouer all his studie, had not the emulation that he had with a Gentleman of his owne name and kinne, called *Pandolfo Ariosto*, still renewed in him his former disposition: but in proceffe of time this *Pandolfo* dyed, with which his friend and cosin were greatly discouraged, and for a time againe discontinued, but yet so as the world before that time had some conceit of his sharpenesse of wit, and of his gift in well writing: In the end being toward thirtie yeares old, he was for his good parts entertained into the seruice of Don *Hippolito* Cardinall of Este, a great fauourer of learning and good witts, and one that kept continually in his court great store of excellent learned men, among whom *Ariosto* was receiued in verie honourable sort: and yet to this time he had not written any worke of fame, but some few Sonnets: forbearing belike to write till he were well stuffed with matter; as wise builders beginne not their buildings till they haue brought their Lime and stone and timber in place, lest one should stay for the other. At his very entrance into this Cardinals seruice, he determined, as it should seeme, to make some Poem, finding his strength to serue him to it, and though he could haue accomplished it very well in Latine, yet he chose rather

his

His seruice of
Cardinall
Hippolito.

his native tongue, either because he thought he could not attaine to the highest place of praise, the same being before occupied by diuerse, and specially *Virgil* and *Ouid*, or because he found it best agreed with his matter and with the time, or because he had a desire (as most men haue) to enrich their owne language with such writings as may make it in more account with other nations: but the first of these was the true cause indeed, for when *Bembo* would haue dissuaded him from writing Italian; alledging that he should winne more praise by writing Latine, his answer was, that he had rather be one of the principall and chiefe Thuscan writers, then scarce the second or third among the Latines: adding, that he found his humor (his Genius he called it) best inclining to it. Wherefore going forward with that resolution, of all the Poems that were then in that kind in manner of history (they were called *Romanzi*, which in French signifieth briefe notes of occurrents) he chose *Boyardo*, vpon whose worke he would ground, both because he said *Boyardos* worke was fresh in euery mans minde, as also because he would shunne the bringing in of new names, and of new matter, which he thought would be nothing so pleasant vnto his countrymen, as that of which they had some tast alreadie, and yet withall a desire to know further of being by *Boyardo* left vnperfect. Thus (as I said) he began this worke of his entituled *Orlando Furioso*, being about the age of thirtie yeares, and being entred into the seruice of Cardinall *Hippolito*, howbeit he did not so wholly giue himselfe either to reading, for the enriching of his owne wit, or to writing, for the pleasure and profit of others, that he withdrew himselfe from such honorable seruices as he was called to. For when Pope *Iulio* the second had intended to make warre vpon the Duke of Ferrara (whose brother Cardinall *Hippolito* was) master *Lodowicke Ariosto* was chosen as a most fit man to go of Ambassage to him, to pacifie his wrath; the which busines he managed so well, that he wan great reputation of wisdom and discretion at his returning: Howbeit, it was not long after his returne, but that the forenamed Pope, being indeed a man of an vnquiet spirit, and giuen all to the warres, leuied a great power against the Duke, and shipped many of his souldiers, to send them ouer Po the great riuer that runnes by Ferrara, these were met by the forces of the Duke vpon the water, and in that seruice *Ariosto* himselfe demeaned himselfe verie valiantly, and tooke one of the best shippes and best stored with victuall and munition in all the flecte. But these armies being dissolued, the Duke thought good once againe to send to pacifie that same ouer terrible Prelat; and euerie man shunning the office, knowing the furious nature of *Iulio*, *Ariosto* againe for the seruice and safetie of his countrie, aduentured to go, indeed an exceeding aduenture, for neither were the wayes safe in time of warres to go so weakly guarded; neither was that Popes displeasure supportable where he placed the same; yet through both these dangers he waded, and presented himselfe to the Pope; but finding by some priuie intelligence, that the place was too hot for him, he gat home againe with great perill to haue mard all his fine inuention, with the losse of that head from whence it came. For this seruice notwithstanding he was greatly both praised and fauoured. Now when things after by the good successe of the Duke, grew to more quiet, then he also betooke him to his quiet studies, & consequently did proceede in his excellent Poem: But sodainly, when he had made so much thereof, as gaue great hope to all men, that it would proue an excellent peece of worke, he happened to fall into the Cardinals displeasure, by meanes that he refused to go with him into Hungarie, which though the said Cardinall tooke verie displeasantly; yet knowing the valew of the man, and his worth, he would not disgrace him openly, though he wanted no enemies to feed and further that ill conceit in him; which master *Lodowicke* finding, was so greatly discouraged, that he intermitted his writing many yeares: and to mend the matter, one taking occasion of this eclipse of the Cardinals fauour, put him in suit for a peece of land of his ancient inheritance, which was not onely a great vexation to his minde, but a charge to his purse, and trauell to his bodie; for vndoubtedly, the clattering of armour, the noise of great Ordenance, the sound of trumpet and drumme,

Why he wrote
not in Latine

So did Virgil
by Homer for
the same cause

His employ-
ments.

His ambassage

His seruice by
sea.

His second am-
bassage.

His danger to
haue bene put
to death.

His troubles.

the neying of horses do not so much trouble the sweete Muses, as doth the brabbling of Lawyers, the paltering of Attorneys, and the ciuill warre or rather most vnciuill disagreeing of forsworne Iurors. Thus was good master *Lodowike* interrupted of his course of writing fourteene whole yeares, euen to the death of the Cardinall; after which time he had, or rather he tooke to himselfe more libertie or leisure to follow his owne humor and priuate studie, and in proceffe of time finished to great perfection that, which he had begun with great expectation. Yet did the Duke *Alfonso* allure him by all means he could to his court, vsing him like a companion rather then like a seruant, and offering him great offices and preferments if he could haue made him serue him in ordinarie; but he louing his libertie more then any preferment, refused both his and other great offers of great Princes and Cardinals, as also of Pope *Leo* the tenth, a great fauourer of learning and good wits, of all whom notwithstanding he receiued many graces, and some good giftes; but for countries sake, and of his gratefull nature he was euer relying of the Duke of Ferrara; and finding that the Duke did delight in his writings, and specially in fine Comedies, he made fiiue: *La Casseria*, *I supposui*, *la Lena*, *il Nigromante*, *la Scholastica*: but of this last he made but three actes, and it was finished by his brother *Gabriel*. These Comedies the Duke did so highly esteeme, that he built a verie sumptuous stage in a faire large hall at Ferrara, of purpose for a place to haue them plaide and represented in his court: and he vsed other great tokens of fauour to him, but specially (which is indeed the onely true token of fauour in a Prince) he gaue him great rewardes, enabling him thereby to build a conuenient house in Ferrara, with a delicate garden to it, in which he vsed often to sit and walke, and make verses, and writing diuers other both wittie and pleasant discourfes, or translations out of French or Spanish, with such felicitie and good grace in the Italian, that his doings were in great account with all the Princes of Italy, and they sent him manie giftes for copies of them: but office of charge he was exceeding loth to take, saying, that he would not sell his libertie for the best Hat in Rome, meaning a Cardinals Hat; further he would confesse of himselfe that he was variable in his desires, and in his disposition, and therefore would be tide to nothing. For his dyet he was verie temperate, and a great enemy of excesse and surfetting, and so carelesse of delicates, as though he had had no perseuerance in the tast of meates, in so much as one day a friend of his in sport, caused a Muskite to be set before him in steed of a Partrich, but by mistaking of the seruingmā that set it on the boord, another Gentleman happend to tast it, and so the iest was discovered, and he writeth of himselfe in one place,

*Io non ho troppo gusto de viuande,
Che Scalcosia, fui degno esser al mendo
Quando vinean gli huomini di grande.*

That is to say, that his tast was not delicate, and that he was fit to haue liued in the world when they fed on Akornes: howbeit, for women I cannot so much praise his temperance, for he is noted to haue had dishonest companie with one *Alexandra*, though some say he was married to her priuile, and durst not be acknowne of it for feare to leese some spirituall liuings that he had, which were not lawfull to be held by a married man, but howsoeuer it was, his two sonnes were counted but base borne, though both of them prospered reasonable well in the world, their names were *Virginio* and *Gian Battista*. *Virginio* became a spirituall man, and his father surrendered some of his liuings vnto him, the other became Captaine of a band of the Dukes, and a man of good account with the Duke. Also there was a Ladie called *Genewra* a faire and modest Ladie, whom he made great profession of loue vnto, but whether he enioyed her or no, it is not knowne, and therefore we may imagine the best: he fell in loue with one (whether

His fauour &
credit with
Alfonso.

His Comedies
he made.

His felicitie in
translating
out of Spanish
& other tongues

His temperance
in diet.

His marriage
doubtfull.

His sonnes base
bornes.

ther that were this *Genewra* or no, I know not,) in Florence in the house of *Vespucci*, a kins-
woman of his, finding her one day dressing of a cote like an armour for one of her sonnes, a-
gainst he should go into the great shew that they haue there on midsummer eue (as they were
wont to haue here in London,) whereupon he made that comparison in the 54. stanza
of the xxiiij. booke of *Orlando Furioso*, of the wound that the noble *Zerbino* Pince of Scot-
land, had receiued of *Mandricardo*:

*The Prince so eager was he felt no smart,
Yet ran the blond out of his brest amaine,
And of his armour all the former part,
With crimson streame of blond it did distaine:
So haue I seene her hand, that to mine hart
Hath bene a cause of anguish great and paine,
When she a purple seame or flowre hath drawne,
In siluer kirtle, or in sleene of lawne.*

Also his prettie fantastickall beginning of the fife and thirtieth Canto in the first and second
stasse, with the first and second and third of the sixteenth Canto, do proue that he was sub-
iect to that passion of loue, but withall, that his loue was placed vpon women of good
worth and of great modestie. Now though I dare not excuse him in this so great a fault,
yet partly in respect he was vnmarried, partly because these white diuels haue such a temp-
ting power vpon the earth, me thinks I should easily obtaine a pardon for him, of all
you that reade this short discourse of his life. But omitting this one peccadillo, in all his
other proceedings he was verie modest, and iust, and affable, and verie graue and discreet,
as he well approued, when after the death of *Leo* the tenth, he was (though halfe against
his will) employed by the Duke, as a Lieutenant or high shreue, in the countrie called
Graffignana, being then full of factions and diuisions, which he so orderly gouerned, and
so well quieted, that he left them all in good peace and concord, leauing among them a ve-
rie good report of his wisdom and equitie, and winning not onely the loue of the better
sort, but also a wonderfull reuerence of the wilder sort of people, and a great awe euen in
robbers and theeues: as appeared one day by a chance that happened to him in the time of
that forenamed office. For as he rode one day with fife or fixe horses, in one of the most
licentious and disorderly parts of the countrie, he was to passe neere *Rhodea* by a compa-
nie of armed men that lay dispersed in the shade, and by meanes of the dissention and fal-
ling out of two men of some reckning in that countrey, called *Domenico Morotto*, and
Philippo Pacchione, there were dayly diuers ryots and outrages committed thereabout vpon
the passengers by such kinde of men, so as he rode by them not without some doubt to
haue bene assaulted: but being past them about a stones cast, the chiefe of the companie
demaunded of his man that rode hindermost, what his masters name was, he told him
Master *Lodowike Ariosto*, whereupon straight the partie armed as he was, ran after him;
Ariosto stayed his horse seeing him come after him, doubting in his minde to what
purpose he came, but when he came nearer, he craued pardon of him, that he had not
done his dutie vnto him in his going by, shewing him how he was *Philippo Pacchione*,
desiring his acquaintance, and offering to be at his commaundement with all humilitie and
courtesie.

Not long after this, hauing occasion about some matter of his office, to haue some con-
ference with one of the principall Gentlemen of *Lucca*, and appointing the same Gen-
tleman to meete him at a towne called *San Pellegrino*: at his comming thither, he found
not onely the said Gentleman there ready to attend him, but also diuers others: with La-
dies and gentlewomen that came of purpose to see him, drawne by the sound of his lear-
ning and wit, where they feasted him and entertained him verie noblie, euerie one struing

the neying of horses do not so much trouble the sweete Muses, as doth the brabbling of Lawyers, the paltering of Attorneys, and the ciuill warre or rather most vnciuill disagreeing of forsworne Iurors. Thus was good master *Lodowike* interrupted of his course of writing fourteene whole yeares, euen to the death of the Cardinall; after which time he had, or rather he tooke to himselfe more libertie or leisure to follow his owne humor and priuate studie, and in proceffe of time finished to great perfection that, which he had begun with great expectation. Yet did the Duke *Alfonso* allure him by all means he could to his court, vsing him like a companion rather then like a seruant, and offering him great offices and preferments if he could haue made him serue him in ordinarie; but he louing his libertie more then any preferment, refused both his and other great offers of great Princes and Cardinals, as also of Pope *Leo* the tenth, a great fauourer of learning and good wits, of all whom notwithstanding he receiued many graces, and some good giftes; but for countries sake, and of his gratefull nature he was euer relying of the Duke of Ferrara; and finding that the Duke did delight in his writings, and specially in fine Comedies, he made fiue: *La Casseria*, *I suppositi*, *la Lena*, *il Nigromante*, *la Scholastica*: but of this last he made but three actes, and it was finished by his brother *Gabriel*. These Comedies the Duke did so highly esteeme, that he built a verie sumptuous stage in a faire large hall at Ferrara, of purpose for a place to haue them plaide and represented in his court: and he vsed other great tokens of fauour to him, but specially (which is indeed the onely true token of fauour in a Prince) he gaue him great rewardes, enabling him thereby to build a conuenient house in Ferrara, with a delicate garden to it, in which he vsed often to sit and walke, and make verses, and writing diuers other both wittie and pleasant discourfes, or translations out of French or Spanish, with such felicitie and good grace in the Italian, that his doings were in great account with all the Princes of Italy, and they sent him manie giftes for copies of them: but office of charge he was exceeding loth to take, saying, that he would not sell his libertie for the best Hat in Rome, meaning a Cardinals Hat; further he would confesse of himselfe that he was variable in his desires, and in his disposition, and therefore would be tide to nothing. For his dyet he was verie temperate, and a great enemy of excesse and surfetting, and so carelesse of delicates, as though he had had no perseuerance in the tast of meates, in so much as one day a friend of his in sport, caused a Muskite to be set before him in steed of a Partrich, but by mistaking of the seruingmā that set it on the boord, another Gentleman happend to tast it, and so the iest was discouered, and he writeth of himselfe in one place,

*Io non ho troppo gusto de viuande,
Che Scalco sia, fui degno esser al mondo
Quando viuean gli huomini di giande.*

That is to say, that his tast was not delicate, and that he was fit to haue liued in the world when they fed on Akornes: howbeit, for women I cannot so much praise his temperance, for he is noted to haue had dishonest companie with one *Alexandra*, though some say he was married to her priuile, and durst not be acknowne of it for feare to lose some spirituall liuings that he had, which were not lawfull to be held by a married man, but howsoeuer it was, his two sonnes were counted but base borne, though both of them prospered reasonable well in the world, their names were *Virginio* and *Gian Battista*. *Virginio* became a spirituall man, and his father surrendered some of his liuings vnto him, the other became Captaine of a band of the Dukes, and a man of good account with the Duke. Also there was a Ladie called *Generra* a faire and modest Ladie, whom he made great profession of loue vnto, but whether he enioyed her or no, it is not knowne, and therefore we may imagine the best: he fell in loue with one (whether

His fauour &
credit with
Alfonso.

His Comedies
he made.

His felicitie in
translating
out of Spanish
& other tongues

His temperance
in diet.

His marriage
doubtfull.

His sonnes base
bornes.

ther that were this *Genewra* or no, I know not,) in Florence in the house of *Vesfucci*, a kins-
woman of his, finding her one day dressing of a cote like an armour for one of her sonnes, a-
gainst he should go into the great shew that they haue there on midsummer eue (as they were
wont to haue here in London,) whereupon he made that comparifon in the 54. Stanse
of the xxiiij. booke of *Orlando Furioso*, of the wound that the noble *Zerbino* Pince of Scot-
land, had receiued of *Mandricardo*:

*The Prince so eager was he felt no smart,
Yet ran the blond out of his brest amaine,
And of his armour all the former part,
With crimson streame of blond it did distaine:
So haue I seene her hand, that to mine hart
Hath bene a cause of anguish great and paine,
When she a purple seame or flowre hath drawne,
In siluer kirtle, or in sleene of lawne.*

Also his prettie fantastick beginning of the fiue and thirtieth Canto in the first and second
stasse, with the first and second and third of the sixteenth Canto, do proue that he was sub-
iect to that passion of loue, but withall, that his loue was placed vpon women of good
worth and of great modestie. Now though I dare not excuse him in this so great a fault,
yet partly in respect he was vnmarried, partly because these white diuels haue such a temp-
ting power vpon the earth, me thinkes I should easily obtaine a pardon for him, of all
you that reade this short discourse of his life. But omitting this one peccadillo, in all his
other proceedings he was verie modest, and iust, and affable, and verie graue and discreet,
as he well approued, when after the death of *Leo* the tenth, he was (though halfe against
his will) employed by the Duke, as a Lieutenant or high shreue, in the countrie called
Grassignana, being then full of factions and diuisions, which he so orderly gouerned, and
so well quieted, that he left them all in good peace and concord, leauing among them a ve-
rie good report of his wisdom and equitie, and winning not onely the loue of the better
sort, but also a wonderfull reuerence of the wilder sort of people, and a great awe euen in
robbers and theeues: as appeared one day by a chance that happened to him in the time of
that forenamed office. For as he rode one day with fiue or sixe horses, in one of the most
licentious and disorderly parts of the countrie, he was to passe neere *Rhodes* by a compa-
nie of armed men that lay dispersed in the shade, and by meanes of the dissention and fal-
ling out of two men of some reckening in that countrey, called *Domenico Morotto*, and
Philippo Pacchione, there were dayly diuers ryots and outrages committed thereabout vpon
the passengers by such kinde of men, so as he rode by them not without some doubt to
haue bene assaulted: but being past them about a stones cast, the chiefe of the companie
demaunded of his man that rode hindermost, what his masters name was, he told him
Master *Lodowike Ariosto*, whereupon straight the partie armed as he was, ran after him;
Ariosto stayed his horse seeing him come after him, doubting in his minde to what
purpose he came, but when he came nearer, he craued pardon of him, that he had not
done his dutie vnto him in his going by, shewing him how he was *Philippo Pacchione*,
desiring his acquaintance, and offering to be at his commaundement with all humilitie and
courtesie.

Not long after this, hauing occasion about some matter of his office, to haue some con-
ference with one of the principall Gentlemen of *Lucca*, and appointing the same Gen-
tleman to meete him at a towne called *San Pellegrino*: at his comming thither, he found
not onely the said Gentleman there ready to attend him, but also diuers others: with La-
dies and gentlewomen that came of purpose to see him, drawne by the sound of his lear-
ning and wit, where they feasted him and entertained him verie noblie, euerie one struing

Menecmi of
Plautus.

who could do him most courtesie. Immediately after this commission of his was expired, he was earnestly dealt with to haue bene Ambassadour to Pope Clement, but he would by no meanes accept it. At his comming home giuing himselfe still to writing, the Duke intreated him to translate the Menecmi of *Plautus* into Italian, which he did with so fit phrases of speech, and so agreeable to the Italian tongue, that it was not counted among the least of his praises: and as for all the others Comedies of his making, they were of such estimation, that they were often represented vpon the stage, and for the most part by Gentlemen, in so much that Don *Francesco* of Este, that was after Marques of Massa, the first time that the Lena was plaid, to grace it the more, rehearsed the Prologue thereof himselfe in publike.

A pretty chace.

One of his Comedies called *Casseria*, he beganne in the life time of his father (though he intermitted it many yeares after) and one prettie accident they haue noted about it, which shewes his notable gift that he had to apply to imitation in his Poetrie, all that might with good iudgement be vsed in it. It fortun'd his father one day grew into some choler with him, and rebuked him verie sharply, and with a long speech and many words, for some matter that he laid to his charge, imputing to him verie great blame for it, and all the while he made him no answer, but gaue him full scope and libertie to take his pleasure with him: soone after his brother *Gabriel*, when his father had turned his backe, began to reason with him vpon the same subiect, and to lay to his charge the same arguments; but he easily refuted him, and with verie good and found reasons iustified his doing. Why then? (quoth his brother) what ment you, you did not satisfie my father at the first, as you might easily haue done with so reasonable an answer? In troth (said *Lodowike Ariosto*) to tell you true, I was thinking of *Erosilos* part in my Comedie I haue begunne of *Casseria*, and me thought my fathers speech to me, was so fit to be assigned to that part of an old man chiding his sonne, that I forgot while I was thinking to make such a part in sport, that I heard such a part plaid in earnest. In making his *Furioso*, he would rise sometime at one or two of the clocke in the morning, when he lay at his friendes houses, as well as when he was at home, and then he would cause an old seruant of his one *Iohn de Pescia* to bring him pen and inke, and so would write many verses when he found himselfe well disposed to it, and then he had a great pleasure to reade them to his friends, both Gentlemen and faire Ladies, among whom by the pleasantnesse of his wit and his good grace, he was euer well accepted. The Duke of Ferrara tooke him for so good a companion, that when he rode any iourney, he would desire to haue him with him, and at idle times he tooke great pleasure to haue him reade to him, as well other bookes as his own, he had so good a grace in reading, and so sweete a pronounciation, and yet not delighting to heare himselfe (a fault that many other haue bene noted of) but alwayes giuing a spirite to that which he read, whether it were his owne writing or other mens, and as he himselfe could pronounce verie well, so was it a great penance to him to heare other pronounce ill, that which himselfe had written excellent well. In so much as they tell of him, how comming one day by a Potters shoppe that had many earthen vessels readie made to sell on his stall, the Potter fortun'd at that time to sing some staffe or other out of *Orlando Furioso*, I thinke that, where *Renaldo* requesteth his horse to tarrie for him, in the first booke, the

A good companion
upon the
way.

His good pronounciation.

A prettie tale
how he vsed a
Potter.

32. staffe:

*Ferma Baiardo mio: Deh ferma il piede
Che l'esser senza te troppo mi nuoce.*

Or some such graue matter fit for a Potter, but he plotted the verses out so ilfauouredly (as might well beseeme his durtie occupation) that *Ariosto* being, or at least making semblance to be in a great rage withall, with a little walking sticke he had in his hand, brake diuers of the pots; the poore Potter put quite beside his song, and almost beside

beside himselfe, to see his market halfe mard before it was a quarter done, in a pitifull sowe manner, between railing and whining, asked what he meant to wrong a poore man that had neuer done him iniury in all his life: yes, Varlet, quoth *Ariosto*, I am yet scarce euen with thee for the wrong thou hast done me here afore my face, for I haue broken but halfe a dozen base pots of thine, that are not worth so many halfe pence; but thou hast broken and mangled a fine stanza of mine worth a marke of gold.

He built (as I partly touched before) a pretie conuenient house, and being demaunded why he did not build it in more stately manner, considering what sumptuous pallaces, what stately porches, what goodly fountaines he described in his *Furioso*: he answered, that words were cheaper layd together then stones. Vpon the front of his doore he wrote a verse, that few of the builders of this latter age can truly write, or at least if they could, I would say their houses were strongly built indeed, for more then the third heire:

*Parsa, sed apta mihi, sed nulli obnoxia, sed non
Sordida, pars mea sed tamen aere domus.*

That is to say:

*This house is small, but fit for me, but hurtfull vnto none,
But yet not sluttish, as you see, yet payd for with mine owne.*

One fault in his building was, he would often set vp and pull downe many parts thereof; and he would say of himselfe, that he vsed his house as he did his verses, mend them so much, that he mard them quite. For indeed, as a tree planted in an orchard, if it be once or twise well pickt and pruned, it doth further the growing of it, but if a man be euer fiddling about it, it will leese the naturall beautie, and hardly keepe life: so is it with one of his stanzas or staues, as we call them, at the first conceiuing of it, one may mend that which he shall sodainly set downe, but if one will still be turning and wresting of it, he may make it leese the grace it had at the first. But what fault soeuer himselfe did finde with his owne Verses, certaine it is that to all the great Princes of Italie they were most acceptable, as witnesseth the diuers great and honourable gifts they gaue him, as namely a pension of twentie pound by the yeare in Millan with an office to it giuen him by *Hyppolyro*, many sutes graunted him by the Duke of Ferrara, with great rewards from Pope *Leo* the tenth, from Cardinall *Farnese*, from Cardinall *Bybiena*, and chiefly from Marquesse *Vasto*, and diuers other meaner states that for breuities sake are omitted. And because now I would also draw to an end, I will a little runne ouer that that hath bene sayd, with somewhat that hath bene forgotten, and so conclude, beginning from his birth. He was borne the yeare 1474. in the Castle of Rheggio, his father being then gouernour of the Castle, it stands in Lombardie; he was tall of person, of complexion melancholy, giuen much to studie and musing, and would therewith sometime forget himselfe, he was of colour like an Oliue, somewhat tawnie in his face, but faire skinned otherwise, his haire was blacke, but he quickly grew bald, his forehead was large, his eye-browes thinne, his eye a little hollow but very full of life and very blacke, his nose was large and hooked, as they say the Kings of Persia were, his teeth passing euen and white, his cheeks but leane, his beard very thin, his necke well proportioned, his shoulders square and well made, but somewhat stooping, as almost all that looke much on bookes in their youth are inclined to be, his hand somewhat drie, and a little bow-legged. His counterfeite was taken by *Tytiano* that excellent drawer so well to the life, that a man would thinke yet it were aliue; he was honoured with the Lawrell by the hands of the renowned Emperour *Charles* the fift, in the yeare 1532. which was a yeare before hee dyed. Now for his disposition as we haue partly touched before, he was of nature affable, not proud, taking lesse vpon him then others did yeeld vnto him, yet putting vp no knowne iniurie not of his betters; somewhat amorous in his youth, very secret, passing studious, by na-

ture fearefull vpon the water, and therefore when hee went out of a shippe at any time he would see others go before him, vsing that saying, *De puppe nouissimus exi*: though for mine owne part I see no great reason for it. Further, he was not very venturous on horse-backe, for they say he would light at euery place of danger, though others rode ouer it. He loued not to go much abroad out of his owne countrey, in so much as he writes in one of his Satyres,

*Che vuol Andare a torno, a torno vada
Vegga Ingleterra, Vngheria, Francia e Spagna,
Ame piace habitar la mia contrada
Vista ho Thosana, Lombardia Romagna
Quel monte che diuide, e quel che serra
Italia, e vn mare e l'altro che la bagna
Questo mi basta, il resto della terra
Senza mai pagar l'hoste, andro cercando
Con Tolomeo, sia il mondo in pace o in guerra.*

To this effect in English:

*Who list to ride about, about may ride,
See England, Vnghery, and France and Spaine;
I loue in mine owne country still to bide,
In viewing which, I sure haue tane some paine.
Thoscan, Romagna Lombardie, beside
The hils that Italie close, and diuide,
Suffiseth me, the rest of all the maine
With Tolomey to search and eu'ry cost,
In peace or warre, and neuer pay mine host.*

His writings
do shew he had
great skill in
Cosmography.

For his workes, I haue touched them before; as for the five Cantoes that follow *Furioso*, I am partly of opinion they were not his, both because me thinke they differ in sweetnesse of stile from the other, and beside it is not likely that a man of his iudgement, hauing made so absolute a peece of worke as his *Furioso* is, and hauing brought euery matter to a good and well pleasing conclusion, would as it were marre all againe, and set them all by the eares, and bring *Rogero* into the Whales bellie, and *Astolfo* with him for companie, that a little before were conquerours of the world, and vnmatchable for courage and learning: but to proceed to his end, he liued til he was 59. yeares old, and toward his latter end he grew sickly, and by much Physicke marred his stomacke, his sicknesse grew first as they write by meanes of ill digestion, he being a grosse feeder, and not chewing his meate well, so that in the end it weakned him very much. That very night that he sickned and tooke his bed, there happened a great mischance, that was (in the opinion of most men) a presage of his death. The goodly Hall that *Alfonso* had beautified with the most sumptuous Stage that had bene scene in *Ferrara*, (purposely for *Ariosto's* Comedies) was fiered by mischance, and consumed a great part of the Dukes pallace beside. Now if fire (as one *Artimedorus* writeth) betokeneth fame and greatnesse, then this vnfortunate fire fortuning at such a time as it did, may yet serue as a meane to enoble the more this famous mans death: and as Comets are said to foreshew the death of Princes, so this terrible fire lasting so many dayes as it did, might be thought to foretell his death, chiefly since it consumed that worke that was built for his great fame and honour. He tooke his sicknesse not onely patiently but euen chearfully, affirming that he was willing to die, and so much the rather because he heard that the greatest Diuines were of opinion, that after this life we should know one another, affirming to his friends that were by, that many his friends were departed, whom he had a very great desire to visite, and that euery houre seemed to him a yeare till he might see them. In fine, he dyed in *Ferrara* the eight of Iuly, 1533. and though he were worthy of all honor,

yet

yet this was all the honour he had done at that time; that the Monkes of *S. Benet* buried him in their Church (and contrary to their custome, which is neuer to go to burials) went with him to his buriall, and that there was scarce a man that could write, but did honor him with an Epitaph, his bones were after taken vp by one *Sygnor Augustino*, and layd in a very faire tombe, with his statue from the girdle vpward, in the forenamed Church of *S. Benet*. And now to close vp this whole discourse of his life, with the greatest prayse, hee was a most charitable and honest man, as appeared both by his great care he had of his aged mother (whom also he speakes of often in his *Satyrs* and other writings) (saying in one place,

L'eta di cara madre, mi percuote, De pietà il cuore.

And also by this example that is recited of him, of an aged Priest that hauing three or foure fat benefices, was in great doubt to be poysoned for greedinesse of them, by some that had the next Aduowsons, and in respect of the great honestie of *M. Lodowike Ariosto*, he chose him before all his owne kinne or friends with whom he would sojorne, as himselfe boisterh, and indeed it was a good boost,

*Mane di voi ne de pui giunti a lui
D'amicitia fidar vnqua si volle
Io di fuor tutti scielto vinco fui.*

To conclude, his learning, his good behaiour, his honestie, made him both beloued of all good men in his life, and bewayled of all honest men in his death, so as me thinke reading ouer his life, I could find in my heart to wish (sauing for some very few things) *Sic mihi contingat viuere sicq. mori.*





AN EXACT AND NECESSARIE
TABLE IN ORDER OF ALPHABET, VVHERE-
IN YOV MAY READILIE FINDE THE NAMES
of the principall persons treated in this work, with the chiefe
matters that concerne them.

A



Aceon, pag. 85. a notable hunter and a cuckold, and for that cause feyned to haue had hornes for the latter of the two properties, and to haue bene deuoured with his own dogs for the former, because he was beggered and consumed by them.

Aglaure. 307. daughter of *Erichon* king of Athens, she is said to haue bene turned to a stone, and her fault was this, because she presumed to looke vpon *Erichonius*, that was committed to her custodie by *Pallas* with charge not to presume to open the basket he was kept in.

Agramant Emperour of the Turkes, sonne of *Tranio*, alias king of Affricke, alias the Southern king. He came into Fraunce to auenge his fathers death. pag. 1. He besiegeth Paris very straightly. 61. musters his men. 103. assaulteth Paris. 110. continueth his assault. 113. 122. is repulsed and besieged in his tents. 142. is rescued. 217. is troubled with the contention of his Princes, and labours to compound them. ibid. is discomfited by *Renaldo*. 254. flieth to Arly. 255. heares of the siege of *Biserta*. 320. his Oration to *Marsilio*, *Sobrinio* and the other Princes. ibidem. his challenge on *Rogeros* head. 322. takes an oth of truce. 323. breakes the truce. 326. discomfited by land. 331. flies to sea. ibidem. his men murinous. ibidem. discomfited at sea by *Dudon*. 332. flies, and would kill himselfe. 336. meets *Gradasso*. 337. sends a challenge to *Orlando*, three to three. 337. his stout answer to *Brandimart*. 345. fights and is disarmed by *Brandimart*. 348. is slaine by *Orlando*. 352.

Agricane king of Tartarie and father to *Mandricard* pag. 7.

Albracca a towne in the East Indies pag. 7.

Alcyna a famous witch or Faerie. She tooke *Astolfo*, and transformed him to a mirtle. pag. 44. entertaines *Rogero*. 50. the description of her beauty. ib. the description of her deformitie. 53. she pursues *Rogero* by land. 58. by sea. 59. she is discomfited by *Logestilla*. ibid.

Aldiger bastard sonne of *Bono* entertaineth *Rogero* the 35. booke. staffe. 63. hurt by *Mandricard*. pag. 210.

Almonio a Scot, seruant to *Zerbino*, saued in the tem-

pest with *Isabella*. 96. goes to *Rochell*. 97. findes *Zerbino*. 194. brings *Odericke* prisoner. ibidem. executes him and *Gabrina*. booke 24. staffe. 36.

Alzird, a gallant young man king of *Tremisen* kild by *Orlando*. 93.

Amalthea was *Iupiters* nurse. By *Amaltheas* horne is signified plentie.

Amazons, looke tales. 153.

Amazons a nation of warlike women, so named of *a*, and *ma*, which is to say, without papps, or of *a* and *ma*, without bread, because they feed on flesh onely.

Angelica called also the Indian Queene, daughter of *Galafon*, came from India with *Orlando* and is taken from him by the Emperour *Charles*. pag. 2. giuen to the Duke of *Bauier* to keep, and scapeth out of his tent. ib. meets with *Renaldo* and runnes from him. ibidem she meets *Sacrapant* and goes with him. pag. 5. helps him to take *Bayardo*. pag. 6. meets *Renaldo* againe. pag. 7. leaues *Renaldo* and *Sacrapant*, and meets with an Hermit pag. 10. flies from him and is pursued by him. pag. 59. her horse posselt with a spirit, carries her into the sea, and after to land. ibidem. her lamentation. ibidem. she is cast into a sleepe by the Hermit, but yet he is not able to winne her maidenhead. pag. 60. she is caried to the Ile of *Ebuda*. 61. tyed naked at the shore. ibid. is found by *Rogero* and deliuered. 79. vanisheth from him by helpe of the ring. 82. her beautie. 83. she comes to *Atlants* enchaunted Pallace, and by the ring would disclose her selfe onely to *Sacrapant*. 90. she is leene & followed by *Orlando* and *Ferraw*. 91. vanisheth from them ibid. takes away *Orlandos* helmet. 92. she is sory because *Ferraw* gat it. ibidem. she findes *Medora* wounded. 147. heales him, woes him, weds him. 148. giues her host the bracelet *Orlando* had giuen her. ibidem. meets with *Orlando* in his madnesse. 238. scapes from him and goes to the Indies and giues her whole state to *Medore*. 242.

Anglant the place of *Orlandos* Earldome.

Anselmus Earle of *Maganza* father of *Pinabell* buries his son. 179. condemnes *Zerbino* wrongfully. 180.

Anselmus a Doct. of law. looke tales. p. 364. staffe. 67.

Antheus, a giant of great strength and stature, sonne of *Neptune* and the earth, looke in the historie of the 23. booke.

Aquilant brother to *Griffino* sonnes of *Marques Olinero*. the elder fights with *Orillo*. 117. goes to *Ierusalem*.

THE TABLE.

lem. 118. meets with *Martano*. 139. beats him, brings him and *Origille* to *Damalco*. 140. goestowards France 142. is in a tempest. ibidem. came to the country of the *Amazons*. 149. scapeeth thence. 157. taken prisoner by *Pinabell*. 172. goes with *Renaldo* to rescue *Charles*. 252. is at *Bradamants* marriage 402.

Arachne, an excellent woman in needle worke, and weauing, and is fayned to haue compared with *Pallas* in that kinde, and therefore to be turned to a spyder.

Ardenna a huge Forrest or thicket in France, where he fayneth the two fountaines of loue and disdaine pag. 7.

Arethusa daughter of *Nereus* and *Doris*, one of *Dianes* companions till *Alpheus* rauished her, and gat her with child, whereupon *Diana* turned her into a riuer bearing her name.

Argalia sonne of *Galafron* brother to *Angelica* slaine by *Ferraw*, his ghost appeares to him. pag. 3.

Argia wife of *Polinyse*, her husband being killed, & the tyrant *Creon* forbidding on payne of death to bury him, yet she buried him and liued euer after a widdow. 307.

Argia looke tales. 164.

Ariodant a Gentleman of *Italie* a louer of *Geneura* 33 fight with *Lurcanio*, and is parted. 38. is knowne to the king of *Scots* 41. is married to *Geneura*. 42. rescues *Zerlino* in France. 125. and is no more spoken of by the author.

Arria wife of *Peto* of *Padon*, her husband being condemned kild her selfe in his sight, protesting that death was pleant to her so long as she left him aliue 307.

Artimesia wife of *Mausoleus*, she built that famous sepulcher for her husband, that was counted one of the wonders of the world, in honor of which all sumptuous tombes since are called *Mausolea*.

Astolfo king of *Lombardie*, looketales 225.

Astolfo called the English Duke, sonne of *Oton* king of *England* turned into a mirtle. 43. warnes *Rogero* of *Aleina*. ibid. comes to *Logestilla*. 58 goes from *Logestilla*. 114. receiues a booke of her and a horne. ibidem. takes *Calligorant*. 116. ouercomes *Orillo*. 118. goes to *Damalco*. 140 meets *Marfisa*. 141. takes her part. ibid. goes toward France. 142. is in a tempest. ibidem. comes to the *Amazons* countrey. 149. with his horne seareth the *Amazons*. 157 turnes to *England*. 169. disloues the enchanted Pallace. 170. gets the Griffith horse. 171. meets *Bradamant*. 177. leaues his horse *Rabican*, his armour and the enchanted speare with her. 178. goes about the world. 274. comes to *Senapo*. 275. driues away the *Harpies*. 281. heares the wofull tale of *Lidia*. ibid. stops vp the mouth of the caue. 284. washes himselfe at a well. ibidem. goes vp to *Paradise*. 285. conferres with *S. Iohn* ibid. receiues by his meanes *Orlandos* wit. 287. sees the riuer of *Lethe*. 292. comes from *S. Iohn*. 319 heales *Senapo*. ibid. takes the wind in a bag ibid. turnes stones to horses. ibid. goes to *Biserta* 328. redeemes *Dudon*. ibid. makes ships of leaues. ib. releates diuers Christian prisoners. ibidem. restores *Orlando* to his wit. 326. takes *Biserta* ibid. lends home *Senapo*. 376. leaues *Africa* 377. lets goe the Griffith horse ibid. comes to France ibid. is at *Bradamants* marriage. 402.

Astrea daughter of *Astreaus* a iust king, and therefore

she was called *Iustice*. 114.

Atlant vncle to *Rogero*, a great Magician makes a Pallace by enchantment. 12. fights with *Gradasso* and *Rogero*, ouercomes them and carries them prisoners into the said Castle. 13. fights with *Bradamant* and is ouercome by her. 26. ouerthrowes his inchaunted Castle, and lets free *Rogero*, with the rest of his prisoners. 17. makes another inchaunted Pal ace for *Rogero*. 90. dyes, and his ghost parteth *Rogero* and *Marfisa*. 302.

Aurora is feyned by the Poets to haue leued *Typhonus*, sonne of *Laomedon*, and to haue married him: but he growing old she fell in loue with *Cephalus*.

B

Ballisard *Rogeros* sword that had bene sometime *Orlandos* & stolen by *Brunello*, giuen to *Rogero*, was found by *Orlando* in the ship 344 restored to *Rogero*. 376.

Bardino findes *Brandimart*. 329. perswades him to go home. 330. bewayles his death 370.

Bayardo *Renaldos* horse ranne from his master twice. pag. 2. and 3. is found by *Sacrapant*. pag. 6. recovered. pag. 10. is found by *Gradasso* pag 274. recovered again by *Renaldo*.

Bertolage one of the house of *Maganza* slaine by *Richardet*. 207.

Bireno taken prisoner by *Cimoseo*. 71. deliuered by *Orlando*. ibid. married to *Olympia*. ibid. fals in loue with the king of *Frislands* daughter, and betrayeth *Olympia*. 74 is hanged by *Oberto*. 86.

Biserta a towne in *Barbary* assaulted by *Orlando*, and *Astolfo*. 335. is taken. 336 is sacked. 338.

Boreas the Northerne winde, is fayned to haue rauished *Oruthia* and to haue begotten of her *Calas* and *Zet*.

Bradamant meets with *Sacrapant* and ouerthrowes him. pag 6. betrayed by *Pinabell*. pag. 14. meeteth *Melissa* in *Merlins* caue. pag. 18. is shewed all her posteritie. 19. 20. instructed how to take the ring from *Brunello*. 21. meets *Brunello*. ibidem. lends *Rogero* the ring. 52. meets *Melissa* againe. 99. is instructed of her temall posteritie. 100. is warned of the inchantment, yet cannot auoyd it. 101. is freed by *Astolfo*. 170. meets *Pinabell*. 173. kills him. 174. meets *Astolfo*, and of him hath *Rabycano* and goldelaunce. ibid. goes to *Montalbano*. 178. lends *Frontino* to *Rogero* by *Hippalca*. 179. she receiues *Rogeros* letter. 247 her complaint. ibidem. ielous of *Marfisa*. 259. another complaint. ibid. and. 261. her dispaire. ibidem. she meets with *Vllanie* the Queene of *Islands* messenger. 262. she winnes a lodging at *Sir Tristrams* Castle. ibidem. she makes a stout Oration for *Vllanie*. 265. she ouerthrowes three kings againe. 272. she meets *Fiordeliege*. 292. ouerthrowes *Rodomount*. 393. sends a chalenge to *Rogero*. 254. ouerthrowes diuers knights. 295. fights with *Marfisa* 299. angrie with *Rogero* and makes another complaint. 300 pacified. 301. againe fights with *Marfisa*, but is reconciled 303 assaults *Marganor*. 312. deliuereth him to *Vllanie* to be put to death. 313. goes to the campe. ib. enters into the battaile. 327. chaleteth *Agramant*. 331. complains to *Marfisa* of *Rogero*. 353. refuseth *Lem*. 378. her complaint. ibid. lues to *Charles*, and obtaynes to haue a Proclamation for the combat with whomsoeuer would marrie

THE TABLE.

her. 308. writes to *Rogero* to comfort him 379. her complaint of his absence. 386. she fights with *Rogero* taking him for *Leon*. 389. another complaint. 391. she is married to *Rogero*. 402.

Brandimart sonne of *Monodant*, king of *Damagyre*, husband to *Fiordeliege*, goes out of *Paris* to seeke his friend *Orlando*. 63. is in *Atlants* Pallace. 90. set free by *Astolfo*. 170. meetes *Fiordeliege*, and goeth with her to *Rodomonts* bridge. 254. is taken prisoner by *Rodomont*. 255. released by *Astolfo*. 328. found againe by *Fiordeliege*. 329. sees *Orlando* mad and helps to take him. 330. assaults *Eylerta* and is the first that enters it. 335. is one of the three in the chalenge. 338. hath *Frontino* giuen him. ibidem. his Oration to *Agramant*. 345. he fights with *Agramant* and disarms him. 348. he is deadly wounded by *Gradasso*. 349. his speech at his death. 352. his stately funerall, at which *Orlando* makes a funerall Oration. 370. his tombe built by his wife. 371.

Branford Lieutenant to *Agramant* in *Barbarie*, sends newes of the danger *Affrica* was in. 320. redeemeth *Bucifer* with *Dudon*. 327. kills himselfe. 336.

Briarius a Giant said to haue an 100. armes: *Virgil* fayns him to be in hell for his conspiracie against *Iupiter*. Et centum geminus *Briareus* & bellua lerna: it is deuied of the Greeke, & they call a strong man.

Brigliadore, as much to say, Bridle of gold, the name of *Orlando*s horle. 87. cast off by *Orlando* in his madness. 184. found by *Mandricardo*. 200. giuen by *Rogero* (who had slaine *Mandricard*) to *Agramant*. 247. wonne by *Orlando*. 352.

Brunello is met by *Bradamant*. described by *Melissa* to her 21. is *Bradamant*s guide to *Atlants* Castle. 25. is bound by her vnto a tree, and bath the enchanted ring taken from him. 26. musters his men before *Agramant*, and was vnbound by *Isolir*. 104. is arrested by *Marfisa* and carried away by her 220. is brought backe by *Marfisa* at ten dayes end to *Agramant*, and there deliuered to a base villaine to be hanged. 258.

Brutus his wife was *Porcia*: this *Brutus* was the stout Roman that kild *Caesar* for his tyrannie, married the daughter of *Cato Vicensis*, she hearing of her husbands death ate hote coales and kild her selfe, whereupon *Martiall* saith.

*Coniugis audisset fatum cum Porcia Bruti,
& subtrac̃ta sibi quareret arma dolor,
Non dum scitis ait mortem non posse negari?
credideram satis hoc vos docuisse patrem,
Dixit & ardentes auido bibit ore fanillas,
Iunc & ferrum turba molesta nega.*

Bulgars a people of *Europe* in part of *Masia* vpon the riuer *Danubium*, where it is called *Ister*, assaulted by *Leon*. 380. put to flight. 381. rescued by *Rogero*. ibid. they make *Rogero* king 382. send Embassadors to *France* to *Rogero*. 397.

Bulligant gouerns those of *Lyon*. 104. *Ptolomie* calls that Citie *Germanica*.

Bucifer king of *Algazer* taken. 327. redeemes *Dudon*. 328. slaine by *Oliuero*. 336.

C

Calai and *Zet* were sonnes of *Boreas*, and had wings or so fayned, because they sayled in swift ships.

Calligorant a Giant taken by *Astolfo*. 116. is carried

about the country by him. 117. comes where *Orllo* was. ibid. and from thence goeth with *Astolfo* to *Ierusalem*. 118. *Astolfo* giueth him to *Sanfonet* gouernour of *Ierusalem*. 119.

Castor and *Pollux* sonnes of *Iupiter* and *Leda*, gotten of her in likenesse of a swanne, brothers to *Helena*, called *Tyndarides*, they deliuered the sea of *Pirates*, and therefore are counted Gods of the sea. They sayne that *Pollux* was immortall, and when *Castor* dyed befought *Iupiter* that he might part his immortalitie with him, whereupon they are an example of brotherly loue.

Catalynes the chiefest familie of *Spaine*, of the house of *Arragen*, and are often put by myne author for the whole state of *Spaine*. 104.

Ceres called the Goddesse of corne, mother of *Proserpina*.

Charlemaine sonne of *Pipin* gathers his forces together against the *Turkes*. pag. 1. takes vp the quarrell about *Angelica*. pag. 2. is ouerthrowne by the *Turkes*. ib. *Charles* besieged in *Paris* sends *Renaldo* into *England* pag. 11. He expectes the assault and maketh publicke prayers vnto God. 107. his owne prayer. ibidem. receiues the *English* succours into *Paris*. 125. heares newes of the spoyles *Rodomont* did. 126. his Oration. 128. 129. he sets on *Rodomont*. ibidem. driues him away out of *Paris*. 138. is discomfited againe by *Ferraw*, and made retire. ibid. is rescued by *Renaldo*. 254. Christened *Marfisa*. 318. takes an oth of truce 323. welcomes *Rogero* into *France* 376. makes a Proclamation at request of *Bradamant*. 385. his vprightnesse in iudging the controuersies. 392. he makes a sumptuous feast at the mariage of *Bradamant*. 398.

Cimosco king of *Freezeland* slaine by *Orlando*. 70.

Circe a notable inchantresse, daughter of the *Sunne* and a Nymph called *Perfes*, she turned *Vlysses* men into beasts.

Cleopatra Queene of *Egypt*, being feasted by *Anthony* had him to a banquet, and dissoluing one huge pearle in vinegar she dranke it, and it was thought in that respect a banquet of inestimable cost.

Clytemnestra wife of *Agamemnon* plaid the whore in his absence, and killed him at his returne: it is said she had a Musitian plaid chaste tunes to her, and so long she continued honest, but when he dyed *Aegisthus* corrupted her: her sonne *Orestes* in reuenge of his fathers death slue her.

Cloridan a companion of *Medore* goes to seeke the carcasse of *Dardanello*. 143. kills diuers *Christians*. ibid. kills two *Scots*. 146. is kild 146.

Corebo one of *Zerbins* men hurt in defence of *Isabella* 97. is saued. 194.

D

Dalinda *Genewras* maid saued from killing by *Renaldo*. 29. discouers *Polynessos* trecherie. 32. is pardoned and goes to a Nunrie. 42.

Danae daughter of *Acrisius*, mother to *Perseus*, she being lockt vp in a tower by her father, that none might accompanie her, it is said that *Iupiter* rayned a shower of gold through the tyles of the house into her lap, with helpe of which shower he gat her with child.

Danubius the greatest riuer of *Europe* farre North begins

THE TABLE.

begins in Germanie, and in long running it is called I-
ster 60 riuers fall into it, and ha fe of them nauigable.

Dardanello son of *Almont* musters afore *Agramant*.
105. hurteth *Lurcanio*. 138. is killed by *Renaldo*. 142. found
dead by *Medore*. 143. is buried by him and the helpe of
Angelica. 147.

Dido Queene of Carthage famous for the fabulous
loue of *Aeneas*.

Discord fought by the Angell *Michael*. 108. found in
an Abbey. ibid sent to the Pagans camp ibidem. beaten
and sent againe. 217.

Doralice comming from Spaine is taken by *Mandri-
card*. 106. sends priuily to *Rodomont*. ibidem. agrees well
with *Mandricard*. 107. parts *Zerbino* and *Mandricard*.
193. parts *Rodomont* and *Mandricard*. Lib. 24. staffe 92.
borne away by a spirit in her horse. 213. reiects *Rodo-
mont*. chuseth *Mandricard*. 221. her speech to dissuade
him from fight 243. her lightnes. 246.

Drusilla, looke tales of *Marganor*. 308.

Dudon released by *Astolfo* meanes and made Ad-
mirall 328. discomfiteh *Agramant* by sea. 332. fights
with *Rogero* on land. 339. giueth him seuen kings. 342.
comes into Paris 376. is at *Bradamant*s mariage. 402.

Durindane *Orlando*s sword taken by *Mandricard*. 24.
booke. 49. staffe. wonne for *Gradasso*. 246. lost by *Gra-
dasso* in battaile with *Orlando*. 352. giuen to *Rogero* by
Orlando. 375.

E

Ebuda, I finde no such Ile, but *Ebude* be lles in our
Brittish sea.

Encelladus the greatest of all the Giants that rebelled
against *Iupiter*, for this cause they faine that he was laid
vnder mount *Aetna*, and that the cause of the earthquaks
there, is when he sturres to change sides.

Erichonius sonne of *Vulcan* had feete like a Serpent
and deuised a coach to hide them. 307.

Eriadne wife of *Capaneus* kild with lightnigh at the
assault of *Thebes*, his bodie being burned as the man-
ner of buriall was in those dayes, his wife leapt into the
fire with it and dyed. 307.

F

Ferraw a Spanish knight fights with *Renaldo* for *An-
gelica*. pag. 2. lost his helmet in the water. ibidem. takes
Renaldo vp behind him. 3. meets with the ghost of *Ar-
galia*. ibidem. vowes to winne *Orlando*s helmet. ibid. is
in *Atlants* Pallace. 90. freed by *Angelica*. 91. fights with
Orlando. 92. pursues *Angelica* and fees her. ibidem. gets
*Orlando*s helmet. ibid. musters his band of the king of
Spaines guard. 104. restores the battaile lost. 138. his O-
ration. ibid ouerthrowne by *Bradamant*. 295.

Fiordeliege wife of *Brandimart* goeth to seeke him. 63
heares of *Orlando*s madnesse Lib. 24. staffe. 46. sees the
battaile betweene *Mandricard* and *Zerbin*, goeth to-
ward Paris. ibid. staffe 59. comes to *Rodomont*s bridge.
227. tels *Renaldo* of *Orlando*s madnesse. 253. finds *Br-
ndimart*. 254. sees him ouerthrowne and taken. ib. meets
Bradamant, and shoves her *Rodomont*s bridge. 293. deli-
uers *Rogero* a chalenge from *Bradamant*. 294. meetes
Bardino and goeth with him to Affrica. 329. finds *Br-
ndimart*. ibid. fees *Orlando* and descries him. ibidem. she
makes a blacke Caparison for *Brandimart*. 344. her
dreame and speech. 370. her death. 371.

Fiametta, looke tales.

Fiordeffina, looke tales.

Frontino the name of *Rogero*s horse is kept by *Br-
damant*. 28. sent by her to *Rogero*. 178. is taken by *Rodo-
mont*. 179. recouered by *Bradamant*. 293. sent againe to
Rogero. 294. found by *Orlando* in a ship. 344. restored to
Rogero. 375. his prail. 389.

Fusberta *Renaldo*s sword. 10.

G

Gabrina, looke tales: she flies fro *Orlando*. 99. meets
Marfisa. 158. is committed to *Zerbino*s protection. 159.
robs *Pinnabels* corse. 179. betrayes and accuses *Zerbino*.
180. flies and is misused by *Mandricard*. 182. is pardo-
ned of life by *Zerbino*. 194. committed to *Odricks* pro-
tection and by him hanged. Lib. 24. staffe 38.

Ganymed is fayned by the Poets to be *Iupiters* cup-
bearer, and to haue bene caryed vp by an Eagle, it is
taken generally in the worst part for *Bardassos*.

Genewra, looke tales.

Gibbellins, looke Guelfs.

Gradasso king of *Serycane* taken by *Atlant* into the
enchanted Castle. 13. is deliuered by *Bradamant*. 27. is in
Atlants Pal ace. 90. freed by *Astolfo*. 170. come to aide
Agramant. 216. helps to arme *Mandricard*. 218. fals out
with him. ibid. receiues *Durindane* of *Rogero*. 246. fights
with *Renaldo*. 255. fights againe. 273. parted and finds
Bayardo. 274. ships at Arlic. 274. meets *Agramant* in
great distresse. 337. is one of the chalenge three to three
and kils *Brandimart*. 349. is killed by *Orlando*. 352.

Grandonio, the gouernour of the *Algarbies*, which
dwell in promontorie cald *Celticum Promontorium*. 104.

Griffin fights with *Orillo*. 117. is in loue with *Origilla*.
118. goeth with *Astolfo* to the holy land. ibid. heares of
Origilla. 119. he finds her. 121. goeth to *Damasco*. 129.
heares his hostes tale. 130. winnes the prize there. 133.
departs thence. ibid. is betrayed by *Origill* and *Martano*.
ibidem. is carted. 134. kils and beats the people of *Da-
masco*. 137. is reconciled to *Norandino*. 139. meets his
brother *Aquilant*. 140. receiues a costly armour of the
king. ibidem. is ouerthrowne by *Astolfo*. 141. frended by
him, he goeth with him and others towards France. ib.
tost on the sea with a tempest. 142. comes to the shore
of the *Amazons* & heares their law. 149. scapeth thence
158. is betrayed and taken by *Pinnabello* to obserue his
law. 172. fights in defence thereof. 173. is ouerthrowne
by *Rogero*. 174. goeth toward France. ibid. meets with
Renaldo and is entertained into his band. 252. is at *Br-
damant*s mariage. 402.

Griffith horse brought vp by *Atlant*, and lost by him
26. flies away with *Rogero*. 27. carries him to *Alcinas* Ile
43. carries *Melissa* and *Astolfo* from *Alcinas* Ile. 58. brings
them to *Logestilla*. 77. is brought by *Melissa* to *Rogero*s
riding. ibidem. *Rogero* is carried by him ouer the world
ibidem. breaks his bridle and flies to *Atlant*. 83. is got-
ten by *Astolfo*. 171. flies with *Astolfo* ouer the world. 274
carries him vp to *Paradise*. 285. brings him backe againe.
319. is let loole by *Astolfo*. 376.

Guelfs and *Gibbellins* two notable factions rising first
of two brothers in Italie and spreading very farre.

Guidon *Sauage* in the *Amazons* land fights with
Marfisa. 150. entertaines her and her company. 153. tels
the tale of the *Amazons*. 154. scapeth thence hauing

THE TABLE.

made prouision. 157. ouerthrowes *Richardetto*, *Alardo* and *Guicchiardo*. 251. fights with *Renaldo* till Sunne set. *ibid.* makes himselfe knowne vnto *Renaldo*. 252. goeth with him to ayde *Charles*. *ibidem* is at *Bradamants* marriage. 401.

H

Hecuba wife of *Priamus* fell mad for sorrow of the death of her son *Polidorus*, and is fayned to haue bene turned to a dogge.

Helena daughter of *Leda*, she that was taken by *Paris*.

Hercules sonne of *Iupiter* and *Alcmene*, his twelue labours be knowne, howbeit *Stephen* in his *Hiostrical Dictionary* sets downe 34. labours.

Hillarion a passing deuout Hermit.

Hippalca, *Bradamants* maid caries *Frontino* towards *Rogero*. 179. meets *Rodomont* and is robd *ibidem*. meets *Rogero* at *Merlins* caue. 209. retournes to *Bradamant*. 211. deliueres *Rogeros* letter, and comforts her. 246.

Homer Prince of Greeke Poets.

I

Iason sonne of *Aeson* and *Alcmene* comming to *Lemnos* was entertained by *Hippispile*, and after wanne the Golden Fleece.

Indus or *Inde* a riuer of the East, a very huge riuer of which *India* taketh name.

Iroldo a Christen Captaine.

Isabella found by *Orlando* in a caue. 94. recites to him the cause of her being there. 96. is deliuered by *Orlando*. 98. prayes him to be her Protector. 99. finds *Zerbino*. 180. departs with *Zerbino* fro *Orlando*. 182. helps to gather *Orlandos* armour. *Lib.* 24. st. 43. entreateth *Doralice* to part the fray. *ibid.* staffe. 57. laments *Zerbins* death and becomes a Christen. *ibidem*. staffe 73. meets *Rodomont*. 231. is wooed by him. 235. saues her chastity with losse of her life. 236. her praise. *ibid.* her tombe. *ibid.*

L

Lada one of *Alexanders* souldiers, so swift and light of foote that scarce the print of his foot was seen in the sand. 270.

Laodemia wife to *Protesilaus* loued him so dearly, that hearing of his death, she pynd away with griefe. 307.

Leon sonne of *Constantine* repulld by *Rogero*. 381. deliueres *Rogero* not knowing him from prison. 387. goeth into France to wooe *Bradamant*, and winnes her by *Rogeros* meanes calling himselfe the knight of the *Vmcorne*. 389. disturbed and chalenged by *Marfisa*. 391. misleth *Rogero*. 392. finds him and recomforts him 396. brings him to *Charles*. 398. his speech. *ibidem*. frees the *Bulgars* from further warre by promise *ibid.* is at *Rogeros* marriage. 402.

Lidia looke tales. 281.

Logestilla defendeth *Rogero* against *Alcina*. 76. the description of her house, by which is nient vertue. 77. entertaines *Astolfo*, and deliueres him a booke and a horne and lets him depart. 114.

Lucina looke tales. 129.

Lurcanio brother to *Ariodant* an Italian Gentleman accuseth *Genewra*. 36. fights with his brother. 38. is hurt by *Dardanello*. 138.

M

Malagige rescued by *Rogero* and others. 207. expounds the pictures at *Merlins* well. 208. makes a spirit carie away *Doralice*. 213. goeth with *Renaldo* to aide *Charles*. 247. coniureth to finde the cause of *Renaldos* discafe. 353. is at the wedding 402.

Mandricard sonne of *Aghycane* king of Tartarie had wonne *Hectors* armes. 105. he seekes *Orlando*. *ibid.* wins *Doralice*, carries her away & wooes her. 106. lyes with her. 107. fights with *Orlando*. 181. parted. 182. meets *Gabrina*. *ibidem*. fights with *Zerbino* and hurts him. *lib.* 24. staffe 49. winnes *Durindane*. *ibid.* fights with *Rodomont*. *ibid.* staffe 80. is parted staffe 93. ouerthrowes *Richardetto* and his brothers. 210. fights with *Marfisa*. *ibidem*. quarrels with *Rogero*. 211. reproued by *Rodomont*. *ibid.* fights with *Rogero*. 212. fights with *Marfisa*. *ibidem*. parted. 213. relieves *Agramant*. 216. quarels with *Rodomont*, *Rogero* and *Marfisa*. 217. with *Gradasso*. 218. is cholen by *Doralice*. 221. dissuaded from fight by *Doralice*. 243. fights with *Rogero*. 244. is kild. 246.

Manilard ouerthrowne by *Orlando*. 93.

Marfilio king of Spaine musters his men of armes. 104. his Oration to *Agramant*. 320. he flies into Spaine. 327.

Marfisa sifter to *Rogero* meetes *Astolfo* and goeth to *Damalco*. 140. takes away the prize. *ibid.* is reconciled and honored. 141. goeth with *Astolfo* and others toward France, and are tost with tempest. 142. arriues with them at the *Amazons* Citie. 149. fights with *Guidon*. 150. scapeth hence. 157. part from her companions in *Marfilia*. 158. meets *Gabrina* and carries her behind her. *ibid.* ouerthrowes *Pinnabell* for laughing at her. 159. meets *Zerbino* & commits *Gabrina* to his custodie. 159. meets *Rogero*. 206. aids him to relceue *Malagige* and *Vinian*. 207. dines at *Merlins* caue. 208. fights with *Mandricard*. 210. aids *Agramant*. 215. craues battaile with *Mandricard*. 217. arresteth *Brunello*. 220. brings him backe to *Agramant*. 258. fights with *Bradamant* & is ouerthrown 299. fights againe. 300. fights with *Rogero*. 302. parted by *Atlants* ghost. *ibidem*. frends with *Bradamant*. 303. goeth with *Bradamant* and *Rogero*. 307. aids *Vilanie* and her companions. 308. heares the tale of *Marganor*. 309. leads *Marganor* captiue. 312. calles a Parliament and makes a law for women. 313. goeth with *Bradamant* to *Charles*. 317. meets *Charles* and makes an Oration. 318. she is Christned. 319. fights with *Agramant*. 327. chalet him. 331. disturbeth *Don Leon* from marrying with *Bradamant*. 397. makes a chalenge to *Leon* on *Rogeros* behalfe. 392. was about to strike *Rogero* not knowing him. 398. is at the wedding 402.

Marganor looke tales. 309. his law 311. he is killed. 313.

Martano a whooremaster keeps *Origilla*. 122. shames himselfe. 133. betrayes *Griffin*. *ibid.* incenseth *Norandino* against him. 134. beaten by *Aquilant*. 139. punished openly. 140.

Mausoleo the tombe of a king so named, one of the seuen wonders.

Medea a cruell woman, a notable witch, she killed her owne brother, and her owne sonnes, she lent *Creusa* a little boxe for a token, in which was closed such artificiall fire, that as soone as it was opened it burned her and

THE TABLE.

and all the Pallace she was in.

Medore page of *Dardanell* goeth to seeke his masters carkas to burie it. 143. kills many Christians asleepe. *ibid.* carries his maisters corse and is pursued by Scots. 144. hurt by a Scot against *Zerbino* will 147. found by *Angelica* and healed, wooed, and married by *Angelica*. 147. his Epigramme 148. escapes *Orlando* hardly. 239. made king of East India. 242.

Melyssa showeth *Bradamant* all *Rogeros* posteritie 19. 20. instructeth her how to take the ring from *Brunello*. 21. goeth to deliuer *Rogero*. 52. her speech to *Rogero*. 53. comforts *Bradamant*. 322. in *Rodomonts* likenes breaks the truce. 326. meeteth *Leon* and shoves him *Rogero*. 395. bringeth the rich *Paullion* by *Nigromancie*. 399. is at *Bradamants* mariage 402.

Memphis the chiefe Citie of *Egypt* neare to which the huge *Pyramides* were made.

Merlins Fountain. 208. his hall in *Sir Tristrams* lodge and the stories thereof. 258. the English Prophet, of him you shall reade in the notes of the third booke. pag 22.

Morgana a passing witch much spoken of in *Boyardos* booke of *Orlando Inamorato*.

N

Nereus sonne of *Caropeus* and *Aglaia* a passing beautifull young man, witnes *Homer* one of thole that came against *Troy*. 269.

Nesfor is said to haue liued three ages, which some count. 90. yeares, some 300.

Nilus the famous riuer of *Egypt* so called of king *Nilus*, or as some will haue it of the Greeke *νεῖλος*, that is new slime, for with the slime thereof it enricheth all *Egypt*: some doubt whether it haue any head at all but runnes out of the great lake, it fals deuided into the sea in seuen branches, wherefore *Ouid* calls it in the 1. *Met.* *Septemflum*.

Norandino, looke in the tales, makes a great feast. 129. receiueth *Griffin* into fauour 135.

O

Odericke is sent by *Zerbino* for *Isabella*. 97. would haue rauisht her. 98. woundeth *Corebo*. *ibidem*. is brought by *Almonio* to *Zerbino* lib. 24. staffe. 16. is pardoned by him *ib.* staffe 35. breaketh promise and is hanged *ib.* staffe. 38.

Oberto king of *Ireland* comes to *Ebuda* and meetes *Orlando* there. 85. fals in loue with *Olimpia*. 86. marries her *ibidem*.

Olimpia looke tales: she is deliuered by *Orlando* and married to *Bireno*. 71. betrayed by him and left on the shore. 75. is found by *Orlando* at the Ile of *Ebuda*: and her beautie described, she deliuered. 85. *Oberto* fals in loue with her. 86. marries her *ibidem*.

Oliuero sent prisoner to *Biserta*, set free by *Astolfo*. 328. assaults *Biserta*. 335. slue *Bucifar*. 336. is one of the three in the challenge. 338. hath *Rogeros* armour giuen him. 344. his impreyse a lymehound with the word (till he commeth) *ibid.* he is hurt by his horse fall. 348. is healed by the Hermit. 372. comes into France with *Orlando* and *Rogero*. 376. is at *Bradamants* mariage. 402.

Origille a strumpet loued by *Griffin*. 119. is found with *Martano*, excuseth it. 122.

Orillo a *Nigromancer* looke tales. 116.

Orlando comes from the East Indies with *Angelica*

and hath her taken from him. pag. 1. troubled in his sleepe by a dreame. 62. he leaues *Paris*. 63. comes vpon the Pagans campe. 65. passeth into *Britanie* and is put backe to *Antwerpe*. 66. heares the state of *Olimpia*. *ibid.* challengeth *Cimosco*. 69. kills him. 70. flings the harquebush into the sea. 71. comes to *Ebuda*. 84. kills an *Orke* *ibid.* sets free *Olimpia* againe. 85. goeth backe to *Britanie*. 87. illuded with the likenesse of *Angelica*. 89. pursues *Angelica* 91. fights with *Ferraw*. 92. lost his helmet *ibid.* foyle two bands of Pagans. 93. findes *Isabella*. 94. deliuers her. 98. hangs the outlawes *ibid.* deliuers *Zerbino*. 180. fights with *Mandricard*. 181. is parted. 182. heares newes of *Angelica*. 183. fals starke mad. 185. some mad parts of his. 193. wrestles with *Rodomont*. 237. meetes *Angelica* and almost catcheth her. 239. comes to *Biserta*. 242. troubles *Astolfos* armie in his madnes. 329. is bound & made wife by *Astolfo*. 330. assaults *Biserta*. 334. rescues *Brandimart* at *Biserta*. 336. sackes the towne. 338. accepts *Agramants* challenge. *ibid.* findes *Ballisard* in a voyde ship. 344. fights the combat three to three. 348. kills *Gradasso* and *Agramant*. 352. meetes *Renaldo*. 369. comes to *Sicilie*. 370. he makes *Brandimarts* funerall. 371. his Oration. *ibid.* comes to the Hermit and meetes *Rogero* there. 372. goeth backe into France with him. 376. is at *Bradamants* mariage. 402.

Orke a monstrous fish.

P

Paris sonne to *Priamus* louer of *Helena*.

Paris fiered by *Agramant*, and quenced by rayne from heauen. 61. assaulted by *Agramant*. 110. entred by *Rodomont* and set on fire. 111.

Paule the first Hermit or Anchorit, it is said of him that a crow brought him euerie day halfe aloafe of bread, and that *Anthonie* a deuout man going to see him, the crow brought him that day a whole loafe.

Penelope wife of *Vlysses* famous for her chastitie in the long absence of her husband: hauing many importunate suitors in her husbands absence she prayd them to respite her till she had ended a web, which she had begunne to weaue, and that being granted looke what she woue all day she vndid at night.

Pegasus a horse that had wings, this horse is sayd to be bred of the blood of *Medusa*: and that *Bellerophon* thinking to ride him vp to heauen, fell from him, but the horse held on his course still and was made a starre.

Phæbus or *Apollo* taken for the Sunne.

Pinnabell son of *Anselmus* of *Maganza* meets with *Bradamant*. 12. lets *Bradamant* fall into *Merlins* pit 14. steales her horse. 17. ouerthrowne by *Marfisa*. 158. takes *Griffin*, *Aquilant*, *Guidon* *Sauage*, & *Sansonet* prisoners. 172. makes them sweare to his law. *ibid.* is met and killed by *Bradamant*. 173.

Polinesso Duke of *Albany* betrayeth *Genewra* by *Dalindas* meanes. 35. is killed by *Renaldo*. 38.

Polidorus son of *Priamus* killed by *Polimnestor* for couetousnes of the gold that *Priamus* lent with him.

Pollux looke *Castor*.

Prafildo a Christen Captaine.

Progne killed her sonne *Itis*, and is fained to haue bin turned into a swallow.

Proteus counted a God of the sea called *Vertumnus* because he is said to turne himselfe into all shapes.

THE TABLE.

Proteus king of Egypt spoken of in the .45. booke.
Puliano a king musters afore *Agramant*. 105. slaine
 by *Renaldo*. 154.

Pyramides certaine towers of incredible height built
 by the Princes of Egypt, of this looke in the seuen won-
 ders of the world.

R

Rabican *Astolfo's* horse. 54.

Renaldo fell out with *Orlando* for *Angelica*. 2. lost his
 horse, & in seeking of him found *Angelica*. ibid. fought
 with *Ferraw*. ibidem. rides behind him. 3. parts from
 him and finds his horse. ibid. he finds *Angelica* againe.
 7. fights with *Sacrapant*. 10. is parted by the illusion of
 an Hermit. ibidem. he takes his horse againe. ibidem. he
 goeth to Paris. 11. is sent in Embassage. ibid. arriues in
 Scotland. 28. goeth toward the Court. ibidem. is intertain-
 ed by an Abbot and his Monks. ibidem. heares of *Ge-
 newras* danger. ibid. is guided to the Court. 29. meetes
 with *Dalinda*. ibid. heares the tale of *Genewra*. 32. 33. 34.
 35. 36. fights with *Polineffo* and kils him. 38. sues for
 ayd to the Scottish king. 58. goeth by sea to England
 and is feasted there. 59. brought by Silence to Paris.
 123. his Oration. ibidem. he encourageth the Scots. 125.
 kils *Dardanell*. 142. troubled with ielousie of *Orlando*.
 216. comes to Mountalbano. 247. goeth to succour
Charles. ibid. meetes *Guidon*. 251. fights againe with *Gr-
 dasso*. 257. fights againe. 273. loofeth *Bayardo*. 274. a
 chāpion for *Charles*. 222. fights with *Rogero*. 223. is trou-
 bled with his old loue. 353. heares of *Malagige* where
Angelica is. 354. asketh leaue of *Charles* to go to India.
 ibid. assayed by a monster and deliuered by a knight.
 355. comes to the knight of Mantua. 356. refuseth to
 tast the cup to try cuckoldes. 360. goeth by water to
Rauenno. 369. meetes *Orlando*. at *Lyppaduse*. ibid. meetes
Rogero at the Hermits. 372. promiset him *Bradament*.
 375. comes with him into France. 377. fals out with his
 father about *Rogero*. ibidem. and. 391. is at *Bradaments*
 mariage. 402.

Richardet gat *Fiorde spina* with child and should haue
 dyed, & is set free by *Rogero*. 159. tels *Rogero* a tale. 200.
 comes to *Aldigers* house. 202. goeth with him to rescue
Malagige and *Vinian*. 203. meetes *Marfisa*. 204. rescues
Vinian and *Malagige*. 207. dines at *Merlins* caue. 208. is
 ouerthrowne by *Rodomont*. 210. by *Guidon*. 251. is at
Bradaments mariage. 402.

Risee or *Riphe* mountaines in Scythia.

Rodomont king of Algier a man of passing strength
 musters afore *Agramant*. 105. enters Paris. 110. doth
 much spoile. 122. leaues Paris. 138. meetes *Discord*, *Pride*
 and ielousie with *Doralices* messenger. ibid. takes *Front-
 ino* from *Hippalca*. 179. fights with *Mandricard*. Lib.
 24. staffe 80. parted, staffe 93. fights with *Rogero*. 212.
 parted. 213. rescues *Agramant*. 217. fals at variance with
Mandricard & with *Sacrapant*. 219. refused by *Doralice*
 goeth away malcontent. 221. his inuectiue against wo-
 men. 222. his hosts entertainment. 233. meetes *Isabella*.
 231. kils the Priest. 234. is drunke and cuts off *Isabellas*
 head. 235. makes a tombe, a vow and a brigde. 236.
 is cast by *Orlando* into the water. 237. ouercomes *Br-
 dimart*. 254. is ouerthrowne by *Bradament*. 293. enters
 into a cell for shame of his foyle receiued by *Brada-
 mant*. 294. challenges *Rogero* at *Bradaments* mariage.

401. is killed by *Rogero*. 404.

Rogero taken by *Atlant*. 13. deliuered by *Bradament*.
 27. carried away by the Griffith horse. ibid. comes to
Alcinas Ile. 42. is warned by *Astolfo*. 43. fights with the
 monsters. 46. is rescued by two Ladies. ibidem. ouer-
 throwes *Eriffila*. 49. is intertaind by *Alcina*. 50. is war-
 ned by *Melissa*. 53. discouers *Alcinas* illusions. ibid. de-
 ceiuies *Alcina* and flies. 57. is impeacht by a Falkner.
 58. tempted in his way by three Ladies. 76. assaulted
 by sea. ibid. deliuered by *Logestilla*. ibid. parted from *Lo-
 gestilla* on the winged horse. 77. sees the musters in En-
 gland. 78. goes to Ireland. 79. sees *Angelica* tied to the
 rocke. ibidem. ouercomes the Orke by helpe of his
 shield. 80. lends *Angelica* his ring. ibid. leeseeth *Angelica*
 83. leeseeth his horse. ibid. is carried by a traine to ano-
 ther enchanted Pallace of *Atlant*. 90. freed from the in-
 chanted Pallace. 170. goes with *Bradament*. 171. van-
 quisheth *Pinnabells* foure knights by his shield. 173.
 throwes away the shield. 174. sets free *Richardet* lib. 25.
 ft. 10. comes to *Aldiger*. 202. writes to *Bradament*. 203.
 meetes *Marfisa*. 204. rescues *Malagige* and *Vinian*. 207
 dines in *Merlins* caue. 208. goes with *Hippalca*. 209.
 finds *Rodomont*. 211. fights with him and *Mandricard*.
 212. parted. 213. rescues *Agramant*. 217. offers combat
 to *Rodomont* and *Mandricard*. ibid. kils *Mandricard*. 245
 is sore hurt by him. ibid. is chalenged by *Bradament*.
 294. parts *Marfisa* and her. 300. fights with *Marfisa* and
 is parted. 302. tels *Marfisa* of his race. 303. promiset
 mariage to *Bradament*. 304. assaults *Marganor*. 312. goes
 backe to the campe. 313. chosen champion for *Agra-
 mant*. 322. fights with *Renaldo*. 323. is parted. 326. fights
 with *Dudon*. 339. takes shipping. 343. suffers shipwrack.
 344. comes to an Hermit. 346. is christned. ibid. meetes
Orlando & *Renaldo*. 372. hath a promise of *Bradament*. 376
 comes into France with them. 377. is refused by *Brada-
 mants* parents, his complaint. 378. vowes to kill *Leon*,
 and calls himselfe knight of the Vnicorne. 380. is made
 king of the Bulgars. 381. is prisoner to *Theodora*. 385.
 deliuered by *Leon*. 387. fights for him with *Bradament*
 and wins her. 389. his complaint, and would pine him-
 selfe to death. 390. is releued by *Leon*. 396. marries
Bradament. 399. killeth *Rodomont*. 404.

S

Sacrapant makes great lamentation for *Angelica*, his
 complaint begins. 4. ft. 41. *Angelica* discloseth herselfe
 to him. ibid. he encounters with *Bradament*. 5. is ouer-
 throwne. 6. his horse being slaine takes *Bayardo*. ibid.
 fights with *Renaldo*. 10. is parted by an illusion. ibid. is
 deliuered from the enchanted Pallace. 27. is in another
 enchanted Pallace. 90. freed by *Angelica*. 91. leeseeth her,
 and seekes her. ibid. fals out with *Rodomont*. 220. folows
 him. 221. taken, and goes home. 294.

Sampson a man of great strength spoken of in the
 Scripture, his vertue was in his haire, he slue 1000 men
 with the iaw bone of an Ass. 106.

Sanfonet gouernor of Ierusalem, intertaines *Astolfo*.
 119. goes to Damasco. 140. wins the prize. 141. comes
 to the Amazons land. 149. scapeth thence. 157. freed by
Astolfo. 328. helpees to take *Orlando*. 330. assaults *Biserta*.
 335. remains in Affrica. ibid.

Scipio a famous Captaine of the Romans.

Senapo blind, looke tales. 275. healed of his eyes. 390.
 lends

THE TABLE.

lends *Astolfo* men and money. *ibid.* his men assault *Biferta*. 335.

Sobriano a Prince and graue counsellor to *Agramant* musters before him. 104. his good counsel to *Agramant*. 221. his answer to *Marsilio*, a good Oration. 321. flies with *Agramant* by sea. 334. misliketh of the breach of truce. 327 witholds *Agramant* from killing himselfe, and comforts him. 337. is one of the challenge 3. to 3. 338. wounded by *Orlando* 347. hoghs *Oliuers* horse. 348 is christend. 372. comes to France. 577. is at the mariage of *Bradamant* 402.

Stordilano father of *Doralice*, king of Granada a rich prouince of Spaine, being watered with the riuer of *Betica* or *Bethi*. 104.

T

Tagus a riuer in Lusitania or Portugall, it hath golden sand in some places: by this riuer it is that *Pliny* writes that *Mares* conceiue with the wind, and bring forth colts exceeding swift, but they liue but three yeares.

Tiberius. 363 there were many of that name, one succeeded *Augustus*, and built wonderful sumptuous buildings in the Ile of *Capri*, and gaue himselfe to drinke and filthinesse of life, insomuch that being named *Tiberius Nero*, they nicknamed him *Biberius Mero*.

Tiberius. 364. was a good Emperor and a Christian, it written of him, that hauing spent much money to good and Christian vses, and beginning to want he law a crosse of stone lying on the ground, and for reuerence that it should not be troden on, caused it to be digged vp, and vnder that another, and so a third, till at the last he found an infinite treasure that had bene there hidden, which he tooke as a thing sent by God, and employed it to very good and princely works.

Tithonus husband to *Aurora*, and had by her a gift of long life.

Traiano father of *Agramant* slaine by *Pypin* king of France, as is mentioned in the first page.

Tripoly a citie in Affrica, so called because three sundry people did ioyne in the inhabiting of it, the *Tirians*, *Sidonians*, and *Arabians*.

Tristrams lodge, looke *Tales* 103.

Turpin Archbishop of France alledged often by mine Author, an ancient Historiographer.

V

Virgil called the Prince of the Latine Poets.

Vlysses son of *Laertes* the famous Grecian captaine, a notable traeller, *Qui mores hominum multorum vidit*

& *vrbes*, a man of great policie, passing eloquent: the notable exploits that are attributed to him would be too long to set downe, but in his Oration in *Ouids* *Metamorphosis* they be repeated by him, *Si mea cū vestris valuisse vota Pelasgi &c.*

Vllany sent by the queene of *Island* with the golden shield. 262. defended by *Bradamant*. 265. is found by *Bradamant* halfe stripped, and goes to *Marganors* town with her. 308. puts *Marganor* to death. 313.

Vulcan. 10. is fained by the Poets to keepe a shop in the hollownes of the mount *Aetna*, and there to worke thunderbolts for *Iupiter*.

Z

Zenocrates a Stoike, a man of no great wit, but of wonderfull continuencie, for when some youths of Athens had couenanted with a harlot to tempt him to her companie, and the said *Zenocrates* hauing supped with them and drunke well that night, which is a pro- uoking to veneric, yet the harlot was not able to tempt him, notwithstanding that she was her crafts master, or at least mistres, wherefore they demaunded their money againe, but she auoyded them thus, that her bargain was to tempt a man and not an image.

Zerbin Prince of Scotland musters his men by the *Theams*. 78. his armes the *Lyon*. *ibid.* his comely shape. *ibid.* loues *Isabella*. 97. lends *Odericke* for her. *ibid.* gouerns the vaward of *Renaldos* battell. 124. fights valiantly. *ibid.* kills two Spaniards. 125. in perill to be slaine is rescued by *Ariodant*. 125. after by *Renaldo*. *ibidem*. chaseth his enemies all night. 144. spares *Medoro*, and pursueth him that did hurt him. 146. 147. takes old *Gabrina* into protection. 159. heares newes of *Isabella* by *Gabrina*. 160. fights with *Hermonide* for her. 162. is betrayed by her. 180. deliuered by *Orlando*. *ibidem*. findes *Isabella*. 181. pardoneth *Odericke* with singular clemencie. 194. commits *Gabrina* to his keeping. lib. 24. st. 35 gathers *Orlando*s armour. lib. eodem. st. 47. fights with *Mandricard* in defence of *Durindan*. eodem. st. 51. deadly hurt. st. 56. his last lamentation. 67. dies. 69. his stately tombe made by *Rodomont* where *Isabella* and he are laid. pag. 236.

Zeuxes of him I haue spoken in the Notes of the 33. Booke, onely I will adde this that I spake not of there; how he painted a boy bearing a bunch of grapes, and the birds pecking at the grapes, he found fault with his owne worke, saying the boy was not well drawne, for if he had, the birds would haue bene affraid to haue come so neere.

THE PRINCIPAL TALES IN ORLANDO FVRIOSO

THAT MAY BE READ BY THEMSELVES.

- 1 *Tale of Genewra begins pag. 28. staffe 42.*
- 2 *Tale of Astolfos turning to a tree. pag. 43. staffe 26.*
- 3 *Tale of Rogeros comming to Alcina. pag. 45. staffe. 54.*
- 4 *Tale of Proteus and the Orke. pag. 60. staffe. 46.*
- 5 *Tale of Olimpia. pag. 66. staffe. 16.*
- 6 *Tale of Isabella. pag. 94. staffe 67.*
- 7 *Tale of sending Discord and Silence. pag. 107. staffe 59.*
- 8 *Tale of Calligorant. pag. 115. staffe 30.*
- 9 *Tale of Orillo. pag. 116. staffe 49.*
- 10 *Tale of Origille. pag. 121. st.*
- 11 *Tale of Lucina and Norandino. pag. 129. staffe 20.*
- 12 *Tale of the Amazons. pag. 153. staffe. 5.*
- 13 *Tale of Gabrina. pag. 162. st.*
- 14 *Tale of Orlandos madnes. pag. 183. staffe. 78.*
- 15 *Tale of Fior despina. pag. 199. st.*
- 16 *Tale of mine Host with Rodomonts inuectiue against women. pag. 222. staffe 93.*
- 17 *Tale of Tristrams lodge. pag. 263. staffe 77.*
- 18 *Tale of Senapo. pag. 275. staffe 93.*
- 19 *Tale of Lidia. pag. 281. staffe 6.*
- 20 *Tale of Astolfo going to Paradiſe and finding Orlandos wit. pag. 284. staffe 49.*
- 21 *Tale of Marganor. pag. 308. staffe 26.*
- 22 *Tale of the Mantuan knight. pag. 356. staffe 66.*
- 23 *Tale of Adonio called the Stears mans tale. pag. 364. staffe 66.*
- 24 *Tale of Leons courtesie to Rogero. pag. 385. staffe. 11.*

For other things, as Orations, Letters, complaints, and the like, you shall finde them in the Table in the name of those whom they do most concerne.

FINIS.





Imprinted at London by
Richard Field, for Iohn Norton
and Simon VVaterson.
1607.